

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 08181999 1



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

<http://www.archive.org/details/historyofstjosep01howa>



Timothy E. Howard -

A HISTORY
OF
ST. JOSEPH COUNTY
INDIANA

BY
TIMOTHY EDWARD HOWARD
PRESIDENT OF THE NORTHERN INDIANA HISTORICAL SOCIETY

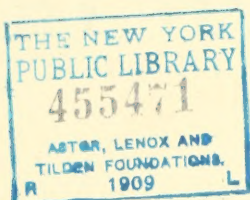
VOLUME ONE

THE LEWIS PUBLISHING COMPANY

CHICAGO NEW YORK

1907

Handwritten initials and a large checkmark are visible in the bottom right corner of the page.



NEW YORK
PUBLIC
LIBRARY

PREFACE

It is now more than three-quarters of a century since the organization and first settlement of St. Joseph county. Of those who were present at the beginning there is no one left to tell the story. Three generations have since been born to the rich inheritance of those first toilers. Of these, the oldest yet living have, perhaps, heard the pioneer history from the lips of the pioneers themselves. As to the rest, if they know the story at all, they have learned it from tradition, from musty records, from letters, papers and documents of other days, and, it may be also, from such incidental references as are to be found in scattered pamphlets, books and other publications. For anything more definite concerning our early history we have been accustomed to look to the historical atlas of the county, published, in 1875, by Higgins, Belden & Company, of Chicago, and to certain historical and biographical works, particularly that published in the same city, in 1880, by Chapman & Company. The maps in the atlas referred to were excellent for their time, but have long been out of date. The footnotes in this atlas contain much valuable information that might otherwise have been lost. The Chapman work consisted of a brief history of Indiana, followed by detached sketches of the history of St. Joseph county and biographies of prominent citizens. These local sketches, like the notes in the Atlas, are of inestimable value, as preserving a variety of historical data furnished by men then still living, much of which also, if not thus preserved, might have been wholly forgotten. Since the publication of those works nearly a third of a century has passed, during which time many zealous students of our early history have gathered up the old traditions, searched the public records, turned over old newspaper files, and in a multitude of ways rescued from loss historical facts that were constantly slipping into oblivion. Chief among those students of antique historical lore have been David R. Leeper, Richard H. Lyon, George A. Baker and Charles H. Bartlett. Most of this good work has been done for or through the Northern Indiana Historical Society. To the labors of these painstaking searchers have been added numerous reminiscence writings prepared by older citizens, many of whom are now departed from us. It seemed high time to put into permanent form this wealth of material, new and old, to pick up these scattered threads of our splendid history and weave them into a continuous narrative, before they should again be scattered and perhaps lost forever.

For over a year the writer has devoted all the time which he could spare to this work, which to him has been a labor of love. He has, so far as he knows, overlooked no source of information which seemed open to him, and has sought to verify facts, names, dates and events, and to arrange the whole into a connected and readable history of St. Joseph county. How far these efforts have been successful must be left to the judgment of his readers. He has received aid from many sources, and has endeavored to give due credit for such help in the text, in the footnotes, and in the Bibliography printed on the follow-

ing pages. This bibliography includes not only the books and other printed publications, but also all other authorities chiefly relied on in the writing of this history.

Acknowledgments are also due to many friends who have given valued information and furnished facts and reminiscences clearing up doubtful phases of our history. Among these generous helpers he would make particular mention of George A. Baker, secretary, and several other members, of the Northern Indiana Historical Society; H. S. K. Bartholomew, president of the Elkhart Historical Society; Samuel J. Nicles, of Walkerton; and Albert H. Compton, of New Carlisle. Others who have suggested lines of research, answered requests, or who themselves have thrown light on the obscure past, are so numerous that even a list of their names could not be given. They will kindly accept this general acknowledgment of their invaluable services in helping, so far as could be done at this time and with the material now available, to make this a complete and satisfactory history of the county.

The publishers have been generous on their part. In paper, printing, binding and illustration, all pains have been taken that could have been given to a work that was to be sold throughout the country, whereas the patrons of this history must be found only within the limits of St. Joseph county. For their considerate kindness, which has done so much to make the labors of the writer a pleasant task, his acknowledgments are due and gladly tendered.

South Bend, Indiana, January 1, 1908.

TIMOTHY E. HOWARD.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I. TOPOGRAPHY.

	Page
I. Location and General Features.....	1
II. Relation of the St. Joseph to the Kankakee	1
III. The Glacial Drift.....	1
IV. Glacial Action Over Northern Indiana	2
V. Lakes and Subterraneous Waters.....	6
VI. Moraines and Waterways.....	9
VII. The Great Kankakee.....	10
Sec. 1. Three Great Ice Lobes.	
Sec. 2. The Ancient Waterways.	
Sec. 3. Origin of the St. Joseph River.	
VIII. Elevations, Strata and Soils.....	17
IX. Lakes of St. Joseph County.....	18

CHAPTER II. EARLY HISTORY.

I. Marquette	20
Sec. 1. First Footprints.	
Sec. 2. Routes of Travel.	
Sec. 3. Historical Data.	
II. La Salle	23
Sec. 1. Preparations.	
Sec. 2. On the Great Lakes.	
Sec. 3. The Portage of the St. Joseph.	
Sec. 4. At the Village of the Miamis.	
Sec. 5. Down the Mississippi.	
Sec. 6. The Passing of the Portage.	
III. Primitive Inhabitants	34
Sec. 1. The Mound Builders.	
Sec. 2. Our Miamis and Pottawatomes.	
IV. Fort St. Joseph's	39
Sec. 1. The French Power.	
Sec. 2. British Supremacy.	
Sec. 3. Pontiac's War.	
Sec. 4. George Rogers Clark and Fort St. Joseph's.	
Sec. 5. Taken by the Spaniards.	
V. The Parkovash, Indian Camps and Trails	43
Sec. 1. Camps and Fishing Resorts.	
Sec. 2. Trails and Traces.	
Sec. 3. Charlevoix on Portage Prairie.	
Sec. 4. Other Trails.	
VI. The Removal of the Pottawatomes..	48

CHAPTER III. THE STATE OF INDIANA.

	Page
I. The French Era.....	57
Sec. 1. Nature of the French Occupancy.	
Sec. 2. Canada and Louisiana.	
II. The British and Spanish Era.....	58
III. George Rogers Clark.....	59
Sec. 1. Clark in Kentucky.	
Sec. 2. His Appeal to Virginia.	
Sec. 3. Secret Preparations.	
Sec. 4. Capture of Kaskaskia.	
Sec. 5. Father Gibault and Vincennes.	
Sec. 6. Clark's Winter Campaign.	
IV. The County of Illinois.....	70
Sec. 1. First Measures Taken by Virginia.	
Sec. 2. Nature of the County Government.	
Sec. 3. Claims Made by Other States.	
Sec. 4. Cession by Virginia.	
V. The Ordinance of 1787.....	75
Sec. 1. First Congressional Plan: Seventeen States.	
Sec. 2. Jefferson's Plan: Ten States.	
Sec. 3. Emigration to the West.	
Sec. 4. Development of the Ordinance.	
Sec. 5. The Six Articles of the Ordinance.	
Sec. 6. The Constitution of the United States.	
Sec. 7. Ratification of the Constitution.	
Sec. 8. Government Under the Ordinance.	
Sec. 9. Governor St. Clair.	
Sec. 10. General Anthony Wayne.	
Sec. 11. The Treaty of Greenville.	
Sec. 12. Indian Land Titles.	
Sec. 13. Lewis Cass and the Indian Treaties.	
Sec. 14. Indian Titles to St. Joseph County Lands.	
Sec. 15. The First Legislature of the Northwest Territory.	
VI. Indiana Territory.....	93
Sec. 1. Extent of the Territory.	
Sec. 2. Organization of the Territorial Government.	
Sec. 3. The First Indiana Courts.	
Sec. 4. Lotteries and Slavery in Indiana.	
Sec. 5. The First Indiana Legislature; the Territory of Michigan Formed.	
Sec. 6. Tecumseh and the Battle of Tippecanoe.	
Sec. 7. Aaron Burr.	
Sec. 8. Formation of Illinois Territory.	

	Page
VII. Organization of the State.....	103
Sec. 1. Periods of Growth.	
Sec. 2. Admission into the Union.	
Sec. 3. Population and Revenues.	
Sec. 4. Boundaries.	
Sec. 5. The Name of the State.	
Sec. 6. The Title of Hoosier.	

CHAPTER IV.

THE ST. JOSEPH COUNTY PIONEERS.

I. The Fur Trade.....	125
Sec. 1. Sources of Our Civilization.	
Sec. 2. The French Traders.	
Sec. 3. The British Policy in Relation to the Fur Trade.	
Sec. 4. The Great Fur Companies.	
II. Three Merchants of the Wilderness...	128
Sec. 1. Leclare.	
Sec. 2. Burnett.	
Sec. 3. Bertrand.	
III. Pierre Navarre	130
IV. The First Settlers.....	131
Sec. 1. Alexis Coquillard.	
Sec. 2. Lathrop M. Taylor.	
Sec. 3. First Name of the New Settlement.	
Sec. 4. Early Days on the Kankakee.	
Sec. 5. Other Early Settlers of the County.	
V. The Log House.....	139
VI. Reminiscences	140
Sec. 1. By Daniel Greene.	
Sec. 2. By John Stull.	
Sec. 3. Paper by William D. Bulla.	
Sec. 4. Recollections of Hugh V. Comp-ton.	
VII. Old Settlers' Reunions.....	150

CHAPTER V.

ORGANIZATION OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.

I. Land Titles and Public Surveys.....	155
Sec. 1. Indian Titles.	
Sec. 2. First Congressional and Legislative Acts.	
Sec. 3. First Surveys.	
Sec. 4. First Land Sales.	
II. Organization of the County.....	157
Sec. 1. Attached Territory.	
III. Our Form of County Government...	160
Sec. 1. The Virginia System.	
Sec. 2. The New England System.	
IV. The Board of Justices.....	161
Sec. 1. Organization of Civil Government.	
Sec. 2. The First Townships.	
V. The Board of Commissioners.....	164
Sec. 1. Act of Organization.	
Sec. 2. Our First Commissioners.	
VI. Early County Records.....	170
Sec. 1. Organization of the Board.	

Sec. 2. Adoption of a County Seal.	
Sec. 3. Other Orders.	
Sec. 4. Exemptions from Taxation.	
Sec. 5. The First Ferry and Steamboat Landing.	
Sec. 6. Licenses to Do Business.	
VII. Location of County Seat.....	173
Sec. 1. St. Joseph, the First County Seat.	
Sec. 2. Act to Re-locate the County Seat.	
Sec. 3. Relocation.	
Sec. 4. South Bend, the Permanent County Seat.	
VIII. The Townships Re-organized.....	176
IX. The County Boundaries.....	177

CHAPTER VI.

COUNTY BUSINESS.

I. Administrative Officers and Boards...	181
Sec. 1. The Clerk.	
Sec. 2. The Recorder.	
Sec. 3. The Auditor.	
Sec. 4. The County Agent.	
Sec. 5. The Sheriff.	
Sec. 6. The Coroner.	
Sec. 7. The Treasurer.	
Sec. 8. The Surveyor.	
Sec. 9. The County Board.	
II. The Circuit Court.....	187
Sec. 1. The President and Associate Judges.	
Sec. 2. The Circuits under the Constitution of 1816.	
Sec. 3. The Circuits Under the Constitution of 1851.	
Sec. 4. The First Session of the Court.	
Sec. 5. The Second Session of the Court.	
Sec. 6. Other Sessions of the Court, Under the Old Constitution.	
Sec. 7. Sessions of the Court Under the New Constitution.	
III. The Probate Court.....	198
Sec. 1. The First Session.	
Sec. 2. Further Sessions of the Court.	
IV. The Court of Common Pleas.....	201
Sec. 1. Organization.	
Sec. 2. The Court in St. Joseph County.	
V. A Celebrated Case.....	202
Sec. 1. Slavery, as Known in Indiana.	
Sec. 2. Our Slave Case.	
VI. The County Buildings.....	206
Sec. 1. The First County Jail.	
Sec. 2. The First Court House.	
Sec. 3. The Second County Jail.	
Sec. 4. The Second Court House.	
Sec. 5. The Third County Jail.	
Sec. 6. Re-arrangement of the Court House.	
Sec. 7. A Historic Building.	
Sec. 8. The Fourth County Jail.	
Sec. 9. The Third Court House.	
Sec. 10. The County Asylums.	
Sec. 11. The Old County Seminary.	
Sec. 12. The Orphans' Home.	

CHAPTER VII.

PUBLIC IMPROVEMENTS.

	Page
I. Our Rivers.....	223
Sec. 1. Improvements on the Kankakee.	
Sec. 2. Navigation of the St. Joseph.	
Sec. 3. Water Power of the St. Joseph.	
Sec. 4. Generation of Electric Power.	
Sec. 5. Accidents on the River.	
II. Ferries, Roads and Bridges.....	231
Sec. 1. Ferries Over the St. Joseph.	
Sec. 2. Bridges Over the St. Joseph.	
Sec. 3. Roads.	
III. Railroads.....	236
Sec. 1. The Lake Shore.	
Sec. 2. The Michigan Central.	
Sec. 3. The Grand Trunk.	
Sec. 4. The Division Street Incident.	
Sec. 5. Other Railroads.	
Sec. 6. Railroad Accidents.	
IV. Street Railways and Interurbans....	240
Sec. 1. The South Bend City Railway.	
Sec. 2. The South Bend & Mishawaka Railway.	
Sec. 3. The Indiana Railway.	
Sec. 4. The Chicago, South Bend & Northern Indiana Railway.	
Sec. 5. The Southern Michigan Railway.	
Sec. 6. The Chicago, Lake Shore & South Bend Line.	
V. Telegraphs and Telephones.....	243
Sec. 1. The Western Union.	
Sec. 2. The Postal.	
Sec. 3. The Central Union.	
Sec. 4. The Home.	
Sec. 5. The Old and the New.	
VI. Drainage.....	244
Sec. 1. The Swamp Land Act.	
Sec. 2. Professor Campbell's Survey.	
Sec. 3. Removal of the Momence Rock.	
Sec. 4. General Drainage.	
VII. Farmers' Societies and Fairs.....	267
Sec. 1. Agricultural Societies.	
Sec. 2. Hailstorm, Flood and Tornado.	
Sec. 3. Horticultural Society.	
Sec. 4. Farmers' Fire Insurance Company.	
Sec. 5. The Grange, Farmers' Institutes, etc.	

CHAPTER VIII.

THE TOWNSHIPS.

I. The First Division of the County Into Townships.....	272
Sec. 1. Michigan Township.	
Sec. 2. Deschemin Township.	
Sec. 3. German Township.	
Sec. 4. Portage Township.	
II. Second Division Into Townships.....	273
Sec. 1. Portage Township.	
Sec. 2. Center Township.	
Sec. 3. Highland Township.	
Sec. 4. Commissioners' Districts.	

III. Third Division Into Townships.....	273
Sec. 1. Penn Township.	
Sec. 2. Portage Township.	
Sec. 3. Olive Township.	
Sec. 4. Commissioners' Districts.	
IV. Two Lost Townships.....	274
Sec. 1. Plymouth.	
Sec. 2. Washington.	
V. The Present Townships.....	275
Sec. 1. German.	
Sec. 2. Greene.	
Sec. 3. Harris.	
Sec. 4. Union.	
Sec. 5. Liberty.	
Sec. 6. Warren.	
Sec. 7. Clay.	
Sec. 8. Center.	
Sec. 9. Madison.	
Sec. 10. Lincoln.	
Sec. 11. Penn.	
Sec. 12. Portage.	
Sec. 13. Olive.	

CHAPTER IX.

THE TOWNS.

I. Towns That Were.....	303
Sec. 1. St. Joseph.	
Sec. 2. Portage.	
Sec. 3. Plainfield.	
Sec. 4. Palestine.	
Sec. 5. Williamsport.	
Sec. 6. Greensburg.	
Sec. 7. Canton.	
Sec. 8. Mount Pleasant.	
Sec. 9. Terre Coupee.	
Sec. 10. Denniston.	
II. Unincorporated Towns.....	309
Sec. 1. Osceola.	
Sec. 2. Crum's Point.	
Sec. 3. Granger.	
Sec. 4. Wyatt.	
Sec. 5. Lindley.	
Sec. 6. Woodland.	
Sec. 7. Warwick.	
Sec. 8. Nutwood.	
III. Incorporated Towns.....	312
Sec. 1. New Carlisle.	
Sec. 2. North Liberty.	
Sec. 3. Lakeville.	
Sec. 4. River Park.	
Sec. 5. Walkerton.	

CHAPTER X.

THE CITY OF MISHAWAKA.

I. Formation and Incorporation.....	319
Sec. 1. The St. Joseph Iron Works.	
Sec. 2. Barbee's Plat.	
Sec. 3. Fowler's Addition.	
Sec. 4. Indiana City.	
Sec. 5. Other Additions.	
Sec. 6. Union of the Towns.	
Sec. 7. Incorporation.	
II. Business Enterprises.....	323

	Page		Page
III. Religious, Educational and Social...	333	VI. Religious, Educational and Social...	412
Sec. 1. The Episcopal Church.		Sec. 1. The Methodist Church.	
Sec. 2. The Baptist Church.		Sec. 2. The Presbyterian Church.	
Sec. 3. The Christian Church.		Sec. 3. The Reformed Church.	
Sec. 4. The Catholic Church.		Sec. 4. The Catholic Church.	
Sec. 5. The Evangelical Association.		Sec. 5. The Baptist Church.	
Sec. 6. The Methodist Church.		Sec. 6. The Episcopal Church.	
Sec. 7. The Lutheran Church.		Sec. 7. The Lutheran Church.	
Sec. 8. The Presbyterian Church.		Sec. 8. The Evangelical Church.	
Sec. 9. Schools.		Sec. 9. The Christian Church.	
Sec. 10. Reminiscences.		Sec. 10. Other Churches.	
Sec. 11. Societies and Clubs.		Sec. 11. The Young Men's Christian As-	
Sec. 12. Soldiers' Monument Association.		sociation.	
Sec. 13. The Press.		Sec. 12. The Young Women's Christian	
Sec. 14. Mishawaka Summary.		Association.	
IV. Town and City Government.....	348	Sec. 13. Hospitals.	
		Sec. 14. Hotels.	
		Sec. 15. Schools.	
		Sec. 16. Societies and Clubs.	
		VII. The Press.....	463
		Sec. 1. The Pioneer.	
		Sec. 2. The Register.	
		Sec. 3. The Tribune.	
		Sec. 4. The Times.	
		Sec. 5. The Sunday News.	
		Sec. 6. Other Newspapers.	
		Sec. 7. South Bend Summary.	
		CHAPTER XII.	
		NOTRE DAME AND ST. MARY'S.	
		I. Father Sorin's Predecessors.....	603
		Sec. 1. Pokagon.	
		Sec. 2. Stephen Theodore Badin.	
		Sec. 3. The Removal of the Indians.	
		II. The University of Notre Dame.....	612
		Sec. 1. The Congregation of the Holy	
		Cross.	
		Sec. 2. At Notre Dame.	
		Sec. 3. A Hard Winter.	
		Sec. 4. The First Buildings.	
		Sec. 5. Early College Years.	
		Sec. 6. The War Period.	
		Sec. 7. A Retrospect.	
		Sec. 8. The Development of the Univer-	
		sity.	
		Sec. 9. The Fire.	
		Sec. 10. The Presidency of the Rev.	
		Thomas E. Walsh.	
		Sec. 11. Jubilees.	
		III. St. Mary's Academy.....	698
		Sec. 1. Three Religious Societies.	
		Sec. 2. The Sisters at Notre Dame, Mish-	
		awaka, Bertrand.	
		Sec. 3. The Story of Bertrand.	
		Sec. 4. At the New St. Mary's.	
		Sec. 5. In the War for the Union.	
		Sec. 6. Days of Peace and Growth.	
		CHAPTER XIII.	
		TEMPERANCE AND PROHIBITION.	
		709

CHAPTER XIV.
MILITARY HISTORY.

	Page
I. Black Hawk.....	711
Sec. 1. St. Joseph County Troops and Forts.	
Sec. 2. Thomas S. Stanfield's Reminiscences.	

II. Other Early Wars.....	715
III. The War for the Union.....	716
Sec. 1. Enlistments.	
Sec. 2. The Roll of Honor.	
Sec. 3. The Grand Army of the Republic.	
Sec. 4. The Soldiers' Monument.	

INDEX

Abbott, Everett L., 376.
 Abenakis, 28.
 Adams, John, 81.
 Adelphia, 77.
 Adle, Henry A., 967.
 Admission of Indiana to Union, 103.
 Agricultural Societies, 267.
 Albert, Charles, 797.
 Aldrich, William H., 1037.
 Algonquin Indians, 37, 48.
 Allen County, 160.
 Allouez, Father Claude, 20, 21, 22, 39, 41, 43, 57, 603, 604.
 Altfield, Max E., 425.
 Alward, George H., 182, 359.
 Alward, George H., Jr., 888.
 Ambrose, Sister, 422.
 American Fur Company, 127, 132, 162, 172, 351.
 American Hotel, 435.
 American Telegraph and Telephone Co., 243.
 American Trust Co., 412.
 Amm, Leonard, 1026.
 Ancient Order of Hibernians, 462.
 Anderson, Andrew, 456, 520.
 Anderson, Andrew, Jr., 202.
 Anderson, William S., 832.
 Andre, Joseph, 358.
 Andrew, William, 202.
 Andrews, James M., 851.
 Angela, Mother, 344, 634, 701.
 Anti-Saloon League, 710.
 Antrim, Daniel, 313.
 Antrim, James P., 200.
 Appleby, Madison H., 412.
 Armstrong, James, 297.
 Arnold, Joseph B., 525.
 Arnold, Joseph D., 202.
 Arnold, Levi F., 161.
 Arson, 97.
 Articles of Capitulation (1760), 58.
 Articles of Confederation, 79, 80.
 Askin, 129.
 Asphalt Pavement, 370.
 Assenisipia, 75.
 Associate Judges, 187.
 Associated Charities, 459.
 Assumption School, 419, 422.
 Astor, John Jacob, 127.
 Asylums, County, 216.
 Athletics at Notre Dame, 698.
 Attorneys, 93.
 Attorneys-at-Law, in Indiana Territory, 96.
 Atwood, Amos T., 949.
 Auditor, County, 181.

Auditorium, The, 459.
 Auglaize River, 87.
 Augustine Lake, 283.
 Aukerman, Lewis S., 1006.
 Au Sable, Jean Baptiste Point, 129.
 Auten, John, 717.
 Auten Post, G. A. R., 389, 718, 736; Fortieth Anniversary, 736; 741; Appeal of, 745; 754.
 Auten Relief Corps, 389, 744.
 Ave Maria, The, 639.
 Avenue Hotel, 440.
 Babaugo Creek, 310.
 Bachtel, David, 1068.
 Bacon, Julia M., 416.
 Badin, Father, 604, 629.
 Badin, Stephen T., 51, 418.
 Baer, Alpheus F., 811.
 Baer, John H., 451.
 Bailey, Charles E., 1114.
 Baird, Thomas D., 409, 456.
 Baker, A. D., 558.
 Baker, Adam S., 407.
 Baker, Bessie A., 453.
 Baker, Darwin H., 411.
 Baker, George A., 128, 426, 453.
 Baker, L. F., 361, 378.
 Baker, Wm., 380.
 Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, 239.
 Banfil, Francis M., 424.
 Banker, John, 191, 195, 199.
 Banks of South Bend—State Bank, 409; Bank of State of Indiana, 410; First National, 410; South Bend National, 411; St. Joseph County Savings, 411; St. Joseph Loan and Trust Co., 412; People's Savings, 412; Citizens' National, 412; Merchants' National, 412; American Trust, 412; Citizens' Loan, Trust and Savings, 412.
 Banner, The Ligonier, 469.
 Baptist Church, Mishawaka, 334.
 Baptist Church, South Bend, 422, 423.
 Barbee's Plat, Mishawaka, 321.
 Barber, A. E., 534.
 Barker, John G., 365, 388, 857.
 Bar Association, 456.
 Bartlett, Charles H., 449, 453.
 Bartlett, John G., 565.
 Bartlett, David, 144.
 Bartlett, Joseph G., 565.
 Barrett Law, 370.
 Basil, Brother, 626, 671.
 Bass Lake, 18, 283.
 Bassett, Allen, 184.
 Bates, Benjamin A., 844.

- Bates, Demas D., 515.
 Battell, Joseph, 321.
 Battell Park, 321, 346.
 Baugo Creek, 291.
 Baumberger, Fred, 1146.
 Beach, William H., 372.
 Beacon, The St. Joseph, 191.
 Beal, Archibald, 347, 467.
 Beall, Brenton H., 965.
 Beall, Daniel W., 972.
 Beall, Rayon, 969.
 Becher, Jacob, 1141.
 Beck, Samuel, 573.
 Bedrock, Arched, 12.
 Beehler, Adam, 1132.
 Beehler, Jacob, 1125.
 Beehler, Joseph, 1069.
 Beehler, Peter, 1120.
 Beemer, Harrison G., 182.
 Beiger, Martin V., 790.
 Beitner, George B., 453.
 Belledin, John, 1072.
 Bellinger, William M., 978.
 Bells at Notre Dame, 634.
 Bennett, Philo, 196.
 Bettcher, George A., 988.
 Bergan, Joseph, 408.
 Bergan, William N., 408, 1147.
 Berner's Grove, 315.
 Bernhard, Albert, 852.
 Berrien County, Michigan, 161.
 Bertrand, 45, 47, 130, 151, 699; Story of, 701.
 Bertrand, Joseph, 129.
 Beulah Chapel, 425.
 Beyer, August F., 766.
 Beyer, Herman H., 856.
 Beyrer, John, 781.
 Bicknell, Ernest P., 136.
 Biddle, Horace P., 198.
 Biddle, William B., 197.
 Bierbauer, Ambrosia, 882.
 Big St. Joseph Station, 351.
 Bigelow, Francis, 642.
 Bingham, E. Volney, 524, 722.
 Bingham, Newton, 723.
 Bird, Andrew, 145.
 Bird, John, 144.
 Birdsell Clover Huller, Invention of, 401.
 Birdsell, Joseph B., 401, 491.
 Birdsell, John C., 362, 376, 401, 490, 709.
 Birdsell Manufacturing Co., 401, 405, 408.
 Birk, George A., 1120.
 Birk, George J., 1119.
 Birkinbine, John, 373.
 Biro, Michael J., 422.
 Bissell, Thelus M., 400.
 Blackford, Isaac, 104.
 Black Hawk, 146, 300.
 Black Hawk War, 144, 373, 711.
 "Black Robes," Nevin's, 604.
 Block House on Portage Prairie, 713.
 Blowney, Henry J., 716, 809.
 "Bluff," The, 14.
 Board of Commissioners, 160, 164, 190.
 Board of Health, South Bend, 358.
 Boards of Justices, 158, 160, 161, 169, 186, 190.
 Boles, James, 792.
 Bolin Lake, 277.
 Bonaparte, Napoleon, 32.
 Bond, Shadrach, 92.
 Boner, James, 929.
 Boot Jack Cemetery, 734.
 Borisowieg, N. G., 545.
 Borg, John F., 424, 839.
 Bostwick, James G., 549.
 Boundaries of County, 177.
 Boundary Line, Michigan or Indiana, 107, 620.
 Bourget, J., 419.
 Bowman Cemetery, 732.
 Bowman, David, 874.
 Bowman, John L., 855.
 Bowman, Joseph, 62.
 Bowman, Samuel, 187, 215.
 Bowsher, Delevan D., 583.
 Bowsher, Jay C., 583.
 Bowsher, N. P., 582.
 Bowsher, The N. P. Company, 582.
 Bowsher, N. P., Feed Mill Mfg. Co., 409.
 Bradley, John H., 196.
 Bray, Tyra W., 181, 186, 281, 305, 308, 312, 314, 321, 410.
 Brechenser, Charles, 864.
 Bredemus, Kate, 425.
 Breen, William P., 651.
 Brennaman, Andrew J., 1078.
 Brethren Church, 425.
 Briber, 97.
 Brick, Abraham L., 198, 389, 392, 506, 651.
 Bridges Over St. Joseph, 232; Iron, 233.
 Brick Pavement, 370.
 Brink, James H., 765.
 British Occupancy, 59.
 Brookfield, William, 157, 162, 173, 175, 183, 185, 276, 303, 355.
 Brower, Norman V., 347.
 Brown, Chapel W., 191, 195, 199.
 Brown, George A., 1064.
 Brown, John M., 183.
 Brown, William A., 358.
 Brown, Rezean, 842.
 Brownfield, John, 357, 358, 378, 400, 410, 411, 453.
 Brownson, Orestes A., 680.
 Brummitt, Mark L., 909.
 Brusie, Orville H., 378.
 Bruté, Bishop, 22, 52, 126, 610, 612.
 Bryant, Alfred, 414, 434, 435.
 Bryan, F. A., 568.
 Bryce, William K., 422.
 Buchheit, Jacob, 804.
 Buckley, J. M., 677.
 Buechler, Alexander A., 900.
 Bugbee, Almond, 384, 393, 554, 709.
 Bugbee, Willis A., 426, 453, 585.
 Building and Loan Associations, South Bend, 463.
 Bulla, Milton V., 186.
 Bulla, Thomas P., 146, 186.
 Bulla, Vincent S., 1004.
 Bulla, William F., 187.
 Burial, First, 145.
 Burner, Edgar E., 876.
 Burnet, Jacob, 91.
 Burnett, James, 129.
 Burnett, William, 128.
 Burns, Albert M., 854.
 Burr, Aaron, 102.
 Burroughs, Ricketson, 357, 358, 361, 410, 453.
 Business College, South Bend, 452.
 Business Enterprises of South Bend, 394.
 Business Enterprises of Mishawaka, 323.
 Butler, John P., 831.

- Butterworth, William E., 542.
 Butterworth, William W., 541.
 Butzbach, George, 762.
 Byerley, Samuel, 623.
 Byers, Andrew, 1155.
 Byers, Andrew, Sr., 1155.
 Byers, John, 813.
 Byers, John A., 861.
 Byrkit, Edmund B., 596.

 Cady, W. E., 823.
 Cahokia, 22, 42, 62, 63.
 Cahokias, 37.
 Caldwell, Francis M., 588.
 Caldwell, John, 377.
 Calkins, William H., 197, 456.
 Calvert, W. B., 501.
 Campbell, Marvin, 407, 411, 556.
 Campbell, Myron, 407, 499.
 Campbell, Prof. John L., 245.
 Campbell's Survey, 245.
 Camper, James W., 876.
 Camper Tent and Awning Works, 409.
 Canada, 58.
 Canton, 308.
 Carey Mission, 296, 301.
 Carlisle, Charles A., 394, 425, 432, 566.
 Carlisle, Richard R., 312.
 Carpenter, Guy C., 917.
 Carrier, Joseph C., 635, 647.
 Carrington, Edward, 78.
 Carroll, Thomas, 419, 420.
 Cary, Abner, 91.
 Case, Carl D., 422, 423.
 Case, Gaylord H., 513.
 Casey, Patrick H., 1140.
 Cass, Albert, 187.
 Cass, Lewis, 88, 226, 301.
 Cassaday, W. L., 407.
 Cassidy, John, 545, 639.
 Catholic Church, Mishawaka, 335.
 Catholic Church, South Bend, 417.
 Catholic Knights of America, 462.
 Catholic Order of Foresters, 462.
 Cauffman, Jacob E., 1061.
 Cauthorn, Henry S., 22.
 Cayugas, 37.
 Cedar Block Pavement, 369.
 Cedar Grove Cemetery, 732.
 Cement Sidewalks, 370.
 Center Township, 176, 177, 273, 288.
 Central Union Telegraph Co., 243.
 Cession by Virginia, 73; by Other States, 74.
 Chaffee, Walter D., 537.
 Chain Bridges, 233.
 Chain Lakes, 18, 36, 145, 283.
 Chamberlain, Charles, 1056.
 Chamberlain, Daniel, 1073.
 Chamberlain, Ebenezer, 196.
 Chamberlain Lake, 283.
 Champlain Epoch, 10.
 Chandonai, Charles, 129.
 Chandonai, John B., 607, 716.
 Chàonanous, 28.
 Chapin, Horatio, 172, 194, 356, 410, 414, 453.
 Chapin, Marshall P., 410.
 Chapman, John B., 194, 195.
 Chapman, John P., 918.
 Chardon, Father, 605.
 Charlevoix, 266.
 Charlevoix, on Portage Prairie, 46.
 Chase, Ira J., 297, 335.
 Cheobot, Frank W., 1144.
 Chersonesus, 75.
 Chestnutwood, Reece J., 182.
 Chicago Fire, 372.
 Chicago, Fort, 58.
 Chicago Historical Society, 63.
 Chicago and Lake Huron Railroad, 238.
 Chicago, Lake Shore and South Bend Railway, 243, 283.
 Chicago River, 21, 24, 32, 46.
 Chicago Road, 163, 309.
 Chicago, South Bend and Northern Indiana Railway, 242, 283.
 Chief Logan, 95.
 Children's Aid Society, 220.
 Children's Orphans' Home, 710.
 Chippewas, 37, 90.
 Chirhart, Ed S., 1155.
 Choral Club, 463.
 Chord, Samuel M., 181, 186, 202.
 Christ-Church, Mennonite, 425.
 Christian, Asa D., 1091.
 Christian Church, Mishawaka, 335.
 Christian Church, South Bend, 424.
 Christman, H. G., 829.
 Christoph, Frank P., 182, 817.
 Churches in Greene Township, 278.
 Churches in South Bend, 412-425.
 Cimmerman, F. M., 786.
 Cincinnati, 83.
 Circuit Court, 187; First Session, 190; Second Term, 193; Special Term, 196.
 Gissne, Robert, 145.
 Cisterns, Covered, 377.
 Citizens' Loan, Trust and Savings Co., 412.
 Citizens' National Bank, 412.
 City Building, Old, 213.
 City Charter of 1901, 367, 375.
 City Government, Modern, 367.
 City Hall, South Bend, 381, 382.
 City Improvements, in South Bend, 369.
 Civil War, 731.
 Civil War Period at Notre Dame, 635.
 Clark County, 100, 104.
 Clark, Elias V., 181.
 Clark, Father, 421.
 Clark, George C., 884.
 Clark, George Rogers, 22, 42, 58, 59, 70, 84, 86, 95, 160.
 Clark's "Memoir," 60, 62.
 Clark, Stanley A., 529.
 Clark, William, 95, 185, 349.
 Clark's Winter Campaign, 65.
 Clarke, George E., 198, 389, 516.
 Clay, Henry, 605.
 Clay Township, 283.
 Clear Lake, 19, 150, 283.
 Clenny, William, 845.
 Cleosophic Literary Society, 449.
 Clerk, of Circuit Court, 181.
 Cline, John, 1133.
 Clubs, South Bend, 452.
 Codd, Robert, 859.
 Code of 1807, 101.
 Cointet, Francis, 604.
 Colbert, 23.
 Cole, Charles W., 1154.
 Colerick, D. H., 194.

- Coles, Theodore S., 196.
 Colfax Manufacturing Co., 408.
 Colfax, Schuyler, 182, 218, 268, 358, 375, 411, 426, 453, 461, 466, 475, 630.
 Colfax, Sch., Jr., 364, 389.
 College Buildings, First at Notre Dame, 621.
 Collegiate Hall, St. Mary's, 703.
 Collins, Charles M., 794.
 Colmer Bros., Manufacturers, 409.
 Columbian Anniversary, St. Joseph's Church, 421.
 Colovin, Patrick J., 653.
 Commencement Exercises, Notre Dame, 626.
 Commercial-Athletic Club, 458.
 Commissioners, First, 169.
 Commissioner's Districts, 166, 169, 176, 273.
 Common Law, 93.
 Common Pleas, Court, 201; First Session, 201.
 Community Cemetery at Notre Dame, 733.
 Community of Association, 306.
 Community Ownership, 101.
 Company B, 15th Inf., 719.
 Company I, 9th Reg., 718.
 Comparet, Francis, 132, 351.
 Compton, Hugh V., 147, 912.
 Concrete Arch System in Bridges, 233.
 Confederacy, Indian, 31.
 Conflagration, A Fearful, 325.
 Conflagration in 1872, 337, 347.
 Connecticut, Claims, 73, 81.
 Conner, William H., 996.
 Connolly, Peter D., 198.
 Conrad, August, 843.
 Continental Cadets, 637, 716.
 Continental Congress, 80.
 Constitution of United States, 80; Ratification of, 81.
 Cook, Frederick J., 794.
 Cooney, Peter P., 419, 421, 635.
 Coquillard, Alexis, 55, 131, 133, 147, 157, 161, 170, 173, 175, 181, 199, 295, 304, 351, 410, 418, 716.
 Coquillard, Alexis, Jr., 383, 387, 476, 622.
 Coquillard, Alexis Theo., 314.
 Coquillard, Benjamin, 432.
 Coquillard Park, 383.
 Corbin, Horace, 202.
 Corby, Wm., 420, 635, 641, 692.
 Corn Island, 61.
 Coroner, The, 184.
 Corporations, 78.
 Corydon, 96, 103, 104.
 Cottrell, Samuel L., 184, 190, 193, 195.
 Councilmen at large, 367.
 Country Club, St. Joseph Valley, 463.
 County Agent, 162, 174, 183, 206.
 County Asylums, 216.
 County Board, 186.
 County Buildings, 206.
 County, First Division into Townships, 272.
 County Government, 160, 161.
 County of Illinois, 70, 71, 72, 160.
 County of Knox, 84, 100.
 County Lieutenant, 72.
 County Seat, 355.
 County Roads, 235.
 County Seat, 157; First, 173; Re-location, 174, 175, 304, 355.
 Coureur des Bois, 125.
 Court, Circuit, 187.
 Court House, First, 208; Second, 212; Rearrangement of, 214; Third, 215.
 Court, Probate, 198.
 Court Room, Order for Improvement, 197.
 Cover, John A., 839.
 Crabill, C. N., 1141.
 Crabill, Will G., 519.
 Crakes, Lawrence W., 805.
 Crawley, James A., 197.
 Creed, A. McMullen, 523.
 Creed, Jonathan P., 386, 518.
 Creosote Blocks, 370.
 Creviston, David B., 185.
 Crocker, Charles, 342.
 Crocker, Edwin B., 203, 456.
 Crockett, Charles E., 509.
 Crockett, Elmer, 215, 503.
 Crofoot, Henry, 932.
 Crogan, George, 132.
 Cronbach, Abraham, 425.
 Crum, Charles F., 1055.
 Crum, Nathaniel H., 1050.
 Crum's Point, 13, 45, 46, 47, 283, 310.
 Crumstown Cemetery, Soldiers in, 735.
 Crusade Movement, 709.
 Csepke, Stephen, 424.
 Cullar, William O., 1025.
 Culver, John M., 449.
 Culver, A. B., 378.
 Cunningham, Oliver M., 198.
 Cushing, Albert H., 774.
 Custard, Daniel D., 184.
 Cutler, Manasseh, 77.
 Cutter, George, 560.
 Czyzewski, Valentine, 421.
 Dablon, Father Claude, 20, 29, 57, 604.
 Dane, Nathan, 77, 78.
 Darling, Eratus S., 982.
 Daugherty, James, 581.
 Davies Shirt Co., 409.
 Davies, William O., 818.
 Davis, C. O., 449.
 Davis, James, 197, 202, 467.
 Davis, Josephus, 920.
 Davis, Terry, 97.
 Day, Lot, Jr., 184, 186, 211, 377, 441.
 Day, Lot, Sr., 184, 441.
 Dayton, Daniel, 184, 305, 307, 358, 361, 453.
 Dayton, Hiram, 713.
 Deacon Post, G. A. R., 744.
 Dean, Edwin R., 494.
 Dearborn County, 100, 104.
 Deavitt, Albert G., 197, 198.
 Debates, Public at Notre Dame, 698.
 DeCamp, Henry, 323.
 DeCamp, Israel, 184.
 Declaration of Independence, 80.
 Deed of Cession by Virginia, 71, 75, 105.
 Deer Lake, 283.
 Defrees, Anthony, 183, 410, 715.
 Defrees, Calvert H., 385, 391, 393, 409, 580.
 Defrees, John, 715.
 Defrees, John D., 195, 216, 226, 456, 464, 624.
 Defrees, Joseph H., 464.
 DeGroot, August H., 790.
 De Groote, John F., 421, 577.
 Delano, Alonzo, 186.
 Delaware, 81.
 Delawares, 37.
 DeLorenzi, Joseph H., 883.
 Delta Hose Co., No. 1, 378.

- Deming, Dwight, 187.
 Deming, John J., 201, 229, 320, 323.
 DeMotte, Mark L., 197.
 Denaut, Matthew S., 960.
 Denniston, 309.
 Denniston, Garrett V., 229.
 Deppen, Harrison, 1084.
 DeRhodes, James M., 496.
 Deschemin Township, 163, 172, 272.
 De Seille, Father, 418, 604.
 DeSoto, Hernando, 32, 57.
 Desplaines River, 10, 32.
 Detroit, 38, 42, 47, 58, 59, 83, 86, 125, 127, 132.
 De Vaca, Cabeza, 32.
 Dibble, Edward F., 201, 202.
 Dice, Isaiah L., 876.
 "Dictionary of Americanisms," 109.
 Dietrich, William B., 842.
 Dillon, Historian, 38.
 Dillon, Patrick, 638.
 Dinnen, John R., 638.
 Directory, of South Bend, 470.
 District of Louisiana, 94.
 Division Street Incident, 238.
 Dixon, John, 597.
 Dodd, Union, 840.
 Dodge Electric Light and Power Co., 331.
 Dodge Manufacturing Co., 326.
 Dodge, Wallace H., 326, 484.
 Dodge, William W., 326, 483.
 Dolph, C. A., 781.
 Donahue, John, 1086.
 Doolittle, Charles W., 877.
 "Double Hammer," 624.
 Dougherty, James, 184, 187.
 Dougherty, Thomas H., 964.
 Doughty, George W. E., 906.
 Douglas Debating Club, 461.
 Dragoon Trace, 47, 132.
 Drainage, General in St. Joseph County, 266.
 Drapier, Ariel E., 468, 716.
 Drapier, Charles E., 349.
 Drapier, William H., 468.
 Dresch, Chris A., 550.
 Drollinger, Erastus M., 184, 545.
 Drulinger, John, 186.
 DuBail, Edward F., 772.
 DuBois, Bishop, 614.
 Duck Lake, 19, 277.
 DuComb, Courtland P., 512.
 DuComb, Philip P., 1113.
 Duelling, 97.
 Duey, Renatus H., 868.
 Dugdale, Richard B., 184, 537.
 Dujarié, James F., 612, 698.
 Duneker, Henry, 872.
 Dunkard Cemetery, 733.
 Dunbar, Alvin S., 197, 451, 456.
 Dunn, B. F., 497.
 Dunn, Jacob P., 111.
 Dunn, Reynolds, 186, 196.
 Dunnahoo, Frank H., 514.
 Dunnahoo, Mrs. F. H., 459.
 Dunnahoo, Griffin S., 1066.
 DuQuesne, Fort, 58.
 DuShane, James, 449, 453.
 Early, Charles E., 985.
 Early, Isaac, 187, 983.
 Eastburn, John, 1109.
 Eastern State, The, 79.
 Eaton, Edwin D., 1070.
 Eaton, Jacob, 187.
 Eberhart, Fred G., 937.
 Eberhart, George F., 801.
 Eberhart, James C., 184, 938.
 Eckler Manufacturing Company, 1156.
 Eckler, Henry C., 1156.
 Eckman, Joseph, 824.
 Eckstein, Jacob, 791.
 Eddy, Norman, 378, 456, 722.
 Education, 78.
 Edwards, James F., 418, 644, 681.
 Edwardsburg, 47, 280.
 Eel River, 126.
 Egan, Francis, 484.
 Egbert, Andrew J., 198.
 Egbert, Elisha, 201, 305, 453, 456.
 Egbert, John, 183.
 Egbert, Lyman C., 896.
 Eighty-seventh Inf., 726.
 Eikenberry, David, 425.
 Elbel, Henry F., 562.
 Elder, Thomas, 933.
 Eldredge, H. W., 874.
 Election, First County, 161.
 Electoral College, 80.
 Electric Light Plant, South Bend, 401.
 Electric Power, Development of, 230.
 Elevations, 17.
 Elkhart County, 159.
 Elkhart River, 12.
 Elks Club, 461.
 Elks, Order of, 461.
 Elliott, George L., 845.
 Elliott, Gilbert A., 515.
 Elliott, L. A., 347.
 Elliot, William G., 461.
 Ellis, E. W. H., 324, 347, 471.
 Ellsworth, Aaron B., 182.
 Ellsworth, John C., 886.
 Enabling Act, Indiana, 104, 105.
 Endley, J. F., 317.
 Endley, William A., 317, 980.
 Endlich, Charles, 489.
 English Literature at Notre Dame, 683.
 English, W. H., 22, 43, 60, 70.
 English, William H., 810.
 Entail, 78.
 Episcopal Church, Mishawaka, 333.
 Episcopal Church, South Bend, 423.
 Epworth Hospital, 393, 431.
 Erb, August, 884.
 Ernsperger, John, 187.
 Essick, Michael L., 197.
 Eucharistic Congress, 696.
 Euglossian Literary Society, 449.
 European Hotel, 439.
 Eutzler, George, 934.
 Evangelical Association, 336.
 Evangelical Association, First Church, 424.
 Evangelical Church, South Bend, 424.
 Evans, Charles A., 451.
 Everts, Gustavus A., 193, 195, 196.
 Ewing, David A., 451.
 Ewing, Sydenham C., 943.

- Exchange Hotel, 410, 440.
 Eyer, Daniel, 446.
- Fair Cemetery, Soldiers in, 735.
 Fair, John B., 1034.
 Fair, Leander, 1036.
 Fallize, Michael Ph., 421, 431, 462.
 Farmers' Fire Insurance Co., 271.
 Farmers' Institute, 271.
 Farneman, Lucy, 1086.
 Farnsworth, Reuben L., 196, 197, 202, 456.
 Fassett, Ann T., 453.
 Fassett, Chauncey N., 408, 453, 470, 502.
 Fassnacht, Christopher, 408.
 Feaser, George W., 751.
 "Federalist, The," 82.
 Feiten, Eugene A., 891.
 Feiten, John, 891.
 Feldman, George G., 365, 523.
 Fellows, Joseph, 229.
 Ferris, Alfred, 933.
 Ferris, Nelson, 184.
 Ferries, Over St. Joseph River, 231.
 Ferries, Regulation of, 92.
 Ferrisville Cemetery, Soldiers in, 734.
 Ferry, First at South Bend, 171, 440; First Over St. Joseph River, 132.
 Ferry, Public, at Portage, 305.
 Fickentscher, Gustav, 470.
 Fields, Priscilla C., 1069.
 Fields, Stephen, 1069.
 Fifth Ward, South Bend, 366.
 Finch, Frank J., 805.
 Finch, John, 184.
 Findlay, James, 91.
 Fink, H. A., 532.
 Pink, Reuben, 812.
 Fire Department of South Bend, 371, 377.
 Fire, Great, in Mishawaka, 345.
 Fire at Notre Dame, 656.
 Fire of 1865, 442.
 Fire Station, Central, South Bend, 380.
 Fire Tournament, 378.
 First Footprints, 20.
 First National Bank, South Bend, 410.
 First Through Train, 237.
 Fish, Frederick S., 459.
 Fish Lake, 19, 283.
 Fisher, Joel, 1054.
 Fisher, Manuel M., 349.
 Fishing Village, of Miamis, 39.
 Fites, John W., 834.
 Fitzgerald, Thomas J., 951.
 Floods, 270.
 Flouring Mill, First, 295.
 Foe, Frank H., 987.
 Fogarty, Edward J., 365, 751.
 Fogle, Christian R., 1111.
 Fogle, Fannie, 1111.
 Folding Paper Box Co., 407.
 Folk, George N., 1049.
 Folsom, C. G., Stove Co., 409.
 Folsom, Charles G., 567.
 Foote, Larmon, 1013.
 Ford, George, 197, 198, 202, 401, 453, 508.
 Ford, Josephine Oliver, 401.
 Fordham, 315.
 Forster, Henry, 762.
 Forsyth, Robert, 128.
 Fort, Building of a, 714.
 Fort Chartres, 58.
 Fort Crevecoeur, 27.
 Fort Dearborn, 129.
 Fort Defiance, 87.
 Fort Frontenac, 32, 57.
 Fort Greenville, 87.
 Fort Harmar, 77.
 Fort Massac, 62.
 Fort Miamis, 24, 28, 32, 40, 58.
 Fort Pitt, 59.
 Fort Recovery, 87, 93, 106.
 Fort Sackville, 69.
 Fort Stephenson, 132.
 Fort St. Joseph's, 39, 44, 47, 58, 59, 95, 128, 130, 151, 603, 605.
 Fort Washington, 83.
 Fort Wayne, 38, 58, 125, 127, 132.
 Fort William, 127.
 Forty-eighth Inf., 724.
 Foster, Andrew J., 451.
 Foster, Edson, 820.
 Foster, James L., 202.
 Foster, Robert S., 736.
 Fountain, George M., 313, 182, 492.
 Fourth Ward, South Bend, 366.
 Fowler's Addition, to Mishawaka, 321; H. H. Fowler's, 322.
 Fox River, 21.
 Fox, Truman, 184.
 Frame, James L., 840.
 Frame, Nathaniel, 187.
 Francais, Gilbert, 695.
 Frank, Charles, 350, 498.
 Frankenberry, Thomas K., 1042.
 Franklin, Benjamin, 81.
 Franklin County, 104.
 Franklin House, 438.
 Fraternal Organizations of South Bend, 461.
 Fraternities of Mishawaka, 344.
 Frazer, James S., 196, 198, 266.
 Fredericks, John, 1127.
 Fredericks, Joseph A., 1128.
 Free Democrat, 347.
 Free Methodist Church, Mishawaka, 337.
 Free Methodist Church, South Bend, 413.
 Free Press, The, 466.
 Free Soil Movement, 471.
 French Era, 57.
 French Revolution, 86.
 Freyermuth, George W., 751, 1146.
 Frick, Alfred B., 1085.
 Frontenac, 23.
 Frontenac, Fort, 57.
 Fuchs, Christopher, 1105.
 Fullerton, Daniel A., 162, 191.
 Fuller, Frank L., 1047.
 Fulmer, Jacob, 930.
 Fulmer, John D., 187, 215.
 Fulmer, John H., 929.
 Funk, Walter A., 198, 507.
 Fur Companies, Great, 127.
 Fur Trade, 125; British Policy Relative to, 126.
 Futter, Fred P., 879.
 Futter, Jacob, 1134.
- Gallagher, John, 779.
 Garoutte, Augustus B., 924.
 Garrison, James M., 539.
 Garwood, Stacy, 144.
 Gazette, New Carlisle, 313.

- Gazetteer of the St. Joseph Valley, The, 470.
 Gearhart, Henry B., 994.
 Geltz, William, 847.
 Geological Catastrophe, 352.
 Geological Map, St. Joseph County, 16.
 Geological Report, State, 1886, 2.
 George, William G., 197, 359, 456.
 George III., 126.
 Georgia, 81.
 General Court, 95.
 Genet, Mr., 86.
 German Baptist Brethren, 425.
 German Township, 163, 272, 275.
 Geyer, Charles F., 1131.
 Geyer, Edmund G., 1009.
 Geyer, Robert E., 1003.
 Gibault, Father, 22, 42, 63, 66, 84.
 Gibson County, 104.
 Gibson, John, 95, 103.
 Giddings, Mary E., 820.
 Giddings, William W., 820.
 Girac, Professor, 626, 671.
 Glacial Action, 2.
 Glacial Drift, 1.
 Gladstone, W. E., 80.
 Gladwin, Major, 42.
 Glover, George V., 184, 821.
 Goetz, Charles L., 389, 409, 768.
 Goetz, George, 778.
 Goffeney, Martin, 424, 579.
 Golden Jubilee at Notre Dame, 697.
 Goniec Polski, 470.
 Good, John, 1124.
 Good's Opera House, 442.
 Goodwin, T. A., 110.
 Goose Lake, 19, 277.
 Goppert, Herman F., 975.
 Gorby, S. S., 2.
 Gordon, Martin E., 1129.
 Gordon, Moses, 1077.
 Gorski, Marion S., 867.
 Gorsuch, Issac, 889.
 Grace Church, South Bend, 413.
 Graham, Archibald, 1150.
 Graham, Henry J., 552.
 Graham, John A., 800.
 Grammar School, South Bend, 450.
 Grand Army of the Republic, 215, 463, 707, 735.
 Grand Central Hotel, 439.
 Grand Jurors (1832), 191, 193.
 Grand Trunk Railroad, 237, 283.
 Grand View Hotel, 439.
 Grange, Felix, 837.
 Grange, The, 271, 311.
 Granger, 280, 310.
 Granger, Alexis, 419, 691.
 Grant County, 160.
 Grant, Wilfrid, 380.
 Grapevine Creek, 13, 282.
 Gravel Roads, 235.
 Graves, William E., 186.
 Graveyard, Set Aside in 1831, 174, 175.
 Gray Mill, Passing of Old, 285.
 Great Miami River, 94.
 Great Sauk Trail, 46, 129, 151, 163, 223, 234, 272, 301, 309.
 Green Bay, 21.
 Green Bay Route, 24.
 Green, Powers, 196, 411, 423.
 Greene, C. B., 827.
 Greene, Daniel, 140, 453, 559.
 Greene, Ezekiel, 185.
 Greene, James B., 548.
 Greene, Mary L., 145.
 Greene, Nathan, 144.
 Greene Township, 276.
 Greensburg, 308.
 Greenville, 155; Treaty of, 87.
 Gregori, Luigi, 665.
 Grider, Edward, 944.
 Griffin, John, 95.
 "Griffin," The, 23, 24, 27.
 Griffith, John W., 1097.
 Griffith, N. B., 412.
 Grimes, James F., 551.
 Grise, George H., 1129.
 Grob, Paul, 1126.
 Groff, John, 182.
 Grose, Abraham L., 1127.
 Grose, Alexander, 1137.
 Grotto, The, 675.
 Grzesk, Wladyslaw A., 522.
 Gurney, Aaron, 197.
 Gushwa, William E., 1011.
 Guy, Miller, 425, 522.
 Habeas Corpus, 78.
 Haberle, John B., 869.
 Hager, Frank D., 547.
 Hager, George L., 827.
 Hager, W. A., 532.
 Hagerty, Dennis J., 421.
 Hagerty, John, 359, 360, 456.
 Hailandière, Bishop, 612.
 Hailstorm of 1886, 270, 421.
 Hain, Henry E., 867.
 Haines, Jesse, 296.
 Ham, Levi J., 361.
 Hamilton, Alex., 81.
 Hamilton Cemetery, 733.
 Hamilton, Henry, 65, 69.
 Hamilton (see Terre Coupee).
 Hammond, Alonzo J., 823.
 Hammond, Hilton, 783.
 Hammond, Matthew B., 186.
 Hammond, Seth, 1041.
 Hanbert, Peter, 892.
 Hancock, John, 81.
 Hanford, W. H., 543.
 Hanna, William C., 196.
 Hanna, Samuel, 132.
 Hanna (Samuel) & Co., 162, 351.
 Hannah, William C., 316.
 Hans, Otto S., 831.
 Harbou, John W., 183, 598.
 Hardman, Benjamin, 186.
 Hardman, Jacob, 184.
 Hardy, Robert, 184.
 Harper, Abram R., 232.
 Harmar, Gen., 84.
 Harris, Albert M., 589.
 Harris, Jonas, 286.
 Harris Line, 107.
 Harris Prairie, 279.
 Harris Prairie Cemetery, 733.
 Harris Township, 279.
 Harrison, Christopher, 104.
 Harrison County, 104.
 Harrison Mansion, 94.
 Harrison, William H., 92, 95.

- Harrod, William, 62.
 Hartman, Jonathan, 1083.
 Hartman, John G., 1147.
 Hartzell, Frank P., 1153.
 Hascall, Milo B., 469.
 Hay, John, 185.
 Healy, Robert W., 638.
 Heaton, Charles M., 358.
 Hebrew Cemetery, Soldiers in, 732.
 Heid, Paul, 424.
 Heimberg, Herman F., 839.
 Heiner, L. E., 806.
 Heinzman, Andrew, 1040.
 Helm, Leonard, 62, 64.
 Henderson, Joseph, 202.
 Hendricks, Thomas A., 197.
 Hendricks, William, 104.
 Hen Island, 230.
 Hennepin, Louis, 22, 23, 24, 27, 33.
 Henricks, John A., 378, 409, 446, 453, 716.
 Henry, G. W., 424.
 Henry (of Maryland), 77.
 Henry, Patrick, 42, 60, 72, 81.
 Herald, The, 469.
 Hering, Frank E., 527.
 Herzog, August, 759.
 Herzog, John A., 760.
 Hess, A. S., 808.
 Hess, William B., 202.
 Heston, Mahlon, 1100.
 Hibberd, John A., 526.
 Hickey, Louis A., 888.
 Highland Township, 176, 177, 273.
 High School, South Bend, 445, 446, 448.
 Hildebrand, Jeremiah, 182.
 Hill, Jacob W., 538.
 Hillier, Samuel A., 570.
 Hine, Henry B., 864.
 Hiner, L. E., 806.
 Hinsdale, Mary L., 449.
 Historie Building, A, 215.
 Historical Data, 22.
 Historical Display, 453.
 Historical Quarters, 455.
 Hoban, Martin, 370, 420.
 Hoban, Thomas M., 511.
 Hodson, Charles L., 1142.
 Hoffman, George J., 890.
 Holland, William H., 761.
 Holler, Charles E., 709.
 Holloway, George, 144, 186.
 Holloway, John H., 851.
 Holloway, Woolman J., 182.
 Hollowell, Ralph S., 1139.
 Holly Water Works, 371.
 Holman, William S., 469.
 Holtzendorff, Henry C., 184.
 Holy Trinity Eng. Lutheran Church, 424.
 Home, H. N. S., 833.
 Home Telephone Co., 244, 565.
 Honored Soldier Dead, 740.
 Hooper, John, 358.
 "Hoosier's Nest," 112.
 Hoosier, Title of, 109.
 Hooton, Emily J., 913.
 Hooton, Francis M., 915.
 Hooton, Jacob, 914.
 Horine, Phillip G., 1138.
 Horticultural Society, 271.
 Horse-stealing, 97.
 Hose Company No. 3, 378.
 Hosford, W. B., 489.
 Hosinski, Frank S., 880.
 Hospitals, of Sisters of Holy Cross, 708.
 Hospitals, South Bend, 431.
 Hotel, Calvin Lilly's, 190.
 Hotels, in South Bend, 432.
 Houghton Post, G. A. R., Roll of Honor, 734, 744.
 Houser, Moses G., 1018.
 Hovis, W. F., 459.
 * Howard, George, 91.
 Howard Park, 383, 387, 388, 393.
 * Howard, Timothy E., 182, 389, 474.
 * Howard, Thomas M., 182.
 Howe, William P., 356.
 Hoynes, William, 649, 751.
 Hubbard, Arthur L., 389.
 Hubbard, Lucius, 135, 198, 299, 309, 360, 411, 453, 456, 520, 651.
 Hubbard, Martha O., 453.
 Hubbard, Ranson, 186, 410.
 Huber, Andrew, 869.
 Hudson, Albert, 493.
 Hudson Bay Company, 127, 130.
 Hudson Cemetery, 734.
 Hudson, Daniel E., 640.
 Hudson, Father, 684.
 Hughes, John, 744, 754.
 Hughes, Marshall, 598.
 Humane Society, 393, 458.
 Humphreys, Louis, 358, 360, 378, 412, 416, 453.
 Hunsberger, Adam, 185, 1151.
 Hunt Bros. Wagon and Carriage Works, 409.
 Hunt, George S., 559.
 Hunt, Franklin W., 305.
 Hunt, Herbert, 471.
 Hunt, William I., 588.
 Huntsinger, Abraham, 709.
 Hutchins, Isaac, 378, 380.
 Hurd, Alanson M., 229, 319, 320.
 Hurd, Orlando, 186, 323, 324.
 Hurlbut, Harris E., 217.
 Huron Basin, Saginaw Bay, 10.
 Hurst, Henry, 96.
 Iachholtz, John, 1000.
 Ice Lobes, Three Great, 10; Maumee or Erie, 10; Saginaw, 10.
 Illinois, 75.
 Illinois, Indians, 28, 37.
 Illinois Territory, Formation of, 103.
 Immanuel Baptist Church, 423.
 Imprisonment, First in State's Prison, from St. Joseph County, 196.
 Imprisonment for Debt, 98.
 Impromptu Club, 460.
 Indian Camps, 43.
 Independent Order of Foresters, 462.
 Indiana Avenue Christian Church, 424.
 Indiana Boundary Line, 94.
 Indiana City, 321.
 Indiana Club, 463.
 Indiana Courier, The, 470.
 Indiana Foundry Co., 408.
 Indiana Historical Society, 111.
 Indiana Lumber and Manufacturing Co., 408.
 Indiana, Name of, 108.
 Indiana Railway, 241.
 Indiana, Southern Boundary of, 105.
 Indiana Territory, 93.

- Indiana Toesin, 347.
 Indian Land Titles, 88; to St. Joseph County Lands, 90.
 Indian Titles, 155.
 Indians, Christian, 604.
 Indians, Removal of, 607.
 Industrial Era, The, 470.
 Ingersoll, Philo F., 835.
 Ingleright, Andrew J., 985.
 Ingram, Andrew, 191.
 Interurban Railways (see Street Railways).
 Ipes, Peter W., 349.
 Ireland, David A., 389.
 Ireland, D. C., 347.
 Ireland, John, 186, 196.
 Ireland, Samuel J. H., 323.
 Iron Bridges, 233.
 Iroquois Confederacy, 42, 109.
 Iroquois Indians, 21, 27, 29, 37, 47.
 Irvin, Israel, 1028.
 Irving, Washington, 126.
 Ivey, Homer P., 981.
 Ivins, Charles, 901.

 Jackson, Charles H., 887.
 Jackson, Charles S., 1081.
 Jackson County, 104.
 Jackson, Francis M., 198.
 Jackson, Newton, 187.
 Jacobs, Charles P., 202.
 Jahnke, August E., 880.
 Jail, 195; First County, 206; Second, 211; Third, 213; Fourth, 215.
 Jakways, William, 914.
 Jasouske, Joseph, 1142.
 Jay, John, 82.
 Jefferson County, 104.
 Jefferson, Thomas, 32, 59, 61, 75, 76.
 Jennings, James E., 937.
 Jennings, Jesse W., 1085.
 Jennings, Jonathan, 104.
 Jennings, Samuel R., 1071.
 Jernegan, Edward A., 505.
 Jernegan, Jonathan L., 410.
 Jernegan, Joseph L., 194, 196, 198, 416, 456.
 Jernegan, Ralph H., 525.
 Jesse Coppock Post, G. A. R., 744.
 Johannes, Peter, 422.
 Johnson, Amasa, 202.
 Johnson, Evan C., 184, 358.
 Johnson, Henry W., 414.
 Johnson Hotel, 440.
 Johnson, James M., 422.
 Johnson, Lea P., 147.
 Johnson, Peter, 135, 172, 196, 211, 356, 432, 434.
 Johnson, William S., 77.
 Johnson, Zachariah M., 184.
 Johnston, Washington, 97.
 Joliet, Louis, 21, 23.
 Jones, Aaron, 183, 857.
 Jones, Elias D., 316.
 Jones, Gardner, 626, 679, 684.
 Jones, John R., 96.
 Jones, Vitus G., 514.
 Jordan, David, 1076.
 Joseph Bowen Post, G. A. R., 744.
 Jubilees at Notre Dame, 685.
 Judges, 92; of Circuit Court, 187.
 Julian, George W., 284.
 Jungkuntz, Carl, 875.

 Juries, of First Circuit Court, 190.
 Jurors, 172.
 Jury, Territorial, 96.
 Just, A. M., 573.
 Justices of the Peace, 93.

 Kalczynski, George W. J., 470, 505.
 Kaley, Joseph, 393.
 Kaley Park, 384.
 Kamm, Adolph, 594.
 Kamm, Schellinger Co., 594.
 Kane, Elmer, 1021.
 Kankakee Pond, 305.
 Kankakee River, 1, 10, 25, 32, 41.
 Kankakee, Early Days on, 136.
 Kaskaskia, 22, 42, 58, 59, 62, 83, 95; Capture of, 62.
 Kaskaskias, 37.
 Kauffman, Horace M., 772.
 Kean, John, 78.
 Keedy, John H., 359.
 Keller, Frederick W., 186.
 Kelley, Peter, Sr., 1134.
 Kelley, W. P., 775.
 Kemble, Fred T., 784.
 Kerr, Miller F., 850.
 Kerr, William F., 804.
 Keltner, Josiah G., 846.
 Kerner, Jacob F., 380.
 Kickapoo, Indians, 21.
 Kiefer, Charles E., 1074.
 Kimball, Caleb, 375.
 Kimball, Caleb A., 411, 500.
 Kime, George, 1030.
 King, Ben, 287.
 King, S. R., 373.
 Kingston, 23.
 Kinzie, John, 128.
 Kinzie, Titus E., 186.
 Kirsch, Jacob P. T., 783.
 Kish, Joseph, 863.
 Kitch, John W., 521.
 Kizer, W. L., 758.
 Klein, Peter, 422.
 Klingel, John, 446.
 Knights of Columbus, 462.
 Knights of Pythias, South Bend, 461.
 Knights of the Maccabees, 462.
 Knoblock, John C., 187, 375, 407, 408.
 Knoblock, Otto M., 316, 407, 453, 459, 583.
 Knox County, 91; 104, 160.
 Koehanowski, Paul, 848.
 Koener, Andrew, 816.
 Koerth, Adolph, 861.
 Koenig, Charles, 424.
 Kollar, Josiah G., 1078.
 Koontz, Samuel, Sr., 954.
 Kowalski, F. H., 866.
 Kownover, William C., 1089.
 Korpel, Charles V., 808.
 Krause, Charles, 856.
 Krieghbaum, Charles M., 509.
 Kreighbaum, Hiram W., 425.
 Kunstman, Andrew, 555.
 Kuss, Fred W., 807.
 Kurtz, George A., 198.
 Kyser, Nelson H., 365, 835.

 La Coss, Charles, 386.
 Laetare Medal, Notre Dame, 680.
 La Feber, Walter F., 947.

- Lafayette Hotel, 439, 440.
 Lafayette Street Sewer, 371.
 Lafortune, Antoine, 129.
 LaGrange County, 160.
 Laidlaw, Edwin C., 927.
 Laing, Samuel, 935.
 Lake County, 160.
 Lake Erie and Western Railroad, 239.
 Lake, James, 869.
 Lake Maxinkuckee, 8, 45, 47.
 Lake Michigan, Southern Bend of, 100.
 Lakes, 6; of St. Joseph County, 18.
 Lake Shore Railroad, 236, 283, 632.
 Lakeville, 19, 280, 314.
 Lakeville Cemetery, Soldiers in, 735.
 Laline, Jean, 129.
 La Mai, 129.
 Lambert, Francis E., 518.
 Lammedee, Frederick W., 1020.
 Lamport, William K., 468.
 Lancaster, S. C., 925.
 Land Patents, 157.
 Land Sales, First, 157.
 Lang, Anna, 1149.
 Lang, Frederick, 185.
 Lang, Herman F., 860.
 Lang, Mathias, 1149.
 Lang, Otto E., 595.
 LaPierre, A. M., 358.
 LaPierre, Louis S., 536.
 LaPorte County, 160.
 LaSalle, 18, 21, 23, 29, 57, 58, 95, 217, 291, 603.
 LaSalle Avenue, 132.
 LaSalle Paper Co., 408.
 LaSalle Park, 384, 388, 389.
 Lasly, John D., 162, 184.
 Lauth, Peter, 578.
 Law School, Notre Dame, 648.
 Lawton, Henry W., 389.
 Leclaire, Antoine, 128.
 Lehman, Noah, 182.
 Lederer, John N., 187, 215, 584.
 Lee, Richard H., 78, 81.
 Leeper, David R., 363, 432.
 Leeper Island, 130.
 Leeper Park, 131, 384, 389.
 Leeper, Samuel, 389.
 Leer, Delmar C., 591.
 Leer, Henry, 764.
 Leggett, Joseph, 1008.
 Legislature, First of Indiana, 100.
 Legras, Col. J. M. P., 72.
 Lemennier, Augustine, 652.
 Leonard, John W., 931.
 Lerner, John, 1091.
 L'Etourneau, Louis J., 420.
 Leroy, Myron D., 942.
 Leslie, George H., 186.
 Leveque, E., 419.
 Lewinski, Konstantine, 885.
 Lewis, Henry G. W., 408.
 Liberty Township, 281.
 Library, County, 158.
 Library, Public, South Bend, 450, 455.
 Licenses, Early Business, 172.
 Light Guards, South Bend, 751.
 Lilly, Calvin, 172; His Hotel, 190; 199, 208, 226, 432.
 Lilly, Father, 671.
 Lilly's Tavern (see Calvin Lilly), 433.
 Lincoln Township, 290.
 Linden Avenue Christian Church, 425.
 Lindley, 283, 311.
 Lindsay, John F., 181.
 Lindsey, John T., 410.
 Lindt, Harriet L., 552.
 Lineback, Jonathan, 1114.
 Lister, Sorden, 286, 361.
 Liston, J. A., 191, 194, 456.
 Little Lake, 19.
 Little Turtle, 38, 102, 155.
 Lockwood, Francis W., 530.
 Log House, The, 139; First Hewed, 146.
 Lohr, Eugene F., 449.
 Long, Andrew H., 184.
 Long, Enos E., 526.
 Longenecker, Zachary T., 1124.
 Longley, William H., 362, 407.
 Lontz, Samuel C., 587.
 Lonzo, Joseph C., 871.
 Loreto, Church of Our Lady of, 703.
 Losantiville, 83.
 Lotteries, 98.
 Lotz, Dumont, 449.
 Loughman, George W., 183, 362.
 Louis XIV., 23.
 Louisiana, 32, 55.
 Lowell, 366.
 Lowell Heights, 12, 14.
 Lowell Heights M. E. Church, 413.
 Lowry, Franklin E., 1093.
 Lowry, Robert, 196.
 Lucas, Robert F., 1152.
 Luers, John Henry, 635.
 Lundy, Harry A., 1152.
 Lutheran Cemetery, Soldiers in, 735.
 Lutheran Church, South Bend, 424.
 Lydick, H. Wilson, 1065.
 Lynch, William F., 637, 716.
 Lyon, Richard H., 285, 306, 315, 453, 468, 498.
 Lyons, Joseph A., 640, 643.
 MacDonald, Frank E., 592.
 Mack, William, 411, 814.
 Mackibbin, Stuart, 389, 449, 453, 1152.
 Mackinac, 57.
 Mackinac Island, 21.
 Mackinaw, 125.
 Mackinaw Company, 127.
 "Madison's Debates," 82.
 Madison, James, 81, 82.
 Madison Township, 289; Rural High School, 290.
 Mahingans, 46.
 Main, John, 812.
 Malloy, Edward, 469.
 Mangus, Dayton D., 1094.
 Mangus, Levi, 1013.
 Mann, James A., 356.
 Manning, Ulysses G., 461, 852.
 Manual Labor School, 630.
 Maple Grove Cemetery, Soldiers in, 733.
 Maple Grove Church, 278.
 Maps, Ancient, 38.
 Marble, Orson, 1060.
 Marciniak, R. A., 422.
 Marciniak, Roman, 577.
 Marker, Jacob, 1117.
 Marquette, James, 20, 23, 24, 57, 217, 603.
 Marriage, First, in Greene Township, 145.
 Marsh, Daniel S., 467.

- "Marshall Day," 457.
 Marshal, of South Bend, 358.
 Maryland, 81.
 Martin, Fred W., 365, 832.
 Martindale, John, 186.
 Mascouten, Indians, 21; Village of, 27.
 Mason, George, 61.
 Masonic Lodges, South Bend, 461.
 Massachusetts, Claims, 73, 81.
 Massey, John, 356.
 Mather, Joseph H., 196.
 Matthews, Claude, 124, 198.
 Matthews, George W., 181, 182, 216, 217, 412.
 Matthews, Jonathan, 408.
 Matthews Steam Boiler Works, 408.
 Maudlin, Edward L., 899.
 Maumee, Rapids of, 86.
 Maumee River, 21, 40, 42, 58, 87.
 Maumee Towns, 87.
 Maurer, G. Albert, 790.
 Mayr, Frank, 387.
 Mazeppa Hose Co. No. 5, 378.
 McAllister, Elbert W., 538.
 McCartney's Creek, 1.
 McCartney, William, 191, 195, 295, 305, 306.
 McCarty, Charles E., 184, 955.
 McCarty, Charles E., 184.
 McCarty, Benjamin, 184.
 McClellan, H., 833.
 McCombs, Lambert, 161, 830.
 McCoy, Isaac, 301.
 McDonald, Charles A., 453, 469, 504.
 McDonald, Daniel, 48.
 McDonald, S. M., 548.
 McDonald, William, 1062.
 McEnderfer, Allen, 1016.
 McEnderfer, B. F., 995.
 McErlain & Elbel Cigar Box Manufacturers, 409.
 McHenry, Arthur C., 425.
 McHenry, W. K., 591.
 McIlvaine, W., 424.
 McNery, William A., 365, 510.
 McLelland, John T., 185.
 McMichael, John A., 796.
 McMichael, William C., 182.
 McWeeny, James, 365, 828.
 Medical Society of Northern Indiana, 455.
 Meighan, John F., 198, 364.
 Membre, Zenobe, 25, 28.
 Memorial Day, 745.
 Memorial Hall, Bishops', 681.
 Menominee Village, 48, 51, 55.
 Merchants National Bank, 412.
 Merrifield, George, 347.
 Merrifield, Jacob, 451.
 Merritt, A. B., 358.
 Mesnard, Father, 20.
 Methodist Episcopal Church, at South Bend, 213,
 297; at Mishawaka, 336.
 Methodist Church, South Bend, 412.
 Metropotamia, 75.
 Mexican War, 716, 731.
 Miami, Indiana, 21, 47, 48, 84, 88; Village of, 18,
 27; 28, 37, 44, 309; Treaty with, 29; 38, 39.
 Miamis, River of, 20, 21, 24, 25.
 Michael, Walter, 799.
 Michigan Air Line Railroad, 237.
 Michigan Boundary Line, 90.
 Michigan, Southern Boundary of, 100.
 Michigan Central Railroad, 237.
 Michigan Hotel, 434, 435.
 Michigan Road, 156, 235, 351.
 Michigan Street M. E. Church, 413.
 Michigan Territory Formed, 100.
 Michigan Township, 163, 172, 174, 272.
 Michigania, 75.
 Michilimaekinae, 21, 23, 24, 42, 43, 57, 59.
 Middle State, The, 79.
 Mikesell, Charles W., 1059.
 Milburn Chapel, 413.
 Milburn, George, 343, 400, 717.
 Milburn Wagon Company, 325.
 Military Company, First in Civil War, 717.
 Military History, 711.
 Military Organizations, South Bend, 463.
 Military Posts, French, 57.
 Militia, 93.
 Miller, Aaron, 184.
 Miller, Alfred B., 219, 467.
 Miller, Allen G., 540.
 Miller, Benjamin F., 184, 202, 358.
 Miller, David B., 169, 819.
 Miller, Frederick A., 468, 510.
 Miller, Hiram, 185.
 Miller, Isaac N., 187, 215, 751, 893.
 Miller, Loren C., 1065.
 Miller, John C., 184.
 Miller, John F., 215, 720.
 Miller, Joseph, 761.
 Miller, Solomon, 185.
 Miller, William, 215, 372, 374, 411.
 Miller, William C., 1080.
 Mills, W. F., 530.
 Minims, The, at Notre Dame, 672.
 Mintle, Henry S., 317.
 Miranda, William F., 976.
 Mishawaka, City of, 319; Plat of Town, 321; First
 Town Incorporation, 323; Business Enterprises,
 323.
 Mishawaka Democrat, 347.
 Mishawaka Enterprise, 347.
 Mishawaka Public Utility Company, 331.
 Mishawaka Rapids, 229, 320.
 Mishawaka, Seal of, 349; Officials, 349; Census, 350.
 Mishawaka Toesin, 346.
 Mishawaka Water Works Company, 331.
 Mishawaka Woolen Manufacturing Company, 325.
 Missionaries, Early, 126; First, of Methodist
 Church, 297.
 Mississippi River, 10, 21.
 Mitchell, H. F., 534.
 Mitchell, Joseph A. S., 150, 198.
 Mitchigamias, 37.
 Mix, Melville W., 331, 349, 487.
 Mizpah Church, 424.
 Mochel, Martin J., 1130.
 Modern Woodmen, 463.
 Moench, Louis A., 549.
 Mohawks, 37.
 Mohegans, 28, 37.
 Molloy, Emma F., 709.
 Momence, 12.
 Momence Rock, Removal of, 258.
 Montbrun, Timothy de, 73.
 Monroe, James, 81.
 Monson, Albert, 185, 358.
 Montgomery, Hugh T., 1, 9, 184, 364.
 Montgomery, John, 62.

- Montreal, 41, 57, 58.
 Moon, Calvin, 451, 557.
 Moon, George E., 934.
 Moon, Solomon, 930.
 Moore, David, 807.
 Moore, Jerry F., 871.
 Moore, John, 1100.
 Moore, Maria, 1104.
 Moore, Robert, 1103.
 Moore, W. S., 795.
 Moraines, 9.
 Moreau, Basil A., 612, 705.
 Morgan, Henry C., 763.
 Morrison Hotel, 439.
 Morrissey, Andrew, 694.
 Morse, Abner, 305, 307.
 Morse, E. A., 558.
 Morss, Meltire M., 1068.
 Morss, William A., 1062.
 Morton, Oliver P., 716.
 Mossey, Joseph E., 865.
 Mound Builder, 22, 34, 44, 45, 283.
 Mt. Olive A. M. E., 413.
 Mount Pleasant, 18, 29, 45, 308.
 Mt. Pleasant Cemetery, Soldiers in, 733.
 Mount Zion Baptist Church, 423.
 Moyer, Theodore P., 552.
 Mucha, L. M., 1150.
 Mud Lake, 19, 283.
 Mueller, Frederick W., 590.
 Muessel, Adolph J., 563.
 Muessel, Edward, 562.
 Muessel, George C., 1157.
 Muessel, Walter G., 563.
 Muessel, William, 563.
 Munhall, L. W., 425.
 Municipal Code, 367, 375.
 Municipal Ownership, 372, 377.
 Murphy, Frank J., 827.
 Murray, Charles L., 469, 709.
 Murray, Charles T., 469.
 Muskingum, 77.
 Musquito Glen, 233.
 Muster Roll, Original, of Co. I, Ninth Regiment, 718.
 Myers, Cornelius H., 184, 536.
 Myers, John H., 758.
 Myler, Martha E., 834.
 Myler, Robert, 183.
 Myler, Town, 366.
 Napoleon, 59.
 Narragansetts, 37.
 Natchez, 58.
 National Hotel, 439, 441.
 National Union, 469.
 Navarre, Pierre, 130, 295.
 Nave, Pliny, 883.
 Navigation of St. Joseph River, 224.
 Neff, Isaac E., 449.
 Neff, Joseph E., 764.
 Neitzel, Barnhart H., 828.
 Nelson, James, 821.
 New Carlisle, 301, 312.
 New Carlisle Collegiate Institute, 313.
 New Carlisle Cemetery, 733.
 Newcomer, William, 1017.
 Newcomer, W. F., 1018.
 New England System of County Government, 160.
 New France, 58.
 New Hampshire, 82.
 New Jersey, 81.
 New Jersey, Indiana and Illinois Railroad, 240.
 New Orleans, 58.
 New York, Claims, 73, 81, 82.
 News, The Sunday, 470.
 Newspapers, of South Bend, 463.
 Neyron, Louis, 418, 604, 639.
 Niblack, Arthur C., 849.
 Nicar, Edwin, 182, 365, 375, 378, 389, 569, 743, 751, 753.
 Nicar, Robert B., 185.
 Nicar, Virginius, 779.
 Nicholson, Meredith, 109.
 Nicoles, Samuel J., 317, 957.
 Niedbalski, Vincent, 881.
 Niezgodzki, John T., 848.
 Niles, Henry G., 408, 594.
 Niles, John B., 196, 197.
 Ninth Regiment, 717.
 Nixon, James, 162.
 Noble, Noah, 193, 195, 200.
 Norman Edgy Post, G. A. R., 745.
 North Carolina, Claims, 73, 81, 82.
 North Liberty, 19, 281, 313.
 North Liberty Cemetery, Soldiers in, 735.
 North Liberty Herald, 314.
 North Liberty News, 314.
 Northern Indiana Agricultural Society, 269.
 Northern Indiana Historical Society, 1, 36, 128, 131, 146, 212, 215, 338, 341, 351, 386, 452, 453.
 Northwest Company, 127.
 Northwest Indianian, 314.
 "Northwestern Pioneer and St. Joseph's Intelligencer," 110, 211, 227.
 Norton, Frank A., 451.
 Notre Dame Lakes, 14, 18, 40, 284, 603, 605.
 Notre Dame University, 20, 603, 612; First Buildings, 621; 671.
 Notre Dame University, Early Years, 625; in the War, 635.
 Notre Dame Post, G. A. R., 745.
 Noyes, Daniel, 198, 202.
 Nutwood, 216, 289, 312.
 O'Brien, Patrick, 215, 362, 376, 402, 554.
 O'Brien Varnish Works, 402, 554.
 O'Connell, Father, 684.
 Odd Fellows, South Bend, 461.
 Oechtering, Auguste B., 335.
 Ohio Company, 77.
 Ohio Line, 107.
 Ohio, River, 10, 57.
 Old Dominion, 70, 73.
 Old Settlers, 19.
 Old Settlers, Reunions, 150.
 Olinger, John, 187.
 Olive Chapel Cemetery, Soldiers in, 733.
 Olive Township, 273, 295; Only Fort In, 300.
 Oliver Chilled Plow Company, 230.
 Oliver Chilled Plow Works, 371.
 Oliver Hotel, 369; First, 442; New, 442, 443.
 Oliver, James, 342, 343, 382, 393, 400, 481.
 Oliver, Joseph D., 215, 401.
 Oliver Opera House, 459.
 Oliver Plow Works, 400.
 Oliver, Robert, 91.
 One Hundred and Fifty-ninth Inf., 728.

- One Hundred and Fifty-seventh Inf., 751.
 One Hundred and Twenty-eighth Inf., 726.
 One Hundred and Thirty-eighth Inf., 728.
 Oneidas, 37.
 O'Neill, William P., 347, 1154.
 Onondagas, 37.
 Orange County, 104.
 Order of Patricians, 463.
 Ordinance Boundary Line, 107.
 Ordinance of 1787, 75, 78, 80, 93; Six Articles of, 78.
 Oren, William H., 185.
 Orphans' Home, 220.
 Orr, John H., 229, 320.
 Orr, Joseph G., 363.
 Osborn, Andrew L., 197.
 Osborn, George A., 543.
 Ort, Henry, 788.
 Osceola, 294, 309, 310.
 Ostrom, C. A., 801.
 Ottawas, 37, 90.
 Ouiatanon, Indians, 65.
 Ouiatanon, Fort, 58.
 Ouiaton, Village of, 27.
 Outagamies, 28, 46.
 Our Lady of Peace, 707.
 Owen, W. L., 536.
 Owls, Order of, 463.
 Packard, Jasper, 727.
 Palestine, 300, 308.
 Palmer Prairie Cemetery, Soldiers in, 733.
 Palmer, Emerson, 1088.
 Palmer, Orlando H., 426.
 Palmer Prairie, 288.
 Palmer, Solomon W., 184.
 Papezynski, John W., 365, 872.
 Paper, First Made in South Bend, 408.
 Parett, John H., 936.
 Parke, Benjamin, 96, 97, 101.
 Park Commissioners, 387.
 Park, First in South Bend, 386; Story of a, 386.
 Parkman, Francis, 22.
 Parkovash, The, 43, 45, 47, 128, 129, 383.
 Parks, Isaac K., 885.
 Parks of South Bend, 383.
 Parks, Norman E., 596.
 Parochial School, Lutheran, 424.
 Parrett, R. J., 425.
 Parsons, Samuel H., 77, 83.
 Partridge, Joel M., 528, 744.
 Pattee, Cyrus E., 522.
 Patteson, William H., 182, 186, 357, 358.
 Paul, John, 104.
 Paul, Lewis, 952.
 Paul, Professor, 671.
 Paxson, Edward E., 547.
 Pearce, Leonard S., 999.
 Pearce, Wakefield N., 1001.
 Peffley, Ephraim H., 1039.
 Pelisipi, 75.
 Peninsular Railroad, 238.
 Pennsylvania, 81.
 Penn Township Cemeteries, Soldiers in, 734.
 Penn Township, 273, 291.
 People's Savings Bank, 412.
 Peorias, 37.
 Peppermint Industry, 291.
 Pequods, 37.
 Perkins, Frank G., 492.
 Perkins Wind Mill Company, 326, 492.
 Perley, Samuel S., 387, 393, 561.
 Perrin, Earl R., 780.
 Perrot, Nicholas, 20, 29, 57.
 Perry County, 104.
 Petit, Benjamin Marie, 52.
 Petit, Father, 603.
 Pfeiffer, Edward, 870.
 Philadelphia Industrial Association, 306.
 Phillips, D. G., 197.
 Phillips, William H., 938.
 Phillips, W. R., 782.
 Philon, Albert J., 793.
 Piano, First Brought into County, 342.
 Pickett, Edwin, 186.
 Pidge, Mrs. R. J., 297.
 Pierson, George, 196.
 Pigeon Roost, 54.
 Pillory, 92, 98.
 "Pilot" Steamboat, 232.
 Pinckney, Charles, 77.
 Pineda, Alonzo de, 32.
 Pine, Leighton, 372, 375, 402, 564, 751.
 Pine, Milton B., 776.
 Pinhook, 307.
 Pioneer, The, etc., 464.
 Place, Dixon W., 187, 316.
 Place, Ira F., 941.
 Plainfield, 300, 301, 308.
 Plank Roads, 235.
 Plat of Mishawaka, 321.
 Plat, Original, of South Bend, 352.
 Platz, John, 837.
 Platz, Noah F., 425.
 Pleasant Lake, 19, 280.
 Plymouth, 164.
 Plymouth Township, 274.
 Poehlman, Godfrey L., 584.
 Pokagon, Chief, 130.
 Pokagon, Simon, 605.
 Pokagon's Village, 45, 47, 151, 605.
 Polke, William, 236.
 Polypotamia, 75.
 Pomeroy, Grove, 144.
 Pontiac, 64, 102.
 Pontiac's War, 42.
 Poor, Joshua, 977.
 Portage, The, 20, 21, 45, 173, 175.
 Portage of the Kankakee, 43.
 Portage of the St. Joseph, 24, 25, 26.
 Portage Prairie, 18, 45, 383, 603.
 Portage Township, 163, 176, 272, 273, 295.
 Portage Village, 231, 304.
 Porter Cemetery, Soldiers in, 735.
 Porter County, 160.
 Porter, John R., 190, 191.
 Port Huron & Lake Michigan R. R., 238.
 Posey County, 104.
 Posey, Thomas, 103.
 Postal Telegraph Co., 243.
 Postoffice, at Mishawaka, 321.
 Post Printing Co., 471.
 Post, The South Bend, 471.
 Pottawatomie Park, 270, 315, 384.
 Pottawatomies, 28, 37, 38, 39, 45, 55, 88, 90, 132, 155, 135; Removal of, 48; Village of, 44.
 Pottawatomie Trail, 47.
 Potter, Jerome, 825.

- Pound, 169.
 Pourre, Don Eugenio, 43.
 Powhatans, 37.
 Presbyterian Church, Mishawaka, 337.
 Presbyterian Church, South Bend, 414.
 President Judge, 187.
 Presidents of Notre Dame, 695.
 Press, of South Bend, 463.
 Price, Benjamin F., 357, 358, 411.
 Price, William H., 1056.
 Price's Theatre, 213, 382.
 Primogeniture, 78.
 Probate Court, 198; First Term, 199; Seal, 200, 202;
 Second Term, 200.
 Progress Club, 460.
 Progress, The, 645.
 Prohibition Alliance, 710.
 Prohibition Party, 709.
 Prophet, The, 102.
 Prophet's Town, 102.
 Protsman, John C., 349.
 Proud, James, 921.
 Proud, Hurtain, 903.
 Proudfit, Louis, 928.
 Provocille, Alexis, 196.
 Public Cisterns, South Bend, 371.
 Putnam, Rufus, 77.
 Purucker, A. J., 859.
 Pyle, Daniel, 461.

 Quebec, 41, 57.
 Queen City of St. Joseph Valley, 351.
 Quincy Street Baptist Church, 423.
 Quindre, Deneau, 129.
 Quirk, Frank J., 959.

 Raccoon Village, 45.
 Raff, F. C., 882.
 Railroads 236; Lake Shore, 236; Grand Trunk,
 237; Michigan Air Line, 237; Michigan Central,
 237; Port Huron & Lake Michigan, 238;
 Peninsular, 238; Chicago & Lake Huron, 238;
 Lake Erie & Western, 239; Baltimore & Ohio,
 239; Vandalia, 239; Three I, 239; Wabash,
 239; N. J., I. & L., 240.
 Railroad Accidents, 240.
 Randolph County, 71, 100.
 Randolph, John, 100.
 Randolph, Thomas, 97.
 Ranstead, Henry B., 911.
 Rape, 97.
 Rausch, Fred, 424.
 Ray, James B., 161, 193, 200.
 Ray, Martin M., 194.
 Reading Room and Library Association, South Bend,
 459.
 Ream, Charles, 815.
 Reaves, John M., 1053.
 Reaves, Peter H., 187, 215, 1044.
 Recorder, County, 181, 182.
 Red Men, Order of, 463.
 Reed, Josiah P., 182.
 Reeves, Charles H., 456.
 Reformed Church, South Bend, 417.
 Register, St. Joseph Valley, 197, 213, 218, 466.
 Reilly, John, 92.
 Reinhardt, Benjamin F., 939.
 Relief Hook and Ladder Co., 378.
 Re-location of County Seat, 173.

 Reminiscences, 140.
 Rennoe, A., 184, 535.
 Reservations, Indian, 88.
 Revolutionary War, 731.
 Revolutionary War, Two Soldiers of, 715.
 Reynolds, Ed B., 509.
 Reynolds, James, 904.
 Reynolds, Mrs. Jennette, 393.
 Rhode Island, 81, 82.
 Ribourde, Father Gabriel de la, 25.
 Rice, P. J., 425.
 Richard, Gabriel, 605.
 Richter, John C., 198.
 Riddle, Alexander, 1057.
 Riddle's Lake, 19, 280, 314.
 Riddle, W. Harrison, 1051.
 Riley, James W., 124, 716.
 Rilling, James H., 424.
 Ritter, Frank, 1136.
 River Park M. E. Church, 413.
 River Park, 315.
 Riverview Cemetery, Soldiers in, 732.
 Rivers, of St. Joseph County, Improvement of,
 223; Navigation of, 224; Electric Power Development,
 230.
 Rixa, Alexander, 184.
 Roach, Martin J., 766.
 Road District, 161.
 Roads, 234; Vistula, 234.
 Roberts, Hanford, 811.
 Roberts, James H., 1140.
 Robertson, John D., 196.
 Robinson, Samuel M., 773.
 Robinson, Schuyler C., 184.
 Rocheblave, Mr., 62, 70.
 Rockhill, William D., 187.
 Rockstroh, George, 184.
 Roher, Joseph, 169.
 Rogers, Frank, 854.
 Rogers, Oliver P., 928.
 Roland, Joshua, 92.
 Rollins, Thomas H., 872.
 Romig, Iden S., 461.
 Roosevelt, Theodore, 70.
 Roper Furniture and Carpet Company, 332.
 Roper, James A., 495.
 Rose, David, 1063.
 Rose, Rufus, 360.
 "Rose Grade," 369.
 Ross, George P., 945.
 Ross, Silas A., 1051.
 Ross, William O., 194.
 Roster of Auten Post, 736.
 Rostiser, Louis A., 846.
 Roth, John, 770.
 Round Table Club, 460.
 Routes of Travel, 20.
 Row, Albert O., 802.
 Row, Wilham C., 858.
 Royal Arcanum, 463.
 Rudduck, Isaac, 145.
 Rudduck, James H., 1043.
 Rudduck, John, 144.
 Rum Village, 11, 34.
 Rupel, Jacob, 144.
 Rupel, Bazel, 841.
 Rupel, Charles O., 1033.
 Rupel, Chord S., 1043.
 Rupel, David E., 968.

- Rupel, Dennis W., 973.
 Rupel, E. B., 873.
 Rupel, Elias, 600.
 Rupel, Elisha H., 1086.
 Rupel, Jacob, 316.
 Rupel, John, 144.
 Rupel, John N., 990.
 Rupel, Osborn, 848.
 Rupel's Lake, 19, 288.
 Rural High School, 290.
 Rush, Leonard B., 184.
 Russ, Charles, 870.
 Russ, Marion B., 187, 215, 788.
 Ryder, James W., 1053.

 St. Bavo's Church, Mishawaka, 336, 575.
 St. Casimir's Church, 420, 421.
 St. Clair, Arthur, 82, 83.
 St. Clair County, 100.
 St. Edward's Day, 643.
 St. Hedwige's, Mother Church of, 420, 421.
 St. Ignace, Point, 21, 57.
 St. James Episcopal Church, 423.
 St. Joseph and Southern Railroad, 239, 283.
 St. Joseph's Academy, 422.
 St. Joseph Beacon and Indiana and Michigan Intelligence, 244, 465.
 St. Joseph's Catholic Church, 417.
 St. Joseph County Agricultural Society, 269.
 St. Joseph County Bar Association, 456.
 St. Joseph County Farmers Fire Insurance Co., 324.
 St. Joseph County Federation, Catholic Societies, 462.
 St. Joseph County Medical Society, 456.
 St. Joseph County Mutual Fire Insurance Co., 323.
 St. Joseph County, Organization of, 157; attached territory, 158, 159; Boundaries of, 177.
 St. Joseph County Republican, 317.
 St. Joseph County Savings Bank, 411.
 St. Joseph Fire Company, 377.
 St. Joseph's Hospital New, 431.
 St. Joseph Hotel, 438; Second, 440; The Old, 441, 442.
 St. Joseph Iron Works, 229, 319, 320, 323, 620.
 St. Joseph Loan and Trust Co., 412.
 St. Joseph Manual Labor Collegiate Institute, 305.
 St. Joseph Manufacturing Co., 320.
 St. Joseph River, Navigation of, 224; Water Power of, 229; Electric Power from, 230; First Bridge Across, 320; First Dam Across, 320, 357; Origin of, 13; 24, 41, 58, 65.
 St. Joseph's, Settlement, 135.
 St. Joseph's, Station, Big, 132; Little, 132.
 St. Joseph Street, 433.
 St. Joseph, Town, 303.
 St. Joseph Valley Medical Society, 456.
 St. Joseph Valley Register, 197, 213, 218.
 St. Joseph's, Village, 352.
 St. Louis, 58.
 St. Mary's Academy, 20, 431, 603, 633, 698; The New, 705; in the Civil War, 707.
 St. Mary's Church, 420, 421.
 St. Mary's of the Lakes, 603.
 St. Patrick's Church, 420, 421.
 St. Paul's Church, 393.
 St. Paul's Memorial Church, 414.
 St. Stanislaus' Church, 420, 421.
 St. Stephen's Church, 420, 421.
 "St. Vincennes," 94, 95.
 Sacred Heart Church, 420, 421, 696.

 Sacs and Foxes, 37, 46.
 Sample Street Bridge, 233.
 Sample, Samuel C., 194, 195, 196, 198, 410.
 Sandilands, Alexander, 323.
 Sanger, S. F., 425.
 Saratoga, 75.
 Sargent, Winthrop, 82, 84.
 Sarle, Cora D., 809.
 Sault de St. Marie, 20, 57.
 Schaefer, W. B., 776.
 Schafer, Charles L., 1099.
 Schafer, David B. J., 363, 599.
 Schafer, David J., 184.
 Schafer, Fred K., 836.
 Schellinger, Nicholas, 595.
 Schenk, William C., 91.
 Seherer, Joseph, 421, 573.
 Schiffer, E. A., 781.
 Schiffer, Herman, 803.
 Schindler, John J., 349, 497.
 Schmidt, Joseph, 786.
 Schock, Harry G., 511.
 Scholastic, The Notre Dame, 645, 646.
 School District, 161.
 School Examiner, 451.
 School, First Catholic for Larger Boys, 420.
 Schools, in South Bend, 445.
 Schools of Mishawaka, 337.
 Schrader, Charles C., 992.
 Schutt, Ross K., 787.
 Scientist, First Church of Christ, 425.
 Scott, James, 97.
 Seal of County, 170, 182.
 Seal of City of Mishawaka, 349.
 Seal, of Probate Court, 200.
 Seal, Circuit Court, 194.
 Seaman, J. B., 928.
 Seixas, Theodore J., 411, 412.
 Seminary, County, 168, 217, 424, 445, 446.
 Senecas, 37, 42.
 Service, 92.
 Seventeen States, From Northwest Territory, 75.
 Seventy-third Inf., 724.
 Seven Years War, 41.
 Sewers, South Bend, 370; First in South Bend, 370.
 Shafer, Lemen, 1107.
 Shanklin, Robert, 539.
 Shaw, David A., 797.
 Shawe, Father St. Michael, 626, 683.
 Shawnees, 37.
 Shea, John G., 22, 680.
 Shea, Michael C., 793.
 Shearer, Frederick, 1143.
 Shearer, William H., 1135.
 Sheerer, C. Henry, 185.
 Sheffield, E. S., 358.
 Sheffield Creek, 285.
 Sheffield Mill, 285.
 Shenefield, Berton C., 1135.
 Sheneman, Henry, 1024.
 Sheneman, John A., 1010.
 Sheneman, Washington A., 1015.
 Sheneman, Zachariah, 1023.
 Sheridan Hotel, 440.
 Sheriff, The, 183.
 Sherland, Matilda, 145, 146.
 Shetterly, Isaac, 1102.
 Shidler, Adam W., 1097.
 Shimp, Jacob, 1089.
 Shimp, John M., 1092.

- Shimp, William D., 182.
 Shively, Benjamin F., 135, 365, 471, 512, 751.
 Shortis, Father, 626.
 Sibley, A. P., 553.
 Sibley, Irving A., 388, 873.
 Sibrel, Irving, 380.
 Sidewalks, South Bend, 369.
 Siders, John, 287.
 Siders' Mill, 285.
 Siefer, John, 1108.
 Siek, Henry, 424.
 Singer Sewing Machine Co., 402.
 Singler, Frank J., 824.
 Singler, John M., 822.
 Slaughterbeck, Charley L., 1090.
 Slave Case, Our, 203.
 Slavery, 76, 77, 78, 79, 98; as Known in Indiana, 202.
 Slick, Thomas J., 877.
 Slick, Thomas W., 198, 517.
 Slough, Peter, 1106.
 Slusser, Edward M., 1074.
 Small-pox, in South Bend, 358.
 Smith, Adam, 161.
 Smith, Alfred, 878.
 Smith, Alexander, 1082.
 Smith, Barney C., 187, 215, 863.
 Smith, Elias, 323.
 Smith, G. Scott, 860.
 Smith, Henry M., 948.
 Smith, Jonathan J., 1079.
 Smith, Levi A., 1015.
 Smith, Wm., 380.
 Smith, William D., 183.
 Smith, W. H., 88.
 Smith and Jackson Lumber and Manufacturing Co., 409.
 Snavley, William, 358.
 Snethen, Isaac T., 946.
 Snyder, Amos, 1123.
 Snyder, Jacob C., 798.
 Societies, Agricultural, 267.
 Societies and Clubs, Mishawaka, 344.
 Societies and Clubs, South Bend, 452.
 Soils, 17.
 Sokel Polski, 463.
 Soldier Dead from Olive Township, 733.
 Soldiers in Southern Graves, 733.
 Soldiers Monument, 390, 751, 756.
 Soldiers' Monument Association, 346, 751.
 Soldiers' Roll of Honor, 731.
 Sons of Herman, 463.
 Sons of Israel, 425.
 Sons of Temperance, 709.
 Sorin, Edward, 419, 603, 652.
 South Bend and Mishawaka Railway, 241.
 South Bend Chilled Plow Co., 407.
 South Bend, City of, 351; Names Given to Town, 351; County Seat, 355; First Incorporation, 356; Second Incorporation, 357; Incorporation As City, 359; Officers of, 359.
 South Bend, Division Into Wards, 366; Population, 367.
 South Bend Families Engaged in Manufacturing, 408.
 South Bend City Railway, 240.
 South Bend Era, The, 470.
 South Bend Evang. Hung. Prot. Church, 424.
 South Bend Hydraulic Company, 229.
 South Bend Inn, 433.
 South Bend Iron Bed Co., 409.
 South Bend Iron Works, 371.
 South Bend Manufacturing Company, 229, 357, 401.
 South Bend National Bank, 411.
 South Bend of the St. Joseph, 156, 352, 357.
 South Bend Toy Works, 407.
 South Bend Tribune, 751.
 South Bend Water Works, 371.
 South Bend Watch Co., 409.
 South Bend Watch Factory, 315.
 South Bend Woolen Co., 407.
 South Carolina, Claims, 73, 81, 82.
 Southern Hospital, The, 707.
 Southern Michigan Railway, 242.
 Southold, 351.
 Spain, 41, 43, 59, 86.
 Spanish-American War, 732.
 Spanish War Veterans, 463.
 Spillard, Daniel J., 421.
 Springbrook Park, 241, 385.
 Springs, 6.
 Stace, Arthur J., 186, 361.
 Staley Manufacturing Co., 407.
 Stancliff, Samuel, 323.
 Standpipe, No. 6, 378.
 Standpipe, The Star-seeking, 374.
 Standpipe System, 372.
 Stanfield, Flora L., 453.
 Stanfield, Howard S., 453.
 Stanfield, Thomas S., 147, 181, 197, 198, 223, 236, 358, 410, 416, 453, 456, 712.
 Stanton, Aaron, 169.
 Staples, Alex., 373, 374, 599.
 Staples, Ralph, 184.
 Stark, Samuel W., 592.
 Starr, Eliza A., 706.
 Starr, William B., 453.
 Starved Rock, 29, 38, 40, 41.
 State Bank of Indiana, 409.
 State Roads, 235.
 Steele, Emeline, 993.
 Steele, John, 993.
 Steele, P. D., 1032.
 Stegman, Henry C., 855.
 Stephenson, A. H., 862.
 Stephenson, Benjamin F., 736.
 Stephenson, C. B., 556.
 Stephenson Manufacturing Company, 403.
 Stephenson Underwear Mills, 407.
 Steuben County, 160.
 Stocker, Peter, 809.
 Stocks, 92.
 Stoddard, Charles W., 684.
 Stoeckinger, George F., 795.
 Stoeckley, J. A., 529.
 Stoffel, Nicholas J., 421.
 Stokes, Milton W., 186.
 Stoll, John B., 150, 215, 392, 393, 469, 500.
 Stoltz, Charles, 533.
 "Story of Fifty Years," at St. Mary's, 698, 699.
 Storey, Wilbur F., 347.
 Storms, 270.
 Stover, Calista S., 774.
 Stover, David, 773.
 Stover, George H., 185.
 Stover, J. H., 424.
 Stover, William B., 453.
 Stover, William C., 185.

- Stranz, L. V., 534.
 Strata, 17.
 Street Improvement, Primitive, in South Bend, 369.
 Street Railways—South Bend City, 240; South Bend and Mishawaka, 241; Indiana, 241; Chicago, South Bend & Northern Indiana, 242; Southern Michigan, 242; Chicago, Lake Shore and South Bend, 243.
 Strophe, Levi A., 1121.
 Stuart, William E., 197.
 Studebaker Brothers Manufacturing Co., 394, 397.
 Studebaker Fountain, 385, 391, 393.
 Studebaker, Clement, 187, 215, 262, 360, 378, 393, 400, 414, 426, 477.
 Studebaker, George M., 389, 751.
 Studebaker, Henry, 478.
 Studebaker, Jacob F., 480.
 Studebaker, John M., 361, 375, 376, 389, 391, 479.
 Studebaker, Mary E., 453.
 Studebaker Park, 384.
 Studebaker, Peter E., 481.
 Stueckle, Gustav A., 364, 564.
 Stuer, Charles L., 336, 574.
 Stull, John, 145.
 Stull, John S., 1087.
 Stull, Samuel C., 850.
 Stull, William H., 600.
 Sulgrove, Berry R., 109.
 Summary of Mishawaka Enterprises, 347.
 Summary of South Bend Interests, 471.
 Summers, Gabriel R., 778.
 Summit Lake, 1, 45.
 Sumption, Elisha, 451.
 Sumption, George, 144.
 Sumption Prairie, 47, 277.
 Sumption Prairie Cemetery, Soldiers in, 735.
 Superintendent, County School, 451.
 Superior General Sorin, 643.
 Surveyor, The, 185.
 Surveys, First in County, 156; Second, 156.
 Swanger, John Q., 1148.
 Swank, David L., 978.
 Swedish Baptist Church, 423.
 Swedish Evang. Mission, 424.
 Sweet Cemetery, Soldiers in, 733.
 Sweet Home, 311.
 Switzerland County, 104.
 Swygart, John A., 586.
 Sylvania, 75.
 Symmes, John C., 83.
 Talbot, Joseph E., 198.
 Talon, Intendant, 20, 57.
 Tamaronas, 37.
 Tannery, First, 295.
 Tavern-keepers, 97.
 Taxation, Exemptions from, 171.
 Tax Upon Lands, 104.
 Taylor, Edmund P., 132, 184, 377.
 Taylor, Francis P., 319.
 Taylor, Lathrop M., 129, 132, 157, 161, 175, 181, 191, 193, 195, 295, 351, 410, 453.
 Taylor, Sarah C., 453.
 Taylor, Thaddeus S., 453.
 Taylor, Waller, 97, 104.
 Tecumseh, 102, 614.
 Telegraphs and Telephones—Western Union, 243; Postal, 243; Central Union, 243; American Telegraph and Telephone, 243; Home, 244.
 Temperance Movement, 709.
 Temperance Society, First, 709.
 Temple Bethel, 425.
 Temple, William L., 775.
 Temporary Government for Northwest Territory, 75.
 Ten States, from Northwest Territory, 75.
 Terre Coupee, First Church, 297, 301.
 Terre Coupee Prairie, 13, 296.
 Terrill and Plainfield Cemetery, Soldiers in, 734.
 Territory, Attached to St. Joseph County, 158, 159.
 Thieme, Traugott, 424, 578.
 Thomas, Alexander N., 182, 361.
 Thomas, Samuel R., 818.
 Thompson, Maurice, 2, 35, 44.
 Thorpe, Rose H., 344.
 Thorward, Theodore, 565.
 Thrall, William C., 310.
 Three I Railroad, 239, 281.
 Thursday Club, 460.
 Tiffin, Edward, 92.
 Times Printing Co., 469.
 Times, The South Bend, 468, 469.
 Tippecanoe River, 12, 126.
 Tippecanoe, Battle of, 97, 101, 102.
 Tipton, General, 611.
 Tobacco's Son, 64, 68.
 Todd, Col. John, 72.
 Toepp, William, 771.
 Tohulka, Herman A., 187, 215.
 Tong, Lucius G., 361, 386, 411, 412, 495, 638, 643, 648.
 Tonti, Henry de, 23, 25, 27, 28, 32, 33.
 Topinabee, 130, 607.
 Total Abstinence Society, 678.
 Tornado, Only in St. Joseph County, 232.
 Town and Township, 161.
 Town, First Incorporation, 323.
 Townships, First Division of, 272; Second Division, 273; Third Division, 273; Present Number, 275.
 Townships, First of St. Joseph County, 163.
 Townships, Reorganized, 176.
 Townships, Two Lost, 274.
 Towle, Charles G., 187.
 Towle, Gilman, 186, 187.
 Trail Creek, 143, 156.
 Trails, Indian, 43, 45.
 Traveler's Rest, 438.
 Treaty of Greenville, 94, 103, 125.
 Treaty of Paris, 41, 58, 103.
 Treaty of Peace, (1783), 71.
 Treasurer, The, 184.
 Tribune, The South Bend, 218, 468.
 Trinity Presbyterian Church, 417.
 Troeger, Andrew, 470.
 Truax, John M., 1130.
 Truax, William V., 1143.
 Truss Bridges, 233.
 Turner, Anthony W., 961.
 Turner, Thompson, 971.
 Turner, Timothy G., 190, 306, 456, 470.
 Turner's South Bend Directory, 371.
 Turnock, Joseph, 184, 378, 729, 769.
 Turnverein, 463.
 Tuscarawas, 37.
 Tutt Cemetery, Soldiers in, 733.
 Tutt, Charles M., 184.
 Tutt, Francis R., 187.
 Tuttle, Richmond, 184.
 Twin Branch, 14, 291.

- Twenty-first Battery, 730.
 Twenty-ninth Infantry, 720.
 Twhigh-twees, 37, 48.
 Twin Lakes, 45, 47, 49, 51, 283.
 Ulery, Samuel, 802.
 Ullery Cemetery, Soldiers in, 733.
 Ullery, Ira M., 838.
 Ullery, John C., 1144.
 Ullery, Joseph C., 1047.
 Underwood, Israel, 184.
 Union Hall, 433.
 Union Hose Company No. 3, 377, 378.
 Union Township, 280.
 United Brethren, First Church, 425.
 Utley, William, 344.
 Vail, Thomas D., 186.
 Van Buskirk Cemetery, Soldiers in, 733.
 Vance, David, 91.
 Vandalia Railroad, 239, 280.
 Vanden Bosch, James Q. C., 589.
 Vanderburgh, Henry, 91, 95.
 Van Doren, William T., 451.
 Van Pelt, Mrs. Marion B., 338.
 Van Pelt, Corwin B., 387, 408.
 Van Pelt, Ryan T., 544.
 Van Ryper, A. N., 904.
 Van Ryper, Mary Z., 904.
 Van Valin, George W., 1033.
 Varnum, James M., 83.
 Varier, James A., 184.
 Vermande, John, 887.
 Vigo, Francis, 65, 84.
 Vincennes, 42, 58, 59, 63, 78, 83, 100, 160.
 Vincennes University, 98.
 Virginia, 59, 71, 81, 82, 99.
 Virginia System of County Government, 160.
 Vistula Avenue, 132.
 Vistula Road, 234.
 Voelkers, Jerry, 866.
 Vogt, Ed F., 1059.
 Volunteer Aid Association, 717.
 Von Barandy, Oscar, 531.
 Vosburgh, Grove, 963.
 Wabash and Erie Canal, 21.
 Wabash Railroad, 239, 280, 281.
 Wabash River, 10, 21, 41, 42, 126, 135.
 Wade, Alfred B., 724.
 Wagner, John C., 572.
 Wair, Harry, 527.
 Waldorf, Benjamin F., 186.
 Walker, John, 317.
 Walkerton, 291, 316.
 Walkerton Cemetery, Soldiers in, 735.
 Walkerton Independent, 317.
 Walkerton Visitor, 317.
 Wall, Benjamin, 438.
 Walsh, Thomas E., 671, 691, 710.
 Walter, John U., 1115.
 Walters, Newton W., 1052.
 Ward, Andrew J., 184.
 Ward, Wilbert, 363, 460, 513.
 Wards, First Three of South Bend, 366.
 War of 1812, 102, 731.
 War of 1812, Soldiers of, 715.
 Warner, William S., 798.
 Warren, David G., 907.
 Warren Township, 282.
 Warwick, 301, 311.
 Warwick County, 104.
 Washington Block, 437.
 Washington County, 104.
 Washington, George, 81, 83, 86.
 Washington Hall, 635.
 Washingtonian Movement, The, 709.
 Washington Township, 274.
 Waterfield, A. A., 865.
 Water Power, of St. Joseph River, 229.
 Waterways, 9; Ancient, 11.
 Water Works Bonds, South Bend, 373.
 Water Works, Trustees, 375.
 Watkins, Adam K., 1081.
 Wayne, Anthony, 38, 75, 86, 155.
 Wayne County, 95, 100, 104.
 Weber, Peter, 373.
 Webster, Aaron A., 184.
 Wednesday Club, 460.
 Weidler, Charles, 1148.
 Weidler, Valentine, 1116.
 Weir, Morgan H., 197.
 Weiser, William A., 546.
 Weldy, Abraham, 1122.
 Weldy, John, 1122.
 Weldy, Joseph W., 1122.
 Wells, Flowing, 6.
 Wenger's Creek, 14, 288.
 Wenger, Aaron, 910.
 Werwinski, Joseph A., 776.
 West, Albert W., 466.
 West, Scott, 184.
 Westlake, Samuel B., 821.
 West Troy, 316; Burk's Addition, 316.
 Westbury, David A., 785.
 Western Reserve, 74.
 Western State, The, 79.
 Western Union Telegraph Company, 243.
 Westminster Presbyterian Church, 417.
 Wharton, David F., 1045.
 Wharton, James G., 1046.
 Wharton Lake, 19, 277.
 Wheeler, Alfred, 182, 467.
 Whipping, 92, 97, 98.
 White Beaver, 25.
 White, Daniel A., 187, 215.
 White, James, 323.
 White Hall, 216.
 Whiteman, George N., 593.
 Whitmer, Elmer J., 1075.
 Whitmore, Charles, 881.
 Whitmore, Mary J., 881.
 Whitten, William M., 17, 186, 217, 223, 264, 266, 360, 370, 387.
 Wickham, William A., 535.
 Wilcox, Benjamin, 372, 416, 449.
 Wilklow, George H., 1148.
 Willett, John T., 829.
 Williams, B. E., 1157.
 Williams, James C., 187.
 Williams, J. E., 782.
 Williams, W. Oliver, 826.
 Williamson, N. D., 417.
 Williamsport, 308.
 Williard, Amos, 800.
 Wills, Emanuel R., 185, 777.
 Wilson, Abraham, 357.
 Wilson, James, 81.

- Windsor Hotel, 439.
Winkler, Bros. Manufacturing Co., 408.
Winkler, F. C., 408, 571.
Witter, Harry, 1110.
Witter, Martin M., 1060.
Woltman, Casimir, 879.
W. C. T. U., 710.
Woman's Literary Club, 459.
Women's Relief Corps, 463.
Wommer, John M., 935.
Wood, Aaron, 110.
Wood, Edward J., 202.
Wood, William Field, 550.
Wood, William F., 561.
Woodland, 290, 311.
Woodmen of the World, 463.
Woodward, Del M., 1029.
Woodward, Don J., 197.
Woodward, Jerry R., 887.
Woolman, Granville, 298, 992.
Woolverton, Jacob, 412, 493.
Woolverton Lake, 283.
Worden, James, 98.
Worden, Joseph, 373, 408.
Worster, Henry B., 1095.
Worth Literary Club, 461.
Wright, John K., 185.
Wright, William B., 863.
Wyandots, 42.
Wyant, William T., 591.
Wyatt, 290, 311.
Wyckoff, James W., 1058.
Wyman, George, 393, 431, 585.
Wythe, George, 61.
Yates, Abraham, 78.
Yellow River, 12.
Yenn, Simon, 185, 792.
Yerrick, Benjamin F., 853.
Yerrick, Harry L., 787.
Yoder, Elmer E., 1035.
Young Hoosier No. 4, 378.
Y. M. C. A., 425.
Y. W. C. A., 393, 430.
Zahn, John A., 648.
Zeiger, John, 1118.
Zeitler, Edward A., 1072.
Zeitler, John V., 1072.
Zell, Adam, 880.
Zeltner, John, 817.
Zigler, John W., 185, 349.
Zigler, Joseph G., 1112.
Zion Evangelical Church, 424.
Zubowicz, Anthony, 422, 573.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

A list of the principal authorities relied on in the preparation of this History:

Constitution of the United States; Acts of Congress; United States Supreme Court Reports.

Constitution of Indiana, 1816 and 1851; Acts of the Legislature, Revised Statutes, 1831, 1838, 1843, 1852 and 1881, Gavin & Hord's, Davis' and Burns'; Indiana Supreme Court Reports.

Laws and Ordinances of Virginia and of the Northwest Territory.

Indiana Geological Reports; Geological Papers by Dr. Hugh T. Montgomery, Prof. S. S. Gorby, Prof. Willis S. Blatchley and Prof. Maurice Thompson.

Bancroft's History of the United States; McMaster's History of the United States.

Dillon's History of Indiana; Dunn's History of Indiana; Smith's History of Indiana.

English's Conquest of the Northwest; Cauthorn's History of Vincennes; Parkman's Discovery of the Great West; Poole's History of the West; Shea's Discovery and Exploration of the Mississippi Valley.

Hennepin's Description de la Louisiane; Drake's American Indians; Beadle's Undeveloped West.

Dyer's Modern Europe; Winsor & Channing's America; Landon's Constitutional History and Government of the United States; Hart's Formation of the Union.

Chapman's History of St. Joseph County; Higgins Belden's Historical Atlas of St. Joseph County; Parish's Art Work of South Bend and Vicinity; Packard's History of La Porte County; Daniels' History of La Porte County; Cowles' History of Berrien County, Michigan; Brice's History of Fort Wayne; King's History of Ohio; Montague's History of Randolph County, Illinois; Nevins's Black Robes; Irving's Astoria; Memoirs of Elkhart and St. Joseph Counties; Indiana Legislative and State Manual; Perkins' Annals of the West; Roosevelt's Winning of the West.

Baker's St. Joseph-Kankakee Portage; Bartlett's Tales of Kankakee Land; Bartlett & Lyon's La Salle in the Valley of the

St. Joseph; Charlevoix' Travels in North America; Thompson's Stories of Indiana; McDonald's Menominee; Campbell's Report on the Drainage of the Kankakee; Farmer's Map of the Territory of Michigan.

Records of: The Board of Commissioners of St. Joseph County; the St. Joseph Circuit Court; the St. Joseph Probate Court; the St. Joseph Court of Common Pleas; the County Recorder's Office; the Boards of Trustees and Common Councils of South Bend and Mishawaka, and the Annual Publications of both cities.

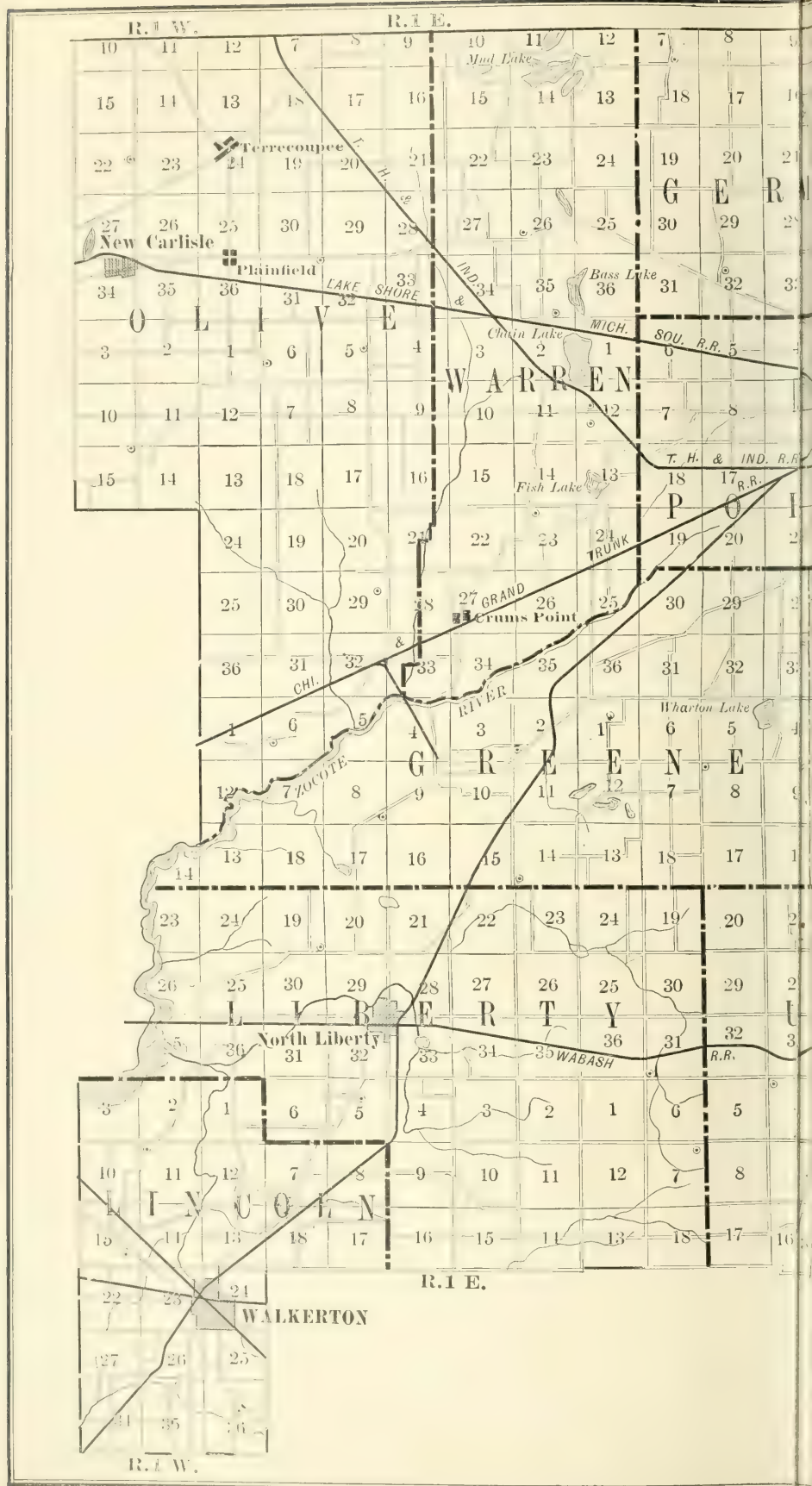
Historical Papers by David R. Leeper, Richard H. Lyon, George A. Baker, Charles Albert McDonald, Miss Ethel Montgomery, Mrs. Esse B. Dakin, Charles Arthur Carlisle, Ernest P. Bicknell, Jacob P. Dunn, Daniel McDonald, Miller Guy, Arthur Joseph Stace.

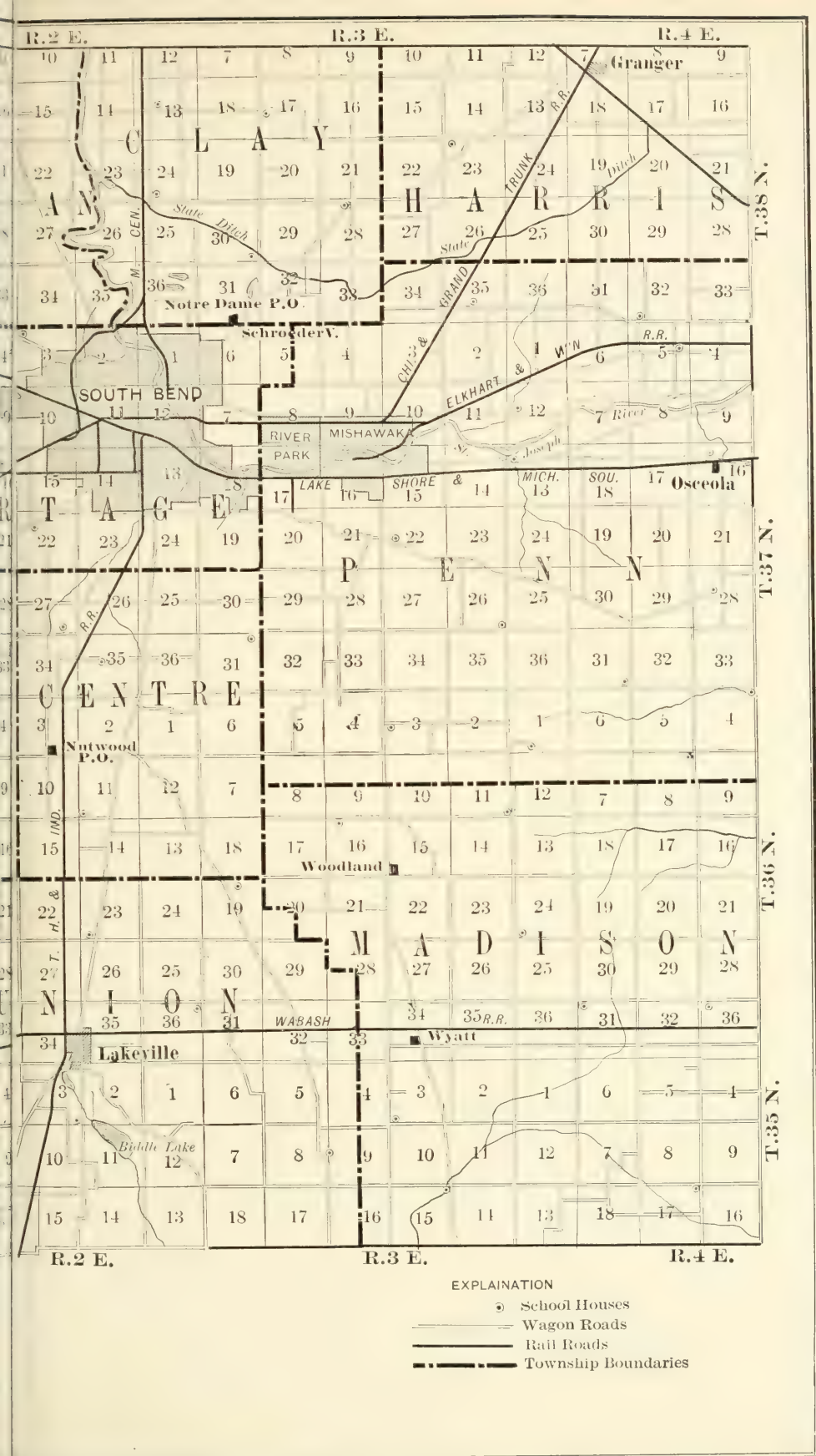
Reminiscences of Daniel Greene, Hugh V. Compton, Mrs. Marion B. Van Pelt, Thomas S. Stanfield, Jesse Haines, Lucius Hubbard, Mrs. R. J. Pidge, Granville Woolman, William D. Bulla, John Stull.

Bartlett's Dictionary of Americanisms; The Century Cyclopedia of Names.

Dunn's Father Gibault; Hodgin's Naming of Indiana; Dunn's Hoosier; Nicholson's Hoosiers; Finley's Hoosier's Nest; Philothea.

Newspapers, periodicals and other similar publications: The Northwestern Pioneer; The St. Joseph Beacon; The St. Joseph Valley Register; The South Bend Times; The South Bend Tribune; The South Bend Sunday News; The New Carlisle Gazette; The Indianapolis Journal; The Indianapolis News; The Indianapolis Sentinel; the Indianapolis Star; The New York Catholic Review; The Christian Advocate; The Baltimore Mirror; The Chicago Herald; The Chicago Tribune; The Cassopolis Democrat; The Waterloo Press; The Indianian; Donahue's Magazine; Turner's Gazetteer of the St. Joseph Valley; Turner's Annuals and Directories; South Bend City Directories; Intercollegiate Law Journal; The Notre Dame Scholastic; The Notre Dame Silver Jubilee; The Notre Dame Golden Jubilee; Alerding's Diocese of Fort Wayne; A Story of Fifty Years; The Brothers of the Holy Cross.







HISTORY OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY

CHAPTER I.

TOPOGRAPHY.

I. LOCATION AND GENERAL FEATURES.

St. Joseph County, Indiana, is the middle county of the northernmost tier of counties of the state. To the east, in order, are the counties of Elkhart, LaGrange and Steuben; to the west, those of LaPorte, Porter and Lake. On the south are the counties of Marshall and Starke; and on the north is Berrien county, in the state of Michigan. The northern part of the county is in the valley of the St. Joseph, and the southern part in the valley of the Kankakee. From a tiny lake on the summit between the two valleys, and within the corporate limits of the city of South Bend, by a little stream known as McCartney's Creek, the waters flow to the northward and into the St. Joseph River, and so finally reach the Gulf of St. Lawrence. From a point a little to the south of the same Summit Lake, sometimes called LaSalle Lake, and also Stanfield Lake, the waters flow to the southward and form the source of the Kankakee river, and so, by the Illinois and the Mississippi, reach the Gulf of Mexico. Before reaching South Bend, the St. Joseph also flows in a southwesterly direction through Michigan and Indiana. At South Bend the river turns abruptly north, and flows thence into Lake Michigan.

II. RELATION OF THE ST. JOSEPH TO THE KANKAKEE.

In a learned and exceedingly interesting paper read before the Northern Indiana Historical Society,^a Dr. Hugh T. Montgomery of South Bend shows very clearly, from an examination of the geological formations extending from Lake Huron and Saginaw Bay, following the valleys of the St. Joseph and Kankakee, that those two great valleys were originally one; and that, at a remote period, the waters of Saginaw Bay flowed through southwestern Michigan and northwestern Indiana, reaching the Mississippi by way of the Illinois River. The broad flood plain marked out in geological ages, and through which flowed the mighty stream, called by Dr. Montgomery the Great Kankakee, may still be traced over the whole region from Saginaw Bay to the Mississippi, passing through the heart of St. Joseph county.

III. THE GLACIAL DRIFT.

With the exception of the river bottoms and certain high and rolling ground in places along the St. Joseph and the Kankakee, the general surface of St. Joseph county, like that of the adjacent parts of Indiana and Michi-

a. "The Glacial Phenomenon as exhibited in Northern Indiana and Southern Michigan."

gan, consists of level or prairie lands; the average elevation in St. Joseph county being about 875 feet above the sea. The soil, which is exceedingly fertile, is composed chiefly of sand or gravel, clay and loam, with some muck in the Kankakee bottoms. The geological formation is glacial drift, which here lies about two hundred feet in thickness over the bed rock.

This formation, and its origin, are well described by Prof. S. S. Gorby, in the state geological report for the year 1886. The northern half of Indiana, he says, consists of a generally level plain, broken slightly by occasional long, low and broad ridges that form the divides between the various water courses. Almost the whole of this region is covered by vast accumulations of transported material, consisting of sand, gravel, boulders and clay. The general term applied to this accumulated material is "drift," a term which well indicates its origin. Large volumes of flowing water, and immense masses of slowly moving ice, are recognized as the agents that transported and deposited these vast accumulations of drift. The uninterrupted flow of great volumes of water, and the continued movement of immense masses of ice through long periods of time, resulted in the wearing away of large portions of the original rocks. In some locations the erosions have amounted to hundreds of feet. Whatever elevations had previously occurred in the northern part of the state were leveled by advancing glaciers and flowing waters, and the sites of ancient hills and mountains are now covered by accumulations of the glacial period.

IV. GLACIAL ACTION OVER NORTHERN INDIANA.

In the same volume of geological reports the gifted Maurice Thompson has given us a fascinating story of the glacial deposits of northern Indiana. From his account we condense the following statement, indicating the forces that brought about the present condition of the surface and soils of St. Joseph

county, and showing the origin of our streams, lakes and underground waters.

It has been clearly demonstrated, says Mr. Thompson, that ice in the form of a glacier, no matter how rigid it may appear, has a current similar to that of water. In other words, ice will form a solid stream, so to speak, which will slowly but steadily creep down an inclined plane, and if this ice-stream be very deep, so as to give it great weight, it will overthrow, grind up and bear away whatever obstacle opposes it. Glaciers are formed by the accumulation of snow, which, by pressure and crystalization, is turned into ice. Thus, wherever the snowfall in winter is greater than can be melted in summer, the snow grows deeper year by year until at length by its own weight, and by partial surface melting, it is compressed into a sheet of ice enormously thick. Now if the surface upon which this sheet rests is inclined, the ice flows and we have a glacier. In the Alps there are glaciers from five hundred to over six hundred feet in vertical depth, slowly flowing down the mountain sides. But it does not require steep mountain slopes for the making of glaciers; a comparatively gentle inclination of the surface of the ground is sufficient if the ice be thick enough and other conditions be favorable to motion. The general form of a glacier is that of a wedge, the edge resting on the lowest point of the surface occupied and the thick end resting on the highest point of the same. Of course the motion of a glacial stream will be in some proportion to the slope of this surface, but the thickness of the great end of the wedge must have much to do with the force of the current.

It is well to bear in mind that the ice of glaciers is not identical with ice frozen under ordinary circumstances, nor is the one equivalent to the other. Snow compressed into a mass of glacier ice is not perfectly crystalline and solid, but peculiarly laminated and porous in its texture, capable of absorbing at times a great quantity of water through-

out its body, thus admitting of expansion by the very force of congelation. Moreover, the smallest movement of this sort repeated, at comparatively long intervals, during countless centuries, would thrust a body of ice, no matter how thick, over a long surface distance. Long and careful study of the phenomena of existing glaciers has resulted in establishing not only the flowing motion of ice, but many of the effects produced thereby, one of the most notable being the moraine matter brought down to the glacier's terminus, or collected along its sides. These masses of moraine matter consist of worn and striated fragments of stone, of all sizes, from giant boulders down to tiny pebbles and infinitesimal grains of sand, together with earthy matter of great variety. A body of this character collected at the foot of a glacier is called a terminal moraine; if at the glacier's side it is called a lateral moraine.

A striking and easily recognized feature of moraine boulders and pebbles, of whatever size, is the peculiar surface-planing caused by the glacier having dragged or pushed them over other stone surfaces, or the like. These ground and scratched faces, once seen and fixed in the memory, serve to identify glacier stones wherever found, whether the stones be boulders, pebbles or rocks in places over which the glacier has passed. Indeed, the floor upon which an ice-river has flowed is always engraved with the unmistakable sign manual of the glacier—fine *striae* parallel with the direction of the current. The movement of a glacier may, and often does, load the ice-surface with stones, dust and other detritus, either by ploughing under the same, or by receiving them as they fall from the slopes on the side.

At the close of what geologists call the Tertiary age, there came a great change in the earth's atmospheric temperature, by which a large part of the northern hemisphere was subjected to a frigidity quite as great, perhaps, as that which now exists in the arctic regions. This polar condition crept on slowly

until at length the desolation of almost unbroken snow and ice reigned supreme. What length of time was required to bring about this climatic change can only be conjectured. Enough evidence appears, however, to make it quite certain that a sub-tropical temperature, and a fauna and flora supported thereby, were banished from our hemisphere, while a boreal winter set its grip of ice upon everything. Snow accumulated year by year, and century by century, until its own weight compressed the mass into glaciers of scarcely imaginable thickness and area, and beside which the ice-fields of Greenland are insignificant. As the winter grew colder and colder, the summer grew feebler, and there is plenty of evidence showing that a boreal fauna and flora crept far southward to usurp the places of those animals and plants that had formerly flourished in a balmy air and a warm, kind soil.

Throughout the drift area the physical features vary but little. Above the striated floor-rocks, the worn and peculiarly flattened boulders and pebbles, the heaps and ridges of sand and gravel, and the vast mass of bluish clay, or till, accompany the glacial matter and make almost the whole of its bulk. In America the drift lies over a vast irregular area, as yet very indefinitely outlined in the north, but pretty accurately defined along the southern boundary. From the highlands of Canada an enormous glacier, or rather series of glaciers, descended into the region south of the Great Lakes, overwhelming with moraine matter a large part of the United States, from the Atlantic to the Pacific. An examination of this drift or moraine matter shows it to consist, in a large degree, of silicious debris, brought from a region of granite, gneiss, greenstone, quartzite and various other metamorphic or igneous rocks quite foreign to the area covered by the mass. Nor is it difficult to see, in a general way, that much of this matter has been transported from the Canadian highlands, where the granitic and other crystalline rocks are found in place,

their surfaces torn, worn and shattered by the glacial action.

The mass of matter, very appropriately named Glacial Drift, which is probably the most important, and certainly the least understood geological feature of Indiana, is in the form of an irregular wedge, its thick end to the north, its edge, or thin end, to the south. Of course this description is of the most general nature, but we must bear in mind the peculiar shape and position of the mass in order to have a ready understanding of its particular features. Taking this vast wedge of matter, then, and beginning our examination in the neighborhood of its southern limit, or edge, we find it more or less obscurely outlined and its constituent parts passing by insensible gradations into the clays formed of decomposed rocks. Proceeding northward, mere superficial observation discovers that the drift mass grows thicker and an occasional boulder is seen, while here and there a bed of smooth gravel appears along with deposits of sand. Upon examination the boulders prove to be rounded, scoured and scratched blocks of granite, gneiss, greenstone and other igneous or metamorphic rocks, and the pebbles of the gravel are simply minute boulders of the same materials. The sand, when carefully studied, appears to be composed mostly of particles of quartz, feldspar, mica and other silicious crystals, evidently the result of a grinding up of igneous rocks.

Bluish or smoky gray colored clay is next discovered and at once becomes the chief component of the drift mass, growing thicker, step by step, as we go northward, save where water and other agents have thinned or removed it. Another very notable fact is the increase in the number of boulders apace with our progress toward the northern end of the wedge. This gray-blue clay, or boulder till, is a mass of pulverized rock sometimes quite appreciably calcareous, but often almost wholly silicious, as if it were a grist of granite rocks ground between some monstrous

upper and nether millstone and poured out upon the surface of our state. From middle Indiana northward ridges and hills of gravel and sand, and vast accumulations of boulders, appear at irregular intervals. Sand, heaped in hillocks and eccentric waves, covers a large area in the northern quarter of the state. Under all this, however, lies the boulder till, or blue-gray clay, which grows thicker gradually, in a general way, as we approach the northern limit.

Nearly all the principal valleys of Indiana lie so that their water-flow is from northeast to southwest, and are trenches cut by some agency, not only through the drift mass, but often through parts of the underlying paleozoic rocks as well. Leading into these valleys from all directions smaller streams cut the land surface into irregular areas, and expose very interesting sections of the drift mass. Along most of the water courses, large and small, the glacial materials have been assorted at certain points and re-arranged in terraces of stratified sand, gravel and water-worn fragments of stone. In the northern part of the state, especially between Lake Michigan and the southern limits of the Kankakee and Yellow River valleys, the boulder clay has a large number of deep basins filled with water, forming beautiful little lakes.

Wherever streams of water have worn deep channels into the drift, and wherever wells have been sunk into or through the same, there have been disclosed marked peculiarities of deposition. In cutting through the boulder clay, which is usually a most solid and refractory substance, strata or intercalated beds of gravel and sand are found, not in persistent sheets but usually lenticular, that is, double convex lens form, or in some other eccentric form of deposition, curiously gripped in the surrounding clay. Some of these sand and gravel masses would seem of great extent, however, serving as vast sponges to hold the water caught between the beds of impervious clay. All through the drift mass boulders of every size, from tons in weight

to pebbles of the size of a pea, are found, having worn faces whose striae are usually parallel to their longer axes. In many places the deposits are curiously curved and otherwise contorted, a condition which shows very plainly wherever the clay, gravel and sand are stratified to some extent. Boulder clay is quite variable in the relative proportion of its constituents. While many sections show homogeneous gray or bluish clay, with only here and there pebbles and boulders, other sections disclose almost every degree of mixture between pure clay, obscurely stratified gravel beds and so-called boulder dykes. The farther we go north in Indiana, speaking with reference to a general average, the greater becomes the admixture of boulders, pebbles and angular fragments of rock in the clay, especially toward its surface, and the more extended become the intercalated strata of sand and gravel; while, at the same time, the number of basins containing water increases, both at the surface and within the mass. The drift appears in places to be parted by a stratum, or strata, of ancient soil, in which are found vegetable remains more or less preserved, consisting of tree-trunks, branches and roots, belonging to what have been large forest trees.

One striking feature of the superficial deposits of the drift is the situation of the cleanest gravel on the north side of the hills and ridges. In fact, it is a rule, with comparatively few exceptions, that a section drawn north and south through a drift hill will disclose the coarse gravel and boulders heaped in a more or less wedge-shaped mass against the north or northeastern side of the elevation, the rest of which will be sand and clay. Furthermore, beginning with the northernmost line of the section, the coarsest part of the gravel will come first, and its pebbles will grow finer as you pass southward across the cutting until it becomes sand, and you find the clay against which it lies. Of course this is not always the case, and many modifications of the rule will be discovered, owing

to recent or comparatively recent erosions and other disturbances; but every observer will admit the larger fact to be the rule itself. Even where conical hills or knobs of gravel are found, as is often the case, standing quite isolated on our level table lands, a section of each will generally show a gradation in the gravel, the pebbles diminishing in size along a line from north to south, or from northeast to southwest, the south side passing into sand.

Between practically horizontal sheets of the boulder clay of Indiana, basins or underground lakes of fresh water exist in many places, and when tapped by borings the water will often flow as an artesian fountain above the surface. This well-known feature is the best proof of the impermeable nature of the clay, and is of peculiar interest in connection with a study of the manner in which our drift has been deposited. These underground pockets of water are, as a rule, similar in every way to the small deep lakes that dot the surface of northern Indiana, save that the subterranean basins have been filled with sand and gravel in which the water is held, as in a sponge. Cross sections of the terraces along our rivers show a simple enough rearrangement of drift materials caused by the action of the water, as the streams gradually decreased in volume, subsequent to the withdrawal of the glaciers, while the loess, bluff or lacustral deposits indicate the bottoms of comparatively recent fresh water lakes over a large area of our state.

The cuttings of the old Louisville and New Albany railroad, from New Albany on the Ohio river to Michigan City on Lake Michigan, give a key to many of the most interesting problems connected with the drift. As we follow this line from the southern to the northern border of the state, we may note how, from a fringe of doubtful glacial debris, the mass of superimposed materials thickens over the rocks in place, until at length the excavations no longer reach deep enough to sever the boulder clay. It requires no prac-

ticed eye to recognize the flat, monotonous billows of the glacial table-lands as soon as they are reached. The whole country, from within thirty miles of the Ohio river to the valley of the Kankakee, presents the appearance of having been heaved into long low waves; but erosion, in fact, and not upheaval, has formed this rolling surface, and each billow is found to be simply a barrier of drift between two drainage beds. Another feature of the drift is not easily observable, save by the use of the level or the barometer. It is a series of waves or swells of the surface, made on a grand scale, and running, in a general way, east and west without any apparent reference to the valleys of erosion. These waves or swells are due to what may be called forward or backward steps of the glacier or glaciers during the vacillations of climate between the beginning and the end of the ice period.

V. LAKES AND SUBTERRANEAN WATERS.

As already stated, lenticular beds of sand and gravel, strata of ancient soil and pockets or subterranean basins of water, are found hermetically sealed up in the body of the blue boulder clay of the drift. These features have puzzled the minds of geologists not a little, and by some they have been considered inexplicable in connection with the glacial theory. At first glance it would seem quite impossible to account for a stratum of soft black muck and loam found intercalated between thick beds of drift clay, especially when this soil contains roots, branches and even trunks of trees showing little evidence of any crushing or grinding force such as we must look for in connection with the glacial action. This soil and muck, deep buried under a vast mass of the clay, and resting on another mass equally thick, cannot be the result of a mere accident, but must be due to some law. So, with regard to the beds of sand and gravel and the subterranean lakes of the drift; they owe their origin to perfectly explicable and normal forces acting

consistently with, and, so to speak, parallel with the great glacial movements.

In the study of the surface and subterranean waters of the drift, the following facts are readily noted:

1st. Springs of water rising vertically, or practically so, from drift deposits usually come from a great depth, and are more or less impregnated with the salts of iron and other mineral impurities.

2nd. Flowing wells whose waters come from natural reservoirs in the drift clay are usually strongly impregnated with iron which oxidizes upon exposure to the air.

3rd. Wells bored or dug in the drift, and whose water does not rise in the bore, are, as a rule, comparatively free from iron and other mineral impurities, but may occasionally contain impurities of a vegetable origin.

In connection with these facts, it has been observed that, in certain localities, gas generated by decomposing vegetable matter has been met with in the drift. This, indeed, would be expected where forests lie mouldering in the grip of the clay. But the sudden exit of this gas when reached by a bore shows how impervious, even to the subtlest element, is the boulder clay. So when water gushes with great force out of a bore we know that the liquid has been safely sealed in the clay reservoir.

The question has been asked, how can it be that a glacier, or any number of successive glaciers, could have formed in the body of its deposits these pouches of water, these strata of soil and vegetable matter, and these lens-shaped intermediate pockets of sand and gravel? The most usual, and withal, the most plausible answer is the general one which accounts for these features of the drift by assuming that there have been many advances and retreats of the great ice-flood over the area of our glacial deposits, and that the sorting action of water, the glacial movements and their attending accidents, have given the grand mass its peculiarity of composition. Such intense and prolonged cold as would attend the

formation of ice thick enough to fill the conditions of the great glacial problem, would freeze the crust of the earth to the solidity of adamant many feet deep. We are not left to mere reasoning or conjecture in this. In many northern regions the earth is now frozen to a great and unknown depth. It could not be otherwise. If thirty or forty days of weather with the temperature varying between the freezing point and ten degrees below zero will solidify the ground to a depth of two feet, as is often the case now in our state, how deep would continuous boreal winter for many centuries solidify it?

When the glacial period began in Indiana, no tertiary deposits had been laid down upon our carboniferous rocks, for there is no good evidence of the tertiary formations here. The fauna of the carboniferous seas consisted of marine forms, and in a large degree the genera were those having a very deep water habitat. As the sea became shallow, at length the marine life disappeared. At the beginning of the ice age, there must have existed in Indiana the broken remnants, so to speak, of the carboniferous sea—a sea at that time full of sandy, desolate islands, upon which, in places, a scant vegetation may have begun to appear. Far northward, the mountains of Canada were already covered with snow, and year by year a boreal temperature was creeping southward, on account of a far withdrawal of the deep seas and great changes in their climate-controlling currents. It is not probable that those Canadian mountains were very high; indeed, they must have been low enough to be finally overwhelmed by the awful accumulations of snow and ice north of them, for it is plain that the great glacier flowed over them instead of simply running down their sides. It is impossible to determine how often the ice has flowed over and retreated from the area now covered by the drift, but there is the best evidence that the alterations have been many, and between a great extreme of cold on the one hand and a sub-arctic temperature on the other. In other

words, while the frigidity during glacial action was incalculably powerful, the intervals of recession were, as a rule, far from tropical, as we now understand the word.

Let us try to get a view of the surface condition of our drift area after the withdrawal of the first great glacial agent. The highlands of Canada have been largely demolished, the basins of the lakes have been scooped out of the paleozoic rocks and are filled with solid masses of ice covered over with glacial debris, and the surface of northern Indiana is covered with an immense drift deposit. We have said that the great lake basins were left full of solid ice, when the glacier had retreated far northward, and that the surface of this ice was covered with a coating of drift material. The same statement is applicable to innumerable small basins left in the glacial clay, just such basins, in fact, as the retreat of the last glacier left filled with ice and covered with sand, gravel and boulders, and which latter basins are now the beautiful little lakes of northern Indiana. But how, if these basins were solidly filled with ice, did they come to be covered with a layer of sand, gravel and boulders? The question is easily answered. As the foot of the great glacier receded northward a constant flow of water was caused by its melting, the washing force of which carried forward fine sand and gravel, and also icebergs loaded with morainic matter, all of which was distributed over the surface upon which the water flowed. It is apparent, from the very nature of things, that a vast deep basin, in the frozen crust of the earth, filled with a solid lump of ice, would be very slow to melt, and that the glacier overlying it would retreat on the line of the basin's rim and leave a great tower of ice, in the form of a cone, marking the site. This cone would melt down to the basin's level and then the currents from the still retreating glacier would flow across it, depositing its sand, gravel, boulders and rock fragments. Then we have the following conditions: The crust of the earth is frozen to a profound

depth below the ice which fills the lake basins, while upon the ice is deposited a thick mass of drift material, transported there by water and icebergs. One instantly sees how great a time it would require to melt a vast cake of ice under such conditions. Indeed, before this melting was accomplished the glacier returned and flowed over the whole area again. But the very circumstances which caused a return of the glacier necessarily operated to re-congeal such parts of the drift as had been thawed, so that the surface over which the second glacier flowed was rendered as hard as were the paleozoic rocks upon whose surface it first cut its lasting autograph. This mass of sand, gravel and boulder-clay, frozen to adamantine solidity, must have been a very refractory substance for a glacier to grind down. Indeed, the second glacier had a more stubborn material to overcome than had the first. So we can readily see how each retreat of the glacier left deep basins full of ice in the surface of the drift, and how each return of the glacier buried these basins of ice deep under another mass of clay. Hence, all through the grand body of our glacial deposits, we find the hermetically sealed pockets of water which represent the imprisoned ice-cakes now melted in the buried basins. The lenticular beds of sand and strata of soil and muck are to be accounted for upon the same grounds. When the time between the retreat and the return of the glacier was long enough, vegetation was generated upon favored areas of the drift, and a soil was formed which, if on low places, was covered up when again the glacier appeared.

In order to illustrate the theory above set forth, let us take Lake Maxinkuckee as an example and suppose that there should come a return of the great glacier from the direction of the northeast. We must remember that before this could happen a long period of intense cold would have to prepare the way by freezing solid all the lakes and rivers and the earth's crust to a great depth. Maxinkuckee would be congealed from surface to

bottom, and the great glacier, creeping down from its source, and scraping and ploughing the granite-like, frozen surface of the ground, would bury the beautiful little lake deep under a mighty mass of moraine clay, sand, gravel and bowlders, where it would remain unmelted until the temperature of the surrounding earth rose above freezing point, when it would slowly turn to water and become, not an underground lake, but, by the processes of pressure and solution, a subterraneous mass of so-called water-bearing clay or water sands.

Evidently there were long spaces of time in the glacial age during which the ice neither advanced nor retreated, but was held in arrest. No doubt when an advance followed such a pause the glacier overrode its hard frozen terminal moraine, and in this way left large masses of trees and other matter buried in an unerushed state, for at every step we must constantly bear in mind the arctic intensity of the cold during these periods of accumulation. The immense volume of sand which is thrown out of our lakes, even the smaller ones, is proof of the fact that, during the time they were frozen solid, their surface was covered with a coat of drift which sank when the ice melted.

But the question arises: Why are the waters of flowing wells and deep springs, that have their reservoirs in the drift, nearly always impregnated with salts of iron or other mineral impurities, while the waters of wells that do not flow are usually comparatively pure? The answer must be that flowing wells and springs presuppose, in a general way, that their reservoirs are fed from the surface by filtration through permeable parts of the drift, and that the water takes up the iron and other minerals from the material through which it passes, while the water in wells that are unflowing is not furnished from the surface, or any higher strata of sand and gravel, but really is water from imprisoned ice melted in the body of the drift clay. Of course not all flowing wells are iron water, nor impreg-

nated to a great degree with other minerals; but that is the rule. The fact suggests itself, in this connection, that all the porous beds of sand and gravel, intercalated between masses of the drift clay, were probably full of water, in a frozen state, when they were buried. It must not be understood, however, that this explanation is sufficient to compass all the conditions under which water is found in the drift, but it does seem quite applicable to many special problems in that connection which heretofore have not been solved satisfactorily.

VI. MORAINES AND WATERWAYS.

The foregoing account, showing the probable origin of our lakes and underground waters, as also of the solid ingredients of the drift upon which we are located, is applicable not only to St. Joseph county but also to the greater part of northern Indiana. To Dr. Montgomery's very able paper, already referred to, we are indebted for the following review of the action of the last glacier, resulting in the existing moraines, hills, rivers and valleys going to make up the present surface of St. Joseph county.

During the earlier part of the quaternary geological period, as Dr. Montgomery tells us, the crust of the earth was subject to varied and wide-spread oscillations, elevations and depressions. Elevations were most marked in higher latitudes, and on our own continent through the north central part, comprising Labrador, the Canadas and the great lake region. These oscillations were attended with great changes in climate, the elevated regions being subject to extreme cold. The territories immediately north of us were elevated from two to three thousand feet, and from continued snowfall during a long period of time became covered with ice to a depth of from five to ten thousand feet. This frozen mass was known as the great Continental ice-sheet, and extended south near Cincinnati to a point a few miles below the Ohio river. From this point the lower border of the ice-sheet

took a northeasterly and northwesterly course. The cause of the great glacial epoch is not fully understood. But we know that even in our own day, the surface of the earth, in places, is subject to slow but constant changes in elevation and depression; and it is clear that the elevation referred to was in itself a strong factor in the production of a severer climate. This climatic condition was favorable to continued snows which lasted through long ages. The short summer suns had little effect in dissipating the snows, but was sufficient to reduce the vast snow-field to glacial ice. As the mass began to pile up to thousands of feet in thickness, the known glacial movements began and the great ice flow started southward. The ice mass being of great weight, and frozen solidly to the surface upon which it rested in its slow motion onward, carried or dragged everything movable with it, and scoured, grooved and polished every surface over which it passed, leveling and pushing forward all loose material found in its pathway. The great creases or channels in the surface rock produced by stream erosion were partly obliterated by glacial erosion and partly filled up by glacial rubbish. As the ice-sheet approached and passed into the great lakes its lower margin became lobated and each lobe took a course largely in the direction of the lake valleys, but as these lobes emerged they began to coalesce, forming again an almost unbroken front, pushing onward to the south loaded with bowlders, gravel, sand and clay. As the ice-sheet moved on it approached a warmer climate until the loss by melting at the south equalled the production from the north and caused the ice border to remain stationary for unknown years. From this line the ice yielded up its waters which rolled onward to the sea through the great central waterway, the Mississippi.

Under the weight of the ice, thousands of feet in thickness and extending over a wide territory, or from some other cause, the crust of the earth began to settle, and a depression from twelve to fifteen hundred feet below

our present level was reached. This is known as the Champlain epoch. As a consequence a milder climate prevailed and the ice withdrew to the north, leaving its load of earthy material strewn over the surface. The recession was slow and interrupted, and at times stationary, the glacier laying down moraine ridges and broken ranges of hills, until finally the ice border lay north of the great lakes. The melting of this receding mountain of ice produced great floods and mighty streams. In our region the waters were carried to the south by four great channels, the Ohio, the Wabash, the Kankakee and the Desplaines. Any of these streams was larger than the Mississippi of today. The flood plain of the Mississippi itself was then formed as we now find it, thirty miles in breadth.

The time which elapsed after the surface was laid down by the withdrawal of the first ice-sheet, is measured by so long a period of aerial and aqueous erosion that hills and ridges were leveled and the lakes filled with sediment and vegetation. During this Champlain epoch, or period of depression, the surface abounded in shallow pools, swamps and lagoons. Drainage was slow and interrupted, with a general inclination to a leveling of the surface. The great gorges and stream channels that had been eroded during the period of elevation were filled with river drift. Forests again covered the uplands and peat bogs filled the depressions, all again to be crushed, ground and scraped from the surface by the last ice advance.

VII. THE GREAT KANKAKEE.

SEC. 1.—THREE GREAT ICE LOBES.—We now come to the culmination of the physical energies which gave us the present surface contour of St. Joseph county. The conditions necessary to produce a humid atmosphere and great snowfalls were again present. Over the regions north of the great lakes the mass of snow and ice began again to accumulate until it reached thousands of feet in thickness, and from its own weight began to move as a te-

nacious, semi-liquid mass. As it approached and entered the great lake basins its onward movement was directed largely by the trend or direction of their basins. The Maumee or Erie lobe took a west southwest course. The lobe passing through the Huron basin made its exit in part from the southwest margin through that part of the basin known as Saginaw Bay. The lobe that entered the Lake Michigan basin passed almost directly south. When we speak of the direction of the several lobes we refer to their axes, as the ice movement in those great basins was forward and to either side, radiating in an advance direction from a common center. The Saginaw lobe was a long wedge-shaped mass, hemmed in on the west by the mighty Michigan lobe and on the east receiving the full force of the Maumee or Erie mass. A part of the Saginaw lobe passed out at the foot of the basin and commingled its ice and load of earth and bowlders with the Erie lobe. From this fact we find drift material from Lake Superior and the northern Huron regions, such as drift copper and porphyry conglomerate, scattered over Indiana and Ohio. This may also account for the very heavy deposit of drift over the northeastern counties of Indiana, where it attains a depth in places of from four to five hundred feet.

These ice tongues or lobes, after emerging from their basins maintained their lobate characteristics, yet were united one with another. The most southerly line reached by the ice during this last movement was comparatively but a few miles below the great lakes, where it remained for a long period. The ice advancing with its load of earthy refuse from the north melted away as rapidly as it advanced to this line and laid down its burden of accumulated material, forming great ranges of hills or moraines, both terminal and lateral, definitely marking the outline of each glacial lobe. After the summers began again to predominate over the winters the ice gradually withdrew to the north and disappeared from this locality. North of the

terminal moraine marking the farthest advance of the ice-sheet will be found almost all of our small inland lakes, the distinguishing mark of beauty of this locality. The former lakes which once dotted the older glaciated surface had long before been carried away by erosion or filled up with silt. Before the coming of this last ice the surface soil of Indiana was composed of clay and fine sand, with lime, slate and sandstone pebbles; no granite boulders or pebbles at that time were present. It was entirely through the agency of the last ice-sheet that they were carried from the north and spread over this locality.

The Maumee or Erie ice lobe advanced from the Lake Erie basin in a southwesterly course, and the border of the lobe entered Indiana at the northeast corner of Elkhart county and took a westerly course through the northerly part of Elkhart and St. Joseph counties to a point about five miles west of South Bend where it began to angle to the south through the western part of the county and continued along the western borders of Marshall and Fulton counties and on to the Wabash river at Logansport. The withdrawal of the ice-sheet from this line and the depositing of its earthy and stony contents mark the age of the lofty range of hills lying south of Mishawaka and South Bend. To the west, the Lake Michigan lobe filled its basin and extended east from thirty to forty miles beyond the present shore line, where it curved southwest around the southeast corner of the lake. It overlapped the northwest corner of St. Joseph county and approached near to the city limits of South Bend. The highlands along the north bank of the Kankakee valley, Portage Prairie and the uplands west of the city of Niles mark the eastern or southeastern border of the Michigan ice lobe. The Saginaw glacier advanced from the Huron basin, pushed south between the Michigan and Maumee or Erie glaciers and reached a point one mile northeast of South Bend, its moraine commencing about one mile east of Notre Dame and a little south, forming the range of hills

beginning at that point and extending in a general northeasterly direction, passing near Dowagiac, Decatur and Lawton, Michigan, and terminating west and north of Saginaw Bay. This range of hills marks the western and part of the southern terminal moraine of the Saginaw glacier, its eastern arm and part of its southern arm having been eroded and washed away by the great Kankakee river. From this outline of the glacial borders, it will be noticed that the city of South Bend is located where three great ice lobes met, the Maumee or Erie, the Saginaw and the Michigan. These great lobes here marked their existence by massive accumulations, forming rugged and permanent ranges of hills and uplands which fix the contour of the landscape in St. Joseph county perhaps forever.

SEC. 2.—THE ANCIENT WATERWAYS.—This brings us to the ancient waterways of our county. The melting of the vast fields of ice brought on great floods and torrential streams. South Bend and St. Joseph county being peculiarly located as to the three glaciers, were also peculiarly located as to ancient streams. Where the busy city now lies nestling in a beautiful valley, partly surrounded by hills, a wonderful river once flowed, a stream three miles wide and one hundred feet or more in depth, moving from east to west. From the north also a great tributary, whose mouth was three miles wide, emptied its waters into the main stream within the present limits of the city of South Bend. If a man could have stood upon the hills of Rum Village, just south of the city, a vast panorama of water would have met his gaze. To the northeast, a flood from five to six miles in width and extending up the valley as far as the eye could reach, would have been seen, passing at his feet and rolling onward to the southwest, confined only by the hills on the north and on the south. To the northwest, he would perceive a tributary stream entering the great flood, three miles in width and limited in the line of vision only

by the horizon. And if a man today should stand on the same hills of Rum Village, or on those to the south of the city of Mishawaka, or upon Lowell Heights, or upon any other highlands on either side of the great valley, he could still see the broad bed, miles in width, through which the ancient river once flowed.

The great stream was the Kankakee of that day, which had its origin at the foot of the Saginaw glacier and received its tributaries from the Maumee and the Michigan glaciers. The great Kankakee was the outlet for the waters flowing southwest from Lake Huron, through Saginaw Bay. We know that this valley served as a waterway during the withdrawal of the first ice-sheet from the fact that its channel was silted up like all other valleys during the Champlain epoch, or age of depression. It was never re-excavated to any extent, and remains today a filled valley. It is probable that the Kankakee valley also carried the waters flowing from the northeast during the advance of the last glacier; but, soon after the withdrawal of this ice-sheet began, the waters found an outlet into Lake Michigan, leaving the Kankakee valley at the point where South Bend now stands, and passing to the lake through the large tributary already referred to. The old valley of the great Kankakee extends from a point in Illinois where the present Kankakee and the Desplaines unite, northeasterly through Illinois, Indiana and Michigan to the watershed between the streams flowing into Saginaw Bay and the headwaters of the present St. Joseph river. The St. Joseph now flows southwesterly through this old Kankakee channel to South Bend, and there turns abruptly north and reaches Lake Michigan at the city of St. Joseph. The valley of the Kankakee was the chief outlet to Lake Huron during glacial times, as the Wabash valley was Lake Erie. The flood plain, where once flowed this mighty Kankakee, varies in width from three miles at its narrowest point, which is one mile below South Bend, to about twenty at its broadest, which is between Porter and Lake counties

on the north and Newton and Jasper on the south. The southeasterly bank of the valley, from about six miles below South Bend to its source, near Saginaw Bay, is from fifty to one hundred feet high, while the northwesterly bank, from South Bend to the same point, is generally low and shelving. From South Bend down the valley to the Illinois line, that is, from the point where the great stream emerged, between the Maumee and Michigan moraines, to its confluence with the Desplaines, the banks are low, generally not exceeding fifteen or twenty feet in height. On the southeasterly side of the old channel will be found quite an extensive sandy flood plain, extending from the border of the Maumee moraine southwestward, covering almost the entire surface of Starke county together with the northern part of Pulaski, Jasper and Newton counties. On the north the main channel largely borders on the Michigan moraines.

The great width of the stream from South Bend to the eastern part of Illinois was owing to three causes:

First. The surface of the country through which this part of the stream flowed was destitute of rugged features.

Second. The stream, just beyond the present Illinois line, crossed the arched bed rock which extends in a northwesterly course across Indiana into Illinois. Near the present site of Momence, Illinois, this rocky ridge produced a well marked rapids, similar to that in the Ohio river near Louisville, which tended to dam the waters and cause them to overflow a wide territory above and causing this region to appear today as if a great lake had occupied the territory.

Third. At the present site of South Bend, the Dowagiac, a tributary one-third the size of the main stream, was added to its volume.

The principal tributaries of the great Kankakee were the Elkhart and Yellow rivers, draining from the Maumee glacier, also the Tippecanoe at the point where it enters the southeast corner of Starke county; besides,

the stream here called the great Dowagiac, now represented by the Dowagiac creek, which heads south of Kalamazoo, but whose ancient waters probably accumulated far north of that point, gathering from the slope of the eastern lateral moraine of the Michigan glacial lobe. Those waters formed a mighty glacial river, flowing south to a point three miles north of Niles, Michigan, where it received a tributary which had opened a way through the lateral Michigan moraine and discharged its waters from the Michigan basin before these waters had found an opening to the south between the Michigan ice-lobe and its moraine. The great Dowagiac, after receiving these overflow waters from the Lake Michigan basin, continued south and emptied into the Kankakee at the present site of the city of South Bend.

The old channel of the Dowagiac where that stream emptied into the Kankakee is three miles wide, with well defined banks rising from fifty to seventy-five feet above the bed of the valley, which had been cut to bed rock and silted up about one hundred and twenty feet, leaving the above mentioned banks yet remaining. These great streams, the Kankakee and the Dowagiac, existed for long periods of time. They conveyed the glacial waters during the advance of the ice-sheet, also during the period that it stood at its most advanced point and during its withdrawal, until the Michigan ice-lobe had sufficiently receded to allow the waters along its eastern border to escape through the Desplaines opening. This escape by the Desplaines promoted a rapid lowering of the waters between the ice-lobe and its lateral moraine and terminated the flow of waters from the Michigan basin into the Dowagiac river, leaving a broad, water-worn plain leading from the Dowagiac river back northwesterly to Lake Michigan.

SEC. 3.—ORIGIN OF THE ST. JOSEPH RIVER.—Here began a system of river robbing, if we may call it so. The Dowagiac, at a point just below Niles, doubled upon itself at an

angle of forty-five degrees, followed the abandoned channel of its former tributary and discharged its waters into Lake Michigan; leaving in turn, a well worn channel from three to four miles wide and thirteen miles long leading to the great trunk stream, or Kankakee, at South Bend. The distance from South Bend, the point where the Dowagiac had formerly emptied its waters into the great Kankakee, to St. Joseph, Michigan, is thirty-eight miles, with a fall of one hundred and forty-one feet. From South Bend to Momence, Illinois, the distance is ninety-two miles with a fall of ninety-three feet. It can be readily understood that with the first annual flood a part of the waters of the Kankakee would follow the abandoned Dowagiac channel, from South Bend to Niles, there mingle with the Dowagiac in its new route and pass onward into Lake Michigan, at the city of St. Joseph. The fall over the new route being three and a half times greater than over the old, the new channel would rapidly cut through the old river deposit, finally taking all the waters of the once mighty Kankakee, and leaving the valley from South Bend to the Desplaines a geological monument to tell of the eternal past.

A physical force which most likely aided in turning the current of the Kankakee into the channel of the Dowagiac, and so forming the stream known to us as the St. Joseph, resulted from an ice gorge formed seven miles below South Bend, where a point of land jutting out from the Michigan moraine, and now called Crum's Point, extends into the valley proper two miles and a half in an almost transverse direction. Just below this point we find an ancient flood plain two miles wide which was supplied with overflow water from the basin of Lake Michigan, but which overflow entirely subsided when the waters of the lake receded from the rim of this basin. This valley, extending to and including the beautiful Terre Coupee Prairie, is now drained by a small meandering stream known as Grape-

vine creek, the remnant of a once mighty glacial river. Strong and pronounced evidences of an ice gorge or dam having formed at Crum's Point and extended up the river to the mouth of the old Dowagiac at South Bend are yet plainly visible from the scouring, leveling and erosion of morainic hills on the south, and by a chain of lakes and lake beds on the north, the latter connected by a gorge with the glacial stream aforesaid. Evidences of the gorge are also found at the head and north of the ice dam, which passed well up above the mouth of the Dowagiac, east and north of which the waters pouring around this dam into the Dowagiac valley excavated an interrupted channel or chain of depressions. These depressions are linear, extending from southeast to northwest, being from one-fourth to three-fourths of a mile long, twenty to forty feet deep and from two hundred to four hundred yards wide, with sharp and well-defined banks. They all show evidences of having been filled with water for a long period of time. All have become dry except the lower two, the Notre Dame lakes, which contain from twenty to thirty feet of water at present. This channel or chain of depressions extends from near Mishawaka, northwesterly, to a point on the St. Joseph river one mile north of South Bend, a distance of four miles and a half. When the ice-dam gave way the waters abandoned those circuitous or temporary routes and returned to their former channels; only the smaller part, however, continuing down the old Kankakee, while the larger body moved along the new route through the Dowagiac channel to Lake Michigan. The fall by the latter way being three and a half times greater than by the former, a channel sufficient to carry the entire body of water was soon eroded. A bluff twelve to fourteen feet high, formed at first as a sandbar from sediment supplied by what is now known as the Wenger creek, extended in a diagonal direction across the old Kankakee bed and parallel to the new current until it reached the opposite bank, when the

great Kankakee valley was sealed forever, and the upper stream became a distinct river, the beautiful St. Joseph as we know it. The sandbar or bluff referred to, and which thus finally sealed up the valley of the great Kankakee, is the shelf or hill extending diagonally from southeast to northwest, through the City of South Bend, on the west side of the St. Joseph. Tippecanoe place is built on the edge of this bar, which was well known to our early settlers as the Bluff. This ridge, while originally built up as a sandbar by sediment from the creek, was increased in height by erosion as the new St. Joseph cut into its bed.

Long before those great stream changes had taken place, the swift current of the Dowagiac had carried down large quantities of gravel, and as the gravel-laden waters came in contact with the waters of the Kankakee the velocity of the former was checked and the gravel was laid down on the west bank where the current remained the swiftest. This gravel bed extends north of the city limits of South Bend, down the west bank of the St. Joseph, a distance of three or four miles, and is about one-half mile in width. It forms the eastern slope or border of Portage Prairie. The bed has been sounded in a number of places and found to be from forty to fifty feet in depth, and all smooth, rounded, water-worn gravel; placing at the city's gates an inexhaustible supply of finest road gravel. The Dowagiac hurling its great volume of water against the current of the Kankakee, also had the effect of slowing the latter stream and causing it to deposit its heavier material; which we find stored away in the form of acres of river gravel at Twin Branch, just east of Mishawaka. The east side of the Dowagiac near its mouth was much more obstructed than the west, and consequently the gravel and coarser material were slowly laid down farther above and only the finer material was carried down to the mouth, where it was laid down in great quantities of sand, forming Lowell Heights.

If a careful examination is made of the sand on these heights, numerous small particles of coal will be found, indicating that the Saginaw glacier had cut deep into the surface and uncovered in places the coal fields of Michigan and mingled their contents with the drift.

The great Kankakee river, from its source near Saginaw Bay, took a southwesterly course to its junction with the Desplaines, forming with the latter the Illinois river. When the waters left the old channel at the point where the city of South Bend now stands they took an almost due northerly course, thus forming a great bend in the new river and giving to the future county seat of St. Joseph county its name. Since the formation of the St. Joseph from the changes thus made in the Kankakee and the Dowagiac, the new river has eroded its valleys from fifty to sixty feet into the old river deposits, but has not yet reached their base level. The Kankakee valley at South Bend, where it escapes from between the Maumee and Michigan moraines, is narrowed to three miles, with high, rugged banks and no flood plain. Five miles east and up the valley from South Bend, it reaches a width of six miles, which width it holds, with slight variation, until it arrives at the rim of the Saginaw basin. This end of the valley is thoroughly drained by the present St. Joseph river. There are a few peat bogs and marshes lying back from the river where the valley is broad and the modern channel well to one side. Otherwise the old valley above South Bend is one vast level sand-plain. Below South Bend, where the old valley remains silted up and there is no sufficient modern channel for complete drainage, the spring waters escaping from beneath the Michigan moraine, on the west, and from the foot of the Maumee, on the east, and also bubbling up from the bed of the old stream itself, as reported by Mr. William M. Whitten, when engineer in charge of the rock excavations at Momence, have caused a vast growth of peat or muck over

the entire valley proper. Beneath this muck bed which extends from six to ten feet in depth, is found fine sand and river gravel, as shown by excavations made in the construction of large ditches, twenty to sixty feet in width, six to ten feet deep and now extending sixty to seventy miles below South Bend. Had the stream not changed its course at South Bend, but continued down the original valley, eroding a channel or partially clearing the old silted valley to a depth of from fifty to sixty feet, as the waters have done through their new course down the St. Joseph, there would have been no "Kankakee Marsh," and all that part of the valley from South Bend to Momence would have been a vast sandy plain, covered with timber and in general appearance similar to that part of the valley above South Bend.

Through the courtesy of Dr. Montgomery, we are enabled to illustrate the foregoing geological history with the annexed map prepared by him, which shows the moraines and ancient valleys and rivers, with the resulting configuration of St. Joseph county, Indiana, and vicinity.

VIII. ELEVATIONS, STRATA AND SOILS.

From the preceding history of the recent geological formations of the surface, the general character of the soils, clays, gravels and other minerals of the county, as well as that of its lakes and underground waters, is apparent. There is not an outcrop of primitive rock in the county, the entire surface, as we have seen, being covered with glacial drift which will probably average two hundred feet in depth. The only place in the county where this drift has been pierced to the underlying stratified rock is at South Bend, where in boring for gas and oil a few years ago, the drift was found to be one hundred and sixty feet thick. This, however, was in the valley of the St. Joseph river, seven hundred and twenty-five feet above tide, or fully one hundred and fifty feet lower than the uplands in the south-

eastern part of the county, which are 875 to 900 feet above the sea. The levels of the more important railway stations in the county show the following altitudes in feet, above tide: Osceola, 736; Mishawaka, 700 to 743; South Bend, 708 to 726; Notre Dame, 710; Warren, 730; Lakeville, 837; Walkerton, 711. In seeking for natural gas and oil at South Bend three wells were sunk into the rock. The following is the result of the borings of one of these wells, as given in the 18th report of the state geologist, showing the depth in feet of the drift and of the several layers of rock at this point, down to the Trenton rock: Drift, 160; Sub-carboniferous and Devonian, 220; Corniferous, 60; Lower Heiderberg, 40; Niagara, 640; Clinton, 60 (?); Hudson River, 200; Utica shales, 200; Trenton Limestone, 427. Total depth of well, 2,027. No gas or oil.

The drift over about one-half of the county is a gravel plain, formed, as we have seen, by the outwash from the ice-sheet. In the northwestern part of the county the outwash is from the Michigan moraine, and the plain descends from 800 feet at the border of the moraine to 725 at the Kankakee flats. In the southwestern part of the county the outwash is westward from the moraine of the Maumee lobe, and there is a similar descent from the moraine to the Kankakee valley. In the northeastern part of the county there is an extensive gravel plain along the St. Joseph river. The southeastern part of the county is occupied by a till, or clay, plain, which borders on the Maumee moraine on the east.

St. Joseph county contains an area of about four hundred and seventy-seven square miles, the surface of which is diversified by prairies, marshes, oak-openings and rolling timber lands. The oak-openings are covered with a light sandy soil, excellently suited to the raising of small fruits and vegetables. The timber lands possess a subsoil of clay, covered with a rich dark soil, which yields all the cereals in abundance. The prairies,

both old and young, for the marshes and beds of former lakes are but incipient prairies, have the richest and most productive soils, and are unexcelled for the raising of all farm produce, except wheat, which winter-kills on the lowest grounds. No prairies in the world are more beautiful or fertile than those of St. Joseph county. The finest and largest of these is Terre Coupee, in Olive township, over six miles in length, east and west, by four or five miles, north and south. Others are: Portage Prairie, in German township; Palmer Prairie, in Center township; Sumption Prairie, in Greene township; and Harris Prairie, in Harris township. The flood valley of the Kankakee is itself a prairie of the richest and fairest promise, though as yet not fully reclaimed. No more varied, richer or more beautiful farm lands exist anywhere than in this good county of St. Joseph.

IX. LAKES OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.

The lakes of St. Joseph county, as said by Prof. Blatchley, in his report as state geologist for the year 1900, are small in size, and most of them rapidly becoming extinct. Deposits of marl are found near and under many of them; not generally, however, of good workable area and thickness.

Among the most beautiful and noted of our lakes are Chain and Bass lakes, in Warren township, a few miles west of South Bend. The marl beds in and around these lakes cover nearly three hundred and fifty acres. Their sparkling waters have always been favorite resorts for boating and fishing. They were dear to the Indian long before the coming of the white man. Near by, to the east of these lakes, at Mount Pleasant, on Portage Prairie, stood the historic village of the Miamis, famous in story and song, where the treaty with LaSalle was made in 1681.

The Lakes of Notre Dame, already mentioned, lie northwest of and near to the University, and about two miles northeast of South Bend. St. Joseph's, the upper lake, has an area of about sixty-five acres, and a

maximum depth, on the west side, of twenty-five feet. The water area of St. Mary's, the lower lake, is a little more than thirty acres. The two lakes are separated by a stretch of low ground containing ten or more acres, in the midst of which is a small gravel island rising to a level with the uplands surrounding the lakes. In the past the lowland was covered with water, and there was but one lake, with the island in the middle. There is a marl deposit in and about these lakes which is of especial interest from the circumstance that it furnished the carbonate of lime material for the first, and for more than twenty years the only, Portland cement factory in Indiana. At St. Mary's lake the water deepens abruptly and close to the shore. The marl extends back several rods from shore. Under both lakes, it is claimed that the marl has an average thickness of more than thirty feet.

Clear lake and Mud lake lie on and just south of the Michigan-Indiana state line, about eight miles northwest of South Bend, the northern two-thirds of Clear lake being in Michigan, and the remainder in Warren township, this county. There is no workable marl deposit at these lakes. Clear lake furnishes a typical example of a lake whose water area has been encroached upon by decaying vegetation until the lake has become almost extinct. In 1880, according to the testimony of persons living in the vicinity, the entire basin of the lake, eighty acres or more, was covered with water to a depth of twenty to thirty feet. There was then no aquatic vegetation except along the south shore. Now the southern half is a vast morass of muck and spatterdock, with water nowhere more than six inches in depth. The western margin for one-third the distance across the lake is similarly filled. Many floating islands, or moving morasses of muck, rise nearly to the surface in other parts of the lake, so that its clear water area is but little over fifteen acres, and its deepest water only about twelve feet. A fine wooded ridge, with a gravelly margin, rises twenty or more feet high along the north half of the east side.

The banks on the northwest are lower, while the southern shores are marshy. Game fish is abundant. The high banks of Clear lake are the resort of numerous pleasure parties in the summer; one of the most enjoyable being the annual picnic of the old settlers of St. Joseph county, Indiana, and Berrien county, Michigan.

No one who has not visited a lake like this can realize how varied the kind and how abundant the individuals of plant life that can flourish in water. It is one of the best examples at present in Indiana of a dying lake,—an incipient marsh. Here one can see in actual progress many of those intermediate stages and processes which in time change a body of fresh water into a body of land.

The northern edge of the basin of former Mud lake lies south of the basin of Clear lake about one-third of a mile. Its former water area was over three hundred acres and its outline very irregular. It has now become a vast marsh, with not more than thirty acres of water, and that shallow and occupying two or three small isolated areas. The vegetation, however, is not nearly so dense or so varied as that at Clear lake.

Goose lake, called also Soursley's lake, lies a little over two miles north of the town of North Liberty. It is surrounded by low ground, and formerly included what is now called Little lake. The total area, including marsh and the surface of both lakes, is about four hundred acres. Goose lake now has an area of forty or fifty acres, and Little lake about thirty acres. Goose lake is very shallow, Little lake somewhat deeper. The surrounding bluffs are generally rather abrupt and fifteen to twenty feet high. There is an extensive deposit of marl in and about the lakes, but it is deeply covered over by muck.

Rupel's lake is a small body of water, lying southeast of North Liberty. It is shallow and mostly surrounded by flat marshy land, with beds of marl beneath. Other small bodies of water are Pleasant lake and Riddle's lake, in Union township, south of Lakeville; Wharton lake and Duck lake, in Greene township; and Fish lake, in Warren township.

CHAPTER II.

EARLY HISTORY.

I. MARQUETTE.

Sec. 1.—FIRST FOOTPRINTS.—The annals of St. Joseph county reach further back into the shadowy realms of romance and tradition than do those of any other county in the state of Indiana. The landscape of this county was the first in Indiana to be looked upon by the eye of the white man, and its soil was the first to receive the impression of the white man's foot. As in case of many other localities in the state, it is not a question altogether free from doubt as to when civilized man first walked over our valleys and uplands and gazed upon the sparkling waters of our lakes and rivers; yet, while it must be admitted that the evidence is slight, nevertheless it is the opinion of many of the most trustworthy authorities that such evidence as we have is sufficient to show that in the month of May, 1675, Father James Marquette, the intrepid Jesuit missionary explorer, during his last illness and a little before his death, journeyed up the winding Kankakee to a point a little below the limits of the present city of South Bend. The tradition is that his faithful Indians carried his frail bark and guided his feeble footsteps from that point along the ancient Portage, to the St. Joseph, then the River of the Miamis, upon whose crystal waters he floated down to Lake Michigan. It seems a benediction for all time that this saintly hero should thus, in his last hours upon earth, have passed along our rivers and walked upon our soil, drinking of

the sweet waters of our valleys and breathing the airs that we breathe. As he moved by the well-worn trail across the highlands of Portage Prairie he must have looked into the valley where the busy city of South Bend now flourishes, and over the wooded plains beyond the St. Joseph where the sun-lit towers of Notre Dame and St. Mary's appear upon the distant landscape. Father Marquette represented in himself enterprise, heroism, love of God and a love of human kind. Are these high attributes, so strikingly manifested by our people to-day, the blessed heritage of that far off day?

Sec. 2.—ROUTES OF TRAVEL.—It was by way of the Sault de Ste. Marie (The Falls of St. Mary's River) and the straits of Mackinaw that the French reached the Northwest from Canada. In 1641 the first Canadian envoys met the western Indians at the Sault. It was not, however, until 1659 that any of the adventurous fur traders spent a winter on the shores of the northern lakes, nor till 1660 that the devotion of the missionaries, led by Father Mesnard, caused the first station to be established. Five years later, in 1665, Father Claude Allouez built the earliest of the lasting habitations of the white men among the kindly and hospitable Indians of the northern lakes. In 1668, came Fathers Claude Dablon and James Marquette and founded the mission at the Sault. Two years afterwards, in 1670, Nicholas Perrot, as agent for Talon, the Intendant of Canada, explored

Lake Michigan^a as far as Chicago; and in 1671 formal possession was taken of the Northwest by French officers in the presence of Indians assembled from the surrounding regions. In the same year Marquette gathered a little flock of listeners at Point St. Ignace, on the mainland west of Mackinac Island. In 1673, two years after the founding of the mission at St. Ignace, Marquette, with the sanction and active aid of Talon, the far-seeing intendant of Canada, began preparations for his long contemplated exploration to the west of Lake Michigan. He wished to establish missions for the conversion of the Indians living along the borders of the great river running to the south, the existence of which was reported by the Indians and which was believed to flow either into the Gulf of Mexico or into the Pacific Ocean. The government sent Louis Joliet, a merchant of Quebec, and five boatmen to accompany him. On the 13th of May, 1673, the little band of seven left Michilimaackinac in two birch bark canoes. They proceeded across the head of Lake Michigan into and through Green Bay and thence up the Fox river to an Indian village where Father Allouez had preached to the Miami, Mascouten and Kickapoo tribes. From this village they crossed the portage to the Wisconsin river, down which they floated to the Mississippi, which was thus discovered June 17th, 1673.^b

Another route to the west, which was used by the Indians and by the early explorers, was from the stations at the head of the lakes down by the west shore of Lake Michigan to the Chicago river; thence up that river and by the portage to the Illinois river, and so down to the Mississippi. A third route was along the eastern or western shore of Lake Michigan to the mouth of the River of the Miamis, or St. Joseph, and up that river to the portage at South Bend; thence down

the Kankakee and Illinois to the Mississippi. It is said that there is a southern current along the west shore of Lake Michigan and a northern current along the east shore; and, consequently, that the voyage down the lake and to the west was usually taken by the Chicago portage, while the return journey from the Illinois country was more often taken by the portage of the Kankakee and the St. Joseph.

There was also a route to the west by Lake Erie, the Maumee river and the portage to the Wabash, and so on to the Ohio and the Mississippi. It is believed LaSalle knew of this route in his earlier explorations of the west, and that he was the discoverer of the Ohio and the Wabash. This Maumee route was, however, for a long time unsafe by reason of the incursions of the Iroquois from New York. The route was afterwards adopted as the main highway of civilized commerce to the Southwest, the Wabash and Erie Canal having been constructed over the old portage. The canal fell into disuse only on the building of our modern railroads.

After the discovery of the upper Mississippi by Marquette, in 1673, and his return to St. Ignace, he went again to the Illinois Indians, at their urgent solicitation, and established missions among them, where he toiled until the failure of his health, in 1675. He then started on his return to the mission at St. Ignace, near the island of Mackinac, proceeding, as it is believed, by the more easy and direct way of the Kankakee and St. Joseph, and so passing through the whole length of our county, as already related. After entering Lake Michigan on this journey, he went along the eastern shore of the lake as far as the little river which bears his name; on the banks of which, worn out with his labors, he died, May 18, 1675, at the age of thirty-eight years. Two years afterwards his affectionate Indians came down the lake in a fleet of canoes and reverently bore his body to his beloved St. Ignace, where it was finally laid to rest, and where a suitable monument was

a. For a time known as Lake of the Illinois, from the Indians of that name, and also as the Lake of the Dauphin, in honor of the heir to the French throne.

b. Perkins' Annals of the West, St. Louis, 1851.

erected to his memory on the two hundredth anniversary of the discovery of the upper Mississippi. The state of Wisconsin has caused the statue of Marquette to be placed in the Capitol at Washington as that of one of the great men of the West.

Sec. 3.—HISTORICAL DATA.—While, as already intimated, the writers on our early history are not in agreement on the point, yet there is good authority, as there are also satisfactory reasons, in support of the persistent belief that the great discoverer made his last journey from the west by the ancient route through our own county, so well known to his devoted Indian friends, and which had been used by Indian and Mound Builder for hundreds, perhaps thousands, of years, in their annual journeys between the Mississippi and the lakes. This is the opinion of the eminent historian, John Gilmary Shea, who says that on this occasion Marquette “seems to have taken the way by the St. Joseph river and reached the eastern shore of Lake Michigan.”^a

Bishop Bruté also, who in 1834 became the first bishop of Vincennes, says in his writings, as quoted by Henry S. Cauthorn, himself an honored member of an old Vincennes family, that “the St. Joseph portage was used by Father Marquette long before LaSalle and Hennepin passed through that portage.” The saintly bishop further says, as also quoted in Mr. Cauthorn’s exceedingly interesting history of his native city, that, very early in their missionary career in the Northwest, “Fathers Marquette and Allouez passed through that portage on their way to the Oubasche country.”^b Bishop Bruté was a native of France; and it is reasonable to believe that during the years while he was

in charge of the diocese of Vincennes he became well acquainted with the old French families of the city and the neighboring towns, and with their histories and traditions; and that he also familiarized himself with the records of the missions, all of which were written in his native language. From the history of Father Gibault, the friend of George Rogers Clark, we know that the missions of Kaskaskia, Cahokia and other Illinois settlements were closely associated with the mission at Vincennes. Mr. Cauthorn, as quoted by William H. English, tells us that the same missionaries often served at Kaskaskia and Vincennes; that the church records show many intermarriages; and that there was frequent intercommunication between the two places.^a As Marquette was himself in charge of those Illinois missions during the last years of his life, we can well understand that what Bishop Bruté has told us of the great missionary and his journey has in it something of the certainty of contemporary history. Mr. Cauthorn, former speaker of the Indiana house of representatives, who was one of the most distinguished sons of the old city, and who gave years of devoted study to her early history, says that “It is well known that he [Marquette] left the Jesuit mission at Kaskaskia a sick and worn out man in consequence of his labors and exposure, to return to St. Ignace, a few days after Easter, 1675. On this, his final trip, he traveled by way of the St. Joseph portage.”^b These statements by Bishop Bruté and Henry S. Cauthorn, who had such unequalled opportunities to discover the facts of our early French history, are entitled to the greatest respect. So also is the guarded opinion expressed by John Gilmary Shea. With the exception of Francis Parkman, if indeed Parkman be an exception, there is no historian who, from painstaking research, had acquired a more intimate knowledge of the early history of the northwest, or

a. “Discovery and exploration of the Mississippi Valley.” See also “The St. Joseph-Kankakee Portage,” by George A. Baker; and “La Salle in the Valley of the St. Joseph,” by Charles H. Bartlett and Richard H. Lyon. And see Cowles’ Hist. Berrien County, Mich., 1871, p. 27.

b. Hon. Henry S. Cauthorn, former speaker of the Indiana House of Representatives. History of the City of Vincennes, p. 63.

a. William H. English, Conquest of the Northwest, Vol. 1, pp. 288-292.

b. Cauthorn Hist. Vincennes, p. 65.

who was more careful in his statement of facts, than Mr. Shea. It seems, then, reasonable to conclude that Marquette crossed our portage in 1675, and that he was therefore the first white man to visit the territory now comprising the county of St. Joseph.

II. LA SALLE.

Sec. 1.—PREPARATIONS.—Marquette and Joliet explored the Mississippi from the mouth of the Wisconsin to a point below the mouth of the Arkansas; and then returned in their frail canoes, having become satisfied that the great river emptied into the gulf of Mexico. The report of this achievement fired the imagination of the people of all Canada, and of France itself. René Robert Cavelier, Sieur de La Salle, a native of Normandy, had emigrated to Canada from France, in 1666. In 1669 he set out upon a tour of western exploration, in the course of which he is believed to have discovered the Ohio river and to have followed its course down below the mouth of the Wabash. He now became ambitious to follow in the footsteps of Marquette and Joliet and to perfect the discoveries so well begun by them. He went to Frontenac, then governor-general of Canada, and laid before him his plan for the establishment of a French empire in the west by connecting Canada and the Gulf of Mexico by a series of posts and forts from the great lakes down to the mouth of the Mississippi. The scheme was worthy the mind of a statesman and was at once accepted by Frontenac, who advised La Salle to proceed to France and obtain for his project the sanction and patronage of Louis XIV, then king, and of Colbert, his minister of finance and marine. Colbert and the king approved La Salle's plan of empire. He was made a chevalier and given command of the then frontier post of Fort Frontenac. This fort, named after the governor-general, was situated near the east end of Lake Ontario, at the head of the St. Lawrence river, on the site of the present city of Kingston. A fort had already been built at the locality,

but had fallen into neglect. It was to be rebuilt by La Salle and made the base of his operations. He returned from France in high spirits and labored until the close of 1677 in the rebuilding and strengthening of the fort. He then went to France again and obtained additional favors and assistance from the government. On September 15th, 1678, La Salle, with his lieutenant, Henry de Tonti, an Italian, and thirty men, arrived at Quebec, and in a few days proceeded to Fort Frontenac. There he was joined by Father Louis Hennepin, who was to become the principal historian of the proposed expedition, and who afterwards, under La Salle's direction, became an extensive explorer and discoverer himself.

Sec. 2.—ON THE GREAT LAKES.—On November 18th, 1678, La Salle embarked in a little vessel, to cross Lake Ontario from Frontenac to Niagara Falls. This is said to have been the first ship that sailed upon this inland sea. The winter following and the first part of the year 1679 was employed in the fur trade with the Indians and in constructing a vessel on Niagara river. This vessel was named the Griffin and was the first to navigate the upper lakes. On the 7th of August they set sail, passed through Lake Erie, by the straits, Lake St. Clair and Lake Huron, to Michilimackinac, where they arrived on the 27th of the month. A fort was constructed at this point, and La Salle went with the Griffin to Green Bay for a load of pelts gathered there for him by the Indians. The vessel was sent back to Niagara with her precious cargo, and with instructions to exchange the furs for supplies needed for the expedition.

While waiting for the return of the Griffin La Salle and his party made preparations to proceed to the south end of the lake where he proposed to erect a fort and fix permanent headquarters. The canoes were divided into two fleets, one of which started ahead under La Salle himself, while the other was to follow under command of Tonti. The meeting place was to be at the mouth of the River of the

Miamis, afterwards named the St. Joseph. Here, after establishing a strong post to secure the future safety of the enterprise, they would await the coming of the Griffin. La Salle, coasting the western and southern shores of Lake Michigan, arrived at the river on November 1, 1679; and during that month built his fort on a high point between the lake and the river, where the city of St. Joseph now stands. He named the post FORT MIAMIS. Tonti, coming by the eastern shore of the lake, arrived towards the end of the month.^a

Sec. 3.—THE PORTAGE OF THE ST. JOSEPH. —That La Salle should have selected the route by the St. Joseph for his first memorable expedition to the west, makes it evident that this route, and the portage by the Kankakee, were, even then, well known to the French missionaries and explorers. If Marquette, but a little more than three years previous, had chosen the same route on his last journey from the Mississippi, it is not hard to understand that La Salle should have followed his example. The building of the fort, even before sailing up the river, is proof of La Salle's confidence in the feasibility of reaching the Mississippi in this way. He must have had full and accurate knowledge of the St. Joseph and the Kankakee and of the portage connecting them. There can be no doubt that Marquette, who had a genius for geographical investigation and who had passed the last years of his life in the missions to the Illinois Indians, was familiar with all the routes from

a. The point where La Salle built his fort at the mouth of the St. Joseph river is one of the rare historic spots in the United States. This point is on the lake bluff, at the junction of a deep ravine, seventy or eighty rods southwesterly from the present bank of the river. In 1902 the Daughters of the American Revolution marked the place with a gneiss boulder set upon a granite foundation. On a bronze plate, inserted in the face of the boulder, is the following legend: "This glacial boulder, found in the bed of the Saint Joseph river, was erected, in 1902, by the Algonquin Chapter, Daughters-American Revolution, to commemorate the landing of René Robert Cavelier Sieur de La Salle, and building on this point Fort Miamis, 1679."

the lakes to the Mississippi, including this by the St. Joseph-Kankakee portage. It was the discoveries of Marquette that fired the ambition of La Salle. The missionary, on his first voyage to the west, had piloted the way down the Mississippi; and now, on his last voyage from the west, we may well believe, he piloted the way up the Illinois and Kankakee, across the portage and down the St. Joseph. It is not a little remarkable that on this first effort to reach the great river La Salle, with his fleet of frail canoes, should have crossed from Michilimackinac to the west coast of Lake Michigan, passed the Green Bay route, which Marquette had first followed, passed the Chicago river route, by which Marquette had returned from his first trip, should have coasted the southern extremity of the lake, and even turned north again on the east coast, until he reached the mouth of the St. Joseph river. He did not take this long trip around the lake without cause. If, however, he believed there was a southern current on the west coast and a northern current on the east coast; and, particularly, if he had information that Marquette's last and easiest journey was by the St. Joseph-Kankakee portage, the reasons for his choice of route are perfectly clear. Marquette's fame and his pathetic death were fresh in the minds of his religious brethren at the northern end of the lake; and also in the minds of those Indians who had journeyed with him in his last illness and those others who had even more recently sought out his grave and removed the revered body to St. Ignace. All these Indians were known to La Salle; and from them he certainly knew all the particulars concerning the whole history, and particularly the last journey, of his illustrious predecessor. Going up the St. Joseph, therefore, we may well conclude, La Salle was but retracing the route so lately taken down the river by Marquette.

It was on December 3rd, 1679, that the eventful voyage up the river was begun by La Salle and his party, leaving a small garri-

son to defend the fort and to await the return of the Griffin. The boat, however, did not return, nor was it ever heard of again. The loss of his ship and supplies was a severe blow to the hopes of La Salle, and interfered greatly with the success of his plans. But he never knew discouragement. The fleet up the river consisted of eight canoes, with La Salle in command. His lieutenant was Tonti, who had served in the French army, where he had lost one of his hands. He was a son of the distinguished financier who gave his name to the tontine system of life insurance. Father Louis Hennepin was also with the party, as likewise were Fathers Gabriel de la Ribourde and Zénobe Membré. As guide La Salle had brought with him a Mohegan Indian named Nika, or the White Beaver, a most faithful follower. There were about thirty men in addition.^a



SCENE ON ST. JOSEPH RIVER BELOW
LA SALLE LANDING.

The beautiful St. Joseph, as we know it, was called by La Salle the river of the Miamis, from the great Indian tribe which then occupied its banks. The party expected to reach the portage from this river to the The-a-ki-ki (from *theak*, a wolf), a name insensibly

a. "The St. Joseph-Kankakee Portage," the valuable paper already referred to, read before the Northern Indiana Historical Society by its secretary, George A. Baker.

changed to Kankakee. This portage was known to be seventy or seventy-five miles from the mouth of the river of the Miamis; but it was passed without discovery by the fleet of canoes. The Mohegan guide had left the boats to hunt for game along the banks; and without his aid it was not easy to discover the old passageway up the high banks under the trees, particularly when covered with new fallen snow. The point where the trail starts from the river is at a sharp bend of the stream to the west, about two miles below the present limits of the city of South Bend and within the boundaries of River View Cemetery.

In Parkman's "Discovery of the Great West," the missing of the portage and the incidents which resulted from that accident are referred to as follows: "When they approached the site of the present village of South Bend, they looked anxiously along the shore on their right to find the portage or path leading to the headquarters of the Illinois. The Mohegan was absent, hunting, and, unaided by his practiced eye, they passed the path without seeing it. La Salle landed to search the woods. Hours passed, and he did not return. Hennepin and Tonti grew uneasy, disembarked, bivouacked, ordered guns to be fired, and sent out men to scout the country. Night came, but not their lost leader. Muffled in their blankets and powdered by the thick falling snow-flakes, they sat ruefully speculating as to what had befallen him; nor was it until four o'clock of the next afternoon that they saw him approaching along the margin of the river. His face and hands were besmirched with charcoal; and he was further decorated with two opossums, which hung from his belt, and which he had killed with a stick as they were swinging head downwards from the bough of a tree, after the fashion of that singular animal. He had missed his way in the forest, and had been forced to make a wide circuit around the edge of a swamp, while the snow, of which the air was full, added to his perplexities. Thus he pushed on through the rest of the

day and the greater part of the night, till about two o'clock in the morning he reached the river again and fired his gun as a signal to his party. Hearing no answering shot, he pursued his way along the bank, when he presently saw the gleam of a fire among the dense thickets close at hand. Not doubting that he had found the bivouac of his party, he hastened to the spot. To his surprise no human being was to be seen. Under a tree beside the fire was a heap of dry grass impressed with the form of a man who must have fled but a moment before, for his couch was still warm. . . . La Salle called out in several Indian languages; but there was dead silence all around. He then, with admirable coolness, took possession of the quarters he had found, shouting to their invisible proprietor that he was about to sleep in his bed; piled a barricade of bushes around the spot, rekindled the dying fire, warmed his benumbed hands, stretched himself on the dried grass and slept undisturbed till morning."

Father Louis Hennepin has left us a detailed account of this interesting incident, as also some observations on the journey up the St. Joseph, across the portage and down the Kankakee^a: "We embarked," says his narrative, "on the 3rd of December with thirty men in eight canoes and ascended the river of the Miamis, taking our course to the southeast for about twenty-five leagues.^b We could not make out the portage which we were to take with our canoes and all our equipage in order to go and embark at the source of the river, The-a-ki-ki,^c and as we had gone higher up in a canoe without discovering the place where we

were to march by land to take the other river which runs by the Illinois, we halted to wait for the Sieur de La Salle, who had gone exploring on land, and as he did not return we did not know what course to pursue. I begged two of our most alert men to penetrate into the woods and fire off their guns, so as to give him notice of the spot where we were waiting for him. Two others ascended the river, but to no purpose, for the night obliged them to retrace their steps. The next day I took two of our men in a lightened canoe, to make greater expedition, and to seek him by ascending the river, but in vain; and at four o'clock in the afternoon we perceived him at a distance; his hands and face all black with the coals and wood that he had lighted during the night, which was cold. He had two animals^a of the size of muskrats hanging to his belt, which had a very beautiful skin, like a kind of ermine, which he killed with blows of a stick without these little animals taking flight, and which often let themselves hang by the tail from branches of trees; and as they were very fat our canoe men feasted on them. He told us that the marshes that he met with obliged him to make a wide sweep, and as moreover he was hindered by the snow, which was falling rapidly, he was unable to reach the bank of the river before two o'clock at night. He fired two gun-shots to notify us, and no one having answered him, he thought the canoes had gone ahead of him, and kept on his way along and up the river. After marching in this way more than three hours he saw fire on a mound, which he ascended brusquely, and after calling two or three times; but instead of finding us asleep, as he expected, he saw only a little fire among some brush, and under an oak tree the spot where a man had been lying down on some dry herbs, and who had apparently gone off at the noise which he had heard. It was some Indian. . . . He called to him in two or three languages, and at last, to show him that he did not fear him, he cried that he

^a. Opossums.

^a. "Description de la Louisiane." Translation by Dr. John Gilmary Shea.

^b. The French league was about three miles. Charlevoix estimates the distance from the mouth of the river to Fort St. Joseph, near Niles, at twenty leagues, sixty miles, which is very nearly correct; making the distance by the river from South Bend to Lake Michigan between seventy and seventy-five miles.

^c. The Kankakee, which, together with the Illinois, was called by La Salle the Seignelay, in honor of the son of the great Colbert.

was going to sleep in his place. He renewed the fire, and, after warming himself well, he took steps to guarantee himself against surprise by cutting down around him a quantity of bushes, which, falling across those that remained standing, blocked the way so that no one could approach him without making considerable noise and awakening him. He then extinguished his fire and slept, although it snowed all night. Father Gabriel and I begged the *Sieur de La Salle* not to leave his party as he had done, showing him that the whole success of our voyage depended on his presence. Our Indian had remained behind to hunt, and not finding us at the portage he went higher up and came to tell us that we would have to descend the river. All our canoes were sent with him, and I remained with *Sieur de La Salle*, who was very much fatigued, and as our cabin was composed only of flag-mats, it took fire and would have burnt us had I not promptly thrown off the mats, which served as a door to our little quarters, and which was all in flames. We joined our party the next day at the portage, where Father Gabriel had made several crosses (blazes) on the trees that we might recognize it. We found there a number of buffalo horns and the carcasses of those animals, and some canoes that the Indians had made of buffalo skin to cross the river with their load of meat. This place is situated on the edge of a great plain,^a at the extremity of which, on the western side, is a village of *Miamis*, *Mascoutens* and *Ouïaton* (Weas) gathered together.^b The river *Seignelay* (*Kankakee*), which flows to the *Illinois*, rises in a plain in the midst of much boggy land, over which it is not easy to walk. This river is only a league and a half distant from that of the *Miamis*, and thus we transported all our equipage and our canoes by a road which we marked for the benefit of those who might come after us,

after leaving at the portage of the *Miamis* river, as well as at the fort which we had built at its mouth, letters, which were hung on the trees at the pass to serve as a guide to them who were to come and join us by the barque,^a to the number of twenty-five. The river *Seignelay* is navigable for canoes to within a hundred paces of its source, and it increases to such an extent in a short time that it is almost as broad and deeper than the *Marne*. It takes its course through vast marshes, where it winds about so, though its current is pretty strong, that after sailing on it for a whole day we sometimes found that we had not advanced more than two leagues in a straight line. As far as the eye could reach nothing was to be seen but marshes full of flags and alders. For more than forty leagues of the way we could not have found a camping ground, except for some hummocks of frozen earth upon which we slept and lit our fire."^b

Sec. 4.—AT THE VILLAGE OF THE MIAMIS.—*La Salle* continued his voyage down the *Kankakee* and *Illinois*, past the great village on the north side of the river, opposite *Starved Rock*, until, on January 4, 1680, he reached a point on the *Illinois*, near the site of the present city of *Peoria*, where on a bluff or rising ground he erected a fort. Owing to anxiety for the loss of the *Griffin* and the desperate straits to which he was thereby reduced, he named the fort *Crevecœur* (Broken Heart). The winter wore away, and with discontent among his followers and danger from the *Iroquois* of *New York*, who were constantly threatening war upon the friendly *Illinois*, *La Salle* found it necessary to return to *Canada* for additional help. He sent Father *Hennepin* with a small party to explore the upper *Mississippi*, placed *Tonti* in charge of the little garrison of *Crevecœur*; and, on the first of March, 1680, started on

a. Portage Prairie.

b. This village was located on the prairie at and about the high ground now known as Mount Pleasant. See note on p. 28, following.

a. The barque was the *Griffin*, for whose safety *La Salle* still had hopes.

b. See also Thompson's *Stories of Indiana*, pp. 35-37.

foot on his journey of twelve hundred miles, taking with him three companions, including the faithful Mohegan. After reaching Canada he found, as he had expected, everything in confusion; the Griffin was lost; his agents had cheated him, and his creditors had seized upon his goods. But La Salle knew neither fear nor despair, and by midsummer he was on his way to rejoin the little band on the Illinois. His ill fortune, however, was not ended. On arriving at his posts he found them deserted. The Iroquois had come all the way from New York to harass the friendly Indians of the prairies; and Tonti and his few followers had with difficulty escaped north toward the lakes. Bitterly disappointed, but with hopes not yet extinguished, the heroic La Salle, in January, 1681, was compelled to return to Fort Miamis, at the mouth of the St. Joseph.^a

"There was," says Mr. Dunn, in his history of Indiana,^b "something almost touching the supernatural in the courage and resolution of La Salle. At that rude fort on the bank of the St. Joseph, in the discomforts of a severe winter, hundreds of miles from the French settlements, his faithful Tonti carried captive, killed, or a fugitive, he knew not which, his remaining comrades disheartened, his colony swept from the face of the earth, his credit shattered, his means dissipated by disasters of flood and field, this man calmly reconstructed his plans and prepared to renew his enterprise on a more extended basis than before. He determined to refound his colony on the Illinois, and surround it with a confederation of the northwestern tribes that would be strong enough to repel any army the Iroquois could bring against it. His first converts were the warriors of a little band of Abenakis and Mohegans, driven from their New England homes in the border wars of the English colonists. These refugees had

found no resting place till they reached the clear waters of the St. Joseph. They gladly allied themselves to the white chief who promised to interpose the strong arm of the French king for their protection. Scarcely were they won when a Shawnee chief, from a village on the Ohio, appeared and asked protection from the Iroquois. La Salle with easy confidence promised what was asked: 'The Chaonamous^a are too distant; but let them come to me at the Illinois and they shall be safe.' The chief promised to join him in the succeeding autumn, and kept his word.

"As soon as the weather began to moderate La Salle started west on foot, with twenty men, to seek communication with the Illinois, who were necessary factors in his plan. The first Indians found were some Outagamies, from whom he received the glad tidings that Tonti was safe with the Pottawatomies near Green Bay. Soon after they found a band of Illinois, to whom La Salle, after making presents and lamenting their misfortunes, submitted his plan. They heard him with satisfaction, and departed to carry the proposal to the remainder of the tribe. Membre says that La Salle visited other tribes at this time, but he does not name them. His journey was not long, for early in the spring he was at Fort Miamis, and, taking with him ten men, went from there up the river to the Miamis, at the village above the portage.^b It was a propitious season for approaching them. In the late conflict they had remained neutral, but they were now beginning to realize that the intentions of the Iroquois towards them were none of the best. They had murdered a band of Miamis the preceding summer, and not only had refused to make reparation, but also had stationed parties of warriors in the

a. The Shawnees.

b. This great Village of the Miamis was located at and about Mount Pleasant, west of the site of South Bend. The territory covered, as near as can be determined, extended along the St. Joseph about two miles, from the Portage to Mosquito Glen, and west to Chain Lakes and the confines of the Kankakee. The visit of La Salle was made in May, 1681.

a. Perkins' Annals of the West.

b. "Indiana, A Redemption from Slavery," Jacob P. Dunn, Jr., Sec'y Indiana Historical Society, pp. 26-28.

Miami country, who assumed the air of conquerors and held up to contempt the power of the French. La Salle found one of these bands of Iroquois at the village. He at once confronted them, threatened them with punishment for their attack on Tonti, and challenged them to repeat in his presence their insults to the French. The Iroquois had not forgotten the former commander of Fort Frontenac, and in his presence their courage oozed away. During the following night, much to the astonishment of the Miamis, they stealthily left the village. With so much of prestige, and by the aid of a band of refugee Indians from the east who were wintering at the point and who at once made alliance with La Salle, the Miamis were easily won. On the second day after the flight of the Iroquois they declared their determination to become brothers of the Illinois and children of the French king, and celebrated the new order of things with feasting and dances."

The scene of this treaty with the Miamis, in their famous village at Mount Pleasant on Portage Prairie, one of the most important events in the history of St. Joseph county, is thus graphically described in "La Salle in the Valley of the St. Joseph," by Charles H. Bartlett and Richard H. Lyon:

"To check the Iroquois and to provide for the common defense of the native inhabitants, La Salle sought to form a coalition of all the western tribes and to move the principal bands to the vicinity of Starved Rock,^a on the Illinois river. He had matured such a plan while spending the winter at his stronghold, Fort Miamis, at the mouth of our St. Joseph river. He had retreated to this place for safety after having witnessed the desolation of the Illinois town. He found the various tribes favorable to such a plan of defense against the enemy from the east; but its permanent success could not be assured until he had won

the powerful Miamis to the support of the cause. The Iroquois, however, were subtle enough to discover what was going on and, anticipating the movements of the French, they laid siege to the hearts of the Miamis with such success as to strongly incline them toward the English. At this critical moment, La Salle, with ten companions, visited the town of the Miamis on our Portage Prairie and in the Chain Lakes region, and invited these Indians to a council. They consented to hear what La Salle might have to say. They would hold a council at the lodge of their head chief on a certain day and when the sun stood at a certain height in the heavens.

"This chief was a very remarkable man. Both the Jesuit missionary, Father Dablon, and also Nicholas Perrot, the most famous of all voyageurs, have left tributes to his memory. They represent him as kind-hearted and gentlemanly and possessing great intellectual penetration. So just and wise was he that he was held in great esteem, even among other tribes more or less hostile to the Miamis, as was shown in the delegations which such tribes were constantly sending to consult this wilderness law-giver concerning their own affairs. Father Dablon says that he was a savage only in name. Yet this priest was probably the first white man that the chief had seen. When the hour for the council arrived some of the mats were lifted from the lodge of this head chief and the tent poles moved to one side, so that the people might see the council and might hear the discourse and understand the nature of the transactions that were going forward. The prominent warriors of the tribe were arranged in a semi-circle on either side of their great leader, and before them stood La Salle with his companions around him.

"The scene was one well worthy the brush of some great artist. The little prairie over which their glances swept from time to time, and through which the portage path then ran, is spoken of by the early traveler as a place of great beauty. Its eastern margin reaches in

a. "Fort St. Louis was located on what was then called Le Rocher, now Starved Rock, on the south side of the Illinois river, opposite the town of Utica." Dunn's History of Indiana, p. 32.

one spot almost to the landing on the St. Joseph, where the Frenchmen had drawn their canoes out of the water, and after rising by gentle swells to the high point where these lodges of the Miamis then stood, the plain sinks gradually to the west. . . . From the elevated spot at the center, the vision easily includes many miles along the charming valley of the St. Joseph on the east, the tract where South Bend now stands. In that



LA SALLE.

day, sylvan avenues replaced our streets and gigantic forest trees our dwellings, trees that stood far apart and lifted their lowermost branches thirty to forty feet from the ground. Beneath, no undergrowth was allowed to survive, but everywhere was spread a soft, thick turf, while here and there in the park-like vistas could be seen the antlered buck or the does with their fawns.

“But when those who had assembled for this council turned their eyes to the south and the west, they beheld the great fens and marshes of the Kankakee land sweeping far away with the river’s onward course to the plains of Illinois and the Mississippi. Glistening pools everywhere dotted this vast area, pools that were the homes of countless millions of water-fowls. Flocks of plover and snipe swept around the borders of the marsh land, while

the cranes stood in a row in the shallow water, or rising on slow and ponderous pinions, filed off in a never varying line toward the sky’s silver edge. A veritable cloud of ducks and geese and swans, coming in from the swift cold waters of the St. Joseph, fell into the silent pools with splash and clamor and confusion of buffeting wings. The unaccustomed eye of the guest in this Indian encampment must have given more than a passing glance to this endless whirl of happy life that fluttered over the marshes. But the red skinned host fixed his gaze not on the water fowls, not on the hundreds of hawks that patrolled the vast fields of wild rice, but upon the great war eagles that rose on slanting pinions, ‘climbing their airy spirals to the clouds.’ Happy the Indian whose brave deeds were such that his tribe would allow him to fasten to his hair the plumes of the war eagle. Each feather is an historical record. The first one stands for the brave act in which this hero overcame his people’s foe at the ford near the portage landing. The next marks the time when he repulsed the Kickapoos that lay in the tall grasses along the Kankakee to ambush a Miami hunter. And this third feather stands for the victory which he won when the young men of his tribe contended with the Ottawas on this very prairie in the famous ball play.

But concerns more important than the birds of the air filled the mind of La Salle as he turned to meet the glance of those flashing eyes that alone gave animation to the dark and rigid features of those men of the wilderness. One can picture in his fancy the stalwart explorer, with penetrating eye, flowing hair and bronzed, stern visage, standing fearless and self-reliant and drawing to himself the unflinching gaze of those solemn auditors. La Salle, at the height of his strong manhood, was then thirty-seven years of age and in perfect health. He was of powerful mold, but there was nothing of the braggart; yet, when it became necessary, he displayed both his physical strength and his mental force. . . . Neither affrighted by goblins, nor

awed by threats, he was, withal, a cultivated and refined gentleman, and could shine in the palace of a king as well as in this red man's wigwam. The listening warriors were quickly moved by his eloquence, for La Salle was deeply skilled in the forensic arts as they held sway at that time in the American forest. . . .

"We are sorry that our ancestors did not understand the Indian. We wish that they could have understood him as the French did, as La Salle did. The latter having won their hearts, proceeded to show them at this council what great advantages might be theirs, if they would stand under the banner of the great king, Louis XIV. 'He who is my master,' said he, 'and the master of all this country, is a mighty chief feared by the whole world; but he loves peace, and the words of his lips are for good alone. He is called the King of France, and he is the mightiest of the chiefs beyond the great water. . . . It is his will that you should obey his laws, and make no war without leave of Onontio,^a who commands in his name at Quebec and who loves all the nations alike, because such is the will of the great king. You ought, then, to live at peace with your neighbors, and above all with the Illinois. You have had causes of quarrel with them; but their defeat has avenged you. Though they are still strong, they wish to make peace with you. Be content with the glory of having obliged them to ask for it. You have an interest in preserving them; since, if the Iroquois destroy them, they will next destroy you. Let us all obey the great king and live together in peace under his protection. Be of my mind, and use these guns that I have given you, not to make war, but only to hunt and to defend yourselves.'

"And now, to confirm his words and to supply them with a token of his pledge to be their defender, he handed to their chief two

belts of wampum.^a The chief received the tokens. His act was significant, for it showed that he and his people were disposed to consider carefully the propositions of their French guest. The chief made no further reply, but dissolved the council. He could make no further reply until the members of the tribe had been given an opportunity to express their preferences. But they did not deliberate long among themselves, for it was found that all with one accord called loudly for the French alliance. So the following day the council was convened again, and the chief gave the tribe's endorsement of a treaty of mutual helpfulness between Miamis and Frenchmen. The oration of the chief was a series of metaphors in which he accepts for his people the protection of the great king, and pledges to his cause the 'beaver and the lands of the Miamis,' and themselves individually—body, intellect and heart. His speech had all the ecstasy and sincerity of a lover's song. And the Anglo-Saxon must admit that it was greatly to the credit of the French that their empires in the American wilderness were thus wooed and won."

Sec. 5.—DOWN THE MISSISSIPPI.—After his success in the formation of his Indian confederacy and in securing the agreement of the Miamis and other Indians of Indiana, Michigan, Illinois and Wisconsin to remove to the country around Starved Rock, where Fort St. Louis under command of Tonti should prove a stronghold for their protection and secure both Indians and French from the incursions of the Iroquois, La Salle, with renewed confidence, went forward in the prosecution of his great enterprise, the exploration of the Mississippi and its valley down to the Gulf of Mexico. His good fortune in the organization of the Indians into a confederacy friendly to the French and strong enough to resist the Iroquois, seemed the beginning of a change in the fortunes of the hard-tried leader. In June, 1681, he had the pleasure of meeting

^a. The Indian title for the Governor-General of Canada.

^a. Beads, made of shells, and wrought into belts. Used as money or for ornament.

Tonti at Mackinac. From there he went to Fort Frontenac where he made preparations for his new expedition, and in November was back at Fort Miamis. About the middle of December all things were ready. They did not go at this time by the Kankakee, but moved along the south shore of Lake Michigan to the Chicago river, up which they sailed, crossed the portage and passed down the Des Plaines and Illinois to Fort Crevecoeur. On February 6th, 1682, they were on the banks of the Mississippi, and on April the 6th they reached the mouth, or rather the three mouths, of the great river. On the 9th of April, an elevated spot was selected on the bank, in latitude twenty-seven degrees, where a column and a cross were solemnly set up, and the whole country watered by the Mississippi and its tributaries was taken possession of for France and for the Christian religion.^a La Salle called the country Louisiana, in honor of Louis XIV. of France; and the empire so established by this intrepid explorer continued, with one interruption, to be French territory for over one hundred and twenty years, and until another great French ruler, Napoleon Bonaparte, to prevent the rich valley from falling into the hands of the English, conveyed it, in 1803, to the American republic, during the presidency of Thomas Jefferson.

La Salle called the river "Colbert or Mississippi;" the first in honor of his friend and patron, the great French statesman, the second being the Indian Mesi-sepi, or great river. Marquette had called it the river of the Immaculate Conception. While the discoveries made by Marquette and La Salle are those that have been fruitful of great results to our country and to the world, yet the river had been seen by white men many years before either Marquette or La Salle. In 1519, the mouth of the Mississippi was discovered by the Spanish explorer, Alonzo de Pineda, who called it the Espiritu Santo. In 1528, another

Spaniard, Cabeza de Vaca, crossed the river near its mouth. On May 1, 1541, Hernando de Soto, almost as great a man as La Salle himself, in his expedition from Florida, reached the Mississippi, not far from the thirty-fifth parallel of latitude, at the lower Chickasaw bluffs, a little below the present city of Memphis.^a He called the river Rio Grande, meaning the same as the Indian Mesi-sepi, great river.

In 1684, La Salle led another expedition from France. This final venture went all the way by sea, sailing directly for the mouth of the Mississippi; the intention being to found a colony at that point. In this voyage the evil fortune of La Salle seemed to return. As he had missed the portage of the Kankakee in coming up the St. Joseph with his fleet of canoes, in 1679, so now his ocean fleet missed the mouth of the Mississippi, and he landed at Matagorda bay, or Bay St. Louis, as he called it, in the present state of Texas. Here they built a fort and tried to discover the "Hidden River," as they called the Mississippi. Matters grew worse from month to month, until in March, 1687, a mutiny broke out and many of La Salle's friends, including the faithful Mohegan, were put to death. On the 20th of the month he was himself stricken down.^b So perished the discoverer of the lower Mississippi and founder of Louisiana; a man fitted for empire, and the greatest, perhaps, of the leaders of French enterprise in America.

Sec. 6.—THE PASSING OF THE PORTAGE.—In St. Joseph county, local interest in La Salle centers in his voyage up the St. Joseph and over the portage, in 1679; and in his treaty with the Miamis, in 1681. It is a question how far he went up the river when he missed the landing at the portage on his first visit to our county. "We do not know," say Bartlett and Lyon, in their historical sketch of La Salle in the Valley of the St. Joseph, "how

^a. Century Cyclopedia.

^b. The Century Cyclopedia of Names. Perkins' Annals of the West, pp. 45-52.

^a. Perkins' Annals of the West, pp. 41-44.

far they ascended the river beyond this point [the portage landing] before their mistake was discovered. It is fair to presume, however, that they could not have continued for any great distance above the spot known as the south bend of the river [a little east of the present Miami street]; for they must soon have discovered that beyond this place the trend of the river-bed led away from the region of the Kankakee. They landed and prepared to search for the portage. La Salle in his eagerness to find the path, set forth alone. And here the unexpected happened. He was soon lost. . . . The situation was one which might easily confuse any explorer. He was on the spot where the very tip end of the Kankakee valley merges into that of the St. Joseph. Over this spot the water of the latter river once ran, when, in ancient geological times, the portion of our river above the south bend was a continuation of the valley of the Kankakee.^a La Salle was looking for a ridge which should divide the two river valleys. He doubtless supposed that the hills to the south of the present road between South Bend and Mishawaka [Vistula Avenue], formed that ridge and strove to reach their summit. In doing so, he was compelled to pick his way through the long, swampy tract lying between these hills and the St. Joseph. The view from the highland showed him the great Kankakee marsh on the west. But in his return to his companions, he missed the devious path by which he had come, and tried to go around this marshy tract extending for several miles to the east. Tonti says that 'he had to make the detour.' In doing so he must have gone east nearly as far as the present site of the village of Osceola. Here he came again to the banks of the St. Joseph."

In Hennepin's account, already quoted, we are informed that it was two o'clock in the night when La Salle reached the river. He had left the party the day before, and considering the shortness of the days in Decem-

ber, he must have been walking for ten or twelve hours before he got around the swampy grounds which are now the rich peppermint flats above Mishawaka. Hennepin tells us, moreover, that after La Salle had reached the river and fired his gun to notify his followers, and, receiving no response, he thought the canoes had gone ahead of him; and that he then kept on his way along up the river, marching more than three hours more before he saw the light on the high ground, where he believed his companions were asleep, but which was an Indian's resting place in which he soon after went to sleep. This gives us probably fifteen hours of travel from the time La Salle left the canoes at the south bend of the river until he settled himself to sleep in the frightened Indian's bed of grass and leaves. It would seem that, allowing for the difficulty of walking in the snow and for all other delays and obstructions, this fifteen hours of continuous walking would have taken La Salle far above the present site of Osceola. The next morning he seems to have changed his mind and turned down the river to find his companions; but it was four o'clock in the afternoon when those in the advance saw him coming along the margin of the river. How high up the river was this point of meeting is also uncertain. From Hennepin's account it is certain that it was far above the portage, for the canoes had gone up beyond the south bend of the river before La Salle left them to search for the trail, and Hennepin says that next day he took a lightened canoe and ascended the river to seek their leader. And after they had found him and the Mohegan had come up and told them that the portage was far below, and they had sent back all their canoes with the Indian to wait at the portage, Hennepin says that he staid all night with La Salle "who was very much fatigued," and that on the next day they went down the river and joined the rest of the party at the portage. Tonti says that the point where the Mohegan found the party was two leagues, that is, six miles, above the portage. It would

^a. See Chapter First, Sub-Division VII, "The Great Kankakee."

appear, therefore that the point where La Salle was first discovered coming down the margin of the river, with the opossums hanging from his belt, must have been not lower than within the present limits of the city of Mishawaka, while the night before was spent by him at least as high up as the site of Osceola.

III. PRIMITIVE INHABITANTS.

Dr. Montgomery,^a in speaking of the time towards the close of the last ice age, when the great Kankakee carried its waters from Saginaw Bay down the valleys of the St. Joseph and the Kankakee to the Mississippi, tells us that, "If a man could have stood upon the hills of Rum Village, a vast panorama of water would have met his gaze: To the northeast, as far as the eye could reach, a stream from five to six miles wide and a hundred feet in depth, passing at his feet and rolling onward to the southwest, confined only by the hills on the north and on the south; and to the northwest a tributary of the same great stream three miles wide and limited in the line of his vision only by the horizon." And he adds: "And primitive man was here." This conclusion, that the first man was already here, is read by the learned scientist in the records of our rocks.

Sec. 1.—THE MOUND BUILDERS.—But other and more easily deciphered records are found upon the face of the earth, all over the region of the Mississippi valley, indicating the presence, at a comparatively recent period, of a highly intelligent race. These people, for whom we have no name, but who are vaguely included under the general term of Mound Builders, have left evidences of extensive works in the vicinity of our great rivers and their tributaries. These works are of three kinds: Mounds; square and circular enclosures; and raised embankments of various forms. The absence of remains of buildings is explained by the circumstance that timber

was here abundant, and would therefore be chosen for building instead of stone. The Mound Builders are believed to be the same people who have left buildings of stone in New Mexico, Arizona, Mexico and various parts of Central and South America. The stone structures of those countries remain, but the wooden buildings of our own region would leave no trace after a few hundred years. These mysterious people disappeared from our country ages ago. Nature does not give a forest growth at once to abandoned fields; a preparatory growth of shrubs and softer timber comes first. But forest trees have been found upon the summit of these mounds which show, by annual rings and other signs, at least six hundred years of growth. There could be no better proof of the great antiquity of these mounds. The Mound Builders occupied the country, at least the southern part of it, where their population was densest, for a very long time. This is shown by the extent of their remains, by their workings in the copper mines of the Lake Superior region, and by many other proofs. At the south they were at peace; but as they advanced northward they came more and more into contact with the wild tribes, before whom they finally retired again towards the southern countries from which they had come.

In the Lake Superior region have been found, as already intimated, the copper mines worked by these ancient people. In one of these mines there was discovered an immense block of copper weighing nearly six tons. It had been left in the process of removal to the top of the mine, nearly thirty feet above, and was supported on logs of wood which were partly petrified. The stone and copper tools used by the miners were discovered lying about as they had been left by their owners' ages ago. At the mouth of this mine are piles of earth thrown out in digging the mine; and out of these embankments trees are

^a. "The Glacial Phenomenon, etc.," cited in Chapter I.

growing which are nearly four hundred years old."

As said by Maurice Thompson, in his delightful *Stories of Indiana*, it is hard to realize now what the face of the land looked like fifty or sixty years ago, even when old people most graphically describe it from memory. Still more difficult do we find it when we try to look back to the far-off time when the first human footprints were made in Indiana. We might naturally suppose that these first visitors were Indians, but we do not know that this conjecture is anywhere near the truth. What we do know is that strange and interesting traces of human activities, dating back probably many centuries, are clearly marked in almost every region. These are mostly earthworks of various forms—mounds, embankments, and curious garden-like arrangements of soil beds with walks between. In some places beds or heaps of shells, broken and charred bones of fish, birds and quadrupeds, suggest camping spots where cooking and feasting went on for years. And almost always in connection with these mounds and the like are found human bones, curious copper and stone and pottery implements, and the crude ornaments worn by the people. They had for arms bows and arrows and spears, and used stone axes and knives; while the women sewed with flint needles. They were hunters, fishermen and warriors.

It is said that the Indians found here when white men first arrived had a vague tradition that their distant ancestors came from far towards the setting sun, probably the southwest. These first men liked to dwell beside running streams, where they could build earthworks, on high, well-drained land overlooking the course of the water and commanding a view of the surrounding country. Some of the most beautiful landscapes in Indiana lie round about these sites of ancient encampments. Doubtless the Mound Builders were

expert canoemen and used the streams as highways of travel and as base lines from which to make explorations and hunting excursions; for almost every water course in Indiana then navigable for canoes has here and there along its banks traces of the Mound Builders' art. The implements of copper, of stone and of pottery found imbedded in the mounds show the effect of patient and quite accurate work. Arrowheads of flint were sometimes so neatly finished that they are marvels of symmetry even when compared with like heads made of steel by the best workmen of Europe for archers in the time when the bowmen of England were the finest soldiers in the world. Stone mortars and pestles for pounding grain and the kernels of nuts and acorns into meal served them instead of mills. For knives they had sharp stones and keen-edged blades of bone. It is evident that the Mound Builders depended mostly upon spears and bows and arrows for killing game. If we knew the form of their bows it would aid us greatly in finding out more about their character as men; for among the wildwood hunters, before firearms reached them, the bow was the best sign of their condition. Short, weak bows stood for an inferior people; long and strong bows indicated a stalwart race of men. But many of the arrowheads found in the mounds are large and heavy, fitted for use only with powerful bows; and the axes and spear points were ponderous weapons suggestive of great muscular force in those who used them.

From the northernmost part of the state down to the Ohio river the Mound Builders had their fortifications, and the same may be said of the whole country on down to the Gulf of Mexico. In many places stone walls were built instead of earthworks, the masonry being regular and strong, but laid without mortar. We have noted that the mounds were almost invariably built on high points of ground overlooking considerable areas of surrounding country. This choice may have been a measure of precaution against the ap-

a. *The Undeveloped West*, by J. H. Beadle, as cited in *Northrop's Four Centuries of Progress*, p. 18.

proach of enemies, but there was a more urgent and natural reason for it. In those early days Indiana's territory was almost as much water as dry land. During a great part of the year nearly all the low, flat lands were too wet for camping purposes, and in times of long-continued rain even the animals were all forced by the water to take refuge on the high places. How easy it was then for the Mound Builders to go in their light canoes to the grounds thus surrounded by water and take all the game they needed. No doubt the floods often drove whole herds of deer, flocks of wild turkeys, and even many bears and pumas, wild cats and wolves up to the very walls of the encampments. And this may be why such vast numbers of arrowheads are to this day found on the high grounds.

A great many signs point to the south and southwest as the direction whence the first inhabitants reached Indiana. Sometimes little things are more significant than large ones, and the fact that some of the arrowheads and stone ornaments found in and around our ancient earthworks are made of certain kinds of stone not appearing anywhere this side of Tennessee, speaks almost as clearly as written legend of the route by which their owners came to this region. Some historians have thought that the Mound Builders were a race greatly superior to the Indians found here by the whites, and have tried to show, by remains left here by that vanished people, that they were advanced in intelligence. Others maintain that the Mound Builders were but ordinary Indians, the ancestors of tribes still in existence when the French missionaries and traders came to this region.^a

While no remains of great magnitude, left by the Mound Builders, are found in St. Joseph county, yet indications of the presence of those mysterious people are discovered in many places in and near the valleys of the St. Joseph and the Kankakee.

a. Thompson's *Stories of Indiana*, pp. 15-20. See also Smith's *Hist. Indiana*, Vol. 1, pp. 41-61.

Near New Carlisle, on the borders of Terre Coupee Prairie, and at various other points such remains are discovered. The most remarkable of these are three large mounds and two small ones, found in Warren township, on the northwest bank of the furthest south of the group of Chain lakes, just south of the Lake Shore railroad tracks. These mounds have supplied some of the finest of the copper axes in the collections of the Northern Indiana Historical Society and other collections; while in the vicinity of the mounds are the usual cloth-marked fragments of pottery and broken stone implements indicating the presence of that old race whose remains are so conspicuous throughout the valley of the Kankakee and the Illinois.

Across Portage Prairie, by the portage or pathway from the St. Joseph to the Kankakee, the Mound Builders, like the Indian tribes that came after them, carried on the commerce that went from the lakes to the gulf in those far off years. Old residents who yet remain with us remember this pathway as deep and straight, so deep in places that a man on horseback could almost touch the level ground on either side with his foot. It is not difficult to understand why this pathway, this ancient trail from the St. Joseph to the Kankakee, should have been straight and deep; caused as it was by one dusky traveler and burden bearer, moving, man after man, in the footsteps of his predecessor, and by the moccasined foot pressing the soil deeper and deeper, year after year and age after age.

Unnumbered centuries and countless hosts knew the trend of this ancient highway; ages when the hosts of the lower Mississippi and the gulf, and the regions to the south, sought the copper mines of the upper lake region. Not only in the mounds throughout the great valley and the gulf region, but also in the oldest of the Peruvian tombs, are found implements and tokens made from Lake Superior copper. And we may not doubt that the traffic which these facts imply was itself,

in part, responsible for the depth of this path across our Portage Prairie.^a

Sec. 2.—OUR MIAMIS AND POTTAWATOMIES.

—But the earth records of the Mound Builders are almost as unsatisfactory in the reading as are the records of the rocks which tell us of the presence of man in the geological ages; and we turn with relief to the somewhat scanty written records,—letters, journals and reports of missionaries, fur traders, explorers and adventurers,—who tell us of the people that occupied these regions when they first became known to civilized man.

When La Salle reached the St. Joseph, in 1679, he found the country in the possession of the Miami Indians, and he gave the name of that tribe to the river. Mr. Dunn says that, “The main body of the Miamis proper, whom the English called Twigh-twees, were located in 1680 on the St. Joseph of Lake Michigan, a little above the site of South Bend.”^b This was the Miami village at Mount Pleasant on Portage Prairie. The Miamis were a tribe of the great Algonquin nation. This nation formerly occupied the territory now comprized in the New England states, eastern New York and Pennsylvania, New Jersey, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, parts of North Carolina, Kentucky and Tennessee, and nearly all of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, Wisconsin and Minnesota. There were no less than eleven or twelve tribes of the Algonquin nation: Ottawas, Chippewas, Sacs and Foxes, Miamis, Pottawatomies, Shawnees, Powhatans, Delawares, Mohegans, Naragansetts and Pequods; all speaking different dialects of the same speech. The Algonquins were the most extensive and powerful of the Indian nations. Their bitter enemies were the Iroquois, who occupied western Canada and New York and the country on the south shore of Lake Erie. The nation of the Iroquois was divided into five tribes: Senecas, Cayugas, Onondagas, Onei-

das and Mohawks. Several years after La Salle's visit, in 1722, they admitted into their confederacy the Tuscarosas, who had some time previously emigrated to New York from the Carolinas. The Iroquois are therefore known in history at first as the Five Nations, and afterwards as the Six Nations. They were perhaps the most highly accomplished and the bravest of the northern Indian nations. They are known to our state only by their warlike incursions from the east, and their attacks upon different tribes of their hereditary enemies, the Algonquins. At La Salle's coming there was almost constant war between the Iroquois and a confederacy of tribes, who called themselves Illinois, that is, real men, or manly fighters. The Illinois, properly speaking, did not constitute a tribe, but a confederacy: Kaskaskias, Cahokias, Tamaronas, Peorias and Mitchigamias. The last tribe, which is said to have come from west of the Mississippi, gave its name to Lake Michigan, formerly called, from the confederacy, Lake Illinois. The Illinois confederacy was formed to resist the incursions of the Iroquois, but was scarcely a match for the latter. This enmity of the two great confederacies was at first a chief obstacle to the success of La Salle's explorations. The Iroquois were allies of the English, while their ancient enemies, the Algonquins, were almost always on good terms with the French. The country to the south of the lakes was therefore unsafe ground for the French, who were consequently compelled to make their approaches by the lakes from the north.^a But even the Indiana and Illinois territory was invaded by the terrible Iroquois; and the less warlike and less united Algonquins seemed unable to resist them. It was for this reason that La Salle determined to form a powerful and well united confederacy which should take the place of the inefficient Illinois confederacy, and so protect both the French posts and missions and the western Indians

a. Bartlett and Lyon's "La Salle in the St. Joseph Valley," pp. 52, 64.

b. Hist. Indiana, p. 22.

a. Parkman's *Discovery of Great West*, p. 17, n.

themselves from their eastern foes. In this he succeeded, as we have seen. The Miamis of our valley, and indeed of all northern Indiana, were at first timid about joining against the dreaded Iroquois, but they were finally persuaded by the arguments and the eloquence of La Salle. The result was that the Miamis and all other Indians left northern Indiana and went to reside in the Illinois country, around Starved Rock, joining the great confederacy of Algonquins formed at that point by La Salle. In speaking of two ancient maps, drawn about 1684, Mr. Dunn^a says: "On neither map is there any mark of an Indian village or French post within the limits of Indiana, although all other known villages and posts are marked. The reason was that there were no Indians residing in Indiana. They had all removed to the Illinois. So far as has yet been discovered, none of them returned before the opening of the eighteenth century."

Soon after La Salle's death his confederacy began to dissolve. The French, however, were then better able to protect themselves, and the Iroquois generally found enough to occupy their attention in the east. Of the tribes gathered by La Salle at Starved Rock, some returned to their former abode, while others sought new habitations. The Pottawatomes who had come from the Green Bay country, in Wisconsin,^b took possession of the southern shores of Lake Michigan and the adjacent territories now known as southwestern Michigan, northwestern Indiana and northeastern Illinois. The Indians known to the early English speaking inhabitants of St. Joseph county were therefore chiefly Pottawatomes. With them were mingled some Miamis, Chippewas and others. The great body of the Miamis, however, went farther south and east in Indiana and into Ohio, their chief settlements in Indiana being on the Wabash and

near the head waters of the Maumee, where the city of Fort Wayne now stands. But the Miamis always considered themselves the rightful owners of all the territory included within the state of Indiana, as well as a large part of the adjacent sections of Ohio, Illinois and Michigan.

More than a hundred years after the death of La Salle, the renowned Mish-i-kin-ak-wa, or Little Turtle, the greatest of the Miamis, at the treaty of Greenville, in 1795, said to General Anthony Wayne: "I hope you will pay attention to what I will now say to you. I wish to inform you where your younger brothers, the Miamis, live. . . . You have pointed out to us the boundary line between the Indians and the United States; but I now take the liberty to inform you that that line cuts off from the Indians a large portion of country which has been enjoyed by my forefathers from time immemorial, without molestation or dispute. The print of my ancestors' houses are everywhere to be seen in this portion. . . . It is well known by all my brothers present, that my forefather kindled the first fire at Detroit; from thence he extended his lines to the headwaters of the Scioto; from thence, to its mouth; from thence, down the Ohio, to the mouth of the Wabash; and from thence, to Chicago, on Lake Michigan."

Dillon informs us that, "In the early part of the eighteenth century, and perhaps for a long period before that time, the Miamis dwelt in small villages, at various suitable places within the boundaries of their large territory. Some of these villages were found on the banks of the Scioto—a few were situated in the vicinity of the headwaters of the great Miami—some stood on the banks of the river Maumee—others on the St. Joseph of Lake Michigan—and many were found on the borders of the Wabash, and on some of the principal tributaries of that river. The villages which stood on the banks of the St. Joseph of Lake Michigan, those which lay about the headwaters of the Maumee, and

a. Hist. Indiana, p. 34.

b. Dunn's Hist. Indiana, p. 27. And see speech of Hon. Daniel McDonald, in Division VI of this chapter.

those which stood on the borders of the Wabash, were often visited by Christian missionaries and by fur traders, before the middle of the eighteenth century."^a

It is plain, therefore, that our Pottawatomies occupied the valleys of the St. Joseph and Kankakee by grace of the Miami. "Branches of the Pottawatomie, Shawnee, Delaware and Kickapoo tribes," says Dillon, "were, at different periods of time, permitted to enter, and reside at various places, within the boundaries of the large territory which was claimed by the Miami." ^b Indeed it was not at all uncommon for bands of different Algonquin tribes to dwell in peace within one another's territory. Such a band of the Miami themselves lived in Wisconsin with the Kickapoos and Mascoutins.^c

IV. FORT ST. JOSEPH'S.

SEC. 1.—THE FRENCH POWER.—While the famous post known as Fort St. Joseph was not located within the limits of St. Joseph county, and not even within the limits of the State of Indiana, yet for nearly a hundred years the history of that post was the history of the valley to which it gave its name, and no history of our county could be complete without giving some attention to the old fort.

On the west bank of the St. Joseph, about sixty miles from the mouth of the river, measured by the windings of the stream, the Miami retained a noted fishing village which had been located at this point long before the white man's day. "The town," says Mr. Bartlett in his charming volume, *Tales of Kankakee Land*, "was there when La Salle invaded the region, and doubtless the spot had been held by many races through many ages past; for this part of the stream was one of the famous fishing grounds."^d Across the river, and not far from the east bank, attracted no doubt by the same cause, the Potta-

watomies, probably soon after coming into the valley, established a village of their own. These towns were located about a mile above the present city of Niles and ten or twelve miles below South Bend.^a Here, on the east bank of the river, was established, at a very early date, the mission of St. Joseph. It would seem that this mission was founded by Father Allouez, the same zealous missionary who, in 1665, had established at the Falls of St. Mary (Sault Ste. Marie) the first permanent mission in the northwest. In 1673, as already noted, when Marquette was on his way to the discovery of the upper Mississippi, he came to an Indian village on the Fox river where Father Allouez had preached to the Miami, Mascoutins and Kickapoos of the Green Bay country.^b It is also known that in 1670, 1671 and 1672, Allouez and Dablon traversed the whole region along the western and southern shores of Lake Michigan;^c and there can be little doubt that on such a journey the missionaries would visit the famous fishing village of the Miami.

In Nevin's "Black Robes, or Sketches of Missions and Ministers in the Wilderness and on the Border," it is said that the first attempt at establishing a mission at this point was made in 1675; and that the design was permanently accomplished in 1680, when Allouez and Dablon, having coasted Lake Michigan from Green Bay, entered the St. Joseph and proceeded up the river until they reached this point. Here, adds the writer, on the east bank of the river, rises a semi-circular bluff, at the base of which, and through the soil of the marshy level, runs a brook into the St. Joseph. On this bluff Allouez built a chapel, and nearby a log cabin for his own accommodation. This mission cared not only for the Miami across the

^a. Mr. Dunn's *Hist. Indiana*, in a note at page 26, says that an itinerary in the Haldimand Collection fixes this point at twelve miles below the South Bend Portage. This might be nearly correct, measuring by the windings of the river.

^b. Perkins' *Annals of the West*, p. 10.

^c. Dillon, *Hist. Indiana*, pp. 2, 12.

^a. Dillon, *Hist. Indiana*, pp. 5, 6.

^b. *Ib.*, p. 14.

^c. Dunn's *Indiana*, pp. 6, 22.

^d. *Tales of Kankakee Land*, p. 158.

river, but, in the course of the next few years, watched over all the Pottawatomies and other tribes on both sides of the stream, including those around the Notre Dame lakes and along the banks of the Kankakee. Bartlett and Lyon say that "It does, indeed, seem not unlikely that Allouez, who was with the Miami Indians in 1672, should have followed them from their Wisconsin home when they migrated to this valley. He was certainly here at a later date, devoting the closing years of his life to the work of the mission on the St. Joseph, where he died in 1690."^a The same authors, in another connection, say that about seven thousand Miamis left the St. Joseph valley after the treaty on Portage Prairie with La Salle, and joined that explorer's confederacy on the Illinois, at Starved Rock; and that when La Salle lost his life in Texas, and Tonti retired from the Illinois country, "Father Allouez brought back a remnant of these people to their old home on the St. Joseph."^b

On the same high bluff on which the mission of St. Joseph's was established, but how soon after or by whom is not certainly known, a fort was erected, which took its name from the mission, being called Fort St. Joseph's. This fort was thereafter the chief stronghold of the French in this vicinity; and the post was for many years one of the most important in French America. It was the center of the fur trade and other commerce of the St. Joseph and Kankakee valleys. Here came French and Indians from all the surrounding country; and to this point expeditions were sent up the river from Lake Michigan, and from here they passed on to the south, across the portage and down the Kankakee, to the Illinois country. The center of missionary effort among the Pottawatomies, Miamis and other tribes; the center of commerce; and the strong arm of French authority; the mission and post at St. Joseph's long continued to be

a. La Salle in the Valley of the St. Joseph, p. 7.

b. *Ib.*, p. 89, note.

one of the best known of the French stations in the northwest. Fort Miamis, established by La Salle at the mouth of the river, fell into disuse after he left the valley, and Fort St. Joseph took its place.^a

Some have conjectured that it was La Salle himself who, attracted by the unfailing supply of food at this fishing place, and by the opportunities for traffic in the Indian village across the river, built his second fort at this point.^b It is more probable, however, that Fort St. Joseph's was built later, and after the establishment of the mission by Allouez; although the idea of a fort at this point might well have occurred to the far-seeing mind of La Salle, as he passed up and down the river.^c The better opinion is that the military post was established here in 1697.^d But whatever may have been the origin of the old fort, it is one of the historical certainties of this region, that Fort Miamis, built by La Salle at the mouth of the river, ceased to be occupied after he left the valley; while, on the high bluff between South Bend and Niles, Fort St. Joseph's took its place, and became, and for nearly a hundred years remained, the stronghold of the French and their secure asylum in the surrounding wilderness.^e

With the change from Fort Miamis to Fort St. Joseph's, the river also changed its name. The mission gave its name to the fort, and the fort to the river. It was no longer called the river of the Miamis, but the river St. Joseph. To distinguish it from the small St. Joseph, which, with the St. Mary's, near Fort Wayne, forms the Maumee, our river was for a time called the Big St. Joseph's, the St. Joseph's of the Lakes, or the St. Joseph's of Lake Michigan. In time, however, it became known, simply as the St. Joseph. From the river the name passed to the valley, and from

a. Baker, St. Joseph-Kankakee Portage, p. 42, note.

b. Bartlett, Tales of Kankakee Land, p. 159.

c. Dunn, Hist. Indiana, p. 26, note.

d. Baker, St. Joseph-Kankakee Portage, p. 43, note.

e. Bartlett, Tales of Kankakee Land, p. 160.

the river and the valley came the name of our county, as also the familiar title of our county seat, the Queen City of the St. Joseph valley,—all from the pious name given to the ancient mission of St. Joseph's by its founder, the simple-minded and zealous Al-louez. So, too, not only the name but the civilization of the beautiful valley dates from the Mission of St. Joseph's.

Two objects chiefly seemed to engage the attention of the French at Fort St. Joseph's: The centralizing of the labors of the surrounding missions; and the protection of the fur trade with the tribes of the northwest. While the fort was strong, yet there was comparatively little resort to force or intimidation. The French understood the Indians and lived on friendly terms with them. Not until the year 1730 is there any record of important military operations. In that year an expedition went up the river and over the portage by the Kankakee to punish the Outagamies at Starved Rock for outrages committed against the Pottawatomies and other peaceful tribes. This successful operation appears to have been conducted in conjunction with another from post Vincennes against the barbarous Outagamies.

Sec. 2.—BRITISH SUPREMACY.—But the comparative peace which had happily prevailed from the days of Marquette and Al-louez and La Salle was brought to a rude termination by the Seven Years' War,—the French and English war, as it was called in America. This conflict had long been brewing: it was a struggle of giant powers for the possession of a continent. On May 18, 1756, war was declared; and on September 17, 1759, after the deaths of Wolfe and Mont-calm, Quebec passed from France to Britain. A little less than one year afterwards, on September 8, 1760, Montreal was surrendered. With Montreal went all Canada, which, in the articles of capitulation, was said "to extend to the crest of lands dividing branches of Lakes Erie and Michigan from those of the Miami [the Big Miami, flowing into the

Ohio], the Wabash and the Illinois rivers."^a For nearly two years and a half, or until the treaty of Paris, that provision in the articles of capitulation made the boundary between the British and French possessions in the northwest a very irregular line. The lands drained by the Maumee and the St. Joseph became British territory; those drained by the Wabash and the Kankakee remained French. The northeast part of St. Joseph county, including the greater part of South Bend and all of Mishawaka, ceased forever to be French. The boundary ran irregularly along the summit dividing the waters of the St. Joseph from those of the Kankakee. This took the present townships of Clay and Harris, and the greater part of German, Portage and Penn, within the British line; while the rest of the county remained French territory. Under the terms of the capitulation of Montreal, Detroit was taken over in the fall, 1760; but Fort St. Joseph's and the other frontier posts were not garrisoned with British troops until the spring of 1761, and some of them even later.

By the treaty of Paris, which was signed February 10, 1763, the British boundaries were extended to the Mississippi. The line drawn through that river from its source to its mouth was made the boundary between the two nations, except that the city and island of New Orleans were to remain with France. Thereafter the province of Louisiana was confined to the territory west of the Mississippi. Spain was a party to the treaty of Paris, and in that treaty ceded the Floridas to Great Britain. By way of compensation for this loss, France, by a private agreement, made over to Spain, New Orleans and what remained to her of Louisiana.^b Thus Spain, for a time, came into the history of the Mississippi valley, and, incidentally, as we shall see, into the history of our own valley of the St. Joseph.

a. Bancroft, Hist. U. S., Vol. 2, pp. 522-24. Smith, Hist. Ind., Vol. 1, Chap. 7.

b. Dyer's Hist. Modern Europe, Book 6, Chap. 6.

Sec. 3.—PONTIAC'S WAR.—The discomfiture of France and the transfer of the northwest territory to Great Britain brought about a state of sullen displeasure in the minds of the Indians, who had lived so long on friendly terms with the French. Accordingly, in the early part of 1763, Pontiac, the distinguished chief of the Ottawas, formed a confederacy to expel the English from their newly acquired territory. The Ottawa chief was by birth a Catawba, but being captured in war by the Ottawas was adopted by that tribe. By his wisdom and bravery he became not only the chief of the Ottawas, but the leader of the whole Algonquin nation. The confederacy formed by Pontiac, one of the strongest and best ever organized by the Indian race, was composed not only of all the Algonquin tribes, but embraced also the Wyandots and the Senecas, the latter being one of the Iroquois confederacy, so long at enmity with the Algonquins. Pontiac's plan was to take all the English forts at the same time, by a similar stratagem. A body of picked men was to visit each post in a friendly manner during the month of May, 1763, and then, while the men and officers were off their guard, make a sudden attack and capture the garrison. The plan might have succeeded if it had not been for the treachery of an Indian girl at Detroit, who disclosed Pontiac's design to Major Gladwin, the commander of that post. Major Gladwin immediately sent a message to warn the commander at Fort Pitt, formerly, Fort Du Quesne, where the city of Pittsburg now stands. The well conceived stratagem therefore failed at those two posts. All the other forts, however, were taken by the Indians. Sandusky was captured May 16; St. Joseph's, May 25; Miami (Fort Wayne), May 27; Ouiatanon (Lafayette), June 1; and Michilimackinac, June 2. Pontiac's war lasted through 1763 and 1764, during which time his will was law from the lakes to the Ohio and the Mississippi, except at Fort Pitt and Detroit; but the failure to capture those two

strong posts was fatal to his enterprise. His powerful confederacy became dissipated by degrees; and the mighty chief of the Ottawas retired to the Illinois country, near St. Louis, where in 1769, he was basely assassinated by a Kaskaskia Indian, prompted by a reward for his murder by Amherst, the British commander.

Fort St. Joseph's was again an English post.^a

Sec. 4.—GEORGE ROGERS CLARK AND FORT ST. JOSEPH'S.—The British occupancy of the northwest was not again disturbed until after the opening of the American revolution. But on July 4, 1778, George Rogers Clark acting under a commission from Patrick Henry, then governor of Virginia, captured Kaskaskia, and soon after took possession of Cahokia and other villages situated on the east side of the Mississippi, a little below where St. Louis now stands. A few days later, through the good offices of Father Gibault, then in charge of Kaskaskia and the adjacent missions, the inhabitants of Vincennes joyfully raised the American flag and proclaimed themselves citizens of the new republic. The French people in the west had no love for the British; and when they learned of the assistance given to Washington by La Fayette and that France herself was aiding the American cause, they were glad to take the first opportunity to throw off the yoke of their ancient enemies.

The British, however, were not disposed to yield possession of this rich territory without a struggle. Towards the end of the same year a strong force was sent from Detroit, by way of the Maumee and the Wabash, and on December 17, 1778, Vincennes was retaken from the little garrison of Virginians. Although it was mid-winter, Col. Clark prepared at once to re-capture the fort; and, on February 24, 1779, after a most heroic march from Kaskaskia, the post on the Wabash

^a. Dunn's Hist. Indiana, 69. Poole's Hist. The West, Vol. 6, Chap. 9.

passed forever into possession of the Americans.

During the summer of 1779, Clark made preparations to take Detroit and the remaining British posts in the western country, including Fort St. Joseph's. He tells us, in the Memoir which he has left of his conquest of the northwest, and which Mr. William H. English has printed in full in his valuable history and life of George Rogers Clark, that the British sent an expedition from Michilimackinac, to proceed by way of Fort St. Joseph's and the portage of the Kankakee, for the purpose of driving the American traders out of the Illinois country; but that on arriving at the fort they were deserted by their Indian allies, and becoming alarmed withdrew to the mouth of the river and sent back to Michilimackinac for help. When the troops came down the lake to the assistance of the expedition and saw the camp at the mouth of the St. Joseph (probably on the site of La Salle's old Fort Miamis), they mistook their friends for Americans and hastily withdrew, believing that Fort St. Joseph's had fallen into the hands of the Americans. Clark, however, found himself unable to raise a force sufficient to proceed against the northern forts, and, for the time, Fort St. Joseph's and the other northern posts continued in possession of the British.^a

Sec. 5.—TAKEN BY THE SPANIARDS.—But the romantic story of Fort St. Joseph's had yet another episode. Early in 1779, war had again broken out between Spain and England. Louisiana still continued in possession of the Spaniards, and they had a strong military post at St. Louis. Mr. English in his life of George Rogers Clark says that: "General Clark's possession of the Illinois and Wabash country was not only good as against the British, but also as against the Spaniards, and there is scarcely a doubt that the latter would have seized the French towns, and occupied the territory, if it had not already

been in actual American possession." And he adds: "The Spaniards did make a raid, to that end, in the winter of 1780-81, and captured Fort St. Joseph's; but they made no attempt to hold the country."^a This Spanish expedition left St. Louis January 2, 1781, under command of Don Eugenio Pourre, the detachment consisting of sixty-five soldiers and sixty Indians.^b They marched rapidly across the frozen lands of Illinois and north-western Indiana, and surrounded Fort St. Joseph before there was any intimation of their approach. The garrison was easily overcome, and the Spaniards took formal possession of the post and its dependencies, in the name of the king of Spain. The valley of the St. Joseph, including the territory of our own county, thus for a time became a part of the dominion of Spain. Not desiring to occupy the fort, the Spaniards burned it to the ground and returned to St. Louis. Spain afterwards made a vain attempt to found, on this capture, a claim to a large territory east of the Mississippi. It is interesting to observe that this victory of the little Spanish army from St. Louis marks the extreme northern limit in the new world of the power of Spain, whose flag then floated from the valley of the St. Joseph to the Straits of Magellan. The old fort was never rebuilt; and soon after, on the establishment of American independence, the soil on which it stood, together with that of all the northwest, was, by reason of the victories of George Rogers Clark, acknowledged as a part of the territory of the young republic. So passed Fort St. Joseph's, a little over a hundred years after the founding of the mission of Allouez upon the banks of our beautiful river.^c

V. THE PARKOVASH, INDIAN CAMPS AND TRAILS.

While the banks of the Kankakee are low and the soil dark and rich; the banks of the

a. *Ib.* Vol. II, pp. 764-5.

b. See Chap. 3, subd. 2, of this work.

c. Dunn, *Hist. Indiana*, p. 160. Dillon, *Hist. Indiana*, p. 173. Bartlett, *Tales of Kankakee Land*, pp. 183-4.

a. See Vol. 1, *English's Conquest of the Northwest*, pp. 552-4.

St. Joseph are high and the soil dry and gravelly. Accordingly, the growth of timber along the St. Joseph was not "thick woods," but the trees stood well apart, as in a great natural park. The Indian custom of keeping the underbrush and leaves annually burned away added to the park-like appearance of the lands. The expressive phrase "oak openings" well describes the fine vistas through the ancient forests that decorated the banks on either side of the beautiful river. Added to the beauty and shade of the woodlands, the waters of the St. Joseph were always, as they are today, clear and cool, while refreshing springs bubbled up everywhere under the high banks or trickled down their face to the stream below. It is little wonder therefore that this ideal solitude was dear not only to the redman, but also to the birds of the air and the four-footed creatures that roamed the wilderness. Here came the elk and the deer; but, more than all, this was the favorite haunt of the buffalo, the great wild oxen and cows that came into the cool shadows from the hot sun of the prairies, to browse on the fresh grass and drink of the sweet waters. From the mouth of the river, on either side, and far up beyond the limits of St. Joseph county, extended this magnificent park-like buffalo range. So accustomed were the early French hunters and traders to see the buffalo cows come with their calves for rest and refreshment to these pleasant haunts along the St. Joseph, that they gave to the place the picturesque appellation of *Parc aux Vaches* (literally, park of the cows), a term changed in the spelling by our early settlers to parkovash. The term "parkovash" has been usually, no doubt properly, confined in application to the plain along the eastern bank of the river above and below the cities of South Bend and Mishawaka.^a

SEC. 1.—CAMPS AND FISHING RESORTS.—Fort St. Joseph's was in the heart of the

Parkovash; and into and through these beautiful woodlands along the eastern and northern banks of the river came every trail from the surrounding wilderness. Here the bands set up their wigwams, and here the council fires arose. Hard by, on some open spot or highland, stood a village of Miamis or of Pottawatomies. For in this valley as elsewhere, as said by Maurice Thompson, the villages, or rather camps, of the Indians were usually situated, as were those of the Mound Builders, on highlands close to a stream, pond or lake where plenty of water could easily be had.^a

Favorite fishing places were, of course, an additional attraction. Such was the location in the river at Fort St. Joseph's; where, on one side of the stream, was the ancient village of the Miamis, and, on the other, the village of the Pottawatomies. "Here," says Mr. Bartlett, "at a place where the waters were shallow, the aborigines had paved a strip of the river's bed from shore to shore with great slabs of limestone. Just who they were that labored at this task, or when they toiled, no one will ever know. These slabs of limestone are a characteristic of the surrounding glacial hills. The purpose of dragging the huge, flat stones into the river and disposing them so as to form a paved path through the waters was an important one, since thereby the people might more easily take the great fish with which the river at certain seasons was fairly alive. The canoes were accustomed to go up stream some miles, and then, descending in an open line that reached from bank to bank, so agitated the waters as to drive before them the finny game. Companions, who in the meantime had taken their stations at frequent intervals across the limestone floor, stood with uplifted spears awaiting the moment when the form of the rolling sturgeon or the catfish or the swift pickerel or the quick-darting pike should be outlined against the underlying pavement. Those who sometimes witnessed these operations have left the record that when the spearmen were at

^a. Baker, *The St. Joseph-Kankakee Portage*, p. 6. Bartlett and Lyon, *La Salle in the Valley of the St. Joseph*, p. 40.

^a. *Stories of Indiana*, p. 29.

work, the boats went frequently to the shore and were often weighted down to the water's edge with the burden of fishes. It was nothing strange, therefore, that just above this renowned fishing-place a great Indian village should have survived from remote times down to a period within the memory of men now living.^a

After the Miamis went east and south, to the vicinity of the Maumee and the Wabash, the Pottawatomies were left in sole possession of the valleys of the St. Joseph and the Kankakee; but, while these Indians came every year in great numbers by way of the St. Joseph portage, with their furs, maple sugar, baskets and trinkets, to the markets at the trading posts down the river, yet no large villages of the tribe were to be found within the limits of St. Joseph county. Pokagon's village was on the west side of the St. Joseph, two miles north of the St. Joseph county line, near Bertrand, and there was a small band settled about a mile or two southwest of the site of South Bend, at a place called Raccoon village; but the main body of the Pottawatomies was farther south, in Marshall county, around Twin Lakes and Lake Maxinkuckee, and in Fulton county. Accordingly, while the roving Indian was constantly on the trails throughout all this region, hunting, fishing, or going to or from the trading stations, yet his more permanent abode was in the villages to the south, and when finally he came to be removed to the west, the gathering places for the beginning of his long journey to the lands beyond the Mississippi were, in general, without the confines of St. Joseph county. And while of course many redmen had their fixed abode within the limits of St. Joseph county, yet the romantic Parkovash, the prairies, the woodlands and the streams were for visiting, for sightseeing and for hunting and trading, rather than for permanent dwelling places.

Sec. 2.—TRAILS AND TRACES.—And so it came to be that into and through the fair Parkovash ran those numerous traveled ways,

a. Tales of Kankakee Land, pp. 158-9.

out of the surrounding wilderness. When whitemen first came into the Indian country they found everywhere those well marked pathways, trodden by human and pony feet, but not by buffaloes or other animals. To these pathways was given the name of trails, and sometimes that of traces. The word trail, as often used by hunters and frontiersmen, denoted the slight trace left where an animal or a man had passed but once, and to follow such a trail was no easy matter; but the term was also used to denote a well worn narrow pathway that might have been trodden hundreds or thousands of times. These trails have in many instances been adopted as the lines of permanent roads by the civilized successors of the roving Indians and their ancient predecessors, the Mound Builders. This use of the trails for our modern highways resulted from convenience and long continued custom; for traders, travelers, scouting parties and frontiersmen passed along these trails for many years before the wagons of the pioneers widened them out with their wheels, and before the civil authorities finally fixed them as legal public highways.^a

The most noted of these trails was that of the Portage, already referred to, extending from La Salle's landing, at a sharp western bend of the St. Joseph, thence across to the headwaters of the Kankakee, a little to the west and south of the blue sheet of water, sometimes known as La Salle's and sometimes as Stanfield lake, but perhaps even still more appropriately called Summit lake, because located almost on the line of the watershed between the St. Joseph and the Kankakee. This famous trail was used chiefly for the carrying of boats from one river to the other; and therefore came to be named the Portage, from the French word porter, to carry. The beautiful prairie over which the portage passed was naturally called Portage Prairie.

Other trails seem to have led from the St. Joseph, over the prairie to the Miami village at Mount Pleasant, and to Chain lakes, near-

a. Ball, Hist. Northwestern Indiana, pp. 76-78.

by, and thence on to Crum's Point and other places along the Kankakee.

Sec. 3.—CHARLEVOIX ON PORTAGE PRAIRIE.—It was while encamped on one of these trails, September 17, 1721, that the celebrated traveler and missionary, Father Charlevoix, wrote his very interesting letter to a friend in France descriptive of our Portage Prairie, as he then found it. The visit to this county at that early date of so distinguished a character as Charlevoix is of itself of sufficient historical interest to justify the making of an extract from his letter written on that occasion. The letter also serves to throw light on many points already touched upon in this chapter. The extract is as follows:

"I believe I gave you to understand in my last letter that I had two routes to choose from in going to the Illinois. The first was to return to Lake Michigan, follow along its southern course and enter the little Chicago river. After ascending that river five or six leagues, one passes into the Illinois by two portages, the longer of which is five quarter leagues; but as that river is only a brook at the point, I was warned that at this season I should not find in it enough water for my boat, and therefore I took the other route [by the St. Joseph], which, indeed, has also its inconveniences, and is not nearly so agreeable, but is surer. Yesterday I left the fort of St. Joseph river [Fort St. Joseph's], and ascended that river about six leagues. I disembarked on the right, walked five quarter leagues, first following the edge of the water and then crossing the fields into a great prairie, all sprinkled with little tufts of woodland which have a very beautiful effect. It is called Ox-Head Prairie, because there was found there, as they say, the head of an ox of monstrous size. Why may there not have been giants among these animals also?^a I en-

a. This "ox-head" was perhaps that of an unusually large buffalo. More likely, however, it was the head of a mastadon or of a mammoth, many of the remains of both being found at different places in the county, particularly in the miry stretches of the Kankakee bottoms. See note to Bartlett and Lyon's *La Salle in the Valley of the St. Joseph*, p. 37.

camped in an exceedingly beautiful place called the Fort of the Foxes, because the Fox Indians [the Outagamies] had a village there not long ago, fortified in their way. This morning I went a league farther into the prairie, my feet almost constantly in the water, and then found a sort of pond, which communicates with several others of different sizes, the largest of which is only a hundred paces in circuit. These are the sources of a river called the Theakiki, which our Canadians here corrupted into Kiakiki [Kankakee]. Theak means wolf, I do not remember in what language; but this river bears that name because the Mahingans, who are also called the Wolves, formerly took refuge there. We put our boat, which two men had carried up to this point, into the second of these sources, and embarked; but we had scarcely enough water to keep afloat. Ten men in two days could make a straight and navigable canal which would save much trouble, besides ten or twelve leagues of travel, and it is necessary continually to turn so sharply that at each instant one is in danger of breaking his boat [a bark canoe], as has just happened to us."^a It is an interesting circumstance to note in this connection that the canal, or ditch, suggested by Father Charlevoix in 1721, nearly two hundred years ago, has recently been dug, and the Kankakee straightened and shortened, accordingly, as he said it could be; though it has taken the labor of more than ten men for two days to do it.

Sec. 4.—OTHER TRAILS.—Next in importance to the Portage trail was the Great Sauk Trail. To the travel and commerce of the wilderness, between the east and the west, this trail was what our great trunk lines of railroad are now to the travel and commerce between the same distant localities. The Sauk Trail received its name from the Sac tribe of Indians. The Sacs and Foxes used it in their journeyings from Canada and other eastern points to their homes in the far north-

a. Charlevoix's *Travels in North America*, Vol. 6, pp. 103-5.

west. The trail started near the site of Detroit, followed the high ridges across Michigan, crossed the St. Joseph river at Bertrand, six miles north of South Bend, and then ran westerly, crossing the northwest part of St. Joseph county, over Warren and Olive townships, passing through Terre Coupee, and then, by Hudson lake, formerly called Lake du Chemin, through the county of La Porte, and on to the site of Chicago and beyond to the Illinois and northwestern country. This was the path taken by the Iroquois of New York, in their raids against the Miamis, Illinois and other western tribes. A multitude of smaller trails ran into and out from this great thoroughfare. A well-known Pottawatomie town, called the village of Pokagon, after the wise chief of that name, stood on the west side of the St. Joseph, just south of the Sauk trail. For fifty years and more the Sauk trail has been called the Chicago Road, this name having been given to the old trail after the national government had smoothed and straightened its course from Detroit to Chicago.^a

The Dragoon trace was a well-worn trail leading from Fort Wayne to Chicago. Through this county it passed under the hills above Mishawaka and came into what is now South Bend over the line of Vistula avenue, passing to the west until it united with the Sauk trail. Near the extreme south bend of the St. Joseph river, by what has been known as the Turkey Creek road, now Miami street, another trail left the Dragoon trace and passed on southeasterly through the county. South Michigan street, a part of the old Michigan road, marks the line of yet another southern trail, reaching to the Pottawatomie habitations at Twin lakes, Lake Maxinkuekee and other points in Marshall county; while still another trail went out southwesterly over the line of Sumption Prairie road. Along the east side of the St. Joseph, from its mouth

almost to its source, ran a well-marked trail, connecting at Bertrand with the Sauk trail, and receiving from place to place all the minor trails that entered the Parkovash. Indeed every stream had its trail on either side; for although the canoe glided along the water, yet the chief travel of the wilderness was along the trails, on foot or on the backs of the precious ponies.

Another trail, and the last that need be mentioned, was the Pottawatomie trail, which followed the Kankakee from the Illinois country, crossed the St. Joseph near the site of South Bend, one branch joining with the trail along the river down to Fort St. Joseph's, and another continuing along what is now South Bend avenue and the Edwardsburg road, and connecting at Edwardsburg with the great Sauk trail. As South Bend avenue and the Edwardsburg road mark this trail east of the St. Joseph, the Crum's Point road marks it on the west.

Throughout its course the Indian trail was at first simply a pathway, which in time developed into a well trodden highway. This pathway "never crossed over a hill which it might go around; it crept through the hollows, avoiding, however, with greatest care, those conditions in which a moccasin could not be kept dry and clean; it clung to the shadows of the big timber-belts, and, when an arm of the prairie intervened, sought to traverse such a place of possible danger by the route which was shortest and least exposed. At every step the ancient path tells the story of wilderness fears. Yet the precincts of this venerable avenue of the old life had also their own peculiar delights. A warm and sheltered path in the winter-time, its fragrant airs were cool and soft in the summer days. . . . And then to the Pottawatomie this, above all others, was the ancient highway of his people. Along its course he saw the war-parties filing away to find the enemy in distant lands and among strange peoples. And he heard the forest walls of the old path re-echo the exultant cry of the returning

^a. George A. Baker, in *The Indianian*, Vol. IV., p. 344. Bartlett, *Tales of Kankakee Land*, p. 223. Ball, *Hist. Northwestern Indiana*, p. 77.

band, saw the unhappy captives schooling their hearts to a stoic's calm, or following with proud disdain in the footsteps of their conquerors, or nursing thoughts of grim vengeance by glaring scowls and vain mutterings. At such an hour the Pottawatomie, standing by the path of his fathers, rejoiced to know that the name of his people was terrible in the land of the enemy. The old men loved to wander along this path and rehearse the stories of the past, and tell of the times when they with their people, in tumultuous throng, hurried home from the chase."^a

VI. THE REMOVAL OF THE POTTAWATOMIES.

The last fact of importance in the history of the Indians of St. Joseph county is the removal of the Pottawatomies to the west. This pathetic story has been so well told by Marshall county in the general assembly of 1905 and 1907, and the story as told by him is crowded with such a wealth of historical facts, that we cannot do better than give in full his admirable and eloquent speech, delivered in the House of Representatives, February 3, 1905. Mr. McDonald is one of the best informed men in Indiana on the early history of this section of the state; and, as shown by his address, his heart was in his subject. The address is as follows:

Address of Representative Daniel McDonald of Plymouth, delivered in the House of Representatives, Indianapolis, Friday, February 3, 1905, on the bill to erect a monument to the Pottawatomie Indians at Twin Lakes, Marshall county, published by direction of the House of Representatives.

The bill to erect a monument to the memory of the Pottawatomie Indians at Menominee village, in Marshall county, being under consideration, Representative Daniel McDonald said:

Mr. Speaker and Gentlemen of the House of Representatives:

In order that a fair understanding may be had in regard to the subject matter embraced in this bill, I desire to submit the following:

The question of the extinguishment of the

Indian titles to the lands of the Pottawatomie Indians in northern Indiana and southern Michigan, and their removal to a reservation to be provided for them west of the Missouri river, was one of the most important and delicate questions the government had to deal with in the early settlement of this part of the Northwest Territory. General treaties were made from 1820 to 1830 between the government agents and the chiefs and headmen of the Pottawatomies by which large tracts of land were ceded to the government, and numerous reservations made to various bands of Pottawatomie Indians in northern Indiana and southern Michigan. Later these reservations were ceded back by treaty by the Indians for a stipulated amount, and in all the treaties it was provided that the Indians should remove to the reservation west of the Missouri river within two years from the date thereof. The dates of these treaties were about all in the years 1835 and in 1836, the last date for removal expiring about the first of August, 1838.

The territory now included within the boundaries of Indiana, Illinois and Michigan, which was the home of the Pottawatomie Indians for many years prior to the time they were removed to the reservation west of the Missouri river, was in the early days of the history of America owned and occupied by the Miami Indians, originally known as the Twightwees. It was claimed by France from the time of the discovery of the mouth of the Mississippi river by La Salle, in 1682, to 1763, when it was relinquished by treaty to the government of England and held by it until 1779 as a part of her colonial possessions in North America. The state of Virginia extended its jurisdiction over it until 1783 when it became by treaty of peace and by cession from Virginia the property of the United States. In 1787 an ordinance was passed by Congress creating the territory northwest of the river Ohio, which embraced the territory of the states above mentioned.

The Pottawatomie tribe of Indians, the owners and inhabitants of the territory now comprising northern Indiana, belonged to the great Algonquin family, and were related by ties of consanguinity to the Ojibways, Chippewas and Ottawas. The first trace we have of them locates their territory in the Lake Superior region on the islands near the entrance of Green bay, holding the country from the latter point to the headwaters of the

^a. Bartlett, Tales of Kankakee Land, 83.

great lakes. Subsequently they adopted into their tribe many of the Ottawas from Upper Canada.

About 1817 it was estimated that there were in the region north of the Wabash river and south of Lake Michigan something more than two thousand Pottawatomes. They were located in villages on the Tippecanoe; Kankakee; Iroquois; Yellow river; St. Joseph of Lake Michigan; the Elkhart; Maumee or Miamis of the Lake; the St. Joseph emptying into it; the St. Marys; Twin lakes; Maxinkuckee; and Lake Kewanna. At that time they had no uniform abiding place of residence. During the fall, winter and part of the spring they were scattered in the woods hunting and fishing. Their wigwams were made of poles stuck in the ground and tied together with strips of bark, slender hickory withes or raw hide strings. They were covered with bark or a kind of mat made of flagweeds. There was an occasional rude hut made of logs or poles, but nearly all the dwellings were wigwams hastily put up as here described. They raised some corn, but lived principally on wild game, fish, fruits, nuts, and roots and were clothed with blankets and untanned skins.

From the date of the treaty of peace at Greenville in 1795 to 1832, all the lands in possession of the Pottawatomie and Miami Indians were ceded to the United States. Nearly all the titles to the lands in this part of the country reserved for various bands by the treaty of 1832 were extinguished by United States Commissioner Abel C. Pepper, who seems to have been well fitted for the difficult task assigned him.

In 1831 the legislature of Indiana passed a joint resolution requesting an appropriation by Congress for the purpose of the extinguishment of the remaining titles of lands held by the Indians within the state. The appropriation was made and three citizens—Jonathan Jennings, first governor of Indiana; John W. Davis and Marks Crume—were appointed by the secretary of war to carry into effect the law authorizing the appropriation. The commissioners assembled with the several Indian chiefs concerned at a place called Chippeawayn on the Tippecanoe river where the Michigan road crosses that stream two or three miles north of Rochester and sixteen miles south of Plymouth, where they concluded a treaty October 27, 1832, by which the chiefs and warriors of the Pottawatomes of Indiana

and Michigan territory ceded to the United States their title and interest to all the lands in Indiana, Michigan, and in Illinois south of Grand river. From this general treaty a large number of small individual reservations were made. Among them was a reservation of two sections to Nawagee, and one section to Quashqua, both on the east shore of Lake Maxinkuckee, and twenty-two sections to Menominee, Pepinawa, Nataka, and Macatawmaaw, adjoining the town of Plymouth on the west and extending south to Twin Lakes, a short distance north of Lake Maxinkuckee; several sections in the vicinity of Aubenaube and other chiefs making in all 160 sections. These reservations were all ceded back to the government between 1834 and 1837, mostly under treaties negotiated by Abel C. Pepper. All of these treaties contained the following:

"Article 3.—The United States further agrees to convey by patent to the Pottawatomes of Indiana a tract of country on the Osage river, southwest of the Missouri river, sufficient in extent and adapted to their wants and habits, remove them to the same, furnish them with one year's subsistence after their arrival there, and pay the expenses of the treaty, and the delegation now in this city."

The first removal under these treaties took place in July, 1837, and within the two years from the date of these treaties to August, 1837, all had gone peaceably, or had been removed without force, except Menominee and his band, whose village was on the north bank of Twin lakes. On the 6th of August, 1838, the time stipulated in the treaties for the Indians to emigrate having expired, and Menominee and his band declining to go, a council was held at his village, at which Col. Abel C. Pepper, agent of the Government, was present, and most of the chiefs in that part of the country, as also many white residents of the surrounding country. The treaty was read where it was shown that in ceding their lands the Indians had agreed to remove to the western reservation within the time specified and that the date was then at hand when they must go. It was plain to those present who were familiar with the Indian character that there was great dissatisfaction among them and a spirit of rebellion growing which if not soon suppressed would probably lead to serious results. The leader and principal spokesman for the Indians was Menominee. By the treaty of 1832 twenty-two sections of land had been reserved to him and three other

chiefs, viz., Pepinawa, Nataka and Macatawmaaw. The last three named chiefs entered into a treaty with Col. Abel C. Pepper on behalf of the government August 5, 1836, by which they ceded all their interest in the reservation above described for which the government paid them \$14,080 in specie, and they agreed to remove to the country west of the Missouri river provided for them within two years from the date of the treaty. Chief Menominee refused to sign the treaty and persistently declined to release to the government his interest in the reservation. When Col. Pepper had made his final appeal and all had had their say, Menominee arose to his feet, and, drawing his costly blanket around him, through an interpreter he addressed the council as follows:

"Members of the Council—The President does not know the truth. He, like me, has been imposed upon. He does not know that you have made my young chiefs drunk and got their consent and pretended to get mine. He does not know that I have refused to sell my lands and still refuse. He would not by force drive me from my home, the graves of my tribe, and my children who have gone to the Great Spirit, nor allow you to tell me your braves will take me tied like a dog if he knew the truth. My brothers, the President is just, but he listens to the word of young chiefs who have lied; and when he knows the truth he will leave me to my own. I have not sold my lands. I will not sell them. I have not signed any treaty and will not sign any. I am not going to leave my lands, and I don't want to hear anything more about it."

Describing the scene, one who was present said: "Amid the applause of the chiefs he sat down. Spoken in the peculiar style of the Indian orator—although repeated by an interpreter—with an eloquence of which Logan would have been proud, his presence the personification of dignity, it presented one of those rare occasions of which history gives but few instances, and on the man of true appreciation would have made a most profound impression."

Considerable time was spent in trying to persuade Menominee and his following to accept the inevitable and remove peaceably to the reservation provided for them, and that if they did not, the government would be compelled to remove them by force. Without accomplishing anything, however, the council

disbanded. Menominee was a wise and experienced chief, and he knew the final consummation was near at hand. As soon as the council had disbanded the began at once to fire the hearts of his followers, with a determination to resist the government officers in their evident intention to remove them, peaceably if they could, forcibly if they must. The consequence was the Indians became desperate, intoxicating liquors were drank to excess; threats of violence were freely made, and the white settlers in the immediate neighborhood became greatly alarmed for the safety of themselves and families. In this alarming condition of affairs, a number of white settlers of Marshall county, early in August, 1838, petitioned the governor of Indiana for protection against what they believed would result in the certain destruction of their lives and property. In his message to the legislature December 4, 1838, Governor David Wallace said:

"By the conditions of the late treaty with the Pottawatomie Indians in Indiana, the time stipulated for their departure to the west of the Missouri expired on the 6th of August last. As this trying moment approached a strong disposition was manifested by many of the most influential among them to disregard the treaty entirely, and to cling to the homes and graves of their fathers at all hazards. In consequence of such a determination on their part, a collision of the most serious character was likely to ensue between them and the surrounding settlers. Apprehensive of such a result, and with a view to prevent it, the citizens of Marshall county, early in the month of August, forwarded to the executive a petition praying that an armed force might be immediately sent to their protection. On receipt of this petition I repaired as speedily as circumstances would permit to the scene of difficulty in order to satisfy myself by a personal examination whether their fears were justifiable or not. On my return to Logansport a formal requisition awaited me from the Indian agent, Col. A. C. Pepper, for one hundred armed volunteers to be placed under the command of some competent citizen of the state, whose duty it should be to preserve the peace and to arrest the growing spirit of hostility displayed by the Indians. The requisition was instantly granted. I appointed the Hon. John Tipton to this command and gave him authority to raise the necessary number of volunteers. He promptly and patriotically

accepted the appointment, and, although sickness and disease prevailed to an alarming extent throughout northern Indiana, yet such was the spirit and patriotism of the people there that in about forty-eight hours after the requisition was authorized the requisite force was not only mustered, but was transported into the midst of the Indians before they were aware of its approach or before even they could possibly take steps to resist or repel it. The rapidity of the movement, the known decision and energy of General Tipton, backed by his intimate acquaintance and popularity with the Indians, whom it was his business to quiet, accomplished everything desired. The refractory became complacent; opposition to removal ceased, and the whole tribe, with a few exceptions amounting to between 800 and 900, voluntarily prepared to emigrate. General Tipton and the volunteers accompanied them as far as Danville, Illinois, administering to them on the way whatever comfort and relief humanity required. There they were delivered over to the care of Judge Polke and the United States removing agents. Copies of all the communications and reports made to the executive by General Tipton while in the discharge of this duty I lay before you, from which I feel assured you will discover with myself that much credit and many thanks are due not only to him but to all who assisted him in bringing so delicate an affair to so happy and successful a termination."

David Wallace served as governor of Indiana from 1837 to 1840. The most important act of his administration was his order to remove the remaining Pottawatomie Indians as set forth in his message herein quoted. After his term as governor expired, he was subsequently elected to Congress. He was made a member of the committee on ways and means, and in that committee gave the casting vote in favor of assisting with a donation to Professor Morse to develop the magnetic telegraph. This vote was ridiculed by his political opponents and cost him many votes the last time he ran for Congress. But he lived to see the telegraph established in nearly all the countries of the world and the wisdom of his action acknowledged by all.

General Tipton recruited and organized the company of soldiers authorized by Governor Wallace immediately after the requisition was made. These recruits were nearly all from Cass county, at Logansport, and in the vicin-

ity. They started from Logansport the latter part of August, marching along the Michigan road through Rochester, across Tippecanoe river, and then along the old Indian trail northwestward until they came to Menominee village at Twin lakes, five miles southwest from Plymouth. A great many of the white settlers in the neighborhood turned out to welcome the soldiers and to render such assistance as might be necessary. The Indians were surrounded before they realized that the soldiers had been sent to remove them. Such arms as they had were taken from them and preparations at once commenced for the starting of the caravan. Squads of soldiers were sent out in every direction for the purpose of capturing the straggling bands encamped in various places in the county, and such others as might be found hunting and fishing in the neighborhood. Several days were occupied in getting everything in readiness. The names of heads of families, and other Indians were registered, and when the list was completed it showed a total of 859.

On the day prior to the exodus a meeting of the Indians was held at the little graveyard, a short distance from the village, at which a final farewell of the dead was taken by those who were to leave the following morning, never to return. Addresses were made by the chiefs present and several white settlers. (An address of some length was delivered by Myron H. Norton of Laporte which was afterwards printed, but unfortunately no copies of it can now be found.) The scene is said to have been affecting in the extreme. Weeping and wailing, which was confined to a few at first, became general, and until they were finally induced to disperse, it looked as though a riot would surely ensue. In solemn reverence they turned their weeping eyes from the sleeping dead never to look upon the graves of their kindred again.

The Indian chapel which was used as General Tipton's headquarters while preparing for the removal was situated on the north bank of the middle Twin lake about twenty rods west of the Vandalia railroad. It was erected by Rev. Stephen Theodore Badin, the first Catholic priest ordained in the United States. He was born at Orleans, France, in 1768, ordained May 23, 1793, and died at Cincinnati, April, 19, 1853. The chapel was erected about 1830 and was built of hewn logs and covered with clapboards. It was about 30 by 40 feet,

the west half being two stories high. There was a hallway through the center. The room for the missionary was over the west end of the chapel which was reached from below by means of a rustic ladder. The furniture was of the most primitive kind; and the food, corn, and wild meat and such fruits and vegetables as were suitable to eat during the summer season. The chapel was torn down many years ago. Bishop Bruté, of Vincennes, under whose supervision this mission was established, writes as follows in regard to the Indians, their village and chapel:

"A large number of their huts are built around their chapel, which is constructed of logs with the bark on with a cross erected behind and rising above it, and filled with rudely made benches. The Indians begin and end their work without hammer, saw or nails, the ax being their only implement, and bits of skin or bark serving to fasten the pieces together. The room of the missionary is over the chapel, the floor of the one forming the ceiling of the other. A ladder in the corner leads to it, and his furniture consists, as did the prophets, of a table and chair, and a bed, or rather a hammock swung on ropes. Around the room are his books, and the trunks which contain the articles used in his chapel, as well as his own apparel. He spends his life with his good people, sharing their corn and meat, with water for his drink, and tea made from the herbs of his little garden. He abjures all spirits, as all Catholic Indians are forbidden to touch that which is the bane of their race and he would encourage them with his example. I attended at the evening catechism, prayers and canticles, and in the morning said mass, at which a large number attended."

At the time the arrangements for the removal were being perfected, Father Benjamin Marie Petit was the missionary in charge of the chapel. He was about twenty-five years old, and had been born and reared in France. This ardent youthful spirit evinced an intense enthusiasm from first to last in the work of his chosen field, and in an outburst of fervency he tells something of his feelings and of his ministrations: "How I love these children of mine, and what pleasure it is for me to find myself among them. There are now from 1,000 to 1,200 Christians. Could you see the little children when I enter a cabin crowding around me and climbing on my knees—the father and mother making the

sign of the cross in pious recollection, and then coming with a confiding smile on their faces to shake hands with me—you could not but love them as I do." Of the chapel exercises he gave the following interesting account: "At sunrise the first peal was rung; then you might see the savages moving along the paths of the forest and the borders of the lakes. When they were assembled the second peal was rung. The catechist then, in an animated manner, gave the substance of the sermon preached the evening before; a chapter of the catechism was read and morning prayers were recited. I then said mass, the congregation singing hymns the while, after which I preached, my sermon being translated by a respectable French lady, seventy-two years old, who had devoted herself to the missions in the capacity of interpreter. The sermon was followed by a pater and ave; after which the congregation sang a hymn to Our Lady, and quietly dispersed. The next thing was confession which lasted till evening, and sometimes was resumed after supper. At sunset the natives again assembled for catechism, followed by an exhortation and evening prayers which finished with a hymn to Our Lady. I then gave them my benediction—the benediction of poor Benjamin. In the first three weeks of my pastorate I baptised eighteen adults and blessed nine marriages."

About this time officers and soldiers arrived at the chapel and village to arrange for the departure of the Indians. Father Petit again wrote as follows:

"One morning I said mass and immediately afterward we began removing all the ornaments from my dear little church. At the moment of my departure I assembled all my children to speak to them for the last time. I wept, and my auditors sobbed aloud. It was indeed a heartrending sight, and over our dying mission we prayed for the success of those they would establish in the new hunting grounds. We then with one accord sang:

"O, Virgin, we place our confidence in Thee."

"It was often interrupted by sobs and but few voices were able to finish it. I then left them."

When General Tipton and his soldiers had arranged everything in readiness to move, the teepees, wigwams and cabins were torn down and destroyed and Menominee village had the appearance of having been swept by a hurri-

cane. Early on the morning of September 4, 1838, orders were given to move, and at once nearly one thousand men, women and children, with broken hearts and tearful eyes took up the line of march to their far western home.

General Tipton accompanied the Indians as far as Sandusky Point, Illinois, at which place the caravan arrived on September 18, 1838, two weeks after the departure from Twin lakes. From that point he made a lengthy report to Governor Wallace, giving a historical sketch of the occurrences that led up to the removal, together with a copy of his daily journal in which is shown in detail all that occurred during the time he had charge of the caravan. The report is too lengthy for insertion here in full, and only brief extracts can be given. He says:

"The arrival of the volunteers in the Indian village was the first intimation they had of the movement of men with arms. Many of the Indian men were assembled near the chapel when we arrived and were not permitted to leave camp or separate until matters were amicably settled and they had agreed to give peaceable possession of the land sold by them."

As has been stated heretofore, Menominee, the principal chief in the ownership of the reservation which bore his name, never signed the treaty executed by the three chiefs associated with him in the reservation, viz., Pepinawa, Nataka and Mackatawmaaw. The reason he did not sign this treaty was because he knew from past experience that the amount of money received from the government by these chiefs would all be spent for whisky and riotous living before the two years expired stipulated by the treaty that they should remove to the west. His worst fears were fully realized. The \$14,080 the government paid them to sign the treaty had all been squandered for spirituous liquors and trinkets of one kind or another purchased at enormous prices from the white traders that gathered about them like crows about a dead carcass until their money was all gone. Menominee declined to sign the treaty, and never did sign it, but there was at no time any danger of an uprising. The Pottawatomies as a tribe were always friendly with the white settlers, and in northern Indiana never caused any disturbance except in individual cases where they were driven into it by white traders and other designing persons who sold and gave

them whisky for the purpose of getting them drunk and robbing them of their lands and annuities paid them by the government.

At the time of the removal none of these Indians were armed for defense or warfare, and had only a few rifles which they had purchased from the white traders at exorbitant prices, and the bows and arrows for killing game for food. Menominee, the head of the band, was a religious man, and an exhorter. He taught his followers to avoid the use of intoxicating liquors; not to cheat, or murder, or lie, or steal, or quarrel with one another, or the white settlers, although they might have ample provocation, but to live in peace with all men. They were completely under his control, and that of their priest, Father Petit. No trouble ever occurred between them and the whites except that related by General Tipton in his report to Governor Wallace, as follows:

"On the 5th of last month, the day on which the Indians were to have left the reservation, the whites demanded possession which they—the Indians—absolutely refused. Quarrels ensued and between the 15th and 20th the Indians chopped the door of one of the settlers—Mr. Watters—and threatened his life. This was followed by the burning of ten or twelve Indian cabins which produced a state of feeling bordering on hostilities."

Having made a thorough and exhaustive investigation of this subject a few years ago when many of the settlers were still living and several who were there at the time and participated in the removal and knew all about the circumstances leading up to the removal, it is but the truth to say that the origin of the trouble was not with the Indians, but with Mr. Watters, who had settled in the reservation, without authority, a few months previous, and desired the Indians to leave so he could preempt 160 acres of the reservation under the laws of Congress passed in June of that year. He was the disturbing element, and set about deliberately to work up the disturbance so that the Governor would be compelled to remove them. The information on which Governor Wallace based his action was that received from Mr. Watters and a few other white settlers in the vicinity that allowed him to be the spokesman. The Indians were not consulted and had no say in the matter.

Further along in his report General Tipton, speaking of the Indians, said:

"Most of them appeared willing to go. Three of their principal men, however, expressed a wish to be governed by the advice of their priest (Mr. Petit, a Catholic gentleman), who had resided with them up to the time of the commencement of the quarrel between the Indians and the whites, when he left Twin lakes and retired to South Bend [Notre Dame]. I addressed a letter inviting him to join the emigration and go west. He accepted the invitation and I am happy to inform you that he joined us two days ago and is going west with the Indians. It is but justice to him to say that he has both by example and precept, produced a very favorable change in the morals and industry of the Indians; that his untiring zeal in the cause of civilization has been and will continue to be eventually beneficial to these unfortunate Pottawatomies, when they reach their new abode."

On the 16th of September Father Petit rejoined his flock near Danville, Illinois. He found them moving onward, enveloped in clouds of dust, and surrounded by the soldiers who hurried on their march. Behind came the wagons in which were crowded together the sick, the women and the children. The scene as described by Father Petit was one of the most mournful description; the children overcome by heat were reduced to a wretched state of languor and exhaustion. By this time General Tipton had begun to understand something of Father Petit's worth, and treated him with marked respect. The chiefs who had hitherto been treated as prisoners of war were released at the priest's request and took their places with the rest of the tribe. First went the flag of the United States borne by a dragoon; after which came the baggage; then the vehicle occupied by the native chiefs; next followed the main body of the emigrants, men, women and children, mounted on horses, marching in file after Indian fashion, while all along the flanks of the multitude might be seen dragoons and volunteers urging on unwilling stragglers, often with the most violent words and gestures. The sick were in their wagons under an awning of canvas, which, however, far from protecting them from the stifling heat and dust, only deprived them of air. The interior was like an oven, and many consequently died. Six miles from Danville, Illinois, there was a halt for two days. "When we quitted the spot," Father Petit said, "we

left six graves under the shadow of the cross." Order had been so thoroughly restored through the presence of the good priest that the troops now retired and Father Petit was left with the civil authorities to conduct the emigrants to their destination. Having seen the emigrants safely landed on their reservation on the Osage river southwest of the Missouri river, such as had not died and escaped on the way, Father Petit started on the return trip. At St. Louis he was taken sick from fatigue and malarial fever and died. His remains were afterward removed to Notre Dame, Indiana, where they lie buried beneath a beautiful chapel at that place.

Of the onward journey after leaving Sandusky Point, Illinois, where the caravan was placed in charge of Judge Polke, we have only the general statement that 150 persons were lost on the whole way by death and desertion. What amount of suffering fell to the lot of these poor Indians every day of this horrible journey, no tongue can tell. Hundreds of them were daily burning with the terrible malarial fever so universally prevalent during the warm part of 1838. These hundreds were crowded into common rough wagons and compelled to bear the downpouring rays of a sultry sun, and the only beverage to quench the prevailing thirst was dipped from some mud stream just drying up. The food was composed of beef and flour cooked as might be while encamped for the night. Alas, how these poor little dusky infants must have suffered. No wonder that their little graves marked the daily journey.

In the southern part of Indiana, the legislature two years ago authorized the erection of a monument to the memory of the pioneers of that section of the state who were massacred by the Shawnee Indians during the period of the War of 1812 with England. The massacre was cruel and inhuman and without excuse, but in the history of that most deplorable event, the Indian side of the question that led up to the culmination of the dispute has never been written. The monument at Pigeon Roost, while it commemorates the memory of the murdered dead, also perpetuates the worst feature in the Indian character.

On the other hand the state, through its legislature, is now asked to authorize the erection of a monument to mark the dawn of civilization in northern Indiana; the rebuilding of the first house of Christian worship in the entire great northwest, east of the Pacific

coast, and to perpetuate the memory of the Pottawatomie Indians, the owners and first inhabitants of the country north of the Wabash river, and south of the lakes, whose written history is entirely the work of the white people, the government agents, traders, and schemers who wrote from the white man's selfish and prejudiced standpoint. I stand here to-day, in this magnificent presence, to plead for the Pottawatomie Indians; to give their side of the story which has never before been told. As I stand here to-day I wish you to imagine that the spirit of the good Indian Menominee has come back after nearly three-quarters of a century to tell you the truth in regard to the cruel and inhuman manner in which he and his tribe were treated by the government agents who dispossessed him of his property against his will, without compensation, and forced him and his people into captivity beyond the great Missouri, where he was never heard of again and where he undoubtedly died of a broken heart.

They are now all gone—not one is left to tell the story. But whether the legislature authorizes the erection of this monument or not the Pottawatomie Indians will not be forgotten. Their memory has been preserved, and will continue to be perpetuated for all time to come in the rivers, lakes and various localities bearing their names. Aubenaube and Kewanna, and Tiosa, in Fulton county, perpetuate the names of noted Indian chiefs; and the beautiful Tippecanoe, with its rippling waters of blue; and the picturesque Manitou, and the lovely Maxinkuckee, the St. Joseph, and especially the famous Wabash, where

“ ’Round my Indiana homestead wave the
cornfields,
In the distance loom the woodlands clear and
cool;
It was there I spent my days of early child-
hood—
It was there I learned the love of nature's
school.
I can hear my mother's voice call from the
doorway
As she stood there years ago and watched
for me;
I can hear the birds sing sweetly in the
spring-time,
On the banks of the Wabash, far away.

Oh, the moon is fair tonight along the Wa-
bash.

From the fields there comes the breath of
new-mown hay,
Through the sycamores the candle-lights are
gleaming
On the banks of the Wabash, far away.”

All these names will perpetuate for all time to come the memory of the Pottawatomie Indians, the first owners and inhabitants of all the beautiful country north of the Wabash river and south of the great lakes.

“The Indians all have passed away,
That noble race and brave,
Their light canoes have vanished
From off the crested wave.
Amid the forest where they roamed
There rings no hunter's shout—
But their name is on your waters—
You can not wash it out.”

While the house of representatives showed its appreciation of the eloquence of Mr. McDonald by ordering his address published in pamphlet form (the only address of the session so honored), yet the members were not prepared to pass his bill for the erection of the modest memorial which he requested. It is gratifying, however, to know that Mr. McDonald was returned to the general assembly for the session of 1907, and that his bill was re-introduced during that session and became a law by the approval of the governor, March 12, 1907. The memorial to the great Menominee will be no less a monument to the noble heart and wise head of his advocate and defender, the Hon. Daniel McDonald.^a

In 1840, Alexis Coquillard, the first white man to establish a trading post on the site of the city of South Bend, was commissioned by the general government to remove certain bands of Pottawatomies who still remained in St. Joseph county. They had agreed to go peaceably with “the Pottawatomie Chief,” as Mr. Coquillard was called by the Indians, who had much admiration and affection for this distinguished pioneer. These last Indians were removed by Mr. Coquillard without

^a. For the act as passed by the general assembly and signed by the governor, see Acts 1907, p. 623.

trouble, and in a most humane manner. There was in this case none of the sadness and suffering so graphically described by Mr. McDonald in the former case,—the Coquillard removal being all in wagons. The only regrettable circumstance connected with this last Indian emigration is the fact that Alexis Coquillard was defrauded by his partner, a man named Alverson, who appropriated to himself the large sum of money, \$40,000 and over, which the general government had appropriated and paid for this important service. The defalcation of his partner, for a time, weighed heavily upon the spirits and fortunes of Mr. Coquillard, but only for a time. The same indomitable energies that

made his fortunes restored them. He was a fine type of those business men that followed him, men who refused to be suppressed by adverse circumstances and who have made the business enterprises of St. Joseph county known to the people of the world.

With this last removal of the primitive inhabitants, but two or three Pottawatomie families were left in St. Joseph county, and now there is not an Indian of full blood where once the race was in absolute possession. As said by Mr. McDonald, in closing his notable speech in the state house at Indianapolis: "They are now all gone—not one is left to tell the story."

CHAPTER III.

THE STATE OF INDIANA.

I. THE FRENCH ERA.

Sec. 1.—NATURE OF THE FRENCH OCCUPANCY.—Not taking into account the nomadic occupancy of the Indians or of others who may have preceded them, the first people to exercise governmental authority within the limits of the territory northwest of the Ohio river were the French. In 1641, just a hundred years after Hernando de Soto had penetrated to the shores of the Mississippi, in the south, the first conference of the French with the Indians of the northwest took place at the Sault Ste. Marie, between Lake Superior and Lake Huron; but it was not until 1660 that a mission was established in that locality. In 1665 Allouez renewed in that region the work of Father Mesnard. In 1668, Fathers Marquette and Dablon were laboring at the same place; and in 1670, Talon, the intendant, or governor-general, of Canada, sent out Nicholas Perrot, who explored Lake Michigan as far as Chicago. It was in 1671, after the establishment of those missions and the making of those explorations, that the French took formal possession of the northwest; and in the same year Marquette established the noted mission at St. Ignace, on the main land near the island of Mackinac. Two years afterwards Marquette passed over Lake Michigan and northern Wisconsin, and on June 17, 1673, discovered the Mississippi, down which he sailed to a point below where de Soto had reached the river in 1541.^a During the years

1670, 1671 and 1672, Allouez and Dablon continued their missions to the Indians and made explorations through eastern Wisconsin, northeastern Illinois, northern Indiana and southwestern Michigan.^a It seems well established also that as early as 1669, La Salle went south from Canada through the eastern part of the northwest territory until he discovered the Ohio river, down which he voyaged as far at least as the mouth of the Wabash, if not to the Mississippi itself. The earliest claims made by France to the country west of the Alleghenies and south to the Spanish possessions and the Gulf of Mexico, were based upon these explorations and discoveries of La Salle,^b as also those made by Marquette, Allouez and others about the great lakes.

On April 9, 1682, La Salle, after having sailed down the Mississippi and discovered its outlets into the Gulf of Mexico, solemnly took possession, in the name of France, of all the territories drained by the great river and its tributaries, which domain he called Louisiana, in honor of Louis XIV, then King of France. Thereafter the territory claimed by the French extended from the Gulf of St. Lawrence, by way of the great lakes and the Mississippi, to the Gulf of Mexico. Following out La Salle's plan of empire, the government of France established military posts within supporting distance of one another throughout this vast region. Besides Quebec, Montreal and Frontenac, there were forts at the Sault Ste. Marie, Michilimackinac (Macki-

^a. Perkins' *Annals of the West*, pp. 28-33. Bancroft, *Hist. U. S.*, Vol. III.

^a. Dillon, *Hist. Indiana*, pp. 2-3.

^b. Dunn, *Hist. Indiana*, pp. 5-14.

naw); Detroit; DuQuesne (Pittsburg); Chicago; Miamis (at the mouth of the St. Joseph, afterwards abandoned for Fort St. Joseph's, near Niles); Fort Wayne; Ouiatanon (near La Fayette); Vincennes; Kaskaskia; Fort Chartres; St. Louis; Natchez; New Orleans; and numerous smaller posts.

Sec. 2.—CANADA AND LOUISIANA.—The upper part of this great territory of French America, was called Canada, and sometimes New France; the lower part retained the name Louisiana. The boundary between Canada and Louisiana was not well defined, nor did it always remain the same. The country west of the Mississippi was always referred to as a part of Louisiana, as was also the country east of that river and south of a line through Terre Haute.^a Vincennes, accordingly, was at all times included in Louisiana; while Detroit, Chicago, Fort St. Joseph's, Fort Wayne and other posts situated on waters flowing into the great lakes were regarded as being within the limits of Canada. As to territory north of Terre Haute, but drained by the Wabash, Illinois and other rivers flowing into the Ohio or Mississippi, there was little uniformity. In the articles of capitulation of Montreal, as we have already seen, when, on September 18, 1760, all Canada was surrendered to Great Britain, it was agreed that the limits of Canada included all territory drained into the great lakes.^b This statement in the articles left all the territory now embraced in Indiana within the domain of Louisiana, except only a small and irregularly bounded part in the north, drained by the St. Joseph and the Maumee rivers. Accordingly, by the terms of the capitulation so much of St. Joseph county as is embraced within the St. Joseph valley was regarded as a part of Canada and became British territory, while the rest of the county, being within the valley of the Kankakee, remained a part of Louisiana, and continued to be French terri-

tory, until, by the treaty of Paris, February 10, 1763, the whole country east of the Mississippi passed to Great Britain.

The respective governments of Canada and Louisiana were almost as uncertain as was the boundary between them. At times the governments of the two provinces were quite distinct, but more often Louisiana was subject to the superior rights of Canada, or New France.

While the many posts from Quebec to New Orleans, and from Michilimackinac, on the north, to DuQuesne, on the east, and St. Louis on the west, commanding the waters and the valleys of the St. Lawrence, the great lakes, the Maumee, the St. Joseph, the Illinois, the Wabash, the Ohio and the Mississippi, constituted the framework of a mighty French empire, according to the fine scheme of La Salle; yet when the transfer of Canada and eastern Louisiana was made to Great Britain, in 1763, it was indeed but the framework of an empire. Outside the several forts, and excepting the districts near Quebec and Montreal, the French inhabitants of the immense region were exceedingly few in number. In the territory northwest of the Ohio the chief of the small centers of population were at Michilimackinac, Detroit and Chicago, on the great lakes; Kaskaskia and Fort Chartres, on the Mississippi; Vincennes, on the Wabash; and Fort Wayne, on the Maumee.

II. THE BRITISH AND SPANISH ERA.

From the capitulation of Montreal, September 8, 1760, and the treaty of Paris, at the conclusion of the Seven Years' War, February 10, 1763, until the beginning of the American revolution, the country northwest of the Ohio continued to be, nominally at least, a part of the British dominions. In 1778 and 1779, the expedition from Virginia and Kentucky, under George Rogers Clark, resulted in the capture of Kaskaskia and Vincennes and the conquest of the southern part of this territory; and, in 1781, the Spanish expedition from St. Louis resulted in the capture of Fort St. Joseph's, and the claim by the Spaniards

^a. Dillon, Hist. Indiana, pp. 23-25. Dunn, Hist. Indiana, p. 58.

^b. See Chapter II., Division V., p. 43.

to the northern part of the territory. It was not, however, until the treaty of peace recognizing the independence of the United States of America, September 3, 1783, that the claims of Great Britain, as well as those of Spain, were altogether finally extinguished.

The fifteen years of uninterrupted British occupancy, from the treaty of Paris to the capture of Kaskaskia, was merely occupancy, and nothing more. The forts taken over from the French were garrisoned by British troops; but the population remained practically what it had been under the French rule. The garrisons, too, with the exception, perhaps, of those at Michilmackinac, Detroit, Fort Pitt, were feeble, barely sufficient to hold the country and protect the scattered posts from the Indians.

The Spanish expedition from St. Louis, in 1781, found it an easy matter to capture Fort St. Joseph's, the English garrison being quite insignificant, and not at all prepared to resist an attack in force by regular troops. The Spaniards themselves made no pretense to hold the country; but were content to destroy the old fort, and so remove all semblance of British authority in the north, while setting up a visionary claim of their own.^a

Indeed, neither British nor Spanish authority was ever much more than nominal in northwestern Indiana.

For forty years after the secret treaty of 1763, Louisiana was Spanish. In 1801, by another secret treaty, it passed again to France, but remained outwardly under Spanish rule until the transfer to the United States by Napoleon, in 1803, during the presidency of Jefferson. Other conditions might have made the capture of Fort St. Joseph's, in 1781, of national importance. But Clark had taken Kaskaskia and Vincennes, the southern part of the great northwest was in American hands, and the American revolution was successful. The picturesque Spanish expedition across Illinois and Indiana was but an episode, and left no trace in our history.

^a. See Chapt. II., subd. 4.

III. GEORGE ROGERS CLARK.

Sec. 1.—CLARK IN KENTUCKY.—The history of Indiana, proper, as the state now exists, begins with the expedition of George Rogers Clark, and his capture of Kaskaskia, July 4, 1778. This beginning was an auspicious one, occurring two years, to a day, after the signing of the Declaration of Independence. But the infant nation was yet in the struggle for existence; and comparatively few persons then realized, indeed to this day many fail to realize, how important to the nation, and to the world, was this daring enterprise of the young Virginian, "The Hannibal of the West."

It is well to keep in mind that the conquest of the northwest was not made under the authority of the United States, but under that of the state of Virginia. This great commonwealth was not only the mother of presidents, but the mother of states. West Virginia, Kentucky, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, Wisconsin and part of Minnesota were at one time included in the territory of the great state of Virginia, and were all directly subject to her laws and government.

Kentucky, during the period of the Revolution, was occupied by sparse settlements of emigrants from Virginia, surrounded by hostile Indians and exposed to attack from the British posts at Detroit, Vincennes, Kaskaskia and other points. The people looked for protection to the home government of Virginia; but the settlements of Kentucky were far removed from their friends in Virginia, and all the forces of the state were strained to the utmost in aiding the other colonies in the distressing war then waged with Great Britain.

Among the Virginians who went to the assistance of their brethren in Kentucky was George Rogers Clark; and he very early made up his mind that the best way to protect the people of that "dark and bloody ground" was to wrest the country north of the Ohio from the English, who were constantly inciting the Indians against the feeble settlements south

of the river, and who might at any time send an expedition from Detroit to capture the Kentucky posts and thus also be enabled to attack Virginia, Pennsylvania and the Carolinas from the west, while other British troops attacked them from the east. The necessity of capturing Vincennes, Kaskaskia and Detroit seemed to Clark to be most urgent, notwithstanding the great difficulty of the enterprise, and the slender assistance which he could hope to receive. He determined, therefore, to return to Virginia and present the matter to Patrick Henry, then governor of the state, the man whose eloquence had roused the enthusiasm of the colonists to declare their independence of Great Britain.

Sec. 2.—HIS APPEAL TO VIRGINIA.—Mr. English, in his *History of the Conquest of the Northwest*, presents the situation as it took place on Clark's return substantially as follows: Clark's stay in the Kentucky country in 1777, had still further endeared him to the inhabitants, who now looked upon him as the leader upon whom they could rely with greatest safety. They instinctively felt that his active spirit was not likely to remain quiet in these dangerous times; and, Clark says, that when he was about to leave for Virginia, in the fall, every eye seemed to be turned on him in expectation that he was going to undertake some enterprise that would benefit them. There were some, however, who thought he contemplated entering service in the revolutionary army of Virginia, in the east, and feared he would never return to the Kentucky frontier. "I left them with reluctance," said he, "promising them that I would certainly return to their assistance, which I had predetermined." This was on the 1st of October, 1777.

He had carefully looked over the western field and determined that he could best serve his country by leading a force against the enemy's posts in the Illinois and on the Wabash. The authority to do it, and the men and means necessary to make it a success, could only come from the home government of

Virginia. To that he now directed his attention, with his usual caution, good judgment and energy. He went to Williamsburg, still the capital of the state, and there, at first, quietly employed himself in settling the accounts of the Kentucky militia, which shows that he had been in military authority in the Kentucky country; but he was, in fact, all the time feeling his way to the development of his great plan of striking the British posts northwest of the Ohio river. Events in the east about this time proved favorable to the adoption of his plans. The capture of the British army under Burgoyne had greatly encouraged the Americans, and they were feeling more as if they might be able to carry the war into the enemy's country. Clark talked confidently upon the subject to a few discreet friends, but it was about two months after his arrival in Virginia before he ventured to lay his plans before the governor of the state.

The eventful day was the 10th of December, 1777, when he first presented the matter to the great governor, Patrick Henry. They were not strangers to each other. The grand old patriot gave eager attention to the youthful Virginian, but the plans now presented were vastly greater in importance than those he had presented the previous year in relation to giving the settlers in Kentucky a government and the stations gunpowder. In Clark's *Memoir*, he says: "At first he seemed to be fond of it; but to detach a party at so great a distance, although the service performed might be of great utility, appeared daring and hazardous, as nothing but secrecy could give success to the enterprise. To lay the matter before the assembly, then sitting, would be dangerous, as it would soon be known throughout the frontiers, and probably the first prisoner taken by the Indians would give the alarm, which would end in the certain destruction of the party." Henry's great mind, no doubt, grasped not only the danger the invading party might be involved in, but the vast benefit it might be to the future of the country if the campaign should prove successful.

He realized that it was a matter of the gravest importance, and required the earnest and careful consideration of the wisest and most discreet men in the state. He invited as his confidential counsellors and advisers upon this memorable occasion three men who fully came up to the requirement, namely Thomas Jefferson, George Wythe and George Mason. Seldom in the annals of military affairs has a stronger body of men assembled to consider the expediency of a campaign than was assembled on this occasion. Patrick Henry, Thomas Jefferson, George Wythe, George Mason and George Rogers Clark—five men who made an honorable impress upon the age in which they lived, and who may justly be ranked with the first men of their time, indeed, of any time.

These distinguished gentlemen were in consultation upon the subject of the contemplated campaign for several weeks, and Clark records in his Memoir that every enquiry was made into his proposed plan of operations, and particularly that of retreat, in case of misfortune, across the Mississippi into the Spanish territory. Friday, January 2, 1778, seems to have been the day the proposed "expedition against Kaskaskia" was formally communicated by the governor to the council and approved—the same to be set on foot "with as little delay and as much secrecy as possible." This action of the governor and privy council was under a law of the Virginia legislature, passed by the General Assembly then in session, authorizing the governor, with the advice of the privy council, to organize an expedition, to march against and attack any of our western enemies, and give the necessary orders for the expedition. Clark says this law was passed to enable the governor to order the Illinois campaign, but that when it passed but few in the house knew the real intent of it.^a

Sec. 3.—SECRET PREPARATIONS.—On Janu-

^a. Conquest of the country northwest of the River Ohio, Vol. 1, pp. 86-93. The text slightly condensed and abbreviated.

ary 4, 1778, Clark, having received his instructions from the governor, together with £1,200 to defray expenses, set out to collect troops and supplies for the most brilliant enterprise in American history, following the conquest of Mexico by Cortez. On February 1st, he arrived at Red Stone, now Brownsville, Pennsylvania. He tells us in his Memoir that he found much opposition to the enterprise in the Pittsburg country. The Pennsylvanians seemed opposed to the raising of troops for the use of Virginia. "As my real instructions," he continues, "were kept concealed, and only an instrument from the governor was made public, wherein I was authorized to raise men for the defense of Kentucky, many gentlemen of both parties conceived it to be injurious to the public interest to draw off men at so critical a moment for the defense of a few detached inhabitants, who had better be removed, etc." After collecting a part of his troops and leaving instructions for further enlistments, Clark took his stores at Pittsburg and Wheeling and proceeded cautiously down the river. He occupied a small island at the Falls of the Ohio, afterwards called Corn Island, opposite the present city of Louisville, where he arrived May 27, 1778, and here for the first time, he made know to his officers and men the nature of his design and the secret instructions received from the governor of Virginia. "Almost every gentleman," he says, "warmly espoused the enterprise, and plainly saw the utility of it, and supposed they saw the salvation of Kentucky almost in their reach; but some repined that we were not strong enough to put it beyond all doubt. The soldiery, in general, debated on the subject, but determined to follow their officers: some were alarmed at the thought of being taken at so great a distance into the enemy's country, that if they should have success in the first instance they might be attacked in their posts without a possibility of getting succor or making their retreat." There were some desertions at this time, but Clark resolutely pursued and punished the guilty par-

ties, as everything now depended on the observance of the most rigid discipline.

Sec. 4.—CAPTURE OF KASKASKIA.—On June 24, 1778, they left Corn Island. The force consisted of four companies, commanded by Captains John Montgomery, Joseph Bowman, Leonard Helm and William Harrod. The total number of men was about one hundred and seventy-five, besides the officers.^a The force being so small Clark found it necessary to alter his plans. In his Memoir, he says that, "As Post St. Vincennes at this time was a town of considerable force, consisting of near four hundred militia, with an Indian town adjoining, and great numbers continually in the neighborhood, I had thought of attacking it first, but now found that I could by no means venture near it. I resolved to begin my career in the Illinois where there were more inhabitants, but scattered in different villages, and less danger of being immediately overpowered by the Indians; in case of necessity, we could probably make our retreat to the Spanish side of the Mississippi, but if successful, we might pave our way to the possession of Post Vincennes."

As Clark intended to leave the Ohio at Fort Massac, three leagues, or nine miles below the Tennessee, he landed at a small island in the mouth of that river to prepare for the march overland to the British posts. Here they surprised a party of huntsmen coming up the river, who proved to be Americans recently engaged in hunting in the country about Kaskaskia. They willingly agreed to join the expedition and gave much needed information of conditions in and around the forts. On the evening of July 4, 1778, after a trying march of one hundred and twenty miles, the little army arrived within a few miles of the town of Kaskaskia, and soon after dark completely surprised the fort and captured its garrison, without striking a blow. The commander, or commandant, as he was called by the French, a Mr. Rocheblave, was himself a

Frenchman, though serving as a British officer, and was exceedingly chagrined at the clever manner in which he had been overcome by Col. Clark. The French inhabitants proved to be exceedingly friendly. They took the oath of allegiance and joyfully proclaimed themselves American citizens as soon as they learned of the good intentions of Clark, and particularly after being informed that the French government had entered into a treaty with the Americans and was even then aiding them in their war for independence against the English, for whom indeed the French in America never had any good will. The surrounding villages were soon taken, chiefly through the aid of the French citizens of Kaskaskia.

The principal of these smaller towns on the Mississippi was Cahokia, twenty leagues or sixty miles north of Kaskaskia, a little below and nearly opposite the site of the present city of St. Louis.

It was formerly called Cohos, and is claimed to have been the first white settlement on the Mississippi. It was probably settled about the year 1700.^a This town, hardly of less consequence than Kaskaskia itself, was captured from the British without a struggle by a force of Americans and French under Major Bowman, formerly Captain Joseph Bowman.

Col. Clark took the most discreet measures to win the good will of the French people and to make the new government popular. He tells us in his Memoir that he inquired particularly into the manner the people had been governed by the English, and much to his satisfaction found that the government had generally been as severe as under militia law. "I was determined," he says, "to make an advantage of it, and took every step in my power to cause the people to feel the blessings enjoyed by an American citizen, which I soon discovered enabled me to support, from their own choice, almost a supreme authority over

^a. English, Conquest of the Northwest, Vol. 1, p. 153.

^a. English, Conquest of the Northwest, Vol. 1, p. 197. See also Montague's Hist. Randolph County, Illinois.

them. I caused a court of civil judication to be established at Kahokia, elected by the people. Major Bowman, to the surprise of the people, held a poll for a magistracy, and was elected and acted as judge of the court. After this similar courts were established in the towns of Kaskaskia and St. Vincent [Vincennes]. There was an appeal to myself in certain cases, and I believe that no people ever had their business done more to their satisfaction than they had through the means of these regulations for a considerable time."

The old court house in Cahokia, where Major Bowman sat as judge after his election in 1778 was a log building, capable of holding not more than one hundred persons. It was built by the French in 1716, and was used at first as a court house and afterwards also as a school house. It was the first building erected and used as a court house within the limits of the state of Illinois, and perhaps of all the northwest. The venerable structure of logs has been preserved to this day, and in the early part of the year 1906, was purchased for the Chicago Historical Society and moved to Jackson Park in that city. On December 1, 1906, the judges of the new municipal court of Chicago met and took the oath of office, and the court was duly organized, within the walls of this historic court house. The following observations made by Chief Justice Olson on that occasion are of historical interest in this connection.

"The little settlement of Cahokia in Illinois was one of the forest points of France, by which that nation attempted to intrench herself in the valley of the Mississippi. One of the relics of this lost empire of France is this court house, which has been removed from the ancient hamlet to this city in the hope that it may be an incentive to our youth to pursue the absorbing story of the trials, vicissitudes and triumphs of the early explorers and settlers of Illinois.

"A British commandant took possession of the country of Illinois in 1765, and, in the examination of the Cahokia court documents,

it appears that courts of justice with officers of record held forth even before the arrival of George Rogers Clark and his Virginians. In the village where this court stood, Clark met the representatives of every tribe between the great lakes and the Mississippi. The judges who first sat at this old bench were elected by the people in the first election held on the soil of Illinois in the autumn of 1778.

"We who are about to assume judicial office in a court recently established by the people are proud to accept our commissions in this building where the first court in the Mississippi valley was held as the result of the first popular election on Illinois soil."

Sec. 5.—FATHER GIBAULT AND VINCENNES.—The posts on the Mississippi being now well in hand, Clark turned his attention to the capture of the town of Vincennes. "I found it to be," he says, "a place of infinite importance to us. To gain it was now my object, but, sensible that all the forces we had, joined by every man in Kentucky, would not be able to approach it, I resolved on other measures than that of arms."

Mr. English says that the population of Kaskaskia, Cahokia, Vincennes and the other towns on the Mississippi and the Wabash "were almost entirely of French extraction, at the time of Clark's advent, and the universal dislike of English rule still existed, and greatly facilitated his operations."^a And he adds that "Father Gibault was the embodiment of this sentiment, and the man of all others who could make it effective in reconciling the inhabitants to the change of rulers."^b

Clark himself tells us in his Memoir that "the priest was inclined to the American interest previous to our arrival in the country;" and that "he had great influence over

a. Conquest of the Northwest, Vol. 1, p. 199.

b. *Ib.* See also Address of the Rev. Pierre Gibault, "The Patriot Priest of the Northwest," delivered before the Illinois State Historical Society by the Hon. Jacob P. Dunn, secretary of the Indiana State Historical Society, at Springfield, Ill., Jan. 26, 1905.

the people at this period, and Post Vincennes was under his jurisdiction. I made no doubt of his integrity to us. I sent for him and had a long conference with him on the subject of Post Vincennes. In answer to all my queries he informed me that he did not think it worth my while to cause any military preparation to be made at the Falls of the Ohio for the attack of Post Vincennes, although the place was strong and a great number of Indians in its neighborhood, who, to his knowledge, were generally at war; that Governor Abbott had, a few weeks before, left the place on some business to Detroit; that he expected that when the inhabitants were fully acquainted with what had passed at the Illinois, and the present happiness of their friends, and made fully acquainted with the nature of the war, their sentiments would greatly change; that he knew that his appearance there would have great weight, even among the savages; that if it was agreeable to me he would take this business on himself, and had no doubt of his being able to bring that place over to the American interest without my being at the trouble of marching against it; that his business being altogether spiritual, he wished that another person might be charged with the temporal part of the embassy, but that he would privately direct the whole, and he named Doctor Lafont as his associate."

Father Gibault's plan was perfectly agreeable to what Clark had been secretly aiming at. The party set out on July 14, 1778, and arrived safe at Vincennes, where, after a day or two spent in explaining matters, the people acceded to the proposal and took the oath of allegiance. "An officer," says Clark, "was elected, the fort immediately garrisoned and the American flag displayed, to the astonishment of the Indians, and everything settled beyond our most sanguine hopes. The people began to put on a new face and to talk in a different style, and to act as perfect freemen. With a garrison of their own, with the United States at their elbow, their language to the Indians was immediately altered. They began

as citizens of the state, and informed the Indians that their old father the King of France, was come to life again, had joined the big knife, and was mad at them for fighting for the English; that they would advise them to make peace with the Americans as soon as they could, otherwise they might expect the land to be very bloody, etc. The Indians began to think seriously. Throughout the country this was now the kind of language they generally got from their ancient friends of the Wabash and Illinois. Through the means of their correspondence spreading among the nations, our batteries now began to play in a proper channel. Mr. Gibault and party, accompanied by several gentlemen of Post Vincennes, returned to Kaskaskia about the first of August with the joyful news."

Thus, through the wise management of "The Patriot Priest of the Northwest," and without the shedding of one drop of blood, the important town of Post Vincennes came under the jurisdiction of the United States,—the first spot on Indiana soil over which floated the American flag. About the middle of August Captain Leonard Helm was sent by Clark to take command of the town, with instructions to maintain the good will of the people and to win over the Indian tribes. An Indian chief, called the Tobacco's Son, a Peankeshaw, resided at this time in an Indian village west of the Wabash and not far from Vincennes. "This man," says Clark, "was called by the Indians 'The Grand Door to the Wabash,' as the great Pontiac had been to that of the St. Joseph; and, as nothing of consequence was to be undertaken by the league on the Wabash without his assent, I discovered that to win him was an object of great importance." Clark, accordingly, had sent friendly messages to the chief by Father Gibault, which were returned in the same spirit; and like compliments were again sent by Captain Helm. "Tobacco's Son," says Clark, "proved a zealous friend to the day of his death, which happened two years after this, when he desired to be buried among the Americans. His body

was conveyed to the garrison of Cahokia and buried with the honors of war. He appeared in all his conduct as if he had the American interest much at heart."

"In a short time," continues Clark's Memoir, "almost the whole of the various tribes of the different nations on the Wabash, as high as the Ouiatanon, came to St. Vincennes and followed the example of their grand chief; and as expresses were continually passing between Captain Helm and myself the whole time of these treaties, the business was settled perfectly to my satisfaction, and greatly to the advantage of the public. The British interest daily lost ground in this quarter, and in a short time our influence reached the Indians on the river St. Joseph and the border of Lake Michigan." And he adds that the French gentlemen at the different posts engaged warmly in the American interests, and in promoting treaties of peace and good will with all the Indian tribes; so that, as he tells us, "in a short time from this we could send a single soldier through any part of the Wabash and Illinois country, for the whole of those Indians came to treat, either at Cahokia or St. Vincennes, in course of the fall."

Sec. 6.—CLARK'S WINTER CAMPAIGN.—This pleasant situation was to be rudely disturbed as the early winter came on. At first there was a vague rumor that there was active preparation going on for a British expedition from Detroit, intended to retake Vincennes and all the other posts in possession of Clark, and even to invade and conquer Kentucky. Clark could get no definite news from Vincennes; his messengers being captured by English scouting parties, as it afterwards turned out. Indeed Clark himself was nearly taken by one of these parties. It was not until January 29, 1779, that he first learned the true state of affairs from Francis Vigo, a Spanish merchant who had been at Vincennes. This gentleman, whose patriotism was afterward remembered by giving his honored name to the county of Vigo, Indiana, informed

Clark that in the previous December, a British force under Governor Hamilton had come from Detroit and captured Vincennes; after which Hamilton, thinking the season too far advanced to take the posts on the Mississippi, sent some of his men to watch the Ohio, and disbanded others, giving orders that all should meet again in the spring to drive Clark's forces out of the Illinois and also to attack the Kentucky settlements.

"We now viewed ourselves," says Clark, "in a very critical situation—in a manner cut off from any intercourse between us and the United States. We knew that Governor Hamilton, in the spring, by a junction of his northern and southern Indians, which he had prepared for, would be at the head of such a force that nothing in this quarter could withstand his arms; that Kentucky must immediately fall, and well if the desolation would end there. If we could immediately make our way good to Kentucky, we were convinced that before we could raise a force sufficient to save that country it would be too late, as all the men in it, joined by the troops we had, would not be sufficient, and to get timely succor from the interior frontiers was out of the question. We saw but one alternate, which was to attack the enemy in their quarters. If we were fortunate, it would save the whole; if otherwise, it would be nothing more than what would certainly be the consequence if we should not make the attempt. Encouraged by the idea of the greatness of the consequences that would attend our success—the season of the year being also favorable—as the enemy could not suppose that we should be so mad as to attempt to march eighty leagues through a drowned country in the depths of winter; that they would be off their guard and probably would not think it worth while to keep out spies; that, probably, if we could make our way good, we might surprise them, and if we fell through, the country would not be in a worse situation than if we had not made the attempt. These, and many other similar reasons, induced us to resolve to at-

tempt the enterprise, which met with the approbation of every individual belonging to us."

Orders to begin preparations were immediately issued, and all were executed with cheerfulness by the inhabitants. Every man was provided with whatever was needed to withstand the coldest weather. On February 5, 1779, after listening to a patriotic address by Father Gibault and receiving his blessing, Clark moved forward, with his army of one hundred and seventy men, almost exactly the number with which he took Kaskaskia on the preceding Fourth of July. "Insensibly," he says, "and without a murmur, were those men led on to the banks of the Little Wabash,^a which we reached on the 13th, through incredible difficulties, far surpassing anything that any of us had ever experienced." On February 17th, they reached the Embarrass river, but finding they could not cross it they moved down the bank of that river to its junction with the Wabash proper, which they reached on the 18th, at a point seven or eight miles below Vincennes. Here they expected to find the "Willing," a boat, or galley, as Clark called it, sent down the Mississippi before they left Kaskaskia, and which was to go up the Ohio and the Wabash and take them up to the neighborhood of the post; but the galley was delayed and did not arrive at Vincennes until February 27th, three days after the capture of the place. The march for five days from the Little Wabash, and by the Embarrass, to the banks of the main Wabash, almost constantly through water and that in the month of February, was one of almost incredible hardship. Yet those days were as nothing to the five days that were to come.

Clark's original intention seems to have been to cross the Embarrass river near the site of the present town of Lawrenceville, and, with the help of his galley, attack the post from the front. He was now compelled to adopt a plan similar to that followed by

a. An Illinois branch of the Wabash.

another great general nearly a hundred years later. As Grant went down the Mississippi and crossed the river to the rear of Vicksburg, and so captured that stronghold, so now Clark by the aid of hastily constructed rafts, crossed the Wabash, marched up to the east of Vincennes and thus took the town from the British. Both exploits are among the most notable in all history. That Clark was able to hold his little band together on this march through the cold waters up the east side of the Wabash often knee deep or waist deep and even more, seems almost past belief. Only men of the greatest resolution and inured to hardships of frontier life could have held out during the terrible ordeal. Indeed some of the volunteers did for a time begin to despair. Clark informs us that toward the end some of them talked of returning. "But my situation," he says, "was now such that I was past all uneasiness. I laughed at them, without persuading or ordering them to desist from any such attempt, but told them that I would be glad if they would go out and kill some deer. They went, confused with such conduct. My own troops I knew had no idea of abandoning an enterprise from want of provisions, while there were plenty of good horses in their possession; and I knew that, without any violence, the volunteers could be detained for a few days, in the course of which time our fate would be known. I conducted myself in such a manner that caused the whole to believe that I had no doubt of success, which kept their spirits up."

In the absence of any news of his galley coming up the Wabash, for which he still had hopes, Clark had canoes constructed to aid in the passage through the waters. Two of these water marches, as related by the intrepid and resourceful commander, will illustrate the extraordinary situations through which they passed:

"The last day's march through the water," says Clark, "was far superior to anything the Frenchman had an idea of. They were backward in speaking, said that the nearest land to

us was a small league called the sugar camp, or the bank of the river. A canoe was sent off and returned without finding that we could pass. I went in her myself and sounded the water; found it deep as to my neck. I returned with a design to have the men transported on board the canoes to the sugar camp, which I knew would spend the whole day and ensuing night, as the vessels would pass but slowly through the bushes. The loss of so much time to men half starved was a matter of consequence. I would have given now a great deal for a day's provision or for one of our horses. I returned but slowly to the troops, giving myself time to think. On our arrival all ran to hear what was the report. Every eye was fixed on me. I unfortunately spoke in a serious manner to one of the officers. The whole were alarmed without knowing what I said. They ran from one to another, bewailing their situation. I viewed their confusion for about one minute, whispered to those near me to do as I did, immediately put some water in my hand, poured on powder, blackened my face, gave the war whoop and marched into the water, without saying a word. The party gazed and fell in, one after another, without saying a word, like a flock of sheep. I ordered those near me to begin a favorite song of theirs. It soon passed through the line and the whole went on cheerfully. I now intended to have them transported across the deepest part of the water, but when about waist deep one of the men informed me that he thought he felt a path—a path is very easily discovered under water by the feet. We examined and found it so, and concluded that it kept on the highest ground, which it did, and, by taking pains to follow it, we got to our sugar camp without the least difficulty.

“This was the coldest night we had. The ice, in the morning, was from one-half to three-quarters of an inch thick near the shores and in still waters. The morning was the finest we had on our march. A little after sunrise I lectured the whole. What I said to them, I forget, but it may be easily

imagined by a person who could possess my affections for them at that time. I concluded by informing them that surmounting the plain that was then in full view, and reaching the opposite woods, would put an end to their fatigue; that in a few hours they would have a sight of their long wished for object, and immediately stepped into the water without waiting for a reply. A huzza took place. We generally marched through the water in a line; it was much easiest. Before a third entered, I halted, and, further to prove the men, having some suspicion of three or four, I hallooed to Major Bowman, ordering him to fall in the rear with twenty-five men and put to death any man who refused to march, as we wished to have no such person among us. The whole gave a cry of approbation that it was right, and on we went. This was the most trying of all the difficulties we had experienced. I generally kept fifteen or twenty of the strongest men next myself, and judged from my own feelings what must be that of others. Getting about the middle of the plain, the water about knee deep, I found myself sensibly failing, and as there were no trees nor bushes for the men to support themselves by, I doubted that many of the most weak would be drowned. I ordered the canoes to make the land, discharge their loading, and play backward and forward, with all diligence, and pick up the men, and to encourage the party. . . . The men exerted themselves almost beyond their abilities—the weak holding by the stronger, and frequently one with two others' help, and this was of infinite advantage to the weak. The water never got shallower, but continued deepening—even when getting to the woods, where the men expected to land. The water was up to my shoulders, but gaining the woods was of great consequence. All the low men, and the weakly, hung to the trees and floated on the old logs until they were taken off by the canoes. The strong and tall got ashore and built fires. Many would reach the shore, and fall with their bodies half in the water, not being able

to support themselves without it. This was a delightful, dry spot of ground, of about ten acres. We soon found that the fires answered no purpose, but that two strong men taking a weaker one by the arms was the only way to recover him, and, being a delightful day, it soon did. But, fortunately, as if designed by Providence, a canoe of Indian squaws and children was coming up to town, and took through part of this plain as a highway. It was discovered by our canoes as they were out after the men. They gave chase and took the Indian canoe, on board of which was near half a quarter of a buffalo, some corn, tallow, kettles, etc. This was a grand prize and was invaluable. Broth was immediately made and served out to the most weakly with great care; most of the whole got a little, but a great many gave their part to the weakly, jocosely saying something cheering to their comrades. This little refreshment and fine weather, by the afternoon, gave new life to the whole."

The danger from the waters was now past, but the danger from the living enemy was at hand. Clark's narrative, from which we can make only brief extracts, now continues: "Crossing a narrow, deep lake in the canoes and marching some distance, we came to a copse of timber called the Warrior's Island. We were now in full view of the fort and town, not a shrub between us, at about two miles' distance. Every man now feasted his eyes and forgot that he had suffered anything, saying that all that had passed was owing to good policy and nothing but what a man could bear, and that a soldier had no right to think, etc., passing from one extreme to another, which is common in such cases. It was now we had to display our abilities. The plain between us and the town was not a perfect level. The sunken grounds were covered with water full of ducks. We observed several men out on horseback, shooting at them, within half a mile of us, and sent out as many of our active young Frenchmen to decoy and take one of these men prisoner in such a manner as not to alarm the others, which they did.

The information we got from this person was similar to that which we got from those we took on the river, except that of the British having that evening completed the wall of the fort, etc., and that there were a good many Indians in town. Our situation was now truly critical—no possibility of retreating in case of defeat—and in full view of a town that had, at this time, upwards of six hundred men in it, troops, inhabitants and Indians. The crew of the galley, though not fifty men, would have been now a reinforcement of immense magnitude to our little army (if I may so call it); but we would not think of them. We were now in the situation that I had labored to get ourselves in. The idea of being made prisoner was foreign to almost every man, as they expected nothing but torture from the savages if they fell into their hands. Our fate was now to be determined, probably in a few hours. We knew that nothing but the most daring conduct would insure success. I knew that a number of the inhabitants wished us well; that many were lukewarm in the interest of either; and I also learned that the grand chief, the Tobacco's Son, had, but a few days before, openly declared, in council with the British, that he was a brother and friend to the big knives."

Clark now took a bold course. It was all that could save him or bring success to his enterprise. He sent a placard to the inhabitants, by the hand of the prisoner just taken, announcing his presence and that he was prepared to take the fort that night. He called upon the people to remain in their homes; that those who were friends to the English King should at once betake themselves to the fort; and any persons found in the streets would be treated as enemies, and punished accordingly. One object in sending in this proclamation was to give out the idea that this was an army from Kentucky; for the people would not believe it possible that it could be Clark or that he should have been able to march across the country from Kaskaskia. That was the effect, the people believed

that the message came from some Kentucky officer who made use of Clark's name. "A little before sunset," says Clark, "we moved and displayed ourselves in full view of the town, crowds gazing at us. We were flinging ourselves into certain destruction—or success; there was no midway thought of. We had but little to say to our men, except inculcating an idea of the necessity of obedience, etc. We knew they did not want encouraging, and that anything might be attempted with them that was possible for such a number—perfectly cool, under proper subordination, pleased with the prospect before them, and much attached to their officers. They all declared that they were convinced that an implicit obedience to orders was the only thing that would ensure success, and hoped that no mercy would be shown the person who should violate them, but should be immediately put to death. Such language as this from soldiers to persons in our station must have been exceedingly agreeable. We moved on slowly in full view of the town; but, as it was a point of some consequence to us to make ourselves appear as formidable as possible, we, in leaving the covert that we were in, marched and countermarched in such a manner that we appeared numerous."

The Virginians directed their march in such a manner, in and out from the cover of the hills, so that it was dark while they were yet a mile from the town. It turned out that, partly through fear of Clark's threat, and partly through love of the American cause, not an inhabitant of the town gave notice to the garrison of the presence of the little army of patriots. The British garrison felt absolutely at their ease and were in total ignorance of Clark's presence, until the Americans fired upon the fort. Even then it was thought to be some wild shooting by drunken Indians. The persistence of Clark's attack, however, soon brought Governor Hamilton, the British commander, to realize that his fort was besieged by what he, too, believed to be a formidable army. The fighting continued all the

night of the 23rd; and on February 24, 1779, after some negotiations, the fort was surrendered. The terms of this surrender, as dictated by Clark himself, are in these words:

"1. Lieutenant-Governor Hamilton engages to deliver up to Colonel Clark Fort Sackville, as it is at present, with all the stores, etc.

"2. The garrison are to deliver themselves as prisoners of war and march out, with their arms and accoutrements, etc.

"3. The garrison to be delivered up at ten o'clock tomorrow.

"4. Three days' time to be allowed the garrison to settle their accounts with the inhabitants and traders of this place.

"5. The officers of the garrison to be allowed their necessary baggage, etc.

"Signed at Post St. Vincent, 24th, February, 1779.

"Agreed for the following reasons: The remoteness from succor; the state and quantity of provisions, etc.; unanimity of officers and men in its expediency; the honorable terms allowed; and, lastly, the confidence in a generous enemy.

"(Signed)

"HENRY HAMILTON,

"Lieutenant-Governor and Superintendent."

So signal a victory, with such slender means and in the face of such formidable obstacles of nature, and against so strong a force and so well fortified a post, places George Rogers Clark and his army of Virginians and Frenchmen in the foremost ranks of all heroes.

Clark's history from the day of his first broaching his plan to Patrick Henry; his recruiting an army in the wilds of Virginia, Pennsylvania and Kentucky; his march across southern Illinois, from the Ohio to the capture of Kaskaskia and the other British posts on the Mississippi; his winning the confidence and affection of the French inhabitants; his securing the good will of the Indians, and his noble conduct in his refusal to allow them to participate with him in the war, even when he sorely needed help; his trust in Father Gibault in the first taking of Vincennes; but, above all, his march in mid-winter, with his Franco-Virginian heroes, through leagues and leagues

of water-covered plains; and the brilliant close which resulted in the conquest from the power of Britain of the great northwest, now the heart of the republic,—reads more like a chapter from knight errant romance than from sober, modern American history. Strangest of all, however, is the apparent neglect of this great episode in our history by Americans themselves. It is only recently that we have come to realize how great a debt of gratitude we owe to this young Virginian, who is worthy to stand by the side of the other great men of the Revolution from his own great state,—George Washington, Thomas Jefferson, Patrick Henry and their illustrious compatriots. Without George Rogers Clark we should have no Indiana, no St. Joseph county, to write about; and it is to our credit as a state that there has been such a revival of the fame of this great man. His statue stands at the base of our noble soldier's monument at Indianapolis, placed there February 25, 1895, as that of our most fitting representative of the Revolutionary period; and, finally, the hand and heart and brain of an Indianian, our own William H. English, has lovingly picked up every thread of Clark's history and woven it into an inspiring story of heroes, to be read of all time.

Other great men also have spoken in fitting terms of this savior of the west; and we close our reference to him with this fitting eulogy taken from President Roosevelt's "The Winning of the West":

"Much credit belongs to Clark's men, but most belongs to their leader. The boldness of his plan and the resolute skill with which he followed it out, his perseverance through the intense hardships of the mid-winter march, the address with which he kept the French and Indians neutral, and the masterful way in which he controlled his own troops, together with the ability and courage he displayed in the actual attack, combined to make his feat the most memorable of all the deeds done west of the Alleghanies in the revolutionary war. It was likewise the most important in its

results, for, had he been defeated, we would not only have lost the Illinois, but in all probability Kentucky also."

IV. THE COUNTY OF ILLINOIS.

Sec. 1.—FIRST MEASURES TAKEN BY VIRGINIA.—The victories of George Rogers Clark added enormously to the territory subject to the control of the old dominion of Virginia. Her authority now extended from her own Atlantic Coast, by way of Kentucky and the northwest, to the extreme western limits of Lake Superior and the headwaters of the Mississippi. That the people of Virginia appreciated the glory of the achievements of their own officers and men may well be believed. Soon after the capture of Kaskaskia, Clark sent a party with dispatches to Virginia, and with them went Mr. Rochblave, the British commander of the fort. "The arrival of the party in Virginia," says Mr. English,^a "with this prominent representative of the king in the Illinois country as a prisoner, and the startling news that all the British posts and towns on the Mississippi, from Kaskaskia to Cahokia, had been captured and were in possession of the Virginia troops, created the most intense excitement everywhere. It was indeed a most important event to the whole country, and particularly to the Old Dominion, for these were her troops, led by Colonel Clark, one of her favorite sons. As the news spread, pride and gratitude took possession of every patriotic heart, and words of praise were upon every lip. The governor, evidently greatly elated at the joyful news, communicated it to the Virginia delegates in congress by letter, dated November 16, 1778."

"When the legislature met," says Mr. English, "the popular feeling was embodied in formal legislation." On November 23, 1778, resolutions were adopted giving thanks to "Colonel Clark and the brave officers and men under his command, for their extraordinary resolution and perseverance, in so hazardous

a. Conquest of the Northwest, Vol. 1, p. 245.

an enterprise, and for their important services thereby rendered to their country."

Mr. English also tells us, in the same connection, that the legislature of Virginia "realized the necessity of extending more effective civil government over the conquered Illinois country, and promptly passed an act organizing it into 'the county of Illinois.'" Except in saying that the legislature "promptly" passed the act, Mr. English does not indicate the date of its passage. Dillon says that it was passed "in October, 1778."^a In Smith's history of Indiana, the same statement is made.^b In a history of Randolph county, Illinois, in which county Kaskaskia is situated, the writer also says that the act creating the county of Illinois was passed "in October, 1778."^c As however the letter of Patrick Henry, governor of Virginia, announcing to the delegates in congress from that state the news of Clark's success, was dated November 16, 1778, and the resolution of thanks to Clark and his command by the legislature of Virginia was adopted November 23, 1778, it would seem that Mr. English's statement, that the act of the Virginia legislature organizing the county of Illinois was passed "promptly," must be taken to mean that it was passed soon after the governor had announced the good news to the delegates in congress and the legislature had voted its thanks to Clark. Plainly, the act for the organization into a county of this vast territory, now embracing five great states of the union, was a more deliberative measure than the impulsive and patriotic communication to the delegates in congress or the voting by the legislature of thanks to the conquerors. The document is printed in full, but without date, in Mr. English's great work. It is expressly stated in the act itself, that it was passed to establish "some temporary form of government," and that it was to be in force "for and during the term of twelve months, and

from thence to the end of the next session of assembly, and no longer." The duration of the act was however afterwards extended, by the general assembly.

Sec. 2.—NATURE OF THE COUNTY GOVERNMENT.—This "temporary form of government," established by the legislature of Virginia for the county of Illinois, is worthy of particular attention as being the first government set up under American authority for the territory now comprising the five states of the northwest. It is probably true that, at least for some time, no part of the county of St. Joseph, and, indeed, no part of the St. Joseph valley, was actually subject to the provisions of this government organized under Virginia auspices; for, it is to be remembered, that, at the time of the passing of that act, the British flag still floated over Fort St. Joseph; and it was more than two years later when the Spaniards from St. Louis took and destroyed the old fort. Yet, as Virginia continued to hold and govern the county of Illinois for some time after the treaty of peace with Great Britain, there was, in fact, an interval, following the date when England and Spain were forced to yield their shadowy claims, and preceding the date of the cession, to the United States by Virginia; and, during this period, that is, from the treaty of peace, September 3, 1783, to the deed of cession, March 1, 1784, St. Joseph county was within the wide limits of the county of Illinois, and, as such was a part of the dominion of Virginia, and subject to its laws and government, made so by the victories of George Rogers Clark, and asserted by the act organizing the county of Illinois.

Two paragraphs of the act will be sufficient to show the general character of this first form of free government applicable to the soil of St. Joseph county; even though we know that there were then, almost to a certainty, no white inhabitants in St. Joseph county, or indeed in this part of the state, to whom the law could apply. The act of the Virginia assembly provided:

a. Hist. Indiana, p. 136.

b. Hist. Indiana, Vol. 1, p. 97.

c. Hist. Randolph County, Ill., by E. J. Montague, p. 30.

“That all the citizens of this commonwealth who are already settled, or shall hereafter settle, on the western side of the Ohio aforesaid, shall be included in a distinct county, which shall be called Illinois county; and that the governor of this commonwealth, with the advice of the council, may appoint a county lieutenant or commandant-in-chief in that county, during pleasure, who shall appoint and commission so many deputy commandants, militia officers and commissaries, as he shall think proper in the different districts, during pleasure, all of whom, before they enter into office, shall take the oath of fidelity to this commonwealth and the oath of office, according to the form of their own religion, which the inhabitants shall fully, and to all intents and purposes, enjoy together with all their civil rights and property.

And all civil officers to which said inhabitants have been accustomed, necessary for the preservation of peace and the administration of justice, shall be chosen by a majority of the citizens in their respective districts, to be convened for that purpose by the county lieutenant or commandant, or his deputy, and shall be commissioned by the said county lieutenant or commandant-in-chief, and be paid for their services in the same manner as such expenses have been heretofore borne, levied and paid in that county; which said civil officers, after taking the oaths as above prescribed, shall exercise their several jurisdictions and conduct themselves agreeable to the laws which the present settlers are now accustomed to.”

Colonel John Todd of Kentucky was appointed by the governor of Virginia, and received his instructions, December 12, 1778, as the first county lieutenant of the county of Illinois, but did not arrive at Kaskaskia until June 15, 1779, when he proceeded to put in operation the civil government established for the county by the legislature of Virginia. The instructions received from the governor by the county lieutenant were, as might be expected, coming as they did from the liberty-

loving Patrick Henry, quite in accord with the spirit of the act organizing the county. One paragraph from these instructions will show the liberal character of the free institutions under which the government of our northwest started into existence:

“And I know no better general direction to give than this,” wrote Governor Henry, “that you consider yourself as at the head of the civil department, and as such having the command of the militia who are not to be under the command of the military, until ordered out by the civil authority and act in conjunction with them. You are on all occasions to inculcate on the people the value of liberty and the difference between the state of free citizens of this commonwealth and that slavery to which Illinois was destined. A free and equal representation may be expected by them in a little time, together with all the improvements in jurisprudence and policy which the other parts of the state enjoy.”

One of the earliest and most important acts of the county lieutenant affecting the territory now constituting the state of Indiana was the establishment at Vincennes, in June, 1779, of a court of civil and criminal jurisdiction. This court was composed of several magistrates, presided over by Colonel J. M. P. Legras, commandant of the post. For three years Colonel Todd continued to administer the affairs of the county of Illinois,—a territory so vast that it is now divided into five great states, and these states subdivided into no less than four hundred and thirty-four counties. In 1782, he went to Virginia on business connected with the county, and on his return through Kentucky met with his old companion Daniel Boone whom he accompanied in an expedition against the Indians. During the course of this expedition Colonel Todd was killed at the noted battle of Blue Licks.

As an indication of the equal place to which the French inhabitants had attained in the new government and the confidence reposed in them as American citizens, it is interesting

to note that the successor of Colonel Todd in the high office of county lieutenant was Timothy de Montbrun, a Frenchman. This was a fitting recognition of the faithful people who had received and stood by Colonel Clark so patriotically, and who formed so efficient a part of the brave army that immortalized itself in the capture of Vincennes.^a

Sec. 3.—CLAIMS MADE BY OTHER STATES.—Virginia was not the only state that made individual claim to large parts of the western country. Connecticut, Massachusetts, New York, North Carolina, South Carolina and other states also had their claims. Connecticut claimed the territory west of Pennsylvania, to the Mississippi, from latitude forty-one degrees to latitude forty-two degrees and two minutes north; while Massachusetts claimed the strip north of the Connecticut claim, to latitude forty-three degrees and thirty minutes. The claims of Connecticut and Massachusetts overlapped and of course conflicted with the Virginia claim, which last included the whole northwest. It is not easy at this day to appreciate the grounds of the claims made by the two New England states. Those claims seem to have been based upon the theory that no western bounds had been fixed for those commonwealths in the royal charters originally establishing the colonies and defining their limits, and consequently, that these states, to their full width north and south, reached to the west without limit,—even to the Pacific ocean, if there should be any American territory extending so far. We may note, as a matter of local interest, that St. Joseph county is included wholly within the bounds of the Connecticut claim; so that the soil of our county was at the same time claimed by Virginia and by Connecticut. It is but the simple truth to say, in the calm light of history, that it now appears very clear that the claim of Virginia is the only one that had any substantial founda-

tion in fact or in right reason. The Old Dominion, single-handed, under direction of her governor, Patrick Henry, with the sage counsel of Thomas Jefferson, George Mason and other wise and far-seeing statesmen, commissioned the young Virginian, George Rogers Clark, who with his little army of Virginians, Pennsylvanians, Kentuckians and Frenchmen, won from British power this splendid northwest. Had Clark not made that mid-winter march through the icy waters of Illinois and Indiana, and met and conquered Hamilton at Vincennes, it may be doubted whether there would now be any northwest for us, and whether the western boundaries of the nation would not be the Alleghanies, or at most the Ohio, rather than the great lakes. Great Britain retained Canada at the treaty of peace; but without Clark Canada would have extended at least to the Ohio and the Mississippi. And, afterwards, without our boundary on the Mississippi; what likelihood is there that we should have obtained Louisiana from Napoleon?

Sec. 4.—CESSION BY VIRGINIA.—The Virginia claim, then, was good as against that of any other state. But the question became broader. Was it good as against all the states, against the Union itself? The people of the whole republic, and, finally, even the people of Virginia themselves, felt that this great northwest was too vast to be the property of any state; that while it had been won solely by the wisdom and valor of Virginia, yet that it was won by her while aiding in waging war against the common enemy. In the treaty of peace it was the nation that was recognized; and when the great lakes were made the northern boundary, it was the boundary of the American Union, and not that of any state, that was recognized. Very early, therefore, Virginia began to feel that, in the interests of harmony and the general welfare of the common country which that great state had done so much to establish, she ought to yield her undoubted rights to the general good; that while her claims were superior to

^a. Conquest of the Northwest, Vol. 1, pp. 248-252, Vol. 2, p. 1037. Montague, Hist. Randolph County, Ill., pp. 30-31.

those of any other state, yet that they should be yielded as her imperial gift to the United States itself.

Accordingly, by an act of the general assembly of Virginia, passed December 20, 1783, but a little over three months after the acknowledgment of the independence of the United States, the delegates of Virginia in the congress of the United States were authorized and empowered, for and on behalf of the state of Virginia, "to convey, transfer, assign and make over to the United States in congress assembled, for the benefit of the said states, all right, title and claim, as well of soil as jurisdiction, which this commonwealth hath to the territory or tract of country, within the limits of the Virginia charter, situate, lying and being to the northwest of the river Ohio."

One of the conditions of the act of cession was: "That the territory so ceded shall be laid out and formed into states, containing suitable extent of territory, not less than one hundred, nor more than one hundred and fifty miles square, or as near thereto as circumstances will admit; and that the states so formed shall be distinct republican states, and admitted members of the federal union, having the same rights of sovereignty, freedom and independence as the other states."

Another condition was: "That the French and Canadian inhabitants and other settlers of the Kaskaskias, St. Vincents, and the neighboring villages, who have professed themselves citizens of Virginia, shall have their possessions and titles confirmed to them, and be protected in the enjoyment of their rights and liberties."

It was further provided that all the lands within the territory so ceded to the United States, except those disposed of in bounties to the officers and soldiers of the American army, including Clark and his command, and lands reserved for certain other purposes named in the act of cession, "shall be considered as a common fund for the use and benefit of such

of the United States as have become, or shall become, members of the confederation or federal alliance of said states, Virginia inclusive, according to their usual respective proportions in the general charge and expenditure, and shall be faithfully and bona fide disposed of for that purpose, and for no other use or purpose whatsoever."

When we remember that the constitution of the United States was not yet written, and that the several states, but loosely joined under the articles of confederation, were still almost independent sovereignties, the generous character of the order surrendering this great territory to the equal ownership of all the states of the Union will be more apparent. The Deed of Cession, so authorized by the Virginia assembly was duly executed March 1, 1784, by Thomas Jefferson, Samuel Hardy, Arthur Lee and James Monroe, then the delegates in congress from the commonwealth of Virginia. On that day the territory now comprising the county of St. Joseph, together with all the remainder of the northwest, became for the first time, in letter and in fact, a part of the United States of America. The other states having or making any claims to any parts of the western territories followed the patriotic lead of Virginia, and from time to time, executed formal deeds of cession to the United States: Massachusetts, April 19, 1785; Connecticut, September 13, 1786; South Carolina, August 19, 1787; North Carolina, in 1790; and Georgia, in 1802. New York had at one time a claim of an exceedingly vague and indefinite character, which was surrendered to the United States, March 1, 1781. Connecticut, in her deed of cession, at first reserved her claim to the lands south of Lake Erie, long called the Western Reserve; this reservation was finally surrendered, May 30, 1800. The claims affecting the northwest were only those of Virginia, Connecticut and Massachusetts,—unless we consider the intangible claim of New York.

THE ORDINANCE OF 1787.

Sec. 1.—FIRST CONGRESSIONAL PLAN: SEVENTEEN STATES.—The Virginia deed of cession was made on March 1, 1784; and, on April 23, 1784, congress, by a series of resolutions, provided for the maintenance of temporary government in the northwest territory.^a

It would seem that after the capture of Vincennes the same wise course with the Indians pursued by Clark after his invasion of the Illinois country was not followed; certainly, very soon after that time, there began a deplorable border warfare which continued, with interruptions, until the decisive victory of General Anthony Wayne over the Indians in the battle on the banks of the Maumee river, August 20, 1794. There is little doubt the Indians were encouraged in this barbarous warfare by British agents and officers, to whom the success of American army in the Revolutionary war was exceedingly unpalatable.^b

The resolutions and code of government for the northwest, adopted by the continental congress, April 23, 1784, although intended only for temporary purposes and until a more satisfactory system could be devised, were yet the result of much deliberation and discussion. The situation was novel, and the wise men of congress were, as it were, groping in the dark and feeling their way. One plan suggested was to divide the new territory into seventeen states. Eight states were to be between the Mississippi and a line due north from the falls of the Ohio, at Louisville; and eight more to be between the Ohio falls line and a line parallel to it running north from the western side of the mouth of the Great Kanawha. On the extreme east was to be

the seventeenth state. This scheme found little favor; and the subject was referred to a special committee of which Thomas Jefferson was chairman.

Sec. 2.—JEFFERSON'S PLAN: TEN STATES.—Jefferson, Chase and Howe devised a second plan for dividing the territory into ten states. The lines of division are now quite forgotten, and even the high-sounding names of the proposed states are seldom heard. Some of the names were Latin, some Greek, and some were latinized forms of Indian names of rivers in the territory. The states were to be about two degrees in width, north and south, and bounded on the east and west, so far as practicable, by the north and south lines of the first plan. That part of the territory north of the forty-fifth parallel of latitude, covering the then heavy woodlands of northern Michigan, Wisconsin and Minnesota, was to be called Sylvania. The remainder of the southern peninsula of the present state of Michigan was to be called Chersonesus, the Greek word for peninsula. South of Sylvania, covering a part of the present state of Wisconsin, was to be the state of Michigania. South of Michigania, as far as the forty-first parallel of latitude, was to be the state of Assenisipia, a word derived from the Indian name for Rock river. East of Assenisipia, and extending north to the shore of Lake Erie, was to be the state of Metropotamia, mother of rivers. South of Assenisipia, to the thirty-ninth parallel, was to be the state of Illinoisia. To the east of Illinoisia was to be Saratoga; and east of Saratoga, bounded by the Ohio river, the west line of Pennsylvania and the eastern part of the south shore of Lake Erie, was to be the state of Washington. South of Illinoisia and Saratoga, and lying along the Ohio river, was to be a state named Polypotamia, from its many rivers. East of Polypotamia was to be the tenth state, called Pelisipi, from a Cherokee name sometimes given to the Ohio river. While all those state lines have disappeared, and even the names given by Jefferson and his commit-

a. Dillon, Hist. Indiana, p. 182.

b. In Dillon's History of Indiana, a large part of Chapters XVI to XXVIII, inclusive, is devoted to an account of those harassing Indian wars, culminating in Governor St. Clair's humiliating defeat, followed by the brilliant and decisive victory of General Wayne and the historic treaty of Greenville, which was signed August 3, 1795.

tee are no longer applied to the territories for which they were intended, yet it will be observed that one of the names, that of the father of his country, has since been given to the extreme northwest state of the Union, lying on the borders of an ocean which even the most far-seeing statesmen could not then dream of as the western boundary of the great republic. Two more of Jefferson's names, with slight changes of orthography, have also been adopted for commonwealths since created. Michigania, which Jefferson applied to territory bordering on the west of Lake Michigan, has been given, without the Latin termination, to the great state east of the same lake; and Illinoia, which was applied to parts of the present states of Illinois and Indiana, has been given, with like change of orthography, to the great southwestern state of the territory.

There is some uncertainty in which of two of those proposed states the county of St. Joseph would have been situated. The state of Chersonesus was to be the southern part of the peninsula bounded on the west by Lake Michigan and on the east by Lake Huron, the Straits and Lake Erie; that is, the southern part of what is now the lower peninsula of Michigan. This would seem to include the north part of St. Joseph county, and, indeed, all that part of Indiana north of an east and west line through the southern extremity of Lake Michigan. On the other hand, the state of Assenisipia was to extend, north and south, from the forty-third to the forty-first parallel of latitude; and from the Mississippi east to the line running north from the falls of the Ohio. That would give a state bounded on the north by a line of latitude a little south of Milwaukee, Wisconsin; on the south, by a line of latitude a little south of Fort Wayne, Indiana; on the west, by the Mississippi river; and on the east, by a line running nearly from Jeffersonville, Indiana, or Louisville, Kentucky, to Grand Rapids, Michigan. The state of Assenisipia

would therefore comprise the southern part of the present state of Wisconsin, the northern part of Illinois, the northwestern part of Indiana and the southwestern part of Michigan. But as the southern part of the lower Michigan peninsula was to constitute the state of Chersonesus, it is probable that the state of Assenisipia would have embraced no territory east of Lake Michigan. Consequently, the north ten miles of St. Joseph county would have been in the state of Chersonesus and the rest of the county in the state of Assenisipia.

At the time that the boundaries of the ten states were defined, as above set out, a code of laws was prepared to serve for the government of each state until it should contain twenty thousand free inhabitants. One article of the code, as prepared by the committee, provided that after the year 1800 there should be no slavery in the states so organized. This is believed to have been the first national attempt to provide for the abolition of slavery. Another article of the proposed code provided that no person holding a hereditary title should ever become a citizen of any of the new states. This article was directed against the society of the Cincinnati, then recently organized by the officers of the late Continental army. There was strong opposition to a provision of the constitution of this society making the sons and other direct descendants of those officers, to the latest generation, members of the organization. This looked to the stern republicans of that day as savoring too strongly of an order of nobility; and they wished for nothing of that nature in the free institutions of America. The uncompromising republicanism of Jefferson is seen in his advocacy of these two measures—against slavery and against orders of nobility. Both articles, however, were stricken out by congress. The paragraphs giving names to the ten new states were also stricken out. The resolutions as so amended were then adopted, April 23, 1784, and remained the law for the government of the

northwest until the adoption of the ordinance of 1787.^a

Sec. 3.—EMIGRATION TO THE WEST.—Soon after the close of the Revolutionary war a heavy tide of emigration, chiefly officers and soldiers of the war, set in for the lands west of the Alleghanies. The southern soldiers found lands in Kentucky, then in effect a part of Virginia; Tennessee, then western North Carolina; and in the western part of Georgia, which then extended to the Mississippi. The soldiers farther north naturally looked to the lands in the new territory northwest of the Ohio. The long debates of congress in providing for the organization of this territory, and the delay in the enactment of laws for the survey and sale of the lands, tired the patience of those who were anxious to start life anew on those rich lands. On March 1, 1786, the Ohio Company was formed for the purchase and sale of western lands in shares of \$1,000 each. The directors of this company were General Rufus Putnam, General Samuel H. Parsons and the Dr. Manasseh Cutler. Dr. Cutler was the master spirit of the body, and exercised a very decided influence on the future of the new country. Under the old confederation a treasury board acted as commissioners of public lands, but had no power to make sales without the approval of congress. Dr. Cutler, after weary waiting for favorable action by congress, finally succeeded in obtaining confirmation of the sale of the lands desired by the Ohio Company; and on October 27, 1787, the contract of the treasury board with the company was agreed to and the contract executed. In December and January following, two companies, forty-eight persons in all, under the general direction of General Putnam, and consisting of surveyors, boat-builders, carpenters, smiths, farmers and laborers, set out for the west with their stores and outfit, descended the Ohio, and on April 7, 1788, landed at the mouth of the Muskingum. At a point oppo-

site Fort Harmar, at the junction of the Ohio and the Muskingum, they founded their town. Before leaving Boston the prospective town was called Adelpia; but at the first meeting of the directors, on the ground, July 2, 1788, the name of Marietta was selected, in honor of Marie Antoinette, then queen of France.^a The founding of Marietta, the first settlement in the limits of the present state of Ohio, was a most noteworthy event, and marks the beginning of a new era in the history of the northwest territory.

Sec. 4.—DEVELOPMENT OF THE ORDINANCE.—After the adoption of the resolutions of April 23, 1784, congress continued to discuss the future of the northwest, not being satisfied with the form of government established by those resolutions. Little progress was made, however, until May 10, 1786, when a committee appointed on motion of Nathan Dane of Massachusetts, reported in favor of fixing the number of states at from two to five, to be admitted according to the proposition of Jefferson, as reported to congress previous to the resolutions of April 23, 1784, but leaving the question of slavery open. No definite action was taken on this report. On April 26, 1787, another committee, consisting of Johnson of Connecticut, Pinckney of South Carolina, Smith of New York, Dane of Massachusetts and Henry of Maryland, reported "An ordinance for the government of the western territory." This first draft of the ordinance is said to have been prepared by Nathan Dane. After many amendments, May 10, 1787, was fixed for the third reading of the ordinance; but the bill was postponed for further consideration. Congress was evidently not yet satisfied as to what should be done. At this time Dr. Cutler, representing the Ohio company, and anxious for the future form of government in which that company had so much at stake, appeared before congress and its committees; and it is believed that he greatly influenced many important amendments which were thereafter made to

^a. McMaster, Hist. U. S., Vol. 1, Chapt. 2. Perkins' Annals of the West, p. 312.

^a. King, Hist. Ohio, Ch. 8.

the ordinance. On July 9, 1787, the bill was referred to a new committee, consisting of Carrington of Virginia, Dane of Massachusetts, Smith of New York, Richard Henry Lee of Virginia, and Kean of South Carolina. It was after this that the clauses against slavery, and in favor of the liberty of conscience and of the press, the right of habeas corpus and trial by jury, the equal distribution of estates, and the encouragement of education, were added. The anti-slavery clause was at first rejected by the committee, but on July 11th this and other amendments were accepted, although a majority of the committee were from the southern states. On July 13, 1787, the great charter of free institutions became a law, with but one member of congress, Yates of New York, voting against it.^a The Ordinance of 1787 was adopted nearly two years before the Constitution of the United States went into effect. Except the Declaration of Independence, it was at the date of its adoption the most noted declaration of fundamental law ever enacted by a free people. Indeed the Constitution of the United States is itself but the normal outgrowth of the Declaration of Independence and the Ordinance of 1787.

The ordinance provides, as already indicated, for the equal distribution of property among kindred of equal degrees, without distinction as to whole blood or half blood, except in case of a devise by will. The fathers of the republic took every occasion to protect the people against the accumulation of estates in the hands of elder sons or other favored persons, to the exclusion of others equally related to the ancestor. Corporations had not then become a menace to the fair and equal distribution of property, and occasioned the enactment of no legislation to guard against wrongful accumulations; but primogeniture and entail were well known evils, and against these they guarded. The rights of the French inhabitants of Vincennes, Kaskaskia

^a. Winsor and Channing, Hist. Am., Vol. 7, App.

and other settlements were carefully guarded. A governor and courts were provided for, and were authorized to adopt, at first and until the organization of a legislature, such laws of the original states as they should find suitable to the needs of the new government. As soon as there should be five thousand free male inhabitants of full age, a legislature should be elected by the people, and should have power to enact all laws, subject to the approval of the governor.

Sec. 5.—THE SIX ARTICLES OF THE ORDINANCE.—The important provisions of the ordinance, and those which give it so high a place in the jurisprudence of the world, are set out in the following six articles:

Art. 1st. No person, demeaning himself in a peaceable and orderly manner, shall ever be molested on account of his mode of worship or religious sentiments, in the said territory.

Art. 2nd. The inhabitants of said territory shall always be entitled to the benefits of the writ of habeas corpus, and of the trial by jury; of a proportionate representation of the people in the legislature; and of judicial proceedings according to the course of the common law. All persons shall be bailable, unless for capital offenses, where the proof shall be evident or the presumption great. All fines shall be moderate; and no cruel or unusual punishments shall be inflicted. No man shall be deprived of his liberty or property, but by judgment of his peers or the law of the land, and, should the public exigencies make it necessary, for the common preservation, to take any person's property, or to demand his particular services, full compensation shall be made for the same. And, in the just preservation of rights and property, it is understood and declared, that no law ought ever to be made, or have force in the said territory, that shall, in any manner whatever, interfere with or affect private contracts or engagements, bona fide, and without fraud, previously formed.

Art. 3rd. Religion, morality and knowledge, being necessary to good government and the happiness of mankind, schools and the means of education shall forever be encouraged. The utmost good faith shall always be observed towards the Indians; their lands and property shall never be taken from

them without their consent; and, in their property, rights and liberty, they shall never be invaded or disturbed, unless in just and lawful wars authorized by congress; but laws founded in justice and humanity, shall, from time to time, be made for preventing wrongs being done to them, and for preserving peace and friendship with them.

Art. 4th. The said territory, and the states which may be formed therein, shall forever remain a part of this confederacy of the United States of America, subject to the Articles of Confederation, and to such alterations therein as shall be constitutionally made; and to all the acts and ordinances of the United States in congress assembled, conformable thereto. The inhabitants and settlers in the said territory shall be subject to pay a part of the federal debts contracted or to be contracted, and a proportional part of the expenses of government, to be apportioned on them by congress according to the same common rule and measure by which apportionments thereof shall be made on the other states; and the taxes, for paying their proportion, shall be laid and levied by the authority and direction of the legislatures of the district or districts, or new states, as in the original states, within the time agreed upon by the United States in congress assembled. The legislatures of those districts or new states, shall never interfere with the primary disposal of the soil by the United States in congress assembled, nor with any regulations congress may find necessary for securing the title in such soil to the bona fide purchasers. No tax shall be imposed on lands the property of the United States; and in no case, shall non-resident proprietors be taxed higher than residents. The navigable waters leading into the Mississippi and St. Lawrence, and the carrying places between the same, shall be common highways, and forever free, as well to the inhabitants of the said territory as to the citizens of the United States, and those of any other state that may be admitted into the confederacy, without any tax, impost or duty, therefor.

Art. 5th. There shall be formed in the said territory not less than three nor more than five states; and the boundaries of the states, as soon as Virginia shall alter her act of cession, and consent to the same,^a shall become

a. In the Virginia Act of Cession, passed December 20, 1783, the cession was made "upon condition that the territory so ceded shall be laid out and formed into states, containing suitable

fixed and established as follows, to-wit: The western state in the said territory shall be bounded by the Mississippi, Ohio and Wabash rivers; a direct line drawn from the Wabash and Post St. Vincent's, due north, to the territorial line between the United States and Canada, and, by the said territorial line, to the Lake of the Woods and Mississippi. The middle state shall be bounded by the said direct line, the Wabash from Post St. Vincent's to the Ohio; by the Ohio, by a direct line, drawn due north from the mouth of the Great Miami to the said territorial line, and by the said territorial line. The eastern state shall be bounded by the last mentioned direct line, the Ohio, Pennsylvania, and the said territorial line: Provided, however, and it is further understood and declared, that the boundaries of these three states shall be subject so far to be altered, that, if Congress shall hereafter find it expedient, they shall have authority to form one or two states in that part of the said territory which lies north of an east and west line drawn through the southerly bend or extreme of Lake Michigan. And whenever any of the said states shall have sixty thousand free inhabitants therein, such state shall be admitted, by its delegates, into the Congress of the United States, on an equal footing with the original states in all respects whatever, and shall be at liberty to form a permanent constitution and state government: Provided, the constitution and government so to be formed shall be republican and in conformity to the principles contained in these articles; and so far as it can be, consistent with the general interest of the confederacy, such admission shall be allowed at an earlier period, and when there may be a less number of free inhabitants in the state than sixty thousand.

Art. 6th. There shall be neither slavery nor involuntary servitude in the said territory, otherwise than in the punishment of crimes, whereof the party shall have been duly convicted: Provided, always, that any person escaping into the same, from whom labor or service is lawfully claimed in any one of the original states, such fugitive may be law-

extent of territory, not less than one hundred nor more than one hundred and fifty miles square, or as near thereto as circumstances will permit." By an act passed December 30, 1788, the General Assembly of Virginia altered her act of cession as to the foregoing condition, and consented to the boundaries of the new states as fixed by Congress, in the ordinance of 1787.

fully reclaimed and conveyed to the person claiming his or her labor or service as aforesaid.

Sec. 6.—THE CONSTITUTION OF THE UNITED STATES.—The Congress that adopted the Ordinance of 1787 was the old Continental Congress, which, under the Articles of Confederation, had carried the government through the Revolutionary war and secured the independence of the young republic. As soon, however, as the pressure of the common enemy was removed it was perceived that the loose Articles of Confederation were insufficient to hold the former independent colonies together in one government; and steps were taken by the people of all the states, “to form a more perfect union, establish justice, insure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defense, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty.” At the very time that the Ordinance of 1787 was under discussion, and when it was adopted, the convention for the adoption of a constitution which should “form a more perfect union” was in session. In the ordinance we find the same patriotic provisions that are permanently established in the constitution; and both great documents were the product of practically the same wise Fathers who laid the foundations of the republic.

The famous statement of Mr. Gladstone, that the constitution of the United States “is the greatest work ever struck off at any one time by the mind and purpose of man,” while a most noble and deserved encomium upon the excellence of our constitution and of the form of government created by it, is nevertheless misleading in so far as it carries the idea that the provisions of that great document were original with the men who framed our fundamental law. Our constitution, like that of every other free state, was a growth rather than a creation. The Fathers of the republic put into complete, well rounded form the principles of free and stable government which had developed, year by year, in the several colonies since the time of their first

settlement. Something was drawn from the experience of each of them. Indeed we may go further, and say that American institutions, as established in the Declaration of Independence, in the Ordinance of 1787 and in the Constitution of the United States, and as since developed in our history, are but the culmination of the preceding centuries of Christian civilization.

A profound student of our system of government has said that, the real source of the constitution is the experience of the American people. They had previously established and developed admirable little commonwealths in the colonies. Since the beginning of the Revolution they had become experienced in state governments, organized on a different basis from the colonial. Finally, they had carried on two successive national governments, with both of which they had been profoundly discontented. The general outline of the constitution has been looked upon as British; it was really colonial. The president's powers of military command, of appointment and of veto were similar to those of the colonial governor. National courts were created on the model of colonial courts. A legislature of two houses was accepted because such legislatures had been common in colonial times. In the English parliamentary system as it existed before 1760 the Americans had no share; the later English system of parliamentary responsibility was not yet developed, and had never been established in colonial governments; and our fathers expressly excluded it from the constitution. Nor were they more affected by the experience of other European nations. The chief source of the details of the new constitution was the state constitutions and the laws then in force. Indeed, the principal experiment in the constitution, for which there was no precedent, was the establishment of an electoral college for the election of president and vice-president; and of all parts of the system this has worked, least as the framers expected. The constitution, therefore, represents the accumulated ex-

perience of the time. Its real boldness is the novelty of the federal system. The framing of a constitution in detail by a body of uninstructed delegates, expressly chosen for that purpose, was familiar experience in the several states; even though it was unexampled elsewhere in the world. That the instrument of federal government should provide for proportional representation in one house, and for a federal court, were steps in federal organization which mark a new federal principle. The great merit of the members of the constitutional convention is their understanding of the temper of their own countrymen. They selected out of British, colonial or state usages such practices and forms as experience had shown to be acceptable to the people. The members of the convention had further the wisdom to express their work in general though carefully stated principles. All previous federal governments had been fettered either by an imperfect and inadequate statement, or by an unwritten constitution with an accumulation of special precedents. The phrases of the Constitution of 1787 were broad enough to cover cases unforeseen. A third distinction of the convention is the skill with which it framed acceptable compromises upon the most difficult questions before it. The two houses of congress satisfied both large and small states. The convention had profited by the experience of the Confederation; on every page of the constitution may be found clauses which would not have stood there had it been framed in 1781. An adequate revenue was provided; foreign and interstate commerce was put under the control of congress; the charge of foreign affairs was given entirely to the central authority; the powers of government were distributed among the three departments, legislative, executive and judicial.^a

SEC. 7.—RATIFICATION OF THE CONSTITUTION.—Yet, wise as seems to us this fundamental law of our country, after our experi-

ence of more than a hundred years, it was only with the greatest difficulty that the spirit of compromise prevailed in the convention, and afterwards with the people themselves. It was finally accepted only through the extraordinary and persistent influence of some of the wisest statesmen that ever lived, —Washington, Franklin, Madison, Hamilton, James Wilson, John Marshall and others. The opposition in Massachusetts, New York, Virginia and the Carolinas was pronounced: Hancock and Adams were lukewarm. Patrick Henry, Richard Henry Lee and James Monroe were in opposition. Massachusetts and South Carolina, the former under the lead of Hancock, finally came to the support of the constitution, with recommendations in favor of amendments which were afterwards adopted.

Rhode Island refused to send delegates to the convention, but the remaining twelve states finally agreed so far that delegates from each signed the constitution, September 17, 1787. The seventh, and last, article of the constitution provided that:

“The ratification of the conventions of nine states, shall be sufficient for the establishment of this constitution between the states so ratifying the same.”

And then again began the great struggle. Would the requisite number of states ratify the work of the convention? The fate of the proposed constitution remained in doubt for over nine months after the adjournment of the convention. The state of Delaware was the first to ratify, December 7, 1787; Pennsylvania followed, December 12, 1787, but by the ominous vote of forty-six to twenty-three, so strong was the opposition, notwithstanding the powerful advocacy of Franklin and Wilson; New Jersey came next, December 18, 1787; Georgia ratified, January 2, 1788; Connecticut, January 9, 1788, by a vote of one hundred and twenty-eight to forty; Massachusetts, with the suggested amendments, February 6, 1788, by the excessively close vote of one hundred and eighty-seven to one hundred and sixty-eight; Maryland,

a. A. B. Hart, Formation of the Union, Sec. 62; Study of Fed. Gov't, Ch. 4.

April 28, 1788; South Carolina, with its amendments, May 23, 1788; and New Hampshire, the ninth state, June 21, 1788. The union was formed. The remaining states came in afterwards, as follows: Virginia, June 26, 1788 (but before the ratification of the ninth state was known, so slow were the means of communication in those days); New York, July 26, 1788 (by a vote of thirty to twenty-eight); North Carolina, November 21, 1789; and, finally, Rhode Island, May 29, 1790.

A powerful influence in turning the minds of the people towards what may perhaps be termed a reluctant ratification of the constitution, and without which at least New York, even with the powerful advocacy of Hamilton, would probably have remained out of the union, for years if not forever, was the publication of a series of essays in exposition of the true character of the constitution, written by Hamilton, Madison and Jay, over the common signature of "Publius." These essays were published in a newspaper, between October, 1787, and June, 1788. They were subsequently collected and published in a volume, named "The Federalist." The influence of this series of essays was very great, and deservedly so. From its publication to this day, "The Federalist" has held its rank as the very highest authority upon the proper construction of the constitution. "Madison's Debates," taken down by the "Father of the Constitution" during the sessions of the convention, and this series of essays, known as "The Federalist," must always remain invaluable to the student of American government.^a

SEC. 8.—GOVERNMENT UNDER THE ORDINANCE.—The northwest territory was governed by the old continental congress, under the provisions of the ordinance of 1787, from the passage of the ordinance, July 13, 1787, until the new constitution went into effect. As soon as the ratification of the constitution by nine states was certified to congress, that

body, by a resolution adopted September 13, 1788, provided "that the first Wednesday in March next (1789) be the time, and the present seat of Congress (New York city) the place, for commencing proceedings under the said constitution." The first Wednesday of March, 1789, was March 4th of that year, and from that day, or, at least, from the inauguration of Washington as first president, which did not take place until April 30, 1789, the ordinance, though still remaining in effect, was modified by the supreme control of the constitution.

One provision of the ordinance was "that there shall be appointed, from time to time, by congress, a governor, whose commission shall continue in force for a term of three years, unless sooner revoked by congress." Provision was also made for the appointment by congress of a secretary for the territory; as also a court, to consist of three judges. As soon as the constitution was adopted this appointing power and other executive functions passed to the president. A formal declaration to this effect was made by act of the new congress, approved August 7, 1789. It was not until October 5, 1787, that the old congress had proceeded to the election of a governor for the territory, and then selected General Arthur St. Clair, the president of that congress, for the office of governor. Winthrop Sargent was appointed secretary. The appointees of the congress were continued in office by Washington after his election as president.

The ordinance provided for the election of a legislature by the people of the territory. "so soon as there shall be five thousand free male inhabitants, of full age, in the district,"—a name frequently applied in the ordinance to the northwest territory. But, until that time, it was provided that, "The governor and judges, or a majority of them, shall adopt and publish in the district such laws of the original states, criminal and civil, as may be necessary, and best suited to the circumstances of the district, and report them to

^a. Landon, Const. Hist. and Gov't of the U. S., Lecture 4.

congress, from time to time: which laws shall be in force in the district until the organization of the general assembly therein, unless disapproved of by congress; but afterwards the legislature shall have authority to alter them as they shall see fit." So fast did those old republicans stand to the principles of free representative government that, although the people of the territory were as yet too few and too scattered to make it practicable to organize a legislature, still congress would not suffer even its own appointees to make laws for the territory. The most that would be allowed, and that from sheer necessity, was the adoption of "such laws of the original states" as might be "best suited to the circumstances of the district," and not even then if "disapproved by congress." The laws from which the governor and judges were given power to make selections were strictly confined to those of "the original states," that is, to those laws which the emigrants themselves had helped to enact in the states from which they had come. In this way the principle of self government was maintained as far as possible.

Sec. 9.—GOVERNOR ST. CLAIR.—Before setting out for the west Governor St. Clair received private instructions from congress requiring him to acquaint himself with the real temper of the Indians, to regulate trade with them and remove, if possible, all causes of controversy. He was also to neglect no opportunity that might offer to extinguish Indian titles to lands west to the Mississippi and north as far as the forty-first parallel of latitude. He was further charged to do what he could to conciliate the whites and induce them to live on friendly terms with the Indians. In July, 1788, the governor and other officers arrived at the new town of Marietta, at the junction of the Muskingum and the Ohio, and proceeded to organize the new government, under the provisions of the ordinance of 1787. On July 15, 1788, Governor St. Clair and the three judges met for the first time as a legislative body, and adopted a code of laws.

The first session of court for the trial of causes was convened at Marietta, September 2, 1788, and was opened with impressive ceremonies. The court was a tribunal of last resort, with power to review the decisions of inferior courts, and had supreme jurisdiction throughout the northwest territory. Successive terms of court were held at Cincinnati, Vincennes and Kaskaskia, and later at Detroit. The judges traveled this wide circuit on horseback. Those first judges to be commissioned under authority of the United States, and given the two-fold power, to adopt laws for this immense territory, and, at the same time, to hold courts and hear and decide causes, were Samuel Holden Parsons, James Mitchell Varnum and John Cleves Symmes. They were at the same time our first lawgivers and our first judges; and were all most eminent men, and worthy to lay the foundations of great states.

On October 6, 1789, President Washington issued instructions to Governor St. Clair, chiefly having reference to the preservation of peace with the Indians, but providing for hostilities if they should break out, and adding: "You will also proceed, as soon as you can, with safety, to execute the orders of the late congress, respecting the inhabitants at Post Vincennes, and at the Kaskaskias and other villages on the Mississippi. It is a circumstance of some importance, that the said inhabitants should as soon as possible possess the lands to which they are entitled, by some known and fixed principles."

Early in January, 1790, the governor, with the secretary and judges of the territory, descended the Ohio, from Marietta to Fort Washington, which was located at a town then known as Losantiville. St. Clair persuaded the proprietors of the town to change this name to Cincinnati, in honor of the Society of the Cincinnati, recently formed by the officers of the Revolutionary army. At this place, he also laid out the county of Hamilton, and appointed officers for the administration of the affairs of the county. On January

8, 1790, the governor, with the secretary, arrived at Clarksville, from which point he sent dispatches to Major Hamtramck, then commander of Post Vincennes, enquiring into the reports as to great destitution among the inhabitants for want of food, and suggesting plans of relief. From Clarksville the officials proceeded to the Illinois country, to continue the work of organizing the government of the territory, and to carry into effect the resolutions of congress in relation to the lands of the settlers near Kaskaskia and Vincennes.

Upon the arrival of the governor at Kaskaskia the county of St. Clair was organized, embracing the present territory of the state of Illinois south of the Illinois river. The county was divided into three common pleas court districts, and judges and other officers were appointed. Two of the three judges were of French descent. The governor spent some time straightening out the land titles, which were discovered to be in great confusion. He found the reports as to the suffering of the inhabitants to be true. The supplies furnished by the people to Clark's army were never paid for. Troubles with the Indians and consequent failure of trade relations, as well as loss of crops by inundations and other causes, completed the misfortunes of the unhappy settlers. In a memorial, dated at St. Clair county, June 9, 1790, and signed by the patriot priest, Father Gibault, and eighty-seven others, the miserable condition of the inhabitants was most pathetically set forth for the information of the governor. It is a sad commentary on the distressed condition to which these generous hearted people were reduced, to reflect that so large a part of their suffering was due to the failure of both the government of Virginia and that of the United States to make adequate return for the sacrifices which these far western patriots had so freely made in the service of their country. It is neglect of this nature that has given currency to the adage that republics are ungrateful. Even Father Gibault, the friend to whom Clark

owed so much, was denied the gift of a small plat of ground for which he had petitioned, and he, like Clark and Vigo, ended his life in poverty. It has been frequently said, remarks Mr. Cauthorn, in his history of Vincennes, that republics are ungrateful. The truth of this trite saying is forcibly illustrated by the treatment of these men, who, above all others, were the main instruments in wresting from England the territory northwest of the river Ohio, and thereby paving the way for the ultimate acquisition of that vast and fertile country out of which the five rich and populous states of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan and Wisconsin have been carved, and added to the sisterhood of states. The three men are Pierre Gibault, George Rogers Clark and Francis Vigo. They all went to their graves in a very similar condition, and all present a parallel of government neglect of consideration for patriotic and valuable services rendered, without a counterpart in the annals of history.^a

Major Hamtramck, early in June, 1790, sent dispatches from Vincennes to the governor, at Kaskaskia, from which it was apparent that no treaty could be made with the Miamis and their confederates. Governor St. Clair therefore prepared to go to Fort Washington, at Cincinnati, and consult with General Harmar upon the means of sending an expedition against the hostile Indians. He left Kaskaskia on the eleventh of June, placing the affairs of the government in the hands of the secretary, Winthrop Sargent. This officer proceeded at once to Vincennes, where he laid out the county of Knox, appointed the necessary civil and military officers and organized the militia. He then proceeded to settle the old land titles which were in the same confusion as those near Kaskaskia.

The result of the conference of Governor St. Clair with General Harmar, at Fort Washington, was the sending of an expedition, chiefly of militia, commanded by General Harmar, against the Miamis under Little Turtle.

a. History of Vincennes, p. 105.

The Indians were met near the site of the present city of Fort Wayne, where sanguinary fighting took place, rather to the advantage of the Indians, so that Harmar's forces returned to Fort Washington. All the frontier settlements in Ohio and Indiana, and even those in Kentucky, were alarmed at the outcome of this expedition; and preparations were at once made to raise an army sufficiently powerful to repel the Indians. Two other expeditions, one under General Scott, and one under General Wilkinson, were in turn sent from Fort Washington against Indian villages, situated near Ouiatanon, below the site of the present city of La Fayette, and near the site of Logansport. Those villages were referred to, generally, as the Wea towns on the Wabash. The net results of those three expeditions was to rouse the Indians to the utmost pitch of resentment, with the consequent effect of striking terror into all the white settlements in the northwest, and also Kentucky, western Virginia and Pennsylvania.

Little Turtle and Governor St. Clair hastened preparations for the conflict which all persons, Indian and white, knew was impending. Although it was stipulated in the treaty of peace by which the independence of the United States was acknowledged, signed at Paris, September 3, 1783, that Great Britain should, with all convenient dispatch, withdraw her forces from the forts and other places within United States territory; yet, under claim that our government had failed to take measures to make payment of claims of British creditors, as also provided by that treaty, the government of Great Britain continued, from 1783 to 1796, to hold possession of various forts within American territory, including those at Sandusky, Detroit and Michilimackinac. These last named posts were within the northwest territory, and from all of them the Indians received encouragement and support. The English did not like to give up the fur trade with the Indians, which they had so long monopolized; and the British government therefore looked with an un-

friendly eye upon the efforts of the American people to subdue the northwestern Indians and establish states of the Union in their stead. There is no question but that this moral, and often active, support given by the presence of British garrisons within the confines of the northwestern territory had very much to do with the building up by Little Turtle of the strong Indian organization which must now be encountered by Governor St. Clair and his hastily gathered forces. The Indian feared that the American was to deprive him of his rich lands, while the Briton claimed that the American was depriving British creditors of moneys due them. These were the ostensible motives; but, while the Indian's fear may have been well grounded, the real British motive was hatred of the people who had wrested from the control of Great Britain these vast American states and territories, and threatened to build upon the soil a republic which should forever be a rival to the British monarchy.

In the spring of 1791, Governor St. Clair began the formation at Fort Washington (Cincinnati), of an army of invasion against the Indians under Little Turtle. There seemed little enthusiasm among the militia. Troops and supplies had to be procured from New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia and Kentucky; and it was not until September that General Butler, second in command, led the first detachment from Fort Washington. On November 3, 1791, the army, on its march, reached a point about fifteen miles from the Miami village, near the spot where Fort Recovery was afterwards built. Here, on the morning of November 4, 1791, the Americans under St. Clair and Butler were unexpectedly attacked by the Indians under Little Turtle, and most disastrously defeated, losing many men and all their munitions and supplies.

St. Clair's defeat wrought consternation throughout the northwest. The commander-in-chief was blamed universally, and that blame has not ceased to this day; and yet

this severe judgment seems not altogether just. The failure of the expedition was due to causes which the governor may have been, and probably was, unable to control,—the character of his forces, made up as they were of bodies of backwoodsmen who had heretofore been accustomed to make desultory excursions in small parties along the borders, and who were therefore unfamiliar with discipline and movements necessary to an army; the inefficiency of the quartermaster's department, due, undoubtedly, to the same causes; and finally to the lateness of the season, which rendered exceedingly difficult the marching of troops, and the hauling of artillery and stores, through the forests, across swollen streams and over rain soaked grounds, with the winter snows already falling. But the governor, stung by the universal criticism, resigned his military command, and Anthony Wayne, one of the most distinguished of the Revolutionary generals, was appointed in his place. St. Clair, however, retained his office of civil governor of the territory; though the duties of that office, were frequently performed by the secretary, Winthrop Sargent.

Sec. 10.—GENERAL ANTHONY WAYNE.—The transfer of command from St. Clair to Wayne, after St. Clair's defeat, was followed by action on the part of the government which calls to mind similar action taken after the transfer of command from Rosecrans to Grant, subsequent to the battle of Chickamauga. Measures were at once taken to put the army on a better footing; men and munitions of war were gathered and preparations were made to meet the formidable forces which Little Turtle and his British allies were massing in the wilderness. The government and the people, instead of waiting apathetically for an ill supplied army to win victories over the thoroughly roused Indian tribes, now made every effort to send an army, worthy the name, against their exultant foes, red and white.

Additional causes of trouble resulted from the condition of affairs in France. In 1793,

the French revolution was at its height; Louis XVI and Marie Antoinette had been put to death; the monarchy was overthrown; and the republic had armed nearly a million men in war with all Europe. The sympathy of the American people was to a great extent in favor of the French republic; and it was perhaps only through the wise counsels of Washington that we were preserved from being drawn into the terrific storm which then raged between France and the armies of the world. The French minister to the United States, Mr. Genet, artfully playing upon the people's sentiments of gratitude for aid received from France during our revolution, tried to secure American enlistments and to form an army to attack the Spanish possessions in Florida and Louisiana, and also to induce Americans to man privateers to prey upon British commerce. Even George Rogers Clark accepted a Major-General's commission from Genet, with authority to wrest from Spain her dominions beyond the Mississippi. Both England and Spain expected war with the United States; and both English and Spanish emissaries were constantly engaged in stirring up the Indians to continue hostilities with the Americans. Early in 1794, Lieutenant-Governor Simcoe, of the Canadian government, was ordered to establish a British military post at the foot of the rapids of the Maumee, near the present site of Fort Wayne; and, on April, 1794, he marched three companies of British troops from Detroit to that point, while about the same time a Spanish messenger from St. Louis came to encourage the Indians assembled at that point, promising Spanish assistance from the settlements beyond the Mississippi. It needed the coolness and wisdom of Washington and the military genius of General Anthony Wayne to carry the country safely through this crisis. On the representations of our government, Genet was recalled, and a new minister sent from France who did very much to undo the mischief which Genet had caused. During the same time the United States

government took every measure possible to secure the good will of the Indians, and to enter into treaties of peace with them. The commissioners and agents of the government were instructed to assure the Indians, in the "most explicit terms, that the United States renounced all claim to any Indian land which had not been ceded, by fair treaties, made with the Indian nations." All was apparently to no purpose. The Indians, partly through fear of losing their hunting grounds, and partly through unfriendly representations made by British and Spanish emissaries, refused to make any treaties which the Americans could agree to.

Meanwhile General Wayne went ahead with his preparations for the conflict that finally became inevitable. Having collected at Fort Washington a force sufficiently strong and well disciplined for the purpose, and all hope of the making of any treaties of peace having finally vanished, General Wayne with his army, upon which so much depended, began his eventful expedition October 7, 1793, proceeding by way of Forts Hamilton, St. Clair and Jefferson, following the line taken by St. Clair two years previous, and arriving at a point half way between Fort Jefferson and St. Clair's battle ground on October 13th, where he was compelled to await his supplies. After garrisoning the several forts and leaving the sick to be cared for, there remained an army of twenty-six hundred men in the advance. Having in mind the fate of St. Clair, General Wayne concluded that the winter season was unsuited for a further campaign, and went into winter quarters at a place which he named Fort Greenville, near the site of the present city of Greenville. On October 23rd, he sent forward a detachment to take possession of the ground where St. Clair was defeated, and there erected a fort to which he gave the appropriate name of Fort Recovery. During the winter some attempt was made by the Indians to renew peace negotiations with General Wayne, but nothing came of it. On June 30, 1794, a large body of Indians,

aided by British agents and Canadian volunteers, made an attack on an American detachment in the neighborhood of Fort Recovery. On July 26, 1794, a force of sixteen hundred mounted Kentucky volunteers were added to Wayne's army; and with these fresh troops he felt strong enough to take up the line of march for the Maumee towns. On the 8th of August the army arrived at the confluence of the Maumee and Auglaize rivers, where a fort named Fort Defiance was erected. Here peace was again offered to the Indians, but was again declined. On August 15th, Wayne marched out from Fort Defiance, and on the 20th met and defeated the Indians in a decisive battle, almost under the guns of the new British fort. With Little Turtle's army were no less than seventy white men, including a corps of volunteers from Detroit under command of a British officer. On September 17, 1794, the American army reached the deserted Miami village at the junction of the Little St. Joseph's and the St. Mary's rivers; and on October 22nd, a fort was completed at that point and named Fort Wayne. In 1814, a new fort was built on the site of this old fort; and from this has grown the splendid city of Fort Wayne.

Sec. 11.—THE TREATY OF GREENVILLE.—General Wayne returned with his army to Greenville, and sent invitations to all the tribes to send representatives to him at that place to renew negotiations for peace. On November 19, 1794, the United States and Great Britain concluded "a treaty of amity, commerce and navigation"; so that the Indians no longer could hope for British aid against the Americans. They therefore began to listen to Wayne's renewed invitations; and in June, 1795, strong deputations from various tribes arrived at Greenville. After long continued deliberations, and many eloquent speeches, according to the Indian custom, peace was finally concluded, and the famous treaty of Greenville was signed August 3, 1795, giving peace and security again to the northwest.

Sec. 12.—INDIAN LAND TITLES.—By the treaty of Greenville the Indians for the first time formally relinquished title to parts of lands in the northwest theretofore in dispute between them and the whites. Before that treaty the Indians had never acknowledged the right of the whites to any lands, even those claimed by the latter from their first occupancy of the county, such as the lands of Clark's Grant and the lands in and around Vincennes. Including the treaty of Greenville, August 3, 1795, there were no less than forty-six separate treaties with various tribes of Indians, covering all the lands within the present state of Indiana, the last of those treaties being made with the Miamis, November 28, 1840. "It will thus be seen," says Mr. W. H. Smith, in his history of Indiana, "that the process of extinguishing the Indian titles was a slow one, and that the Indians were not finally dispossessed until after Indiana had been a member of the Union for nearly a quarter of a century. In most of these final treaties certain tracts were reserved by the Indians for favorite members of the tribes, and are yet known as 'reservations,' although about all the lands have passed to other persons than the descendants of the original beneficiaries. A few descendants of the Miamis still live in Wabash and Miami counties. [A few persons of Pottawatomie descent are also found in St. Joseph county.] In its various purchases from the Indians, the United States frequently had to accept from two, sometimes three, different tribes separate relinquishments of their respective rights, titles, and claims to the same section of country."^a

Sec. 13.—LEWIS CASS AND THE INDIAN TREATIES.^b—Most readers of Indiana history know that Cass county, Indiana, was named after Lewis Cass, the Michigan general and governor of that name, who afterwards came very near being president of the United

States; but many do not know how much he had to do with extinguishing the Indian titles to land in this state and opening the lands to white settlement.

Of the treaties by which the Indians at different times made cessions of land in Indiana, General Cass assisted in negotiating nine. These were with several different tribes and covered a period of about ten years, from 1818 to 1828. One of them was negotiated and signed at Maumee Rapids, O., in 1817; four at St. Mary's, O., in 1818; one at Chicago, in 1821; two near the mouth of the Mississinewa, in 1826, and one at Mission, on the St. Joseph, in the same year.

The process of extinguishing the Indian titles to lands in Indiana occupied nearly fifty years, beginning with the treaty at Greenville, negotiated by General Wayne, in 1795, and ending with that of Forks of the Wabash, negotiated by Samuel Milroy and Allen Hamilton, in 1840.

The policy of making treaties with the Indians as independent tribes for the possession of their lands began immediately after the adoption of the constitution and continued till 1871. To this extent, therefore, the Government recognized the Indian tribes as foreign nations, making treaties with them which were ratified by the Senate, the same as treaties with foreign governments. No doubt this was better than seizing the lands by force and appropriating them without any pretense of negotiation, though the whole proceeding was really one of force.

As the Indians were practically subjugated from the beginning and destined to extermination or removal to reservations, making treaties with them was rather a farcical procedure, yet no doubt, it was the best method of extinguishing their title to lands. As the tribes, north and south, were numerous, it required a great many treaties to complete the process of extinguishing title.

From the foundation of the Government to 1837, the Government concluded 349 treaties with fifty-four different tribes, and many

^a William Henry Smith, *Hist. Indiana*, Vol. 1, pp. 228-239.

^b From the *Indianapolis News* of May 25, 1907.

after that. Of the Indians who originally occupied portions of Indiana eleven different treaties were negotiated at different times with the Kickapoos, eight with the Weas, sixteen with the Delawares, ten with the Miamis and thirty-eight with the Pottawatomies.

Most of these treaties included a cession of more or less land, so it will be seen the process of extinguishing Indian titles was a kind of paring off and whittling down process. On the whole, however, it was accomplished, as far as Indiana is concerned with very little bloodshed, compared with what might have been in a struggle for the possession of so vast and valuable a territory had the Indians been united and determined.

The treaties by which they relinquished their rights and ceded their lands usually contained provisions for the payment of a lump sum of money to the tribe, for the payment of annuities to the chiefs and the promise of various articles, such as rifles, hoes, kettles, blankets and tobacco to each Indian who should move to the new reservation. Provision was also generally made for their transportation. The consideration named in some of the treaties for their cessions of land, what might be called the purchase money, was ridiculously small compared with its real value.

The treaties were generally preceded by smooth and specious talks by the white commissioners representing the urgent needs of the whites, the advantages to the Indians of a change, etc. General Cass's address to the Miami and Pottawatomie Indians at Mississinewa is preserved and is a sample. This treaty was made October 16, 1826, the other two commissioners besides Cass being James B. Ray and John Tipton.

General Cass began by thanking the Great Spirit for having granted them good weather and brought them all to the council-house in safety. He continued: "When the Great Spirit placed you upon this island [the Indians called this continent an island], he gave you plenty of game for food and clothing

and bows and arrows with which to kill it. After some time it became difficult to kill the game, and the Great Spirit sent the white men here, who supplied you with powder and ball and with blankets and clothes. We were then a very small people, but we have greatly increased and we are now over the whole face of the country. You have decreased and your numbers are now much reduced. You have but little game, and it is difficult for you to support your women and children by hunting. Your Great Father, whose eyes survey the whole country, sees that you have a large tract of land here which is of no service to you; you do not cultivate it, and there is but little game upon it. The buffalo has long since left it, and the deer are going. There are no beaver and there will soon be no other animals worth hunting upon it.

"There are a great many of the white children of your Great Father who would be glad to live on this land. They would build houses and raise corn and cattle and hogs. You know when a family grows up and becomes large, they must leave their father's house and look for a place for themselves. So it is with your white brethren; their family is increasing and they must find some new place to move to. Your Great Father is willing to give for this land much more than it is worth to you. He is willing to give more than all the game upon it would sell for. You know well that all he promises he will perform."

The speaker then pointed out how much happier the Indians would be far away from the whites, where there would be no danger of collisions, and especially where it would not be so easy for their young men to obtain whisky. He continued: "Your Great Father owns a large country west of the Mississippi river. He is anxious that all his red children should remove there and settle down in peace together; then they can hunt and provide well for their women and children and once more become a happy people. We are authorized to offer you a residence there.

equal in extent to your lands here, and to pay you an annuity which will make you comfortable, and to provide the means of your removal. You will then have a country abounding with game, and you will also have the value of the country you leave, and you will be beyond the reach of whisky, for it can not reach you there. Your Great Father will not suffer his white children to reside there, for it is reserved for the red people; it will be yours as long as the sun shines and the rain falls. You must go before long; you can not remain here, you must remove or perish.

"Now is the time to make a good bargain for yourselves which will make you rich and comfortable. Come forward, then, like wise men and accept the terms we offer." The Indians were not fools and they must have been rather disgusted by the pretended anxiety of their Great Father at Washington for their welfare. However, they signed the treaty. Under it they were removed first to a reservation in Kansas which General Cass had assured them "will be yours as long as the sun shines and the rain falls." But their Great Father changed his mind, and later they were removed to the Indian Territory.

Between 1817 and 1831, General Cass had assisted in concluding treaties with different tribes of Indians by which cessions of land were acquired in Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan and Wisconsin, to an amount equal to nearly one-fourth of the entire area of those states. There is a Cass county in Michigan, Illinois, Minnesota, Nebraska and North Dakota, besides that in our own state. General Cass's public services as superintendent of Indian Affairs, United States Senator, Secretary of War, Secretary of State, and other important offices made him very popular, and in 1844 he came very near being nominated for President. On the first day of the convention he ran up from eighty-three on the first ballot to 114 on the eighth, and if another ballot had been taken on that day he would have been nominated. The next morning James K. Polk was sprung as a "dark

horse" candidate and nominated on the first ballot. In 1848, General Cass was nominated, but was defeated by General Taylor. The Democracy of Indiana were for him from the beginning and in 1848 he received the electoral vote of the state.

Sec. 14.—INDIAN TITLES TO ST. JOSEPH COUNTY LANDS.—The Indian title to the lands of St. Joseph county was extinguished in four of the forty-six treaties above referred to, as follows:

1. The lands in the northeastern section of the county, embracing Harris and Clay townships, the north part of Penn, the east part of German, the east part of Portage and the north part of Center, are included in the lands ceded to the United States by the treaty made at Chicago with the Ottawas, Chippewas and Pottawatomies, August 29, 1821. The sites of our two cities, South Bend and Mishawaka, as well as those of the village of Osceola, the University of Notre Dame and St. Mary's Academy, are all within this cession. Only a small part of the lands ceded by this treaty are within the bounds of the state of Indiana, the greater part being in Michigan. Indeed, it would seem as if the lands were looked upon as all in Michigan. The Ottawas and Chippewas were Michigan Indians, as were, in part, the Pottawatomies also; and it is to be noted that the southern boundary of the lands ceded by this treaty is the old Michigan boundary line, the line recognized by the Ordinance of 1787, running east and west through the southerly bend of Lake Michigan. Indeed this old Michigan boundary line is frequently referred to as the old Indian boundary line.

2. The lands in the northwestern section of the county, embracing Warren township, the north part of Olive, the west part of German, the west part of Portage and the north part of Greene, are included in the lands ceded to the United States by the treaty made with the Pottawatomies, October 16, 1826. The southern boundary of the lands ceded by this treaty is also the old Michigan boundary line, the line recognized in the Ordinance of

1787. The site of the town of New Carlisle, and also the beautiful Terre Coupee prairie as well as the villages of Lindley and Crum's Point, are within this cession.

3. The lands in the southeastern section of the county, embracing the township of Madison, the south part of Penn, the south part of Center and the east part of Union, are included in the lands ceded to the United States by the treaty made with the Pottawatomies, September 20, 1828. The lands so ceded reach north to the old Michigan boundary line. Woodland and Lakeville are within the limits of this cession.

4. The lands in the southwestern section of the county, embracing the townships of Liberty and Lincoln, the south part of Greene and the west part of Union, are included in the lands ceded to the United States by the treaty made with the Pottawatomies, October 26, 1832. The lands here ceded also reach north to the old Michigan boundary line. Walkerton and North Liberty are within this territory.

It appears, then, that all the lands of St. Joseph county were claimed and ceded by the Pottawatomies; except those in the northeastern section, which were ceded jointly by the Ottawas, Chippewas and Pottawatomies. This former home of the Miamis had become essentially a Pottawatomie country. And, although, when the first treaty of cession of the lands of this county was made, August 29, 1821, the state of Indiana had already been five years in the Union, with its northern boundary ten miles north of the line fixed by the Ordinance of 1787; yet, in the four treaties by which the lands of this county were ceded by the Indians to the United States, the old Michigan boundary line was recognized. It is remarkable, too, that as this county of St. Joseph had been the center of geological forces, resulting in the present configuration of the St. Joseph and Kankakee valleys and the adjacent hills and prairies; and as the portage between the two rivers formed the central road of commerce for untold ages

between the lakes and the Mississippi; so now, when the Indian came to yield, reluctantly, stubbornly, these fair lands of his forefathers, he stood, as it were, with his foot on the center of the county, and, by treaty after treaty, ceded one fourth of the county at a time, from 1821 until 1832, when all was gone. It was, indeed, a land to hold fast to, and to be finally yielded to the white man only when the superior race could be resisted no longer.

Sec. 15.—THE FIRST LEGISLATURE OF THE NORTHWEST TERRITORY.—The free male inhabitants of the territory northwest of the river Ohio having reached the number of five thousand, Governor St. Clair, on October 29, 1798, as required by the provisions of the Ordinance of 1787, issued his proclamation for an election to be held on the third Monday of December following, for the election of members of the first general assembly; which was called to convene at Cincinnati, January 22, 1799. The legislature met accordingly, and nominated ten persons from whom the president should select a legislative council of five, to constitute an upper house, or territorial senate, as provided in the ordinance of 1787. After making their nominations to the president for the appointment of a legislative council, the legislature was adjourned by the governor to meet again, September 16, 1799. The two houses were not properly organized until the 24th of that month. The members of the legislative council, as selected by President Adams, were Jacob Burnet, James Findlay, Henry Vanderburgh, Robert Oliver and David Vance. This was the first senate of the northwest territory. Henry Vanderburgh was elected president; William C. Schenk, secretary; George Howard, door-keeper; and Abner Cary, sergeant-at-arms. Seven counties were represented; and the house of representatives consisted of nineteen members. The counties were mostly in the territory constituting the present state of Ohio, showing that the emigration was chiefly to that section. Knox county, of which Vincennes was the county seat, was the only

county in what is now the state of Indiana; and it was represented in the general assembly by Shadrach Bond. The house organized by electing Edward Tiffin, speaker; John Reilly, clerk; Joshua Rowland, doorkeeper; and Abraham Cary, sergeant-at-arms. On October 3, 1799, the legislature elected William Henry Harrison, afterwards president of the United States, as the first delegate of the territory in congress. On the 26th of the previous June, Harrison had been appointed by the president as secretary of the territory, in the place of Winthrop Sargent, who was appointed first governor of the new territory of Mississippi.

This first general assembly of the territory northwest of the Ohio river continued in session until December 19, 1799; during which time forty-eight acts were passed, thirty-seven of which were approved by Governor St. Clair and became laws. These first laws enacted by the representatives of the people were, in general, such as were necessary for the administration of justice and the conduct of public affairs. Many of them, however, were peculiar to the time and to the conditions of the people. One was for the regulation of ferries, made necessary by the absence of bridges over the large rivers. Another was designed to prevent Sabbath breaking, profane swearing, drunkenness, duelling, cock-fighting, running horses on public highways, gambling at billiards, cards, dice, etc. An act for the taxation of land provided that every hundred acres of first rate land should be taxed eighty-five cents; every hundred acres of second rate land, sixty cents; every hundred acres of third rate, twenty-five cents; larger or smaller tracts to be assessed in proportion. An act for the compensation of members of the legislative council and members of the house of representatives, provided that each member should receive three dollars for each day's attendance, and also three dollars at the beginning and end of each session for each fifteen miles traveled.

Under the provisions of the Ordinance of

1787, the governor and judges of the general court had adopted many laws for the government of the northwest territory, which were to remain valid until altered by the general assembly. The territory was therefore supplied with a code of laws before the convening of the first general assembly. Among the laws so adopted was one, published August 30, 1788, providing that the general, or supreme, court should hold one session at the county seat in each county during each year. One session of this high court was therefore held at Vincennes, Knox county, in what is now the state of Indiana, every year. Another act, published September 6, 1788, provided that treason, murder and house burning (where death resulted) were punishable by death; burglary and robbery, by whipping, not exceeding thirty-nine stripes, fine and imprisonment, not exceeding forty years; perjury, by a fine not exceeding sixty dollars, or by whipping, not exceeding thirty-nine lashes, and disfranchisement, and standing on the pillory, not exceeding two hours; larceny, by fine or whipping, at the discretion of the court. If the convict could not pay the fine, it was lawful for the sheriff, under direction of the court, to bind him for a term of service, not exceeding seven years to any one who would pay the fine. Forgery was punishable by fine, disfranchisement and standing on the pillory, not exceeding three hours. Drunkenness, for the first offense, was punishable by a fine of five dimes; and for every succeeding offense, by a fine of one dollar. In either case, if the fine were not paid, the drunkard was placed in the stocks for one hour. Persons intending to marry were required to give fifteen days' notice, by publication in church, or by a writing, under the hand and seal of a judge or a justice of the peace, posted in some conspicuous place; or, in lieu of such publication, a license might be obtained from the governor. By an act published November 6, 1790, the governor was authorized to appoint not less than three nor more than seven judges of common pleas, and

not to exceed nine justices of the peace, in each county; and the number of terms of common pleas court was increased from two to four in each year. It is to be remembered that there was then but one county for all Indiana. On July 2, 1791, an act was passed requiring that whenever persons enrolled in the militia should assemble at any place of public worship, they should arm and equip themselves as if marching to engage the enemy. By an act published August 1, 1792, a licensed tavern keeper or retailer of liquors was required to affix a sign on the front of his building, with the words, in large letters, "By authority, a tavern"; or "By authority, a retailer." On August 1, 1792, laws were enacted for opening and regulating highways; and also for building court houses, jails, pillories, whipping posts and stocks, in every county.

An act, published on the same day, required attorneys on being admitted to practice law to take the following oath: "I swear that I will do no falsehood, nor consent to the doing of any, in the courts of justice; and if I know of any intention to commit any, I will give knowledge thereof to the justices of said courts, or some of them, that it may be prevented. I will not wittingly or willingly promote or sue any false, groundless or unlawful suit, nor give aid or counsel to the same; and I will conduct myself in the office of an attorney within the said courts according to the best of my knowledge and discretion, and with all good fidelity as well to the courts as my client. So help me God."

By an act adopted in the summer of 1795, the common law was formally adopted, and the laws for the decision of causes in the courts of the northwest territory declared, in the following words: "The common law of England, all statutes or acts of the British parliament made in aid of the common law, prior to the fourth year of the reign of King James the First, (and which are of a general nature, not local to that Kingdom,) and also the several laws in force in this territory,

shall be the rule of decision, and shall be considered as of full force, until repealed by legislative authority, or disapproved of by congress."

VI. INDIANA TERRITORY.

Sec. 1.—EXTENT OF THE TERRITORY.—By an act approved May 7, 1800, congress provided, "That from and after the fourth day of July next, all that part of the territory of the United States northwest of the Ohio river, which lies westward of the line beginning at the Ohio, opposite to the mouth of Kentucky river, and running thence to Fort Recovery, and thence north, until it shall intersect the territorial line between the United States and Canada, shall, for the purpose of temporary government, constitute a separate territory, and be called the Indiana Territory." The act provided further, "That there shall be established within the said territory a government in all respects similar to that provided by the ordinance of congress, passed on the thirteenth day of July, 1787, for the government of the territory of the United States northwest of the river Ohio; and the inhabitants thereof shall be entitled to, and enjoy, all and singular, the rights, privileges and advantages granted and secured to the people by the said ordinance." A further provision of the act creating the Indiana territory was, "That so much of the ordinance for the government of the territory of the United States northwest of the Ohio river, as relates to the organization of a general assembly therein, and prescribes the powers thereof, shall be in force and operate in the Indiana territory, whenever satisfactory evidence shall be given to the governor thereof, that such is the wish of a majority of the freeholders, notwithstanding there may not be therein five thousand and free male inhabitants of the age of twenty-one years and upwards." But until there should be such five thousand inhabitants the representatives in the general assembly, if one should be organized, should be not less than seven nor more than nine; to be apportioned

by the governor among the several counties, agreeably to the number of free male inhabitants of the age of twenty-one years and upwards, in each. As to the eastern boundary line, as fixed in the act, it was further provided, "That whenever that part of the territory of the United States which lies to the eastward of a line beginning at the mouth of the Great Miami river, running thence due north to the territorial line between the United States and Canada, shall be erected into an independent state, and admitted into the union on an equal footing with the original states, thenceforth said line shall become and remain permanently the boundary line between such state and the Indiana territory." A final provision was that, until the general assembly should determine otherwise, "Saint Vincennes, on the Wabash river, shall be the seat of government for the Indiana territory."

The Harrison mansion is the name given to the venerable building in which the legislature of the territory held its sessions and in which the governor resided and where the general court was held. The building is still in a good state of preservation; and efforts have often been made to have the state secure it as a historical museum.

The house, from an architectural point of view, as well as from its massiveness, seems remarkable. At the time it was erected its situation was a wilderness, far from civilization, and to get the materials for its construction, the glass, iron, etc., meant a year or more of time before they could be delivered at Vincennes. Historical societies have endeavored to have it kept as a lasting monument to the memory of those who built so well and as a reminder that this was the birthplace of government, religion and education in the west. The building is two stories high, with a large attic, and a basement under the entire place. It was completed in 1805. The ceilings are thirteen and one-half feet high and the rooms are spacious. The walls are of brick and inside and out are eighteen inches

thick. The glass in the windows came from England, and it took two years to have it delivered. The wood was sawed with the old-fashioned whip-saw, and all the nails were hand-forged on the grounds. The woodwork is hard-paneled, finished with beading and is of solid, clear black walnut. It is said that the walnut in the house today is worth a small fortune.

So came Indiana into existence, with a capital of her own, and with even a freer form of government than that of the northwest territory, prior to its legislative stage. The area of this new Indiana territory included all of the present state of Indiana, except a small wedge-shaped section in the southeast part of the state, east of a line running from a point on the Ohio opposite the mouth of the Kentucky river, northeasterly to Fort Recovery, in the state of Ohio, this line being the old Indian boundary line, between those points named in the treaty of Greenville. The new territory included also a narrow strip less than three miles in width on the west side of the state of Ohio, north of Fort Recovery, and lying between the north and south line through Fort Recovery and the present boundary of the two states.^a The territory included besides, all of the state of Michigan lying west of the north and south line through Fort Recovery; also the whole of Illinois and Wisconsin; and so much of Minnesota as lies east of the Mississippi river. The limits of the Indiana territory, for a time, extended even west of the Mississippi. By an act approved March 26, 1804, congress attached to Indiana all that part of Louisiana west of the Mississippi and north of the thirty-third degree of north latitude, under the name of the District of Louisiana. At a session of the governor and judges of Indiana territory, held at Vincennes, beginning October 1, 1804, a number of laws were adopted for the District of Louisiana. During the following year, however, by an act of congress approved March 3, 1805, this district was organized into a separate ter-

a. Drake's Hist. American Indians, Chap. XIV.

ritory." This was truly an imperial domain. Detroit, Sault Ste. Marie, St. Ignace, with eastern Michigan and all Ohio, remained in the northwest territory, until the admission of Ohio as a state of the Union, November 29, 1802, when the northwest territory, as a political division, ceased to exist. At that date also, congress attached to Indiana the remainder of Michigan, or Wayne county, as it was then called; and, in 1803, William Henry Harrison, as governor of the Indiana territory, assumed jurisdiction over all of Michigan, and extended the limits of Wayne county to Lake Michigan. Thereafter, until the formation of the territory of Michigan, June 30, 1805, Detroit, Sault Ste. Marie, and St. Ignace, as well as the sites of Ann Arbor, Grand Rapids, Kalamazoo and Niles, with all the valley of the St. Joseph, were in Indiana. So much of the ruins of old Fort St. Joseph's, if any, as remained after the Spanish invasion of our valley, in 1781, were in the territory. Chicago and St. Louis were then in Indiana; and so were the sites of Milwaukee, St. Paul, Minneapolis and Duluth. Our inland sea, Lake Michigan, was wholly within the Indiana territory. The ambition of Napoleon is said to have been to make the Mediterranean a French lake; and he came near succeeding. La Salle made Lake Michigan a French lake; it was afterwards a British lake; and now it is the only one of the great lakes that is wholly American; in the first years of the nineteenth century, it was an Indiana lake, surrounded on every side by Indiana territory.

Sec. 2.—ORGANIZATION OF THE TERRITORIAL GOVERNMENT.—On May 13, 1800, the appointment by the president of William Henry Harrison, of Virginia, as first governor of the Indiana territory was confirmed by the senate. Harrison had been secretary of the northwest territory, and also delegate in congress from that territory. On the next day, John Gibson, of Pennsylvania, a pioneer of distinction, was appointed first secretary of the territory.

a. Smith, Hist. Indiana, Vol. 1, p. 199.

It was to Secretary Gibson that the great chief Logan, in 1774, delivered his celebrated speech, known to every school boy.^a William Clark, Henry Vanderburg and John Griffin were appointed the first judges of the territory. Harrison did not come to assume his office until January, 1801. John Gibson, the secretary, arrived at Vincennes early in July, 1800, and, as acting governor, proceeded to make appointments of territorial officers and to provide for the administration of the affairs of the new government, which was formally organized July 4, 1800. The first entry on the executive journal, dated at Saint Vincennes, July 4, 1800, reads as follows: "This day the government of the Indiana Territory commenced. William Henry Harrison having been appointed governor; John Gibson, secretary; William Clark, Henry Vanderburgh and John Griffin, judges in and over said Territory." This was the second time in the history of our commonwealth that July 4th, proved to be a notable day. It was on July 4, 1778, that George Rogers Clark surprised and captured Kaskaskia, then the capital of the British possessions northwest of the Ohio, thus opening up the first page of our history, as a part of the American Union; and now again, on July 4, 1800, was organized the government of Indiana, as an incipient commonwealth of the republic.

On January 12, 1801, Governor Harrison having arrived at Vincennes and issued proclamation therefor, the governor and judges convened in legislative session and adopted laws for the government of the territory. This was the first body ever convened within the present limits of Indiana to make laws for our commonwealth. The ordinance of 1787 continued in force, so far as applicable, as also the laws already adopted for the government of the northwest territory before the division.

Sec. 3.—THE FIRST INDIANA COURTS.—The new court, called the General Court of the

a. Dillon, Hist. Indiana, p. 408; Smith, Hist. Indiana, p. 198.

Indiana territory, organized and held its first session at Vincennes, March 3, 1801. The court record opens as follows: "At a General Court of the Indiana Territory, called and held at Saint Vincennes the third day of March, in the year one thousand eight hundred and one. The commissions of the judges being read in open court, they took their seats, and present: William Clark, Henry Vander Burgh and John Griffin, Judges. Henry Hurst, Clerk of the General Court, having produced his commission from the governor and a certificate of his having taken the oath of allegiance and oath of office, took his place. John Rice Jones, Attorney-General, produced his commission, and a certificate of his having taken the oath of allegiance and oath of office." One of the orders made on this first day of court is of much significance. It was for the examination of certain persons "for counsellor's degree, agreeable to a law of the Territory." Among the persons so ordered to be examined as to his proficiency in the law was the Attorney-General himself, John Rice Jones. After obtaining their degree as counsellors, those distinguished gentlemen were required to appear at subsequent terms of court, to be examined for their second degree, for admission to practice as attorneys-at-law. Now-a-days it is the constitutional privilege of "every person of good moral character, being a voter," to be admitted "to practice law in all courts of justice." Which is the better system in "a government of the people, for the people, and by the people," may perhaps be a subject of debate. One may become a good lawyer, though admitted to practice without examination; and he may be a poor lawyer, though admitted after the most severe examination. "The fault, dear Brutus, is not in our stars, but in ourselves that we are underlings."

The business of this early supreme court was very light, as compared with the business of the courts of our day. From the organization of the court, March 3, 1801, until the close of its last term, September 16, 1816,

just before the territorial form of government gave way to the establishment of a permanent state government, two manuscript dockets, or order books, one of 457 and the other of 120 pages were found sufficient to contain all the orders of the court. The court sat at Vincennes from its organization until 1813, when the seat of government was removed to Corydon, in Harrison county.

The general court, unlike the supreme court of our day, had original as well as appellate jurisdiction. The business, however, was usually appellate, the appeals being taken from the several county courts. Yet the most important case that came before the court was an original action for slander, brought by the governor, William Henry Harrison, against one William McIntosh, a wealthy Scotch resident of Vincennes, and said to be a relative of the distinguished Sir James McIntosh. The case was tried by a jury selected as follows: Forty-eight men were summoned by elisors, appointed by the court; of these, the plaintiff struck out twelve names, after which the defendant struck out twelve. From the remaining twenty-four a jury of twelve men was drawn by lot. The jury gave the governor a verdict for four thousand dollars, a part of which was remitted and the rest given to charity. The judges of the general court, like the judges of our supreme court in their respective circuits, had power to preside in the circuit courts; and we learn that Benjamin Parke, after whom Parke county was named, while judge of the general court, rode on horseback from Vincennes to Wayne county, to try a case of larceny. It is said that his judicial bench on that occasion was a log of wood. The case was one of petit larceny,—exceedingly petty, indeed,—the theft of a pocket knife. The people of those days sought the just enforcement of the law upon the statute books, according to its true intent and meaning, rather than the making of many new laws. A speedy hearing, a fair trial, a prompt acquittal of the innocent, a certain conviction of the guilty, the taking of no

man's property without right and the delay of no man in the recovery of what belonged to him,—these things seemed to our simple forefathers the true ends of the administration of justice. They deemed the enforcement of the old laws of more consequence than the making of new ones. To remedy miscarriage of justice, they looked to the courts and to the officers appointed to administer the laws, rather than to the enactment of new laws.

The first judges of the general court were succeeded by Thomas Terry Davis, Waller Taylor, Benjamin Parke and James Scott. The last three occupied the bench until the territorial form of government came to a close, in 1816. The most distinguished of the judges, and one of the ablest public men in the history of Indiana, was Benjamin Parke. Soon after the close of his services as judge of the general court, he was appointed first judge of the United States district court for Indiana, serving from 1817 until his death, in 1835. Waller Taylor was also a man of distinction. While judge of the general court he served as major with Harrison at the battle of Tippecanoe. On the organization of the state government, in 1816, he was chosen as one of the first United States senators from Indiana, and served for two terms. James Scott, the third member of the general court at the time of its dissolution, was appointed one of the first judges of the state supreme court, and served for fourteen years. The attorneys-general for the territorial period were three in number,—James Rice Jones, Benjamin Parke and Thomas Randolph. Jones was one of the compilers of the Indiana code of 1807. Disappointed in his political aspirations, he went to Illinois, and afterwards to Missouri. He was a member of the first constitutional convention of Missouri, and afterwards member of the supreme court of that state. Thomas Randolph, the last attorney-general of the territory, was a cousin of John Randolph of Roanoke. He was killed at the battle of Tippecanoe, in 1811. The office of attorney-general ceased to exist from

his death until its re-establishment by the legislature, under the new constitution, in 1855. To Benjamin Parke, and to General Washington Johnston, another distinguished lawyer, our supreme court is indebted for the nucleus of its present library,—one of the finest west of New York City. The books of Parke and Johnston upon the shelves of this library are made the more precious by the autographs of those eminent men. The salaries of the judges of the general court were seven hundred dollars a year each; that of the attorney-general, at first sixty and afterwards one hundred dollars a year.

The questions brought for decision before the general court of the Indiana territory were in many cases quite different from those that have since engaged the attention of our courts. Legislation itself was different. Many acts now deemed criminal were then either sanctioned by the law, or at least looked upon with indifference or even indulgence. On the other hand, some offenses were then punished more severely than at present. Not only treason and murder, but also arson, horse-stealing upon a second conviction, and rape were punishable by death. Burglary, hog stealing and bigamy, in addition to other penalties, rendered the offender liable to be punished by whipping. But duelling was punishable only by a fine; although all officers, whether legislative, executive or judicial, as well as attorneys-at-law, were required to take an oath that they had not given or accepted a challenge to a duel. In their legislation against corruption in elections, the men of those days seem to have been wiser than some of our modern legislators. They punished the briber, the bribe-giver; while more recent laws, in many cases, have punished only the bribe-taker. Liquor laws also differed widely from our own. Tavern keepers might have their licenses revoked, not only for failing to do their duty towards their guests, as to giving proper attention and providing wholesome food for man and beast, but also for failure to keep on hand "ordinary liquors

of good and salutary quality." Provisions of this kind, in favor of pure food and against adulteration, again seem to be receiving some attention from legislators, both in congress and in the general assembly.

As we have already seen, provision was made for the erection of pillories and whipping posts in every county for the punishment of criminals. And not only men, but even women, were publicly whipped for violations of law. Imprisonment for debt was also authorized by the laws of the territory, as it was then generally throughout the United States. Lotteries, on the contrary, now regarded as not only illegal but even as immoral, were in those days, rather favored by the law.

Sec. 4.—LOTTERIES AND SLAVERY IN INDIANA.—By an act of the legislature, approved September 17, 1807, the Vincennes university was chartered by the legislature. It is the oldest educational institution of that rank in the state, if not in the west. Among the provisions of the charter was one for the raising of twenty thousand dollars "for the purpose of procuring a library and the necessary philosophical and experimental apparatus" for such university. The trustees of the university were required to "appoint five discreet persons" as managers of the lottery, who were to have power "to adopt such schemes as they may deem proper, to sell the said tickets, and to superintend the drawing of the same, and the payment of the prizes." It was further provided that "said managers and trustees shall render an account of their proceedings therein at the next session of the legislature after the drawing of said lottery." It is clear that our worthy forefathers thought pillories and whipping posts suitable and proper means for the punishment of wrongdoers; and that they were also of opinion that money for the promotion of the higher education of the people, might properly be secured by the establishment of a lottery. It was not until February 3, 1832, that an act was passed by the legislature making the conduct-

ing of a lottery a misdemeanor; but even in that act, for the purpose no doubt of protecting the Vincennes lottery, there was a saving clause in favor of lotteries "authorized by law."^a In the constitution of 1851, however, the prohibition was made absolute,—that "no lottery shall be authorized; nor shall the sale of lottery tickets be allowed." But, notwithstanding this distinct declaration in the constitution, added to the previous statutory enactment, the trustees of the university still persisted in keeping up their lottery; and in this practice they were long sustained by the courts. As late as the May term, 1879, of the supreme court, the lottery provision of the Vincennes university charter was held to be an inviolable contract, which neither the legislature nor even the people, in the framing of their constitution, could abrogate; and the Dartmouth college case and other high authority was cited in support of the decision. "We hold," said the court, in *Kellum v. State*, 66 Ind. 588, "that the lottery established by the board of trustees for the Vincennes university, under the fifteenth section of the territorial law for the incorporation of said university was and is a lottery 'authorized by law.' " It was not until the May term, 1883, of the court, in the case of *State v. Woodward*, 89 Ind. 110, that the Vincennes lottery was finally declared illegal. The opinion in the case was the last written by the eminent jurist, James L. Worden; and followed a then recent ruling of the supreme court of the United States.^b

Another illustration of the persistence of customs which have long prevailed in a community, is exhibited in the history of slavery in Indiana. To many persons the statement may be a surprise that human slavery ever existed within the borders of this state. We must remember, however, that, on the conquest of the northwest by George Rogers Clark, all this country became a part of Virginia, under the name of the county of Illi-

^a. Acts 1831, p. 269.

^b. *Stone v. Mississippi*, 101 U. S. 814.

nois. Our territory thus becoming a part of the state of Virginia, slavery had a legal foothold here, as it had there. Besides, the French, and also the Indians, held slaves in the territory previous to the Virginia conquest; the slaves so held being not only negroes, but also captive Indians.^a After the deed of cession by Virginia to the United States, it was uncertain for a time whether slavery should be recognized or not; but, in the ordinance of 1787, for the government of the territory northwest of the Ohio, it was finally provided, in terms, that "There shall be neither slavery nor involuntary servitude in said territory, otherwise than in the punishment of crimes, whereof the party shall have been duly convicted." The same prohibition was carried into both our state constitutions. Yet, under the plea that, before the passage of the ordinance, slave property had been lawfully acquired within the limits of the territory, it was argued that the holders of such property could not be legally deprived of it. The argument was even made that a mother being a slave, her children could be born only as slaves, and that the owner of the mother became the owner of the children so born.

The property interests of the country were enlisted in behalf of retaining the institution of slavery, and even of introducing more slaves into the country. A large part of the population was from Virginia and Kentucky, and this element constituted a powerful party in favor of perpetuating some form of African slavery. At the head of the slaveholding interest was the governor of the territory, William Henry Harrison. The governor was a Virginian, and seemed to be sincerely of opinion that the prosperity of the country depended upon the establishment of slavery. A strong effort was made to have the provision in the ordinance of 1787 prohibiting slavery suspended, at least for ten years. The contest before congress was long and earnest, but the petition from Indiana was finally denied by that body. Yet the effort was still

persisted in to retain in slavery, by some form of indenture or otherwise, those who had been slaves or who were the children of slave mothers. As late as the year 1813, the act concerning taxation passed by the legislature provided, as a part of the schedule of assessments and taxation, for a tax "for every slave or servant of color, above twelve years of age, two dollars." Two cases came to the supreme court, in which the questions so raised were finally settled against the right to hold slaves in Indiana. In the first of these cases, *State v. Lasselle*, 1 Blackf. 60, the trial court had decided that a colored woman, Polly, was the property of Lasselle. The supreme court, without deciding whether Virginia, by consenting to the ordinance of 1787, intended to emancipate the slaves in the northwest or not, held that, in any event, slavery was effectually abolished by the Constitution of 1816. In the other case, that of *Mary Clark*, also a colored woman, decided in 1 Blackf. 122, Mary Clark had attempted to bind herself as a servant for a term of twenty years. She afterwards repented of her bargain; but the trial court held that she must comply with her contract. The supreme court, however, decided that such an indenture, though voluntarily made, was a species of slavery, and that the contract could not be enforced. Thus was wiped out the last vestige of legal bondage in Indiana. It is true that long after these decisions, many persons continued voluntarily to live out their lives as slaves within the limits of the state. Even as late as 1840, as shown by the United States census for that year, there were still three slaves in Indiana,—a man and a woman in Rush county and a woman in Putnam county. But slavery, as sanctioned by the law, was at an end; and it came to an end, in fact, with the death of the last of such voluntary slaves.

The desire on the part of many of the inhabitants to establish slavery in the Indiana territory resulted in a proclamation by the governor calling for the election by the peo-

^a. Dillon, Hist. Ind., p. 409.

ple of delegates to meet in convention at Vincennes, December 20, 1802. This convention petitioned congress for a suspension of the sixth article of the ordinance of 1787, which prohibited slavery in the territory. The petition, as we have seen, was rejected by congress. The report of the committee to which the petition was referred was prepared by John Randolph, the distinguished orator and statesman, then senator from Virginia, and was an unanswerable argument against the establishment of slavery in the territory. The Vincennes convention which prepared the petition in favor of slavery is also noteworthy as being the first deliberative body elected to represent the people of Indiana. The convention consisted of twelve delegates. From the county of Knox, four; from the county of Randolph, three; from the county of St. Clair, three; and from the county of Clark, two. The counties of St. Clair and Randolph were in that part of the territory which is now the state of Illinois; Knox and Clark were in what is now Indiana. So small was the population, in 1802, of the territory now comprising these two great states. Wayne county, now the state of Michigan, does not seem to have been represented in this early convention.

Sec. 5.—THE FIRST INDIANA LEGISLATURE; THE TERRITORY OF MICHIGAN FORMED.—The act of congress for the organization of the Indiana territory, approved May 7, 1800, provided that whenever the governor became satisfied that a majority of the freeholders of the territory were in favor of the organization of a general assembly, an election for that purpose should be called, even though there might not then be in the territory five thousand free male inhabitants of the age of twenty-one years; thus providing an earlier period than was provided in the ordinance of 1787, for the establishment of a representative government. By a vote of the people taken September 11, 1804, it appeared that a majority of one hundred and thirty-eight were in favor of organizing a general assembly; and ac-

cordingly Governor Harrison issued his proclamation declaring that Indiana had passed into the second stage of territorial government, and called an election for January 3, 1805, at which members of the first house of representatives were chosen in the several counties. This body met at Vincennes, February 1, 1805, and selected names for the organization of a legislative council, or senate, as provided in the ordinance of 1787. The counties then represented were Knox, Clark and Dearborn, in what is now Indiana; St. Clair, in Illinois; and Wayne, in Michigan. This was the last official connection of Michigan with the Indiana territory. By an act of congress, approved January 11, 1805, it was provided that from and after June 30, 1805, that part of the Indiana territory lying north of an east and west line drawn through "the southerly bend or extreme of Lake Michigan, until it shall intersect Lake Erie, and east of a line drawn from the said southerly bend" through the middle of Lake Michigan to its northern extremity, and thence north to the northern boundary of the United States, should be erected into a separate territory, to be known as Michigan. It will be noticed that this left the greater part of the present upper peninsula of Michigan in the Indiana territory. But, of more importance to St. Joseph county, as well as to all the other northern tier of Indiana counties, it will be seen that the southern boundary of Michigan, as required also by the terms of the ordinance of 1787, was placed ten miles south of the present boundary between Indiana and Michigan, leaving the sites of South Bend, New Carlisle, Mishawaka and Osceola, as well as all the St. Joseph valley and the north ten miles of the county, within the bounds of the new Michigan territory.

The legislative council having been selected, the first general assembly of Indiana, embracing then the greater part of the old northwest territory, except Ohio and Michigan, assembled at Vincennes, July 29, 1805. The council, or senate, consisted of five members;

and the house of representatives, of seven members. Michigan having become a territory, Wayne county was not represented. The counties having representation in the assembly were Knox, Clark and Dearborn, in what is now Indiana, and St. Clair and Randolph in Illinois. The business of this first general assembly was chiefly routine. Benjamin Parke was elected the first delegate of the territory in congress. The second general assembly began its session at Vincennes, August 16, 1807. The laws passed at those two sessions, together with all other laws in force in the territory were collected and published in one volume, called the code of 1807. This was the first Indiana code of laws.

Sec. 6.—TECUMSEH AND THE BATTLE OF TIPPECANOE.—After the signing of the treaty of Greenville between General Anthony Wayne and Little Turtle and the other chiefs, August 3, 1795, it was believed that permanent peace had been established between the whites and Indians. But the emigration to the rich lands of the northwest grew to such proportions that the Indians were pressed farther and farther into the interior. Numerous treaties, as we have seen, were made, from time to time, throwing open to white settlement the several reservations of territory made at Greenville to secure to the Indians their hunting grounds. Often, too, where two or more tribes owned certain lands in common, as they often did, the whites secured by treaty the title of one tribe and then failed to respect the claim of the others to the same lands. The French had respected this community ownership of lands, and never denied the title of the Indians, even to the territory occupied by themselves. Moreover, as to their own holdings, the French accepted the community idea, which was universal. Several hundred acres were set aside at Vincennes, which the inhabitants of the post used in common for pasture and other uses. They “fenced in” their stock as is now the law in Indiana; and the crops planted outside this

community property by each householder were without enclosure. The community idea, however, was antagonistic to the ideas of the emigrants from the east. Each settler wanted his own lands for himself exclusively, and was particularly unwilling that any Indian should have any part or parcel in his holding. But, besides securing additional Indian lands by new treaties, many white emigrants, without any such authority, pushed in upon the lands yet reserved to the Indians by the treaty of Greenville and other treaties. This land greed, as the Indians called it, was exasperating to the natives, who loved their old hunting grounds; and the feeling of resentment against the encroachment of the whites became more acute from year to year. Afterwards, when white men fell in battle with the Indians, it was not uncommon for the latter to stuff earth into the mouth, nose and ears of the fallen pale face, as if in mockery of this greed for land.

In a message to the legislature of Indiana, in 1806, Governor Harrison referred to the growing dissatisfaction of the Indians, in this and other respects. The Indians, he said, “will never have recourse to arms—I speak of those in our immediate neighborhood—unless driven to it by a series of injustice and oppression. Of this they already begin to complain; and I am sorry to say that their complaints are far from being groundless. It is true that the general government has passed laws for fulfilling, not only the stipulations contained in our treaty, but also those sublimer duties which a just sense of our prosperity and their wretchedness seem to impose. The laws of the territory provide, also, the same punishment for offenses committed against Indians as against white men. Experience, however, shows that there is a wide difference in the execution of those laws. The Indian always suffers, and the white men never.”

In the state to which the minds of the Indians were wrought up, by both their real and their fancied wrongs, they needed but a leader,

to break out into hostilities against their oppressors. The leader was forthcoming, a greater perhaps than either Pontiac or Little Turtle. In 1805, Tecumseh, a Shawnee chief, and his brother Law-le-was-i-kaw—the loud voice—resided in a village on the White river in what is now Delaware county. Law-le-was-i-kaw took upon himself the character of a prophet, and is usually known under that title. He began to preach to the Indians, calling upon them to reject witchcraft, the use of intoxicating liquors, intermarriage with the whites and the practice of selling their lands to the United States. He acquired great influence among the tribes, not only the tribes in Indiana, but those of the whole west. Prophet's Town was established on the banks of the Wabash river, near the mouth of the Tippecanoe, as a center to which all the Indians were invited to gather. While the prophet was arousing the religious enthusiasm of the Indians Tecumseh was visiting all the tribes of the west and the south, forming a confederacy which might be strong enough to resist further encroachments on the part of the white settlers. The poison of British influence was again manifested; and when the war of 1812 broke out between England and the United States, the Indians were found in full and active sympathy with the British. Interviews took place from time to time between Governor Harrison and the Shawnee chiefs, but the estrangement continued to increase from year to year. In the early part of 1811 the people of the territory became thoroughly alarmed at the growing strength of the Indians at Prophet's Town; and Governor Harrison, under direction of the president and the secretary of war, began preparations for a military expedition against the prophet. Harrison's army consisting of about seven hundred effective men, of whom two hundred and fifty were regular troops, arrived near Prophet's Town November 6, 1811. On the morning of the seventh, before daylight, the Americans were fiercely attacked by the Indians, and many killed. Harrison quickly

rallied his forces and charged upon the Indians, who were completely routed. Harrison's loss, in killed and mortally wounded, were sixty-two, with one hundred and twenty-six other wounded men. The enemy's forces are believed to have been greater, and their losses quite as severe; but there is a lack of definite information on these points. The battle of Tippecanoe is the most important that ever took place within the confines of Indiana. The spirit of the Indians was completely broken, and the confederacy which Tecumseh was building up was completely destroyed. This great warrior was himself absent at the time, visiting the tribes of the south. It is said that he was angry with his brother for bringing on the engagement. Tecumseh was not then ready for his conflict with the whites, and his plans were therefore frustrated. He soon joined the British army with his Indians and was killed at the battle of the Thames, in Canada, not far from Detroit, October 5, 1813. He was undoubtedly the greatest warrior and statesman ever produced by the Indian race.

After the battle of Tippecanoe there was occasional minor trouble with the Indians; but with the death of Tecumseh their courage and ambition as a united people was gone forever. The remnants of the red race were by degrees removed to the far west; and their place was rapidly taken by the hardy pioneers who poured in from the eastern states and from Europe. The triumph for the second time, of American arms over those of Great Britain, soon after followed; and the future of the great northwest was assured. Up to that date there was not a white inhabitant in St. Joseph county; nor indeed anywhere in northern Indiana.

Sec. 7.—AARON BURR.—Another interesting episode in early Indiana history ought to receive at least a passing mention. In 1805, 1806 and 1807, Aaron Burr, once vice-president of the United States, was engaged in different places along the Ohio valley in organizing a mysterious enterprise, now believed

to have been intended for the founding of an independent southwestern republic, to embrace Mexican and American territory. Some are of the opinion that Burr's ambition looked to the uniting of all the states and territories of the Mississippi valley, with Mexico, into one great central state of which he should be chief. Amongst other places Burr visited Jeffersonville, Vincennes and Kaskaskia. He was arrested early in 1807, and his vast project, whatever may have been its nature, suddenly collapsed.

SEC. 8.—FORMATION OF ILLINOIS TERRITORY.—As the population of the Indiana territory increased the need of a division into two territories became greater. Congress yielded to the wishes of the people in the matter, and, by an act approved February 3, 1809, declared that from and after March 1, 1809, all that part of the Indiana territory lying west of the Wabash river, and a direct line north from Post Vincennes to the British possessions, should form a separate territory, to be called the Illinois territory. The population of the whole of the Indiana territory at that time was about twenty-eight thousand; eleven thousand being in the Illinois division, and seventeen thousand in Indiana proper. The cutting off of the territory of Illinois left the capital of Indiana on the extreme west of the territory; and an agitation soon developed for its removal from Vincennes to some more central point. By an act of the general assembly, approved March 11, 1813, the capital of the territory was fixed at Corydon, Harrison county, from and after May 1, 1813. The capital remained at Corydon until it was removed to Indianapolis, in 1825, as provided in Sec. 11, article XI of the constitution of 1816. By reason of the absence of Governor Harrison in the wars with the Indians and with Great Britain, the active duties of the office of governor devolved for the time upon the secretary, General John Gibson. It was by his call as governor that this last meeting of the general assembly was held at Vincennes. On February 27, 1813, President

Madison appointed Thomas Posey, then a senator of the United States from Tennessee, as governor of the new Indiana territory, then reduced very nearly to the territorial limits of the present state of Indiana.

VII. ORGANIZATION OF THE STATE.

SEC. 1.—PERIODS OF GROWTH.—During the thirty-one years from the close of the Revolutionary war, and the signing of the treaty of Paris, September 3, 1783, to the close of the second war with Great Britain, and the signing of the treaty of Ghent, December 24, 1814, Indiana passed through the several stages of development, until she reached the full maturity of her growth as a commonwealth. The time during which she was a part of the county of Illinois, nursed and cared for by the mother state of Virginia, may be considered the period of her infancy; the time during which she was a part of the northwest territory, trained and guided by the national authority, and governed by the ordinance of 1787 and other laws adopted for her protection, may be considered as the period of her childhood; the time during which she was a part of the vast Indiana territory and entrusted with the forms if not the reality of self government, may be considered as the period of her immature youth; the time during which she was regarded as a separate and distinct territory, allowed to legislate in a limited manner for her own particular needs, and called upon to defend her integrity by the shedding of her blood at Tippecanoe and in battle with the British oppressor, may be considered as the period of her adolescence. It was then recognized that the time of her full maturity was at hand, and that she was entitled to take her place as one of the sister states of the Union.

SEC. 2.—ADMISSION INTO THE UNION. On December 14, 1815, a memorial to congress, praying for the admission of Indiana as a state, was adopted by the general assembly of the territory; and, on the 28th of the same month, was laid before congress by Jonathan

Jennings, the territorial delegate. The memorial recited the provision of the ordinance of 1787, that when the free population of the territory should be sixty thousand or over, the territory should be admitted into the Union on an equal footing with the original states, and stating that a census taken by legislative authority showed that Indiana had more than the requisite population. In compliance with this request of the legislature, congress passed an enabling act, approved April 19, 1816, providing for an election to be held in the several counties of the territory, May 13, 1816, to select delegates to a convention to frame a state constitution.

The convention consisted of forty-three members, elected from thirteen counties, as follows: Wayne, 4; Franklin, 5; Dearborn, 3; Switzerland, 1; Jefferson, 3; Clark, 5; Harrison, 5; Washington, 5; Knox, 5; Gibson, 4; Warriek, 1; Perry, 1; and Posey, 1. It will be noticed that these counties were almost altogether on the Ohio and Wabash rivers. Indiana's first settlements were along the rivers on the southern borders; and the settlers were almost all from the states and territories south and southeast of the Ohio. The population of the thirteen counties sending delegates to the constitutional convention of 1816, was sixty-three thousand, eight hundred and ninety-seven. Two additional counties, Orange and Jackson, also in the extreme south, were organized in 1816, under authority of the territorial legislature; but not in time to send delegates to the constitutional convention.

The convention began its deliberations at Corydon, on June 10, 1816, and completed the framing of the constitution, on June 29, 1816. Jonathan Jennings presided over the convention, and William Hendricks was chosen secretary. On the completion of their work, president Jennings, as required by the constitution issued to the sheriffs of the several counties writs of election, fixing the first Monday of August, 1816, for the election of a governor and other state officers. Jonathan Jennings

was elected first governor, receiving 5,211 votes, to 3,934 cast for Thomas Posey, then governor of the territory. William Hendricks was elected first representative of Indiana in the house of representatives of the United States.

The first general assembly, chosen at the same election, began its session at Corydon on Monday, November 4, 1816. Christopher Harrison, elected lieutenant governor, presided over the senate; and Isaac Blackford, the famous jurist, was elected speaker of the house of representatives. The governor and lieutenant governor were inaugurated November 7, 1816; John Paul having been previously chosen president pro tempore of the senate. Thereupon the territorial government came to a close. By a joint resolution of congress, approved December 11, 1816, Indiana was formally admitted as a sovereign state of the Union. On November 8, 1816, the general assembly elected James Noble and Waller Taylor as the first senators to represent the state in the United States senate. The session closed on January 3, 1817.

Sec. 3.—POPULATION AND REVENUES.—The population of Indiana when admitted into the Union, in 1816, was less than seventy thousand; but such an impetus was given to emigration by the organization of the state government that the census of 1820 showed that the state then contained 147,178 inhabitants. The revenues of the state continued for many years to be derived from a tax upon lands, as had been the practice during the territorial government. This tax was not, as at present, a percentage of the valuation, but a fixed sum per hundred acres according to the quality of the land. For this purpose, all lands were deemed to be of first rate, second rate and third rate. In the beginning, first rate lands were assessed at one dollar per hundred acres; second rate, eighty-seven and a half cents; and third rate fifty to sixty-two and a half cents. In 1821, the assessment on first rate lands had increased to one dollar and fifty cents on each hundred acres, and on

other lands accordingly. In 1831, the assessment on first rate lands fell to eighty cents a hundred; second rate, to sixty cents; and third rate to forty cents. By an act approved February 7, 1835, the method of assessment was changed to our present ad valorem system; and the assessor was directed to assess land for taxation at its true value, or, as the act expressed it, "as he would appraise the same in the payment of a just debt due from a solvent debtor." County revenues were raised principally from poll taxes and license fees, until the adoption of the ad valorem system.

Sec. 4.—BOUNDARIES.—The boundaries of the state of Indiana, as fixed by the enabling act of congress, approved April 19, 1816, and as agreed to by an ordinance passed by the constitutional convention, at Corydon, June 29, 1816, are as follows: On the east, "the meridian line which forms the western boundary of the state of Ohio;" on the south, "the river Ohio, from the mouth of the great Miami river to the mouth of the river Wabash;" on the west, "a line drawn along the middle of the Wabash, from its mouth to a point where a due north line drawn from the town of Vincennes would last touch the northwestern shore of the said river; and from thence, by a due north line, until the same shall intersect an east and west line drawn through a point ten miles north of the southern extreme of Lake Michigan;" and on the north, "the said east and west line, until the same shall intersect the first mentioned meridian line, which forms the western boundary of the state of Ohio." It was provided in the enabling act of congress that if the constitutional convention of Indiana should fail to ratify these boundaries, then the boundaries of the state should be as fixed in the ordinance of 1787.

It would seem that the boundaries as fixed by the enabling act of congress, and as agreed to by the constitutional convention of the state, were so definite that no dispute could arise concerning them; yet each of the bound-

aries, except that between Indiana and Illinois has been the subject of contention. The western boundary is exactly that fixed in the ordinance of 1787; and also that fixed by the act of congress, approved February 3, 1809, setting off the territory of Illinois from that of Indiana; except that the ordinance of 1787 fixes simply the "Wabash river," from its mouth to Vincennes, as part of the boundary; and the act setting off Illinois territory defines that territory to be "all that part of the Indiana territory which lies west of the Wabash river," and the direct line north from Vincennes. The wording of the ordinance of 1787, "the Wabash river," would doubtless be interpreted to mean the middle line of that river; and the line is so defined in the enabling act providing for the admission of Indiana as a state. In the act setting off the territory of Illinois, however, it might be contended that as Illinois "lies west of the Wabash river," the boundary must be the west margin of that river. No such contention has ever been made by the state of Indiana. Yet such a conclusion has been reached as to the southern boundary of the state. The enabling act provided, as we have seen, that the state should be bounded on the south "by the river Ohio;" and this would seem to mean the middle line of the river. The ordinance of 1787 also provided that "the middle state," that is, Indiana, should be bounded on the south "by the Ohio." The plain interpretation here also would seem to be that the middle line, or thread of the stream, should form the southern boundary of the state. But the words have not been so interpreted. In the act of cession by the legislature of Virginia, passed December 20, 1783, and in the deed of cession, made March 1, 1784, the territory ceded to the United States is described as "being to the northwest of the river Ohio." The territory on both sides of the Ohio, and the river itself, were at the time a part of Virginia; and the contention was early made by Kentucky, as succeeding to the rights of Virginia, that no part of the river was in-

cluded in the northwest territory, and consequently that no part of it could pass by the deed of cession. The ordinance of 1787 itself was "for the government of the territory of the United States northwest of the river Ohio." The claim of Kentucky has been sustained by the courts; and the southern boundary of Indiana is the low water mark on the northwest bank of the Ohio river, as the same existed when the boundary was fixed. As the river has since receded to the south in some places, we have the anomaly that parts of the state of Kentucky are at present located on the Indiana side of the river.

The rights of Indiana, however, as to the use and navigation of the Ohio, and also as to civil and criminal jurisdiction on the river, have been made secure. By section seven of an act concerning the erection of the district of Kentucky into an independent state, passed by the commonwealth of Virginia, December 18, 1789, it was provided, "that the use and navigation of the river Ohio, so far as the territory of the proposed state of [Kentucky], or the territory which shall remain within the limits of this commonwealth lies therein, shall be free and common to the citizens of the United States; and the respective jurisdictions of this commonwealth, and of the proposed state, on the river as aforesaid, shall be concurrent only with the states which may possess the opposite shores of the said river."^a The framers of the constitution of 1816 seemed satisfied simply to declare the boundaries of the state; but the framers of the constitution of 1851, while repeating this declaration, took pains to add, in accordance with the act of the commonwealth of Virginia, that "the state of Indiana shall possess jurisdiction and sovereignty co-extensive with the boundaries declared in the preceding section; and shall have concurrent jurisdiction, in civil and criminal cases, with the state of Kentucky, on the Ohio river, and with the state of Illinois, on the Wabash river, so far as said rivers form the common bound-

ary between this state and said states respectively."^a

The enabling act defines the eastern boundary of Indiana to be "the meridian line which forms the western boundary of the state of Ohio." The ordinance of 1787 provided that "the eastern state," that is, Ohio, should be bounded on the west by "a direct line drawn due north from the mouth of the Great Miami" to the British possessions. In the enabling act of congress for the admission of Ohio, approved April 30, 1802, the same western boundary was fixed for that state. But in the act approved May 7, 1800, separating Indiana from the northwestern territory, the eastern boundary of Indiana, as we have already seen, was declared to be "the line beginning at the Ohio, opposite to the mouth of Kentucky river, and running thence to Fort Recovery, and thence north, until it shall intersect the territorial line between the United States and Canada." Yet, in the same act, it was also provided, "That whenever that part of the territory of the United States which lies to the eastward of a line beginning at the mouth of the Great Miami river, running thence due north to the territorial line between the United States and Canada, shall be erected into an independent state, and admitted into the Union on an equal footing with the original states, thenceforth said line shall become and remain permanently the boundary line between such state and the Indiana territory; anything in this act contained to the contrary notwithstanding." As Ohio was admitted with the Great Miami meridian as her western boundary, it would seem that she could have no claim to this irregular line by way of Fort Recovery; and, indeed, such imaginary claim, as a practical question, has long since been relinquished. Indiana has never stood out for the three mile strip west of Fort Recovery, now a part of the state of

a. See Sec. 17, Art. XI, constitution of 1816; Secs. 1 and 2, Art. XIV, constitution of 1851; *Welsh v. State*, 126 Ind. 71; 5 Wheaton (U. S.) 374; and 163 U. S. 520.

Ohio; and Ohio has abandoned any fancied claim to the wedge-shaped territory south of Fort Recovery, now a part of the state of Indiana. The old Indian boundary line, described in the treaty of Greenville, and extending southwesterly from Fort Recovery to a point on the Ohio opposite the mouth of the Kentucky river, is, however, yet found on many Indiana maps, as a historic reminder of the contention once entertained between the two states.

But it was as to the northern boundary of the state that there was chief contention. The ordinance of 1787, after providing for the boundaries of the minimum number of three states into which the northwest territory should be divided, provided further that, if deemed expedient, congress should have authority "to form one or two states in that part of said territory which lies north of an east and west line drawn through the southerly bend or extreme of Lake Michigan." The enabling act, however, provided that the northern boundary of Indiana should be "an east and west line drawn through a point ten miles north of the southern extreme of Lake Michigan." The state of Indiana, therefore, extends ten miles north of the line provided in the ordinance of 1787 as the boundary between Ohio, Indiana and Illinois, on the south, and Michigan and Wisconsin on the north. This east and west line through the southern bend of Lake Michigan is sometimes called the ordinance boundary line and sometimes the old Michigan or Indiana boundary line. In St. Joseph county this old ordinance line runs through the townships of Penn, Center, Greene, Warren and Olive; leaving Osceola, Mishawaka, South Bend, New Carlisle, and the larger part of the county in what would have been the state of Michigan, according to the ordinance of 1787. The ordinance boundary line is often referred to in the old records. As late as the May term, 1835, of the board of county commissioners of St. Joseph county, viewers were appointed "to view and lay out a road

leading from the Michigan road east as near as practicable on the old Indiana boundary line, between sections thirty-five, township thirty-seven, range two east, and section two, township thirty-six east, to the county line of Elkhart." On the first day of the September term, being September 7, 1835, the viewers reported that they had laid out the road, "Begining at the Michigan road, at the intersection of the Indiana old boundary line; running thence east on and as near on the said old boundary line as practicable, to the county line of Elkhart county." This report was approved and the road located and ordered opened to the width of forty feet.

The people of Michigan contended earnestly for the ordinance boundary line, claiming that any other boundary would be illegal and unconstitutional, for the reason that the provisions of the ordinance of 1787 in this regard were irrevocable, as defining the boundaries of the five states to be created out of the northwest territory. It appears that when the ordinance of 1787 was passed the true latitude of the southern extremes of Lake Michigan and Lake Erie was not known. At any rate, the people of Ohio at that time seem to have been of the opinion that an east and west line through the southern bend of Lake Michigan would strike Lake Erie north of Maumee bay. As if to force such an interpretation of the ordinance, a line was actually surveyed from the southerly bend of Lake Michigan to the northerly cape of Maumee bay. The order for this survey was made by act of congress; and the intention of congress was to mark the old ordinance boundary. The survey was, however, made under direction of the Ohio surveyor general, and he had the survey made according to the views of the Ohio authorities. This line is called the Ohio line, and also the "Harris line," from the name of the surveyor. In the final settlement of the dispute, Ohio succeeded in making, or retaining, the Harris line as the northern boundary

of that state. Michigan was reluctantly persuaded to receive in exchange for the territory taken from her the upper peninsula of that state; and a most valuable exchange it has turned out to be. The Harris line was never accepted as the northern boundary of Indiana; neither did this state accept the ordinance boundary, but took an independent, or perhaps, we might say, an arbitrary, position, insisting upon a ten mile strip north of the ordinance line, and giving as a reason for such insistence that otherwise she would be cut off from the navigation of Lake Michigan and the other great lakes. The Harris, or Ohio, line would not satisfy Indiana any better than the ordinance line; for both would prevent her from having a harbor on the great lakes. Michigan did not at first make a very strong contention against Indiana's claim.^a There were then no settlements in northern Indiana or southwestern Michigan; whereas the territory in dispute between Ohio and Michigan included the town of Toledo and a rapidly growing district in the vicinity. The northern boundary of Indiana is an east and west line, but the northern boundary of Ohio, the Harris line, runs a little north of east, beginning on the east line of Indiana, at a point about four miles and a half south of the northern boundary of Indiana and running east by north to include the city of Toledo and Maumee bay. Neither did the ordinance line mark the boundary between Illinois and Wisconsin. Had it done so, Chicago would have been in Wisconsin, as it was at one time supposed to be. The northern boundary provided for in the ordinance of 1787, "an east and west line drawn through the southerly bend or extreme of Lake Michigan," has therefore been wholly obliterated. For a very full and interesting treatment of the subject of our northern boundary line, see

chapter sixth of Daniel's History of Laporte County, Indiana.^a

Sec. 5.—THE NAME OF THE STATE.—The name of our state, "Indiana," does not appear in our history until the passage of the act of congress, approved May 7, 1800, providing that all the northwest territory, west of a line through Fort Recovery, should "constitute a separate territory, and be called Indiana Territory." The name thus given is very dear to the people of this state, not only from the beauty of the word itself, but even more from its association with our history, as a territory and as a state, now for over a hundred years. Indiana territory included at first not only the territory now forming our state, but also a part of that of Ohio and Michigan, all of Illinois and Wisconsin, and even part of Minnesota. As the successive territories were set off, however, and the territories themselves were erected into states, the beloved name remained with us. Other names were found for our sister commonwealths: Ohio, Illinois, Michigan, Wisconsin and Minnesota; all indeed beautiful, with their melodious French and Indian suggestions, but none of them comparable to our own Indiana.

There has been comparatively little discussion as to the origin of the name. It would seem indeed that the origin should be evident. When the territorial government was set up in the year 1800, the country was almost wholly occupied by the Indians. So far as occupancy was concerned, it was the Indian land. In ancient and modern times, in Europe as well as America, the suffix *a*, when added to a word, has been understood to mean land, country or place. Greece was known as *Grecia*; Italy, as *Italia*; Germany, as *Germania*. So we have Russia, Prussia, Austria, Australia, Pennsylvania, Virginia, Louisiana and many others. Indiana means nothing therefore but Indian land or Indian country.

a. For a controversy that arose later in Michigan, see *Northwestern Pioneer*, published at South Bend, May 2 and June 6, 1832.

a. Daniels' Hist. La Porte County, Indiana, pp. 44-62. The Lewis Publishing Company, Chicago.

It appears, however, that our state was not the first to bear the pleasant sounding name. In an interesting paper read before the Wayne County Historical Society, Mr. Cyrus W. Hodgin tells the story of an older Indiana.^a

At the close of the French and Indian war, in 1763, says Mr. Hodgin, a Philadelphia trading company was formed to engage in the fur trade on the Ohio. The company sent its agents into the Ohio valley with large quantities of goods to exchange for furs and other products which the Indians were accustomed to bring to the trading posts. In the fall of that year, certain bands of Indians who were tributary to the Iroquois confederacy, attacked the agents of the Philadelphia company at a point a little below the site of the present city of Wheeling, and seized upon the goods of the company, which they appropriated to their own use. In compensation for this loss, the Iroquois transferred to the company a tract of nearly five thousand square miles of land lying south of the Ohio and east of the Great Kanawha,—a tract equal in extent to the state of Connecticut. To this princely domain the company gave the name of Indiana,—Indian land. In 1776 the tract was conveyed to a new company, known as the Indiana Land Company. Virginia, however, refused to acknowledge the Indian title held by the company. A resort to the courts was equally unavailing. The eleventh amendment to the constitution of the United States, denying to citizens of one state the right to bring any action or suit against another sovereign state of the Union, was declared adopted, by proclamation of the president, issued January 8, 1798; and so the long contested case was stricken from the docket of the supreme court of the United States. The Indiana Land Company having lost its claim, the company itself passed out of existence; and the name "Indiana" was but a memory, until, in 1800,

^a. The Naming of Indiana, by Cyrus W. Hodgin, Richmond, Ind., 1903.

it was bestowed upon this commonwealth, now the great central state of the Union. It is not at all probable that the naming of our state had any connection with the name of the eastern Indiana. Accidentally the name is the same; but in each case, undoubtedly, the name given had direct reference to the Indians who occupied the country.

Sec. 6.—THE TITLE OF HOOSIER.—But we have another name, a loving, pet name, the "Hoosier State." While comparatively little has been said or written as to the origin of the name "Indiana," very much has been said and written as to the origin of this good-natured name, "Hoosier."

In the paper already referred to, "The Naming of Indiana," Mr. Hodgin has brought together various anecdotes and suggestions that have been advanced in explanation of the origin of the name. Since about the year 1830, he says, Indiana has been familiarly known as the Hoosier State, and the inhabitants have been called Hoosiers. A number of explanations of the origin of the term have been given. Meredith Nicholson, in his admirable little volume, "The Hoosiers," has collected these explanations. They are as follows:

1. An Irishman employed in excavating the canal around the falls at Louisville declared, after a fight in which he had vanquished several fellow workmen, that he was a "husher." This was given by Berry R. Sulgrove as a possible origin of the word.

2. Bartlett, in his "Dictionary of Americanisms," says that the men of superior strength, the heroes of log-rollings and house-raising, were called "hushers" because of their ability to hush or quiet their antagonists; and that "husher" was a common term for a bully. The Ohio river boatmen carried the word to New Orleans, where a foreigner among them, in attempting to apply the word to himself, pronounced it "hoosier."

3. A Louisville baker, named Hoosier, made a variety of sweet bread which was

so much enjoyed by Indiana people that they were called "Hoosier's customers," "Hoosier's men," "Hoosier's people," etc. The Rev. T. A. Goodwin says he first heard the word at Cincinnati, in 1830, where it was used to describe a species of gingerbread, but without reference to Indiana.

4. The Rev. Aaron Wood, a pioneer Methodist minister, says the word is a corruption of Hussar; the corruption originating as follows: When the young men of the Indiana side of the Ohio crossed over to Louisville, the Kentuckians made sport of them, calling them "New Purchase greenies," and boasted of their own superiority. Fighting grew out of these boasts, and an Indianian who had a great admiration for the prowess of the soldiers called Hussars, after whipping one of the Kentuckians, bent over him and cried, "I'm a Hoosier," meaning "I'm a Hussar."

5. But, concludes Mr. Hodgin, the most probable explanation is that the word is a corruption of "Who's here?" In my childhood, in the backwoods of Randolph county, I often heard the response, "Who's here?" to the rap at the door late at night, after the latch string had been drawn in. The word "here," however, was pronounced as if, in speaking the word "her," the sound of y were inserted between the h and e, making it "hyer." "Who's hyer," or "Who's yer," as it was generally abridged, was a common response to the rap of the visitor late at night; and "Who's yer" easily took the form of "Hoosier."

Some of the foregoing explanations seem fanciful. From the meaning which has always been attached to the name Hoosier, we are inclined to the opinion that it may more likely be derived from "husher," meaning a strong, resolute fellow who could "hush" a boasting antagonist in short order; or, perhaps, from "Hussar," a daring soldier. It may be that both words contributed to give form and meaning to the term. But see "Hoozer" in Mr. Dunn's paper, following;

we are inclined to agree with Mr. Dunn's conclusions.

In the number of the Northwestern Pioneer and St. Joseph's Intelligencer, published at South Bend, under date of April 4, 1832, we find a humorous paragraph showing that the word hoosier was used at that early date to refer to great size and strength, and, as such, was applied to the big sturgeons of Lake Michigan, then our regular spring-time visitors. The paragraph reads:

"A REAL HOOSIER.—A sturgeon, who no doubt left Lake Michigan on a trip of pleasure, and with a view of spending a few days in the pure waters of the St. Joseph, had his joyous anticipations unexpectedly marred by running foul of a fisherman's spear, near this place. Being brought on terra firma and cast into a balance, he was found to weigh eighty-three pounds." It will be noticed that the word hoosier, in this paragraph, has no reference to an Indianian, as such; "a real hoosier," as here used, simply means a strong, husky fellow.

As applied to the human being, the word seems to have originally conveyed the ideas of vigorous manhood, hearty good feeling, shrewdness and good common sense. A Hoosier was a man to be depended upon, but not to be trifled with. He was one who could do things and was not afraid or ashamed to do them, in manly fashion. The word has grown somewhat refined in meaning with the advancement of the state; but it still signifies a person of manly bearing, shrewdness, ability and kindness. Such are the men who have made Indiana great. It is a noble word, as now used; and every genuine Indianian is proud to be known as a Hoosier.

The suggestion has also been made that the good word may have come to us from the French "huissier," meaning "usher"; that is, one appointed to seat people attending a public meeting and to aid in maintaining order. On such occasions the ushers are sometimes disposed to display unnecessary authority, and so themselves cause more disturb-

ance than the very audience they are supposed to watch over. In a little French classic published in the early part of the seventeenth century, such over-officious ushers are referred to, the author saying: The ushers (*les huissiers*) make more noise than those they are appointed to keep quiet.^a The word "huissier," judging by the spelling, might by one not acquainted with French, be pronounced almost the same as "hoosier," and we can fancy in a backwoods meeting at an early day hearing the good natured ushers reproved by some one who remembered the passage in the little French book, and who knew how to read French better than he did how to pronounce the words.

The following paper recently prepared by Mr. Jacob Piatt Dunn, secretary of the Indiana Historical Society, and published in the transactions of that society, is the most complete review of this interesting topic. We give the paper substantially as written by Mr. Dunn.

The discussion is admirable and most satisfactory, and we believe the distinguished author has actually found the original of our Hoosier in the Cumberland "hoozer":

During the period of about three-quarters of a century in which the state of Indiana and its people have been designated by the word "Hoosier," there has been a large amount of discussion of the origin and meaning of the term, but with a notable lack of any satisfactory result. Some of these discussions have been almost wholly conjectural in character, but others have been more methodical, and of the latter the latest and most exhaustive—that of Mr. Meredith Nicholson^b—sums up the results in the statement "The origin of the term 'Hoosier' is not known with certainty." Indeed the statement might properly have been made much broader, for a consideration of the various theories offered leaves the unprejudiced investigator with the feeling that the real solution of the problem has not even been suggested. This lack of satisfactory conclusions, however, may be of

some value, for it strongly suggests the probability that the various theorists have made some false assumption of fact, and have thus been thrown on a false scent, at the very beginning of their investigations.

As is natural in such a case, there has been much of assertion of what was merely conjectural, often accompanied by the pioneer's effort to make evidence of his theory by the statement that he was "in Indiana at the time and knows the facts." The acceptance of all such testimony would necessarily lead to the adoption of several conflicting conclusions. In addition to this cause of error, there have crept into the discussion several misstatements of fact that have been commonly adopted, and it is evident that in order to reach any reliable conclusion now, it will be necessary to examine the facts critically and ascertain what are tenable.

The traditional belief in Indiana is that the word was first put in print by John Finley, in his poem "The Hoosier's Nest," and this is noted by Berry Sulgrove, who was certainly as well acquainted with Indiana tradition as any man of his time.^c This belief is at least probably well founded, for up to the present time no prior use of the word in print has been discovered. This poem attracted much attention at the time, and was unquestionably the chief cause of the widespread adoption of the word in its application to Indiana, for which reasons it becomes a natural starting-point in the inquiry.

It is stated by Oliver H. Smith that this poem originally appeared as a New Year's "carriers' address" of the Indianapolis Journal in 1830,^b and this statement has commonly been followed by other writers, but this is clearly erroneous, as any one may see by inspection of the files of the Journal, for it printed its address in the body of the paper in 1830, and it is a totally different production. After that year it discontinued this practice and issued its addresses on separate sheets, as is commonly done at present. No printed copy of the original publication is in existence, so far as known, but Mr. Finley's daughter—Mrs. Sarah Wrigley, former librarian of the Morrison Library, at Richmond, Indiana—has a manuscript copy,

a. "Les huissiers font plus de bruit que ceux qu' ils veulent faire taire." Philothea, St. Francis de Sales, Part III., Chapter VIII.

b. "The Hoosiers," pp. 20-30.

a. History of Indianapolis and Marion County, p. 72.

b. "Early Indiana Trials and Sketches," p. 211.

in the author's handwriting, which fixes the date of publication as Jan. 1, 1833. There is no reason to question this date, although Mr. Finley states in his little volume of poems printed in 1860, that this poem was written in 1830. The poem as it originally appeared was never reprinted in full, so far as is known, and in that form it is entirely unknown to the present generation, although it has been reproduced in several forms, and in two of them by direct authority of the author.^a The author used his privilege of revising his work, and while he may have improved his poetry, he seriously marred its historical value.

As the manuscript copy is presumably a literal transcript of the original publication, with possibly the exception that the title may have been added at a later date, I reproduce it here in full:

ADDRESS

OF THE CARRIER OF THE INDIANAPOLIS
JOURNAL,

January 1, 1833.

THE HOOSIER'S NEST.

Compelled to seek the Muse's aid,
Your carrier feels almost dismay'd
When he attempts in nothing less
Than verse his patrons to address,
Aware how very few excel
In the fair art he loves so well,
And that the wight who would pursue it
Must give his whole attention to it;
But, ever as his mind delights
To follow fancy's airy flights
Some object of terrestrial mien
Uncourteously obtrudes between
And rudely scatters to the winds
The tangled threads of thought he spins;
His wayward, wild imagination
Seeks objects of its own creation
Where Joy and Pleasure, hand in hand,
Escort him over "Fairylond,"
Till some imperious earth-born care
Will give the order, "As you were!"
From this the captious may infer
That I am but a groveling cur
Who would essay to pass for more
Than other people take me for,
So, lest my friends be led to doubt it,
I think I'll say no more about it,
But hope that on this noted day
My annual tribute of a lay
In dogg'rel numbers will suffice
For such as are not over nice.

a. Coggeshall's "The Poets and Poetry of the West," and Finley's "The Hoosier's Nest and Other Poems" published in 1860.

The great events which have occur'd
(And all have seen, or read or heard)
Within a year, are quite too many
For me to tarry long on any—
Then let not retrospection roam
But be confined to things at home.
A four years' wordy war just o'er
Has left us where we were before
Old Hick'ry triumphs,—we submit
(Although we thought another fit)
For all of Jeffersonian school
Wish the majority to rule—
Elected for another term
We hope his measures will be firm
But peaceful, as the case requires
To nullify the nullifiers—
And if executive constructions
By inference prove the sage deductions
That Uncle Sam's "old Mother Bank"
Is managed by a foreign crank
And constituted by adoption
The "heir apparent" of corruption—
No matter if the facts will show
That such assertions are not so,
His Veto vengeance must pursue her
And all that are appended to her—
But tho' hard times may sorely press us,
And want, and debts, and duns distress us,
We'll share a part of Mammon's manna
By chart'ring Banks in Indiana.

Blest Indiana! In whose soil
Men seek the sure rewards of toil,
And honest poverty and worth
Find here the best retreat on earth,
While hosts of Preachers, Doctors, Lawyers,
All independent as wood-sawyers,
With men of every hue and fashion,
Flock to this rising "Hoosher" nation.
Men who can legislate or plow,
Wage politics or milk a cow—
So plastic are their various parts,
Within the circle of their arts,
With equal tact the "Hoosher" looms,
Hunt offices or hunt raccoons.
A captain, colonel, or a 'squire,
Who would ascend a little higher,
Must court the people, honest souls,
He bows, caresses and cajoles,
Till they conceive he has more merit
Than nature willed he should inherit,
And, running counter to his nature,
He runs into the Legislature;
Where if he pass for wise and mute,
Or chance to steer the proper chute,
In half a dozen years or more
He's qualified for Congress floor.

I would not have the world suppose
Our public men are all like those,
For even in this infant State
Some may be wise, and good, and great.
But, having gone so far, 'twould seem
(Since "Hoosher" manners is the theme)
That I, lest strangers take exception,
Should give a more minute description,
And if my strains be not seraphic
I trust you'll find them somewhat graphic.

Suppose in riding somewhere West
 A stranger found a "Hoosher's" nest,
 In other words, a buckeye cabin
 Just big enough to hold Queen Mab in,
 Its situation low but airy
 Was on the borders of a prairie,
 And fearing he might be benighted
 He hailed the house and then alighted.
 The "Hoosher" met him at the door,
 Their salutations soon were o'er;
 He took the stranger's horse aside
 And to a sturdy sapling tied;
 Then, having stripped the saddle off,
 He fed him in a sugar trough.
 The stranger stooped to enter in,
 The entrance closing with a pin,
 And manifested strong desire
 To seat him by the log heap fire,
 Where half a dozen Hoosheroons,
 With mush and milk, tincups and spoons,
 White heads, bare feet and dirty faces,
 Seemed much inclined to keep their places,
 But Madam, anxious to display
 Her rough and undisputed sway,
 Her offspring to the ladder led
 And cuffed the youngsters up to bed.
 Invited shortly to partake
 Of venison, milk and johnny-cake
 The stranger made a hearty meal
 And glances round the room would steal;
 One side was lined with skins of "varments"
 The other spread with divers garments,
 Dried pumpkins overhead were strung
 Where venison hams in plenty hung,
 Two rifles placed above the door,
 Three dogs lay stretched upon the floor,
 In short, the domicile was rife,
 With specimens of "Hoosher" life.

The host who centered his affections
 On game and range, and quarter sections
 Discoursed his weary guest for hours,
 Till Somnus' ever potent powers
 Of sublunary cares bereft them
 And then I came away and left them.
 No matter how the story ended
 The application I intended
 Is from the famous Scottish poet
 Who seemed to feel as well as know it
 "That buirdly chiels and clever hizzies
 Are bred in sic a way as this is."
 One more subject I'll barely mention
 To which I ask your kind attention
 My pockets are so shrunk of late
 I can not nibble "Hoosher bait."

It will be noted that throughout the manuscript the word is spelled "Hoosher" and is always put in quotation marks. Mrs. Wrigley informs me that her father had no knowledge of the origin of the word, but found it in verbal use when he wrote. She is confident, however, that he coined the word "hoosheroon," and the probability of this is increased by the fact that he did not quote it in his manuscript. In later editions of the poem he used the form "Hoosier." His

original spelling shows that the word was not common in print, and several years passed before the spelling became fixed in its present form.

Although the word "Hoosier" has not been found in print earlier than January 1, 1833, it became common enough immediately afterwards.^a In fact the term seems to have met general approval, and to have been accepted by everybody. On January 8, 1833, at the Jackson dinner at Indianapolis, John W. Davis gave the toast, "The Hoosier State of Indiana."^b On August 3, 1833, the Indiana Democrat published the following prospectus of a new paper to be established by ex-Gov. Ray and partner:

Prospectus for Publishing THE HOOSIER

At Greencastle, Indiana

By J. B. RAY & W. M. TANNEHILL.

"We intend publishing a real *Newspaper*. To this promise (though comprehensive enough) we would add, that it is intended to make the *moral* and political world contribute their full share, in enriching its columns.

"The arts and sciences, and agriculture and commerce, and literature shall all receive a due portion of our care.

"Left to our choice we might refrain from remark on presidential matters; but supposing, that you may require an intimation, suffice it to say, that our past preference has been for General Jackson and his administration; and we deem it premature to decide as to the future without knowing who are to be the candidates. Those men who shall sustain *Western measures*, shall be our men. Believing that there is but *one* interest in the *West*, and but little occasion for partyism beyond the investigation of principles and the conduct of functionaries, we would rather encourage *union* than excite *division*. We shall constantly keep in view the happiness, interest and prosperity of *all*. To the *good*, this paper will be as a shield; to the *bad*, a terror.

"The Hoosier will be published weekly, at \$2 in advance and 25 cents for every three

a. For modification of this statement see extract from the N. W. Pioneer of April 4, 1832, printed, *supra*, in this subdivision.

b. Indiana Democrat, Jan. 12, 1833.

months delay of payment, per annum, on a good sheet of paper of superroyal size, to be enlarged to an imperial as the subscription will justify it.

"This paper shall do honor to the people of Putnam county; and we expect to see them patronize us. The press is now at Greencastle. Let subscription papers be returned by the 1st of Sept. when the first number will appear."

On Oct. 26, 1833, the Indiana Democrat republished from the Cincinnati Republican a discussion of the origin and making of the word "Hoosier," which will be quoted in full hereafter, which shows that the term had then obtained general adoption. C. F. Hoffman, a traveler who passed through the northern part of the state, says, under date of Dec. 29, 1833:

"I am now in the land of the Hooshiers, and find that long-haired race much more civilized than some of their Western neighbors are willing to represent them. The term 'Hooshier,' like that of Yankee, or Buckeye, first applied contemptuously, has now become a *soubriquet* that bears nothing invidious with it to the ear of an Indianian."^a

On Jan. 4, 1834, the Indiana Democrat quoted from the Maysville, Ky., Monitor, "The *Hoosier* State like true democrats have taken the lead in appointing delegates to a National Convention, etc." On May 10, 1834, the Indianapolis Journal printed the following editorial paragraph:

"The Hooshier, started some time ago by Messrs. Ray and Tannehill, at Greencastle, has sunk into repose; and a new paper entitled the 'Greencastle Advertiser,' published by James M. Grooms, has taken its place."

It is quite possible that this statement was made with the mischievous intent of stirring up Gov. Ray, for he was rather sensitive, and the Whigs seemed to delight in starting stories that called forth indignant denials from him. If this was the purpose it was successful, for on May 31 the Journal said:

"We understand that another No. of the Hooshier has been recently received in town, and that it contains quite a bitter complaint about our remark a week or two ago, that it had 'sunk into repose.' We assure the Editor that we made the remark as a mere matter of news, without any intention to rejoice at the suspension of the paper. Several weeks had passed over without any paper

being received, and it was currently reported that it had 'blowed out' and therefore, as a mere passing remark, we stated that it had 'sunk into repose.' We have no objection that it should live a thousand years."

The new paper, however, did not last as long as that. It was sold in the fall of 1834 to J. W. Osborn who continued the publication, but changed the name, in the following spring, to the "Western Plough Boy." On Sept. 19, 1834, the Indiana Democrat had the following reference to Mr. Finley:

"The poet *laureate* of Hoosierland and editor of the Richmond Palladium has threatened to 'cut acquaintance with B. of the Democrat!'" The gentleman alluded to is the same individual that was unceremoniously robbed, by the Cincinnati Chronicle, of the credit of immortalizing our State in verse, by that justly celebrated epic of the 'Hoosier's Nest.'"

On Nov. 29, 1834, the Vincennes Sun used the caption, "Hoosier and Mammoth Pumpkins," over an article reprinted from the Cincinnati Mirror concerning a load of big pumpkins from Indiana.

These extracts sufficiently demonstrate the general acceptance of the name in the two years following the publication of Finley's poem. The diversified spelling of the word at this period shows that it was new in print, and indeed some years elapsed before the now accepted spelling became universal. On Jan. 6, 1838, the Ft. Wayne Sentinel republished the portion of the poem beginning with the words, "Blest Indiana, in her soil." It was very probable that this publication was made directly from an original copy of the carrier's address, for Thomas Tigar, one of the founders and editors of the Ft. Wayne Sentinel, had been connected with the Indianapolis Press in January, 1833, and the old-fashioned newspaperman was accustomed to preserve articles that struck his fancy, and reproduce them. In this publication the poem is given as in the Finley manuscript, except that the first two times the word occurs it is spelled "hoosier" and once afterward "hoosheer," the latter evidently a typographical error. At the other points it is spelled "hoosher." This original form of the word also indicates that there had been some change in the pronunciation, and this is confirmed from another source. For many years there had been periodical discussions of the origin of the word in the newspapers of

a. "A Winter in the West," p. 226.

the State, and in one of these, which occurred in the Indianapolis Journal, in 1860, when numerous contemporaries of Finley were still living, Hon. Jere Smith, a prominent citizen of Winchester, made this statement:

"My recollection is that the word began to be used in this country in the fall of 1824, but it might have been as late as 1826 or 1827, when the Louisville & Portland canal was being made. I first heard it at a corn-husking. It was used in the sense of 'rip-roaring,' 'half horse' and 'half alligator,' and such like backwoods coinages. It was then, and for some years afterwards, spoken as if spelled 'husher,' the 'u' having the sound it has in 'bush,' 'push,' etc. In 1829, 1830 and 1831 its sound glided into 'hoosher,' till finally Mr. Finley's 'Hoosier's Nest' made the present orthography and pronunciation classical, and it has remained so since."^a

Of course, this is not conclusive evidence that there was a change in pronunciation, for Mr. Smith's observation may have extended to one neighborhood only, and it may have taken on a variant pronunciation at the start, but his testimony, in connection with the changed spelling, is certainly very plausible.

There have been offered a number of explanations of the origin of the word, and naturally those most commonly heard are those that have been most extensively presented in print. Of the "authorities" on the subject perhaps the best known is Bartlett's "Dictionary of Americanisms" which was originally published in 1838 and was widely circulated in that and the subsequent edition, besides being frequently quoted. Its statement is as follows:

"Hoosier. A nickname given at the West, to natives of Indiana.

"A correspondent of the Providence Journal, writing from Indiana, gives the following account of the origin of this term: 'Throughout all the early Western settlements were men who rejoiced in their physical strength, and on numerous occasions, at log-rollings and house-raising, demonstrated this to their entire satisfaction. They were styled by their fellow-citizens, hushers, from their primary capacity to still their opponents. It was a common term for a bully throughout the West. The boatmen of Indiana were formerly as rude and primitive

a set as could well belong to a civilized country, and they were often in the habit of displaying their pugilistic accomplishments upon the levee at New Orleans. Upon a certain occasion there one of these rustic professors of the "noble art" very adroitly and successfully practiced the "fancy" upon several individuals at one time. Being himself not a native of the Western world, in the exuberance of his exultation he sprang up, exclaiming, in a foreign accent, "I'm a hoosier, I'm a hoosier." Some of the New Orleans papers reported the case, and afterwards transferred the corruption of the word "husher" (hoosier) to all the boatmen from Indiana, and from thence to all her citizens. The Kentuckians, on the contrary, maintained that the nickname expresses the gruff exclamation of their neighbors, when one knocks at a door, etc., "Who's yere?" "

Both of these theories have had adherents, and especially the latter, though nobody has ever found any basis for their historical features beyond the assertion of this newspaper correspondent. Nobody has ever produced any evidence of the use of the word "husher" as here indicated. It is not found in any dictionary of any kind—not even in Bartlett's. I have never found any indication of its former use or its present survival. And there is no greater evidence of the use of the expression, "Who's yere?" when approaching a house. As a matter of fact, the common custom when coming to a house and desiring communication with the residents was to call, "Hallo the house!" And this custom is referred to in Finley's line:

"He hailed the house, and then alighted."

Furthermore, if a person who came to a house called "Who's yere?" what cause would there be for calling the people who live in the house "who's yeres?" There is neither evidence nor reason to support it. But there is still a stronger reason for discarding these theories, and most others. To produce the change of a word or term by corruption, there must be practical identity of sound and accent. It was natural enough for the Indiana pioneers to convert "au poste" into "Opost." It was natural enough for the New Mexican settlers to change "Jicarilla" to "Hickory." It was natural enough for the Colorado cowboys to transform "Purgatoire river" to "Picket-wire river." But there is scant possibility of changing "husher," or "who's yere"—

^a. Indianapolis Journal, January 20, 1860.

as it would probably be spoken—into “hoosh-er.” This consideration has led to the suggestion that the expression from which the word came was “who is yer?” but there is nothing to support this. The early settlers did not use “is” for “are” but usually pronounced the latter “air.” And they did not say “yer” for “you,” though they often used it for “your.”

Another theory, almost as popular as these, derives the word from “hussar,” and this theory, in its various forms, harks back to a Col. John Jacob Lehmanowsky, who served under Napoleon, and afterwards settled in Indiana, where he became widely known as a lecturer on the Napoleonic wars. The tradition preserved in his family is that once while in Kentucky he became engaged in a dispute with some natives, and sought to settle the matter by announcing that he was a hussar. They understood him to say that he was a “hoosier,” and thereafter applied that name to everybody from Indiana. This theory has several shapes, one being presented by the Rev. Aaron Wood, the pioneer preacher, thus:

“The name ‘hoosier’ originated as follows: When the young men of the Indiana side of the Ohio river went to Louisville, the Kentucky men boasted over them, calling them ‘New Purchase Greenies,’ claiming to be a superior race, composed of half horse, half alligator, and tipped off with snapping turtle. These taunts produced fights in the market house and streets of Louisville. On one occasion a stout bully from Indiana was victor in a fist fight, and having heard Colonel Lehmanowsky lecture on the ‘Wars of Europe,’ who always gave martial prowess to the German Hussars in a fight, pronouncing hussars ‘hoosiers’ the Indianians, when the Kentuckian cried ‘enough,’ jumped up and said: ‘I am a Hoosier,’ and hence the Indianians were called by that name. This was its true origin. I was in the State when it occurred.”^a

Unfortunately, others are equally positive as to their “true origins.” The chief objection that has been urged to this theory is that Lehmanowsky was not in the State when the term began to be used, and the evidence on this point is not very satisfactory. His son, M. L. Lehmanowsky, of DePauw, Ind., informs me that his father came to this country in 1815, but he is unable to fix the

date of his removal to Indiana. Published sketches of his life^a state that he was with Napoleon at Waterloo; that he was afterwards imprisoned at Paris; that he escaped and made his way to New York; that he remained for several years at New York and Philadelphia where he taught school; that he came to Rush county, Indiana, and there married and bought a farm; that after bearing him seven children his wife died; that he then removed to Harrison county, arriving there in 1837. These data would indicate that he came to Indiana sometime before 1830. The date of the deed to his farm, as shown by the Rush county records, is April 30, 1835. Aside from the question of date, it is not credible that a Polish officer pronounced “hussar” “hoosier,” or that from the use of that word by a known foreigner a new term could spring into existence, and so quickly be applied to the natives of the state where he chanced to live.

To these theories of the origin of the word may be added one communicated to me by James Whitcomb Riley, whose acquaintance with dialect makes him an authority on the subject. It is evidently of later origin than the others, and not so well known to the public. A casual conversation happening to turn to this subject, he said: “These stories commonly told about the origin of the word ‘Hoosier’ are all nonsense. The real origin is found in the pugnacious habits of the early settlers. They were very vicious fighters, and not only gouged and scratched, but frequently bit off noses and ears. This was so ordinary an affair that a settler coming into a bar room on a morning after a fight, and seeing an ear on the floor, would merely push it aside with his foot and carelessly ask, ‘Who’s year?’” I feel safe in venturing the opinion that this theory is quite as plausible, and almost as well sustained by historical evidence, as any of the others.

In this connection it is of interest to note the earliest known discussion of the meaning of the word, which has been referred to as republished in the *Indiana Democrat* of Oct. 26, 1833. It is as follows:

“HOOSHIER.

“The appellation of Hooshier has been used in many of the Western States, for

a. Sketches, p. 45.

a. *Salem Democrat*, October 25, 1899; March 28, 1900.

several years, to designate, in a good-natured way, an inhabitant of our sister state of Indiana. Ex-Governor Ray has lately started a newspaper in Indiana, which he names 'The Hoshier' (sic). Many of our ingenious native philologists have attempted, though very unsatisfactorily, to explain this somewhat singular term. Mordecai M. Noah, in the late number of his *Evening Star*, undertakes to account for it upon the faith of a rather apocryphal story of a recruiting officer, who was engaged during the last war, in enlisting a company of HUSSARS, whom by mistake he unfortunately denominated Hooshiers. Another etymologist tells us that when the state of Indiana was being surveyed, the surveyors, on finding the residence of a squatter, would exclaim '*Who's here,*'—that this exclamation, abbreviated to *Hooshier* was, in process of time, applied as a distinctive appellation to the original settlers of that state, and, finally to its inhabitants generally. Neither of these hypotheses is deserving any attention. The word Hooshier is indebted for its existence to that once numerous and unique, but now extinct class of mortals called the Ohio Boatmen.—In its original acceptation it was equivalent to 'Ripstaver,' 'Scrounger,' 'Screamer,' 'Bulger,' 'Ring-tailroarer,' and a hundred others, equally expressive, but which have never attained to such a respectable standing as itself. By some caprice which can never be explained, the appellation Hooshier became confined solely to such boatmen as had their homes upon the Indiana shore, and from them it was gradually applied to all the Indians, who acknowledge it as good naturedly as the appellation of Yankee—Whatever may have been the original acceptation of Hooshier this we know, that the people to whom it is now applied, are amongst the bravest, most intelligent, most enterprising, most magnanimous, and most democratic of the Great West, and should we ever feel disposed to quit the state in which we are now sojourning, our own noble Ohio, it will be to enroll ourselves as adopted citizens in the land of the 'HOOSHIER.'—Cincinnati Republican."

Here is a presentation of the question, ten months after Finley's publication, covering most of the ground that has since been occupied. The "hussar" theory is carried back to the war of 1812, long before Col. Lehmanowsky was in this country. The

"who's here" theory is carried back to the government surveys, although it is certain that there were few, if any, "squatters" on government lands in Indiana before the surveys were made. The "husher" theory, in embryo, is presented in the writer's theory, which is apparently conjectural, except perhaps as evidence that the word was applied to the rather rough-looking class of flat-boatmen who made their trips down the Ohio and Mississippi.

There has been a notable tendency to locate these stories at Louisville, and to connect them with the building of the Louisville and Portland canal which was under construction from 1826 to 1831, inclusive. The "husher" story is located there by several of its advocates. Another story, of recent origin, coming from one Vanblaricum, was recounted by Mr. George Cottman in the Indianapolis Press of February 6, 1901. Vanblaricum claimed that while passing through southern Tennessee he met a man named Hoosier, and this man said that a member of his family had a contract on the construction of the Louisville and Portland canal; that he employed his laborers from the Indiana side, and the neighbors got to calling them "Hoosier's men," from which the name "Hoosier" came to be applied to Indiana men generally. Vanblaricum could not give the address of his informant, or any information tending to confirm the story. At my request Mr. Louis Ludlow, Washington correspondent of the Indianapolis Sentinel, made inquiry of the representatives from the southern districts of Tennessee, and learned that none of them had ever heard of such a story, or knew of the name "Hoosier" in his district. An examination of the directories of Atlanta, Augusta, Baltimore, Chattanooga, Cincinnati, Kansas City, Little Rock, Louisville, Memphis, Nashville, New Orleans, Philadelphia, Richmond, St. Louis, St. Joseph, Savannah, Wheeling, Wilmington, the District of Columbia, and the state of Tennessee, failed to reveal any such name as Hoosier. As it is hardly possible for a family name to disappear completely, we may reasonably drop the Vanblaricum story from consideration. The same conclusion will also apply to the story of a Louisville baker, named Hoosier, from whom the term is sometimes said to have come. It is now known that the occurrence of "Hoosier" as a Christian name in the

minutes of an early Methodist conference in Indiana, was the result of misspelling. The member's name was "Ho-si-er (accent on the second syllable) J. Durbin," and the secretary in writing it put in an extra "o." It may be mentioned in this connection that "Hooser" is a rather common family name in the South, and that "Hoos" is occasionally found.

One of the most interesting wild-goose chases I ever indulged in was occasioned by a passage in the narrative of Francis and Theresa Pulszky, entitled "White, Red and Black." The Pulszkys accompanied Kossuth on his trip through the States and visited Indianapolis in 1852. In the account of this visit Mrs. Pulszky says:

"Governor Wright is a type of the Hoosiers, and justly proud to be one of them. I asked him wherefrom his people had got this name. He told me that 'Hoosa' is the Indian name for maize, the principal produce of the State."

This opened a new vista. The names "Coosa" and "Tallapoosa" came to memory. How simple! The Indiana flat-boatmen taking their loads of corn down the river were called "Hoosa men" by the Southern Indians, and so the name originated. But a search of Indian vocabularies showed no such name for maize or for anything else. The nearest approaches to it are "Hoosae" and "Housatonic," which are both probably corruptions from the same stem, "awass," meaning beyond or further. The latter word is supposed to be the Indian "wassatinak," which is the New England form of the Algonquin "awassadinang," meaning beyond the mountains.

In 1854 Amelia M. Murray visited Indianapolis, and was for a time the guest of Governor Wright. In her book entitled "Letters from the United States, Cuba and Canada" (page 324), she says:

"Madame Pfeiffer (she evidently meant Mrs. Pulszky, for Madame Pfeiffer did not come here and does not mention the subject) mistook Governor Wright, when she gave from his authority another derivation for the word 'Hoosier.' It originated in a settler's exclaiming 'Huzza,' upon gaining the victory over a marauding party from a neighboring State."

With these conflicting statements, I called on Mr. John C. Wright, son of Governor Wright. He remembered the visits of the

Pulszkys and Miss Murray; but knew nothing of Madame Pfeiffer. He said: "I often heard my father discuss this subject. His theory was that the Indiana flatboatmen were athletic and pugnacious, and were accustomed, when on the levees of the Southern cities, to 'jump up and crack their heels together' and shout 'Huzza,' whence the name of 'huzza fellows.' We have the same idea now in 'hoorah people,' or 'a hoorah time.'"

It will be noted that all these theories practically carry three features in common:

1. They are alike in the idea that the word was first applied to a rough, boisterous, uncouth, illiterate class of people, and that the word originally implied this character.

2. They are alike in the idea that the word came from the South, or was first applied by southern people.

3. They are alike in the idea that the word was coined for the purpose of designating Indiana people, and was not in existence before it was applied to them.

If our primary suspicion be correct, that all the investigators and theorists have followed some false lead from the beginning, it will presumably be found in one of these three common features. Of the three, the one that would more probably have been derived from assumption than from observation is the third. If we adopt the hypothesis that it is erroneous, we have left the proposition that the word "hoosier," was in use at the South, signifying a rough or uncouth person, before it was applied to Indiana; and if this were true it would presumably continue to be used there in that sense. Now this condition actually exists, as appears from the following evidence.

In her recent novel, "In Connection with the De Willoughby Claim," Mrs. Frances Hodgson Burnett refers several times to one of her characters—a boy from North Carolina—as a "hoosier." In reply to an inquiry she writes to me:

"The word 'hoosier' in Tennessee and North Carolina seems to imply, as you suggest, an uncouth sort of rustic. In the days when I first heard it my idea was also that—in agreement with you again—it was a slang term. I think a Tennessean or Carolinian of the class given to colloquialisms would have applied the term 'hoosier' to any rustic person without reference to his belonging to any locality in particular. But when

I lived in Tennessee I was very young and did not inquire closely into the matter."

Mrs. C. W. Bean, of Washington, Ind., furnishes me this statement:

"In the year 1888, as a child, I visited Nashville, Tenn. One day I was walking down the street with two of my aunts, and our attention was attracted by a large number of mountaineers on the streets, mostly from northern Georgia, who had come in to some sort of society meeting. One of my aunts said, 'What a lot of hoosiers there are in town.' In surprise I said, 'Why I am a Hoosier.' A horrified look came over my aunt's face and she exclaimed, 'For the Lord's sake, child, don't let any one here know you're a hoosier.' I did not make the claim again for on inspection the visitors proved a wild-looking lot who might be suspected of never having seen civilization before."

Miss Mary E. Johnson, of Nashville, Tenn., gives the following statement:

"I have been familiar with the use of the word 'hoosier' all my life, and always as meaning a rough class of country people. The idea attached to it, as I understand it, is not so much that they are from the country, as that they are green and gawky. I think the sense is much the same as in 'hayseed,' 'jay' or 'yahoo.'"

Hon. Thetus W. Sims, Representative in Congress from the Tenth Tennessee district, says:

"I have heard all my life of the word 'hoosier' as applied to an ignorant, rough, unpolished fellow."

Mrs. Samuel M. Deal (formerly Miss Mary L. Davis of Indianapolis) gives me this statement:

"While visiting in Columbia, S. C., I was walking one day with a young gentleman, and we passed a rough-looking countryman. 'My! what a hoosier,' exclaimed my escort. 'That is a very noble term to apply to such an object,' I said. 'Why so?' he inquired. 'Why I am a Hoosier—all Indiana people are,' I answered. 'Oh! we do not use it in that sense here,' he rejoined. 'With us a hoosier means a jay.'"

The following three statements were furnished to me by Mr. Meredith Nicholson, who collected them some months since:

John Bell Henneman, of the department of English, University of Tennessee, Knoxville, writes:

"The word 'hoosier' is generally used in Virginia, South Carolina, Tennessee as an equivalent for 'a country hoodlum,' 'a rough, uncouth countryman,' etc. The idea of 'country' is always attached to it in my mind, with a degree of 'uncouthness' added. I simply speak from my general understanding of the term as heard used in the States mentioned above."

Mr. Raymond Weeks, of Columbia, Mo., writes:

"Pardon my delay in answering your question concerning the word 'hoosier' in this section. The word means a native of Indiana, and has a rare popular sense of a backwoodsman, a rustic. One hears: 'He is a regular hoosier.'"

Mrs. John M. Judah, of Memphis, writes:

"About the word 'Hoosier'—one hears it in Tennessee often. It always means rough, uncouth, countrified. 'I am a Hoosier,' I have said, and my friends answer bewilderingly, 'But all Indiana-born are Hoosiers,' I declare, 'What nonsense!' is the answer generally, but one old politician responded with a little more intelligence on the subject: 'You Indianians should forget that. It has been untrue for many years.' In one of Mrs. Evans's novels—'St. Elmo,' I think—a noble philanthropic young southern woman is reproached by her haughty father for teaching the poor children in the neighborhood—'a lot of hoosiers,' he calls them. I have seen it in other books, too, but I can not recall them. In newspapers the word is common enough, in the sense I referred to."

It is scarcely possible that this widespread use of the word in this general sense could have resulted if the word had been coined to signify a native of Indiana, but it would have been natural enough, if the word were in common use as slang in the South, to apply it to the people of Indiana. Many of the early settlers were of a rough and ready character, and doubtless most of them looked it in their long and toilsome emigration, but, more than that, it is an historical fact that about the time of the publication of Finley's poem there was a great fad of nicknaming in the West, and especially as to the several States. It was a feature of the humor of the day, and all genial spirits "pushed it along." A good illustration of this is seen in the following passage from Hoffman's "Winter in the West"^a referred to above:

a. Published in 1835, Vol. I, page 210.

"There was a long-haired 'hooshier' from Indiana, a couple of smart-looking 'suckers' from the southern part of Illinois, a keen-eyed, leather-belted 'badger' from the mines of Oniscousin, and a sturdy, yeomanlike fellow, whose white capot, Indian moccasins and red sash proclaimed, while he boasted a three years' residence, the genuine 'wolverine,' or naturalized Michiganian. Could one refuse to drink with such a company? The spokesman was evidently a 'red horse' from Kentucky, and nothing was wanting but a 'buck-eye' from Ohio to render the assemblage as complete as it was select."

This same frontier jocularity furnishes an explanation for the origin of several of the theories of the derivation of the name. If an assuming sort of person, in a crowd accustomed to the use of "hoosier" in its general slang sense, should pretentiously announce that he was a "husher," or a "hussar," nothing would be more characteristically American than for somebody to observe, "He is a hoosier, sure enough." And the victim of the little pleasantry would naturally suppose that the joker had made a mistake in the term. But the significance of the word must have been quite generally understood, for the testimony is uniform that it carried its slurring significance from the start. Still it was not materially more objectionable than the names applied to the people of other States, and it was commonly accepted in the spirit of humor. As Mr. Finley put it, in later forms of his poem:

With feelings proud we contemplate
The rising glory of our State;
Nor take offense by application
Of its good-natured appellation.

It appears that the word was not generally known throughout the State until after the publication of "The Hoosiers' Nest," though it was known earlier in some localities, and these localities were points of contact with the southern people. And this was true as to Mr. Finley's locality, for the upper part of the Whitewater valley was largely settled by Southerners, and from the Tennessee-Carolina mountain region, where the word was especially in use. Such settlements had a certain individuality. In his "Sketches" (page 38) the Rev. Aaron Wood says:

"Previous to 1830 society was not homogeneous, but in scraps, made so by the electric affinity of race, tastes, sects and interest.

There was a wide difference in the domestic habits of the families peculiar to the provincial gossip, dialect and tastes of the older States from which they had emigrated."

The tradition of my own family, which was located in the lower part of the Whitewater valley, is that the word was not heard there until "along in the thirties." In that region it always carried the idea of roughness or uncouthness, and it developed a derivative—"hoosieri"—which was used as an adjective or adverb to indicate something that was rough, awkward or shiftless. Testimony as to a similar condition in the middle part of the Whitewater valley is furnished in the following statement, given me by the Rev. T. A. Goodwin:

"In the summer of 1830 I went with my father, Samuel Goodwin, from our home at Brookville to Cincinnati. We traveled in an old-fashioned one-horse Dearborn wagon. I was a boy of twelve years and it was a great occasion for me. At Cincinnati I had a fip for a treat, and at that time there was nothing I relished so much as one of those big pieces of gingerbread that were served as refreshment on muster days, Fourth of July and other gala occasions, in connection with cider. I went into a baker's shop and asked for 'a fip's worth of gingerbread.' The man said, 'I guess you want hoosier-bait,' and when he produced it I found that he had the right idea. That was the first time I ever heard the word 'hoosier,' but in a few years it became quite commonly applied to Indiana people. The gingerbread referred to was cooked in square pans—about fifteen inches across, I should think—and with furrows marked across the top, dividing it into quarter-sections. A quarter-section sold for a fip, which was 6¼ cents. It is an odd fact that when Hosier J. Durbin joined the Indiana Methodist Conference, in 1835, his name was misspelled 'Hoosier' in the minutes, and was so printed. The word 'Hoosier' always had the sense of roughness or uncouthness in its early use."

At the time this statement was made, neither Mr. Goodwin nor I knew of the existence of the last four lines of Finley's poem, in which this same term "hoosier-bait" occurs, they being omitted in all the ordinary forms of the poem. The derivation of this term is obvious, whether "bait" be taken in its sense of a lure or its sense of food. It was simply something that "hoosiers" were

fond of, and its application was natural at a time when the ideal of happiness was "a country-boy with a hunk of gingerbread."

After the word had been applied to Indiana, and had entered on its double-sense stage, writers who were familiar with both uses distinguished between them by making it a proper noun when Indiana was referred to. An illustration of this is seen in the writings of J. S. Robb, author of "The Swamp Doctor in the Southwest" and other humorous sketches, published in 1843. He refers to Indiana as "the Hoosier state," but in a sketch of an eccentric St. Louis character he writes thus:

"One day, opposite the Planter's House, during a military parade, George was engaged in selling his edition of the Advocate of Truth, when a tall hoosier, who had been gazing at him with astonishment for some time, roared out in an immoderate fit of laughter.

"What do you see so funny in me to laugh at?" inquired George.

"Why, boss," said the hoosier, "I wur jest a thinkin' ef I'd seed you out in the woods, with all that har on, they would a been the d—dest runnin' done by this 'coon ever seen in them diggins—you're ekill to the elephant! and a leetle the haryest small man I've seen scart up lately.'"

Unfortunately, however, not many writers were familiar with the double use of the word, and the distinction has gradually died out, while persistent assertions that the word was coined to designate Indiana people have loaded on them all the odium for the significance that the word has anywhere.

The real problem of the derivation of the word "hoosier," is not a question of the origin of a word formed to designate the state of Indiana and its people, but of the origin of a slang term widely in use in the South, signifying an uncouth rustic. There seems never to have been any attempt at a rational philological derivation, unless we may so account Mr. Charles G. Leland's remarks in *Barriere* and Leland's "Dictionary of Slang, Jargon and Cant," which are as follows:

"Hoosier (American). A nickname given to natives of Indiana. Bartlett cites from the Providence Journal a story which has the appearance of being an after-manufacture to suit the name, deriving hoosier from 'husher'—from their primary capacity to still their

opponents.' He also asserts that the Kentuckians maintained that the nickname expresses the exclamation of an Indian when he knocks at a door and exclaims 'Who's yere?' However, the word originally was not hoosier at all, but hoosieroon, or hoosheroon, hoosier being an abbreviation of this. I can remember that in 1834, having read of hoosiers, and spoken of them, a boy from the West corrected me, and said that the word was properly hoosieroon. This would indicate a Spanish origin."

The source of Mr. Leland's error is plain. "Hoosieroon" was undoubtedly coined by Mr. Finley to designate a Hoosier child, and what the boy probably told Mr. Leland was that the name to apply properly to him would be Hoosieroon. But that alone would not dispose wholly of the Spanish suggestion, for "oon" or "on" is not only a Spanish ending, but is a Spanish diminutive indicating blood relation. In reality, however, Mr. Finley did not understand Spanish, and the ending was probably suggested to him by quadroon and octoroon, which, of course, were in general use. There is no Spanish word that would give any suggestion of "hoosier." The only other language of continental Europe that could be looked to for its origin would be French, but there is no French word approaching it except, perhaps, "huche," which means a kneading trough, and there is no probability of derivation from that.^a

In fact, "hoosier" carries Anglo-Saxon credentials. It is Anglo-Saxon in form and Anglo-Saxon in ring. If it came from any foreign language, it has been thoroughly anglicized. And in considering its derivation it is to be remembered that the Southerners have always had a remarkable faculty for creating new words and modifying old ones. Anyone who has noted the advent of "snollygoster" in the present generation, or has read Longstreet's elucidation of "fescue," "abisselfa," and "anpersant" will readily concede that. And in this connection it is to be observed that the word "yahoo" has long been in use in Southern slang, in almost exactly the same sense as "hoosier," and the latter word may possibly have developed from its last syllable. We have a very common slang word in the North—"yap"—with the same signification, which may have come from the same source, though more probably from

a. But see the French "huissier," *supra*.

b. Georgia Scenes, page 73.

the provincial English "yap," to yelp or bark. "Yahoo" is commonly said to have been coined by Swift, but there is a possibility that it was in slang use in his day.

It is very probable that the chief cause of the absence of conjectures of the derivation of "Hoosier" from an English stem was the lack in our dictionaries of any word from which it could be supposed to come, and it is a singular fact that in our latest dictionaries—the Standard and the Century—there appears the word "hoose," which has been in use for centuries in England. It is used now to denote a disease common to calves, similar to the gapes in chickens, caused by the lodgment of worms in the throat. The symptoms of this disease include staring eyes, rough coat with hair turned backward, and hoarse wheezing. So forlorn an aspect might readily suggest giving the name "hooser" or "hoosier" to an uncouth, rough-looking person. In this country, for some reason, this disease has been known only by the name of the worm that causes it—"strongylus mierurus"—it sounds very much like "strangle us marcus" as the veterinarians pronounce it—but in England "hoose" is the common name. This word is from a very strong old stem. Halliwell, in his "Dictionary of Archaic and Provincial Words," gives "hooze" and "hoors," and states that "hoos" occurs in the "Promptorium Parvulorum," and "hoozy" in the "Cornwall Glossary," the latter being used also in Devonshire. Palmer, in his "Folk-Etymology," says that "hoarst—a Lincolnshire word for a cold on the chest, as if that which makes one hoarse," is a corruption of the Old English "host," a cough, Danish "hoste," Dutch, "hoeste," Anglo-Saxon, "hweost," a wheeziness; and refers to Old English "hoose," to cough, and Cleveland "hooze," to wheeze. Descriptions of the effect of hoose on the appearance of animals will be found in Armatage's "Cattle Doctor," and in the "Transactions of the Highland Society of Scotland," fourth series, Vol. 10, at page 206.

There is also a possibility of a geographical origin for the word, for there is a coast parish of Cheshire, England, about seven miles west of Liverpool, named Hoose. The name probably refers to the cliffs in the vicinity, for "hoo," which occurs both in composition and independently in old English names of places, is a Saxon word signifying high. However, this is an obscure parish, and no special peculiarity of the people is known that would

probably give rise to a distinctive name for them.

There is one other possibility that is worthy of mention—that the word may come to us through England from the Hindoo. In India there is in general use a word commonly written "huzur," which is a respectful form of address to persons of rank or superiority. In "The Potter's Thumb" Mrs. Steel writes it "hoozur." Akin to it is "housha," the title of a village authority in Bengal. It may seem impossible that "hoosier" could come from so far off a source, and yet it is almost certain that our slang word "fakir," and its derivative verb "fake," came from the Hindoo through England, whither for many years people of all classes have been returning from Indian service. It is even more certain that the word "khaki" was introduced from India, and passed into general use in English and American nurseries long before khaki-cloth was known to us.

As a matter of fact, words pass from one language to another in slang very readily. For example, throughout England and America a kidnapper is said in thieves' slang to be "on the kinchin lay," and it can scarcely be questioned that this word is direct from the German "kindehen." The change in meaning from "huzur" to "hoosier" would be explicable by the outlandish dress and looks of the Indian grandees from a native English standpoint, and one might naturally say of an uncouth person, "He looks like a huzur."

It is not my purpose to urge that any one of these suggested possibilities of derivation is preferable to the other, or to assert that there may not be other and more rational ones. It is sufficient to have pointed out that there are abundant sources from which the word may have been derived. The essential point is that Indiana and her people had nothing whatever to do with its origin or its signification. It was applied to us in raillery, and our only connection with it is that we have meekly borne it for some three score years and ten, and have made it widely recognized as a badge of honor, rather than a term of reproach.

Addendum, February, 1907. The greater part of the preceding was published in the Indianapolis News of Aug. 23 and 30, 1902. Afterwards I rewrote and enlarged it. Since

then there have appeared two publications which threw some additional light on the subject. One of these is an account of Col. Lehmanowsky, purporting to be autobiographical, published under the title, "Under Two Captains," by Rev. W. A. Sadtler, Ph.D., of Philadelphia. This demonstrates that Lehmanowsky believed he originated the word, for he gives the following account of it:

"In this connection I may mention an amusing incident that occurred somewhat later in a town in Kentucky, where I happened for a day or two. There was a drunken brawl in progress on the street, and as quite a number were involved in it, the people with whom I was speaking began to be alarmed. I remarked just then that a few hussars would soon quiet them. My remark was caught up by some bystander, and the word hussar construed to mean the men of the State of Indiana (from which I had just come), and thus the word 'Hoosier' came into existence. Such is the irony of fate! Learned men have labored long to introduce some favored word of the most approved classic derivation, and as a rule have failed. Here a chance word of mine, miscalled by an ignorant loafer, catches the popular fancy and passes into Literature."^a

At the same time he furnishes conclusive evidence that he did not originate it, for he says that he did not leave Washington for the West until the spring of 1833; that he went as far as Ohio with his family and passed the winter of 1833-4 in the state,^b reaching Indiana the next spring, or more than a year after "The Hoosier's Nest" had appeared in print. His story, as given above, locates the incident at a still later date.

The other publication is the third volume of *The English Dialect Dictionary*, in which appears the following:

"HOOZER, Cum. 4 (hu-zer) said of anything unusually large."

The "Cum 4" is a reference to "A Glossary of the Words and Phrases pertaining to the Dialect of Cumberland"; edition of 1899.

Although I had long been convinced that "hoosier," or some word closely resembling it, must be an old English dialect or slang word, I had never found any trace of a similar substantive with this ending until in this publication, and, in my opinion, this word "hoozer" is the original form of our

"hoosier." It evidently harks back to the Anglo-Saxon "hoo" for its derivation. It might naturally signify a hill-dweller or highlander as well as something large, but either would easily give rise to the derivative idea of uncouthness and rusticity.

There is a suggestiveness in the fact that it is Cumberland dialect. The very center of hoosierdom in the South is the Cumberland plateau with its associated Cumberland mountains, Cumberland river, Cumberland gap, and Cumberland Presbyterianism. The name Cumberland in these, however, is honorary in origin, the river and mountains having been named for that Duke of Cumberland who is known to the Scotch as "The Butcher of Culloden." But many of the settlers of this region, or their immediate forebears, were from Cumberland county, England, and so "hoozer" was a natural importation to the region. Thence it was probably brought to us by their migratory descendants, many of whom settled in the upper White-water valley—the home of John Finley.

Since the publication of the foregoing paper, Mr. Dunn has written the following supplementary statement, which appeared in the *Indianapolis Star*, under date of June 2, 1907:

"The recent publication by the Indiana Historical Society of a pamphlet on the origin of the word 'Hoosier' has caused a revival of interest in that mysterious subject, and several noteworthy points have been brought to light. One writer calls attention to the fact that in the early book descriptive of Indiana, entitled 'The New Purchase,' the word 'Hoosierina' is used for a female resident of the State. This is evidently a coinage of the author of the book, and one that did not meet with popular favor, as it is not known to have been used elsewhere.

"Another writer suggests that the word comes from the French 'huissier' meaning an usher or bailiff. This suggestion has been made before (*Indiana Quarterly Magazine of History*, Vol. 1, p. 94), but it is hardly within the bounds of possibility. The transition would have to come through pronunciation, and the pronunciation of 'huissier' is prac-

a. Pages 188-9.

b. Pages 182-5.

tically wees-se-ay, which has no resemblance to 'Hoosier.'

"The most interesting fact is brought forward by Judge Timothy E. Howard of South Bend, who has been engaged in preparing a local history, and has found a use of the word in print earlier than the publication of Finley's 'Hoosier's Nest.' It occurs in a South Bend newspaper called the *Northwestern Pioneer* and *St. Joseph's Intelligencer*, in the issue of April 4, 1832, and is as follows:

" 'A REAL HOOSIER. A sturgeon, who, no doubt, left Lake Michigan on a trip of pleasure, with a view of spending a few days in the pure waters of the St. Joseph, had his joyous anticipations unexpectedly marred by running foul of a fisherman's spear near this place—being brought on terra firma and cast into a balance he was found to weigh 83 pounds.'

"This paper was published at the time by John D. Defrees and his brother Joseph H. Defrees, both prominent in early Indiana history, and both natives of Tennessee. The use of the word here confirms the theory of the pamphlet that 'Hoosier' was not coined to designate a native or resident of Indiana, but was a slang word in common use at the time in the South, signifying a rough, uncouth countryman; and that it was probably used verbally as a nickname for Indianians for several years before it was put in print, but not so universally as afterwards.

"The Defrees brothers were presumably familiar with the Southern use as well as its nickname application; and what did they mean by calling a sturgeon a 'real' Hoosier? Certainly not a 'real' resident of Indiana, for they speak of him as a visitor from Lake Michigan. The obvious idea is that he is a 'real' big, rough fellow; and that therefore the name is appropriate to be applied to him. So far as now known this is the earliest appearance of the word in print, and Judge Howard holds the record for successful original research in this line."

Two distinguished Indianians have done much to give dignity and honor to the name

of Hoosier—James Whitcomb Riley, by accepting and gracefully wearing the title of "The Hoosier Poet"; and Governor Claude Matthews, by everywhere and always proclaiming his love for and pride in the name. In the dedication of the Indiana building, at the Columbian Exposition, Chicago, 1893, the governor introduced Mr. Riley to that world audience in the following noble words:

"If there be one characteristic above another for which the citizen of Indiana may be noted, it is his love of home—whether that may be the splendid mansion in the busy center—the farm house mid the smiling fields of grain and shaded pasture, or the cabins of our fathers in the deep umbrageous forest. It comes to us an inheritance from the 'Hoosier' pioneer who braved the unknown dangers of the forest, not with the greed of gain his sole absorbing thought, but with his soul filled with the noblest inspiration of our race, to build a home that he might leave a goodly inheritance to his children. I mentioned to you the name of 'Hoosier' by which the citizen of Indiana is known far and near. I regret there are a few whose ears have grown so fastidious, that the name offends, but as for me I love the name and honor it. It is the synonym of sturdy manhood, untiring energy, sterling integrity, unflinching courage and a hospitality so broad and generous that has not its superior in all the world. It was the strong right arm of the 'Hoosier' that felled the forest, bridged the rivers, pushed forward roads over hill, through prairie and marsh, and laid the foundation of an empire in the grandeur of their state. We love him who can paint the picture of the humble life; find a poem in 'the simple annals of the poor,' and sing the sacred home songs of his people. None other has ever done this better than the Hoosier poet, James Whitcomb Riley of Indiana."

NOTE.—The foregoing chapter, giving a brief outline of the history of Indiana, previous to and including the organization of the state government, seemed a necessary introduction to the history of St. Joseph county. The relations of the county to the state are exceedingly intimate, and an adequate knowledge of the county, as a political organization, and in its historical relations could hardly be had without a preliminary knowledge of the commonwealth of which the county forms so important a subdivision.

CHAPTER IV.

THE ST. JOSEPH COUNTY PIONEERS.

I. THE FUR TRADE.

Sec. 1.—SOURCES OF OUR CIVILIZATION.—Civilization, as we have seen in the preceding chapter, came to Indiana by way of the South and Southeast, from Kentucky, Virginia, Pennsylvania and the Carolinas. To St. Joseph county, however, civilization came rather from the North and Northeast, from the same sources, indeed, as it came to southwestern Michigan, to which the greater part of our county was so long attached. Our earliest traditions run back to France; at first, by way of the St. Joseph river, Lake Michigan and the Straits of Mackinaw, and afterwards through the interior of Michigan, from Detroit, and on through Canada from Montreal and Quebec. Later, and when our first permanent population began to arrive, our connections were chiefly with Fort Wayne and Detroit, both also French settlements.

By the treaty of Greenville, August 3, 1795, almost the whole of Indiana, including all the north part of the state, except a tract six miles square at Fort Wayne, one two miles square at the portage between the Wabash and Maumee, and another six miles square at Ouiatanon, near Lafayette, was confirmed to the various Indian tribes then occupying the same. By successive treaties, extending down as late as the year 1840, those Indian titles, as related in the last chapter, were extinguished. Settlers pushed in from the east, the south and the north, and also from Europe, as fast as the Indians retired.

Sec. 2.—THE FRENCH TRADERS.—But in

advance of the settlers, and while the Indians still remained, the hunters and fur traders penetrated into the wilderness. Those hunters and traders, as we have seen, were at first French. Many of the early adventurers had their headquarters at Detroit and Mackinaw; others mingled with the Indians and rambled over the whole northwest. These last were a famous class of hunters and traders, known to the French as *coureurs des bois* (forest rangers), and penetrated to the most secret recesses of the wilderness. As in other cases, there were enterprising and ambitious men among those adventurers, men who sought their fortunes in the fur trade with the Indians, as in succeeding generations others sought wealth in the mines of California. This trade, says Dillon^a, was carried on by means of men hired to manage small vessels on the lakes, and canoes along the shores of the lakes and on the rivers, and to carry burdens of merchandise from the different trading posts to the principal villages of the Indians who were on friendly terms with French. At those places the traders exchanged their wares for valuable furs, with which they returned to their trading posts. The articles used in trade by the French were chiefly coarse blue and red cloths, fine scarlet, guns, powder, balls, knives, hatchets, traps, kettles, hoes, blankets, cottons, ribbons, beads, vermilion, tobacco and liquors. The poorer traders sometimes carried their packs of merchandise by means of leather straps attached

^a. Hist. Indiana, pp. 20, 21.

to their shoulders, or with the straps resting against their foreheads. It is probable that some of the Indian villages on the St. Joseph and the Wabash were visited by this class of traders before the founding of Kaskaskia or Vincennes. The learned Bishop Bruté has expressed the opinion that missionaries and traders, before the close of the seventeenth century, passed to the south from the St. Joseph river, leaving the Kankakee to the west, "and visited the Tippecanoe, the Eel river, and the upper parts of the Wabash."

"It was the fur trade, in fact," says Washington Irving,^a "which gave early sustenance and vitality to the great Canadian provinces. Being destitute of the precious metals, at that time the leading objects of American enterprise, they were long neglected by the parent country. The French adventurers, however, who had settled on the banks of the St. Lawrence, soon found that in the rich peltries of the interior, they had sources of wealth that might almost rival the mines of Mexico and Peru. The Indians, as yet unacquainted with the artificial value given to some descriptions of furs, in civilized life, brought quantities of the most precious kinds and bartered them away for European trinkets and cheap commodities. Immense profits were thus made by the early traders, and the traffic was pursued with avidity."

Sec. 3.—THE BRITISH POLICY IN RELATION TO THE FUR TRADE.—So valuable had become the fur trade of the northwest that after the treaty of Paris, February 10, 1763, and the transfer of this immense region from France to England, the British government declined to organize any form of government for the territory, or to allow any settlers within its limits, but determined to leave it wholly to the Indians, so as to protect the fur bearing animals and make of the country a vast hunting reservation.

On October 7, 1763, George III issued a proclamation, providing for colonial governments for the countries acquired from

a. Irving's *Astoria*, p. 2.

France; but making no provision for the government of the northwest. Nor was this omission an oversight, but intentional. "The purpose," says Poole in his history of the west,^a "was to reserve as crown lands the northwest territory, the region north of the great lakes, and the country between the Alleghenies and the Mississippi, and to exclude them from settlement by the American colonies. They were left, for the time being, to the undisputed possession of the savage tribes. The King's 'loving subjects' were forbidden making purchases of land from the Indians, or forming any settlements westward of the sources of the rivers which fall into the sea from the west and northwest; 'and all persons who have wilfully or inadvertently seated themselves upon any lands west of the limit' were warned forthwith to remove themselves from such settlements." The government declared its purpose to be, to confine the colonies to the region along the Atlantic coast, so that they should be within easy reach of "the trade and commerce of this kingdom"; and also in order that they might be subject to "the exercise of that authority and jurisdiction which was conceived to be necessary for the preservation of the colonies in a due subordination to and dependence upon the mother country." The further extraordinary statement was made in this royal declaration:^b "The great object of colonizing upon the continent of North America has been to improve and extend the commerce, navigation and manufactures of this kingdom. . . . It does appear to us that the extension of the fur trade depends entirely upon the Indians being undisturbed in the possession of their hunting-grounds; and that all colonizing does in its nature, and must in its consequences, operate to the prejudice of that branch of commerce.

a. W. F. Poole, *The West, from 1763 to 1783* (Hist. Am., Vol VI, Chap. 9).

b. Report of the Lords Commissioners for Trade and Plantations, in 1772, on the petition of Thomas Walpole and others for a grant of land on the Ohio.

. . . Let the savages enjoy their deserts in quiet. Were they driven from their forests the peltry trade would decrease." Such was the cold and selfish policy which the British crown and its ministers habitually pursued towards the American colonies; and in a few years this policy changed loyalty into hate, and brought on the American Revolution.^a

However reprehensible the motive of the British government, in thus preventing the settlement of the fertile lands of the northwest, it is nevertheless plain from this action that the value of the fur trade to the commerce of the mother country must have been exceedingly great. Such an extensive hunting preserve as this northwest territory and the vast countries north and west of Lake Superior was perhaps never since or before deliberately set apart by any government. According to the records of the custom house at Quebec, the value of the furs and peltries exported from Canada, in the year 1786, was estimated at the sum of two hundred and twenty-five thousand, nine hundred and seventy-seven pounds sterling, or nearly a million and a quarter dollars.^b

SEC. 4.—THE GREAT FUR COMPANIES.—To control this profitable industry various powerful companies were organized in England and Canada, and afterwards in the United States. In 1670, the Hudson Bay Company was chartered by Charles II, and the company has continued to our own day. Until the acquisition of Canada by Great Britain, in 1763, there were almost constant disputes between the agents of the Hudson Bay Company and the French merchants and *coureurs des bois*. In 1783, some merchants of Montreal began the formation of a like company, which, in 1787, became merged with a rival company, and thus formed the famous Northwest Company, which for years held boundless sway over the fur trade of the west. This company for many years held its gorgeous

annual conferences at Fort William, near the Grand Portage, on Lake Superior; where the merchants from Montreal met the hunters and traders from all the northwest. These conferences are said to have been the occasion of magnificent winter entertainments, of almost regal splendor. Another company of like character was the Mackinaw Company, which took in the country to the south of that controlled by the Hudson Bay and the Northwest Companies.

After the establishment of American independence, our government sought to check the operations of those British and Canadian companies within the territory of the United States. But it would seem that governmental supervision was no match for the skillful, persistent personal activity of the members and agents of the companies. It was during this time, in 1783, that John Jacob Astor, a young German, emigrated from Europe. Here he met a countryman, a furrier by trade; and then and there began the great Astor fur industry. In 1809, Mr. Astor obtained a charter from the legislature of New York, incorporating the American Fur Company. In his enterprise he had the good will and active co-operation of the American government. In 1811, the interests of the Mackinaw Company, within United States territory, were practically absorbed by the American Fur Company; and thereafter, for many years, this company controlled the fur trade of the northwest, and became a potent factor in the development of that territory.^a To the American Fur Company and its agents St. Joseph county is directly indebted for its first permanent settlement.

The fur trade with the Indians of this vicinity, while in the early days carried on by way of Lake Michigan and the Straits of Mackinaw was, after the establishment of the American Fur Company, conducted chiefly by agents from Detroit and Fort Wayne. The furs and peltries which were obtained from the Indians were generally transported to De-

a. Poole. *Ib.*

b. Dillon, *Hist. Indiana*, p. 397.

a. Irving's *Astoria*, pp. 1-23.

troit. The skins were dried, compressed and secured in packs. Each pack weighed about one hundred pounds. A pirogue, or boat, that was sufficiently large to carry forty packs, required the labor of four men to manage it on its voyage. In favorable stages of the Wabash river, such a vessel, under the management of skillful boatmen, was propelled fifteen or twenty miles a day against the current. After ascending the river Wabash and the Little river to the portage near Fort Wayne, the traders carried their packs over the portage to the head of the river Maumee, where they were again placed in pirogues, or in keel boats, to be transported to Detroit. At that place the furs and skins were exchanged for blankets, guns, knives, powder, bullets, intoxicating liquors, etc., with which the traders returned to their several posts. The Indian hunter had long before exchanged his bow and arrows for the white man's fire arms. Bullets were valued at four dollars per hundred and powder at one dollar a pint.^a

II. THREE MERCHANTS OF THE WILDERNESS.

After the destruction of Fort St. Joseph's by the Spaniards, in 1781, and before any settlement was made in St. Joseph county, three traders of more than usual enterprise established themselves at points on the river below the limits of this county. Mr. George A. Baker, the industrious secretary of the Northern Indiana Historical Society, has gleaned many interesting facts in the history of these worthies, some of which may appropriately find a place in this connection.^b

Sec. 1.—LECLARE.—Antoine Leclare, a native of Montreal, was the blacksmith employed by the English government, in 1780, at Fort St. Joseph's, and was at the fort, in 1781, at the time of its capture by the Spaniards. He was mustered out of service at Detroit, with the garrison and other employes,

in the fall of that year. Afterwards he returned to the vicinity of the old fort, and located in the Parkovash, a few miles up the river from the site of the fort. Here he built a cabin, bought furs of the Indians and worked at his trade. He was married to an Indian woman; and a son of his, Francis Leclare, was one of the most trusted interpreters in the service of the United States. Antoine Leclare removed to Milwaukee in 1800, and there devoted himself exclusively to the fur trade, in which he became very successful. In the spring of each year he went to Detroit in a small sailing vessel, taking his load of furs, and also carrying furs for William Burnett, located near the mouth of the St. Joseph, and for John Kinzie and Robert Forsyth, Chicago traders. In 1813, he removed to Missouri, where he died in 1821.

Sec. 2.—BURNETT.—William Burnett seems to have been the first successful trader, not of French descent, who located on the St. Joseph. He was of a prominent New Jersey family, well educated, and a man of means, with an established credit in Detroit and Montreal. He was tempted to come into the wilderness, by reason of the fabulous fortunes to be made here in the fur trade. The exact date when Burnett located on the St. Joseph is not known, but is believed not to be earlier than 1791. He built a warehouse for storing furs, maple sugar, grain and salt, at a point near the mouth of the river; which is said to have been not far from the site of La Salle's old storehouse, where the city of St. Joseph now stands. One mile up the river, at the big gap, he built another house, which served as a residence and storeroom for merchandise used by him in the Indian fur trade. Apple trees and asparagus beds planted by him have served to mark this spot up to within a few years. Some of Burnett's books of account are among the treasures of the Northern Indiana Historical Society. His accounts were kept in what is known as Halifax currency;

^a. Dillon, Hist. Indiana, p. 397.

^b. In the South Bend Sunday News, October 13, 1901.

livres, deniers and sols. A livre was worth eighteen and one-half cents. It would appear from certain entries on the books that Burnett operated at first from Mackinaw, which was at that time the center of trade; then traded all along the coast of Lake Michigan, and finally located permanently at the mouth of the St. Joseph river. It is believed that his first venture up the St. Joseph was made October 15, 1791, to the Kankakee.

Burnett's account books are particularly interesting as they have to do with many of the noted characters connected with the early history of the St. Joseph river, as well as with that of Chicago and Milwaukee. Many entries are found showing accounts with Jean Baptiste Point Au Sable, the earliest non-Indian settler of Chicago, who at about the time of the Declaration of Independence built a house at what is now the corner of Cass and Kinzie streets, Chicago, which in later years was so well known as the Kinzie mansion.

Jean Baptiste Point Au Sable was a French West Indian mulatto, who settled at first at Mobile, then successively at New Orleans, Kaskaskia and St. Louis, and finally on the banks of the Chicago river. Point Au Sable sold his house to the French trader, La Mai; and from La Mai it passed to John Kinzie, in the fall of 1803. Other names appearing on Burnett's books are Deneau de Quindre, the government agent and interpreter for the St. Joseph river; Jean Laline, the government interpreter at Fort Dearborn, who was killed at that place in the spring of 1812; Charles Chandonai; John and Robert Kinzie; Antoine Leclare, already named, and Joseph Bertrand, of the Parkovash; Antoine Lafortune, and others. John Kinzie, so well known in early Chicago history, began trading with Burnett, October 1, 1797. In 1800, Kinzie located in the Parkovash, at the site of the old town of Bertrand; and lived there until 1804, when he moved to Chicago. An entry in Burnett's books, dated September

15, 1800, gives some insight into the intrigues carried on in those early days by the Spaniards at St. Louis, as well as by British emissaries from Canada, at a time when the power of the United States was not yet well established in these distant regions. It is as follows: "Jean Baptiste Point Au Sable, Dr. To seven bottles spirits paid an Indian, Askin, for going by express with the Spanish commandant's letter to Fort Wayne." The returns of peltries for the various adventures sent out by Burnett are instructive as giving a definite idea of the comparative numbers of fur bearing animals in this region. For the two years 1800 and 1801, the returns were as follows: Beaver, 9; otter, 119; bear, 10; elk, 1; mink, 248; deer, 1,076; cat, 62; muskrat, 2,014; fox, 107; redskin, 518; raccoon, 5,603.

The last entry on Burnett's day book is dated July 19, 1802, and is a charge to one Louis Pothier of 57 packs of peltries, amounting to 20,500 livres, to be paid by draft on Montreal. The old trader is known to have been at the mouth of our river as late as January 20, 1804; at which date he addressed a letter from that point to James May, at Detroit. Like most of the other traders, Burnett was married to an Indian wife. One of his sons, James Burnett, died July 4, 1833, and it is an interesting fact that his estate was administered upon by Lathrop M. Taylor, one of the earliest settlers of St. Joseph county.

Sec. 3.—BERTRAND.—Another fur trader, and one who comes yet nearer to our early history, was Joseph Bertrand, who was born in Mackinaw in 1780, and in 1808 located a log cabin and a fur press on the west side of the St. Joseph, near the crossing of the Great Sauk Trail, just below the little creek known as Pokagon's branch, and opposite the site of the village of Bertrand afterwards named from him. Some slight dealings with Bertrand are shown on Burnett's books. In 1804 Bertrand had married an Indian girl, Madeline, daughter of the Pottawatomie chief

Topinabee. At that time he was acting as agent for the American Fur Company, but soon afterwards went into business for himself. There is a tradition that the logs for Bertrand's cabin were taken from the ruins of the little church once located at old Fort St. Joseph's, a little below on the east side of the river, and said to have been the only building spared by the Spaniards in the burning of the Fort, in 1781. Bertrand's loyalty to the Americans, and his great influence in keeping the Indians at peace, brought upon him the enmity of the British, particularly that of the emissaries of the Hudson Bay Company; and it is said that there was for a time a reward of one hundred pounds sterling placed upon his head. After the close of the war with England, about 1815, he settled on the east side of the river on the spot since known as the village of Bertrand. He afterwards removed to St. Mary's, Kansas, where he died about the year 1860.

III. PIERRE NAVARRE.

The first white man to make his permanent home in what is now St. Joseph county was Pierre Frieschutz Navarre, an educated gentleman of French descent, who came here from Monroe, Michigan, in 1820, as the agent of the American Fur Company. For several years previous to that date, he, with others, had been through the country, trading with the Indians, but had not remained for any length of time. He now permanently settled at this point and established the first trading post upon the St. Joseph within the limits of this county. We are told that Navarre was a man of literary tastes, of a kind and genial nature, earnest and honest in his dealings, though not remarkable for business ability. His brother Francis, a colonel, in the American army, lost his life in the river Raisin massacre, near Detroit. Pierre, following the example of the fur traders who had preceded him, married an Indian wife, a daughter of the Pottawatomies. Tradition represents her to have been a very intelli-

gent woman. They had six children, three sons and three daughters. The children were bright and received a good education, for the time. The sons were Anthony, Isadore and Peter. Anthony is said to have taught a country school here. Friends tried to keep him here when the Pottawatomies went west, but he refused, saying, "What would be the use? I am only an Indian." They built their dwelling house, the first to be erected in this county, on the east side of the St. Joseph river, in what is now Navarre Place addition to the city of South Bend, located between Leeper Island and the bluffs of Chapin place. This was a famous fishing ground; and here, until the building of the dams at Niles and Buchanan, even those who are of the present generation remember the mighty sturgeon that came up in great numbers from Lake Michigan every spring.^a From here to old Fort St. Joseph's was the Parkovash, the beloved resort of French and Indians. At that time, and ever since the Miamis had gone south and east, to the vicinity of the Wabash and the Maumee, the Pottawatomies were the sole inhabitants of the region. There was, however, no large Indian village near Navarre's trading post. Old Chief Pokagon was located with a few members of his tribe down the river near Bertrand; and there was another band about two miles south of the new post, on what is now Sumption prairie road, called Raccoon Village. The main portion of the tribe was farther south, in what are now Marshall and Fulton counties. Navarre's trading post was on the line along which the Indians traded every spring and fall to reach the posts along the river, down to Lake Michigan; at which times they passed through in great numbers with quantities of furs, maple sugar, baskets and other articles. The old trails are now marked by city streets and main roads leading through and from South Bend, Mishawaka and other towns, towards Fort Wayne and points to the north, south, east and west. Such trails are

a. See Chap. 3, Sub. 7, Sec. 6.

marked by Vistula avenue, through South Bend and Mishawaka; Turkey Creek road; Michigan street and avenue; Sumption Prairie road; Crum's Point road; Laporte avenue; Portage avenue; South Bend avenue, or Edwardsburg road; and Mishawaka avenue. The hunting and trapping grounds were mainly down the valley of the Kankakee, which, for centuries, and until within a few years past, has been the sportsman's paradise. Pierre Navarre when in his prime is said to have been a noble specimen of vigorous manhood, fully six feet in height, but

by the proprietors of Navarre Place to the Northern Indiana Historical Society, and by the society removed to Leeper park, where it is cared for by the city of South Bend as its most venerable historic relic. Navarre Place, with its beautiful homes occupying the site of the home of this fine pioneer gentleman, will perpetuate his name in our history; as will also Navarre street, which overlooks Leeper park, where the ancient residence is preserved, and overlooks likewise the Parc aux Vaches, where the enterprising fur trader set up his Indian home in the



RESIDENCE AND TRADING POST BUILT BY PIERRE NAVARRE, IN 1820, AND NOW PRESERVED IN LEEPER PARK, IN THE CITY OF SOUTH BEND.

rather slenderly built.^a On the removal of the Pottawatomies to the west, in 1840, he went with the tribe, but afterwards returned to this county, where he died at the home of his daughter in South Bend, December 27, 1864. His body rests in Cedar Grove Cemetery, near Notre Dame. The log house built by Navarre in 1820, which was the first fur trading station in St. Joseph county, and where this pioneer and his household, half white and half Indian, so long resided, has been preserved to this day. It was presented

wilderness, now nearly one hundred years ago.

IV. THE FIRST SETTLERS.

Sec. 1.—ALEXIS COQUILLARD.—The first American home established within the limits of St. Joseph county was that of Alexis Coquillard, who is usually regarded as the founder of the city of South Bend. The continuity of our history is well preserved in the life of Mr. Coquillard. While he was a fur trader and of French descent, as were most of his predecessors in the valley of the St. Joseph, and while he was always on

^a. See "Art Work of South Bend and Vicinity." The Parish Pub. Co., Chicago, 1894.

friendly terms with the Indians, in so far that the Pottawatomies would have made him their chief if he had not prevented it; yet both he and his wife were Americans of the Americans, spoke the English language as readily as they did the French, and came to the valley to lay the foundations of a distinctively American community.

Alexis Coquillard was born in Detroit, September 28, 1795. In the war of 1812 with Great Britain, though but a boy of seventeen, he gave his services to the American cause, in the army under William Henry Harrison, seeking the camp of Major George Croghan, the brave defender of Fort Stephenson on the Sandusky river, and there accepting the hazardous duties of dispatch messenger for the beleaguered garrison. After the war young Alexis became a fur trader, and was soon acting as agent for John Jacob Astor's American Fur Company. In the year 1822, in connection with Francis Comparet, formerly of Detroit, but then of Fort Wayne, Mr. Coquillard purchased the agency of the fur company for the region of the upper lakes. The partners are said to have paid several thousand dollars for the property and control of this extensive agency.

It was in the year 1823 that Alexis Coquillard established a trading post on the St. Joseph river. This he operated by himself, Mr. Comparet remaining in charge of the post at Fort Wayne. To distinguish the two posts, the one at this point was called the Big St. Joseph's Station; and the one at Fort Wayne, the Little St. Joseph's Station. Our river St. Joseph, formerly the river of the Miami, was for a time called the St. Joseph's of Lake Michigan, and afterwards the Big St. Joseph's, to distinguish it from the small stream at Fort Wayne, also called the St. Joseph's river. The posts on the two St. Joseph's were the centers of the fur trade with the Indians of northwestern Indiana and southwestern Michigan.

The first trading post opened at this place by Alexis Coquillard, the first business house

in St. Joseph county, was located on what was then called the Dragoon trace, from Fort Wayne to Chicago, but which is now known as Vistula avenue. The post stood about half a square easterly from Washington street, and in front of what is known as the Edmund Pitts Taylor residence. Soon after locating at this point Mr. Coquillard abandoned it, and built a more pretentious log store and residence close to what is now North Michigan street, on the north side of La Salle avenue, and near the site of the fine concrete bridge now (1907) in course of construction over the St. Joseph river, on that avenue. It was at that point that the first ferry on the river was soon afterwards established. The site of this famous and hospitable residence has long been occupied by the Miller and Loutz coal and wood yards. In the spring of 1824, Mr. Coquillard married and brought here from Fort Wayne his wife, Frances C., daughter of his partner, Francis Comparet. This was the first white man's home in this vicinity, and, for some time, the only one. The unit of society is the family; and the community of the great county of St. Joseph was then gathered in the hospitable home of Alexis and Frances Coquillard, on the banks of the beautiful river that was to give its name to the county.

Sec. 2.—LATHROP M. TAYLOR.—In 1827 Lathrop Minor Taylor settled here. Mr. Taylor was a native of Clinton, Oneida county, New York, and was born July 4, 1805. He came with his parents to Detroit when he was six years of age. Like Alexis Coquillard, he came to us as a fur trader, from Detroit and by way of Fort Wayne. His brother-in-law, Samuel Hanna, of Fort Wayne, was the senior member of the firm of Samuel Hanna & Co., general traders at that place, and Mr. Taylor came here as agent of the firm, to establish a trading post at this point. Alexis Coquillard and Lathrop M. Taylor, though rivals in business, seemed to think, with Admiral Schley, that there was glory enough for all; and they worked in harmony for the



ALEXIS COQUILLARD,

First white man who settled with his family in
St. Joseph County. One of the
founders of South Bend.

common good of the town of which they were to become the founders. Mr. Coquillard had great faith that the settlement on the St. Joseph would grow towards the north from what is now La Salle avenue, instead of to the south of that line. To the north of us, the St. Joseph country, as it was called, had then received many settlers, while the country to the south, as far as the Wabash river, was occupied exclusively by Indians. He therefore advised the new trader to locate his store near to the place where he himself had removed. The site therefore selected by, or for, Mr. Taylor was on what is now East Madison street, on the west bank of the river, and a block north of Mr. Coquillard's own trading post. The locality is close to Judge Lucius Hubbard's residence, between that and the residence of the Hon. Benjamin F. Shively.

Lathrop M. Taylor, like Alexis Coquillard, readily secured the lasting friendship of the Pottawatomies, whose language he spoke fluently. They aided him in clearing a place in the woods, large enough for his new trading post, and he soon had his stock of goods on hand and was actively engaged in business. It was not long, however, before he was convinced that his post was out of the main line of travel. Accordingly, he removed to what is now Vistula avenue, very near to the site of Mr. Coquillard's first trading post. The place has long been occupied by the residence of the late E. Pitts Taylor, brother of Lathrop. The judgment of the younger trader as to the advantages of this locality was perhaps superior to that of the elder. The lines of travel on what have since been known as Vistula avenue, Turkey Creek road and other trails and roads leading towards Fort Wayne and other points south and east, became of more and more importance as the years went by and Indiana became settled towards the Wabash. Mr. Taylor married a daughter of Judge Peter Johnson, father of Evan, Joshua and Lea Johnson, all of whom were noted pioneers. Peter Johnson erected

and kept the first frame house used as a tavern, the old American hotel which was located on the southwest corner of Michigan and Washington streets. Coonley's drug store has now for many years occupied the site. In 1835 Judge Johnson built for his son-in-law a large frame store room on the northwest corner of the same street, opposite the hotel. The Michigan road had now been opened, and commerce and travel abandoned the old routes; and this change Judge Johnson and Colonel Taylor both recognized. To this building Lathrop M. Taylor moved his trading post from Vistula avenue, and here he continued to live during the remainder of his days. Cushing's drug store occupied the site for many years after Mr. Taylor ceased to do business; but the old pioneer loved the locality and continued to occupy rooms in the building over the drug store. The American Trust Company now occupies the site.^a

SEC. 3.—FIRST NAME OF THE NEW SETTLEMENT.—The first entry on L. M. Taylor's books of account, after establishing his agency at this place, is dated at "St. Joseph's, Indiana," October 29, 1827; and is entitled: "Journal of Samuel Hanna, James Barnett and Allen Hamilton, partners in business under the title of Samuel Hanna & Co., Lathrop M. Taylor, agent." The name "St. Joseph's" is retained throughout the books of the company, and it would seem that this was for some time the recognized name of the trading post. Years afterwards, when the posts of the fur traders had developed into a flourishing town, and the ambitious inhabitants became dissatisfied with the name of South Bend, which to them seemed plebeian and meaningless, public meetings were held to consider other and more stately names for the incipient Queen City of the St. Joseph valley; and among the names then suggested was this old one of St. Joseph's or St. Joseph. At that time, and long afterwards, serious and continued efforts were made for the revival

^a. *Memoirs Elkhart and St. Joseph Counties*, pp. 774, 775. Goodspeed Brothers, Chicago, 1893.

of the original name given to the trading posts of Coquillard and Taylor.

Sec. 4.—EARLY DAYS ON THE KANKAKEE.—On August 8, 1889, while Colonel Taylor was yet living, Ernest P. Bicknell, then the brilliant correspondent of the Indianapolis News, afterwards secretary of the Indiana state board of charities, and now at the head of the department of charities in the city of Chicago, wrote for the News the following graphic and gossipy article on "The Winding Kankakee" and other kindred topics relating to our very early local history:

"Before the nineteenth century was out of its 'teens' the flat, river-veined country between the Lakes Erie and Michigan was the site of several settlements of Indian traders, meant to be permanent. The swamps and sluggish streams teemed with beaver, mink and muskrat, while the rich grasses of the moist lands fed herds and herds of deer. From the time of La Salle's pioneer explorations, trappers and traders had wandered up and down the streams, but they had always made some Canadian town, or perhaps Buffalo or Detroit, their headquarters.

"But after 'Mad' Anthony Wayne had routed the hostile Indians and calmly assured them he would arise from his grave to fight them if they ever warred against the whites again, there was a freer movement from the East toward these rich hunting grounds. In 1794 a stockade called Fort Wayne was built and garrisoned and under its shadow a settlement slowly grew, which outlived the fort but retained its name. Several big eastern fur companies established agencies at Fort Wayne. After a few years the traders learned that the old route, up the St. Joseph river from Lake Michigan to a point near the southernmost bend, then a portage of some four miles southwest to the headwaters of the Kankakee, and thence down that stream toward the Mississippi, or the reverse of this, was a popular one with the Indians.

"A trader named Alexis Coquillard was the first to see that right where the two rivers

came nearest together was certain to be a good point for a trading post. The Indian trappers would rather accept lower prices for their skins than carry them over the long four miles of portage. Your ordinary, unheroic Indian was not given greatly to industry. So it was, that in 1823 Coquillard established himself at the south bend of the St. Joseph river, and South Bend has the settlement been ever since. The trader prospered exceedingly and that naturally attracted attention. In the summer of 1827 Colonel L. M. Taylor, a young man who was an agent for a fur dealer at Fort Wayne named Hanna, came to South Bend. Colonel Taylor is yet an honored citizen of the city of which he was the second inhabitant, and though almost eighty-five years old is active and in full possession of all his faculties. To him this correspondent is indebted for valuable information.

"In the spring and fall the Indians would come up the Kankakee, their canoes heavily laden with skins. The low, flat banks allowed an uninterrupted survey of the course of the stream for miles, and because of its remarkable crookedness the view of a party of Indians in their boats was peculiar. As they moved along in single file, the general appearance was that of a party gliding along in every possible direction through the high grass. On a sharp S-shaped curve, for example, some of the Indians would be moving west, some east, some north, and some almost due south.

"The effect of this sinuosity was rather discouraging to the inexperienced canoeist. After paddling steadily down stream all day, round and round curves where the rank grass drooped over and narrowed the ribbon of open water, with its tangled mass, it was discouraging to draw the boat ashore and encamp for the night within sight of the campfire, at which he had prepared his breakfast. Though he had traveled many miles he would find that the "bee line" distance from where he began his day's journey was depressingly

small. To the experienced canoeist and woodsman, however, this rate of progress was not depressing. It was not because he did not care to move rapidly, but because hardships and exposure and intimate acquaintance with nature had taught him to accept whatever lot befell, and make the most of it. This it was that gave him his air of profound indifference and stoicism in his relations with his friends and enemies and his self-control in times of desperate danger.

"Referring to the devious ways of the Upper Kankakee, Colonel Taylor related an incident of his early days in the region:

"I had decided to send two men down the river in a pirogue to collect skins, and, as I wanted them to bring in a big cargo, determined to furnish them a big boat. I searched through the woods along the St. Joseph river until I found an enormous tree. Two men helped me, and in a few days we had a pirogue made from its trunk that was a beauty. It was forty-five feet long, three and a half feet wide at one end and two feet wide at the other. We drew it across the portage sled-fashion with a team of oxen which had been brought to the settlement, and proudly launched it on the Kankakee. My two men set out and in due time returned with their load. But a more thoroughly disgusted boat crew I never saw. They vowed, in the strong, unhampered speech which characterizes the true woodsman, that never more would they hold any relations whatever with my prized pirogue. That vessel, they said, was so long that it was almost impossible to get it around the curves of the river, and that a goodly portion of the time both ends of it at once were well planted in the murky banks and had to be dug out with great labor and loss of time."

"The Indians of this region were the Pottawatomies, and were at this time an inoffensive, shiftless tribe which much preferred the pursuits of peace to those of war. Members of other tribes which occupied the country south and west of the Pottawatomies visited

the South Bend settlement in great numbers to dispose of the skins which they collected. They were easily cheated by the traders and made no complaint, but after an Indian had once been imposed upon he never took his wares to that trader again. The whites soon learned this, and as there was much competition among them in business, they usually treated the simple red man fairly.

"As has so often been the case, the closing history of the Pottawatomie tribe of Indians is a sad story. Certain zealous missionaries among them established themselves ten or twelve miles below South Bend on the St. Joseph, and named their settlement the Carey Mission. In time a sturdy Baptist missionary named Isaac McCoy became the chief man at the mission and he was full of plans for the improvement of the red men. The whites were encroaching on them, and they were scattered sparsely over a wide territory. McCoy conceived the idea that if they were removed to a reservation far away from the whites, where they could be kept simple and free from the degrading vices which they learned by contact with their civilized brothers, they could be Christianized and made a happy, prosperous, domestic people. He proposed a plan to the government which was eventually adopted. Some 8,000 members of the tribe were gathered at a point on Lake Michigan, and another near where the city of Lafayette now stands, and were paid for their lands. It was several years later that their removal was begun, and they were taken in detachments at intervals for several years more. A reservation for them had been provided on the great western prairie. In the removal the happy, contented and harmless natives were scattered. Their families were broken up, and many who were unwilling to leave the scenes which had been the undisputed possession of their ancestors for many generations, wandered away among the friendly tribes about them and eluded the government agents.

"The last chapter of this sad history is

briefly recorded. The Pottawatomies had always lived in the woods and hunted the game which frequented them and the secluded streams. In their new home, the wild, bitter, winter wind swept across the prairies and chilled the unacclimated Indians. The game, of which they knew the habits, was not there. In place of the deer and beaver and muskrat, buffalo and wolves and jackrabbits roamed the boundless prairies. The miserable aliens died and froze and starved and wandered away in despair. Some came back to their old homes and joined those who had evaded the government officers. Now, of this once powerful and peaceful tribe, a small remnant remains in Kansas and some 200 or 300 are scattered about St. Joseph and adjoining counties in Indiana and Ohio.

“Where once the simple-minded savage paddled along the quiet streams, or with cat-like stealth threaded these woods and swamps in search of game, or carried his store of skins and his birchen canoe across the land which divided into two his water-way from the lakes to the Father of Waters, now all is changed. The heavy rumble of trains, and the muffled roar of machinery profane the ancient solitudes. The slow and primitive methods of travel—the canoe and the portage—are gone forever, but not more certainly are they gone to return no more, than are those dusky tribes which, in innocence and contentment, once owned and loved and lost this land, gone to exist hereafter only as a memory, as a tale that is told.”

Sec. 5.—OTHER EARLY SETTLERS OF THE COUNTY.—After Navarre, Coquillard and Taylor, some of the very early settlers in the county were as follows. In what is now Portage township, these settlers were: In 1827, Louis Sancomb, Doctor Fowler, Timothy S. Smith, Job Brookfield, John B. Ruleau, Peter Jebeau, Samuel Cannon; in 1828, Henry Painter, Eli Smith, Samuel Studebaker (not related to the noted family that came later), Thomas Johnson, John Heag; in 1829, Levi F. Arnold, John Lasly, Henry

Stull, Isaac Bowman, Joseph Rohrer, John Becraft, Jacob Leer, Samuel Leer, Daniel Cripe, Benjamin Coquillard (brother of Alexis), Hiram Dayton, Samuel Rupe, Frederick Bainter, Oliver Bennett; in 1831, Isaac Cord, Jacob Cord, Samuel Cord, George Cord, Daniel Cord, William McCartney; in 1832, William Webster, Christopher Emerick; in 1833, Matthias Stover; in 1835, David Stover.

In what is now German township, the following persons settled: In 1827, William Brookfield; in 1829, John Smith; in 1830, Christian Holler, Jacob Ritter, John Ritter; in 1831, Joshua D. Miller; in 1832, Jacob M. Whitmer; in 1833, David Miller, Aaron Miller, Jacob Miller, Abram Smith, Jonathan Smith, Daniel Wagoner, John Witter, Samuel Witter.

In what is now Penn township, the following persons settled: In 1828, William Moat, Timothy Moat; in 1829, William Holt; in 1830, Jesse Skinner, Samuel L. Cottrell, George W. West, E. Smith, Joseph Coe, Daniel Hollingshead, David Hollingshead, William Hollingshead, George Hollingshead, Daniel Edwards, Samuel Edwards, George Eutzler; in 1831, Jesse Bell, Henry Huntsinger, Jacob Ebler, Jonathan Macy, Jacob Byrkit, George Byrkit, Edward Byrkit, James Curtis, John Ireland, William Ireland, Braddock Chandler, Uriah Chandler, William Webster, Menzo Webster, Isaac Parks.

In what is now Clay township, the following persons settled: In 1828, Jacob Cripe, Daniel Eiler, Samuel Cannon, Benjamin Potter; in 1829, John Hague, William McCombs, John H. Smith; in 1830, John Cripe, Peter Cripe, Thomas Longley; in 1831, Peter Eaton, Jacob Eaton, William Smith, Joshua Johnson; in 1832, John C. Stutsman, Thomas B. Chalfant, Evan Chalfant, James Stuckey, Thomas P. Bulla, William F. Bulla, Samuel Brooks, Gideon Draper; in 1833, Francis Jennings; in 1834, Joseph Ulery, Stephen Ulery.

In what is now Harris township, the following persons settled: In 1830, Jacob Har-

ris, from whom Harris prairie and Harris township were named, Samuel Bell, Adam Miller, a Baptist minister, Adam Ringle, David Baldwin, Josephus Baldwin; in 1831, Joseph Buel, Jacob Myers, Arbogast Zaehnlé, Henry Augustine, Jonathan Hartzell; in 1833, Robert Kennedy, David Ringle, Samuel Ringle, Levi Ringle.

In what is now Olive township, the following persons settled: In 1830, Charles Vail, for whose wife, Olive, the township was named, John Adams, Jacob Rush, Israel Rush, John Druliner, Malin Druliner, Samuel Garwood, Garrett Nickerson, Henry Nickerson, William White, Jacob Egbert, John Egbert, Elder George Boyd; in 1831, James Garoutte, Benjamin Redding; in 1832, Job Smith, Henry Ranstead, John Reynolds.

In what is now Center township, the following persons settled: In 1830, Andrew Milling, James Palmer and Asher Palmer, from whom Palmer prairie was named, John Rose, Nathan Rose, Jacob Rupel; in 1832, John Smith; in 1833, George Smith, Abiel Hungerford, Tyra N. Bray; in 1834, John Henson, Thomas Jones, Isaac Lamb; in 1835, James Inwood, Richard Inwood, William Phillips.

In what is now Greene township, the following persons settled: In 1830, George Sumption, from whom Sumption prairie was named; in 1831, John Rupel, John Bird, Jacob Rupe, Grave Pomeroy, Stacy Garwood, William Antrim, Abram Whitmer, William Rudduck; in 1832, George Holloway, Nathan Greene, John Rudduck, David Barrett, John Greene, from whom the township was named, Jonathan Wharton, M. Borton, George Baker, Gabriel Fender, Samuel Pearson; in 1833, M. E. Hammond, John McCullough.

In what is now Warren township, the following persons settled: In 1831, Reynolds Dunn; in 1832, Peter Brick, Peter Wykoff, George Witter, John Kingery, Stephen Field, Nathaniel Wilson; in 1833, Jesse Frame, William Frame, Nathaniel Frame, Cornelius Frame, Isaac Frame, David Frame, Jesse Frame, Isaac W. Phillips; in 1834, Harvey

Buckles, James Dunbar; in 1835, Joseph P. Jones, Joseph Price, Thomas Jackson, Calvin Myler.

In what is now Union township, the following persons settled: In 1833, John Henderson, Elijah Lineback, John Gardner, John Rector, Jacob Rector, Mark Rector; in 1834, Hubbard Henderson, James Moon, John Moon, Eli Moon; in 1835, James Annis, Henry Hardy, Daniel Glenn, Amos Heston.

In what is now Liberty township, the following persons settled: In 1835, Jacob Earhart, John Earhart, John Kane, Isaac Townsend, Daniel Ross, Jesse Palmer, Samuel Loring, John Rupel, Daniel Rupel, Joseph Liggett, James Cole, Franklin Pearse.

The foregoing names and dates may not be strictly accurate in every instance, but the effort has been made to avoid all error. Neither is it intended that these were all the settlers up to the year 1835; it was our purpose only to give the names of some prominent families and the proximate times and places of their settlement in St. Joseph county. The list will also serve to show what parts of the county were first settled, and the years in which the several places were first occupied. It does not appear that in the territories now known as Madison and Lincoln townships any settlements were made until after the year 1835.

V. THE LOG HOUSE.

The rude life which these early settlers were compelled to lead, and the many privations to which they were subjected, are well illustrated by one who gives us his own recollections in the following vivid sketch:^a

The poet who lived and wrote his songs, fifty to a hundred years ago, was inspired with environments, then existing, which now would be void of sentiment. We hear the song:

“How dear to my heart are the scenes of my childhood,

When fond recollection presents them to view.

a. Contributed by a writer to the *Waterloo, Indiana, Press*.

The orchard, the meadow, the deep tangled wildwood;

And all the loved pleasures my infancy knew.

The old oaken bucket—

The iron-bound bucket,

The moss-covered bucket

That hung in the well."

The passing of the open well, with wooden curb, and the long "well sweep" balanced in the center on a post crotched at the top, a heavy stone fastened with large pegs on the large end of the long timber used as the sweep or elevating power, and the "old oaken bucket" fastened at the top with a chain equal in length to the depth of the well. Such sweeps were a familiar sight fifty years ago.

The old oaken bucket made by the local cooper, bound with iron hoops, lasted several generations, and hence became "moss covered." The sweep was pulled down and the "bucket" dropped into the well, with a weight fastened to one side to sink it in the cool waters at the bottom, and it came up on a balance with the stone at the other end of the "sweep." Here the poet quaffed the refreshing drink of his childhood days, and received his inspiration for the song.

Alongside the well with the sweep and the "old oaken bucket" stood the old log house, the home of the pioneer, now only a memory, and to the present generation unknown, as log houses are a thing of the past. Sixty-two years ago the writer, after leaving the strap-iron railroad in Adrian, Mich., came from "York state" by "rapid transit," consisting of "an ox team" and a covered "movers' wagon." Several days' travel with the family in the wagon, landed us in the midst of a dense forest. A small spot was cleared of underbrush, and strong, enthusiastic men cut down trees of uniform size and built the log cabin in the woods. There were no public highways in that time, and a man with an ax went before the ox team to remove some of the brush and obstructions, for the passage of the wagon.

Those homes of the early pioneer, would be a revelation to the present generation. The logs were cut to equal lengths as required for the size of the building, and rolled up on skids as the building increased in height with each log, the ends being notched to fit close, and at the same time bind the building together. The structure was tapered off at the

top with smaller timbers, and the roof, made of shakes, split from clear oak with a frow and maul, were fastened on the poles across the top of the building by placing small logs on top of them, kept equal distance apart by short sections of timbers at right angles. Then a bass wood log was secured to be split into chinks for closing up the cracks between the logs, which were plastered with clay mud, without lime or cement. The windows were often of greased paper, and the heavy slab doors hung on wooden hinges with a heavy latch inside, lifted by a leather string from without, and the string pulled inside when the door was to be locked. Hence "the latch string always hangs out" was the greeting given to neighbors, meaning they were welcome to call.

While their rude homes were being built, the families lived and slept in the covered wagon. There were no stoves in those days, and the old fireplace was cut out of one side of the building, and walls were made of stone or bog ore, found in marshes or swamps in the early days. The chimney was built of small pieces of wood four square split from the remnants of blocks from which the "shakes" for the roof were made, and this structure was plastered inside and out with mud. There were no carpets on the floors, and not infrequently the massasauga, or black rattlesnake, the dread of the mother and the children, found its way through the puncheon floor and located in the bed or under the household effects, where his rattles warned all comers to beware. The strenuous life in the days of old, was along different lines. It was many years before the rag carpet made its appearance, because of the fact that the clothing of the parents was made over and over and handed down from the oldest to the youngest child, until there was not enough rags from which to cut strips for weaving into carpets.

Those were pioneer days; and what a strange contrast with present conditions and customs! The generations now living hardly realize how much credit should be given the early pioneers who carved out their rude homes from the dense forest, and made it possible for the great changes that followed them.

VI. REMINISCENCES.

Sec. 1.—BY DANIEL GREENE.—On September 19, 1832, John Greene and his family

arrived in the territory afterwards to be organized under their name, as the township of Greene. On the seventy-third anniversary of that day, Daniel Greene, one of the children of the family, now an honored citizen of the city of South Bend, gave to his friends and the public a most interesting interview, detailing the coming to their Indiana home in those far off years. The story which he tells is the story of hundreds of pioneers who left their homes in the east, to find other homes in the west. By permission of the venerable narrator, the following is taken from this interview:^a

"My parents, John Greene and Nancy Ann Jackson, were born and married in the state of Delaware. Not being in sympathy with the institution of slavery, they decided to seek a home for their little family in the then distant free soil of the northwest, beyond the reach of its blighting influence. In the fall of 1811, with their three boys, Israel, John and Ezekiel, and such articles as could be transported in a light wagon drawn by one horse, they bade a final farewell to dear ones and native state. Guided by the star of hope, they started on the long, perilous journey over hills and mountains, across plains and valleys, towards the setting sun, cheered by the hope of a home of their own in a land of freedom.

"After weeks of toil, privation and suffering, they pitched their tent by the roadside in the beautiful valley of the Miami, in Greene county, Ohio; where they lived in tent and cabin and as farm renters for twenty years, enduring the hardships incident to pioneer life, and adding in that time six boys and three girls to their little Delaware family, and increasing somewhat their worldly goods. Not having realized their long cherished hope of a home of their own, my father started, in the fall of 1830, on a home-seeking tour on horseback through northern Indiana and southern Michigan, returning by way of Fort

Wayne, after having failed to locate a home.

"Not being satisfied with what he had seen, he started, in the fall of 1831, on a second tour, passing through Indianapolis, Logansport and intervening territory, and arriving in South Bend a few months after the town had been laid out. Here he was offered a lot for five dollars, if he would erect a log cabin on it. Continuing his prospecting tour into southern Michigan, he entered one hundred and sixty acres of heavily timbered land near where Berrien Springs now stands. He returned again by way of Fort Wayne, with the intention of moving to the land the coming fall. After reaching home, and giving the matter more mature consideration, he thought it not best to take his large family into the heavy timbered lands to open a farm, as it would entail too much labor and hardship on the family, and so changed his mind and decided to go with some old friends to northern Indiana.

"Memory, aroused, rolls back the shades of time, covering a period of years reaching back beyond the wild scenes, privations and dangers of pioneer life in this country to the old Ohio home and environs where I first assisted in making the ball go round in the active game of a busy life eighty years ago. There, during the winter of 1831 and 1832, the little colony was organized and Michigan road lands received for future homes by depositing one dollar and twenty-five cents an acre with the secretary of state, and receiving therefor a certificate of deposit, for which deeds were to be obtained some two years later, signed by Governor Noble. One of those deeds I now have. Arrangements were then completed for moving the coming fall.

"Early in the spring of 1832, my brother Nathan, and John Mannering, a cousin, were equipped with an ox team, tools, implements and seeds, and were sent out to fence, plow and plant a part of the land to corn, potatoes and other useful crops for supplies for the families upon arrival at the anticipated time. They took with them at the same time Nathan

^a. In the South Bend Tribune, September 19, 1905.

Greene, another cousin, and his wife, to assist in the work and then take care of the place while the young men returned to Ohio to aid in moving the family in the fall.

“That being the year of the Black Hawk Indian war in the west, the country, and especially the little valley where we lived, was kept in a state of anxiety and unrest by the exciting and exaggerated rumors of Indian treachery, depredations and massacres of early settlers along the western frontier. My brother, Nathan, and cousin, then at work on Sumption prairie putting out the crop at the future home, kept our people more correctly informed about the Indian war scare, and when they returned the first of August were able to relieve much of the anxiety of the colony as to the danger to life or otherwise from the Indians.

“September 2, 1832, the day long fixed for starting, came bright and cheering, and the little Ohio valley soon became one scene of commotion and excitement. When the families of John Greene, George Baker, Joshua Garwood, Jonathan Wharton, Edward Powers and Michael Robertson, over sixty people in all, fell into line in the dusty streets of Xenia, their old county town, with twelve canvas covered wagons, some drawn by two or four good horses, and others by six oxen, with a large following of loose cattle, sheep, hogs and dogs, for a starter at their Indiana homes, all kept in line by a lot of lively boys and girls, they found the streets of their old town lined by hundreds of friends, neighbors and strangers, waiting for a last friendly greeting, expressions of interest in the future success and welfare of these adventurous friends were profuse, and a last friendly handshake was accompanied by expressions of wonderment why they were leaving one of the garden spots of the earth, friends, homes and plenty, to face the dangers and hardships of a long journey, and the sufferings and privations of frontier life in the then distant west.

“Words fail me to tell of the emotions and parting scenes of that day. The last sad look

is taken and the last farewell is said. The wheels begin to turn, the wagons begin to fall in line and the long train has started on its long and perilous journey. Camp was formed that first night out about five miles north of Xenia. By arranging the wagons in a circle a large court was formed, in the center of which the general camp fire was lighted, and there the evening was spent. It was an evening long to be remembered by the many sad hearts that devoted the night to struggling with their hopes and fears, whether all should end well that seemed to promise well.

“Early the next morning things began to assume a more normal or business-like appearance. Sad faces began to brighten and cheer up as the wagons began to fall in line for another day's march toward the promised land and home. After the noon lunch and rest, one of the older men was sent in advance on horseback to select and secure a camping place for the night. Every day thereafter the camping place was located in the same way, and each night the wagons were arranged in a circle, forming a large open court, in the center of which a general camp fire was lighted. There the evenings were spent as age and taste suggested, with music, games, conversation and entertainment of visitors. Meals were prepared and served on the outside, to each family as called for.

“As we advanced, the distance between settlements increased, and our visions of redskins, tomahawks and scalping knives became more vivid and the timid ones more nervous. The roads, after a few days, became very bad, and, in many places, mere winding ways through the forests. The difficulty of crossing the larger rivers with the teams and loose stock made progress very slow. One day, in the black swamps east of Fort Wayne, only four miles were traveled. The route lay through Dayton, Fort Wayne, Goshen and Elkhart. At Elkhart Messrs. Powers and Robertson broke ranks, and proceeded on to southern Michigan, where they located. The

other four families, forty-four people in all, followed down the south bank of the St. Joseph river to South Bend, then a little Indian trading post of a few log cabins nestled among the old oaks.

"From the trading post we followed the old Indian trail out to Sumption prairie, breaking ranks finally near the place where the James Oliver farm house now stands. Each family took its course from there through the tall prairie grass for its new home. Just as the sun was sinking behind the western forest, our family came to a halt at the corner of a lonely cornfield where father, alighting from his horse, said, 'At home at last.'

"We lived in and under our wagons until a hewed log house, eighteen by thirty feet, with a large fireplace in each end, the first of its kind south of this city, was erected. Taking in the howling of the wolf in one ear and the whoop of the Indian in the other, we moved into the house without floors, doors or windows; and it soon became known as Greene's big house. When the township was organized it was named for the Greene family.

"While the house was being built the ox team was sent to Trail Creek, now Michigan City, a distance of forty miles, for lumber for floors, doors, windows and other purposes. It required about six days to make the trip. When the team returned, we found the lumber broad poplar boards, just as the logs had been sawed through, not edged or shaped, and it had to be shaped by hand with saw and splitting gauge. As soon as the house was ready to receive the goods my brother Ezekiel returned to Ohio with the four-horse team to assist my brothers Nathan and Jackson, who had remained there, to gather and market the crops grown there and winter the team. When the little crops grown here had been cared for, a part of the field sown to wheat, and everything made as convenient and comfortable as possible for the family, John Mannering, the cousin, also returned to Ohio with the ox team to winter there.

"Early in the spring of 1833, both teams returned well loaded with a year's supply of flour, farm implements and other articles, among them a loom, a large and a small spinning wheel and a reel, all of which at that time were considered indispensable articles of the household outfit. As an illustration of the value and service rendered by the wheels and loom in every home in the early settlement of this country, I well remember myself, like other boys of the settlement, then in my teens, clad in a straw hat, linen shirt and trousers, the materials having been grown, and the goods manufactured, cut and made on the farm. Thus clad I toiled many a warm summer day, armed with an ox gad with a long buckskin lash, driving four yoke of oxen, which drew a large breaking plow, made of wood, except the share and bar, and turning over the tough prairie sod for the first time. This was a fair sample or illustration of the average boy of the settlement and of his work, in the early days of our trials and triumphs.

"When Alexis Coquillard and Lathrop M. Taylor established their little Indian trading posts on the banks of our beautiful river, to exchange their merchandise for the furs, peltry and other Indian products that abounded in the vicinity of the Kankakee swamps, and for miles in all directions, they were several years in advance of the permanent home-seeking pioneers who found these rich prairies and vast forests untouched by the hand of civilization. These lands were as yet untouched by the ax or the plow, and were still roamed over at will by the Indian on the hunt and chase and by the wild beast of the woods and the plains. The regular and permanent settlement of the county began in the spring of 1830, the county being organized and the first government lands being placed on the market early in the spring of that year.

"The rich productive soil of the prairies, and their readiness at all times, without previous labor, to welcome the plowman and his seed, made them most desirable; and they were, therefore, the first to be entered and

occupied. All the prairies of the county began to be settled about the same time, that is, early in the spring of 1830.

"The first white person to settle in that part of the county lying southwest of the city of South Bend, was George Sumption, who was subsequently honored by having his name given to our prairie. He located there in the spring of 1830, on what is now the James Oliver farm. Mr. Sumption being a man of courage and energy, soon became one of the leading citizens of the settlement, and remained such until the day of his death. He made the brick for and erected and occupied the first brick house south of the city of South Bend. John Rupel, a sturdy son of Pennsylvania, came next, in the spring of 1831, locating westward of and adjoining Sumption. John Bird came a little later in 1831, settling west of and adjoining Rupel. Later, the same season, Jacob Rupe, Grove Pomeroy and Stacy Garwood located on the southeast part of the prairie.

"In the spring of 1832, George Holloway, David Barrett, Nathan Greene and John Ruduck settled on the west side of the prairie. The Black Hawk Indian war in the early part of that year virtually closed emigration for the season, except as to our little colony of forty-four who had previously arranged to move that fall and who arrived and located on the prairie as already related. In the spring of 1833, the Indian scare was over, settlers came in rapidly, and in a very few years all the tillable lands of what is now Greene township were occupied and producing.

"The first thing on the arrival of a new settler was the erection of a log cabin for shelter and protection. This was sometimes accomplished in one day, the neighbors turning out to assist, some cutting the logs, others hauling them in and others laying them up, and still others, with saws and frows, getting out the clapboards for the roof.

"In the absence of public roads these first cabins that we called homes were located on

the edge of the timber around the border of the prairie, and of necessity were rude structures. When public highways were established these homes were often found to be badly located, and in many cases required removal, or the erection of new and better houses.

"Seventy-five years of intelligent industry and unyielding courage and energy have left the stamp of change and progress everywhere, and practically on everything. Yes, how changed are the people and the scenery! The old familiar form and face of the red man, who then roamed at will over the broad acres of this beautiful valley, lord of all he surveyed, is seen and feared no more. His old, well beaten paths have long since faded from view, and the feet that made them have been at rest. His wigwams and villages have crumbled to dust and sunk into the kindly earth forever.

"The vast forests to the southeast of the county, and the extensive oak openings and wild prairies to the southwest and to the north, once the home of the savage, the wild beasts of prey and the timid, beautiful deer, when touched by the hand of civilization, began to blossom as the rose, and were soon dotted with comely, happy homes, fruitful grain fields and orchards, and with growing, prosperous towns and cities. The little Indian trading post of a few cabins that we found on the banks of the St. Joseph, has become one of the chief cities of a great state, and the home of many of the largest manufactories of the world. There mighty work shops are daily turning their beautiful and useful products into the lap of the world's commerce, and carrying the name of South Bend to all civilized countries and peoples.

"The successors of the Indians are the heroic pioneers of 1830, '31, '32, and '33, who faced the dangers, endured the privations, suffered the ills and disappointments of long journeys and lives of hardship; who felled the forest and reclaimed the prairies; who extended the lines of civilization and became the promoters of the mansions, towns and

cities of today. Having done their work and done it well, leaving a noble inheritance to their more favored successors, they, too, have followed the red man to his resting place. Of the pioneers who settled in this county, south of the city, at that early day, the following, who were then children, are all that are now (1905) left to tell the story of those early days: Ephraim Rupel and Mrs. George Rambo, of Greene township; John B. Greene, of Warren; Daniel Rupe, of Liberty; John Stull, of Center; the Rev. N. Greene, of Danville, Indiana; Benjamin Garwood, of Iowa; Mrs. James Miller and myself, of this city.

"So far as known, there are three other persons now (1905) living in the county who were here when our little colony arrived. They are Robert Cissne, formerly of Warren township, now residing in this city with his son, John D. Cissne; Mrs. Matilda Sherland; and my wife, Mrs. Mary L. Greene, of South Bend. Mrs. Greene came here in March, 1830, before the town was laid out, and is probably the oldest continuous resident of the county now living. So far as I know, there is not a man, nor any other woman, now living in South Bend who was a resident of the town or the county at the time when I came.

"The first dark cloud that came over our colony was caused by the death of Isaac Rudduck, a worthy young man about twenty-one years of age, who died early in January, 1833, at the home of his parents, on what is now the Whiteman farm, just south of Dr. Jacob R. Brown's place, on Sumption prairie road. This death occurred about four months after the arrival of our colony. To meet the necessities of the sad occasion was a severe test of the abilities and resources of the settlement. Some of the older men got together to select a burial place. Mr. Sumption generously gave an acre of land in one corner of his farm. This was the beginning of the present cemetery that has been enlarged three times since.

"My brother John, who had just completed a three years' apprenticeship to a carpenter, made the coffin of poplar boards which we

had hauled forty miles with oxen. My brother Nelson and I were sent to the thick woods to peel basswood bark, boil it and stain the coffin. The remains were taken to the grave in a lumber wagon. The lines of the harness were taken from the team to lower the body to its last resting place; after which the fresh earth was filled in and the people parted in silence from the lonely grave.

"The memory of that first burial that I ever attended, with the late Colonel A. S. Baker, my boyhood companion and life-long friend, standing at my side, and the large snowflakes coming down on the little company of neighbors and mourners, is as vivid today, as is another funeral, that of my esteemed friend and neighbor, Almond Bugbee, the last that I have attended, when our fellow citizen James Oliver was at my side. These two funerals, seventy-two years apart, fittingly illustrate the changes that have taken place in the growth of our city and county.

"The first white person born in our part of the county was Andrew Bird. He was born in the summer of 1832 on what is now the John J. Rupel farm. He grew to manhood, married and raised a family, resided all his life in Greene township and died owning a good farm adjoining the one on which he was born. The first marriage in what is now Greene township was that of Abijah Sumption, son of the first settler, and Rachel Rupe. The second was that of John Rudduck and Elizabeth Rupe, sister of Rachel. The third was that of Ezekiel Greene and Sarah Garwood, both members of the little colony."

Sec. 2.—BY JOHN STULL.—In connection with the reminiscences of Mr. Greene may be given the substance of an interview with John Stull who, with his parents, came to the county when he was a boy nine years old. In his conversation Mr. Stull told of his attending school in 1830, in the old school building in South Bend, on the site of the present Jefferson school, and also told how hard it was to "drum up" enough pupils, by going two

miles in each direction, to maintain a summer session. Mr. Stull then continued:

"There was then living here Lathrop M. Taylor, who occupied a double log house on what is now Vistula avenue, one-half of which was devoted to a stock of dry goods, and the business of a general country store, while 'fire-water' was dispensed in the other half. Alexis Coquillard was also a resident and had his trading quarters on the ground long occupied by Miller & Lontz as a coal and wood yard. Center street, so called for that reason, although but an alley proper, was the dividing line between the Taylor and Coquillard properties, the latter trading the land south to Taylor. Coquillard did not conceal his satisfaction that he had got the advantage of Taylor in the division. There were but the two stores in the place, but many dwelling houses scattered through the surrounding woods.

"In 1832 the report of the uprising of the northwestern Indians spread like wildfire. The news was that the Indians were killing the people, driving off stock and burning property. The little settlement became alarmed and action for defense was begun by drawing plans for the construction of a fort to be located on what is now Vistula avenue, about where the water works stand pipe is erected. The plans for the fort were such that all lines of approach could be commanded and swept by the defenders. The fort was to be constructed from small trees cut in such lengths that about ten feet should extend above the ground, the tops sharpened to a point. A ditch was to surround the entire structure. Luckily Black Hawk was defeated, up in Wisconsin, and his followers driven across the Mississippi, and the scare in St. Joseph county was over."

There was any quantity of big game in the woods, Mr. Stull remarking that at one time he saw no less than seven head of deer making for the springs along the river. The burning of the barrens (oak openings) was a favorite pastime with the Indians. They

could be expected to set the fire going at least once a year, and then there were occasionally exciting times; but they never could set the heavy timber on fire by reason of the dampness retained by the dead leaves. The only survivor of those early days of whom Mr. Stull has any knowledge is Mrs. Matilda Sherland, niece of the original Alexis Coquillard."

Sec. 3.—PAPER BY WILLIAM D. BULLA.—In the winter of 1900, Mr. William D. Bulla read before the Northern Indiana Historical Society a most interesting paper detailing many of the particulars of the life of his father, Thomas P. Bulla, one of the earliest residents of what is now Clay township in this county. From this paper it appears that Thomas P. Bulla was brought by his parents from Ohio to what is now Wayne county, Indiana, in the year 1807, when he was but three years of age. Notwithstanding the privations of frontier life he became a comparatively well educated young man and prepared himself for the professions of teaching and land surveying, in both of which he excelled. In the fall of 1832 he came to St. Joseph county to secure for himself a home. He located on a tract immediately east of and adjoining the grounds of the present University of Notre Dame. Previous to this he had made four trips to this county, coming first some time in the year 1824. With him came his brother-in-law, Evan Chalfant, who located on a tract adjoining on the south.

In 1833, Mr. Bulla built for himself a house, the first hewed log house in Clay township. It was quite a pretentious building, being constructed of hewed logs, with a hard-wood floor of matched oak, a brick chimney and a pine shingle roof. It consisted of one large room, serving the quadruple purpose of kitchen, dining room, bed-room and parlor. In the center the loom was often a conspicuous piece of furniture. There was a garret overhead, with matched soft-wood floor, and reached by a steep winding stair. This served as a spare bed-room in time of need, and also

for storing the spinning wheels, reels, swifts, spools, spool-rack, and the gears, reeds, shuttles, quills, temple and other things belonging to the loom. Among the conveniences on the lower floor were the large open fireplace, containing a crane supplied with hooks of various lengths, on which were suspended, over the fire, the vessels in which the cooking was done. A trap door led to the cellar and there was a closet under the stairs and a "cat hole" near the back door.

While boarding with his brother-in-law, Mr. Bulla was employed as a teacher in his new house and also in South Bend. Amongst his pupils were Lea P. Johnson, Judge Thos. S. Stanfield and the great wagon manufacturer, Alexis Coquillard, the younger, nephew of the founder of the city of South Bend. Mr. Bulla married Hannah, daughter of Captain Gideon Draper, another distinguished pioneer of the county. She was a worthy helpmate of Mr. Bulla, and herself made a strong impression for good, not only upon her five children, but upon the whole community. Mr. Bulla, besides being a teacher and farmer, was for eighteen years county surveyor, succeeding Tyra W. Bray, in 1837. Among the early settlers, friends and neighbors of Mr. Bulla, living within a radius of two miles, were his brother William F. Bulla, Evan Chalfant, Pierre Navarre, Anthony Defrees, Gideon and David Draper, Asa Bennett, Ezekiel Benton, Joseph Metzger, James Stuckey, Samuel Brooks, Louis Swearingen, James J. Lane, Stephen and Joseph Ulery, the Reverend Edwin Sorin, Brother Lawrence, Brother Francis Xavier, Isaac Eaton, Jacob Eaton, John Eaton, Samuel R. and Jesse W. Jennings, John R. Thompson, Aaron Hoover,—all of whom have passed from the activities of this life to the realities of the life beyond.

Sec. 4.—RECOLLECTIONS OF HUGH V. COMPTON.—To cover the early history of another part of the county, we give here the recollections of Hugh V. Compton as to his early life on Terre Coupee prairie.^a In 1830, when Mr.

Compton was a child but one year old, he came with his father from Ohio to Montgomery county, in this state, where the family remained for nearly six years; after which they made preparations to move to St. Joseph county. Mr. Compton says:

"We started for St. Joseph county about the 19th of June, 1836. I remember the neighbors coming in to bid us goodbye and also a pet deer with a bell on its neck. They would pet it for a while and then set the dogs on it to see it run. We moved in a covered wagon and I do not remember much that happened on the way except when we crossed the Wabash river at Logansport. I remember that as we drove on the ferry a cow swam the river at the same time. We forded the Eel river coming out of town, there being only a footbridge. The last night before arriving at Terre Coupee we stayed the other side of South Bend, which at that time was a very small town consisting of a few houses, two or three stores, a small brick court house, a log jail and the old American hotel. I thought the road from South Bend to the prairie would never come to an end, but about noon the 24th of June we landed at what is now the Bates farm, then owned by a widow Smith and rented by uncle Joe Ivens. My mother and family remained with aunt Sally Ivens and aunt Maria Druliner while father went to Illinois to look for a location. He went on horseback and was gone about four weeks but concluded to remain in St. Joseph county. We moved into a cabin at Hamilton which stood back of the store and about where Isaac Faroute's house stands now. That same fall John Caskadden came and moved into a school house that stood in what is now the cemetery. At that time there were but four graves there. The ground was not fenced in and the graves were protected by log pens. Jonathan Hubbard and family lived on the south side of the road in a cabin near the present Hubbard residence. The cabin was built for a man by the name of Garwood and was the first cabin built on that side of the prairie.

^a. As written by him for the New Carlisle Gazette, November 16, 1906.

John Druliner, his brothers and Mr. Garwood had all moved from Ohio in 1830, about the time my father went to Montgomery county. Uncle John Druliner and a party first landed on the south side of the prairie and camped until they could build their log houses.

“They began cutting down trees and digging wells, but found water so near the surface that they concluded to see what was on the other side of the prairie, and finding it higher they all moved over there. They hauled the logs that were already cut to build the Garwood home, and then each of the Druliners built a home and they all helped one another until they were completed.

“While living at Hamilton during the winter of '36 and '37, father went back to Montgomery county, to settle up his business and bring the rest of our goods. Uncle John Druliner went with him to buy horses. While father was away my two uncles, Elias and William Compton, came and stayed over night with us. They drove from near Crawfordsville to Michigan City with loads of wheat and returned with loads of salt. The wagons were the old Ohio or freight wagons, such as were used to haul merchandise over the mountains when emigration reached west of the Alleghenies.

“At one time that winter there were five or six hundred Indians camping across the road from the church. They were on their way to Detroit to receive pay from the government for their lands. They were a queer looking set with rings in their ears and noses. They wanted to buy everything to eat. Someone had butchered hogs and they took all that was thrown away, boiled it and made soup.

“During the winter father fixed up a sleigh and put a cow-bell on the end of the tongue. Our family, Mrs. Luther and her son George, all took a ride to Uncle John Druliner's, but the road being rough and full of stumps, and the knees of the sled being low, we got stuck several times. This was the first sleigh-ride that I remember.

“In the spring of '37 father rented a piece of land of Dick Carlisle, a field of twenty or thirty acres lying just south of the town. This was a neck of the prairie joined to the main prairie through J. H. Service's farm, back of his house. We lived in a cabin southwest of town on a road that led to the Lucos and Warren farms. Before father had finished plowing, an old man by the name of Billy Pellet came and told him he had bought the land and wanted possession. He said he was going to lay it out in town lots, etc. Father told him it didn't belong to him or Dick Carlisle, as he had rented it for one year. Carlisle proposed to change and let him have some land north of town, about where the depot is and taking in a part of the Egbert farm. It was then unbroken prairie, and Carlisle proposed to furnish a team and someone to assist. He sent his brother-in-law. They broke the ground, moved the fence and raised oats on the south part of the field and corn on the north.

“New Carlisle at that time was a very small place. Where most of the town is now, it was oak grubs and woods. There were three small stores, one in what is now Fack's meat market, kept by Mr. Matthews (Schuyler Colfax's step-father) and a partner by the name of Ervin; a grocery on the corner east of Warner's drug store, owned by Garrett Morris; also one owned by Charles Egbert, near where E. C. Taylor's grocery now is; and one by Dr. Egbert, located just west of the hotel. The hotel was built by a man by the name of Chocklet Cramner and was sold to Richard Cramner before it was finished. Dick Carlisle's house stood near where Dr. VanRyder's house now stands. There were some log cabins in the yard, one occupied by Samuel Bates (known as Stubby) and the other by Chocklet Cramner. Across the street was Mr. Matthew's residence, a small frame house. West of this there were no buildings except a small house west of Dr. Egbert's store, occupied by Eber

Woolman. A log blacksmith shop stood about where Granville Druliner's house now is.

"Bersaw's pole cabin, which stood near where John Hauser's home now stands, was used in the summer for a school house. An eastern woman taught the school, and I attended, coming from our home southwest of town, through the oak grubs. An incident I well remember was that Carlisle Egbert, Dr. Egbert's son, and I were wrestling and the boys told the teacher we were fighting. She ordered three whips, called us in and told each to whip the other. I refused to do my part of the whipping; the other boy did his part, and the teacher whipped me because I would not whip the other boy, so I received a double portion. Finally Mary Ann Ivens, my cousin, put a stop to the performance. I will mention here that the first school I attended in this county was with Charles Ivens and his sisters, in a log school-house near and a little south of the present Kinney school-house. One log was removed for a window, there having been some glass in, but some of it was broken and a greased paper was put in its place. A board was put under the window for a writing desk and also a long board for a seat; so when the scholars wrote they went to the window and sat with their backs to the teacher. The boys had dug a hole in the ground, three or four feet deep, and for mischief put Henry Ranstead, then about seven years old, in it. When school was called and Henry did not put in his appearance, his sisters informed the teacher of his whereabouts and the boys received a thrashing.

"In the fall of 1837 there was a race-track built south of the town. There were, in fact, two tracks about a rod apart, and each a mile long. They started from the Burk or Garoutte farm and extended in a northwest direction to where Mrs. Jane Shank's house now stands. Each track was put in shape by Stubby Bates. He turned a large iron kettle bottom up and hitched a horse to it, got on

top and drove over the place for the track in order to cut the grass.

"In the fall of 1837, Schuyler Colfax, afterwards vice-president of the United States, then a boy helping in the store of his step-father, Mr. Matthews, sometimes hauled wood from the Lucos place, passing our house, and I often went with him, and as I remember him now I think of him as being both a boy and a man.

"I attended my first Sunday school in New Carlisle, Mrs. Matthews, her mother, Mrs. Stryker, and Schuyler Colfax having the management of it. What I had in the way of fine clothes were some of Schuyler's out-grown ones.

"In the summer of '37 I earned my first money, a shilling, or 12½ cents. A man, named Dawson, hired me to go to James Gilbreth's on what is now the Pidge farm for a powder horn. I bought a cap with the money and they called it seal skin, but I think it was cow hide or dog skin. I kept it in a raisin box under the bed and often crawled under to see and smell my cap. On one of these occasions my father stepped on my fingers and I have the marks yet.

"Sometime during the winter of '37 and '38 father moved to what was then the William Baldwin farm. While living on this farm my father's two sisters, Nancy and Lucy Ann Compton, and Hugh Vail (whose deceased wife was father's sister, Rebecca) and his son, Randall, came from Ohio to visit us. While here we all went to father's land, south of town (purchased of Clayborn Smith) and had a picnic. We took our dinner and used a large stump for a table.

"A small deadening and a pole cabin were the only improvements, except a log house begun the year before; and the whole country from Carlisle to Sauktown was a dense forest except a few pioneers, the Parnells, Hootons and a man by the name of West. At that time there was no road laid out from Carlisle to this land. We cleared out a road around the west end of Burk's marsh

in a southeast direction to our farm. At that time there was a road from Plainfield in a southwest direction to Sauktown. Father got up a petition for a county road where the road now is from New Carlisle south, but a remonstrance got up by a few who lived on the Plainfield road because they wanted the work all on their road, etc., prevented the county road from being made. But not to be outdone, father petitioned for a state road and had it before the opposition knew it.

"Late in the fall of '38, father concluded to finish the house on the farm. He employed a man by the name of Job Smith to do the work. I went with him for company and as a cook. The house was a cabin of one room and a loft where there were two beds. The way of getting to this part of the cabin was by large pegs put in holes in the logs. There were three windows and a door which faced the east. Smith laid the floor, put in the door and windows and built the chimney, which was made of sticks and plastered with clay mixed with straw. I was much alarmed one night when I heard an owl and thought it was a wolf. Sometimes the Parnell and Hooton boys would come over to visit us. The cabin was finally finished and we moved in on Christmas Day, 1838."

VII. OLD SETTLERS' REUNIONS.

One of the most enjoyable and profitable recreations is that of old settlers' reunions, held annually, or oftener, in some picturesque spot in the county, or some neighboring county. Here come together old friends and neighbors who have known one another from the days of the first settlements; and with them come their children and grandchildren. The old folks gather in little groups and recount the stories of other days; while the younger people engage in varied sports and games that make the woodlands happy. Afterwards young and old come together in some shady nook where the rustic feast is spread by each family upon a grassy plat; and there the keen appetites enjoy foods

which the gods on Mount Olympus might envy.

Few sights are more touching than that of an elderly couple seated complacently, on such an occasion, in the shade of a spreading oak or beech, looking upon the enjoyments of their children, and talking quietly to one another and to their old friends.

One such annual reunion is the Pennsylvania picnic, held at Island park, in the city of Elkhart, on the third Saturday of August each year. At this reunion are welcomed all Pennsylvanians and their descendants, residing in northern Indiana and southern Michigan. The picnic has now been given annually for upwards of twenty-five years; and is looked forward to each year with eagerness by all our citizens of the splendid race that came to us from the Keystone State. There is no better blood in the citizenship of St. Joseph county than that of the sturdy sons of that old commonwealth. The founders of our Pennsylvania picnic were William B. Garman, Michael F. Shuey and the Rev. James D. Huchison, of Elkhart county. Many of the most eminent persons of this and neighboring counties have been active participators in those annual reunions at Island park,—among them the late Joseph A. S. Mitchell, judge of the Indiana Supreme Court; and also his life long friend and admirer, the Hon. John B. Stoll, of this county.

Another of these reunions is the annual pioneer picnic of northern Indiana and southern Michigan, held at Clear lake, in Warren township, near the state line, where the old settlers and their families from St. Joseph county, Indiana, Berrien county, Michigan, and other counties in both states, gather on the beautiful wooded border of that fine lake. Besides the sports, shows and feasting, there is always at this picnic, as well as at the Pennsylvania picnic, entertaining speech and song, commemorative of the past and promising for the future. There, too, comes the reformer, the politician, the man of affairs; and there weighty measures are

often discussed which afterwards become a part of the laws of the land. But the main purpose of the reunions is reminiscence, as to the past; enjoyment, as to the present; and high hope, as to the future.

At the picnic held at Clear lake, August 15, 1900, the writer of this history had the pleasure to deliver such an address to the assembled pioneers. It was as follows:

“Friends and Neighbors: When that worthy pioneer, Ashbury Lindley, of Warren township, asked me to talk to the old settlers of St. Joseph and Berrien counties, and when I began to consider what I should say on this occasion, it occurred to me that I ought to be in full sympathy with any gathering of Indiana and Michigan people. I am myself a native of Michigan, and lived in that goodly state until the days of manhood; but I have now lived in Indiana even longer than I did in Michigan. I have therefore some right to count myself both a Hoosier and a Wolverine. Though not born in Berrien county, I have yet many precious recollections of that splendid county and of her people. When I was first on my way to the Hoosier state, the last town in which I rested was the pretty city of Niles. There I took the old-fashioned stage coach for the south; in those days this was the only means of travel from Niles to South Bend. It was an early morning in February, in 1859, long before daylight, when the mighty, lumbering stage, drawn by four great horses, began its journey south through the darkness, swaying from side to side along the lower river road, once the trail of Pottawatomies and Miamis passing to and from old Fort St. Joseph's. The only stop which we made before entering Indiana was at the tavern in Bertrand. Located at the junction of the St. Joseph river with the Chicago road, the great Sauk trail, known of old to Indian and early settler, that pioneer village was at one time a more important place than either Niles or South Bend. But Bertrand, the famous trading post, has disappeared from the face of

the earth. Its pretty gardens and its business lots are but a part of the rich farm lands of the St. Joseph valley. Its Indian neighbor, too, Pokagon's village, just across the river, can be seen no more. Civilization has eliminated Pokagon and his band; the noble chieftain, friend of the white man, is no more. The railroad has removed the stage coach, and with that has gone the ambitious village of Bertrand.

“It was three years after that early morning ride in the stage coach when I came back again to Berrien county and to Michigan. It was February again. There was civil war in the land; and, like many another youth, I thought it my duty to offer my service, if need be, my life, for the preservation of the Union. When the question came as to what regiment I should join, I thought at once of my native state. I was not then old enough, had not been long enough away from my childhood's home, to be weaned from Mother Michigan; and so down I went to Niles and was taken into Company I of the Twelfth Michigan infantry, then in winter quarters at old Camp Barker. I did not know a single soul in the regiment; but it was a Michigan regiment, and I should defend my country in the companionship of boys of my native state. That was enough for me. Noble fellows, too, were those Twelfth Michigan soldiers. Many of them, including those of Company I, were residents of Berrien county. A better citizen, a purer patriot, a worthier American gentleman, than our captain, Darius Brown, could not be found in all the ranks of the Union army. Lightly rest the green sod upon his breast, where he sleeps in peace by the banks of the St. Joseph. Many another citizen soldier of that brave regiment, the living and the dead, has a secure place in the memory of his comrades and of his fellow citizens. From Berrien Springs they came, and from Buchanan; from Three Oaks and Galien; from Niles and St. Joseph, and Benton Harbor and New Buffalo, and from every farmhouse and

hamlet of the county; simple-hearted and brave pioneer patriots, who thought it nothing that they should go forth and bare their breasts to the sword that sought to strike at the heart of their country. And so am I doubly bound to the pioneers of Indiana and Michigan; by the strong bonds of mature manhood no less than by the tender ties of youth.

“And what manner of men and women were those pioneers? They were of hearts as brave as those of the children whom they raised up to do battle for their country. They came out into the wilderness with little else than their own stout hearts and strong arms to help them. They cut down and removed the forest, or turned over the stiff sod of the prairie, and so changed the desert into farm lands and gardens. It was often a lonely life, not to speak of the terror of wild beasts or wilder Indians. I very distinctly remember in my own home, when we could see no habitation but our little log house, in whatsoever direction we turned our eyes. We knew that an uncle lived off to the south, but it was through the dense forest to get to his house. To the east a pathway by a swamp, over a barren knoll and through a fearfully lonely woods, led to the nearest neighbor in that direction; and memory still clings to that triumphant day, when as a boy I first found my way through that terror-haunted woods and back safe home again. To the north, far beyond the marshes, stretched an almost endless forest, and beyond that we knew there lived one of our most valued and respected friends. To the west we never penetrated, though there was in our minds some vague knowledge of woodland denizens in that direction. The trees were our near, and the hills, marshes and swamps our more remote landmarks. The ‘hooked tree’ and the ‘forked tree’ were then as well recognized objects in our confined landscape, as are now to us the stand pipe at South Bend or the Michigan Central railroad bridge at Niles. And there was an-

other well known tree where, once upon a time, brave chanticleer had chased a hawk, and not content to drive off the robber, had followed him into the air, lighting upon a limb high up on the great oak, which ever after was known to us as the ‘rooster tree.’ The daring feat of this rooster was the theme of admiration at many a winter’s fireside thereafter. The ‘bear’s hill,’ half a mile into the mysterious western woods, was the spot where, on a never-to-be-forgotten morning, a company of thirty hunters, with dogs and guns, had finally come up with big brown bruin; and ever after when the morning sun shone through the trees and rested upon that hillside we imagined that, through the fluttering leaves and shadows, we could still see the hunters and their dogs, and the big bear in their midst. A more graceful picture rises before us when we call to mind the pleasant morning when the dew drops glittered over the north marshes as we boys went to bring the oxen from pasture, and saw far off, near to the edge of the woods, two deer from the forest contentedly grazing, as if they were themselves a part of our domestic cattle.

“But the pioneer life was not all beauty and romance. It was, even more, hard and unrelenting labor. The courageous toiler must cut away the underbrush and burn it, he must cut down the trees and make them into rails, boards and shingles. Ah, what endless work it was! But the little clearing was finally made; the logs were laid up, one over the other, until the walls of the cabin were completed, and the rude roof of split shingles was laid over it. And then came also the brave young wife, who accepted the prospect before her like the heroine that she was. Year after year, the clearing was enlarged, and a crop grown among the stumps. The marshes and swamps were drained and so converted into meadows. Alas, with this stirring up of the new soil, this reclaiming of the morasses, rose up also the germs of malaria. Regularly as the season came, August and September found the pio-

neer, and sometimes the faithful wife and helpless little ones, shivering by turns and burning with the everlasting ague. Happy was it for them if the ague did not develop into bilious or intermittent fever, or even the dreaded typhoid. Many a brave pioneer, many a struggling wife, many a stricken boy or girl succumbed to those malignant diseases, and the tired bodies found rest in the little graveyards that spread out from year to year around the country churches. In those days, men and women became old at forty-five and fifty years; and only the hardier constitutions lived through that first period of labors, privations and sickness. But the hardier ones did live through it all. Year after year, the forest, the prairie, the marsh and the swamp, put on, little by little, the appearance of the farm and the garden. Wheat and oats, corn, potatoes and buckwheat, grew and ripened among the stumps; and finally the stumps themselves disappeared, and great fields of grain and vegetables and orchards filled the places once occupied by the underbrush and the dark and silent woods. The marshes were turned into pastures and hay fields. The rail fences gave way to boards, to hedges and to wire, until finally the wild rule of wandering cows and young stock was done away with, and domestic animals were fenced in, and need no longer be fenced out. The roads that were once only Indian trails and traces, pathways and stray tracks through the desert, crossing the streams or rivers by fords or ferry boats, were straightened, drained, graded and graveled, and substantial bridges or culverts thrown across the streams, until the highways along the farms became almost as fit for travel as the paved streets of the cities. The rude log house, laid up by the pioneer's own hands, was set aside, and in its place appeared, at first, the neat frame structure, and afterwards, perhaps, the brick or stone mansion. The stick chimney yielded to one of brick. The log sheds and barns disappeared; and in their place were

discovered the comfortable frame shelters and the great bank barns, swelling with hay and corn and wheat. Intellectually and morally, a like transformation took place. Well do I remember the old log school house, half hidden in the woods. There gathered the children of the pioneers from December to March, stamping into the warm room every morning, half frozen from the deep snowbanks; and then again bundling up just before dark every evening, to take the same roads to their homes. Many an ambitious boy, sitting on one of the split log benches of those school houses, and facing one of the lean-to writing desks that lined three sides of the building, thought seriously of the time when he should be congressman, or governor, or, it might be, president; or the more modest youth or maiden, while perhaps enamored of one another, became even more enamored of science, literature and scholarship. And the best of it is that a goodly number of those day-dreams came true. From the log school house went forth many a distinguished man and woman of the nation; and there is little doubt that the toils and privations of home, the long walks from home to school, and the studious quiet of those winter abodes of learning, have all combined to give earnestness, resolution and courage to the young scholars; so that when afterwards they met with their more luxurious city rivals they found no trouble in distancing them in the race of life. The pioneer schools were rude ones, but they were nurseries of robust, virtuous and successful citizens in every walk of life.

“But the log school houses have passed away. More commodious and elegant homes of learning have taken their place; and the modern school building and the neat church edifice ornament the pleasant slopes and cozy valleys throughout all the smiling farming lands, where once the pioneer struggled and triumphed in the hard battle with rude nature. Yes, the pioneer has triumphed. Cultivated fields, pleasant homes, churches and

school houses, line all the well kept highways; and where fifty years ago the wilderness frowned upon the first invasion of the axe, the spade and the plow, there civilization lifts her glorious banner over the wide landscape. Let the pioneers and their children then gather together in those annual harvest reunions to commemorate the noble work, the joys and the sorrows, that laid the founda-

tions of the blessings which we now enjoy. The pioneers builded well; they were the founders of a great nation, the greatest that has ever blest the earth. Let them and their children and their children's children meet from year to year, forever, as we are meeting this afternoon at Clear lake, to keep green the memory of those heroic days and to shed honors forever upon those noble pioneers."

CHAPTER V.

ORGANIZATION OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.

I. LAND TITLES AND PUBLIC SURVEYS.

Sec. 1.—INDIAN TITLES.—When Pierre Navarre located on the St. Joseph, in the year 1820, neither the state of Indiana nor the United States had acquired title to any lands in what is now St. Joseph county, nor indeed to any lands north of the Wabash, except small tracts near Fort Wayne and Lafayette. The title to this great northern wild, its thick woods, oak openings, prairies and marshes, was still in the Indians, as it was left by the treaty made between Anthony Wayne and Little Turtle and the other chiefs, at Greenville, August 3, 1795. Not only was the legal title to the lands still in the Indians, but they continued to occupy the country as their great hunting reserve.

On August 29, 1821, as we have already seen,^a the Ottawas, Chippewas and Pottawatomes of Michigan ceded to the United States a large tract in southern Michigan. This cession included also the eastern part of the ten mile strip between our northern boundary, as fixed by the ordinance of 1787, and the state boundary, as fixed by the enabling act of 1816, on the admission of Indiana into the Union. The western limit of the Indiana strip so acquired by the United States reached to the middle line of range two east; and the southern limit reached to the south line of township thirty-seven north. Those lines take in the northeast quarter of St. Joseph county. The Pottawatomes were then the exclusive owners of

the remainder of the county. By treaty of October 16, 1826, they ceded the western end of the ten mile strip, which included the northwest quarter of St. Joseph county. By treaty of September 28, 1828, an irregular tract lying south of the cession of August 29, 1821, was ceded. This cession reached to and included the southeast quarter of the county.* Finally, by treaty of October 26, 1832, the remainder of the extreme northwest of the state was ceded. This cession included the remaining or southwest quarter of St. Joseph county. The only land title, therefore, which Navarre could acquire, in 1820, was an Indian title. The same was true as to Coquillard on his coming, in 1823, and for three years afterwards, except as to the northeast quarter of the county. Even when Taylor came, in 1827, the Indian title had been extinguished only as to the northern half of the county.

Sec. 2.—FIRST CONGRESSIONAL AND LEGISLATIVE ACTS.—The first act of congress directly affecting St. Joseph county was that approved March 2, 1827, entitled "An act to authorize the state of Indiana to locate and make a road therein named." This act was passed to carry out certain provisions of the treaty of October 16, 1826, by which the Pottawatomes, amongst other things, ceded to the United States, "a strip of land, commencing at Lake Michigan and running to the Wabash river, one hundred feet wide, for a road, and also one section of good land contiguous to said road for each mile of the

a. Chap. 3 of this History; Subd. 5, Sec. 12.

same and also for each mile of a road from the termination thereof, through Indianapolis, to some convenient point on the Ohio river. And the general assembly of the state of Indiana shall have a right to locate the said road, and apply the said sections, or the proceeds thereof, to the making of the same or any part thereof; and the said road shall be at their sole disposal." Following the treaty, and the act of congress in relation thereto, and to provide for carrying the same into effect, the general assembly, by an act approved January 24, 1828, appointed commissioners "to survey and mark a road from Lake Michigan to Indianapolis, agreeably to the late treaty with the Pottawatomie Indians, and the act of congress in confirmation thereof."^a Thus were the first steps taken for the construction of the Michigan road, one of the most important public improvements known in the history of Indiana. The work was of great moment to the whole state, from the Ohio to the lake, but particularly so to St. Joseph county and other northern counties, which would thus be more closely connected with the settled parts of the state and also enabled more conveniently to reach the lake trade at Michigan City, or Trail's Creek, as that place was at first called.^b It was a renewal, by another route, of the old course of commerce from the lakes to the gulf.

The act of January 24, 1828, in relation to the Michigan road, was the first official notice taken by the legislature of the territory of our county. But the proposition to construct a great highway through this region was indeed the giving of most important consideration to the welfare of the valleys of the St. Joseph and the Kankakee.

Sec. 3.—FIRST SURVEYS.—Among the earliest surveys made in the county were those of the Michigan road and of the Michigan road lands. The original survey of the road was begun in the fall of 1828; but that survey

was abandoned as impracticable, being an attempt to lay out a road on a direct line from Lake Michigan to the Wabash, over almost impassable swamps and marshes, chiefly those of the Kankakee country. The route proposed in this survey, from the site of the present city of Michigan City to that of Logansport, was seventy-four miles in length. A second survey, made the same fall, turned to the southeast from Trail's Creek until it reached the south bend of the St. Joseph river. "At this point," say the surveyors in their report, "is a beautiful site for a town." So, in 1828, did the surveyors of the Michigan road make prophecy of the future of the Queen City of the St. Joseph valley.^a From this south bend of the St. Joseph, the survey continued nearly in a direct line to the south. The distance by this route between Michigan City and Logansport, as the extreme points are now called, was found to be one hundred and two miles. The maps and plats of this survey were filed in the office of the secretary of state, December 9, 1828. In the spring of 1829, there was a resurvey of that part of the road from South Bend to Logansport, over practically the same route as that surveyed in the fall of 1828; and the maps, plats and field notes were filed in the office of the secretary of state on June 12, 1829. This survey, as made from Michigan City to South Bend in the fall of 1828, and from South Bend to Logansport in the spring of 1829, was accepted; and the field notes are called the "Field notes of the second survey"; the first being that over the impracticable route from Trail's Creek, or Michigan City, through the swamps, directly to Logansport. Had the first survey been accepted, and the road built on that route, South Bend and St. Joseph county would have been left far to one side; and our history might have been different. Fortunately for us, however, it was according

a. Acts 1827, p. 87.

b. See Chap. 2 of this History; Subd. 2.

a. The field notes on which this remark is written were filed Dec. 9, 1828, and signed by W. W. Wick, surveyor.

to the "Field notes of the second survey," that the road was laid out and constructed.^a

The first public surveys, after those of the Michigan road, were the surveys made in 1829 by William Brookfield, our first county surveyor. Brookfield's surveys were made in townships thirty-seven and thirty-eight, north, ranges one, two and three, east, and included parts of the present townships of Portage, Penn, Clay, German and Warren. Other surveyors during the year 1829 were David Hillis and Thomas Brown. The principal surveyor in connection with the Michigan road and Michigan road lands was William Polke, for a long time commissioner in charge of the construction of the Michigan road, whose surveys extend from the year 1830 to the year 1834, inclusive. Other surveyors were E. H. Lytle, in 1830 and 1834; and Robert Clark, Jr., in 1833. The people were exceedingly urgent for the completion of the Michigan road and for the survey of all the lands of the county; and both these important works were pushed ahead with energy. On the extinguishment of the Indian title to the lands of what is now the southwest quarter of the county by the treaty of October 26, 1832, the surveys were rapidly extended over all our territory; so that by the year 1834 practically all the lands of the county were surveyed. At the beginning of the year 1832 the Michigan road was completed from the Ohio, at Madison, to the Wabash, at Logansport; and by the end of that year the road was opened to the lake, at Michigan City. The tide of emigration, induced by the facilities thus afforded, poured into all the country between the Wabash and the lake; and the population of this vicinity increased very rapidly.

Sec. 4.—FIRST LAND SALES.—While the public surveys were begun in 1829, yet it appears from the plat books now on file in the office of the county auditor that the first sales of public lands were not made un-

til late in the year 1830; and the first sales of the Michigan road lands were made still a year later. Yet, although the actual sales were not completed until the dates named, the entries were made much earlier. After the entries were made, and even after the sales were completed, it was some time yet longer before the patents could issue. On October 4, 1830, the south half of the northwest quarter of section twelve, township thirty-seven, north, range two east, was sold to Lathrop M. Taylor; and on the 25th of the same month the north half of the same tract was sold to Alexis Coquillard. In the spring following, on March 28, 1831, these two men laid out the county seat on the two tracts so purchased, together with a smaller tract in the southwest quarter of section one of the same township and range. Yet on May 12, 1831, in the bond of Coquillard and Taylor agreeing to donate certain lots in the new town for public purposes, they say, "which said several donations are to be legally conveyed in a reasonable time after the patents shall have been issued to the said Coquillard and Taylor." It is very plain that the population was pressing into this rich country much faster than the state and national authorities could prepare for them.

II. ORGANIZATION OF THE COUNTY.

So far had the population of this region increased at the beginning of the year 1830, that the legislature, then in session, deemed it wise to provide for the organization of the two sister counties of the St. Joseph valley. This important act of legislation, which was approved by the governor and became a law January 29, 1830, reads as follows:^a

"An Act for the Formation of the Counties of St. Joseph and Elkhart.

"Section 1. Be it enacted by the General Assembly of the State of Indiana, That from and after the first day of April next,

^a. See further as to the Michigan Road, Chap. 7, Sub. 2, Sec. 3.

^a. Acts 1829, pp. 28-31.

all that tract of country, which is included within the following boundary, shall form and constitute a new county, to be known and designated by the name of the county of St. Joseph, to-wit: Beginning at [the west line of] range No. 2 west from the second principal meridian, of the state of Indiana, on the northern line of the state, thence running east, to where [the east line of] range No. 3 east, intersects the state line; thence south with the range line, thirty miles; thence west to range two west; thence north to the place of beginning.

"Sec. 2. The said new county of St. Joseph, shall, from and after the first day of April next, enjoy all the rights, privileges and jurisdiction, which to separate and independent counties, do and may properly belong and appertain.

"Sec. 3. That Thomas J. Evans and Gillis McBane of Cass county, Daniel North of Randolph county, John Berry of Madison county, and John Ross of Fayette county, are hereby appointed commissioners, agreeable to the act, entitled 'an act for the fixing the seats of justice in all counties hereafter to be laid off.'" The commissioners above named, shall convene at the house of Alexis^b Coquillard, in the said county of St. Joseph, on the fourth Monday of May next, and shall immediately proceed to discharge the duties assigned them by law. It is hereby made the duty of the sheriff of Cass county, to notify the said commissioners, either in person, or by written notification, of their appointment, on or before the first day of May next; and the said sheriff of Cass county, shall receive from the said county of St. Joseph, so much as the county board doing business for said county, shall deem just and reasonable; who are hereby authorized to allow the same, out of any monies

in the county treasury, in the same manner as other monies are paid.

"Sec. 4. The circuit court of the county of St. Joseph shall be holden at the house of Alexis Coquillard, in said county of St. Joseph: Provided, however, that the circuit court, shall have authority to remove the court from the house of Alexis Coquillard, to any other place in said county, previous to the public buildings being completed, should the said court deem it expedient; after the completion of which, the court of the said county of St. Joseph, shall be holden at the court house at the county seat of said county of St. Joseph.

"Sec. 5. The agent who shall be appointed to superintend the sales of lots, at the county seat of the county of St. Joseph, shall reserve ten per cent. out of the proceeds thereof, and pay the same over to such person or persons, as may be appointed by law to receive the same, for the use of a county library for said county of St. Joseph, which he shall pay over at such time or times, and place, as may be directed by law.

"Sec. 6. It shall be the duty of the qualified voters of the county of St. Joseph, at the time of electing a clerk, recorder and associate judges, to elect three justices of the peace, who, when elected and qualified, shall have all the powers and perform all the duties, prescribed by law, as relates to boards of justices, in the several counties; and said board shall have power to hold special sessions and to do and perform any duties required at any previous regular session.

"Sec. 7. That all the territory lying west of said county, to the state line, be, and the same is hereby attached to the said county of St. Joseph, for civil and criminal jurisdiction; and the citizens residing within the bounds so included, shall be entitled to all the privileges and immunities, and be subject to all the taxes, impositions and assessments, of the citizens of the county of St. Joseph.

a. The act referred to was approved January 14, 1824. See Ind. R. S. 1831, p. 459, and 1838, p. 505.

b. Written Alexander in the statute by mistake.

"Sec. 8. That from and after the first day of April next, all that tract of country, which is included and within the following boundary, shall form and constitute a new county, to be known and designated by the name of the county of Elkhart, to-wit: Beginning at [the east line of] range three east [on the northern line of the state], thence running with the state line twenty-four miles east; thence south twenty miles; thence west twenty-four miles; thence north twenty-four [twenty] miles, to the place of beginning.

"Sec. 9. That the said new county of Elkhart, shall, from and after the first day of April next, enjoy all the rights, privileges and jurisdiction, which to separate and independent counties, do, and may properly belong and appertain.

"Sec. 10. That William G. Ewing and Hugh Hanna of the county of Allen, Samuel Fleming and John Bishop of the county of Wayne, and Joseph Bennett of the county of Delaware, are hereby appointed commissioners agreeable to the act, entitled 'an act for the fixing the seats of justice in all counties hereafter to be laid off.' The commissioners above named, shall convene at the house of Chester Sage, in the said county of Elkhart, on the fourth Monday in May next, and shall immediately proceed to discharge the duties assigned them by law. It is hereby made the duty of the sheriff of Allen county, to notify the said commissioners, either in person, or by written notification, of their appointment, on or before the first day of May next; and the said sheriff of Allen county, shall receive from the said county of Elkhart, so much as the board doing county business shall deem just and reasonable; who are hereby authorized to allow the same out of any monies in the county treasury, in the manner as other monies are paid.

"Sec. 11. The circuit court of the county of Elkhart, shall be holden at the house of Chester Sage, in said county of Elkhart: Provided, however, that the circuit court shall

have authority to remove the court from the house of Chester Sage, to any other place in said county, previous to the public buildings being completed, should the said court deem it expedient; after the completion of which, the court of the said county of Elkhart, shall be holden at the court house at the county seat of said county of Elkhart.

"Sec. 12. The agent who shall be appointed to superintend the sales of lots at the county seat of the county of Elkhart, shall reserve ten per cent. out of the proceeds thereof, and pay the same over to such person, or persons, as may be appointed by law to receive the same, for the use of a county library for said county of Elkhart; which he shall pay over at such time or times, and place, as may be directed by law.

"Sec. 13. It shall be the duty of the qualified voters of the county of Elkhart, at the time of electing a clerk, recorder and associate judges, to elect three justices of the peace, who, when elected and qualified, shall have all power, and perform all the duties, prescribed by law, as relates to boards of justices, in the several counties; and said board shall have power to hold special sessions, and to do and perform any duties required at any previous regular session.

"Sec. 14. That all territory lying east of said county to the state line, be, and the same is hereby attached to the said county of Elkhart, for civil and criminal jurisdiction; and the citizens residing within the bounds so included, shall be entitled to all the privileges and immunities, and be subject to all the taxes, impositions and assessments, of the citizens of the county of Elkhart.

"Sec. 15. The county of St. Joseph shall be attached to the first, and the county of Elkhart to the sixth judicial district of the state, for judicial purposes.

"This act to take effect and be in force from and after its passage."

Sec. 1.—ATTACHED TERRITORY.—From the foregoing act it appears that St. Joseph and Elkhart were the only counties then organized

on the northern boundary of the state. All the territory to the west, including that of the present counties of La Porte, Porter and Lake, was attached to St. Joseph county; and all to the east, including the territory of the present counties of La Grange and Steuben, was attached to Elkhart county. In addition, by section eight of an act for the formation of Grant county, approved February 10, 1831, all the unorganized territory then remaining west of the range line dividing ranges three and four east, was attached to St. Joseph county; and that to the east of said line, to Elkhart county.^a This was done in accordance with the practice of the legislature to attach unorganized territory to counties already organized.

The original county of the state was Knox, with its county seat at Vincennes, organized January 14, 1790. Northern Indiana remained within the jurisdiction of Knox county until January 10, 1818, "when this part of the state, extending to Lake Michigan, was embraced in Randolph county, of which Winchester was the county seat, up to the formation of Allen county, December 17, 1823."^b

From the formation of Allen county, in 1823, until that of St. Joseph and Elkhart counties, in 1830, all northern Indiana was attached to Allen county; even as by act of January 29, 1830, the territory now forming La Porte, Porter and Lake counties was attached to St. Joseph county. The territory attached in such cases was not in fact a part of the county to which it was joined; yet, for all practical purposes, it was so treated. And we shall see that St. Joseph county, both under our board of justices and under our board of commissioners, formed the attached territory west to the Illinois line into a distinct township, and otherwise treated it as an integral part of the county.^c

a. Special Acts 1830, pp. 16-18.

b. History of Fort Wayne, by Wallace A. Brice, p. 290. See also Indiana Legislative and State Manual, 1899, pp. 686-688.

c. See Subdivisions 4 and 5 of this chapter.

III. OUR FORM OF COUNTY GOVERNMENT.

Sec. 1.—THE VIRGINIA SYSTEM.—In our local government we are still Virginians. The first civilized authority exercised in this region was that of France; afterwards the power of Great Britain prevailed; the dominion of Spain flashed up for a moment and was gone. During the Revolution, chiefly for the purpose of protecting her Kentucky frontiers, Virginia sent an expedition across the Ohio river under George Rogers Clark, and wrested the country from England. The old commonwealth then formed the territory northwest of the Ohio into one of her counties, named it the county of Illinois, and, so far as suitable to the new conditions, transferred her own form of local county government to this vast wilderness empire. The Virginians were the Romans of our early American history. They had a capacity for government on a large scale. The state was the center of the system, and the county was the unit of subordinate local government. The townships were merely convenient subdivisions created for the purpose of more easily administering the affairs of the county. Such a scheme is well adapted for the government of large territories, particularly when the same are sparsely populated. The authority passes from the state to the counties, and all the affairs of the citizen are administered through the county courts, county boards and other county officers, acting also, when convenient to do so, through subordinate township officers. That is our system of local government, and we received it originally from the Old Dominion. After Virginia had ceded her great county of Illinois to the United States, the government established under the ordinance of 1787, was somewhat modified from the former, or Virginia, system, by a selection of many wise provisions from the laws of other states; but the prevailing character of the machinery of government under the great ordinance remained Virginian.

Sec. 2.—THE NEW ENGLAND SYSTEM.—The

New England system, as it is often called, proceeds, not from the state to the county and then to the individual, but from the individual to the town, or other local community, and then to the state. In the Virginia form of local government the county is the unit, and the town, or township, is quite subordinate. In the New England system the town is the unit, and the county is but an aggregation of towns. St. Joseph county adjoins Berrien county, Michigan, but our political ancestry goes back to Virginia, while that of Berrien county goes back to New York and New England. The original settlers of Michigan came directly from the east and northeast; those of Indiana from the south and southeast. At our northern boundary the two systems meet. The authority of Berrien county is exercised through the board of supervisors of the several townships; that of St. Joseph county, through a county board elected by the people of the whole county. On the other side of the state line the township is supreme, and the county is but an aggregation of townships; on this side of the line the county is supreme, and the townships are but its subordinate divisions. We are very close to Michigan; indeed, the north ten miles of St. Joseph county, as we have seen, was once a part of Michigan. But the forms of government are quite dissimilar. Which form is the better may admit of question. No doubt the Michigan system gives larger consideration to the individual and to the smaller local communities; it is nearer to the people. There the township is more than with us; the road district is more; the school district is more; the power of the individual citizen is greater. But with us the county government is more effective. The county board, consisting of three members, selected from different sections of the county, but elected by the voters of the whole county, is much more efficient than a meeting of the board of supervisors of the several townships. We can carry on public works to much better advantage. We can build court houses, school

houses, roads and bridges more effectively. The work of the state, of the people at large, can be better carried on in Indiana. But it must be admitted that the rights and powers of the individual citizen seem better guarded in our sister state. Each system is good in its way; and the statesmanship that should blend the excellencies of both would merit the very highest honor.

IV. THE BOARD OF JUSTICES.

Sec. 1.—ORGANIZATION OF CIVIL GOVERNMENT.—In accordance with the provisions of section six of the act for the organization of the county, our first county election was held on the first Monday in August, 1830. At this election Lathrop M. Taylor was elected clerk and recorder, and Lambert McCombs, Adam Smith and Levi F. Arnold were elected justices of the peace. The board of justices held its first meeting at the house of Alexis Coquillard, on August 27, 1830. The first entry on the record of the board reads as follows:

“In pursuance of an act of the general assembly of the state of Indiana, entitled an act to provide for the carrying the laws into effect in new counties, approved January 2, 1818; and also the act, entitled an act for the formation of the counties of St. Joseph and Elkhart, passed and approved January 29, 1830, the Justices of the Peace met at the house of Alexis Coquillard, in St. Joseph county, on Friday, the 27th day of August, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty.

“Adam Smith now comes forth and produces his commission from His Excellency, James B. Ray, Governor of the State of Indiana, commissioning him, the said Adam Smith, Justice of the Peace in and for said county of St. Joseph for and during the term of five years from the 11th day of August, 1830; and on the back of said commission is the following endorsement, to wit:

“‘St. Joseph county, }
 “‘State of Indiana, } ss.:

“‘Be it remembered, that on the 27th day

of August, A. D. 1830, personally came Adam Smith, within commissioned, before me, L. M. Taylor, Clerk of the Circuit Court, and being duly sworn on his solemn oath, says that he will support the Constitution of the United States and of the State of Indiana, and that he will to the best of his abilities and judgment discharge the duties of his office of Justice of the Peace in St. Joseph county faithfully, and that he has not since the first day of January, 1819, either directly or indirectly, knowingly given, accepted or carried a challenge to any person in or out of this State to fight a single combat with any deadly weapon, and that he will not knowingly accept or carry a challenge to any person or persons to fight with any deadly weapon in single combat, either in or out of this state, during his continuance in office. Given under my hand and seal the day and date first above written.

“ ‘L. M. TAYLOR, Clerk (Seal).’ ”

Like credentials were presented by Lambert McCombs; and thereupon the Board of Justices was organized by the election of Lambert McCombs as president.

The first order entered was as follows: “Ordered by the Board of Justices of St. Joseph county, that John D. Lasly be appointed Treasurer of St. Joseph county for the year of our Lord 1830; and he is required to give bond and security in the penal sum of \$1,000.” The taxes to be collected in the year of grace 1830 were evidently very light. Mr. William C. Stover, the treasurer of St. Joseph county for this year of our Lord 1907 has been required to give a bond in the sum of \$950,000.

At this first meeting of our first county board other business transacted consisted of the appointment of James Nixon as assessor; Daniel A. Fullerton, collector of taxes, Benjamin Potter, Thomas Skiles and Jacob Keith, constables; Jacob Cripe and John Heag, overseers of the poor; and Daniel Eiler and Samuel Cannon, fence viewers.

Licenses were granted to the American Fur

Company (Alexis Coquillard, agent,) and to Samuel Hanna and Co. (Lathrop M. Taylor, agent,) authorizing them, on payment of a fee of ten dollars each, “to vend foreign merchandise within the county of St. Joseph for the term of one year from the date hereof.”

On Monday, September 6, 1830, the board of justices held their second meeting, also at the house of Alexis Coquillard. Grand and petit jurors for the November term of the Circuit Court were drawn, as follows:

Grand jurors, Samuel Cannon, Jacob White, John Clyburn, William E. Short, Adam Keith, John Banker, Samuel Leeper, Charles Labby, Henley Clyburn, Gamaliel Drulinger, Zachariah Grant, Jacob Cripe, Benjamin Potter, James Nixon, Thomas Clyburn, Phillip Fail, Louis Sancomb and Joseph Adams.

Petit jurors, Paul Egbert, John Drulinger, Daniel Eiler, C. B. Overacker, John Whitaker, Benjamin Coquillard, Israel Rush, Barzilla Drulinger, Jacob Harris, John Hague, Richard Harris, Nathaniel Steele, Samuel Johnston, Jacob Egbert, John Rouleau, Jacob Ritter, Jacob Rhue, Alexis Coquillard, John Wills, John Skiles, Lewis Shirley, Joseph Rohrer, Horace Markham, Samuel Garwood. It does not appear from the records that the juries so selected were ever called upon to serve in court.^a

A third session of the board of justices was held at the house of Alexis Coquillard, on Tuesday, September 14, 1830. At this meeting Thomas J. Evans, John Berry, Gillis McBane and Daniel Worth, commissioners named in the act of January 29, 1830, were allowed three dollars a day each for their services in locating the county seat. William Brookfield was appointed county agent to superintend the sales of lots at the county seat; giving a bond in the sum of five thousand dollars, with Alexis Coquillard and Lathrop M. Taylor as sureties.

The fourth and last meeting of the board
a. See Chap. 6, Sub. 2.

of justices was held at the house of Alexis Coquillard, on November 25, 1830. At this meeting certain lots donated by William Brookfield at the county seat for the use of the county, as contemplated in section five of the act of organization, were accepted and he was directed, as county agent, to make sale of them, on terms fixed by the board.

Sec. 2.—THE FIRST TOWNSHIPS.—The last act of this fourth session of the board of justices was the division of the county into four townships, by the following order:

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that all the district of country lying west of the range line dividing ranges two and three west of the second principal meridian of the state of Indiana shall form and constitute a township in the aforesaid county to be known by the name of Michigan township, and the sheriff of said county is ordered to notify the citizens of the aforesaid township by written notification to meet at the house of Lewis Shirley in said township on the 18th of December next to elect one justice of the peace in and for said township.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that ranges one and two west of the second principal meridian of the state of Indiana shall form and constitute one township to be known by the name of Deschemin township, and the sheriff is ordered to give the citizens of the said township written notification according to law to hold an election at the house of John Drullinger in said township to elect one justice of the peace in and for said township on the 18th day of December next.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that from the second principal meridian of the state until the center of range two east shall form and constitute a township in said county to be known by the name of German township, and the sheriff is hereby ordered to give public notice to the citizens of said township according to law for the qualified voters to meet at the house of David Miller in said township to elect one justice of the peace in and for

said township on the 18th day of December next.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, That all the district of country lying and being from the center of range two east of the second principal meridian of the state and thence running east to the eastern boundary of St. Joseph county shall form and constitute one township to be known and designated by the name of Portage township.”

Michigan township, strictly speaking, was not a part of St. Joseph county. As described in section seven of the act of January 29, 1830, organizing the county, this township embraced “all the territory lying west of said county, to the state line.” It was further said in the same section, that this territory was “attached to the said county of St. Joseph, for civil and criminal jurisdiction; and the citizens residing within the bounds so included, shall be entitled to all the privileges and immunities, and be subject to all the taxes, impositions and assessments, of the citizens of the county of St. Joseph.” The township lay almost wholly on the southern shore of Lake Michigan, from which it received its name. It included the western part of the present county of La Porte and the northern parts of the present counties of Starke, Porter and Lake.

Deschemin township consisted of territory now embraced within eastern La Porte, northern Starke, and western St. Joseph. The towns of new Carlisle and Walkerton, in St. Joseph county; and Hudson, Rolling Prairie and Stillwell, in La Porte county, are within what was Deschemin township. The name of the township is evidently a corruption of the French words *Du Chemin*, the designation formerly given to Hudson Lake. *Lac Du Chemin*, now Hudson Lake, one of the most beautiful of the small lakes of northern Indiana, was in the heart of Deschemin township. The name, *Lac Du Chemin*, that is, the “Lake of the Road,” had reference to the Great Sauk trail, since known as the Chicago road, which passed close to the south edge of the lake.

The Sauk trail runs west by south, through the north part of the present Warren and Olive townships. It passes through the old towns of Terre Coupee, formerly called also Prairie Coupee; Hudson, formerly called Lakeport, on Lac Du Chemin, or Hudson lake; La Porte and Door village, and thence on to Chicago.^a

German township, as laid out by the board of justices, embraced the eastern half of the present township of Olive, all of Warren, and parts of German, Portage, Greene, Liberty and Union, in St. Joseph county; besides the northwest part of Marshall county. North Liberty, in St. Joseph county; and Teegarden, Tyner City, La Paz and Plymouth, in Marshall county, are within the limits of our old German township. The original plat of Plymouth, now the county seat of Marshall county, is on record in plat book number one of St. Joseph county, at page thirteen. It was acknowledged by the proprietors, John Sering, James Blair and William Polke, October 11, 13 and 20, respectively, A. D., 1834, before Lathrop M. Taylor, Recorder of St. Joseph county.

Portage township, as laid out by the board of justices, extended east from the former German township to within three miles of the present eastern boundary of the county. The three mile strip now on the east side of St. Joseph county was then a part of Elkhart county. Lakeville, Woodland, Wyatt, Mishawaka, Notre Dame and South Bend are within the limits of our old Portage township. Bremen, Marshall county, is within the same limits. Osceola was in what is now Elkhart county.

It is to be noted that the names of German and Portage townships, with parts of their respective territories, have been retained by this county. No part of Michigan township, however, was at any time within the present limits of the county; and only a small part of Deschemin township. These last names have

gone from us with the territory to which they were attached. Michigan township, in La Porte county, is a part of the original Michigan township of St. Joseph county; and has retained the name from the time when it was first given by our board of justices. The city of Michigan City is within the same township.

V. THE BOARD OF COMMISSIONERS.

Sec. 1.—ACT OF ORGANIZATION.—There is no record of any action taken by our first and only board of justices after their fourth meeting, held November 25, 1830. By an act approved January 19, 1831,^a the general assembly changed the law regulating the transaction of county business, substituting a board of commissioners for the board of justices and introducing many other important provisions. The act is undoubtedly one of the wisest ever passed by our legislature, and constitutes a most comprehensive and simple code of government for the counties of the state. The law then passed has been modified in several particulars since its first enactment; but the main principles, and even much of the language, remains unchanged. The act also illustrates the early history of county government in our state; and while many of its provisions have since been revised or amended, yet it merits a place in this work as a historical document of the highest interest. It is therefore here given in full:

“An act to regulate the mode of doing County Business in the several Counties in this State.

“Section 1. Be it enacted by the General Assembly of the state of Indiana, That there shall be and hereby is organized in each county in this state, a board of commissioners for transacting county business, to consist of three qualified electors, any two of whom shall be competent to do business, to be elected by the qualified electors of the several counties respectively, on the first Monday in August next, as general elections are conducted. Provided, however, In voting for commissioners,

^a. See map: “Territory of Michigan, by John Farmer, 1835.”

^a. Revised Statutes, 1831, p. 129.

the ticket shall always show which is voted for, for first, second or third district, and should there be two or more candidates in any one district, the person having the highest number of votes, shall be elected for such district.

“Sec. 2. At the first election in pursuance of this act, the person having the highest number of votes shall serve three years; the person having the next highest number of votes shall serve two years, and the person having the next highest number of votes shall serve one year; and thereafter annually, one commissioner shall be elected who shall serve three years, and each commissioner elected according to the provisions of this act, shall continue in office until his successor is elected and qualified; but if two or more persons shall have an equal number of votes as above, their grade shall be determined by lot by the clerk, in the presence and under the direction of the returning officers.

“Sec. 3. Each person elected as a commissioner, shall, on receiving a certificate of his election, take the oath or affirmation required by the constitution of this state, before some person legally authorized to administer the same; which oath or affirmation, being certified on the back of such certificate, under the hand and seal of the person administering the same, shall be sufficient authority for such commissioner to take his seat with, and act as a member of the board, during the time for which he was elected.

“Sec. 4. The commissioners thus elected and qualified, shall be considered a body corporate and politic, by and under the name and style of the board of commissioners of the county of, and as such by and under such name and style, may sue and be sued, plead and be impleaded, defend and be defended, answer and be answered unto, in any court either of law or equity, and do and transact all business on behalf of their respective counties, that may be assigned them from time to time by law; and in all cases where their respective counties may

have been injured, or may hereafter be injured, in their goods, chattels, lands, tenements, rights, credits, effects or contracts; such commissioners shall and may, by and under their corporate name and style, without setting out their individual names, bring any suit or suits, action or actions, either in law or equity, which may be best calculated to obtain redress for any such injury, in the same way or manner that private individuals might or could do, and may in like way and manner, by and under their corporate name and style, be sued, by any person or persons having any manner of claims against such county.

“Sec. 5. The board of commissioners shall meet at the court house, in each and every county, for the purpose aforesaid, or at the usual place of holding the circuit court in such county, on the first Mondays in January, March, May, September, and November, in each and every year, and may sit three days at each term, if the business of the county shall require it: Provided, however, if the circuit court shall meet on any of the before mentioned days, the commissioners shall meet on the Monday preceding.

“Sec. 6. The clerk of the circuit court shall, by virtue of his office, attend the meeting of the board of commissioners, and keep a record of their proceedings, and do such other business as he shall be required by law to do; and the sheriff of the county shall also, by himself or deputy, attend said board and execute their orders.^a

a. The duties of the sheriff as fixed by this section remain substantially unchanged; he continues to be the executive officer of the board, and executes its orders as he does those of the Circuit Court.

The duties here assigned to the clerk of the Circuit Court have, however, since the year 1841, been performed by the County Auditor. By an act approved February 12, 1841, the office of County Auditor was created. By section eight of that act it was provided that the auditor, by virtue of his office, should be “clerk to the board of County Commissioners.” By section fifty-three the clerk was required to turn over to the auditor all books, papers, etc., relative to county business; and by section fifty-four all the duties of clerks in relation to county affairs were required to be performed by the auditor. The auditor is, in effect, the County Clerk; while the clerk of the Circuit Court performs the duties of a court officer only. See Acts 1841, pp. 10-24, R. S. 1843, p. 189.

“Where money has been advanced by any clerk, or other county officer, for the use and benefit of his county, pursuant to the requisitions of law, the board doing county business shall order such money, so advanced, to be first paid; and where there is any judgment or judgments against any county in this state, the board may in their discretion order when and in what manner such judgment or judgments, shall be discharged, not inconsistent with the constitution of this state or of the United States, any law to the contrary notwithstanding. And when any county shall owe the commissioners for locating any seat of justice therein, such claims shall be preferred to any other against said county; and the collector shall receive the said orders for commissioners’ wages, and shall pay the same out of the first monies that shall come to his hands, after such orders shall be presented to him, and the said orders accepted shall be a sufficient voucher in the hands of such collector for any claims the county may have against him, to their full amount.

“Sec. 8. When two only of the members shall be present at the meeting of the board, and a division shall take place on any question, it shall be continued until the next meeting, before it shall be finally determined. When any vacancy shall happen in the office of commissioner, the circuit court of the county, or the two associate justices in vacation, shall appoint a suitable person or persons to fill such vacancy until the next annual election of commissioners, when such vacancy shall be filled by an election by the electors of the county.

“Sec. 9. It shall be the duty of the board of commissioners at their May session, in each year, to receive and inspect the listers’ books, and levy a county tax according to law, and cause their clerk to make out a duplicate for collection accordingly.

“Sec. 10. The commissioners of each county respectively, shall have and use a common seal, for the purpose of sealing their proceedings; and copies of the same, when signed

and sealed by the said commissioners, and attested by their clerk, shall be good evidence of such proceedings, on the trial of any cause, in any of the courts of this state. The commissioners aforesaid, at their session in November, or when the circuit term prevents their meeting in November, then at their first meeting thereafter, in every year, shall make a fair and accurate statement of the receipts and expenditures of the preceding year, and have the same set up at the court house door, and at two other public places in their county respectively, and published in some newspaper in their county, if there be any; and if the said commissioners, or either of them, after accepting their appointment, shall neglect or refuse to do his or their duty, in office, he or they so offending, shall, on conviction by indictment before the circuit court of the proper county, be fined in any sum not exceeding one hundred dollars.

“Sec. 11. And it is hereby made the duty of the present boards doing the business of the several counties, to meet on the first Monday of May, eighteen hundred and thirty-one, and lay their respective counties off into three equal commissioner’s districts, numbered in numerical order, one, two, and three; and one commissioner shall be elected in each of said districts, by a vote of the whole county; and said districts when so laid off, may be altered once in every three years thereafter, if justice require it, and not oftener: Provided, however, that nothing in this act shall be so construed as to affect the term of office of any commissioner heretofore elected. But when a vacancy shall occur in any board of commissioners, now in existence, the same shall be supplied by a person to be elected from one of such districts, in numerical order.

“Sec. 12. That all the duties heretofore required of the boards doing county business, in the several counties in this state, and not included or otherwise directed in this act, be and the same is hereby made the duty of said commissioners, to do and perform, in the same manner as though it were named in this act.

"Sec. 13. The commissioners so elected and qualified, shall each receive two dollars per day, for each and every day that they may necessarily be employed in transacting the county business; and said board of commissioners, when organized, shall possess the powers and authority heretofore given to the county board of justices.

"Sec. 14. All suits, pleas, complaints, prosecutions, and proceedings, which may be pending in any court, to be tried for or against any board of justices, previous to the taking effect of this act, shall be prosecuted to final judgment and execution, in the same name and manner, as the same might have been done, had this law not been passed; and all contracts either written or verbal, made by such board of justices, previous to the taking effect of this act, shall remain valid in law and equity, and suit may be thereupon brought, in the same way and manner as the same might have been, had this act not have been passed, with this difference, that the corporate name of the board of commissioners shall be used, instead of the name of the board of justices.

"Sec. 15. It shall be the duty of the clerks of the several boards doing county business, to keep fair books, wherein shall be kept the accounts of the county, to attest all orders issued by the board for the payment of money, and enter the same in numerical order, in a book to be kept for that purpose; and shall copy into their said books the reports of the treasurer of the receipts and disbursements of their respective counties, and whenever the duplicate shall be put into the hands of the collector, it shall be the duty of said clerks to send a statement of the sum where-with such collector stands charged, to the county treasurer.

"Sec. 16. When any person has an attested county order in his name, of a larger amount than his county tax, and is desirous to appropriate a part of such order to the payment of such tax, he is hereby authorized to apply to the clerk of the board doing county business,

whose duty it shall be to give to the holder of such order, and in exchange therefor, two or more attested county orders, making together the same amount with the original order, which shall thereupon be cancelled; and such clerk shall insert in every such order, that the same with others, were so given in exchange to for such original order, together with the number and amount of such original order; one of which orders shall be for the amount of his tax, and shall appear on its face to be intended for the payment thereof.

"Sec. 17. Whenever any person shall exhibit any claim against any county, for services rendered, for which the fund arising from the sale of lots, or otherwise, at the county seat, is specially appropriated, and those funds have been fully expended, it shall be the duty of the board doing county business, to give such claimant an order on the county treasury, for such sum as may be due to such claimant, to be paid out of any monies not otherwise appropriated.

"Sec. 18. Every collector of county taxes is hereby required to receive any regularly attested county order, made by the board doing county business, when the same may be tendered to him by any person in payment of such person's taxes, due such county.

"Sec. 19. No collector, or other person doing county business, shall, either directly or indirectly, purchase or receive in payment, exchange, or in any way whatever, any demand against his county, or any county order for a claim allowed by the board doing county business, at any time during the period for which he may be elected, for a less amount than that expressed on the face of such order or demand against the county; and every person elected, or appointed to do county business, shall, before entering on the duties of his office, take an oath not to violate the provisions of this section; and any collector or other person doing county business, offending against the provisions of this section, on conviction thereof upon indictment or present-

ment, shall be fined for every such offense, in any sum not exceeding five hundred dollars.

“Sec. 20. That the qualified voters residing within the several townships of the several counties of this state, shall meet together at the usual places of holding general township elections, on the first Monday in April next; and annually on the first Monday in April thereafter, for the purpose of electing as many constables in each township as there are justices of the peace within the same, and shall at the same time elect one inspector of elections for each township, two fence viewers, two overseers of the poor, and as many supervisors of highways as there are now or may hereafter be allotted to the respective townships by the proper board of commissioners; and in all cases of failure on the part of the qualified voters, to elect any such township officers, it shall be the duty of the board of commissioners, at the next session after the time such election should have been held, to appoint such officers, to remain in office until the time for the next election. Nothing in this act shall be so construed as to affect or repeal the laws now in force, regulating the manner of doing business, in the counties of Dearborn and Switzerland, except as to the election of township supervisor.

“Sec. 21. The above named township officers shall possess the same qualifications, and perform the same duties, as are required of such officers by the laws now in force; the said township elections to be held and conducted in the same manner that general and township elections are now held and conducted, and the constables shall give such bond and security, for the performance of their duty, as is now required by law.

“Sec. 22. That the board of commissioners shall, so soon as may be after the first election held under the provisions of this act, divide the several townships within their respective counties, into as many highway districts as they may deem necessary; which districts shall be designated and numbered in numerical order, and recorded by the clerk of the

board of commissioners. Where any vacancy shall happen in any of the township officers, the said board of commissioners shall, at their next session, appoint a suitable person or persons to fill such vacancy until the next annual election for township officers, when such vacancy shall be filled by an election of the electors of the township.

“Sec. 23. It shall be the duty of the said inspectors of elections in each township, within three days after such election, to make out and deliver to the clerk of the circuit court, a list of the several township officers, whose duty it shall be to make out certificates of the election of the person or persons elected, and the sheriff of said county shall deliver the same to the township officers so elected.

“Sec. 24. The circuit courts in counties where court houses shall not have been erected, shall be holden for the time being, at the place designated by law or selected by the court; and the boards of commissioners in such counties, shall with all convenient speed, proceed to the completion of a court house, jail and other public buildings for the same, and keep the same in repair.

“Sec. 25. The board of commissioners, in their respective counties, at their first meeting after the passage of this act, or some subsequent meetings, shall appoint some fit person, as trustee of the public seminary of their respective counties, who, on acceptance of such appointment, shall take an oath of office, faithfully to discharge the duties of his said office according to law, and also give bond, payable to the state of Indiana, with two sufficient securities, in the penal sum of double the amount as near as may be, of the funds of the county seminary, conditioned for the faithful performance of the duties of his office, and for paying over all monies, and delivering over all books, bonds, and papers, that may be in his hands as trustee, to his successor in office, when his term of service shall have expired agreeably to law; which bond shall be filed in the office of the clerk of the

proper county, and shall not be void on one recovery, but may be put in suit from time to time, as often as occasion may require: Provided, however, That this act shall in no way be construed, so as to interfere with or repeal any existing laws, respecting the county seminary of Switzerland county, or any other county, for which special laws relative to county seminaries have heretofore been enacted.

“Sec. 26. The board of commissioners, shall annually allow the clerk and sheriff of their county, such compensation for their extra services, rendered the board of commissioners, the circuit court of such county, and the county, in any manner whatever.

“Sec. 27. The board of county commissioners in each and every county, shall cause a pound to be erected at or near the several court houses, with a good and sufficient fence, gate, lock and key, where estray horses, mules and asses may be kept, on the first day of the terms of the circuit courts; and the said board shall also appoint some fit person, who shall take charge of said pound, and keep the same in repair, and whose duty it shall also be to attend at the said pound, on the several court days, during the time such estrays are directed to continue there, with the keep of the same; and the said board shall make such reasonable allowance for the erecting and keeping such pound as to them shall seem proper, to be paid out of the county treasury; and any person being appointed and undertaking the charge of said pound, and failing to discharge his duties agreeably to the directions herein expressed, shall forfeit and pay to the person injured, the sum of eight dollars for every such offense, with costs, recoverable before any justice of the peace of the county where such offense shall have been committed.

“Sec. 28. From all decisions of the several boards of commissioners, there shall be allowed an appeal to the circuit court, by any person or persons aggrieved; and the person or persons appealing, shall take the same

within thirty days after such decision, by giving bond with security, to the acceptance of the clerk of such board, conditioned for the faithful prosecution of such appeal and the payment of costs already accrued, and which may thereafter accrue, if the same shall be adjudged by the said court, to be paid by such appellant; and the clerk shall docket such appeal, with the cases pending in the circuit court, within twenty days after the taking of such appeal.”

Sec. 2.—OUR FIRST COMMISSIONERS.—The first commissioners of St. Joseph county, elected on the first Monday in August, 1831, in pursuance of the provisions of section one of the foregoing act, were Aaron Stanton, David Miller and Joseph Rohrer. As appears from section eleven of said act, it was made the duty of the board of justices in each county to hold a meeting on the first Monday in May, 1831, “and lay their respective counties off into three equal commissioner’s districts, numbered in numerical order, one, two and three”; and it was further provided in the same section that “one commissioner shall be elected in each of said districts, by a vote of the whole county.” It seems, however, that no meeting of the board of justices, such as provided for in the act, was held; and the county was therefore not divided into commissioner’s districts as contemplated by the legislature. Our first commissioners were consequently not chosen by districts, as required by the act; and some doubt arose as to the legality of their election. To remedy this irregularity, the legislature passed the following legalizing statute, approved January 31, 1832:—

“An act legalizing the proceedings of the board of commissioners of St. Joseph county.

“WHEREAS, It has been represented to this General Assembly, that there were three justices of the peace elected in the county of St. Joseph, to transact county business, two of whom shortly afterwards removed from said county, and thereby said board became

a. Acts 1831, p. 105.

vacant; and that agreeably to an act, approved January 19th, 1831, regulating the mode of doing county business in the several counties in this state, there were three commissioners elected without regard to districting, who have since laid the same off in commissioner districts; Therefore,

"Be it enacted by the General Assembly of the State of Indiana, That the election of said commissioners, and all proceedings relating thereto in St. Joseph county, and the proceedings of said board, so far as relates to laying off the same in districts, be, and the same are hereby legalized."

VI. EARLY COUNTY RECORDS.

Sec. 1.—ORGANIZATION OF THE BOARD.—

The story of the development of our county during its formative period, the changes in the county boundaries, the location of the county seat, the erection of county buildings, the formation of the different townships, and many other matters connected with the organization of the new county, can be found nowhere so fully and satisfactorily detailed as in the records of the county board during the early years of our history. The chief part of the records of the board of justices has already been given. The first records of the board of county commissioners are of equal historical interest. These records open as follows:

"In pursuance of an act of the general assembly of the state of Indiana, approved January the 19th, 1831, the board of commissioners met at the house of Alexis Coquillard in said county on the first Monday of September, A. D., 1831, at 12 o'clock on said day.

"David Miller now produces his certificate of election, in the words and figures following, to-wit:

" 'State of Indiana, St. Joseph County, ss. I, L. M. Taylor, clerk of the St. Joseph circuit court, do hereby certify that David Miller has been elected county commissioner in said county and that he received the second highest number of votes of said county and that he is entitled to serve for the term of two years from the date hereof and until his successor is elected and qualified.

" 'In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed the adopted seal of the St. Joseph Circuit Court, at South Bend, this fourth day of August, A. D., 1831.

" 'L. M. TAYLOR, Clerk.'

"On the back of which certificate is the following endorsement, to-wit:

" 'State of Indiana, St. Joseph County, ss. Be it remembered that on the 5th day of September, A. D., 1831, personally appeared before me, the undersigned, an acting justice of the peace in and for said county, the within commissioned, David Miller, who being duly affirmed saith that he will support the constitution of the United States and also the constitution of the State of Indiana, and also faithfully and impartially execute the within office of county commissioner according to law and the best of his abilities and judgment, and that he will not, either directly or indirectly buy, receive or take any county order, allowance or claim against said county during his continuance in office for a less amount than that expressed on the face of such order or demand against said county.

" 'Given under my hand and seal the date first above written.

" 'LEVI F. ARNOLD,

(Seal)

" 'J. of P.' "

Joseph Rohrer also appeared and qualified in like manner. Having received the third highest number of votes, he was, according to the provisions of section two of the act of January 19, 1831, declared to be a member of the board of commissioners for one year. Aaron Stanton, the third commissioner, who was elected for three years, did not appear and qualify until the third day of the term, Wednesday, September 7, 1831. That part of the oath of the county commissioners relating to county orders was in accordance with the provisions of section nineteen of the act, approved January 19, 1831, creating boards of county commissioners.

Sec. 2.—ADOPTION OF A COUNTY SEAL.—In the afternoon of the first day's session a form of county seal was adopted by an order reading as follows:

"The board adopt the following for the purpose of sealing their proceedings which is engraved with St. Joseph County, Indiana,

[around the margin], with the insignia of an eagle engraved on it [that is, on the face of the seal]; which will more fully appear by an impression being made on the margin of this page."

The impression of the seal, found on the margin of the page of the old record and referred to in the order, shows the words, "St. Joseph's County, Indiana," instead of "St. Joseph County, Indiana," as required by the order. The later form is the one now in use.

Sec. 3.—OTHER ORDERS.—The remaining orders of the first day of the session are as follows:

"The board of commissioners now proceed to select a list of grand jurors for the November term of the circuit court, and draw from the box the following names:

"Gayas Munger, Horace Wood, Jacob Ritter, John Banker, William Garwood, Alexander Blake, James S. Garoutte, John Wells, Samuel Rupel, H. Carpenter, Andrew Shaw, Peter Johnson, Orra Morris, Charles Oasterhouse, Samuel L. Cottrell, John Rupel, Samuel Harberson, Henly Clyburn.

"And also the board then proceed to select the petit jurors for said term:

"Jacob Eutzler, John Welsh, Joseph Pemberton, Joseph Osborn, E. H. Brown, Benjamin Gillbreath, Wyley Jones, John Martindale, sen., Zachariah Grant, Jesse Skinner, Scott West, James Highly, John Treaver, Benjamin Coquillard, John Smith, sen., Jacob Egbert, Nathan B. Nicols, Ezekiel Thomas, Lewis Shirley, John Hague, Christian Holler, Charles Roe, Jr., David Pagin, Robert Redding.

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, That L. M. Taylor, clerk, be allowed out of the county treasury the sum of forty-eight dollars for blank books, a county seal and blank paper purchased by him for the use of said county.

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, That the sum of seventy-five cents be allowed out of the county treasury for each wolf scalp over six months old and thirty-seven and a half cents for each wolf scalp under six months

old, agreeable to the act to encourage the killing of wolves, approved February 10th, 1831."

On the second day of their first term, the board of commissioners made the following orders:

Sec. 4.—EXEMPTIONS FROM TAXATION.—"Ordered by the board aforesaid, That the following persons be exempt from paying a poll tax, either for state or county purposes: John Clyburn, Samuel Johnson, John Martindale, sen., Basil Sperry—for the year 1831."

The reasons for this exemption are not given. According to section one of the revenue law then in force, approved February 10, 1831,^a a poll tax of thirty-seven and one-half cents was to be assessed "on each male inhabitant between twenty-one and sixty years of age"; but the board was given "discretionary power to exempt any person over the age of fifty years from the payment of a poll tax, who is unable to pay the same, or on account of bodily disability." It is also provided in section two of the same act, "That all persons who have served in the land or naval service of the United States, during the revolutionary war, be and they are hereby exempt from the payment of a poll tax and a tax upon personal property." To secure this exemption the soldier was required to make affidavit before some justice of the county, "That he has served in the land or naval service of the United States during the revolutionary war, three months or upwards; for the taking of which affidavit, the justice shall not be entitled to receive any fee or compensation whatever." Similar favors were afterwards given to soldiers of the Mexican war, by acts approved January 14, 1847.^b

The order for the first ferry over the St. Joseph river was as follows:

Sec. 5.—THE FIRST FERRY AND STEAMBOAT LANDING.—"Ordered by the board aforesaid, that a ferry be established at the east end of Water street [now La Salle avenue], in the

a. Revised Statutes 1831, p. 426.

b. Acts 1846, pp. 59 and 74.

town of South Bend, over the St. Joseph river,^a and that there be a tax assessed thereon to the amount of two dollars; and that N. B. Griffith be licensed to keep the aforesaid ferry, and that the said Griffith be required to keep a good and sufficient flat, or boat, to convey conveniently over said river two horses and a wagon at one time.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that the following be the rates of ferriage at the ferry established at the town of South Bend, to-wit: For each person, $6\frac{1}{4}$ cents; for a man and horse, $12\frac{1}{2}$ cents; for one horse and a wagon or carriage, 25 cents; for two horses and wagon, $31\frac{1}{4}$ cents; for each additional horse, with a wagon as above, $6\frac{1}{4}$ cents; for oxen in wagons the same rates as horses; for loose cattle, three cents a head; for hogs and sheep, two cents a head.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that the said N. B. Griffith be required to keep twelve hands to attend the aforesaid ferry.”

The following orders were also made on the second day of said September term:

Sec. 6.—LICENSES TO DO BUSINESS.—“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that five dollars shall be the amount to be assessed on each tavern license and retailer of spirituous or strong liquors, foreign and domestic groceries.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that there be assessed on each license to vend wooden clocks in said county the sum of eight dollars per annum.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that Peter Johnson be allowed a tavern license to keep a tavern at the town of South Bend by his payment into the county treasury of the sum of five dollars, to commence on the 1st of August, 1831.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that Benjamin Coquillard be licensed to keep a tavern at the town of South Bend by his paying into the county treasury the sum of five dollars.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that

^a. A steamboat landing was established at the same place.

Calvin Lilly be licensed to keep a tavern at the town of South Bend by his paying into the county treasury the sum of five dollars.

“Ordered, that the American Fur company be licensed to vend foreign merchandise in said county one year from the date hereof by their paying into the county treasury the sum of ten dollars.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that George Sumption be allowed the sum of one dollar and fifty cents out of any money in the treasury not otherwise appropriated for two wolf scalp certificates.

“Ordered by the board, that Horatio Chapin be required to pay into the county treasury the sum of eleven dollars for a license to vend foreign goods in said county for one year from the date hereof.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that David Pickering, deputy sheriff of Allen county be allowed the sum of five dollars for notifying the commissioners to re-locate the seat of justice of St. Joseph county.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that Lewis Shirley be allowed the sum of two dollars for services rendered in making a return of the annual election from Michigan township.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, That John Drullinger be allowed the sum of one dollar for services rendered in making a return of the annual election from Deschemin township.

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, That each person of the grand and petit juries be allowed the sum of fifty cents for their services rendered in attending the November term of the St. Joseph circuit court; and the orders shall be issued by the clerk on satisfaction being made of their respective attendances.”

The jurors, grand and petit, thus allowed fifty cents each for their services, on strict proof furnished of their actual attendance, were the second set of jurors that were selected in St. Joseph county. The jurors selected the previous year by the board of

justices were not called into service nor is there any record other than that here given of the service of jurors selected in 1831.

Indeed it does not appear that the November term, 1831, of the St. Joseph Circuit court was ever held. The presiding judge failed to appear, although the jurors were selected and summoned. This neglect occasioned some complaint, as may be inferred from a communication from "One of the people" which appeared in the second number of the *Northwestern Pioneer*. The judge is there severely upbraided for neglect of duty, "notwithstanding he is paid a salary of seven hundred dollars a year for his services."^a

VII. LOCATION OF THE COUNTY SEAT.

Sec. 1.—ST. JOSEPH, THE FIRST COUNTY SEAT.—The board of justices, as we have seen, held their sessions at the house of Alexis Coquillard, in South Bend. The board of commissioners did likewise. The St. Joseph circuit court was also holden in the same hospitable mansion.^b Indeed for several years after the organization of the county the seat of justice was actually at the house of Alexis Coquillard. Theoretically, however, the county seat was for a time on the farm of William Brookfield, in a town laid out by him at the portage of the St. Joseph. This town was called St. Joseph. Though named as the first county seat, it was never in fact more than a town on paper. The location of the county seat at St. Joseph was made by the commissioners appointed under section three of the act for the formation of St. Joseph and Elkhart counties. This action of the locating commissioners never gave satisfaction to the people of the county. A petition asking for the appointment of other commissioners to relocate the county seat was circulated amongst the settlers, received over

one hundred and twenty-five signatures, and was laid before the legislature that convened at Indianapolis, December 6, 1830. That body, in an act approved February 1, 1831,^a granted the prayer of the petitioners, the act being as follows:

Sec. 2.—ACT TO RE-LOCATE THE COUNTY SEAT.—"An act to re-locate the County Seat of St. Joseph county.

"Section 1. Be it enacted by the general assembly of the state of Indiana, that Absalom Holcomb and William N. Hood of Allen county, John Scott of Cass county, Chester Sage and John Jackson of Elkhart county, are hereby appointed commissioners to review and should they judge expedient, to re-locate the county seat of St. Joseph county. The said commissioners shall convene at the house of William Brookfield, in the said county of St. Joseph, on the second Monday of May next, and shall immediately proceed to discharge the duties assigned them by law.^b It is hereby made the duty of the sheriff of Allen county, to notify the said commissioners, either in person or by written notification, of their appointment, on or before the first day of May next; and the said sheriff shall receive from the said county of St. Joseph, so much as the county commissioners of said county shall deem just and reasonable, who are hereby authorized to allow the same out of any monies in the county treasury, in the same manner as other monies are paid.

"Sec. 2. Should said commissioners after examination of the present seat of justice of said county, be of opinion that the public interest demands a removal or re-location of said seat of justice, they shall then proceed and be governed in all respects by the law forming said county of St. Joseph,^c as though they had been appointed to fix the said county seat, at the formation of said county.

a. "The *Northwestern Pioneer and St. Joseph's Intelligencer*, South Bend, Indiana, Wednesday, November 23, 1831."

b. See Sec. 4 of the Act for the formation of the counties of St. Joseph and Elkhart, set out in Subdivision 2 of this chapter.

a. Acts 1830, p. 21.

b. See Sec. 3 of the act for the formation of the counties of St. Joseph and Elkhart, and note a, Subd. 2, of this chapter.

c. The law referred to is set out in full in Subd. 2, of this chapter.

"Sec. 3. That the county agent and all other officers within the said county, when the county seat is hereby located, shall be governed in all respects by the law forming said county, as though the county seat had been satisfactorily fixed by the first commissioners appointed for that purpose.

"Sec. 4. Should the commissioners hereby appointed, fix the county seat at any other place than that fixed by the former commissioners, then the said county commissioners shall deliver over to William Brookfield, and to all other persons who may have donated to said county, all monies, lands and other effects which they may have given to said county, as a consideration for said county seat."

Sec. 3.—RE-LOCATION.—The report of the commissioners so appointed by the legislature to re-locate the county seat of St. Joseph county appears of record in the proceedings of the third and last day's session of the first term of the board of county commissioners, Wednesday, September 7, 1831. The record is as follows:

"The commissioners' report which was filed in the clerk's office in vacation of said [county] board is now brought into court to be made a matter of record here, to-wit:

"The undersigned commissioners appointed by an act of the legislature of the state of Indiana, at their session in the year A. D. 1831, entitled an act to re-locate the county seat of St. Joseph county, met at the house of William Brookfield, in the said county of St. Joseph, on the second Monday of May, A. D. 1831; and after being duly sworn as the law directs, proceeded immediately to examine the present seat of justice for said county of St. Joseph, and are of opinion that public interest requires a removal of said seat of justice, and immediately proceeded to select a suitable site for the county seat of said county of St. Joseph; and, after making all the examinations required by law, have selected the town of South Bend, as laid out and recorded on the records of said

county, and have hereby established the same; and have received from the persons herein-after mentioned the following donations in lands, lots and obligations for the payment of the sums of money stipulated in the following bonds, to-wit: The bonds of Lathrop M. Taylor and Alexis Coquillard, guaranteed by Samuel Hanna, Joseph Rohrer, Samuel Studebaker and D. H. Coldrick for the conveyance to the use of the county, for the following distinguished lots in the town of South Bend: Lots Nos. 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 400, 401, 402, 296, 299, 302, 344, 323 and 257. And also the lots specified in said bond to religious societies, school purposes and four acres of land described in said bonds for a public graveyard, in addition to the lots and ground set apart and marked on the plat of said town for a public square, religious and school purposes. And also the joint bond and obligation of the above mentioned Lathrop M. Taylor, Alexis Coquillard, Joseph Rohrer, Samuel Studebaker, Samuel Hanna and David Coldrick for the payment of three thousand dollars to the commissioners of said county, payable in the annual installments of one thousand dollars each. Which said several bonds and obligations are hereby particularly referred to and made a part of this report; all of which bear date herewith.

"In witness whereof we have hereunto set our hands this twelfth day of May, A. D. 1831.

"ABSALOM HOLCOMB,

"WILLIAM N. HOOD,

"CHESTER SAGE,

"JOHN JACKSON,

"Commissioners.

"Know all men by these presents, That we Lathrop M. Taylor, Alexis Coquillard, Joseph Rohrer, Samuel Studebaker, Samuel Hanna and David Coldrick, do hereby bind and obligate ourselves and our heirs and representatives to well and truly pay or cause to be paid unto the commissioners of the county of St. Joseph, in the state of Indiana, or their successors in office, in the

full and just sum of three thousand dollars, to be paid as follows: One thousand in one year from the signing and ensembling of this bond, and one thousand in two years and the residuary one thousand in three years; in consideration that the county seat of St. Joseph county, in the state aforesaid, shall be permanently located at the South Bend, in said county.

“ ‘In testimony whereof we have hereunto set our hands and seals on this the twelfth day of May, in the year of our Lord, eighteen hundred and thirty-one.

“ ‘LATHROP M. TAYLOR, (Seal.)

“ ‘ALEXIS COQUILLARD, (Seal.)

“ ‘JOSEPH ROHRER, (Seal.)

“ ‘SAMUEL STUDEBAKER, (Seal.)

“ ‘SAMUEL HANNA, (Seal.)

“ ‘D. H. COLDRIK, (Seal.)

“ ‘Attest: Horace Wood, Hiram Dayton.

“ ‘Know all men by these presents, That we, Lathrop M. Taylor and Alexis Coquillard, do by these presents obligate ourselves and our representatives well and truly to convey and donate by an indisputable title to the county agent whom the commissioners shall appoint agent of the county of St. Joseph, in the state of Indiana, for the use of said county, fifteen in lots situated in the town of South Bend, and designated on the plat of said town by being numbered, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 400, 401, 402, 296, 299, 302, 344, 323 and 257; and to give and donate and convey in lot number 341 on said town plat to and for the use of a religious denomination of people called the United Brethern, to build thereon a church for worship; also in lot number four hundred and three on said town plat for the same purpose for the German Baptist congregation; also in lot number two hundred and thirty-four on said town plat for a church for the denomination commonly called the Presbyterian; also to give and donate for the use and convenience of said town four acres of land on the east half of the southwest quarter of section number twelve in town number

thirty-seven of range number two east, to be dedicated and used as a public graveyard;—all of which said several donations are to be legally conveyed in a reasonable time after the patents shall have issued to the said Coquillard and Taylor; in consideration that the county seat shall be permanently located at South Bend, in said county.

“ ‘Witnessed our hands and seals on this twelfth day of May, 1831.

“ ‘LATHROP M. TAYLOR, (Seal.)

“ ‘ALEXIS COQUILLARD, (Seal.)

“ ‘Attest: Horace Wood, Hiram Dayton.

“ ‘Know all men by these presents, That we, Samuel Hanna, Joseph Rohrer, Samuel Studebaker and David Coldrick, do bind and obligate ourselves and our representatives, under a penalty of two thousand dollars, to secure and guarantee the stipulations and obligations of the said Coquillard and Taylor in their above bond, according to the true spirit and equitable meaning thereof, waving all legal technicalities or inaccuracies, if any there be.

“ ‘Witness our hands and seals on this twelfth day of May, 1831.

“ ‘SAMUEL HANNA, (Seal.)

“ ‘JOSEPH ROHRER, (Seal.)

“ ‘SAMUEL STUDEBAKER, (Seal.)

“ ‘D. H. COLDRIK, (Seal.)

“ ‘Attest: Horace Wood, Hiram Dayton.’ ”

Sec. 4.—SOUTH BEND THE PERMANENT COUNTY SEAT.—Thus was the county seat definitely and permanently fixed at the new town near the south bend of the St. Joseph river, laid out March 28, 1831, by Alexis Coquillard and Lathrop Minor Taylor. The effort of William Brookfield, our first surveyor and one of the most distinguished of our early settlers, to build up a business center at the old portage was a natural but a mistaken one. It is true that commerce had gone by the St. Joseph-Kankakee portage for unknown ages. The ancient traders went from the lakes up the St. Joseph, over the portage, down the Kankakee and the Mississippi, and so reached all the countries bordering on the gulf and the south seas; and that

the return was by the same ancient route. But that day was past. Commerce had taken new lines. Detroit, Fort Wayne and Chicago had become gathering points; and the trails and traces to and from these points, and from these points to the Atlantic coast, were gradually taking direction and form. North and south was the Michigan road. And the south bend of the St. Joseph river was on the new lines. The old routes became filled with dust and leaves and overgrown with grass; while the new routes were worn and traveled and improved from year to year. Coquillard and Taylor had chosen wisely and labored effectively. The county seat was located in the proper place.

VIII. THE TOWNSHIPS RE-ORGANIZED.

Not only was the first location of the county seat unsatisfactory to the people, but also the division of the county into the townships of Michigan, Deschemin, German and Portage, as made by the board of justices. Accordingly, on September 7, 1831, on the third day's session of the first term of the board of commissioners, after the entry of the record in relation to the county seat, the following important orders were made in relation to the townships of the county; and also in relation to commissioners' districts:

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, That so much of the orders of the board of justices held on the 25th day of November, 1830, as regards the laying off of townships in said county be hereby repealed and set aside.

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, That ranges two and three east of the second principal meridian of the state of Indiana, so much as lies in said county, shall form one township in said county, and shall be known by the name of Portage township. All elections in said township shall be held in the town of South Bend. Said township shall form the first county commissioner district in said county.

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, That range number one east and range number one

west of the second principal meridian of the state of Indiana shall form a township in said county, to be known by the name of Center township, and all elections in said township shall be held at John Drulinger's. Said township shall form the second county commissioner district in said county.

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, That all the territory lying west of the range line dividing ranges number one and number two west of the second principal meridian of the state of Indiana shall form and constitute a township, to be known by the name of Highland township, and the elections in said township shall be held at the house of Jacob Miller, in said township. The said township shall form the third county commissioner district in said county.

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, That Hiram Dayton be appointed Inspector of Elections in Portage, and John Egbert shall be appointed Inspector of Elections in Center township, and also that Chapel W. Brown be appointed Inspector of Elections in Highland township.

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, That on the fourth Saturday of Inst. the qualified electors in Portage township be authorized to elect one justice of the peace at South Bend, in said township; and that the qualified electors of Center township be authorized to elect one justice of the peace in said township on the fourth Saturday as aforesaid; and also that the qualified electors of Highland township be authorized to elect one justice of the peace in said township on the fourth Saturday, Inst.

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, That the sheriff be required to notify the qualified electors of said county to meet in the several townships as organized by this board to meet at the several places in said townships, to elect associate judges."^a

It will be seen that Highland township, as laid out by the board of commissioners, in-

a. The organization of our courts will be given in another place.

cluded one more range than did Michigan township, as laid out by the board of justices. The east line of Michigan township was "the range line dividing ranges two and three west;" while the east line of Highland township was "the range line dividing ranges number one and number two west." No part of either of those primitive townships was within the present limits of St. Joseph county. Highland township included the greater part of what is now La Porte county and all of Porter and Lake.

Center township, as laid out by the board of commissioners, included the west half of range one west, now in Laporte county, and likewise so much of the east half of said range as is also in said county. The rest of old Center township, being the remainder of range one west and all of range one east,—except parts on the south afterwards attached to Marshall and Starke counties—are still in St. Joseph county. The east line of Center township was the range line between ranges one and two east, being the line which now divides our present Warren township from German and Portage. The townships of Olive, Warren and Lincoln, as now constituted, with the greater part of Greene and almost all of Liberty, were then in Center township.

Portage township, as laid out by the board of commissioners, took in all of the county embraced in ranges two and three east. That included the present townships of German, Clay, Portage, Center and Union, with parts of Greene, Liberty, Harris, Penn and Madison. The west half of range four, being a strip three miles in width on the east side of the county as at present constituted, was then in Elkhart county.

IX. THE COUNTY BOUNDARIES.

St. Joseph county, as formed by the act of January 29, 1830, extended east and west across five ranges of congressional townships, and reached south from the Michigan line a distance of thirty miles. To this thirty

miles square was added, for jurisdictional purposes, all the territory west to the Illinois state line. Other unorganized territory was afterwards attached for like purposes on the south. This attached territory, as we have seen,^a was by the board of justices erected into a township of St. Joseph county, and named Michigan township. The board of commissioners added to Michigan a range of congressional townships on the east, and called the whole territory Highland township.

Not counting the attached territory on the west, St. Joseph county proper then included nearly one-half of the present county of La Porte, and also nearly one-half of the present counties of Marshall and Starke. The act of February 10, 1831, defining the boundaries of all the counties of the state,^b left unchanged the boundaries of St. Joseph county as fixed by the act of its organization, January 29, 1830.

The county of La Porte was formed by an act of the legislature, approved January 9, 1832. In this act the east boundary of La Porte is declared to be, "the center line of range number one west," extending south twenty-two miles from the north boundary line of the state.^c Thus, not counting the attached territory west to the Illinois line, which had constituted our Michigan township, and nearly all of our Highland township, the legislature, in one act, took from St. Joseph county a range and a half of congressional townships on the west, and made them part of the new county of La Porte.

As if to make up for this loss on the west, the same legislature, a few days afterwards, by an act approved January 31, 1832,^d took three miles from Elkhart and added it to St. Joseph. The act is short, and reads as follows:

"Be it enacted by the general assembly of

a. See Subd. 4, of this chapter.

b. Revised Statutes of Indiana, 1831, pp. 110-128.

c. Acts 1831, p. 9.

d. Acts 1831, p. 114.

the state of Indiana, That the boundary line between the counties of Elkhart and St. Joseph, be, and the same is hereby changed, and that the same shall be a north and south line, three miles east, and parallel with range line number three east of the second principal meridian line. And all that portion of territory so stricken off of Elkhart county, be, and the same is hereby attached to, and shall constitute a part of St. Joseph county."

The net result of both those acts of the legislature of 1831 was to move St. Joseph county three miles to the east, giving us half a range on the east and taking from us a range and a half on the west, and so reducing the width of the county along the north boundary line of the state from thirty miles to twenty-four miles. This left us a half range west of the second principal meridian and three and a half ranges east of the same meridian.

The next act of the legislature that interfered with the boundaries of the county was that approved February 7, 1835,^a entitled "An act laying out all the unorganized territory to which the Indian title has been extinguished in this state, into a suitable number of counties, and for other purposes."

Section nine of that act defined the north line of Marshall county as the north line of congressional township thirty-four, being the same as the south line of our present township of Lincoln extended east. This boundary, while taking seven miles and a half off the south end of St. Joseph county, still left us the whole of congressional township thirty-five, including the sites of the present towns of Bremen, La Paz and Teegarden, besides the right of way of the Baltimore & Ohio railroad from the eastern to the western boundary of the county.

By section ten of the same act, the north line of Starke county was defined to be the north line of the same congressional township, thirty-four. This boundary left the territory

of the present Lincoln township within our county, as it has remained ever since.

Although the boundaries of Marshall county were fixed by the act of February 7, 1835, yet the county was not organized until the succeeding session of the legislature. The act passed for that purpose was approved February 4, 1836.^a The eighth section of that act appears to have no proper connection with the other sections: it seems to be attached to the act rather than to be a part of it. The section, however, did seriously affect the interests of St. Joseph county. It reads as follows:

"Sec. 8. The northern boundary line of the county of Marshall shall be extended to an east and west line running through the center of township thirty-five north."

A strip three miles in width was thus taken from St. Joseph county and added to Marshall county, leaving a part of Lincoln township in St. Joseph county projecting between Marshall and La Porte counties, to a distance of three miles south of the remainder of St. Joseph county.

In an act approved February 16, 1839, entitled "An act to define the boundaries of the counties of St. Joseph, Marshall, La Porte, Starke, Porter and Lake,"^b the boundaries of St. Joseph county were left as they had remained after the act of February 4, 1836, defining the north boundary of Marshall county. This act of February 16, 1839, defined what were expected to be the fixed and permanent boundaries of the county, in these words:

"St. Joseph county shall be bounded as follows, by a line commencing on the north boundary of this state at the intersection thereon of the section line running north and south through the center of range four east; thence south to the center of township thirty-five north; thence west to the second meridian line, being that line between ranges one east and one west; thence south to the township line between townships thirty-four and thirty-

a. Acts 1835, pp. 49, 50.

b. Acts 1838, p. 70.

a. Acts 1834, pp. 44-47.

five north; thence west to the section line running north and south through the center of range one west; thence north by said section line to the north boundary of this state; thence east to the place of beginning."

St. Joseph county seemed at last to have found herself, to have reached the definite and fixed limits of her physical entity. For ten years her integrity as a county was respected, and no further attempt was made to interfere with her defined boundaries. But by an act approved January 16, 1849,^a the legislature provided:

"That the territory which now belongs to St. Joseph county, described as follows: Beginning at the present county line, at the northwest corner of section twenty-two, township thirty-seven north, range one west; thence with the north line of said section, and that of section twenty-three, to the northeast corner of said section twenty-three; thence south with the section line, until it shall strike the great Kankakee river; thence with said river to the present county line, may be attached to the county of La Porte, upon the conditions following."

One of the conditions upon which the transfer of territory should take place is set out in section four of the act, in which it was provided that, "The county commissioners of said county of St. Joseph, shall, and they are hereby authorized to, decide at their regular June term, 1849, whether said territory shall be attached as aforesaid." Should our board of commissioners agree to the change it should take place. "But," it was further provided in the same section, "in case said board of county commissioners do not decide in favor of attaching the territory as aforesaid, to the said county of La Porte, then and in that case the said territory shall be and remain a part and parcel of said county of St. Joseph."

As might be anticipated, there was much opposition to the scheme on the part of the people of St. Joseph county; and the board

of county commissioners accordingly refused to concur in the action of the legislature. At the regular June term, 1849,^a of the board it was therefore formally ordered, "That said territory shall not be set off as a part of the territory of La Porte county."

The people of the disputed territory were, however, bent on having the sections transferred to La Porte county. It must be admitted that their reasons in favor of the project were plausible. The territory in question was situated on the west side of the Kankakee river; and it was then impossible to go directly across the river and marshes to the county seat of St. Joseph county. It was the old trouble, over again, of the first survey of the Michigan road from Michigan City, directly across the Kankakee swamps, to Logansport. Such roads were impossible of construction in those days. The people to the west of the Kankakee quite naturally, therefore, preferred to go to the county seat of La Porte county, both for their marketing and also to attend to such business as must be transacted in the court house.

The matter came again before the legislature at the ensuing session; and, by an act approved January 14, 1850,^b the transfer of the territory was made absolute, without any consent asked for or given by St. Joseph county. A touch of patriotic sentiment was given to the severance of the territory, by providing in the act that the sections in question should be attached to and become a part of La Porte county from and after July 4, 1850.

So was St. Joseph county reduced in size from its original thirty miles square, and attached territory, to its present dimensions. Some slight movements were afterwards made to limit still further the size of the county. Citizens on the east side of the county at one time tried to persuade the commissioners that they should be attached to Elkhart county; and citizens of

^a. Commissioners' Record No. 3, p. 285.

^b. Acts, 1849, pp. 114, 115.

^a. Local Laws of Indiana, 1848, p. 32.

the west side of the county filed like petitions, with a view to the formation of another county made up in part of St. Joseph and in part of La Porte territory, and having New Carlisle as a county seat. These petitions were before our county board for several sessions, each, but were all finally dismissed. Another movement developed at one time in the southwest part of the county, with a view to the formation of a county out of parts of St. Joseph, Marshall, Starke and La Porte counties, and having Walkerton as the county seat. There was more reason for this movement than for either of the others, the southwest part of this county not being of easy access to the county seat. But afterwards came improved gravel roads, not to speak of the Three "I" railroad; and North Liberty and Walkerton at once found themselves in easy reach of the city on the St. Joseph, and more closely knit to the county of which they form so important a part. Every inhabitant has long since become proud of his citizenship in the good old county of St. Joseph.

The county is now twenty-four miles in length, east and west, measured along the boundary between Indiana and Michigan; and nineteen and one-half miles in width,

north and south, measured along the boundary between St. Joseph and Elkhart counties. To these dimensions are to be added the nine sections of Lincoln township, bounded on the east by Marshall county, on the south by Starke and on the west by La Porte. And from these dimensions must be deducted the fourteen full and five fractional sections attached to La Porte county by the act of January 14, 1850.

Notwithstanding the loss of territory on the west and on the south, our county is still one of the largest, as it is one of the best, in the state. The limits of the county are, on all sides, within congressional townships thirty-five, thirty-six, thirty-seven and thirty-eight, north; and within ranges one, west, and one, two, three and four, east, of the second principal meridian of Indiana. It is the central county on the north boundary of the state. The county contains within its borders the source and a large part of the valley of the Kankakee. We have no less than five prairies of various sizes, one of them, Terre Coupee, the finest in the state; while, with Elkhart county, we claim as ours the whole of the St. Joseph valley within the state of Indiana.





Lathrop M. Taylor

CHAPTER VI.

COUNTY BUSINESS.

I. ADMINISTRATIVE OFFICERS AND BOARDS.

Sec. 1.—THE CLERK.—Lathrop Minor Taylor and Alexis Coquillard continued for many years largely to divide with one another the honors and responsibilities attendant upon the development of the new county. In friendly rivalry they had established on "the Big St. Joseph's of the Lake" the two trading posts about which gathered the early settlement; together they had purchased from the government the land upon which they had laid out the new town at the south bend of the river, and by their united efforts they had succeeded in causing the removal of the county seat to the town thus established. From the organization of the county "the house of Alexis Coquillard" appears in the records for several years as the place of holding the sessions of the circuit court, the board of justices and the board of commissioners.

All these records, too, show the name of Lathrop M. Taylor, L. M. Taylor or Lathrop Minor Taylor, as it was written on different occasions. ^a At the first election held in the county, the first Monday in August, 1830, Mr. Taylor was elected clerk of the circuit court and also county recorder. Section ten of article eleven of the constitution of 1816 provided that the same person might hold both these offices. He was also authorized by statute to act as clerk of the county board or as county clerk. ^b As such officer

he was therefore the keeper of the county records. He thus united in himself the duties of the present offices of clerk of the circuit court, county recorder and county auditor. The original records in each of those offices are in the handwriting of L. M. Taylor. Towards the end of his term appears the name of a deputy, Thomas S. Stanfield, who was afterwards to become one of the strong characters of the county and of the state. The three modest little blank books with which Mr. Taylor began the records of the county business as clerk of the court, clerk of the county board and county recorder still remain in good condition; except that the recorder's records are somewhat injured by frequent handling.

Lathrop M. Taylor's term lasted for seven years. He was succeeded, in 1837, in the office of clerk of the circuit court, by Tyra W. Bray, who also held for seven years. John F. Lindsay, the last clerk under the constitution of 1816, was in office from 1844 to 1851. Under the constitution of 1851 the term of office was reduced to four years, and the incumbent rendered ineligible to more than two successive terms. Samuel M. Chord was clerk for two terms, or until 1859. He was succeeded by Elias V. Clark, who also served two terms, or until 1867. Mr. Clark was succeeded by George W. Matthews, called sometimes the younger, to distinguish him from the elder George W. Matthews, formerly county auditor.

Mr. Matthews was succeeded, in 1875, by

^a. See Deed Record B, pp. 579, 580, 581, for his different signatures.

^b. See Sec. 6, act approved January 17, 1831.

Edwin Nicar, and Mr. Nicar by Timothy E. Howard, who was himself succeeded in 1883 by George H. Alward, the elder. Mr. Alward died during his term, November 11, 1885, and the county commissioners appointed his son, also George H. Alward, to fill out his term. In 1886 William C. McMichael became clerk, and in 1895, George M. Fountain. In 1903, George H. Alward became clerk again, by election, and in 1907 was succeeded by the present incumbent, Frank P. Christoph. Thirteen different men have filled the office of clerk of the circuit court from the organization of the county.

Sec. 2.—THE RECORDER.—On the expiration of Lathrop M. Taylor's term as county recorder, in 1837, he was succeeded by William H. Patteson, who served for two terms, and was succeeded by Lott Day, Jr.

By an act approved February 16, 1852,^a the county recorder was required to provide an official seal for his county. Before any such seal should be used, it was provided in the act that "an accurate description of the impression thereof, attested by the proper recorder, and the impression of such seal, shall be filed in the office of the clerk of the circuit court, and by said clerk recorded in the order book of said court."

On February 28, 1853, Mr. Day, then recorder, adopted a seal for his office, and filed for record in the office of the clerk of the St. Joseph circuit court a description reading as follows: "Said seal is about one and one-half inch in diameter, with two circles on the outer edge, between which are the following words, 'Recorder of St. Joseph County, Indiana.' Inclosed in the inner circle or center of said seal is the following design: An axeman and two trees; and in the distance a buffalo and rising sun." An impression of the seal appears on the margin of the order book.^b

Mr. Day was succeeded as recorder by

^a. Vol. I, R. S., 1852, pp. 427, 428.

^b. See Order Book St. Joseph Circuit Court, No. 7, p. 436.

Reece J. Chestnutwood, the elder, who held the office until 1867. Mr. Chestnutwood is still (1907) living in the city of South Bend, in the ninety-second year of his age.

Alexander N. Thomas became recorder in 1867 and served for eight years, being succeeded, in 1875, by John Groff. Harrison G. Beemer succeeded to the office in 1879, and was himself succeeded in 1883 by Thomas M. Howard, who served for eight years. William D. Shimp became recorder in 1891, Jeremiah Hildebrand in 1895, and Josiah P. Reed in 1899. Noah Lehman, the recorder elect, will take the office January 1, 1908.

Sec. 3.—THE AUDITOR.—By an act approved February 12, 1841,^a the office of county auditor was created. The auditor was by the act made clerk of the board of county commissioners, or virtually county clerk, and was required to perform all the duties in relation to county business theretofore enjoined upon the clerk of the circuit court. After the expiration of the term of L. M. Taylor, in 1837, his successor, Tyra W. Bray, as clerk of the circuit court, continued to act as clerk of the board of commissioners until the enactment of the foregoing statute and the election, on the first Monday of August, 1841, of George W. Matthews, the elder, who was the first county auditor. Schuyler Colfax, who was a stepson of Mr. Matthews, acted as deputy auditor during his incumbency. This was the first experience in public life of the man who was afterwards three times speaker of the national house of representatives and also vice-president of the United States. Mr. Matthews served as county auditor until his resignation August 1, 1849. The board of commissioners selected Aaron B. Ellsworth to fill the vacancy, and in 1851 Mr. Ellsworth was elected by the people, and held the office until 1859, when he was succeeded by Woolman J. Holloway. Mr. Holloway held the office until 1867, and was then succeeded by Alfred Wheeler. Mr. Wheeler was succeeded, in 1875, by William

^a. Acts, 1840, pp. 10-24.

D. Smith, and Mr. Smith in 1883 by Aaron Jones. Then followed Robert Myler, George W. Loughman, John M. Brown, and John W. Harbou, the present incumbent, whose second term will begin January 1, 1908.

Sec. 4.—THE COUNTY AGENT.—The county agent was an officer having charge of the real estate and other property of the county. His duties in the beginning seem to have been confined to affairs connected with the organization of new counties, and were provided for in section four of the act to establish seats of justice in new counties, approved January 24, 1824.^a He was to be appointed by the board doing county business, and was the fiscal officer of the county.

William Brookfield was appointed by the board of justices as the first agent of St. Joseph county, at a called session of the board held for that purpose, "at the house of Alexis Coquillard in said county, on Tuesday, the 14th day of September, 1830." The order of appointment reads:

"Ordered by the board of justices of St. Joseph county that William Brookfield be appointed agent of St. Joseph county; and he is required to give bond and security in the penal sum of five thousand dollars. Alexis Coquillard and Lathrop M. Taylor are accepted by said board as his securities."

On September 7, 1831, the board of county commissioners appointed John Egbert as the second county agent, in the following order:

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, that John Egbert be appointed county agent of said county, and he is required to give bond under the penalty of six thousand dollars. Jacob Egbert and William McCartney are approved of by the board as his securities."

At the January term, 1832, the board made the following allowance: "Ordered by the board aforesaid, that John Egbert be allowed the sum of six dollars for his services for the past year as county agent." At the September term, 1832, he was allowed fifteen dollars additional for his services to that date.

a. R. S., 1831, pp. 459-463; R. S., 1838, pp. 505-509.

At the September term, 1832, the following order of appointment was made:

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, that Anthony Defrees be appointed county agent in and for said county, in the room of John Egbert resigned; and said Defrees is required to give bond and security in the penalty of six thousand dollars. Peter Johnson, L. M. Taylor and Jacob Hardman are approved of by the board as his securities."

The most important duties transacted by the county agent of this county were the negotiations for the sale of the town lots donated to the county, in consideration of the location of the county seat, first at Mr. Brookfield's town of St. Joseph's, and afterwards at South Bend; and also matters in relation to the erection of the county buildings. The office was abolished and its duties transferred to the county auditor, subject to the orders of the board of county commissioners, by an act approved May 13, 1852.^a

Sec. 5.—THE SHERIFF.—Although the constitution of 1816 provided for the election of both a sheriff and a coroner, yet neither of these officers is mentioned in the act of January 29, 1830, for the formation of St. Joseph county. None seems to have been elected, nor is there any record of the appointment of either such officer by the board of justices or by the board of commissioners.

The legislature, however, by an act approved February 9, 1831,^b seems to have recognized that Samuel L. Cottrell was appointed by the board of justices as our first sheriff, for the year 1830. The act is as follows:

"Whereas, it is represented to this general assembly, that Samuel L. Cottrell acted as sheriff to the board of justices of the county of St. Joseph, from the month of August in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty, to the month of November in the same year, without being legally elected and commissioned: and some doubts having arisen as to the legality of the pro-

a. Special and Local Acts, 1852, p. 32.

b. Special Acts, 1830, pp. 97, 98.

ceedings of said board in consequence thereof; wherefore.

“Be it enacted by the general assembly of the state of Indiana, that the acts and proceedings of said board of justices of the county of St. Joseph, for and during the time aforesaid, be and the same are hereby declared as legal and valid, as if the said Samuel L. Cottrell had been sheriff of said county, according to law, at the taking place thereof.”

The board of commissioners also, by an order entered on the third day of their first term, September 7, 1831, recognized Mr. Cottrell as having acted as sheriff during the first year of our county history, and made him an allowance for his services, as follows:

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that Samuel L. Cottrell be allowed the sum of twenty-two dollars for services rendered said county as sheriff.”

The sheriffs succeeding Samuel L. Cottrell were: Benjamin McCarty, 1831; Scott West, 1832; Daniel A. Fullerton, 1832 to 1833; Samuel L. Cottrell, 1833 to 1838; Charles M. Tutt, 1838 to 1842; Lott Day, sr., 1842 to 1846; Lott Day, jr., 1846 to 1850; Ralph Staples, 1850 to 1852; Benjamin F. Miller, 1852 to 1856; Evan C. Johnson, 1856 to 1860; Nelson Ferris, 1860 to 1864; Solomon W. Palmer, 1864 to 1868; George V. Glover, 1868 to 1872; Joseph Turnock, 1872 to 1876; Robert Hardy, 1876 to 1878; James Dougherty, 1878 to 1880; Zachariah M. Johnson, 1880 to 1884; George Rockstroh, 1884 to 1886; John Finch, 1886 to 1890; Andrew J. Ward, 1890 to 1894; James C. Eberhart, 1894 to 1898; Charles E. McCarty, 1898 to 1903; Schuyler C. Robinson, 1903 to 1905; David J. Schafer, 1905 to —.

Sec. 6.—THE CORONER.—The office of coroner, closely related to that of sheriff, was held by Samuel L. Cottrell beginning in 1834; Edmund Pitts Taylor, 1835; Daniel D. Custard, 1838; Jacob Hardman, 1840; Leonard B. Rush, 1841; Israel De Camp, 1843; Truman Fox, 1845; Richmond Tuttle, 1847;

Allen Bassett, 1852; Aaron A. Webster, 1854; Andrew H. Long, 1856; Daniel Day-ton, 1874; Israel Underwood, 1876; John C. Miller, 1878; Alexander Rixa, 1880; Cornelius H. Myers, 1881; Hugh T. Montgomery, 1884; Erastus M. Drollinger, 1890; James A. Varier, 1892; Richard B. Dugdale, 1894; Callie A. Rennoe, 1900; Henry C. Holtzen-dorff, 1904; Stanley A. Clark, 1906.

Sec. 7.—THE TREASURER.—The office of county treasurer was at first an appointive one. By an act approved January 8, 1831,^a it was made the duty of the boards doing county business, “at their first meeting after the first day of February annually, to appoint some respectable elector as county treasurer.” This officer was required to give bond to the satisfaction of the board, and to perform duties similar to those now required. His compensation was fixed at “one and a half per centum, for all moneys received, and one and a half per centum, for all moneys paid out for the county; excepting, however, moneys arising from the sale of lots at county seats, in which case he shall receive no more than two per centum for both receiving and paying out.”

As we have already seen, John D. Lasly was appointed by the board of justices as first treasurer of the county for the year 1830. This was the first order made by our first county board.^b

Aaron Miller was appointed second treasurer of the county, by an order of the board of county commissioners, made September 7, 1831, as follows:

“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that Aaron Miller be appointed county treasurer of said county, from this time until the first of March next, and until his successor be appointed and qualified; and that said Aaron Miller is required to give bond with good security in the penal sum of two thousand dollars. William McCartney and Benjamin

^a. Revised Statutes, 1831, p. 136; R. S., 1838, p. 158.

^b. See Chap. 5 of this work, Subd. 4.

McCarty are approved by the board as security." John T. McLelland was appointed treasurer in 1834.

By an act approved February 12, 1841,^a the office was made elective by the people, and the term fixed at three years. The constitution of 1851 made the office a constitutional one, but shortened the term to two years; also, as in case of other county officers, limiting the incumbent to two successive terms.^b

From the time when the office was made elective the county treasurers have been as follows: Albert Monson, 1841; John K. Wright, 1850; Robert B. Nicar, 1851; Solomon Miller, 1856; John H. Harper, 1860; Ezekiel Greene, 1864; Hiram Miller, 1868; David B. Creviston, 1872; C. Henry Sheerer, 1876; John Hay, 1878; Frederick Lang, 1880; Emanuel R. Wills, 1884; George H. Stover, 1888; Simon Yenn, 1892; William H. Oren, 1894; John W. Zigler, 1898; Adam Hunsberger, 1903; William C. Stover, 1907.

The bonds given by the county treasurer from time to time may be some indication of the constant growth of the county since its organization. As we have seen, the first treasurer, John D. Lasly, was required, in 1830, to give a bond in the sum of one thousand dollars; and the second, Aaron Miller, in 1831, in the sum of two thousand dollars. John K. Wright, in 1850, gave a bond of forty-three thousand dollars; Robert B. Nicar, in 1851, a bond of fifty thousand dollars; Solomon Miller, in 1856, eighty thousand dollars; and the same treasurer, in 1858, one hundred thousand; John H. Harper, in 1860, one hundred and thirty thousand; Hiram Miller, in 1870, one hundred and fifty thousand; Simon Yenn, in 1892, three hundred thousand; William H. Oren, in 1894, four hundred thousand; and Adam Hunsberger, in 1903, seven hundred and fifty thousand. William C. Stover, the present county treasurer, who is also ex-officio city

treasurer of South Bend, has given a bond of nine hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

Sec. 8.—THE SURVEYOR.—County surveyors, as appears from an act approved February 4, 1831,^a were originally "appointed in each and every county, by the boards doing county business in the respective counties." Afterwards, by an act approved February 2, 1833,^b the power of appointment to this office was placed in the circuit court, and the duration of the office was fixed at three years. The right of appointment was still later placed again in the county board, but the term remained three years.^c

While it does not appear from any order of record made by the board of justices that any surveyor was appointed by that board, yet it is quite evident that William Brookfield acted in that capacity during the years 1830 and 1831. He was a deputy United States surveyor, and made the first land surveys of the county. He platted his own town of St. Joseph's, the first county seat; and also platted for Coquillard and Taylor the town of South Bend, the permanent county seat.

To the plat of South Bend there is appended the following certificate:

"The scale by which this town is laid off is ten rods to the inch.

"Wm. Brookfield,

"Surveyor.

"March 28, 1831."

William Clark was appointed the second county surveyor by an order of the board of county commissioners, made November 1, 1831, as follows:

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, that William Clark be appointed county surveyor in and for said county."

On the same day the following order was likewise entered: "Ordered by the board

a. Indiana R. S., 1831, pp. 516-518; R. S., 1838, pp. 576-578.

b. Acts, 1832, pp. 106-108; R. S., 1838, pp. 578-580.

c. See R. S., 1843, p. 103.

a. Acts, 1840, p. 27.

b. Constitution, 1851, Sec. 2, Art. 6.

aforesaid, that William Clark, the county surveyor, be requested to procure certified copies from the registers of the different land offices wherein the lands lying in said county have been sold, the field notes of the townships, ranges, sections, fractional sections and quarter sections, as originally surveyed; and deposit the same in the recorder's office of said county, according to law."

Tyra W. Bray was appointed surveyor by the board of commissioners at the September term, 1832. He held the office until 1836, when Thomas P. Bulla succeeded to the office; and thereafter continued to hold it until 1856, serving the last four years by election under the new constitution.

In 1851 the office became a constitutional one, and elective by the people of the county. The term was fixed at two years, but there was no limitation as to the number of terms which an incumbent might fill.^a

Milton W. Stokes succeeded Thomas B. Bulla in 1856, and held the office until March 12, 1864, when he was succeeded by William D. Bulla, who held until December 5, 1865. William M. Whitten became surveyor in December, 1865, and held the office until 1868, when Milton V. Bulla was elected; he continued in office until 1872. In 1872, Mr. Whitten was again elected. In 1874, Arthur Joseph Stace became county surveyor and held the office until 1880; when Mr. Whitten was again elected. Mr. Whitten held the office from 1880 until 1888; when Benjamin F. Waldorf was elected, continuing in office until 1892. In 1892 William E. Graves was elected; and in 1894, George H. Leslie. Frederick W. Keller succeeded to the office in 1899; and Titus E. Kinzie, the present incumbent, became surveyor in 1905.

Sec. 9.—THE COUNTY BOARD.—The first county board, called the board of justices, and consisting of Lambert McCombs, Adam Smith and Levi T. Arnold, served but a part of the year 1830. Elected in August of that

year, their official action seems to have come to an end with their fourth session, in November, 1830.

The first board of commissioners, elected in August 1831, consisted of Aaron Stanton, elected for three years; David Miller, for two years; and Joseph Rohrer, for one year. Thereafter, the requirement of the act organizing the board was, that each year one commissioner should be elected for three years, from the district represented by the commissioner whose term should expire at the end of the current year. The term of each commissioner was fixed at three years; and in case of a vacancy the commissioner elected should serve only until the end of the term, the design being that one commissioner should go out and one come in each year.

At the election held on the first day of August, 1832, John Ireland, of the first district, was elected commissioner for three years, to succeed Joseph Rohrer, whose term expired that year. At the same election, John Martindale, of the second district, was elected commissioner for one year "to fill a vacancy occasioned by the resignation of David Miller." And at the same election Benjamin Hardman, of the third district, was elected commissioner for two years, to fill the vacancy apparently occasioned by the departure of Aaron Stanton from the county. Afterwards commissioners were elected for full terms or to fill vacancies, as follows: In 1833, Lott Day and Reynolds Dunn; in 1835, Orlando M. Hurd; in 1836, William H. Patteson; in 1837, George Holloway and Alonzo Delano; in 1840, Thomas D. Vail; in 1841, Gilman Towle; in 1842, Matthew B. Hammond; in 1843, Thomas D. Vail; in 1844, Gilman Towle; in 1845, Matthew B. Hammond; in 1846, Ranson Hubbard; in 1847, Gilman Towle; in 1848, Samuel M. Chord; in 1849, John Drulinger; in 1850, Gilman Towle; in 1851, Edwin Pickett; in 1852, John Drulinger; in 1853, Gilman Towle; in 1854, John Hammond; in 1855, John Drulinger; in 1856, Gilman Towle; in

^a Sec. 2, Art. 6, Constitution of 1851; 1 R. S., 1852, p. 469; 1 Gavin and Hord, p. 595.

1857, John Hammond; in 1858, James C. Williams; in 1859, William F. Bulla; in 1860, Francis R. Tutt; in 1861, James C. Williams; in 1862, Gilman Towle; in 1863, Clement Studebaker; in 1864, Nathaniel Frame; in 1865, Gilman Towle; in 1866, John C. Knoblock; in 1867, Nathaniel Frame; in 1868, Gilman Towle. (There was no election in 1869, for the reason that the legislature had provided for biennial elections, instead of annual elections, as formerly. Had there been an election in 1869, commissioner John C. Knoblock's successor would then have been chosen; as it was, Mr. Knoblock held over until the election of Dwight Deming, his successor, in 1870. Mr. Deming, through a misundersanding, held his office for three years, instead of holding for two years only, and so filling out the term for which Mr. Knoblock had held one year. Many errors of this kind occurred at this time in different counties. To correct these mistakes, and restore the terms to the regular length of three years, one commissioner coming in each year, as intended by the original act of January 19, 1831, organizing the board of county commissioners;^a the legislature passed a remedial act, approved March 7, 1885.^b In accordance with the provisions of this act of 1885, the term of commissioner Jacob Eaton was afterwards extended from 1885 to 1890, and thus the error which had existed from 1872 to 1890 in the terms of the commissioners of the second district was corrected. Since 1890, the terms are each three years, and one commissioner succeeds to the office each year, according to the original plan of the act of 1831.^c In 1870, Dwight Deming became county commissioner; in 1871, Albert Cass; in 1873, Dwight Deming; in 1874, John Ernspurger; in 1876, Dwight Deming and William D. Rockhill; in 1877,

John Ernspurger; in 1879, Dwight Deming and William D. Rockhill; in 1880, Newton Jackson and Charles G. Towle; in 1882, Isaac Early and Samuel Bowman; in 1883, Charles G. Towle; in 1885, Jacob Eaton and Dixon W. Place; in 1886, Charles G. Towle; in 1888, Dixon W. Place; in 1889, James Dougherty; in 1890, Jacob Eaton; in 1891, John Olinger; in 1892, James Dougherty; in 1893, John N. Lederer; in 1894, Peter H. Reaves; in 1895, John D. Fulmer; in 1896, Samuel Bowman; in 1897, Peter H. Reaves; in 1898, John D. Fulmer; in 1899, Samuel Bowman; in 1900, Isaac Newton Miller; in 1901, Marion B. Russ. (In 1901, the legislature, by an act in force March 11, 1901,^a provided that the terms of county officers, including those of county commissioners should "begin on the first day of January next following the term of office of the present incumbent.") In 1903, Herman A. Fohulka succeeded to the office of county commissioner; in 1904, Isaac Newton Miller; in 1905, Marion B. Russ; in 1906, Barney C. Smith; and in 1907, Daniel A. White.

II. THE CIRCUIT COURT.

Sec. 1.—THE PRESIDENT AND ASSOCIATE JUDGES.—By article fifth of the constitution of 1816, it was provided that, "The judiciary power of this state, both as to matters of law and equity, shall be vested in one supreme court, in circuit courts, and in such other inferior courts as the general assembly may from time to time direct and establish."

The same article of the constitution further provided, That the circuit courts should each "consist of a president, and two associate judges"; that the state should be divided into three circuits, for each of which a president should be appointed, who should reside within his circuit; that the legislature might increase the number of circuits and presidents as the exigencies of the state might from time to time require; that all judges

a. R. S., 1831, p. 129.

b. Acts, 1885, pp. 69, 70.

c. See Commissioners' Record, No. 11, for the opinion of the county attorney, according to which the error in commissioners' terms was corrected.

a. Acts, 1901, p. 411.

should "hold their offices during the term of seven years, if they shall so long behave well, and shall, at stated times, receive for their services, a compensation which shall not be diminished during their continuance in office;" and that, "The presidents of the circuit courts shall be appointed by joint ballot of both branches of the general assembly; and the associate judges of the circuit courts shall be elected by the qualified electors in the respective counties." There was this further provision, that "The president alone, in the absence of the associate judges, or the president and one of the associate judges, in the absence of the other, shall be competent to hold a court, as also the two associate judges, in the absence of the president shall be competent to hold a court, except in capital cases, and cases in chancery."

In the act approved January 24, 1831,^a the legislature provided that the president should receive a salary of seven hundred dollars a year, to be paid out of the state treasury; and that the associate judges should receive two dollars per day, while attending court, to be paid out of the county treasury. By an act approved February 15, 1838,^b it was provided that, in the absence of any presiding judge of a circuit, any other presiding judge of the state might hold court in such circuit. This was, in effect, a provision for a change of venue from a judge, and was so intended by the legislature as shown by the preamble to the act. Express provision was afterwards made for changes of venue in case the presiding judge should be disqualified for any cause. In such case the special judge was allowed three dollars a day for his services.^c

Sec. 2.—THE CIRCUITS UNDER THE CONSTITUTION OF 1816.—By an act approved February 10, 1831,^a the state was divided into

seven circuits; the first consisting of the counties of Vermilion, Parke, Montgomery, Fountain, Warren, Tippecanoe, Clinton, Carroll, Cass and St. Joseph. In St. Joseph county provision was made for two terms of court, beginning on the first Mondays of May and November, each year. By the same act, the terms in Cass county were made to begin on the fourth Mondays in April and October; and, in order to enable the judge to come immediately from Cass to St. Joseph, the legislature, by an act approved February 3, 1832,^a provided that the terms in St. Joseph county should begin on the Mondays following the terms in Cass county, which provision in some cases made a week's difference in the dates of the beginning of the terms in St. Joseph county.

By an act approved January 7, 1833,^b the eighth judicial circuit was organized, consisting of the counties of Carroll, Cass, Miami, Wabash, Huntington, Allen, Lagrange, Elkhart, St. Joseph and Laporte. Each of these counties was given one week's court, except Allen and Elkhart which were given two weeks each. The terms in Cass county began, as formerly, on the fourth Mondays of April and October; those in Allen, on the Mondays succeeding the terms in Cass; those in Lagrange in like manner, succeeding the terms in Allen; those in Elkhart, succeeding the terms in Lagrange; and those in St. Joseph succeeding the terms in Elkhart. This arrangement usually brought the terms of St. Joseph county in June and December. By a re-arrangement of terms in the eighth circuit, in an act approved January 28, 1834,^c the terms of the St. Joseph circuit court were transferred to the first or second weeks of April and October. By an act approved January 30, 1835,^d the terms in St. Joseph county were again changed to the first weeks of April and November. By

a. R. S., 1831, pp. 138-142; R. S., 1838, pp. 161-164.

b. R. S., 1838, p. 164.

c. R. S., 1843, pp. 646-651.

d. R. S., 1831, pp. 142-146.

a. Acts, 1831, pp. 242-244.

b. Acts, 1832, pp. 4, 5.

c. Acts, 1833, p. 70.

d. Acts, 1834, pp. 57, 58.

an act approved February 4, 1836,^a definite days were named for the several counties for the year 1836, the terms for St. Joseph being Monday, the eighteenth of April and Monday, the third of October, of that year.

By an act approved December 9, 1836,^b the ninth judicial circuit was formed, consisting of the counties of Elkhart, St. Joseph, Porter, Lake, Newton, Starke, Pulaski, Marshall, Fulton and Kosciusko. The length of the term in St. Joseph county remained one week; the terms to begin on the first Mondays of April and October. The district and terms of St. Joseph county remained unchanged in the act dividing the state into eleven districts, approved January 28, 1839,^c except that the terms were made two weeks each. By an act approved January 20, 1841,^d it was provided that the terms in St. Joseph county should begin on the fourth Mondays of March and September.

In the revised statutes of 1843 the various laws in relation to the twelve circuit courts of the state were codified.^e

By article seventh of the constitution of 1851, our judiciary system was completely changed. The associate judges were discontinued, and provision was made for the election for six years of one judge for each circuit. By an act approved June 17, 1852,^f the state was divided into ten circuits, St. Joseph county continued to be in the ninth circuit; which now consisted of the counties of Lake, Laporte, Porter, St. Joseph, Marshall, Starke, Fulton, White, Cass, Pulaski, Howard, Carroll and Miami. By an act approved June 18, 1852,^g the length of each term in St. Joseph county remained two weeks; and the terms were fixed for April and October, each year, succeeding the terms in Marshall county. By an act approved

January 21, 1853,^a the eleventh circuit was created, and the counties of White, Cass, Howard, Carroll and Miami were transferred from the ninth to the eleventh circuit; while Jasper county was for a time added to the ninth circuit. By an act approved February 3, 1853,^b the terms in St. Joseph county continued to be in April and October, but following the terms in Laporte; with a proviso that the first term of St. Joseph county in that year should begin on the twenty-eighth day of February. By an act approved March 1, 1855,^c a like arrangement was continued, except that each term was one week earlier. By an act approved February 15, 1859,^d the terms in St. Joseph county were advanced still another week, following Porter instead of Laporte.

Sec. 3.—THE CIRCUITS UNDER THE CONSTITUTION OF 1851.—By an act approved March 6, 1873,^e the legislature re-organized the judicial circuits of the state, increasing the number to thirty-eight. In this act it was provided that "The counties of Laporte and St. Joseph shall constitute the thirty-second circuit." The terms in Laporte county were made five weeks each, beginning on the first Monday in February, the fourth Monday in April, the first Monday in September, and the third Monday in November, each year. The terms in St. Joseph county were made four weeks each, beginning on the Mondays following the Laporte terms. The arrangement so made continued for twenty-four years; when, by an act approved January 30, 1897,^f the legislature finally created a separate district, with unlimited terms, for St. Joseph county. Section second of that act reads as follows:

"The county of St. Joseph shall constitute the sixtieth judicial circuit, and the terms thereof shall be held as follows, to-wit: Com-

a. Acts, 1835, pp. 40-42.

b. Acts, 1836, pp. 61, 62.

c. Acts, 1838, pp. 8-12.

d. Acts, 1840, pp. 103-106.

e. R. S., 1843, pp. 646-651.

f. Special and Local Acts, 1851-2, p. 101.

g. Special and Local Acts, 1851-2, pp. 102-105.

a. Acts, 1853, p. 32.

b. Acts, 1853, p. 35.

c. Acts, 1855, p. 66.

d. Acts, 1859, p. 70.

e. Acts, 1873, pp. 87-98.

f. Acts, 1897, pp. 13, 14.

mencing on the second Monday of September and first Monday of November, February and May of each year, and shall continue in session so long as the business thereof shall require."

It was found that the November term, as so fixed, came too near the September term; hence, by an act approved February 28, 1901,^a this section was so amended that the November term should begin on the third Monday of November instead of upon the first Monday. No further change has been made, and St. Joseph county continues to be a circuit by itself, with four terms of court each year. The terms are practically continuous during the year, beginning on the second Monday of September, and each term ending just before the beginning of the next term, until July in each year, when a summer vacation is taken.

SEC. 4.—THE FIRST SESSION OF THE COURT.—The first session of the St. Joseph circuit court, of which we have any record, was held at a term beginning on Monday, November 29, 1832, the day fixed by the act of the legislature approved February 3, 1832.^b According to the provisions of this act, taken in connection with those of the act of February 10, 1831,^c it would seem that terms of court should have been held in May and October, in the year 1831, and also in May, 1832. There was dissatisfaction, as well as some sharp criticism, for what was looked upon as neglect of official duty in relation to this matter. The county records show that juries were drawn by the board of commissioners for a term that should have been held in November, 1831; as also by the board of justices for a term that should have been held in November 1830. But the records do not show that any court was held at either of these times.^d

While, as stated, the records do not show

that the jurors selected for 1830 or 1831 were ever called to serve in court, or indeed that there was any term of court held in either of these years, yet there are traditions that such sessions of court were actually held. Mr. Timothy G. Turner, who, in 1867, published a "Gazetteer of the St. Joseph Valley," tells us of enquiries concerning this matter made by him among the older residents of the county, then living; and in that publication, he makes a statement of what he learned as to the November term, 1830, of the St. Joseph circuit court:^a

"It is, however, a matter of doubt," he there says, "whether this court was ever held. Mr. Samuel L. Cottrell, now living at South Bend and who was then sheriff, has an indistinct recollection that it was. He thinks at least one of the county judges was present, that court was duly opened in the woods near the bank of the river, below Water street, and immediately adjourned. Other persons remember to have been present at some time, about that date, when a court was held by county judges; but the first court of which there is any record, and at which there was a presiding judge, was held at South Bend, on the 29th day of October, 1832, by the Hon. John R. Porter, presiding judge of the first judicial circuit, to which the county was then attached. It lasted but for one day, and was held in the bar room of Calvin Lilly's hotel, then standing on Michigan street, [on the west side of the street, between Jefferson and the first alley north.] The old building is now in existence, and is used by Studebaker Brothers, on Jefferson street as a ware room."

The proceedings of that first and only day of the October term, 1832, of the St. Joseph circuit court, as set out in order book number one, are as follows:

"Be it remembered, that on the 29th day of October, in the year of our Lord A. D. 1832, a term of the circuit court for St. Joseph county, state of Indiana, was begun and

a. Gazetteer of the St. Joseph Valley, p. 44.

a. Acts, 1901, pp. 38, 39.

b. Acts, 1831, pp. 242-244.

c. R. S., 1831, pp. 142-146.

d. See "Early County Records," Chap. 5, Subd. 6, of this work.

held at the house selected by the county commissioners in the town of South Bend. Present John R. Porter, president judge of the first judicial circuit of the state of Indiana, also William McCartney, Senr., and John Banker, Esqr^s., associate judges of the St. Joseph circuit court;^a also Andrew Ingram, prosecuting attorney of the first judicial circuit of the state of Indiana; also Daniel A. Fullerton, sheriff of said county, and Lathrop M. Taylor, clerk of said county of St. Joseph. And the court was opened in due form of law. Now comes Daniel A. Fullerton, sheriff, and returns the venire which were heretofore issued. The following grand jurors appeared and answered to their names, viz.: Lowdy Stevenson, Eli Roe, Pleasant Harris, Nathan Greene, Robert Redding, Peter Johnson, George Wilkenson, Anthony Defrees, John Smith, sen., Stanton Porter, John Massey, William P. Howe, Frederic Beuter, William Runion, Peter Rupel, Jacob Harris, George Holloway and Jacob Bowman. Whereupon the court appointed George Holloway foreman; and the said grand jurors were severally sworn, and retired to deliberate. And Calvin Lilly was sworn as bailiff for said grand jury.

“On motion of E. Egbert, Esqr., J. A. Liston, E. Egbert, A. Ingram, Thomas B. Brown, William M. Jenners and C. K. Green were admitted to practice as attorneys and counsellors at law at the bar of this court.

^a. Chapel W. Brown was one of the associate judges, elected at the first county election, in August, 1830. He, together with Judge Banker, held the first term of our probate court, in January, 1832, as authorized by the act of February 10, 1831, organizing the probate court. He was succeeded by William McCartney. See Subd. 3, Sec. 1, of this chapter, “The Probate Court.” It does not appear that Judge Brown ever sat in the circuit court. In Subd. 3, of this chapter, it is shown that while Judge Brown was elected in August, 1830, he did not qualify till the day he held probate court, January, 1832. It would seem that in this interval William Brookfield was associate judge, by appointment, perhaps. He took the acknowledgment of the plat of South Bend as associate judge, March 28, 1831. See Chap. 11, Subd. 1, Sec. 3; also Subd. 3, of this chapter, Sec. 1.

“Matthias Redding }
vs. } Petition for Divorce.
Hannah Redding }

“And now, at this day, comes the complainant, by E. Egbert, his attorney, and it appearing to the court, upon affidavit filed, that the defendant in this case is a non-resident of the state of Indiana, it is thereupon ordered by the court that the pendency of this suit be published for three weeks successively, sixty days prior to the next term of this court, in the St. Joseph Beacon, a paper published in the town of South Bend, notifying the defendant to appear at the next term of this court, to answer said petition; or the matters therein contained will be heard in her absence.

“Job Brookfield }
vs. } Bill in Chancery.
William Brookfield }

“And now, at this day, comes the plaintiff, by his solicitor; and it appearing to the court, upon affidavit filed, that the defendant in this case is a non-resident of the state of Indiana, it is thereupon ordered by the court that the pendency of this bill be published for three weeks successively (sixty days prior to the next term of this court), in the St. Joseph Beacon, a paper published in the town of South Bend, notifying the defendant to appear at the next term of this court, and plead, answer or demur to said bill; or the matter therein contained will be heard in his absence.

“Elisha Egbert }
vs. } Case for Libel.
Jacob Hardman }

“And now, at this day, come the parties; and this case is dismissed at the plaintiff's cost, for want of a declaration.

“Received my docket fee. J. A. Liston, attorney for defendant.

“James Nixon, Admin. }
vs. } Case in Trover.
Orra Morse }

“And now, at this day, comes the plaintiff, and the defendant not appearing, this case is continued until the next term.

“William Harris }
vs. } Case in Slander.
Reuben Brunson }

“And now, at this day, comes the plaintiff, by his attorney; and this case is dismissed at the plaintiff's cost.

“On motion of A. Ingram, it is ordered to be certified on the record, that C. K. Green, an applicant for a license to practice law, is a young man of good moral character.

“Thomas T. Benbridge }
William Foster }
Charles Foster }
and }
Cornelius Bradlewsey } Debt.
vs. }
Peter Johnson }
and }
Pleasant Harris }

“Now, at this time, come the plaintiffs, by Ingram, their attorney, and this cause is continued by operation of law until the next term of this court. And time is given.

“Peley Babeock }
vs. } In Chancery.
John B. Cicott, et al. }

“Now comes the said plaintiff, by Evans, his attorney, and files here his bill against the said defendants; and it appearing to the satisfaction of this court that Louis Cicott, James Cicott, Joseph Cicott, Francis Cicott, Mary Ann Labada, Hagget Fisher, and the unknown heirs of Ferris Compo, deceased, heirs at law of George Cicott, deceased, by the affidavit of Benjamin Coquillard, defendants to said bill are not inhabitants, and live without the state of Indiana; it is therefore ordered that notice be given of the pendency of this cause to the said defendants, by three successive publications in the St. Joseph Beacon, a newspaper of general circulation published in the county of St. Joseph and state aforesaid, sixty days prior to the next term of this court, that they be and appear on the first day of the next term of this court, to show cause, if any they have, why the prayer of said bill shall not be granted; and it is further ordered that process issue against the said Zachariah Cicott, in this behalf directed, etc. And this cause is continued to the next term of this court, with leave to the plaintiff to amend his bill.

[A case almost identical with the preceding case was that of The Heirs of John Hall, by their guardian and next friend, against The Heirs of George Cicott.]

“Orra Morse }
vs. } In Chancery.
James Nixon }

“And now, at this time, comes the plaintiff, by his counsel, and the defendant, by his attorney, comes also and files his demurrer, in these words (here insert), to which the plaintiff files his rejoinder. And the court thereupon, after mature deliberation, sustains the said demurrer to the plaintiff's said bill. It is therefore considered by the court that the plaintiff's said bill be dismissed, with leave to amend his bill in ninety days; and the said plaintiff pay the costs of this demurrer within ninety days, or attachment to issue.

“State of Indiana } Indictment for Sell-
vs. } ing Spirituous Liquors
Sarah McLelland } to Indians.

“Now, at this day, comes A. Ingram, Esq^r., prosecuting the pleas of the state of Indiana, and the defendant comes also; and being set at the bar of the court, and it being demanded of her how she will acquit herself of said charge, for plea thereto says she is guilty. It is therefore considered by the court that the said def^t do make her fine to the state of Ind. in the sum of five dols., and that she stand committed in the custody of the shff. until the fine and costs of said suit are paid or replevied.

“The grand jury empanelled to enquire into the body of St. Joseph county do report that they have examined the jail of said county, and do find in said jail one prisoner; and further do find said jail insufficient and uncomfortable.

“Octo. 29, 1832.

“George Holloway,
“Foreman.

“Ordered that court adjourn until court in course.

“Signed, Oct. 29, 1832.

“John R. Porter.”

Sec. 5.—THE SECOND SESSION OF THE COURT.—The act of January 7, 1833, as we have already seen, transferred St. Joseph

county from the first to the eighth judicial circuit; and also fixed the terms of court for June and December, in each year. The second term of the St. Joseph circuit court, accordingly, was held in June, 1833. The record shows the court to have been held in a "court house," and also shows the presence of a new president judge and a new prosecuting attorney. The proceedings of this second term opened as follows:

"At the June term of the St. Joseph circuit court, commenced and held at the court house in the town of South Bend, in the county of St. Joseph and state of Indiana, on the first Monday of June, being the third day of June in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty-three.

"Gustavus A. Everts produced his commission bearing date the ninth day of January in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty-three, from his excellency Noah Noble, governor of the state of Indiana, appointing him president judge of the eighth judicial circuit of said state, for and during the term of seven years from the ninth day of January, 1833.

"On the back of which commission is the following endorsement, to-wit: 'State of Indiana, Sixth Judicial Circuit, ss. I, Charles H. Test, president judge of said sixth circuit, certify that Gustavus A. Everts personally appeared before me on the 25th day of February, in the year of our Lord 1833, and being duly sworn depose and saith that he will support the constitution of the United States and the constitution of the state of Indiana, and that he will well and faithfully and impartially discharge the duties of president judge of the eighth judicial circuit of the said state of Indiana, to the best of his abilities.

'As witness my hand and seal, the day and year above written.

'Charles H. Test.'"

Lathrop M. Taylor also "produces his commission from his excellency J. Brown Ray, governor of the state of Indiana, bearing

date the eleventh day of August, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty, commissioning him clerk of the St. Joseph circuit court for the said county of St. Joseph, for and during the term of seven years from the 11th day of August, 1830." And endorsed on such commission is his oath of office, sworn to on the twenty-fourth day of August, 1830, before Samuel L. Cottrell, sheriff of St. Joseph county.

So much of the record of said term as shows the names of the jurors then summoned is also here given, as indicating persons then prominent citizens of the county:

"Daniel A. Fullerton, sheriff of the county of St. Joseph, now returns into court the venire of the grand jury heretofore issued, and brings into court the following jurors named in said venire, to-wit: Horatio Chapin, who was sworn as foreman, Simeon Mason, William Roe, Samuel Witter, Adonijah Rambo, Samuel Ritter, Warren Burk, James Garrett, Abraham Whitmore and Abraham Smith, ten in number, being of the regular panel of grand jurors. The sheriff now summons the following bystanders, to-wit: John D. Lasley, Londy Stephenson, John Beeraft, William Stanfield and John Ireland, who being accepted by the court, together with the above named ten of the regular panel, were sworn as the grand jury of this term; who retired under the charge of Reuben Hildreth, a sworn bailiff, to deliberate upon matters touching their present service.

"The following grand jurors of the regular panel, being three times solemnly called, answer not, to-wit: Samuel Newman, Lot Day, John Egbert, Daniel Edwards, James Palmer, Henry Augustine and John Weaver, but herein wholly make default. It is therefore ordered by the court that an attachment do issue against the above named delinquents, returnable at the first day of the next term of this court, to render excuse, if any they have, for failing appear as grand jurors."

An order followed, admitting certain well

known lawyers to practice in court, as follows: "On motion of J. A. Liston, John B. Chapman, Martin M. Ray, D. H. Colerick, Joseph L. Jernegan, Samuel C. Sample and William O. Ross are admitted to practice as attorneys and counsellors of law at the bar of this court, and they are severally sworn as such."

The seal of the court was also adopted at this term, by the following order: "The court now devise and adopt a seal, and order a description thereof to be recorded, which is done as follows: 'Indiana. St Joseph County.' The device whereof is an eagle, bearing in his talons a bunch of darts, an olive branch and an escutcheon. An impress of which said seal is annexed to this entry and description."

At this second term of the St. Joseph circuit court a considerable increase was shown in litigation. During the six days' session there were thirty-six cases considered by the court, distributed as follows: Domestic attachment, two; attachment for contempt, one; action on bond, one; forfeiture of recognizance, two; to keep the peace, one; trespass, two; trespass in trover and case, one; insolvency, two; divorce, two; chancery cases, five; suppression of ferry license, one; appeal from county commissioners as to ferry license, one; appeals from justice of the peace, fifteen.

It is shown by the record of this June session that John B. Chapman appeared in court and produced his commission from Noah Noble, governor of the state, commissioning him as prosecuting attorney of the eighth judicial circuit for the term of two years from the tenth day of January, 1833.

On the fourth day of the term the grand jury made their report the record being as follows:

"The grand jury now come into court, and return into court sundry bills of indictment found by them, and signed by their foreman as true bills; which are filed by the clerk as such. And the grand jury further make the following presentment of the insufficiency of

the county jail, to-wit: The grand jurors for the state of Indiana, empanelled, sworn and charged in the circuit court of St. Joseph county to enquire in and for the body of the county aforesaid, upon their oath present that they have examined the jail of the county aforesaid, and find that the same has been broken open by some person to them unknown, by cutting a log from one side, rendering the said jail insufficient for the detention of prisoners; and we further present that the said jail is wholly insufficient for the safe keeping of prisoners in other respects.

"H. CHAPIN,

"Foreman of Grand Jury."

The following orders relating to the report of the grand jury and to jury service were made:

"Ordered by the court that writs of *ca-pias ad respondendum* do issue, on all indictments found at the present term; and that each of the defendants in said bills named are required to enter into a recognizance in the sum of \$25.00, with surety in the like sum, except where a different amount is endorsed on said bills.

"It is ordered by the court that the clerk of this court certify to the board of county commissioners the number of days the grand jurors and petit jurors served at this term of the circuit court; as also the number of days the associate judges served at this term."

The names of the associate judges are not mentioned in the proceedings of the term, the record of each day's proceedings being signed only "G. A. Everts."

The following entries are also shown:

"On motion of Samuel C. Sample, Esq., Albert S. White is admitted to practice as an attorney and counsellor at law, and is sworn as such.

"On motion of Albert S. White, Esqr., Hugh McCulloch, Esqr., is admitted to practice as an attorney and counsellor at law at the bar of this court, and is sworn as such.

"On motion of Jonathan Liston, Esqr., it is ordered by the court to be certified of record that John D. Defrees, an applicant for a license to practice as an attorney and counsellor at law, is a man of good moral character."^a

Sec. 6.—OTHER SESSIONS OF THE COURT UNDER THE OLD CONSTITUTION.—The record for the December term, 1833, beginning Monday, December 9, 1833, shows that Gustavus A. Everts was present as president judge and William McCartney and John Banker as associate judges. Lathrop M. Taylor was clerk; Samuel L. Cottrell, sheriff, and John B. Chapman, prosecuting attorney.

The jurors attached to show cause why they should not be punished as for contempt for failing to attend at the June term were each found to have had sufficient excuse, and were discharged.

Ten cases of indictments for selling spirituous liquors were considered by the court at this term. There was one conviction, the trial being by a jury, and a fine of twelve dollars and fifty cents and costs was assessed against the defendant. Three divorces were granted. The grand jury again found the jail "wholly insufficient for the confinement of prisoners, there being a large hole in one corner of said jail and otherwise deficient and wanting much repair." Among the indictments returned was one "for keeping and exhibiting a gaming table," and the defendant was required to enter into a recognizance in the sum of one hundred dollars, and bail in the like sum.

The final order of adjournment at this term was signed only by the associate justices, William McCartney and John Banker. Chapel W. Brown does not appear in the records of the circuit court as one of the associate judges, although he sat with Judge

Banker at a term of the probate court held in 1832. (See note, *supra*.)

The act of January 28, 1834, brought the first term of our circuit court for that year in April.^a The session convened on Monday, April 7, 1834. The judges and other officers were the same as at the December term, 1833, and the character of the litigation was but little different. The final order of adjournment was again signed by the associate judges, this time with the explanation, "previous to signing Judge Everts having left the bench."

At the October term, 1834, the officers of court were unchanged, except the prosecuting attorney. In the following entry it is shown that one of the most distinguished men of the local bar was advanced to that position:

"Now comes into court Samuel C. Sample, Esqr., and produces a commission from his excellency, Noah Noble, governor of said state, commissioning him, the said Sample, prosecuting attorney of the eighth judicial circuit. On the back of which commission was the oath of office endorsed."

At this term there were numerous prosecutions for violations of law,—gaming, selling liquor to Indians, affray, assault and battery, contempt of court, to keep the peace, rout, drunkenness, burglary, larceny, as also cases of slander.

The grand jury again reported "that the jail of said county is totally insufficient in point of strength to confine prisoners, and that the same wants repairing. The same we find clean and wholesome.

"Signed, Reynolds Dunn, Foreman of the grand jury."

On this report it was "ordered by the court that the clerk of this court certify down to the board of county commissioners a copy of the aforesaid jail report, together that it is the order of this court that said commissioners have said jail repaired in a good and substantial manner to contain prisoners."

a. Acts, 1833, p. 70.

a. See act approved January 31, 1824, R. S., 1831, pp. 84-87, regulating admission of attorneys to practice law; also acts approved January 31, 1825, December 28, 1827, February 17, 1838, R. S., 1838, pp. 83-87; R. S., 1843, pp. 660-664.

John B. Niles was at this term admitted to practice law.

On Thursday, the first day of January, 1835, a special term of the St. Joseph circuit court was held for the trial of Alexis Provoncille, indicted for burglary and larceny. The following jury was empanelled to try the case: Simeon Mason, Ezekiel Thomas, John Rudduck, Jr., Londy Stephenson, Seymore Stilson, John Rose, Alexander Blake, Timothy Mate, Henry Smith, Francis R. Tutt, William Middleton and Samuel Good,—“twelve good and lawful men, householders and freeholders of the said county of St. Joseph, who are chosen, elected, tried and sworn to well and truly try the issue joined, as aforesaid.” The defendant was convicted, and was sentenced to state’s prison for two years and fined five dollars. This was the first case of imprisonment in the state’s prison from St. Joseph county.

At the April term, 1835, the officers remained as before. The prosecutions for violations of the criminal law continued numerous, particularly those for gambling, and for keeping gaming tables. There were two indictments for vending merchandise without license, and one for betting on a horse race.

At the October term, 1835, the officers of the court were unchanged, and the character of the litigation continued to show numerous violations of the criminal law. Gambling was still the chief offense, but there were also nine indictments for selling intoxicating liquors without a license, and one for selling spirituous liquors to Indians. Two indictments were returned for violations of the estray laws. There were actions also to keep the peace, and several suits for slander.

At the October term, 1836, Samuel C. Sample was presiding judge, and Joseph L. Jernegan prosecuting attorney. The associate judges remained as before.

At the October term, 1837, John Ireland and Reynolds Dunn appeared as associate judges; and an innovation is shown upon the

records—all three judges signing their names to the orders.

At the October term, 1839, Peter Johnson appears as associate judge, and William C. Hanna as prosecuting attorney.

At the October term, 1840, Gustavus A. Everts was prosecuting attorney; and at the April term, 1841, the office was again filled by William C. Hanna.

At the September term, 1842, John H. Bradley appeared as prosecuting attorney; and at the March term, 1843, Ebenezer Chamberlain.

At the September term, 1843, John B. Niles was president judge, and Reuben L. Farnsworth prosecuting attorney.

At the March term, 1844, Ebenezer M. Chamberlain became president judge, and at the September term of the same year Powers Green and John D. Robertson became associate judges.

At the October term, 1846, Joseph H. Mather succeeded to the office of prosecuting attorney.

At the October term, 1848, George Pierson was prosecuting attorney, and at the April term, 1849, Theodore S. Cowles. Philo Bennett was associate judge at the September term, 1851, and James S. Frazer, afterwards judge of the supreme court, was prosecuting attorney at the same term.

Sec. 7.—SESSIONS OF THE COURT UNDER THE NEW CONSTITUTION.—Under the constitution of 1851, which took effect on the first day of November in that year, the offices of president judge and associate judges were discontinued. The office of circuit judge simply took the place of president judge, although the several president judges were continued in office until the ends of their respective terms. By the act of June 18, 1852,^a re-arranging the circuits, it became doubtful on what day the October term of the St. Joseph circuit court for that year should begin. Accordingly Judge Robert Lowry,

^a Special and Local Acts, 1851-2, pp. 102-105.

who was here to preside at that term, entered the following order:

"It being the opinion of the majority of the bar of this court that there may be much doubt whether court can be legally held in this county commencing on this day, under the laws heretofore in force; that by the act of the last session of the general assembly the old law may be considered as being repealed and a different day fixed for holding said court in this county. It is therefore ordered by the court that all writs, suits, complaints and proceedings pending in said court, both civil and criminal, be and are hereby continued until court in course, and that publication hereof be made in the St. Joseph Valley Register. And court adjourned until court in course.

"Signed October 4th, 1852.

"R. LOWRY."

At the February term, 1853, Thomas S. Stanfield presided as "judge of the ninth judicial circuit, and ex officio judge of the St. Joseph circuit court," as was then the official title of our circuit judge. Don J. Woodward was the prosecuting attorney at this term. Alvin S. Dunbar appeared as deputy prosecutor under Mr. Woodward for several terms.

There was a special June session in the year 1853, at which the Hon. William E. Stuart, one of the judges of the supreme court, presided, for the reason that Judge Stanfield had been interested as attorney in several cases then on the docket.

At the April term, 1855, Morgan H. Weir was prosecuting attorney, but frequently appeared by William G. George, as deputy, or as special prosecutor appointed by the court. Mr. Weir resigned during the next year.

At the April term, 1857, Albert G. Deavitt was judge and Mark L. De Motte, who had been appointed to fill a vacancy caused by the resignation of Judge Stanfield, became ill after his appointment and was succeeded by John B. Niles, prosecuting attorney. Mr. De Motte, prosecuting attorney, usually ap-

peared by William G. George, and sometimes by James Davis, special prosecutors.

At the April term, 1858, Andrew L. Osborn was judge. At this term the court promulgated and had spread of record a set of rules for the government of the business of the court. Reuben L. Farnsworth was appointed special prosecuting attorney. As Judge Osborn was disqualified to try a number of cases in which he had been attorney, there was a special term for June, 1858, at which Charles H. Test, judge of the twelfth circuit, presided. At the April term, 1859, Thomas S. Stanfield was appointed special judge, and William B. Biddle appeared as prosecuting attorney. In April, 1861, D. J. Phillips was prosecuting attorney, and in April, 1865, Aaron Gurney.

At the April term, 1867, Alvin S. Dunbar was appointed special judge, to hold for the term instead of the Hon. Andrew L. Osborn, who was ill. At the October term of the same year William H. Calkins, afterwards representative in Congress, was prosecuting attorney.

At the April term, 1871, Thomas S. Stanfield was again circuit judge, and at the same term Michael L. Essick became prosecuting attorney.

At the March term, 1873, the thirty-second judicial circuit was formed, consisting of St. Joseph and Laporte counties. Four terms, each for four weeks, were assigned to St. Joseph county. Judge Stanfield continued to preside as judge of the new circuit. An important order for the rearrangement and improvement of the court room and the clerk's and sheriff's offices was made at this term. It was one of the most commendable acts of Judge Stanfield's public life, though for a time it occasioned much adverse criticism.

At the June term, 1873, George Ford, by appointment of Governor Thomas A. Hendricks, appeared as prosecuting attorney; and at the December term of that year James A. Crawley became prosecutor. At the De-

ember term, 1875, George Ford again attained to the office, and continued to hold it for many years, until he was elected to congress.

At a special term, opened on July 25, 1876, the Hon. Horace P. Biddle, judge of the supreme court of the state, presided in the trial of important cases, Judge Stanfield having personal interests, by reason of which he deemed it improper for him to preside.

At the December term, 1876, the Hon. Daniel Noyes appeared for the first time as judge of the St. Joseph circuit court. He continued thereafter to preside for the period of eighteen years.

At the March term, 1885, Andrew J. Egbert was prosecuting attorney, and was succeeded at the December term, 1887, by Abraham L. Brick, who, like Mr. Ford, held the office until his election to congress.

An adjourned term of court was held, beginning July 23, 1889, at which the Hon. Joseph A. S. Mitchell, then a member of the state supreme court, took the bench for the trial of an intricate case involving the rights of the various owners of the water power generated by the dam in South Bend over the St. Joseph river. By agreement of parties Judge Mitchell appointed former supreme Judge James S. Frazer referee, to hear and report upon the evidence. The case was finally adjudicated to the satisfaction of all parties, chiefly by reason of the measurements and well-considered system of weirs devised by civil engineer John F. Meighan and adopted by the court.

Judge Stuart, Judge Biddle and Judge Mitchell were the only judges of our supreme court to sit in the St. Joseph circuit court in the trial of causes during their terms as judges of our highest court. Almost as great honor was done us by that eminent jurist, James S. Frazer, who, however, had left the supreme bench before sitting here as referee in our noted hydraulic case.

In December, 1891, Peter D. Connolly was prosecuting attorney. He was one of our

most promising young lawyers, but very soon failed in health. His deputy, Francis M. Jackson, acted for him during the greater part of the time, until the death of Mr. Connolly in the spring of 1893. Mr. Jackson was appointed by the court special prosecutor for the May term, 1893, and soon after was commissioned by Governor Claude Matthews to fill the office until the beginning of the term of Mr. Connolly's successor, Oliver M. Cunningham, in the fall of the same year.

In 1894 the Hon. Lucius Hubbard took his seat as judge of the St. Joseph circuit court, and in 1895 the Hon. John C. Richter, now judge of the Laporte circuit court, became prosecuting attorney of the circuit. In 1897 St. Joseph county became the sixtieth circuit of the state, and Judge Hubbard was retained as first judge of the new circuit. Thomas W. Slick was the prosecuting attorney.

In 1900 the Hon. Walter A. Funk became judge, an office to which he was last year re-elected. In 1901 George E. Clarke became prosecuting attorney. He held the office until 1905, when he was succeeded by George A. Kurtz. The present prosecuting attorney, Joseph E. Talbot, took his office at the beginning of the current year.

Of the judges of the St. Joseph circuit court, Samuel C. Sample, Thomas S. Stanfield, Albert G. Deavitt, Lucius Hubbard and Walter A. Funk were at the time of their incumbency citizens of this county, as were also the following named prosecuting attorneys: Samuel C. Sample, Joseph L. Jernegan, George Ford, Andrew J. Egbert, Abraham L. Brick, Peter D. Connolly, Francis M. Jackson, Oliver M. Cunningham, Thomas W. Slick, George E. Clarke, George A. Kurtz and Joseph E. Talbot. The remaining judges and prosecuting attorneys were citizens of other counties attached to our judicial circuit.

III. THE PROBATE COURT.

Acting under the provisions of article fifth



A. L. Brick.



of the constitution of 1816, authorizing the establishment of courts inferior to the circuit court, the legislature, by an act approved February 10, 1831,^a provided for the organization in each county of a probate court, consisting of one judge, to be elected every seven years by the voters of the county. The court was given "original and exclusive jurisdiction in all matters relating to the probate of last wills and testaments,—granting of letters testamentary, letters of administration, and of guardianship; including also "the protection of minors, idiots and lunatics, and the security and disposition of their persons and estates." The probate court was also given concurrent jurisdiction with the circuit court in actions "in favor of or against heirs, devisees, legatees, executors, administrators, or guardians, and their sureties and representatives;" also "in the partition of real estate," and some other like cases.

The procedure as to pleadings, writs, trial, judgment, executions, etc., was in all respects similar to that in the circuit court, including the right to trial by jury. There might be an appeal either to the circuit court, or directly to the supreme court. The clerk of the circuit court and the sheriff of the county were alike officials of the probate court. As finally fixed by statute, the court met regularly on the second Mondays of February, May, August and November,—except in case the circuit court or the board of county commissioners should be in session on such day, when the probate court was to sit on the succeeding Monday. The sessions of the court were limited to six days, and the compensation of the judge was three dollars per day.

Sec. 1.—THE FIRST SESSION.—The first term of the St. Joseph probate court was held on the fifth day of January, 1832. This term was held by the associate judges of the circuit court, as provided in the act of Febru-

ary 10, 1831, for the organization of the probate court, there being at the time no probate judge qualified to hold the court. Previous to the holding of this term of court the clerk, as authorized by the same statute, had issued letters testamentary on one estate, and letters of administration on another. The record of those first letters issued in this county, and also the record of the first session of our probate court, were entered up in the order book as follows:

"Joseph Garwood, Ex^r }
of Jonathan Garwood. }

"On application of Joseph Garwood to the clerk of the St. Joseph probate court, letters testamentary issued to the said Joseph Garwood on the estate of his father, Jonathan Garwood, late of said county, deceased, in vacation of said court, by his filing bond with John Wills and John Drulent as his securities, in the sum of five thousand dollars.

"John D. Lasly, Adm^r }
of Basile Prunie. }

"On application of John D. Lasly to the clerk of the St. Joseph probate court, letters of administration issued to the said John D. Lasly on the estate of Basile Prunie, late of said county, deceased, in vacation of said court, by his filing bond with Alexis Coquillard and Peter F. Navarre as his securities, in the sum of five hundred dollars.

"At the first term of the St. Joseph probate court, begun and held on Thursday, the fifth day of January, A. D. 1832, at the house of Calvin Lilly, in the town of South Bend, in a room furnished by Alexis Coquillard, it not being convenient for said Coquillard to furnish a room in his house, as provided by law; before the honorable John Banker and Chapel W. Brown, associate judges of the St. Joseph circuit court and sole judges of this court, there being no probate judge qualified in said county according to law to hold court.

"At the hour of eleven o'clock appears John Banker and produces a commission from

^a R. S., 1831, pp. 154-180. See also Act approved Feb. 17, 1838; R. S., 1838, pp. 172-199; and R. S., 1843, pp. 664-670.

his excellency, J. Brown Ray, governor of the state of Indiana, commissioning him, the said John Banker, an associate judge of the St. Joseph circuit court for term of seven years from the eleventh day of August, 1830, dated at Indianapolis the 24th day of October, A. D. 1831."

Endorsed upon Judge Banker's commission was his oath of office, taken on December 8, 1831, before Israel H. Rush, a justice of the peace. A like record is made of the commission and oath of office of Chapel W. Brown, the other associate judge. Judge Brown's oath of office, however, was taken before Levi F. Arnold, justice of the peace, on January 5, 1832, the day on which the court was held. It thus appears that Judge Brown waited from his election, in August, 1830, until January, 1832, before qualifying. As there is no further record of his services, it is probable that his only official action was that taken as ex officio probate judge on January 5, 1832.^a

The only orders made by the court at this first session were to confirm the appointments, of executor and administrator, made by the clerk prior to the session; and also to adopt a seal for the probate court. The last order reads as follows:

"The court now here adopt the following seal, to-wit: Marked with letters thereon, St. Joseph County, Indiana, with a spread eagle thereon, an impression whereof is made on the margin of this page; which this court will use for the purpose of sealing their orders, decrees and other proceedings thereof."

The order of adjournment of this first one-day term of court then followed: "And no further business appearing before the court it adjourned until court in course.

"C. W. Brown.

"John Banker.

"Signed Jany. 5, 1832."

Sec. 2.—FURTHER SESSIONS OF THE COURT.
—The second term of the probate court was

^a. See Note, Subd. 2, of this chapter, Sec. 4. See also Chap. 11, Subd. 1, Sec. 3.

not held for more than a year after the first. The record opens as follows:

"At the February term of the St. Joseph probate court appears James P. Antrim, at the hour of eleven o'clock on the second Monday of February, being the eleventh day of February, A. D. 1833, at the house of Calvin Lilly, in the town of South Bend, in a room provided by the county commissioners of the said county of St. Joseph, and produces a commission in the words and figures following:

'Noah Noble, Governor of the State of Indiana, To all who shall see these presents, Greeting: Know ye, that, in the name and by the authority of the state of Indiana, I do hereby appoint and commission James P. Antrim probate judge for St. Joseph county, to serve as such until a successor is appointed and commissioned.

'In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and caused to be affixed the seal of the state of Indiana at Indianapolis, this 10th day of December, A. D. 1832, the seventeenth year of the state, and of the independence of the United States the fifty-seventh.

'N. Noble.

'By the Governor,

'James Morrison,

'Secretary of State.'

"On the back of which commission is the following endorsement, to-wit:

'This day came James P. Antrim and affirmed that he would support the constitution of the United States and the constitution of Indiana, and that he would to the best of his abilities and judgment faithfully discharge the office of probate judge, in and for St. Joseph county.

'January, the 18th day, A. D. 1833, affirmed before me.

'Samuel Martin,

'Justice of the Peace.'

"And thereupon a probate court is held."

The only business transacted at this second term of the probate court was the appointment of Samuel Garwood as administrator

of the estate of Pricillia Garwood, and the ordering of a citation to require John D. Lasly to file a sale bill and make settlement of the estate of Basile Prunie.

At the February term, 1834, Elisha Egbert appeared as judge of the probate court. Judge Egbert continued to preside until the November term, 1838, when John J. Deming succeeded to the office. In 1846 Edward F. Dibble became judge, and in 1848 Judge Egbert came upon the bench for the second time and served until the court was abolished under the constitution of 1851. The last entry in the probate records reads: "And court adjourns sine die. Signed August 25th, 1852. Elisha Egbert, Probate Judge."

IV. THE COURT OF COMMON PLEAS.

Sec. 1.—ORGANIZATION.—The seventh article of the constitution of 1851, as originally adopted, provided that "The judicial power of the state shall be vested in a supreme court, in circuit courts, and in such inferior courts as the general assembly may establish." Under the power so granted the legislature, by an act approved May 14, 1852,^a provided for a court of common pleas, to consist of one judge, elected by the voters of the proper district, who should hold his office for four years."

This court was given the jurisdiction of the old probate court, with certain additional civil and criminal jurisdiction, inferior to the jurisdiction of the circuit court. It was the old probate court greatly improved, and with its powers and usefulness much enlarged.

By an act approved June 11, 1852,^b provision was made for the election of a district attorney in every common pleas district. The duties of this officer in the court of common pleas were quite similar to those of the prosecuting attorney in the circuit court, except that his jurisdiction, like that of the common

pleas judge, was in general limited to prosecutions for misdemeanors. As in case of the old probate court, appeals might be taken from the court of common pleas either to the circuit court or to the supreme court. Appeals from justices of the peace might be taken to the court of common pleas or to the circuit court. There were four terms of court each year. At first these terms were fixed for the first Monday of January in each year, and for the first Monday of every third month thereafter. The length of each term was made to depend upon the population of the county, varying from one to three weeks. The clerk, however, in the absence of the judge, was, for many purposes, required to keep the court open "on every judicial day of the year."^a

As the common pleas districts were at first arranged, the counties of St. Joseph, Marshall and Starke formed one district.^b But, by an act approved March 5, 1859, Laporte, Marshall, St. Joseph and Elkhart were formed into one common pleas district; while in the act numbering the several common pleas districts, approved March 11, 1861, the district composed of the counties of Laporte, Marshall, St. Joseph and Elkhart was named the seventeenth common pleas district.^c

Sec. 2.—THE COURT IN ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.—The court of common pleas of St. Joseph county held its first session beginning on the first Monday of January, 1853. Although the court was in effect a continuation of the old probate court under the constitution of 1816, yet there were two sides to the court, law and probate. Separate records were kept, all civil and criminal business being transacted on the law side; while on the probate side were considered chiefly matters relating to the settlement of estates and guardianships.

^a. 2 R. S., 1852, p. 16.

^b. *Ib*.

^c. 2 R. S., 1852; pp. 16-23; 2 Gavin and Hord, pp. 19-30. See also Acts, 1853, p. 38; Acts, 1857, p. 33; Acts, 1859, p. 91.

^b. 2 R. S., 1852; pp. 385-386; 2 Gavin and Hord, pp. 429-431. And see Acts, 1861, sp., p. 39.

^c. Acts, 1859, p. 92; 2 Gavin and Hord, p. 20; Acts, 1861, p. 53; 2 Gavin and Hord, pp. 653, 654. And see Acts, 1859, p. 84; 1 Gavin and Hord, pp. 277-281; Acts, 1869, p. 55; Davis' Sup. 1, 206.

The first entry on the probate side reads as follows:

"Be it remembered, that at a term of the court of common pleas of St. Joseph county and state of Indiana, established according to law, begun and held at the court house in the town of South Bend in the county of St. Joseph, in the state of Indiana, on Monday, the third day of January, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and fifty-three, and before the Hon. Elisha Egbert, judge of the district composed of the counties of St. Joseph, Marshall and Starke and ex officio judge of the said court of common pleas of St. Joseph county; and also present Samuel M. Chord, clerk of the court of common pleas of St. Joseph county; and also present Benjamin F. Miller, sheriff of said county. And at the hour of one o'clock P. M., on said day, said court was opened in due form of law. Thereupon it was ordered by the court that the commissions of said judge, clerk and sheriff of said court be entered of record on the order book of said court."

This term lasted for three days and but little business was done.

In vacation of court, on January 13, 1853, the judge and clerk, as required by the act of May 14, 1852, organizing the court, "proceeded agreeable to law to devise and adopt a seal to be used for said court, and it is described as follows: Said seal is about one and three-quarters inch in diameter, with two circles on the outer edge, between which are the following words in capitals, to-wit: Court of Common Pleas of St. Joseph County. In the inner circle or center of said seal is the following design, to-wit: A female with a spear and a pair of scales, with the word Indiana immediately over her head."

An impression of the seal of the probate court is made upon the margin of the record.

There were only three judges of the St. Joseph court of common pleas, Elisha Egbert, who held the office until his death, in 1870; Edward J. Wood, who held until the Janu-

ary term, 1873, and Daniel Noyes, who was elected in 1872 and held the office until the court was abolished by the act of March 6, 1873.

The district attorneys during the existence of the common pleas court of St. Joseph county were: In 1853, Horace Corbin; in 1854, James L. Foster, and Edward F. Dibble; in 1855, Joseph Henderson; in 1857, Andrew Anderson, Jr.; in 1858, Reuben L. Farnsworth; in 1859, Amasa Johnson; in 1861, James Davis; in 1861-2, Charles P. Jacobs; in 1863, William Andrew; in 1869, Joseph D. Arnold; in 1872, William B. Hess, and in 1873, George Ford.

V. A CELEBRATED CASE.

Sec. 1.—SLAVERY, AS KNOWN IN INDIANA.—Very many important cases affecting the rights of the people in their persons and property were passed upon from time to time by the three courts of St. Joseph county. To some of them reference has been made in the preceding pages. No case, however, has at any time been tried in our courts which roused the people to a higher pitch of interest at the time, or was productive of more lasting results upon the community, not only of this county, but of all northern Indiana, than the fugitive slave case that came before Judge Egbert in the old probate court in 1849. The conflict in relation to slavery was growing warmer year by year over the whole country, and nowhere more so, perhaps, than in this state. Indiana, as we have seen, had originally been slave territory. The ordinance of 1787 for the government of the northwest had declared that "There shall be neither slavery nor involuntary servitude in said territory," and this prohibition was repeated in both our constitutions. But though prohibited by law, slavery did exist in fact. Even as late as 1840, as we have seen, the existence of slaves in Indiana is shown in the United States census. From the first settlement the question was a burning one in our commonwealth, and this fire was destined to be

quenched only by the blood of the people in the great civil war.

But to the people of St. Joseph county in the year 1849 the existence of slavery seemed a thing afar off. The great body of our citizens knew of the institution only as something, as it were, in a distant land, something of which they had read or heard people talk. They had not as yet come in contact with it; it was a thing quite removed from their daily life. Railroad communication, which now brings the uttermost parts of the land so close to one another, was then unknown. Kentucky was not nearer to us than California or Oregon is now. Neither was the condition of slavery aired among the people by any national uplifting of the subject that set the real nature of the institution before their eyes, or called upon them to take action in regard to it. The compromise measures of Henry Clay had not yet been passed, nor had the fugitive slave law been enacted. The slavery dispute was as yet smoldering, and had not burst into flame. Such was the condition of the public mind of the people of St. Joseph county upon the subject of slavery when a most remarkable object lesson was brought before them. The slave and his master were found pleading the great issue in our simple probate court.^a

Sec. 2. OUR SLAVE CASE.—John Norris, residing south of the Ohio river, a little below the town of Lawrenceburg, Indiana, claimed to own as slaves a family consisting of David Powell, his wife Lucy, and their four children, Lewis, Samuel, George and James. The family was allowed to cultivate a plat of ground and sell the produce where they pleased; and David and his boys often crossed the river to Lawrenceburg to make sale of their crops. During the night of

Saturday, October 9, 1847, the whole family disappeared from Kentucky. The alarm was given next morning and several persons started in pursuit. Norris and his party hunted through southern Indiana for two months without success, though they found in several places articles belonging to the fugitives.

Two years afterwards, in September, 1849, Norris started north with eight men, and at midnight on the 27th of that month, they broke into the house occupied by the Powells, about eight miles from Cassopolis, Michigan. The house was in the woods, about half a mile from any other dwelling; and David Powell and his son Samuel were at the time absent from home. Norris and his party compelled the mother and her three children to rise from their beds and go with them; and, hurrying them off to their covered wagons, they started for Kentucky. A guard was left at the house to prevent the other inmates from giving the alarm. After a short time, however, the news spread and pursuit commenced. A neighbor, Wright Maudlin, overtook Norris and his party about noon next day near South Bend, Indiana, thirty miles from where they had started. Mr. Maudlin immediately applied to Edwin B. Crocker, an attorney of South Bend, stating what he knew of the circumstances, that he had no doubt the Powells were free people, that he had known them as quiet and industrious persons, and never heard any intimation that they were slaves; that they had purchased a small tract of land, on which they resided at the time of their abduction, and that they were laboring hard to pay for it.

A petition for a writ of habeas corpus was drawn up, and signed and sworn to by Mr. Maudlin, averring that Mrs. Powell and her son Lewis were deprived of their liberty by some person whose name was unknown, under pretense that they were fugitive slaves; and averring that he verily believed they sheriff, for service. Mr. Day called upon sev-

a. The St. Joseph County Fugitive Slave case was fully treated in a paper prepared for a History of St. Joseph County, published in 1880 by Chapman & Co., of Chicago. The writer shows himself to have been familiar with the facts, but does not give his name. We have somewhat abbreviated the narrative. Chapman, Hist. St. Joseph County, pp. 618-626.

were free persons. On this petition the Hon. Elisha Egbert, probate judge, ordered a writ of habeas corpus to issue. The writ was placed in hands of Russell Day, deputy eral citizens to accompany him in serving the writ. In the meantime, the report having spread that a party of kidnappers with their captives were in the vicinity, the whole community was aroused, and the people, in a state of excitement, ran about anxiously inquiring into the matter. The deputy sheriff overtook Norris and his captives about a mile south of the town, where he had stopped in the woods to feed his horses. His party was well armed and made quite a display of their weapons, and at first evinced a disposition to resist all legal proceedings. The writ, however, was served by reading; and after a parley in which the deputy insisted that Norris and his party would not be allowed to proceed without a fair trial of his claims, he at last agreed to go back to town and proceed to trial on the writ of habeas corpus. By this time thirty or forty persons had arrived from town, two of them with guns; but no attempt was made to do violence to the kidnappers; and Norris and his party drove back to town, followed by the deputy sheriff and the people. Meanwhile another writ of habeas corpus, for all four of the captives, was sued out, and directed to Mr. Norris, whose name had now been learned. The first writ was dismissed. At the request of Norris, the deputy sheriff took the custody of the captives until Norris could procure counsel. In a short time he secured the services of Mr. Liston and Mr. Stanfield, to conduct his defense. Mr. Crocker and Mr. Deavitt appeared for the captives.

The fugitive slave law not then being on the statute book, the only law under which Norris could hold his captives was an old statute of 1793, not having any particular reference to the recovery of runaway slaves, but intended, in general, for the arrest of persons who had violated law in one state and then fled to another. It was contended

against Norris that he had not complied with the terms of this statute, and therefore had no standing in court to hold his captives. In his favor it was contended that he had a right to arrest his slaves wherever he found them. No authority was introduced to sustain this contention; and Judge Egbert, after a full and candid hearing, ordered the Powells to be discharged.

The court was crowded with an anxious audience, listening to the argument of counsel and awaiting the decision of the court. Everything had been conducted with order and propriety, and no one anticipated the scene that followed the decision of the court. The judge spoke in a low tone of voice, so that but few had heard him. Mr. Crocker, however, stated the decision in a voice that all could hear. Norris, in the meantime, had gathered his men around the captives seated within the bar; and the moment the decision was repeated by Mr. Crocker the Norris party seized each of the captives with one hand, brandished their weapons with the other and threatened to shoot the first man that interfered. This action took place before adjournment of court and while the judge was still sitting on the bench. Up to that time everything had been quiet among those gathered in the court room; but upon this display of force the people rose to their feet in a state of excitement. Some ran out to spread the alarm through the town; others crowded around the Norris party and their captives, calling upon them to put up their arms. Notwithstanding their excitement the citizens made no attempt to rescue the captives by force. At length the Norris party put up their arms, the excitement subsided, and the sheriff, at the request of Norris, locked up the captives for safe keeping.

This was on Friday. During that evening and the next day several warrants were issued against Norris and his men for assault and battery, and one for riot, based upon their violent proceedings in the courthouse. Saturday was occupied in trying these cases;

and in the riot case Norris and his party voluntarily gave bail to appear in the circuit court, which was to begin its session the next Monday morning. Two suits were also begun by the Powells against Norris and his men, for trespass and false imprisonment; and they were held to bail in the sum of one thousand dollars in each suit. On Saturday evening another writ of habeas corpus was issued against Norris, charging him with having placed the captives in jail, returnable also on Monday morning.

There was at this time an extensive negro settlement near Cassopolis, in the neighborhood where the Powells had been found by Norris and his men. As soon as it was known that Powell's wife and children had been captured, large parties of these people, themselves almost all fugitive slaves, started to rescue their friends. It was not until Saturday that they learned definitely the direction the captors had taken. During Saturday and Sunday great numbers of these negroes arrived in South Bend, many of them armed and all of them in a highly exasperated state of mind, though conducting themselves with coolness and moderation.

On Saturday, a citizen of Michigan made affidavit before a justice of the peace in South Bend that Norris and his party had been guilty of kidnapping in Michigan, and had fled from that state to Indiana. On this affidavit a writ was issued, but not served: for it afterwards became apparent that Norris and his men would be pleased to be arrested so as to give that as an excuse for not appearing in court on Monday morning to answer in the habeas corpus case.

On Sunday morning Norris, after a consultation with his attorneys, became satisfied that it would be useless to attempt to take his captives out of the county, in the face of the great number of armed negroes from Michigan. He therefore made up his mind to abandon all present legal proceedings; and determined instead to bring suits for damages for the value of the negroes against the per-

sons who had prevented him from taking them back.

On Monday morning, accordingly, when the habeas corpus case came on for trial, Norris refused to appear, saying that he did not want the negroes; but would make the citizens pay for them, which suited him better. The sheriff, in his return, stated that he held the captives as the agent of Norris, under the state writ, which was set out in full. A replication to this return was filed, sworn to by Lewis Powell, excepting to the sufficiency of the return, and alleging that he and his family were free persons and not slaves. One of Norris' attorneys was present at the trial, but refused to appear for him. The case of *Prigg vs. Pennsylvania*, 16 Peters', in which the supreme court of the United States declared that all laws passed by the states in relation to fugitives from labor are unconstitutional, was read to the court, and several witnesses were examined in relation to the facts of the case. The court, after a full and fair hearing, again ordered the captives to be discharged. The negro friends and neighbors of the captives now came forward, conducted them out of the courthouse to a wagon and quietly drove off to their home in Michigan. On the bridge, as they crossed the St. Joseph, they halted and gave hearty cheers. They then rode on, singing their songs of freedom and rejoicing over the fortunate escape of their friends. The prosecutions against Norris and his party were now dropped, and in a few days they also quietly departed for their homes. Thus ended one of the most exciting episodes that ever took place in northern Indiana.

Norris afterwards made his threat good; and brought suit in the United States circuit court for the district of Indiana, to recover damages against Leander B. Newton, George W. Horton, Edwin B. Crocker, Solomon W. Palmer, David Jodon, William Willmington, Lot Day, Jr., Amable La Pierre and Wright Maudlin, who had befriended the negroes. The pleadings were passed upon by Judge

Huntington, then on the bench, who ruled for the claimant. The case was afterwards tried before Judge McLean. In his charge to the jury, the judge favored the claim; which was, for Lucy, forty years of age, five hundred dollars; for Lewis, twenty years of age, eight hundred dollars; for George, sixteen years of age, seven hundred and fifty dollars; for James, fourteen years of age, seven hundred dollars; and for claimant's expenses, one hundred and sixty-five dollars and eighty cents. The jury allowed the claims, substantially as made, the verdict, in the aggregate, being for two thousand eight hundred and fifty-six dollars. During the years 1850 and 1851, twelve additional suits were brought against fifteen defendants for five hundred dollars' penalty each, for violation of the statute of 1793. Twenty-five other suits were threatened, if these should prove successful. These penalty suits were, however, decided in favor of the defendants, and the litigation came to an end. Such, in brief, was the most famous case ever litigated before the courts of St. Joseph county, and by St. Joseph county lawyers.

VI. THE COUNTY BUILDINGS.

On Tuesday, November 1, 1831, the board of county commissioners, then consisting of Aaron Stanton, David Miller and Joseph Rohrer, being in session at the house of Alexis Coquillard, on the second day of the November term of the board for that year, took the first step for the erection of buildings in which the business of the new county could more conveniently be carried on. The order of the board made on that day in relation to the matter is as follows:

Sec. 1.—THE FIRST COUNTY JAIL.—“Ordered by the board aforesaid, that the county agent be required to sell out to the lowest bidder, on the eighth of this month, at the hour of one o'clock on said day, the building of a county jail, of the following dimensions, to-wit: The jail to be thirty feet long and sixteen feet wide, with a partition wall

through the center of the building; all the timber of the walls to be of good white oak timber, and to be hewed at least one foot square; as also both the under and upper floor to be of like timber, of one foot square; the foundations of the building to be laid one foot and a half below the surface of the ground, and to be raised six inches above the ground; the sills to be fifteen inches wide, and the logs for the floor to be let in on the sills six inches, and the logs to be rabbeted out that go on the top of the floor and let down over so as to completely cover the ends of the logs and prevent the floor from being raised; the building to be raised with a half dovetailed notch, in each of the corners as well as the partition wall; the story to be eight feet between the under and the upper floor; the upper floor to be the ends of the logs cut off about six inches at each end, and the under side of the ends to be cut out or blocked off about four inches and let down on the logs, so as to prevent them from slipping out; the plates to be rabbeted out over the ends of the floor logs and onto them; the roof to be put on with good white oak rafters, covered with good sheathing and good joint pine shingles; the gable ends to be done up with good poplar weather boarding; the corners of the building to be raised up plumb, and the corners to be sawed down smooth; the outside door to be cut out one foot from the partition wall, and to be two feet wide and four feet high in the clear when finished. There shall be an iron rod run up through the ends, or a foot from the ends, of the logs on the side of the door opposite the partition wall, of one inch bolt, and to extend six inches into the log below those cut out, and six inches up into the log above those cut out, and running through the same. The door shall be made of white oak plank of two inches thick, and be made double with said planks; the door shall be hung on three strap hinges, the straps to be three inches broad and half an inch thick; and the door

shall also be lined with iron straps, to be put on within four inches of each other, and on each side of the door; and said straps, as well as the hinges, shall all be riveted through the door within four inches of each other; the straps, other than the hinges, shall be at least one-eighth of an inch thick; the door to be hung on hooks to be in proportional size to the straps, and two of the hooks to be set upwards and one turned downwards; the lock of the door to be set in the inside by the contractor; the lock to be furnished by the agent; the hooks on which the door is hung to be entered into the timber well; and the cheeks of said door shall be lined with good white oak plank, one and a half inch thick, to be well spiked on. There shall also be another door made in the center of the partition wall, to be two feet wide and four feet high in the clear of said door after being finished; the cheeks of said door shall be faced with good oak plank, one and a half inch thick and well pinned on; the door shall be made of two inch white oak plank; the door shall be hung on two strap hinges, to extend across the door and hang on two sufficient hooks driven into the wall; the whole of the door to be driven with spikes within four inches of each other; the contractor shall put the lock on furnished by the agent. There shall be a window cut out in each end of the house, two feet wide and one foot high; and there shall be bars of iron in each of said windows, of one and a quarter inch square, and shall be placed up and down in the windows within two inches of each other, and the ends of said bars shall be sunk in the lower and upper logs at least three inches.

"And the jail shall be put on the southwest corner of the public square in the town of South Bend, and shall set lengthways north and south on the line of said lot, and the door shall be on the east side of said house. The undertaker shall be required to give bond and security to be approved of by the agent, in the penal sum of one thou-

sand dollars. The contract to be completed by the last Monday in April next ensuing the date hereof. The contractor will be entitled to receive a county order on the county treasury as soon as the contract is completed for the building of said jail. All the work to be done in a good, workmanlike and substantial manner."

Such were the plans and specifications for the first jail of St. Joseph county. As in many other cases, since and before, the work does not seem to have been completed according to the plans, nor to the satisfaction of the county commissioners. This will appear from the following record:

"The board of St. Joseph county commissioners met at the usual place of meeting on Saturday, the 28th day of April, 1832, in the town of South Bend; it being a special meeting of said board to receive the jail built for the said county. Present, David Miller and Joseph Rohrer, Esqrs.

"The commissioners, after a full examination of the said jail, are of opinion that it was not finished according to contract; and by an agreement with the said Woods & McCormie [the contractors], they took the said jail off of their hands.

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, that Andrew Woods be allowed the sum of two hundred and six dollars and ninety cents, in full for his half in building a jail for said county, to be paid out of the first money that may come into the treasury from any donations made the county for the location of the county seat.

"Ordered by the board aforesaid, that Denis McCormie be allowed the sum of two hundred and six dollars and ninety cents, out of the first moneys that may come into the county treasury from any donations that have been made to said county for the location of its county seat, in full for his half in building a jail for said county."

On March 3, 1835, the board entered into contract with Peter Johnson to add a second story to the jail for six hundred and twenty-

five dollars. This time the work was done according to agreement by one of the most competent and reliable of our early contractors. At the ensuing September term, September 9, 1835, an order was made which has a strange sound at the present day. Orlando Hurd, then one of the county commissioners, was "authorized and empowered to rent or let out the two upper rooms attached to the jail of said county, for the purpose of having the jail and other property belonging to said county guarded and taken care of."

Perhaps this primitive wooden jail, its walls and floors of white oak timber, "hewn at least one foot square," held its inmates quite as securely as the steel cages of our modern structure, "the best jail in the state," hold the incorrigibles of our day. If the officer then in charge was as competent as his successor in charge to-day, we have little doubt that our first jail of white oak was amply sufficient for the purpose.

Sec. 2.—THE FIRST COURT HOUSE.—But the new county needed a court house nearly as much as it did a jail. At the January term, 1832, the board of commissioners met as heretofore at the house of Alexis Coquillard; but "it not being convenient for the said Coquillard to furnish them a room in his house, by request of the said Coquillard the commissioners adjourned to the house of Calvin Lilly in the town of South Bend, in a room provided for them at the request of the said Alexis Coquillard." The need of a permanent place to attend to the public business was thus forcibly brought to the attention of the board, and on the third day of the session, Wednesday, January 4, 1832, the following entry was made in the records of the board:

"The following is a statement of the court house to be built in St. Joseph county:

"The court house shall be forty feet square, and built of brick. The foundation shall be made of good, durable arch brick, and sunk one foot below the surface of the ground.

And the said wall shall be raised three feet high above said foundation, shall be twenty-two inches in thickness; and there shall also be a foundation wall run north and south through said building, and raised so high that a sill of eighteen inches square, with the joist placed on said wall, shall raise the floor of the first story only three feet from the foundation. The walls of the first story of the building shall be raised so high as to leave twelve feet between the first floor and the ceiling. The walls of the first story shall be laid eighteen inches thick. The walls of the second story shall be raised ten feet above the second floor, and be made thirteen inches thick. There shall be a plate of yellow poplar timber of thirteen inches square placed on the top of the wall all around said building. There shall be four stacks of chimneys carried up in said building, one in each corner of the house; and there shall be a fireplace in each of said chimneys in the lower story, of three and one-half feet in the back and five feet in the flare or front of the jambs, in the under room of each of said chimneys, except the southeast chimney, which may be three feet in the back and four feet in the front. And there shall be also a fireplace made in each of said chimneys in the second story of said building, except the southeast; and said fireplace shall be three feet in the clear in the back, and four feet in the flare or front of said fireplaces. The east half of the under room shall be filled up with earth nearly to top of the aforementioned sill, and then laid over with good hard brick. There shall be substantial iron bars under the arch of each fireplace. And in the north of said under room there shall be joists placed east and west across in said sill and wall, and within two feet of each other, of good white oak timber; and they shall be three inches thick and fourteen inches wide, and placed so as the floor when laid shall be three feet from the foundation. The floor of said end shall be laid of white oak boards, of one and one-

fourth inch thick and six inches wide. There shall be four air holes left in the west side of said building, and two on the north and two on the south, of nine inches deep and four inches wide, to let the air in under the floor. There shall be two columns set upon said sill, running through the center of said building, one twelve feet from the north side of said building and the other twelve feet from the south side. The said columns shall be turned by a biletion, and with a handsome mold at each end of the same; and there shall also be a hole bored through the center of each of said columns with a common pump auger. There shall be a poplar girder of fourteen inches square running across said building, north and south, and placed on said columns; and the joists for the second floor shall be laid into said girder, and on the walls, east and west. The said joists shall be three inches thick and fourteen inches wide, and shall be placed in said girder within two feet of each other; and the floor shall be made and laid on said joists, of poplar boards of one and one-fourth inch thick and six inches wide. There shall be a door made on the east side, and in the center of the house, of four feet wide, and shall have a transom light sash above the door, and to be made to correspond with the height of the windows; and also a door of the same description, to be placed in the center of the north side of the building. The doors shall be made of eight panels, and lined and braced on the inside of the door. Said doors shall be three inches thick, and hung on three butts sufficiently strong, and have each a good substantial thumb latch, and each a twelve inch stock lock fixed thereon. There shall be three twenty-four light windows, of glass ten by twelve, on the west side of the building, to be placed so in the wall of the building as to have the columns between the windows on each side even; and also two windows on the north side of said building, to be placed half way between the corners of the building and the door; and also two

windows in the east side of the house, to be placed in the center of the wall between the ends of the house and door; and also two windows on the south side of the building, to be placed in the wall so as the columns shall be of a width; the last mentioned windows to be all of the same description as the first mentioned.

“In the second story, there shall be a row of studding running through the center of the building, north and south, for a partition wall, made of white oak studs and placed within eighteen inches of each other. And there shall be another partition wall running through east and west on the west side of said building, eighteen feet from the south wall; and also there shall be another partition wall of studding running through the eastern side of said building, eighteen feet from the north wall, of studs of white oak as aforesaid, within eighteen inches of each other.

“In the third story, there shall be two poplar or oak girders, running north and south across said building, of ten by twelve inches square, and placed in the center of the building and thirteen feet asunder, to start the cupola on; and there shall be joists framed into said girders, within eighteen inches of each other, of three inches by six. The first story of the steeple shall be five feet; the second story, or the octagonal part, with the ogee formed dome, twelve feet, with eight Venetian shutters, six feet high. The third story, or the spire and its pedestal, to be fifteen feet. There shall be a wooden ball, overlaid with gold leaf, placed on said spire at a proper place, that will measure two and one-half feet in diameter; and there shall be also a wooden fish fixed near the top of said spire, overlaid with gold leaf. There shall be a lightning rod fixed at or near the top of the spire, and run down on the outside of the building to the ground, of three-fourths of an inch diameter.

“The building shall be covered with a hip roof, drawn from each corner, and covered with good joint pine shingles. There shall

be a cornice put on each side of the building, of eighteen inches wide, with a bed-mold thereon, and to have tin conductors fixed thereunto of three inches diameter. The cornice is to be put up with good substantial screw bolts one-half inch square, five to each cornice.

“There shall be three windows put in on the north side of said building, in the second story, over the door and windows in the lower story; and on the west side of said building, two windows, to be placed over the windows in the lower story nearest the corners of the building; and on the south side of the building, two windows; and on the east side, three windows, to be placed parallel over the door and windows below; all of said windows to be made of glass, ten by twelve inches, and to have each twenty-four lights of sash. The frames are to have parting strips, and the sash to be made one and one-half inch thick, and to be made with lock rails.

“There shall be a six panel door made and hung in each room in the second story, to be hung with good butts, one pair to a door, and a good wrought thumb latch and stock lock for each. There shall be an open newell staircase run up from the lower story to the second, with banisters around the head of the staircase; likewise, there shall be a mill-step staircase run up from the second story, up into the cupola, at the head of which there is to be a trap door.

“All the aforesaid rooms and inside walls to be well lathed and plastered, except the brick, which shall not be lathed, but plastered only, with two good coats of lime and sand.

“There shall be Venetian shutters made and hung to each of the windows in said building. The shutter blinds shall be tenanted into the stiles, and hung on good strap hinges put on with screws; and shutter holders shall be fixed into the walls to hold the shutters open, and iron bolts for the same.

“The outside of the walls of said building shall be painted with good Venetian red

paint, and all pencilled off at each joint with white lead. The cornice shall be all painted with three coats, with white lead and oil. The window shutters shall be painted green. The doors shall all be painted with a mahogany color. The door frames shall be made the width of the walls; and all the window and door frames shall be well painted with two coats of white lead and oil; and the sash also. The glass are to be glazed in with good putty. The doors on the inside are to be one and one-half inch thick.

“There shall be pieces of timber, of four inches square and four feet long, framed on the ends of the principal girders and joists, for the better support of the walls, at suitable distances from the corners. There shall be scuppers made around at the floor of the cupola, to let the water, etc., out. The columns of the cupola to be dressed neatly, eight square. A cornice underneath the dome to be finished in a neat and good manner.

“All of the aforesaid materials for said building to be of the best and most durable kind that the country affords; and all and every part of said building to be done, finished and completed in good style, and the best workmanlike and most substantial manner.

“N. B. The undertaker to furnish every material necessary for said building. There shall be washboards placed around in all the aforesaid rooms, with a base member. And the walls of the aforesaid building, and the roof, windows and doors, and otherwise, well closed on or before the first day of December next; and the remainder of said building shall be fully completed on or before the first of December, A. D. 1833.

“The contractor of said building will be paid the sum of five hundred dollars on the 15th of May next; and the second payment on the first of December next, which, with the five hundred dollars, shall amount to the third of the amount of the whole contract. The second third of the amount of the contract will be paid when the building is fin-

ished, and the last payment will be made May 20, 1834. The contractor shall be required to give bond and security under the penalty of five thousand dollars for the performance of the contract.

"The county agent is directed to give notice in the Northwestern Pioneer that he will receive sealed proposals at South Bend between the hours of ten and two o'clock on Monday, the 6th day of February next, for to enter into contract for building of the said house, and that the contractor name his securities in his proposals."

As required by the foregoing order, there appeared in the Northwestern Pioneer and St. Joseph's Intelligencer, for Wednesday, January 11, 18 and 25, 1832, the following notice:

"A Cash Job.

"Court-House of St. Joseph County.

"Sealed proposals will be received on the 6th day of February next ensuing, at the house of Calvin Lilly, in South Bend, between the hours of 10 o'clock A. M. and 2 o'clock P. M. for building a COURT HOUSE in said county. The time of the payment, a description of the building, etc., may be seen at any time, at the Clerk's Office, by any person that may wish to see them. Security will be required of the undertaker, for the faithful performance of the contract, and such security must be named in the proposals.

"JOHN EGBERT, Agent.

"South Bend, Ind., Jan. 4, 1832."

The board met on February 6, 1832, to receive bids on the court house; but found all proposals unsatisfactory; and thereupon adjourned until the next morning, when the following record was made:

"Tuesday, February the 7th, the board met pursuant to adjournment. Present Aaron Stanton, David Miller and Joseph Rohrer. And they enter into contract with Peter Johnson for building of a court house for said county; which contract reads in the words and figures following, to-wit:

" 'Know all men by these presents, That we,

Peter Johnson, Alexis Coquillard, L. M. Taylor, Pleasant Harris, and Samuel Martin, all of the county of St. Joseph in the state of Indiana, are held and firmly bound unto Aaron Stanton, David Miller and Joseph Rohrer, a board doing county business in and for the county of St. Joseph, and their successors in office, in the penal sum of six thousand dollars, lawful money of the United States, to the payment whereof well and truly to be made, we hereby bind ourselves and our representatives firmly by these presents. Sealed with our seals and dated this seventh day of February, A. D. 1832.

" 'The condition of the above obligation is such that if the said Peter Johnson, the above bounden, shall well and truly build a court house in and for the said county of St. Joseph, of the following description, to-wit: ' "

Then follows a description of the building, slightly changed from that set out in the order of the board made five weeks previously.

The court house was formally accepted from the contractor for partial use, at the September term, 1833; but was not finally completed, accepted and paid for until the year 1837. In September of that year a contract was entered into with William Keeley and Samuel C. Russ to build a clerk's and recorder's office, forty by twenty, by way of addition to the court house, which had by that time proved to be too small for the business of the county.

Sec. 3.—THE SECOND COUNTY JAIL.—The primitive log jail, completed in 1835, did not long satisfy the needs of the county. At the September term, 1844, of the county commissioners, the board ordered a new jail built of brick, in accordance with plans on file; and on December 4, 1844, the building of the jail was let to Lot Day for eighteen hundred and fifty dollars. On December 4, 1845, this second jail was completed and accepted by the county commissioners.

These primitive county buildings, first undertaken in the early '30's, in the infancy

and weak financial condition of the county, were made to do service for nearly thirty years. After 1850, however, when population and wealth had increased, when the railroad and the telegraph were here, when "the St. Joseph country" had become a land of farms and prosperous towns, when great cities were growing up to the west and the south, and all this throbbing life of the strong young nation was coming nearer and nearer to us, the people began to look upon the good old court house, "forty feet square, and built of brick," and even to the modest successor of the log jail, "thirty feet long and sixteen feet wide," its "walls of white oak timber, hewed one foot square," as quite out of keeping with the attainments and prospects of this splendid county of St. Joseph and its enterprising citizens.

Sec. 4.—THE SECOND COURT HOUSE.—At the March term, 1853, of the board of county commissioners, then consisting of Gilman Toole, Edwin Pickett and John Druliner, an advertisement for plans for a new court house, with estimates of cost, was ordered published, twenty-five dollars to be paid for the plan adopted. At the September term of the same year, John Hammond having then taken the place of Mr. Pickett on the board, plans were adopted and the court house ordered built. Separate contracts were let. At the December term, 1853, the contract for lumber was let to Henry and J. T. Johnson; and for timber to William Crews. At the March term, 1854, the contract for sash and doors was let to J. M. Vanosdel. At the same term the most important contract, that for dressed stone, to be the "best quality Athens stone," was let, through A. B. Ellsworth, then county auditor, to the Illinois Stone and Lime Company, for seven thousand six hundred and eighty-five dollars and fifty cents, to be paid in monthly estimates as delivered, retaining fifteen per cent until the completion of the contract. The stone was to be delivered so that the water table might be laid by May first,

1854; remainder as needed, subject to acceptance of Vanosdel & Olmstead, architects and superintendents. At the September term, 1855, the various offices in the new court house were assigned; and it was ordered that the use of the building should be confined to the "courts, county officers and political meetings." In the early days, the court room was the only public hall in the county; and of necessity it was used for almost every kind of a gathering of the people, public or private. The time had come, in the opinion of the county board, to restrict the use of the county building to its proper purposes,—the only leniency granted being in



OLD COURT HOUSE.

favor of "political meetings"; this, too, because of necessity. At the June term, 1860, the floor of the court room was ordered "deadened," and other changes made for the convenience of the court. (In 1906, when the first story of this court house was prepared for the use of the Northern Indiana Historical Society, the lower set of joists used to "deadend" the sounds below from reaching the court room were discovered and removed in remodeling the room for the use of the Historical Society.)

The new court house was placed near the northeast corner of the public square, facing east on Main street. The building was a

most elegant and substantial one, and was the pride of the people of the county. It was thus described in the St. Joseph Valley Register, of April 27, 1854:

"In size the new court house is sixty-one and a half by ninety-one and a half feet, including the portico; two stories high, the lower one twelve and one-half in height clear of the joists, and the upper one twenty feet, surmounted by a cupola fifty high. The stone foundation extends thirty-three inches below the ground and is carried above three feet. The lower story contains all the offices. Entering by the portico, which is on the eastern front, and supported by six pillars, you pass into a spacious hall, fourteen feet wide and eighty-one feet long, on each side of which are situated the various offices. From the front of the hall, stairs rise on both sides to the second story, meeting above in a lobby thirteen by twenty-seven feet, from which a spacious court room, fifty-seven by fifty feet and twenty feet high, is entered by a door in the center. About the middle of the court room a semi-circular bar separates the officers, attorneys, suitors and witnesses from the audience. Inside the bar are the lawyers' tables, pleading table, officers' desk and witness' stand. Still further back in the western extreme of the court room is the judge's bench, with the grand and petit jury box on either side, in the shape of an L. In the rear of the court room are three rooms, one immediately behind the judge's bench, for a witness' room, seventeen by twelve, and on each side a jury room, twenty by thirteen, so that juries can retire, from a door opening from their seats, into their consultation room, without having to pass through the audience. The building is of brick and stone, the inner walls of the former material and the outer walls of the latter. The cupola is surmounted by a town clock."

As this second court house was built on the site which had been occupied by the first court house, it became necessary during its construction to rent rooms for the use of the

county. Court was held in the basement of the Methodist Episcopal Church, located in the same square and just south of the county grounds. The rental was two dollars a day, during the holding of court. When the second court house, in turn, gave way to the third, or present, court house, the county commissioners, as we shall see, bought additional grounds on the west of the square and moved that building back on Lafayette street; so that court continued to be held, and the county offices to be occupied, as before except during the time occupied in moving the



OLD COUNTY JAIL, SOUTH BEND.

building, when court was held in the old Price's Theater, on Michigan street, and the several county offices were held in the old city building on Jefferson street, between Main and Lafayette. Few persons, though, remember that the basement of the First Methodist Episcopal Church was used as a court room during the time when what we now call the old court house on Lafayette street was in course of construction.

Sec. 5.—THE THIRD COUNTY JAIL.—As soon as the second court house had been completed, the county commissioners made preparations for the building of a new brick jail and sheriff's residence, which should be

in keeping with the court house. This building was constructed in 1860, at a cost of thirty-five thousand dollars. The old brick jail, our second county jail, was sold for one hundred and sixty-one dollars and fifty cents to Adam S. Baker, who took it down and removed it. The new jail was a handsome structure, two stories in height, and fronting also on Main street. It was erected on lot two hundred and fifty of the original plat of South Bend, which had been purchased for that purpose, for the sum of twenty-six hundred dollars, and added to the original quarter square donated by Coquillard and Taylor.

A well proportioned tower stood well out on the northeast corner; and the whole building presented a rather imposing, castellated appearance from the front. No finer county building could then be found in Indiana.

Sec. 6.—RE-ARRANGEMENT OF COURT HOUSE.—In subdivision second of this chapter, we have referred to the order made by Judge Stanfield, at the March term, 1873, of the St. Joseph circuit court, for the re-arrangement and improvement of the court room. The order was as follows:

“It is ordered by the court, That the court room be re-arranged by moving the west partition east to the west side of the west windows; that the three west rooms be enlarged and finished up in a good, workmanlike manner, with a door from the court room entering into each one. That an additional room be added to the clerk’s office across the space now used for the stairway;^a and that there also be a room of the same size constructed above the room last aforesaid, with a door into the court room. That a stairway be made from the judge’s desk in the court room, as re-arranged, down into the clerk’s office, and that the court room be re-arranged so as to place the judge’s bench on the south side of the court room; and the bar occupy the portion of the court room south of the

general entrance to said room, and the portion north of said entrance be prepared for the occupation of suitors, witnesses and spectators; and it is further ordered that the clerk’s office and court room be heated by hot-air furnaces. All of the said work to be completed, finished and painted in a good, workmanlike manner; and George W. Matthews, Dwight Deming and Thomas S. Stanfield are hereby appointed a committee with full authority to cause said work to be done, and also to furnish and carpet said court room, and that said committee shall audit all accounts for said work and materials and certify the same to the county auditor for allowance and payment. It is further ordered that a certified copy of this order be transmitted to the board doing county business.

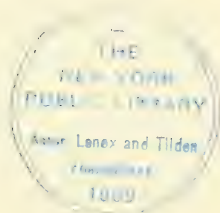
The improvements provided for in the order had been urged upon the county board for a long time; but that body was divided as to the expediency of doing the work, Dwight Deming only being favorable to it. Finally the court, as authorized by law,^a took upon itself the authority assumed in the order. Seldom has so praiseworthy and necessary an act been received with so little favor by the people. The proposals to build the court house in 1853 were received with far less criticism than were those for its improvement in 1873. It does not seem that it was so much the matter of expense that met with opposition as it was the alleged exercise of extraordinary power by the court. The people seemed to think that the work should have been left to the county commissioners, elected, as they said, to attend to all county business. The commissioners, however, had refused to have the work done; and so Judge Stanfield was compelled to assume the responsibility of transforming an unsightly barn-like hall into a decent and convenient court room, as his admirers said;

^a. That is, the stairway on the left of the entrance; that on the right remained as the sole stairway to reach the court room.

^a. See Board v. Stout, 136 Ind. 53; and Board v. Gwin, 136 Ind. 562.



Judge Thomas S. Stanfield



or to change a plain and sufficient place to hold court into a ladies' parlor, as his critics said. Time justified the able and far-seeing judge. No braver act was ever done by him, none more necessary for the convenience of the court and people, and none which in the end was more highly appreciated and commended by the people of the county. It was another instance showing that it is always better to do the right thing, at whatever cost.

Sec. 7.—A HISTORIC BUILDING.—The second court house and third jail satisfied all needs for forty years, or until the close of the nineteenth century, when the county officers, the courts and the boards took their places in the present elegant buildings. The fine, well built old court house, of "best quality Athens stone," portico and all, was taken in hand by a house mover from Chicago, lifted up, turned half-way around and moved back to front on Lafayette street, all without disturbing a stone or a brick. It was regarded as a fine piece of engineering. Happily, the building is to be preserved as our historic county edifice. Through the public spirited policy of our recent boards of county commissioners, whose membership has been made up of Samuel Bowman, Peter H. Reaves, John D. Fulmer, Isaac Newton Miller, Marion B. Russ, Herman A. Tohulka, Barney C. Smith and Daniel A. White, the venerable building which has witnessed so much of our county, state and national history, has been devoted to the use of the Grand Army of the Republic and the Northern Indiana Historical Society. The latter body occupies the first story, in which are collected and to be collected all that is most precious in the relics of the St. Joseph valley. The upper story, the old court room itself, has been given to the veterans of the war for the Union, where they meet weekly in patriotic and social reunion, recalling the days that tried men's souls and holding out to their children and grandchildren the lessons of purest patriotism.

Sec. 8.—THE FOURTH COUNTY JAIL.—Not

only was it necessary to move off the old court house, but also to demolish the beautiful little brick jail and sheriff's residence, with its picturesque turrets and battlements, in order to make room for the imposing modern court house that was to take their place. A new jail, the fourth one of our county jails, was erected in the rear by the side of the old court house, and like it, facing Lafayette street. The private residence, built and long occupied by William Miller, Esq., as he was always styled, one of the most eminent citizens of the county, and father of General John F. Miller, distinguished in the war of 1861, was purchased as a sheriff's residence, and connected with the new jail in the rear.

Sec. 9.—THE THIRD COURT HOUSE.—The contract for the building of our present court house was let to James Stewart & Company, October 31, 1896, for \$184,246.27. Various expenses and furnishings brought the total cost up to nearly two hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The walls are of Bedford stone and granite; and the building is in the Grecian style of architecture. The corner stone was laid April 15, 1897, and the court house was completed November 4, 1898. The county commissioners who were members of the board from the letting of the contract to the completion of the building, and who also removed the old court house and built the new jail, were John N. Lederer, John D. Fulmer, Peter H. Reaves and Samuel Bowman. The board actually engaged in the construction of the court house, invited a committee of citizens, among the most eminent business men of the county, to act as an advisory board in the very important work. This committee consisted of Clement Studebaker, John B. Stoll, Joseph D. Oliver, Elmer Crockett and Patrick O'Brien. The people of the county have good reason to be satisfied with the work done under direction of those officials and public spirited citizens. The state board of charities recently made a visit of inspection to

the county, and our jail was pronounced by them the best in Indiana. Our court house is also said to be, in its interior, one of the most beautiful and convenient in the state. The exterior would no doubt be entitled to a like commendation; provided only our worthy county board would cause the removal of the stone wall and bank of earth heaped around it, and which so dwarf its otherwise fine proportions.

Sec. 10.—THE COUNTY ASYLUMS.—The county has always maintained an asylum for its poor. At first the overseers of the poor cared for the unfortunate in temporary

was evidently not then in a condition to justify the investment of so large an amount as would have been necessary for the erection of buildings, and the carrying on of so great an undertaking; and in March, 1839, the enterprise was abandoned and the land reconveyed by the county.

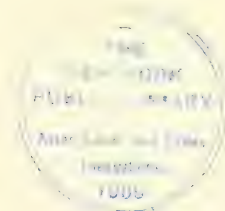
The county board continued, as before, to support its poor in leased premises. At the December term, 1844, George W. Matthews, the elder, then superintendent of the poor house, reported the quarterly expenses in caring for the county charges at one hundred and forty-one dollars and ninety-one cents.

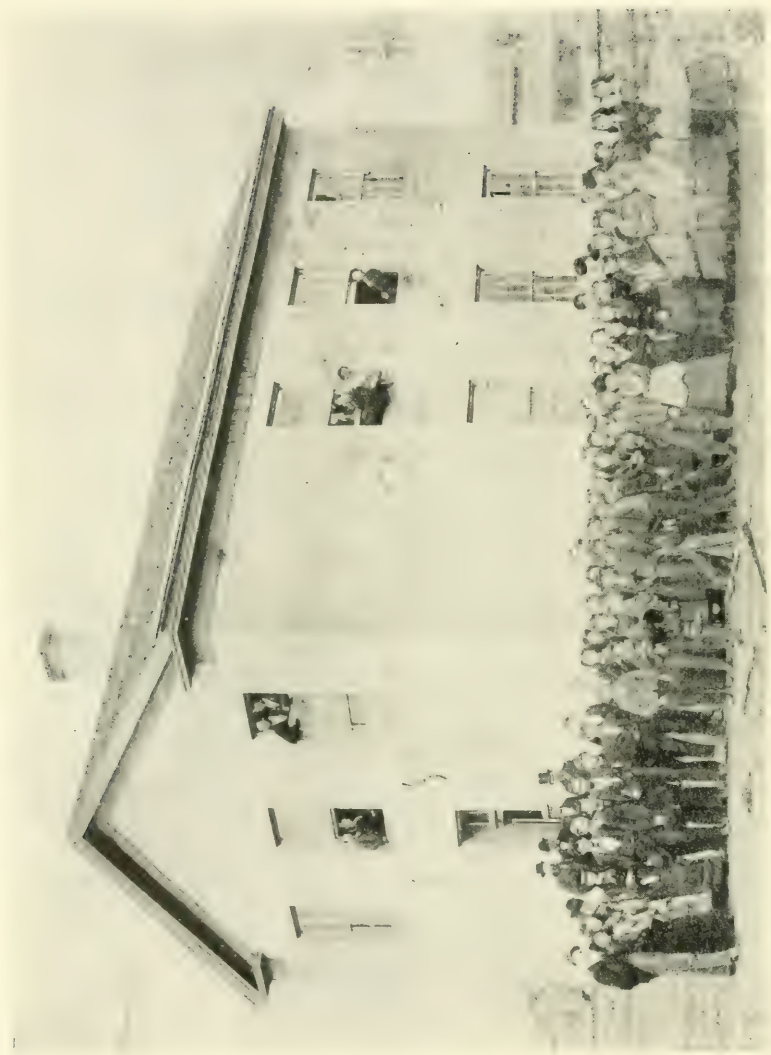


PRESENT COURT HOUSE, SOUTH BEND.

homes, or gave such other assistance as was possible in a new country. Afterwards more permanent quarters were secured. For many years a building and grounds, situated in Vail's addition to South Bend, were leased for a county poor home from John D. De-frees, at a rental of one hundred dollars a year. As early as the year 1838 the need of a county farm became urgent; and two hundred and forty acres on Portage prairie, in sections twenty, twenty-one and twenty-nine, in what is now German township, were actually purchased, the agreed price being six thousand dollars. But the county treasury

The financial conditions having improved, and the need for better accommodations having greatly increased, the county board, on June 10, 1846, purchased another farm for the establishment of a permanent county asylum. This farm consisted of nearly two hundred acres, and was located on the east side of the Michigan road, five and a half miles south of the town of South Bend and one mile and a half east of the present village of Nutwood. The place had been known as White Hall, and was purchased from Matthias Stover for two thousand dollars, or about ten dollars an acre. Here the county





The Old County Seminary

poor were cared for during nearly ten years. At its December term, 1854, the county board ordered this farm sold; and at the March term, 1855, measures were taken for the purchase of another farm on the north side of the St. Joseph river, on the line between Portage and Penn townships. This farm, consisting of one hundred and twenty acres, was purchased through President Whitten, in court proceedings, for twenty-one hundred and thirty dollars; and suitable buildings were erected at a further cost of fourteen hundred and thirty dollars. Adjacent lands were afterwards purchased, and the county asylum seemed permanently and satisfactorily located.

For over fifty years the county poor continued to be cared for on this farm between South Bend and Mishawaka. In recent years, however, there has been a growing dissatisfaction with the accommodations provided for the inmates of the asylum and for those who had them in charge. The state board of charities had frequently criticised the buildings as antiquated and inadequate to their purpose. Finally the board of commissioners determined to sell the old farm, which had become valuable from its proximity to the two cities of the county, and to purchase a farm elsewhere and put up a spacious and well equipped modern asylum. The old asylum and grounds were disposed of for about fifty-two thousand dollars; and a farm on the south side of the river and just below the old portage was purchased for twenty thousand dollars. On these grounds, almost in touch with the old pathway trodden by Marquette and La Salle two hundred and thirty years ago, the county commissioners have, at an expense of about one hundred and ten thousand dollars, built and equipped one of the finest county asylums in the state. The locality is not only interesting from a historical point of view, but is also one of the most beautiful and salubrious that could be selected. The new buildings were accepted by the board of commissioners at their

March term, 1907; and the officers and about eighty inmates were transferred from the old to the new asylum and grounds April 4, 1907.

Sec. 11.—THE OLD COUNTY SEMINARY.—Another county building of much historical interest must not be overlooked. Besides making provisions for district schools in each congressional township,^a the legislature at an early day provided for educational institutions of a higher grade, which were known as county seminaries.^b The funds for the support of such seminaries were provided for in the statutes, and were drawn from various sources, chiefly fines and penalties imposed for violations of law. Donations were particularly provided for; and without such donations it was practically impossible to procure the necessary grounds, erect the buildings and carry on the schools.

In St. Joseph county there was a generous rivalry between the towns of Mishawaka and South Bend as to where the seminary should be located. On November 9, 1843, the county commissioners authorized George W. Matthews, the elder, to receive donations for the erection of the seminary at South Bend. At the March term, 1844, of the county board, Mr. Matthews made a report of subscriptions received by him; and at the same term Harris E. Hurlbut made a like report of subscriptions received by him for the erection of the seminary at Mishawaka. No steps were taken in the matter at that session.

At the December term, 1844, the county board took definite action in regard to the seminary; and entered into contract with Cassius Caldwell, A. M. La Pierre and James M. Matthews for the construction of the buildings at a cost of fifteen hundred and seventy-two dollars and eighty cents. A lot belonging to the seminary fund, valued at one hundred and fifty-eight dollars, and also the sum of eight hundred and fifty-four dollars, donated by subscribing citizens, amount-

a. R. S., 1831, pp. 463-480; R. S., 1838, pp. 509-551; R. S., 1843, pp. 305-325.

b. R. S., 1831, pp. 489-499; R. S., 1838, pp. 558-563; R. S., 1843, pp. 249, 250, and pp. 303-305.

ing in all to ten hundred and twelve dollars, were turned over to the contractors as first payment. The remainder was paid by the county out of the seminary fund.

The grounds on which the seminary was erected, situated at the corner of Washington and William streets, in South Bend, where the old high school building now stands, were purchased for the purpose from Alexis Coquillard, on June 9, 1841.

The St. Joseph county seminary was built during the year 1845, under the superintendency of Gilman Towle, one of the county commissioners. The St. Joseph Valley Register, under date of September 26, 1845, just two weeks after the establishment of that newspaper, describes the building as being situated "on the north side of Washington street, west of town"; that it was of brick, two stories high, thirty feet wide by forty feet long, and to be surmounted by a cupola. The expense, it was said, was defrayed out of the seminary fund, aided by the subscriptions of private persons. We are further informed by the editor, Schuyler Colfax, that the seminary stands near the center of the acre-and-a-half lot which belongs to it, and which is to be enclosed and improved; that there will be two rooms in the building, one below and the other above; and that the room in the second story is to be the full size of the building, undivided at present by any partition. He concludes with the remark that the two rooms will comfortably contain all the pupils of the institution for many years.

The first principal was Mr. Wheeler, a graduate of the Indiana State University. He was assisted by Miss L. C. Merritt. These were followed by Professors Wright, Coggs-well, Smith, Sperbeck, McLafferty, Miss Barrett, Miss Bacon and Professor Wilcox.

With the adoption of the constitution of 1851, the policy of keeping up county seminaries was abandoned; and the grounds, buildings and other property of the seminaries were ordered to be sold and the proceeds turned over to the common school

fund.^a The people had become satisfied that it was impracticable to carry on county high schools, and that all the energies of the state in relation to popular education should be concentrated in the support and improvement of the common schools.

The citizens of St. Joseph county, however, particularly those at the county seat, had become ambitious to establish and maintain a school of higher grade, where the pupils who had passed through the common schools might continue their education, without being compelled to leave home to attend academies or colleges in other places. Accordingly, on July 16, 1853, the board of trustees of the town of South Bend purchased from the county auditor, Aaron B. Ellsworth, and the county treasurer, Robert B. Nicar, the county seminary of St. Joseph county. The purchase was made for fifteen hundred and sixteen dollars, payable, according to the statute, in ten annual installments. The payments do not seem to have been completed until August 31, 1866. It was at that date that the deed of conveyance was made by Woolman J. Holloway, then county auditor, to Dwight Deming, Almond A. Bugbee and Charles A. Evans, trustees of what had then become the school city of South Bend.

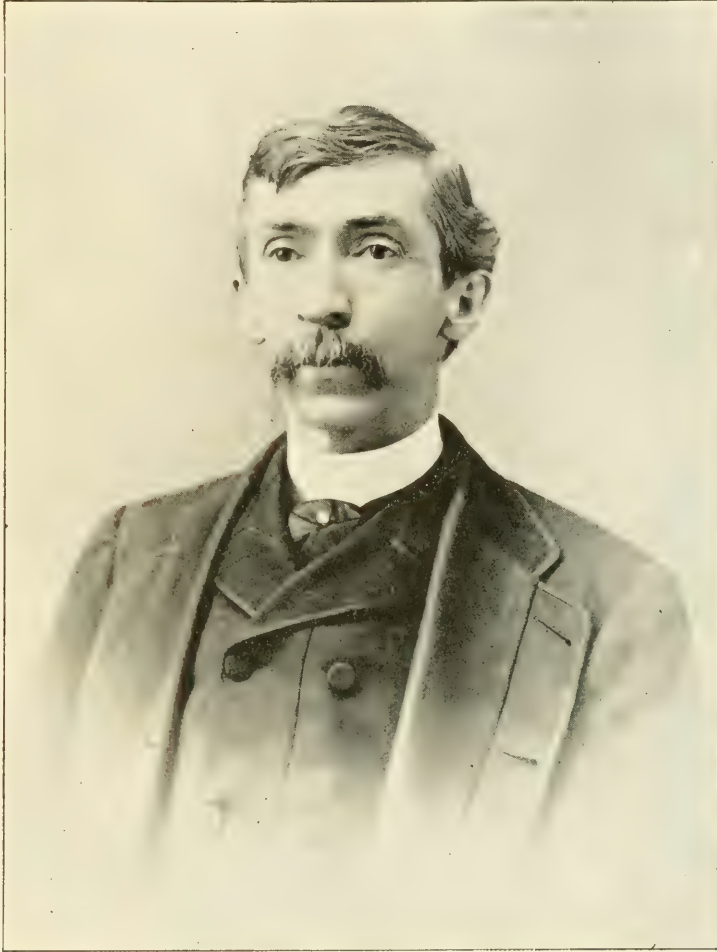
Although from the time of the purchase by the trustees of the town of South Bend, the school and grounds had ceased to be county property, yet there were pleasant and even affectionate associations connected with the old institution of learning; and it continued to retain the name of the old seminary.

But the county seat finally outgrew the building which Mr. Colfax, in 1845, confidently predicted would "comfortably contain all the pupils of the institution for many years to come." In 1872, the school trustees took down the venerable structure, to make room for a more commodious high school building. On April 20th of that year, the South Bend Tribune, established only

^a Constitution, 1851, Art. 8, Sec. 2; 1 R. S., 1852, pp. 437-439; 1 Gavin and Hord, pp. 565-567.

during the previous month, contained a feeling reference to the passing of the old landmark of nearly thirty years standing. The editorial was written by Alfred B. Miller, first editor and one of the founders of the Tribune, who was himself educated in the old seminary.

our place from its earlier years." Among the first pupils educated at the seminary, Mr. Miller mentions Alvin S. Dunbar, Daniel Witter, Mark McClelland, D. R. Sample, and R. B. Miller. "When first built," the editorial continues, "the seminary was surmounted by a tin-domed and pillared cupola,



ALFRED B. MILLER.

"Nothing remains of the old seminary building on Washington street but a pile of debris," said Mr. Miller; "and in a few days it will have no trace left. The South Bender now absent will miss on his return the familiar structure which, homely though it was, has been identified with the history of

in which the boys used to take delight in lodging balls while playing 'anti-over,' that they might have some excuse for 'shinning up' the lightning rod and playing havoc with the nests of pigeons that made their homes there. But the lightning knocked all the beauty and utility out of the cupola one

afternoon in 1847, and in course of time it was taken down entirely, and since then the structure was familiar in outline to all our citizens as it is seen in the excellent photograph Mr. Bonney took just previous to its destruction. Although to be replaced by one of the handsomest school buildings in this part of the state, there are many, particularly absent South Benders who received their education in it, who will not hear of the destruction of that 'old seminary' without a pang of regret."

Sec. 12.—THE ORPHANS' HOME.—One of the most praiseworthy institutions of St. Joseph county is the Orphans' Home, located at Mishawaka and conducted by the Children's Aid Society of Indiana. The institution, although managed by a corporation made up of public spirited and benevolent ladies of the county, is yet quasi-public in its character, since it is recognized and regulated by the statutes of the state, and is in part supported by funds supplied by the county. The purpose of the institution is to nurture, train and educate destitute orphan children, and to find homes for them in good families. Through the zeal of the good women who have had charge of the home their work has prospered. Hundreds of helpless children have been placed with worthy families, where they have found father and mother, brothers and sisters in place of the natural relatives who were taken from them by death or other misfortune. These ladies have so interested the public spirited people of the county that they have after much toil and years of effort succeeded in securing for the Home what is indeed a most elegant and commodious building standing on a beautiful eminence overlooking the St. Joseph river. On Saturday, May 18, 1907, the twenty-fifth anniversary of the founding of the institution, the society had the satisfaction of dedicating this fine home to its benevolent purpose. The following historical items are taken from the press accounts of the dedication:

"The Children's Aid Society, of Indiana, was organized by the W. C. T. U. of St. Joseph county under the name of the Orphans' Home Association, of St. Joseph county, at a mass meeting held June 15, 1882, in the Y. M. C. A. hall, Price's theater, South Bend. The institution was located in Mishawaka and opened July 10, 1882. On the 20th of the same month the county commissioners at a special meeting decided to place all dependent children of the county with the society at 25 cents per day. Forty-eight children were received the first year.

"The officers and directors for the first year were: President, Mrs. Julia E. Work; first vice president, Mrs. Z. M. Johnson, South Bend; second vice president, Mrs. W. W. Giddings, South Bend; third vice president, Mrs. J. A. VanAuken, Mishawaka; recording secretary, Mrs. William Clark, Mishawaka; corresponding secretary, Mrs. J. A. McGill, South Bend; treasurer, Mrs. S. M. Simkens, Mishawaka; directors, Mesdames E. S. Reynolds, J. M. Studebaker, Schuyler Colfax, L. M. Doolittle, S. P. Lantz, David Warner, W. C. Learned, F. B. Dunham, C. Foote, J. H. Banning, of South Bend, and Mesdames Abbie Ney, Tabor Ham, Henry Milburn, P. C. Perkins, C. G. Foote, Sarah Guernsey, George Chace, Sidney Smith, Sarah Gaylor, of Mishawaka. Mrs. Dr. Harris and Mrs. Dr. Neville, of South Bend, also signed the constitution.

"The present officers of the Children's Aid Society of Indiana are: Mrs. J. McM. Smith, South Bend, president; Mrs. J. W. Keller, Mishawaka, first vice-president; Mrs. W. F. Wiggins, South Bend, second vice-president; Mrs. William Uline, Mishawaka, third vice-president; Mrs. W. E. Butterworth, Mishawaka, recording secretary; Miss Agnes Farand, South Bend, corresponding secretary; Mrs. Elizabeth G. Kettring, South Bend, treasurer.

"In 1884 the association was reorganized and passed out of the control of the W. C. T. U. and the name was changed to the North-

ern Indiana Orphans' Home. In June, 1890, the society was again reorganized under the name of the Children's Aid Society of Indiana.

"The first school in the home opened in September, 1891. During the 25 years the organization has been in existence 1,300 children have been cared for, many counties besides St. Joseph county sending children here to be cared for. Good homes have been found for several hundred children in the past 25 years. A careful watch is kept upon the children placed in homes, and it is very gratifying to the women of the Children's Aid Society to know that the majority of the children placed in homes by the society have grown up and made successful men and women.

"Up to March, 1891, the society was of uncertain force, having a constant struggle to meet its financial obligations. There were large amounts owing and but little in the treasury. At that time a radical change was effected in the management, a large number of sustaining pledges were secured and under the able presidency of Mrs. J. M. Studebaker the institution was soon upon a more solid basis. The present efficient superintendent, Miss Sarah Hathaway, was appointed, and since then the society has steadily grown in usefulness and efficiency.

"About 15 years ago the home received a small endowment fund of \$6,250 from the estate of Mrs. Longer, of Laporte, Ind. With the interest from this fund and the per diem allowance from the county commissioners the home has been self-maintaining for a number of years.

"In 1900 the fine property now occupied was bought for \$10,000 and with the help of contributions and entertainments this has been all paid, besides \$10,000 for improvements on the property. The new building now completed has been erected at a cost of over \$60,000, including equipments. A loan of \$30,000 has been made upon the property, but in addition to this it will be necessary to raise

about \$10,000 to complete paying for the building and get only the most necessary furnishings. One item of large expense is for the fire escapes, which are of the most approved up-to-date make, and the best laundry equipment obtainable has been installed.

"The undertaking to erect this building without any funds at hand in the beginning was a formidable task to the 18 women of the board, but they have been sustained throughout by an unfaltering trust in the generosity of the public, which is being realized. The cause represented and the fact that when the building and furnishings are paid for, the home will be as before, self-sustaining, are two appealing facts to thoughtful people.

"The following women of Mishawaka and South Bend are now serving as a board of directors for the Children's Aid Society. They are all well known and have entered into the work with a determination to conduct the affairs of the home upon a sound business basis:

"Mrs. Jeannette Reynolds, South Bend, charter member; Mrs. Abbie Ney, Mishawaka, charter member; Mrs. J. M. Studebaker, South Bend, charter member, served as president 1890-1891; Mrs. Tabor Ham, Mishawaka, charter member; Mrs. E. A. Jernegan, Mishawaka, elected June, 1884, served as president 1895-1896; Mrs. Dempster Beatty, Mishawaka, elected 1885, served as president 1891-1892, 1892-1893, 1898-1899, 1899-1900, 1900-1901; Mrs. Lafayette LeVan, South Bend, elected June, 1888, served as president 1896-1897, 1897-1898; Mrs. Luther Cass, Mishawaka, elected May, 1898; Miss C. Addie Van den Bosch, South Bend, elected May, 1898; Mrs. Charles Endlich, Mishawaka, elected 1902; Mrs. J. C. Neithardt, South Bend, elected 1905.

"Much credit is due the members of the building committee for their untiring efforts. The women of this committee are: Mrs. Lafayette LeVan, South Bend, chairman; Mrs. Elizabeth G. Kettring, South Bend, secretary; Mrs. Dempster Beatty, Mrs. J. Wallace Kel-

ler, Mrs. W. E. Butterworth, Mishawaka; Mrs. J. M. Studebaker, Mrs. J. McM. Smith, Miss C. Addie Van den Bosch, South Bend. The following gentlemen also served on the committee: M. W. Mix, F. G. Eberhart, J. A. Roper, E. G. Eberhart, Mishawaka; J. M.

Studebaker, Samuel Leeper, Max Livingston, J. B. McCance, South Bend.

“The committee on furnishings for the new home is composed of the following members: Mrs. W. F. Wiggins, Mrs. J. C. Neithardt, Mrs. Charles Endlich, South Bend.”

CHAPTER VII.

PUBLIC IMPROVEMENTS.

I. OUR RIVERS.

Sec. 1.—IMPROVEMENTS ON THE KANKAKEE.
—Ages before the white men came to dwell in these valleys, the only means of communication from north to west, from east to south, save the mysterious trails through the forest and over the prairies, was by way of the Kankakee and the St. Joseph.^a And long after the coming of the white man, these rivers, particularly the latter, continued to be the ways looked to for commercial intercourse with the great world outside. It is not to be wondered at, therefore, that the early settlers of “the St. Joseph country” looked anxiously for the improvement of the navigation of their beautiful river. They had the “Great Sauk Trail,” running through the northwest corner of this county, afterwards somewhat improved and dignified with the high sounding title of the “Chicago Road”; and they had numerous other Indian trails and traces through the interminable woods surrounding them. But when they rested a moment from their hard daily toil and thought of the future, they could distinguish no project more feasible than the improvement of the St. Joseph, giving them direct access to the commerce of the great lakes. An occasional enthusiast, in those days of canals, and before the vision of railroads came to them, spoke of digging a great canal down the Kankakee, and so reaching the Mississippi and the Gulf. But the only improvement of the Kankakee which ever materialized, was that long afterwards

^a. See “Routes of Travel,” Chap. 2, Subd. 2.

suggested by Thomas S. Stanfield, one of the most broad minded and far-seeing of our public men. His suggestion was to construct a great double drain down the Kankakee, with a railroad on the bank between the two drains. The drains have been dug and the railroad has been built, though not just on the lines suggested by Judge Stanfield; and the Kankakee valley is thus put to the best possible use for which it is available.

In connection with the drainage systems of Kankakee valley, and the deepening and straightening of the river, which have taken place in recent years, making that rich valley “the garden of Chicago,” as some of our sanguine citizens have styled it, we may here note that the legislature, by an act approved March 7, 1889, passed an act for the removal of the limestone ledge across the river, at Momence, Illinois, ten miles below the Indiana state line. Further acts to carry out the same purpose were approved March 6, 1891, and March 4, 1893.^a This natural obstruction extends in a northwesterly direction over northern Indiana, and crosses the Kankakee near Momence, Illinois, forming a rock dam in the river at that point, about seven and one-half feet in height.^b The state appropriated, altogether, sixty-five thousand dollars for this important improvement; which was completed, so far as the appropriation would permit, under direction of civil engineer William M. Whitten, of South Bend, Indiana. Immedi-

^a. Acts, 1889, p. 291; Acts, 1891, p. 198; Acts, 1893, p. 328.

^b. See Chap. 1, Subd. 7.

ately after that work was done, and even before its completion, land owners throughout the valley began the construction of drains under the drainage laws of the state. The result is shown in vast corn fields and meadows, where formerly hunting and fishing clubs monopolized the country. The richest lands in Indiana are now found within this great valley.^a

Sec. 2.—NAVIGATION OF THE ST. JOSEPH.—But the practical minds of the early '30s were turned to the St. Joseph. In an editorial in our first newspaper, "The North-Western Pioneer and St. Joseph's Intelligencer," for Wednesday, December 21, 1831, the editor, speaking of a writer in the Crawfordsville Record, says, "He undertakes to show the difference of the relative cost of railroads and canals, and urges our legislature to throw aside the donation of lands made by the general government to aid the state in constructing the Wabash and Erie canal; and instead thereof to construct a railroad from Lake Michigan to some point on the Ohio river."

The editor, John D. Defrees, then continues, "Whether it would be good policy for the state to give up the aid proffered her by the general government is not our intention to question. The late experiments made on railroads in Europe and America go to convince us that they are much to be preferred to canals; but if the legislature in its wisdom says that a canal is preferable, let it be so. This, however, should not prevent a railroad from the northern part of the state, through the interior, to the Ohio river. The writer above alluded to suggests that such a road ought to commence at Lake Michigan, without being aware that there is no harbor, nor can there be, within the state, on that lake. If he had been informed of this fact he would have said, commence at the nearest point on the St. Joseph river, which is navigable for steamboats, and at the mouth of which is a safe harbor for vessels. He states that the distance from the lake to the Ohio river

is not over two hundred and fifty miles. From this point,^a the distance would not be increased, and would be over infinitely better ground for a road. He was not aware that his route would be met by an impassable barrier in the great Kankakee ponds or marshes, which are only equalled by the famous Dismal Swamp of Virginia.^b By commencing here this would be avoided." The then recent surveys for the Michigan road, made in 1828 and 1829 were doubtless in the editor's mind when he made this statement as to the advantage of starting from "the nearest point on the St. Joseph river," rather than directly from Lake Michigan and through the Kankakee marshes, in building a railroad to the Ohio.^c The feasibility of navigating the St. Joseph, and the superiority of the natural harbor at its mouth, were also in his mind; although it is true that congress has since made an excellent artificial harbor at Michigan City.

That there was at that date actual navigation, from Newburyport, at the mouth of the St. Joseph river, on Lake Michigan,^d as high up as White Pigeon, in Michigan Territory, may be seen from the list of arrivals and departures of boats, as given in the Northwest-ern Pioneer and St. Joseph's Intelligencer, for November 23, 1831, as follows:

"Arrivals:

"November 15.

"Keel Boat Cass, Capt. Finch; freight for White Pigeon.

"Keel Boat Racer, Capt.; freight for White Pigeon.

"November 18.

"Keel Boat Fairplay, Capt. Cratee; from Newburyport.

a. That is, from the south bend of the St. Joseph river.

b. Between Virginia and North Carolina.

c. See Chap. 5, Subd. 1.

d. The site of the present city of St. Joseph. La Salle's fort at this place was called Fort Miamis. The town built there was at first called Saranac; afterwards Newburyport, from Mr. Newbury, a merchant who sent out boats from there; and finally St. Joseph, the name now long given to the beautiful city.

a. See Subd. 6 of this Chapter.

“November 21.

“Keel Boat Cass, Capt. Finch; from White Pigeon.

“Departures:

“November 15.

“Keel Boats Cass and Racer, for White Pigeon.

“November 20.

“Keel Boat Fairplay, for White Pigeon.

“November 21.

“Keel Boat Cass, for Newburyport.”

The subject of river navigation is more fully developed a little later, in a communication to the Pioneer, under date of January 4, 1832:

“That the navigation of the St. Joseph river by steamboats,” said this writer, “is a subject of vast importance to the whole of the country watered by its tributary streams, must be acceded to by everyone who has paid any attention to the almost magical effects of their introduction on the Mississippi, Ohio, and their tributaries. See the great cities which have sprung up on the banks of those rivers since that period; besides many flourishing towns and villages, which but for the powerful agency of steamboats would never have had an existence. But the influence of steamboat navigation has not been merely exercised in erecting cities and towns. It has given equal impulse to the improvement of the adjacent districts, and carried the whole western country at least a century in advance of what any reasonable man would have calculated, without the knowledge of steam power.

“As a citizen of the St. Joseph country, I have been anxiously looking for some agitation of these questions,—Would it be practicable to navigate the St. Joseph river by steamboats? And if so, How shall it be brought into actual practice in the shortest time? And first, as to its practicability there seems to be but little doubt. Partial examinations of the river have been made by persons of some practical experience, with a special view to this object, who pronounce, without hesitation, that, with improvements not very expensive to be made, the river is highly susceptible

of being navigated, from its mouth to the neighborhood of Crooked river,^a by a class of small steamboats, such as some that are at this time profitably used on the Ohio and other rivers. But these obstructions are too formidable to be removed by individual enterprise. Our country is yet new, and but partially populated; the inhabitants chiefly but recently settled; and their time and money must of necessity be employed in the improvement of their farms and providing the means of living for themselves and families.

“Although I believe it practicable to navigate the St. Joseph with steamboats, even in its present natural state, for several months in the year; yet we may not hope that it can be successfully and efficiently prosecuted until its obstructions are removed, by which its navigation would be made reasonably safe for all seasons of the year, except when obstructed by ice.

“Thus having seen that there scarcely exists a doubt of the practicability of making the St. Joseph safe for navigation by steamboats, the next proposition is, How can it be brought into successful practice in the shortest time? I know of no way, unless congress can be induced to pass an act making appropriations competent to this object. Would it be proper to petition congress to this effect? I think it would. I believe it might be shown that though we take into the account no other consideration than the impulse given to the future increase of the population, and consequently the increased demand for the public lands, and the enhanced value given to the remaining domain within the influence of the proposed improvements, the government would be amply remunerated. And may we not also calculate on the greatly increased value to the nation of an extensive district, amply populated, and with the arts, agriculture, commerce and civilization in rapid progress over the same; a great part of which district is now in a state of nature, and may long so remain without the proposed improve-

a. Three Rivers?

ments? We not only have these incontrovertible arguments in our favor, but we have the numerous precedents of the government in like cases before us.

"I will conclude by proposing to our friends of Michigan to lose no time in bringing this subject before congress by petition, at least for an appropriation sufficient for an examination of the river by competent engineers, to make estimates of the cost of the proposed improvements and report to the government."

Public meetings were held at South Bend, Niles and other points in the valley, to induce congress to take action in the matter. A meeting held in December, 1831, at Saranac, Michigan, by "citizens of the St. Joseph country in the Territory of Michigan, and the State of Indiana," adopted a memorial to congress, in which are found the following interesting paragraphs:^a

"The subscribers respectfully represent, That the country they inhabit was first offered for sale by the general government in June, 1829, since which time its population has increased with a rapidity which has few if any parallels; as will appear by reference to the returns of the land office of this district, and in a still more striking light when the fact is considered that a small amount of the land sold has been purchased for speculation, but nearly the whole by actual settlers who have bought only the small divisions of the public surveys.

"The wants of the population of this growing country, including a fertile and beautiful portion of the state of Indiana, has created a considerable commerce at the mouth of the great St. Joseph river, from which the country takes its name, and through which it receives its merchandise and must find a market for its surplus produce in future. At present the entrance of shipping from Lake Michigan into the river is attended with dangers, delays and not unfrequent loss of lives and

property. The channel of the river varies with every gale, during which, and for some time thereafter, it is impossible for a vessel to find a harbor in our river or in this part of Lake Michigan.

"It is believed that notwithstanding the very great increase of the commerce of the upper lakes generally, there is no point on them where that increase bears any proportion to that of this port. Last year there were less than two thousand barrels bulk of merchandise landed here; this year there have been landed more than ten thousand barrels bulk; and circumstances warrant us in the belief that the progressive increase of business will be as great for many years to come."

The memorialists conclude with furnishing a diagram of the proposed harbor improvements, and asking for an appropriation of forty thousand dollars for carrying them out.

At a meeting held at Niles, it was resolved, "That we consider it of great importance to the commercial interests of the Territory of Michigan to have a harbor at the mouth of the St. Joseph river." And also, "That we cordially approve of the memorial drawn up by our fellow citizens of Saranac, and that we adopt the same as the sense of this meeting"; and "That a committee of three persons be appointed to correspond with our fellow citizen Lewis Cass, delegate in congress, and with the members of congress from the states of Indiana and Illinois, to solicit their aid in furthering our request."

In this county a meeting for the same purpose "was held at the house of Calvin Lilly by the citizens of South Bend and its vicinity on Thursday evening the 19th instant [January, 1832], to consider the propriety of asking aid of the general government to improve the harbor at the mouth of the St. Joseph river. Mr. Pleasant Harris was called to the chair and John Dougherty Defrees appointed secretary."

One of the resolutions was: "That we view the improvement of the harbor at the mouth of the great St. Joseph river to be of vital

^a. See *Northwestern Pioneer* for January 25, 1832.

importance to the welfare of the whole St. Joseph country; and we entirely concur in the project of asking aid of congress for this purpose, and adopt the memorial prepared at Saranac and subsequently adopted by the citizens of Niles as the sense of this meeting."

It was also resolved: "That L. M. Taylor, E. Egbert, and H. Chapin compose a committee to make known the proceedings of this meeting to our representatives by the first mail."

Although congress could not be induced to act, the people continued to consider the navigation of the river as all important to the development of the country. In the same copy^a of the Pioneer in which are contained reports of the meetings held at different points to urge favorable action by congress, we find the following editorial paragraph:

"It seems that our anticipations in regard to steamboating on the St. Joseph are to be realized sooner than we expected. We have received information from a source which can be relied on that there is now a steamboat building at Erie, Pennsylvania, for this river. It will be completed by the time navigation opens. It is needless to say that we are highly pleased with the enterprise. Alive to everything that will have a tendency to advance the prosperity of this country, we shall hail the appearance of this boat as a new era in its improvement."

And also the following: "By an advertisement in the Detroit Journal, we perceive that there is a company formed for the purpose of building a steamboat, of the first class, expressly for the commerce on Lake Michigan. We hope that the stockholders may reap a rich harvest for their enterprise. From the rapid increase of business on this lake there can be no doubt that there will be employment for at least one boat, in addition to the schooners already in the trade. If the increase at any other point bears any proportion to that of the St. Joseph, we would think that still more employment could be given. From

experiments lately made by merchants of St. Louis, we are constrained to believe that in future merchandise intended for Illinois and Missouri will be shipped via the great inland seas to Chicago, and thence wagoned to the falls of the Illinois river, it being navigable for small steamboats from that point to the Mississippi.

"There is another fact that will have a powerful influence and give a new impulse to the commerce on the lakes; it is that all the merchandise necessary for consumption in what is called the Wabash country, in this state, must and will be shipped by way of the lakes and the St. Joseph river, and then wagoned on the Michigan road, a distance of only sixty-six miles, to the Wabash river. We have ventured the assertion that it can be done fifty per cent lower than by the present uncertain mode, and we still believe that we are correct."

In an editorial in the Pioneer for April 25, 1832, this enthusiastic paragraph appears: "Steamboats Coming! We understand by a gentleman from Detroit, that it is supposed the steamboat built at Erie, Pennsylvania, for the St. Joseph river will be here about the first of June. Information from another source says, that Mr. Bysel, of White Pigeon, has made arrangements to bring an engine around as soon as possible for a boat to be built somewhere on the river. We shall then have two boats, success to them! Hope they will have plenty of freight and passengers. How we should like to hear a high steamer blow its long black nose, and to see it impelled with an almost incredible velocity against the strong current of the majestic St. Joseph! It would remind us of the din, the bustle and the business so common to the principal towns on the Ohio, but more particularly to the Tyre of the West."^a

Again, on May 9, the editor cries out in gladness: "It is no longer doubtful concerning the steamboat for this river. It is reduced to a certainty. We have received a letter

a. The issue for January 25, 1832.

a. Cincinnati.

from John F. Wright, Esqr., of Buffalo, stating that he has a boat now nearly complete, built expressly for this trade, and which will be here about the first of June."

And on July 4, 1832, we have these cheerful items: "Arrived, July 1,—Keel boat Fair Play, Capt. Cratee; from Newburyport, cargo for H. Chapin, in this place. Departure, July 2nd.—Keel boat Fair Play, Capt. Cratee, for Newburyport."

But on August the first, this agueish note was sounded: "The steamboat Newburyport, built expressly for the St. Joseph river, ascended within ten miles of Niles, when, meeting a detachment of troops, it took them on board and proceeded to Chicago.—She may be expected here in a few days." Read between the lines, this announcement was evidently a premonition of disappointment; and it was justified by the event. The Newburyport did not return "in a few days." The difficulties of navigation were evidently too great for the successful running of a steamer of even moderate size.

The anticipations of the people of "The St. Joseph country," both in the state of Indiana and in the territory of Michigan, were exceedingly bright,—but the sequel is soon told. Congress at first took some little half-hearted interest in the navigation of the noble river, and then quietly dropped the matter. Nature, the bridges, the mill dams, and finally the railroads, did the rest.

There was for a time, however, and of necessity, some navigation of the river. Produce must be shipped in and taken out, either by the river or on wagons; and keel boats and steamers of light draft continued to go up the stream as high as Three Rivers. Even persons of the present generation remember steamboats coming up as far as South Bend, before the building of the dams at Niles and Buchanan. Pleasure boats even now run from the lake as far as Berrien Springs; and in recent years the late John C. Knoblock had one between South Bend and Mishawaka; while even now the redoubtable George Wel-

lington Streeter runs his boat within the same limits. But commerce, it must be confessed, has departed from the St. Joseph forever.

In 1830, two men named Masters and Tipson made several trips from the lake as far as South Bend and Mishawaka. In the spring of 1831, Peter Johnson built the first regular keel boat for general freighting on the St. Joseph. Madore Cratee was her captain; and we have in the "Pioneer" (then called the "Beacon") for July 4, 1832, the announcement of the arrival and departure of Capt. Cratee in his keel-boat. In 1833, the little steamers Matilda Barney and Davy Crockett made trips as far up as Mishawaka. And from that time on until the coming of the railroads, river vessels of various kinds plied up and down the St. Joseph.

Something of the character of this river commerce may be learned from a local correspondent, writing in 1847. He says: "We have here a river coursing through two states, and passing through and in the vicinity of an agricultural body of land without a superior in the west. For one hundred and seventy-five miles, by the river distance, namely from Union City to St. Joseph, steamboats can navigate its waters, and have done so,—a length of steamboat navigation greater even than that of the Hudson. Four steamboats now ply upon it, and no one, we believe, has counted the numerous keel-boats and arks which annually find busy employment in its commerce. In the spring and fall one can hardly look upon this beautiful stream without seeing a boat of some character, deeply laden, sailing towards its mouth. The manufactories of iron, wool, oil, leather and other articles, which line its shores and the banks of its tributaries, and whose number is every year increasing with fast accelerating rapidity, together with the eighty run of stone for the grinding of flour, already at work or being put in operation the present season, throw upon its waters an amount of exports which would surprise those who have not closely scanned the statistics of this fertile valley."

Finally, however, the railroads came, and the St. Joseph, at least above Berrien Springs, ceased to be used or considered as a navigable stream. Below Berrien Springs, pleasure steamers of good size pass up and down by the beautiful summer resorts found along the lower part of the river. Higher up, too, pleasure boats occasionally ply between the many dams along the stream. But, as said by Judge Pettit, in closing a special term of court in this county, a few years ago, "While no doubt, the St. Joseph was once a navigable stream; yet, as a matter of fact, it is no longer so."

Sec. 3.—WATER POWER OF THE ST. JOSEPH.—But the swift fall of the waters of the St. Joseph suggested another use of the river, and one which gave the first impetus to our great factories, and tended to make South Bend and Mishawaka the humming hives of industry which they have become.

The first dam across the river was built by the St. Joseph Iron Company at the Mishawaka rapids, where has since grown up the beautiful city of that name. By an act approved January 22, 1835,^a Alanson M. Hurd, John J. Deming and John H. Orr and their associates were "constituted a body corporate and politic, by the name and style of the President, Directors and Company of the St. Joseph Iron Works"; and, amongst other powers, were given the right "to erect a dam across the river St. Joseph at the head of the Mishawaka rapids, in the township of Penn and County of St. Joseph." Provision was made in the act for a lock and "the passage of steamboats and other water crafts used on said river"; also for rafts to come down the river, and for the free passage of fish up and down. The act was slightly amended by the act of February 1, 1836; and the name of the corporation was at the same time changed to the St. Joseph Iron Company. The construction of this dam, while an obstruction to river commerce, was nevertheless by reason of its use of the water power of the St. Joseph,

the foundation of the prosperous city which has grown up on both sides of the river at that point.

It was in the same year, 1835, that Joseph Fellows, Garrett V. Denniston and others, all from the state of New York, purchased from Alexis Coquillard the water power and rights at South Bend. Early the next year, by an act approved February 6, 1836,^a they likewise procured a charter to build a dam across the river "at the head of the rapids, at or near the town of South Bend." The conditions as to river traffic, the passage of fish and other matters were similar to those for the dam at Mishawaka. This act also was amended in some matters by an act approved January 16, 1837.

The Denniston & Fellows Company does not seem to have been so well managed; and, in any event, was not so successful, as the St. Joseph Iron Company. They made some progress in the work of constructing the dam and in digging a mill race; but, in 1837, by reason of the panic of that year, or for other causes, they were compelled to cease operations altogether. Later, Mr. Coquillard recovered the property through the courts.

By an act approved December 28, 1842,^b Abraham R. Harper, William H. Patteson and Lathrop M. Taylor, were incorporated as the South Bend Manufacturing Company, and authorized to complete the dam at South Bend. This company became the owner of one-half the water power of the river at that point. Work on the dam was again taken up in 1843, and the construction completed the next year, with mill races on each side of the river. The one-half of the water power attached to the east side of the river passed at first to Samuel L. Cottrell, and from him, in 1867, to the South Bend Hydraulic Company. We have already referred to an interesting suit tried in our circuit court, in the summer of 1889, for the division of the water power among the owners on each side of the

^a. Local Laws, 1835, pp. 339, 340; 1836, p. 380.

^b. Local Laws, 1842, pp. 3-6. And see Act of January 20, 1846; Local, 1845, p. 314.

^a. Local Laws, 1834, pp. 79-82; 1835, p. 206.

river, and in which two eminent judges of the state supreme court took part.^a

The ownership on the east side has since remained unchanged; except that the Hydraulic Company has made deeds of conveyance of certain amounts of water to the several mill owners along the race. In 1903 the ownership of the stock, property and rights of the South Bend Manufacturing Company on the west race, except certain shares retained by the city of South Bend, passed by purchase to the Oliver Chilled Plow Company. This resulted in a great transformation. An electric power plant was constructed on the west race, capable of using for the production of electricity the full one-half of the water power of the St. Joseph river. The plant is one of the best in the country, and supplies electricity for light, heat and power to the opera house, hotel, factories and other Oliver properties.

Previous to this time a company of eastern capitalists had been formed to construct a dam and electric power plant at a point above the city of Mishawaka, known as Hen Island. This great plant is used in connection with another at Buchanan, in Michigan, and with a steam power plant on the east side of the river, at South Bend, for the generation of electricity in vast quantities, which is used for lighting the cities and towns on the river and furnishing them heat and power.

In the beginning, the water power generated by the dams at Mishawaka and South Bend was used to run the saw mills, flouring mills and early manufacturing establishments in those towns. As soon, however, as any line of manufacturing greatly increased its output, the deficiency and uncertainty of water power, particularly after long summer droughts, became manifest. In addition, the space on the river became too confined for large concerns. Accordingly, the heavier business, from time to time, was removed to more roomy quarters, often at a long distance from the river. The result is that the great

Studebaker, Oliver, Birdsell, South Bend Chilled Plow and Singer Works, at South Bend, and the mammoth Dodge factory and others at Mishawaka, together with many of lesser proportions in both cities, whether originally located along the mill races or not, are now run with steady and unlimited steam or electric, instead of water power.

Sec. 4.—GENERATION OF ELECTRIC POWER.—Yet, even now, there is, in another sense, a return to the river. At several places on the St. Joseph, as already stated, the great power of the river has invited the building of dams for the production of electricity, to be used not only for light and heat, but also for motive power; and it would seem that the water power of the St. Joseph, through the generation of this mysterious fluid, with its tremendous force, is destined to make this valley forever a center of manufacturing activity, from the mouth of the river far up beyond the confines of St. Joseph county. Through this electrical energy there is, then, a return to the water power which first attracted the attention of millers and manufacturers. More permanent than the famed natural gas of central Indiana, this electric force, generated by the broad and rapid St. Joseph, will light and heat our homes and offices, our stores and factories; will propel our street and interurban cars, and run our endless varieties of machinery. The river first gave us our manufactories and other industries; and the same river, in this half spiritual form, will retain for us those factories and industries, and will add a thousand fold to their growth, usefulness and beauty.

Sec. 5.—ACCIDENTS ON THE RIVER.—Before closing the history of the St. Joseph river, it becomes necessary to refer to the numerous accidents that have taken place in the beautiful but treacherous stream. No summer season passes but that the seductive waters draw into their fatal embrace one or more victims. The number of persons that have been caught by the charms of this syren would seem to have been so great that the

a. See Chap. 6, Subd. 2.

young swimmers and bathers would avoid the tempting waters as they would a bath of poison. But the victims continue to disappear from year to year beneath the treacherous waves, until as every summer comes the people expect to hear of deaths by drowning, almost as a matter of course. In South Bend, the board of safety has felt called upon to provide a life-saving station, with a boat ready at any instant to go to the rescue of a person caught in the dangerous currents. It is hoped this precaution may be the means of putting an end to the loss of life that has for years afflicted so many households.

The most heart-rending drowning that perhaps ever took place on the St. Joseph occurred on the evening of Tuesday, June 2, 1868, when four young people, Eugene Seixas, Charles Waterhouse, Adele Seixas and Molly C. Miller, lost their lives in a boat that was carried over the dam at South Bend. The cause of the accident is not certainly known; but it is believed that the boat, which was launched in the still water a little above the headgates of the west race, was caught in the current and carried sideways over the dam before the young men perceived their danger or had time to grasp the oars. Miss Miller's body was recovered that evening and those of the others on the next day. The tragedy cast a gloom over the whole city, where the young men and women were all well known and were beloved by all the people.

II. FERRIES, ROADS AND BRIDGES.

Sec. 1.—FERRIES OVER THE ST. JOSEPH.—In the beginning, shallow places in the river, or fords, were selected for the purpose of crossing from one side to the other. The first settlers were often thus required to ford the stream with their wagons, oxen, cows and other stock. Soon after the starting of towns, however, it became necessary to cross the river at the towns whether the water were deep or shallow. Before the building of bridges such crossings were made by ferry boats plying

from one bank to the other. These vessels were generally flat boats, and simple in construction; on which teams, animals and all kinds of goods, as well as persons, were taken over the river at fixed charges. To protect the public as well as the ferryman, the county board granted special licenses, without which no one was allowed to establish a regular ferry or make charges for carrying goods or passengers from shore to shore.

The first ferry license on the St. Joseph river, as we have seen,^a was granted September 6, 1831, to Nehemiah B. Griffith; who was authorized, on certain terms and conditions, to establish a ferry over the river, on what is now La Salle avenue. This ferry was of great advantage to the people having occasion to pass from one side of the river to the other.^b Misunderstandings, however, arose, and complaints were made to the county commissioners as to the manner in which the ferry was conducted. This resulted in some litigation, and the matter was in an unsettled condition for a long time.

On January 7, 1835, Alexis Coquillard was granted a license to establish a ferry on what is now Colfax avenue. That the business increased may be known from an order made by the board on March 3, 1835, requiring Mr. Coquillard to add another boat to his ferry.

It is said that there was a ferry established across the river at Mishawaka in 1834, but there does not seem to be any record of a license for such a ferry. There is no doubt, however, that a means of frequent crossing of the river at that point was a necessity, although a regular licensed ferry may not have been established. The people of that town, at a very early day, had set their minds upon a bridge over the river as being far preferable to a ferry.

On September 1, 1834, Elisha Egbert took out a license for a ferry, crossing the river at the town of Portage, north of South Bend. Mr. Egbert was much interested in this town.

^a. Chap. 5, Subd. 5.

^b. There was a steamboat landing at the same place.

whose success for a time seemed promising, but which has long ceased to exist.

Sec. 2.—BRIDGES OVER THE ST. JOSEPH.—Not only has Mishawaka the honor of building the first dam across the St. Joseph river, but also of constructing the first bridge over the same stream. Both were private enterprises; and both were undoubtedly due in large measure to the enterprise of the principal founder of the city, Alanson M. Hurd. This first bridge over the river was built in 1837, and seems to have been a substantial structure. This may be inferred from the accident that happened in 1847 to the steam boat Pilot by running against the bridge. On May 3, 1847, the county auditor reported to the county commissioners that the owners of the Pilot threatened suit for the loss of their boat, claiming also that the bridge was an obstruction to navigation. The only action taken by the board was to order surveys and estimates for a new bridge, a "lattice" bridge, at Mishawaka.

No action looking towards building a bridge at South Bend seems to have been taken until 1844, when Abram R. Harper, an enterprising merchant of the town, was authorized by the county board to take up subscriptions and erect a toll bridge over the river at Washington street. The idea of a toll bridge does not seem to have been received with favor by the people, and the project languished. In March, 1845, the county undertook the support of the enterprise, on condition that eight hundred dollars were secured by subscription. Mr. Harper was appointed superintendent. The bridge was to be three hundred and fifty feet in length; and to extend from Washington street, on the west, to Market street, now Colfax avenue, on the east side.

At the June term, 1847, Mr. Harper reported to the county board that he had advanced towards the building of the Washington-Market street bridge five hundred and thirty-seven dollars and fifty-four cents, and that there was yet due on subscriptions one hun-

dred and ninety-nine dollars and fifty cents. It was evident that the board must now come to the rescue of this work, and an order was made that the road tax for Portage township be turned over to the superintendent and the bridge completed.

At the same session of the board it appeared from the surveys and estimates for the construction of the Mishawaka bridge that its total cost would be five thousand dollars, and that said sum exceeded the amount of the ordinary road work and tax of the two road districts in which the bridge lay. An order was then made that the road tax of all the districts to be benefited by the bridge should be applied to its completion. This bridge was to be three hundred feet long and twenty-eight feet in width.

Thus was the very important work of spanning the river with bridges at the two towns completed. The days of the ferries were passed. The county, under statutory provisions, has since taken charge of the building of all bridges over the river, as well as of all other bridges in the county.

Soon after there was found need of an additional bridge in South Bend; and a covered wooden bridge was built on Water street, now La Salle avenue, where the first ferry in the town had been established. This covered wooden bridge is noted in our local history by reason of the disaster occasioned to it by the only tornado that ever visited this section of the country.^a It was about two o'clock on the afternoon of August 9, 1865, that a black, angry-looking cloud was seen coming up the Kankakee valley from the southwest. The cloud came on swiftly and threateningly; dipped towards the earth as it reached the town; stripped the tin roof off the court house, tearing the tin and rolling it up like bales of cloth; dipped still lower and struck and tore down the east half of the Water street bridge; and then scattered houses and barns as it rushed on to the southeast. The tornado does not seem to have been near

a. See Note, Chap. 7, Subd. 7, Sec. 2.

enough to the earth to have done any damage except as it passed over the town. The commissioners, in restoring the bridge, wisely determined to remove the roof from the whole of the bridge, being of opinion that the cumbersome structure concentrated the full force of the tornado and thus caused the partial destruction of the bridge.

Later a plain wooden bridge, a frail one it was considered, was built on Jefferson street; and afterwards another, the Leeper bridge, on North Michigan street. Four miles north of the Leeper bridge another was built, at Musquito Glen, near the old Sheffield or Sider's mill. Still other wooden bridges were erected from time to time, at different places along the river.

Then came the era of iron bridges. The first of these was a kind of suspension, swinging or chain bridge, built over the river on Water street, now La Salle avenue, in South Bend. An unskillful workman one day drove a pin out of the unlucky east end of this bridge, and let the whole structure into the river. A more substantial bridge, of the truss pattern, was erected in its place. The truss bridge was in favor for a time. One was built at Mishawaka, on Bridge street, in place of the old wooden one at that point; another was built in 1881, on Jefferson street, South Bend, in place of the feeble wooden structure that had too long done service in that place; still another took the place of the wooden Leeper bridge on Michigan street, South Bend.

But the iron in the truss bridges expanded in summer and contracted in winter, and it required the constant care of experts to keep the bridges in safe condition. With the new century came the conviction that some more safe and durable form of bridge must be adopted. The first effort in this direction resulted in the Sample street bridge in South Bend. The upper truss was abandoned, and a solid sub-structure support, with iron girders, was substituted; giving a smooth, solid road bed, continuous with the street on either side. A further step in the same direction

was taken in 1903, in the building of the Colfax avenue bridge, supported on great iron girders resting upon piers. This, too, gives a street surface continuous with the street at either side, a most desirable feature in all bridge construction. It is to be regretted that the Colfax bridge has so heavy a grade from east to west. It would seem to have been very easy to remedy this defect by beginning the grade one square further east, making an easy ascent from Bridge street to Michigan street; but, even as it is, this bridge is one of the finest public improvements ever made in the county.

Finally public opinion was so distinctly expressed that the county commissioners took the ultimate step in bridge making, and adopted the Melan, or concrete-arch system, the arches re-enforced with ribs of steel buried in concrete. This system results, practically, in the spanning of our rivers with indestructible stone arches, over which are built roadways and sidewalks absolutely similar to and continuous with those of the thoroughfares upon which the bridges are erected. The first of these bridges was built on Cedar street, Mishawaka, and so successful did the experiment prove that the county board no longer hesitated. Three concrete arched bridges were ordered,—one on Jefferson street, South Bend, thrown open to public travel in 1905; one on Bridge street, Mishawaka, now (in 1907) approaching completion; and one on La Salle street, South Bend, which will also be completed in November, 1907. The Cedar street bridge, Mishawaka, and the Jefferson street bridge, South Bend, are most beautiful as well as substantial structures. It is sometimes said that the Jefferson street bridge is of unnecessary length; that one-half the east arch, being over solid ground, might have been omitted and the space filled in with earth. It is claimed that, besides the shortening of the bridge, and the consequent shortening and strengthening of the arches, this would have straightened Emerick street and made the connection with

Jefferson street and the bridge more direct and convenient at that point. But the bridge, as it is, is so noble a structure, broad and continuous as the fine street on which it is built, that it seems ungracious to draw further attention to faults now apparent to every one. Hindsight is easy to us all; foresight only to the child of genius. The vision of the historian is, of course, but hindsight; and he must be pardoned for looking upon things as they have been done and as he actually finds them.

Sec. 3.—ROADS.—The first roads, as we have

pathway had gone the Sacs and Foxes and other Indians in their journeys to the east from Wisconsin and other western countries; and by this traveled way had come the dreaded Iroquois in their incursions from the far east. In peace, it was the pathway of the hunter and the highway of commerce; in war, it was the road along which advanced in threatening array the painted warriors of the forests and the prairies. As a national road the Great Sauk trail became known as the Detroit and Chicago road, or simply the Chicago road, as it is called to this day. This



JEFFERSON STREET BRIDGE, SOUTH BEND.

seen, were Indian trails and traces, running by the most convenient routes from point to point of importance throughout the vast surrounding wilderness. Some of these connected such far distant points and were of such convenience and even necessity for the use of the government as well as for emigration and for the needs of primitive commerce, that they were adopted and cared for as national roads. Of such was the Great Sauk trail, stretching from Canada and New York to the far northwest. This trail crossed the St. Joseph river near Bertrand and passed over the northwest part of this county. Over this

road would perhaps have made Bertrand a great city had not the railroads passed through Niles and South Bend, and made of the great trail a common country road, instead of the thoroughfare of commerce which it had been for ages.

Another wilderness highway, connecting with the Great Sauk trail, extending thence east through South Bend and Mishawaka and across northern Indiana, to Vistula, Ohio, has now long been known as the Vistula road. This road, like others of its kind, took in all along the line other trails, traces and pathways, as the Dragoon trace and the Turkey

Creek road, leading off to Fort Wayne and other points to the south and east. Such a highway as the Vistula road, leading as it did through many counties, was of state importance, was laid out by a special act of the legislature, and was therefore known as a state road. Sometimes the statute so passed, as was the case with the Vistula road, failed to fix any width for the highway, naming only the line of the road and leaving the width to be fixed by public travel, to the subsequent inconvenience of the people and the annoyance of boards of commissioners and often of the courts. The Vistula road as it extends through South Bend is called Vistula avenue; while through Mishawaka it is known as Second street. Those who desire to preserve historical associations have frequently urged upon the good people of Mishawaka the propriety of continuing the name of Vistula through their beautiful city.

Still other highways were confined to the county itself, although generally connecting and forming one with thoroughfares at the boundaries. Such highways were under the sole jurisdiction of the county commissioners and known as county roads. A very large part of the time of every session of the county board during the early period of the history of the county was taken up with hearing petitions for these county roads, appointing viewers to lay them out, hearing and approving the reports of the viewers and establishing the roads, or in listening to remonstrances and appointing reviewers. In time, however, all the necessary roads have been laid out, and it is not often now that petitions for new roads are presented to the commissioners. The attention of the county board and of the township road authorities is now, and has for years, been chiefly given to bridging, draining, grading, graveling and otherwise improving the highways already laid out. Plank roads were for a time resorted to on some lines, as on the Michigan road between South Bend and Plymouth; but these were

all wisely abandoned and gravel roads substituted in their place.

It is said that the United States postal authorities in charge of the free delivery mail routes have recently pronounced the highways of Indiana the best in the Union. This is a high commendation for the public spirit of the Hoosier state; and it is to the honor of St. Joseph county that nowhere in Indiana are the public highways and bridges kept in better condition for public travel than within our own borders.

Although when first laid out and improved the various highways were for a time distinguished as national, state, county and even township roads; yet now, and for a long time, all roads are improved and cared for under the county and township road authorities, and the laws in relation to highways apply uniformly to all public roads, no matter by what authority they were originally established. We may note as a peculiarity of our local highway system that the gravel road laws of the state have never been applied to the improvement of the highways of this county. Good road gravel is so abundant in almost every section of the county that the township trustees and road supervisors have had no trouble in graveling the roads by using the ordinary road labor and the township road fund for that purpose.

In Chapter Fifth, subdivision first, of this history, in connection with the first surveys of the public lands, we have given some particulars concerning the early history of the most important public highway of the county, and indeed of the state also, the Michigan road. This road was to Indiana what the Erie canal was to the state of New York, what the Union Pacific was to the regions beyond the Rocky mountains and what the old Roman roads were to the several provinces into which they were extended. The most complete and detailed history of the Michigan road ever written was prepared by Miss Ethel Montgomery, a graduate of Purdue university and now one of the corps of teachers in

the South Bend high school. Miss Montgomery's paper was recently read by her before the Northern Indiana Historical Society, and is to be published by the society as one of its most valued documents.

The Michigan road may be considered as a national as well as a state road. In Chapter Fifth we have seen that by the treaty of October 16, 1826, the United States secured from the Pottawatomies the lands necessary for the construction of the road from Lake Michigan to the Ohio river, the road to be one hundred feet in width. Both in the treaty, however, and in the subsequent acts of congress in relation thereto, the Indiana legislature was given the right to locate the road and to dispose of the lands and apply the proceeds to its construction. Chief credit for the completion of the road through this county and on to the terminus at Michigan City is due to the commissioner then in charge, Judge William Polke, who was one of the most eminent of our public men in the early history of Indiana. The road runs almost in a direct line from the crossing of the Wabash at Logansport to the southern bend of the St. Joseph, passing through Plymouth, Lakeville and South Bend, all then within the limits of St. Joseph county. From South Bend the course turned to the west, so as to reach Michigan City by the most direct route. Michigan street and Michigan avenue mark the course of the Michigan road through South Bend. This section of the road was finished in 1834 and 1835; and its completion gave a wonderful impetus to the settlement of this county as well as of all northern Indiana.

III. RAILROADS.

Sec. 1.—THE LAKE SHORE.—But the increased facilities for public travel and for commercial transactions, for the marketing of the products of the soil and the procuring of commodities needed for the use of the people, afforded by the opening of the Michigan road, adding as they did to the accommodations

furnished by the navigation of the St. Joseph river, as well as by the stage travel and the wagon traffic over the various other thoroughfares of the territory watered by the St. Joseph and the Kankakee, could not satisfy the eager commercial spirit of the people of St. Joseph county. As early as 1832, as we have seen, Mr. John D. Defrees, in the *Northwestern Pioneer*, advocated the encouragement of the building of a railroad into "the St. Joseph country."

The attention of the people of the state was then chiefly engrossed by the construction and operation of the Wabash and Erie canal, and the high hopes awakened as to the great commercial highway connecting Lake Erie and the Wabash river. However, in February 1835, the legislature passed an act for the incorporation of a company to be known as the Buffalo & Mississippi railroad company, with the design to have a railroad constructed from Buffalo to the Mississippi river. In 1838 a company was organized under this act to build a railroad from the eastern boundary of the state, to run through South Bend and Michigan City. General Joseph Orr, of LaPorte county, was the active mover in this enterprise. But little headway could then be made, and the project was abandoned for several years.

In 1847, the agitation was renewed, and a meeting of persons interested, from Toledo to Chicago, was held at Mishawaka. At this meeting Thomas S. Stanfield first appeared as a railroad builder. To the untiring efforts of this eminent man, St. Joseph county was ultimately indebted for the first railroads that entered its territory. After Alexis Coquillard, there is no man to whom St. Joseph county is more largely indebted than to Thomas S. Stanfield. When the time comes in which the county shall provide for the erection of statues to its distinguished citizens, the figure of Judge Stanfield, who brought to us our first railroads and opened up to the world our cities and towns and our splendid farming territory, will not be forgotten.

At this time a corporation known as the Michigan Southern railroad company had constructed its road from Toledo, Ohio, to Hillsdale, Michigan; and it was proposed that a corresponding Indiana corporation should be formed to aid in completing the road to Chicago. This resulted in the formation of the Northern Indiana railroad company. In 1850 the two companies were consolidated under the name of the Michigan Southern & Northern Indiana Railway Company. Desiring to reach Chicago more directly than could be done through Michigan City, the old charter of the Buffalo & Mississippi company was resorted to, and the road thus completed by way of Mishawaka, South Bend and Laporte.

But the rivalry then existing between the Michigan Central railroad company and the Michigan Southern & Northern Indiana again brought Judge Stanfield's resourcefulness into action. When the Michigan Southern & Northern Indiana was built as far as White Pigeon, it found itself unable to reach the Indiana line in a direct route without violating the terms of the charter which it had received from the state of Michigan. This unfavorable legislation had been enacted through the influence of the rival railroad; and the result was that the Michigan Southern must either come to a standstill or else go out of its way at a considerable loss. In this juncture Judge Stanfield proposed to the company that they should furnish him with the means, and he would procure the right of way and build an independent line of railway, four miles in length, extending from White Pigeon to the Indiana line. This was done; and for ten years this four miles of road, known as the Portage railroad, was nominally owned by Judge Stanfield, but leased from him by the company and operated as a part of the Michigan Southern & Northern Indiana.

To aid the enterprise, St. Joseph county agreed to subscribe for forty thousand dollars of the capital stock of the company; but

the private subscriptions by the people proved sufficient for the building of the road, and the county subscription was not needed. Even the stock subscribed by the citizens was taken off their hands by Judge Stanfield who found eastern capitalists glad to take it, so that the building of this great highway of commerce, so vital to the prosperity of our community, was completed without cost to the county or to any of its people.

The day when the first through train from the east reached Mishawaka and South Bend is memorable in the history of St. Joseph county. This was on Saturday evening, October 4, 1851; and when the locomotive, John Stryker, came puffing into the stations it was received with all demonstrations of joy by the assembled multitudes. Cheer after cheer came from the enthusiastic people whose hopes were thus gratified. Forty-eight rounds of cannon and brilliant bonfires bore the joyous intelligence to the sight and hearing of the eager inhabitants who were themselves unable to be present. Almost equal enthusiasm was manifested on the incoming and outgoing of the trains on the ensuing Monday, and for days afterwards. It was the culmination of the efforts and hopes of the people, ever since the first settlement of the county. After the consolidation of this great railroad with the Lake Shore road from Buffalo to Toledo the name of the consolidated railroad was changed to the Lake Shore & Michigan Southern. It is commonly spoken of as the Lake Shore railroad.

Sec. 2.—THE MICHIGAN CENTRAL.—In 1867 a company was formed at Jackson, Michigan, designed to aid in extending the Grand Trunk railroad through Michigan and Indiana to Chicago. The first plan contemplated going by way of Niles, and then by the most direct line to Chicago. This would have left South Bend out. The name of the company was afterwards changed to the Michigan Air Line railroad company, and under this name it began work. A lack of funds however compelled the company in 1869 to lease its road

to the Michigan Central railroad company. The Air Line road was then rapidly completed from Jackson to Niles. An Indiana company was next formed to extend the Air Line to South Bend. To this project the city of South Bend extended its financial aid by subscribing for twenty-five thousand dollars of the capital stock. The Michigan Central leased this South Bend branch also, and thus the Michigan Central system reached South Bend early in the year 1870. Thomas S. Stanfield was also the force that secured this extension of the Michigan Central to our county. It is said that for years this ten mile branch from South Bend to Niles was the most profitable ten miles of road in the whole Michigan Central system.

Sec. 3.—THE GRAND TRUNK.—But the people of St. Joseph county, led by Judge Stanfield, were not satisfied without making further efforts to secure the passage of the Grand Trunk extension through Mishawaka and South Bend. Several distinct companies were formed with this project in view,—first, a company known as the Port Huron & Lake Michigan railway company, to build the road from Port Huron to Flint, Michigan; second, a company called the Peninsular railway company, to build the road from Lansing by way of Battle Creek to the Indiana line; third, an Indiana company, to build the road from the Michigan line by Mishawaka, South Bend and Valparaiso to the Illinois line; fourth, an Illinois company to extend the road to Chicago; and, fifth, a company to build the gap in the road from Flint to Lansing, thus completing the road from the Grand Trunk, at Port Huron, to Chicago. These several companies were consolidated under the name of the Chicago & Lake Huron railway company. The companies were all weak financially and the building of so great a stretch of railroad was too much for their scant treasuries aided by all the credit that could be obtained. The result was that the road was for a long time operated by a receiver. In 1879 the Grand Trunk of Canada became satisfied that it

needed this poor insolvent road, in order to secure connection with Chicago and the great northwest. The road from Port Huron to Chicago, by way of Mishawaka and South Bend, thus became a part of the Grand Trunk system, one of the great railroads connecting Montreal, New York and the east with Chicago and the northwest.

Sec. 4.—THE DIVISION STREET INCIDENT.—A painful episode connected with the building of the Grand Trunk road through South Bend is the wrong done the residents of Division street in that city. By an ordinance passed through the common council March 2, 1868, the "Peninsular Railway Company of Indiana" had been authorized to lay its railroad tracks on Division street. This was done without any consent from the people on the street. Division street was then one of the most pleasant of the residence streets of South Bend, and the citizens living along that street were bitterly opposed to having their beautiful homes blackened with smoke and disturbed with the rumblings of trains and the shrieking of locomotives day and night,—to say nothing of the practical closing of the street to public travel and the endangering of the lives of their families by the incessant passage of trains. The railroad authorities, on the other hand, and the people of the county generally, while acknowledging the injustice done the residents of Division street, were yet extremely desirous of having the track laid through the city, so that the great enterprise should be completed on to Chicago. Each party waited anxiously for the outcome. On August the 31st, 1871, the railroad company, having finished the bridge over the St. Joseph river and collected all materials needed for laying the ties and rails, gathered a large force of men and laid their track through the city along the devoted street, and then ran their locomotives and cars over the line, in the face of the angry protests of the residents. Litigation at once followed and has not been ended even to this day. It is very probable that the company have

long since realized that they did not only an unjust, but also an impolitic thing, in thus forcing their way along Division street, against the united and persistent opposition of the people. Notwithstanding the acknowledged benefit of the Grand Trunk road to South Bend and St. Joseph county, the people have never warmed to the company on account of the great injustice done in the first instance. Through sympathy, the large majority of the people have adopted as their own the cause of their wronged fellow citizens on Division street. It would have been much better for the company to have gone through the city on a line near to the Lake Shore railroad and in territory already devoted to railroad uses. This lesson, now so evident, has however been learned too late. The wrong has been done, and it is not easy to see how it may be repaired. It is but another illustration of the truth, that the end can never justify the means. An advantage, however great, is too dearly bought when purchased by an act of cruelty or injustice.

Sec. 5.—OTHER RAILROADS.—What was done for South Bend, Mishawaka, Osceola, New Carlisle and the northern part of the county by the bringing here of the great lines of the Lake Shore, Michigan Central and Grand Trunk, was done for Walkerton and the south west part of the county by the building of what has long been known as the Lake Erie & Western railroad, connecting Laporte and Michigan City with Indianapolis; and also the Baltimore & Ohio road, connecting Washington City, Baltimore and other eastern points with the city of Chicago.

An enterprise of the greatest value to the people of the county was the extension in 1884 and 1885, of the Vandalia railroad system from Logansport, by way of Lake Maxinkuckee, Plymouth and Lakeville, to South Bend. This road brought us into direct connection with Terre Haute, Evansville, St. Louis and the Indiana coal region. It was a most desirable acquisition, and came to us

with the good will of all the people but without special effort on the part of any one. The coming of the Vandalia is of particular interest from the circumstance that it was the first distinctive indication that our manufactures and other local interests had become an inducement for the outside world to seek our market. We had no longer any need ourselves to seek connections with the trade centers and great thoroughfares of the country. Henceforth they were to seek us rather than wait for us to seek them.

A like acquisition was the voluntary coming to South Bend, by way of Walkerton and North Liberty of the Three I railroad, or, as it is often called, the Chicago belt line. This road gives to our manufacturers and merchants direct connection with practically every railroad entering Chicago. The Three I is distinctively a freight railroad, perhaps the most successful of its kind in the country. It has since passed under control of the Lake Shore railroad company, but still maintains its characteristic feature as a freight railroad; although its passenger business is not neglected. The Three I and the Vandalia railroads have been of inestimable local benefit to the people of St. Joseph county, by bringing the county seat and the other northern towns into close connection with Lakeville, North Liberty, Walkerton and all the other southern parts of the county. Literally, we are all now closely drawn together by bands of steel; and this more intimate union of all sections has made every inhabitant prouder of his citizenship of St. Joseph county.

Still another railroad, the northern line of the Wabash system, extends through the south part of the county, passing through Wyatt, Lakeville and North Liberty, and giving direct connection with Toledo and Cleveland on the east and with Chicago on the west.

The St. Joseph & Southern, now operated by the Michigan Central gives direct connection with the Michigan fruit belt and the pleasure resorts at St. Joseph and other

points on the southeastern shore of Lake Michigan.

Another freight railroad is the New Jersey, Indiana & Illinois railroad, connecting with the Wabash near Lakeville and extending into the factory district of South Bend.

The Studebaker and Oliver factories also own short freight lines connecting with all lines entering South Bend. These private lines are used for the purpose of facilitating shipments from the respective factories to the great railroads.

Sec. 6.—RAILROAD ACCIDENTS.—Considering the great railroad mileage in St. Joseph county, including street railways and interurban roads as well as steam railroads, the number of railroad accidents have been few and the loss and injury to persons and property has been little. The most serious railroad accident that ever occurred in the county took place on the night of June 27, 1859, when the night express from Chicago, on the Lake Shore road, was wrecked at Springbrook culvert, about half way between South Bend and Mishawaka. Springbrook is a very small stream, being indeed for the greater part of the time a dry ravine. Accordingly, when the culvert was being put in over the brook, the railroad company thought it only necessary to build a small one, such as would be put over an ordinary ditch running through any low ground. At the time the neighboring farmers warned the men engaged on the work that the culvert, while sufficient for ordinary stages of the little stream, would in case of an extraordinary freshet be totally inadequate to carry the waters that would rush through the ravine on their way to the St. Joseph river; and they instanced one such freshet which had come down from the hills on the south in the year 1841. The warning was not heeded; and on the fateful 27th of June, 1859, the lives of many passengers paid the penalty for the negligence of those who put in the culvert. On the afternoon and evening of that day there had been a great downpour of rain. The brook be-

came a raging torrent; and, choking up the little culvert with earth and debris, the waters rose to the level of the track, and so water-soaked the road bed and weakened the culvert, that the train, rushing on in the darkness, with its load of sleeping passengers, plunged into this valley of death. Some were killed in the coaches; while others were drowned in the rushing waters. How many were lost is unknown. There were about one hundred and fifty passengers on the train. In a few minutes the waters, released by the breaking away of the culvert, all passed off to the river; and many were thus saved from drowning. On the next morning, a beautiful June morning, the towns of South Bend and Mishawaka awoke to a knowledge of the most dreadful accident, and loss of life, that had ever happened in our vicinity. The culvert was then built large and strong; and very few of the thousands who have since enjoyed the pleasures of Springbrook park, when looking upon the substantial masonry over the ravine, ever have a thought of the hapless lives that went out there on that fearful night in June, long years ago.

IV. STREET RAILWAYS AND INTERURBANS.

Sec. 1.—THE SOUTH BEND CITY RAILWAY.—As early as June 23, 1873, the "South Bend Street Railway Company" was incorporated, the incorporators being John R. Foster, Joseph B. Arnold, Jr., Jacob Woolverton, Alexis Coquillard and Henry B. Hine. On September 18, 1880, the first franchise was granted by the common council. Many subsequent ordinances in modification of this original ordinance were passed by the city council. At first, all motive power for the propulsion of cars except that of horses or mules was prohibited. Afterwards, the prohibition was removed as to all power except that of steam. A fear seems to have existed that the street railway companies would run their cars by railroad locomotives. One ordinance expressly required that only animal power should be employed, except that elec-

tricity might be used on Michigan street. In 1882, under this permission, the use of the overhead or trolley system was attempted,—for the first time, it is said, in the history of street railways. The attempt as then made was unsuccessful; the cars could be moved only for a part of a block, and would then come to a stop by failure of the electric power. It seems that the electric fluid became dissipated in the earth as fast as supplied from the power house. In time this defect was remedied, and the trolley system took the place of animal power and also, in most instances, of the cable and every other mode of propulsion; but the claim of South Bend to the distinction of being the place where the use of electric power for street cars was first attempted has not been questioned.

Sec. 2.—THE SOUTH BEND AND MISHAWAKA RAILWAY.—Although the South Bend street railway was almost a failure from the beginning, yet that did not seem to discourage the projectors and others who were disposed to follow in their footsteps. Instinctively, there seemed a conviction that street railways must ultimately become successful. On December 11, 1882, a franchise was granted to the South Bend & Mishawaka street railway company to construct a street railway between the two towns, then a distance of about four miles apart. As the greater part of this distance was without the limits of both towns, it was necessary for the company to obtain a franchise from the county commissioners to use the public highway. This was granted by the board. Soon after the building of this line there was some dissatisfaction shown by the public by reason of the obstruction to travel caused by the manner in which the company had exercised its franchise. This dissatisfaction finally resulted in an action in the circuit court, brought by the county commissioners to compel the company to comply with the terms of its contract. The suit was decided in the circuit court against the county commissioners; but that body at once appealed to the supreme court and secured a

reversal of the decision, finally compelling the company to take up a large part of the track and re-lay it in compliance with the terms of its franchise.^a Notwithstanding these and other reverses, the Mishawaka line seems to have been worked at a profit; and when the South Bend city railway and the South Bend & Mishawaka street railway became the property of a single company, it was the Mishawaka line that sustained the life of the double enterprise until the time came when a new corporation, with abundant capital, became the owner of all the lines under all the charters, and at once and for the first time made the street railway business in St. Joseph county a complete successful enterprise.

Sec. 3.—THE INDIANA RAILWAY.—In 1899 the Indiana railway company was organized, with Arthur Kennedy as president and J. McM. Smith as vice-president and general manager. This company at once became the owner of the South Bend street railway, the South Bend & Mishawaka line, the Elkhart street railway and the Goshen railway line. The construction of the South Bend, Mishawaka, Elkhart & Goshen interurban railway thereafter followed, and very soon proved to be one of the most excellent interurban lines in the state. Power houses were erected at South Bend and Osceola, in St. Joseph county, and at Dunlaps, in Elkhart county. Springbrook park, on the St. Joseph river between South Bend and Mishawaka, which had acquired some reputation as a pleasure resort in connection with the old South Bend & Mishawaka line, was now greatly improved and speedily became one of the most frequented places of amusement in northern Indiana. For the first time the people of South Bend, Mishawaka and the surrounding country learned what it was to have a first class street railway and interurban system.

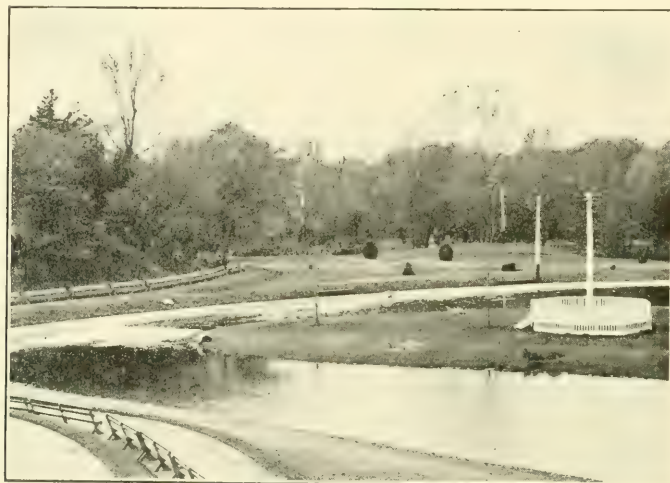
But the Indiana railway company was evidently ambitious of still greater things. Franchises were procured to extend the lines

a. Board v. South Bend &c. R. Co., 118 Ind. 68.

to Laporte and Michigan City, and the lines at Michigan City and Laporte were purchased. The company also lent its aid to the formation of another interurban company which should build by the way of Niles to the city of St. Joseph on Lake Michigan. The new company, known as the South Bend & Southern railway company, received a franchise from the city of South Bend on July 28, 1902; and in an incredibly short time the interurban from South Bend by way of Niles and Berrien Springs to St. Joseph was in full operation.

Sec. 4.—THE CHICAGO, SOUTH BEND &

owners in all the street railways and interurbans going out in every direction from Indianapolis. They had the experience, ability and wealth needed to make South Bend a second traction center, little if at all inferior to that at Indianapolis. The new company, known as the Chicago, South Bend & Northern Indiana railway company, already shows a purpose to accomplish this end. Preparations are under way to reach Winona and Logansport on the south and thus connect with the Indianapolis system. Still more definitely is the purpose shown to exercise the franchise for



LOVER'S LANE, SPRINGBROOK PARK.

NORTHERN INDIANA RAILWAY.—In the midst of its great enterprises the Northern Indiana became aware that it had undertaken too much, even for its great enterprise and generous treasury. It is to the credit of the stockholders and managers of the company that they discovered their limitations in time. In 1906, a sale of all the Indiana railway property was made to a powerful street railway syndicate, represented locally by those worthy and successful business men, James Murdock and his sons Charles Murdock and Samuel T. Murdock, of Lafayette, Indiana. These gentlemen were already large traction

completing the lines to Laporte and Michigan City, and from these points ultimately to Chicago. For western St. Joseph county, New Carlisle and all the surrounding territory this interurban extension will be a great blessing, giving the people ready access to South Bend as well as to other east and west centers of trade and population, and thus bringing the eastern and western parts of our county into closer union.

Sec. 5.—THE SOUTHERN MICHIGAN RAILWAY.—The South Bend & Southern Michigan interurban, connecting with St. Mary's, Bertrand, Niles, Berrien Springs, St.

Joseph and Lake Michigan, and known as the Southern Michigan railway company, has already become a popular and profitable line. The Michigan fruit belt, the fine scenery along the lower St. Joseph and the many beautiful pleasure resorts on Lake Michigan, are thus brought to our door. A casual view into the future brings us in sight of Kalamazoo, Grand Rapids and all southwestern Michigan.

Sec. 6.—THE CHICAGO, LAKE SHORE & SOUTH BEND LINE.—Many other interurban lines are in contemplation by enterprising business men who see the bright future that is certainly awaiting the development of South Bend, Mishawaka and all the St. Joseph valley. One of these lines, at first called the Chicago & Indiana Air Line, but since named the Chicago, Lake Shore & South Bend railway, received a franchise from the city of South Bend, and also from the board of county commissioners of St. Joseph county, in 1903, and has already built many miles of its line between South Bend and Chicago. This line, when completed, is to be one of the great interurbans of the country, connecting Buffalo, by way of Cleveland, Toledo and South Bend, with Chicago.

V. TELEGRAPHS AND TELEPHONES.

Sec. 1.—THE WESTERN UNION.—The first movement for the erection of a telegraph line through northern Indiana were made in 1847. There was an effort at that time to construct a line of telegraph from Buffalo to Milwaukee. The feasibility and advantage of the telegraph were not then generally appreciated and moneyed men were slow to invest in the enterprise. The appeal was therefore rather made to the enterprise of the people generally than to the cupidity of investors. South Bend was asked to furnish two thousand dollars towards the building of the line, and to the credit of the enterprising citizens of that day be it said that the money was at once subscribed. But subscriptions were not so readily made along the line. Chicago, strange to say,

refused to give any aid to the enterprise, and the promoters were forced to abandon the project for the time.

After a while, however, the people began to realize that the telegraph was to prove a success, and the necessary means to build the line were forthcoming. Early in the year 1848 the line was completed, and the people of St. Joseph county were among the first to be in instantaneous communication with the whole country.

Sec. 2.—THE POSTAL.—The telegraph was not only a great convenience for the people who made use of it, but was a source of wealth for its owners. Many new companies were therefore formed from time to time, and sought to partake of the profits that resulted from the business. In 1880, the American Union Telegraph company was granted a franchise; and in 1881 the same favor was extended to the Mutual Union Telegraph company. On December 11, 1882, the Postal Telegraph company was authorized to erect its poles and wires in the city of South Bend. The Postal and the Western Union have both become great and successful through lines of communication to all parts of the world.

Sec. 3.—THE CENTRAL UNION.—After the telegraph came the telephone; men were enabled instantaneously not only to write afar off, but also to talk afar off. In March, 1880, the South Bend Telephone exchange was authorized to erect poles and wires; and almost immediately thereafter the lines were extended to Mishawaka and other points, until every town and hundreds of farm houses were in communication with every other place in the county and in surrounding counties.

In 1889 the Central Union telephone company was authorized to do business; and in 1893 the American Telegraph and Telephone, or Long Distance, company extended its poles through the county, on the line from New York to Chicago. Other telephone companies came into the county from time to time, and, for different reasons, failed to maintain their organizations.

Sec. 4.—THE HOME.—In December, 1901, however, the Home telephone company received a franchise and began at once to grow into a strong and well conducted establishment, with telephonic connections throughout the state and adjacent territory. The Central Union and the Home telephone companies, with their long distance connections, give to every section of the county ready communication with all parts of the country.

Sec. 5.—THE OLD AND THE NEW.—So has it come to pass that every section of St. Joseph county, which for its communication with the outside world once depended upon the uncertain navigation of the Kankakee and the St. Joseph, and upon the ill-conditioned wagon roads or pony pathways through the wilderness, now has its graveled highways in every direction, its hourly railroad and inter-urban connections, and its instant communications by telegraph and telephone. It is a marvel which we fail adequately to appreciate, that all this magic transformation has come to us within the space of seventy-five years.

Perhaps the change in our facilities for connection with the outside world may be the more vividly realized by the reading of the following quotation from the prospectus of "The St. Joseph Beacon and Indiana and Michigan Intelligencer," a paper published at South Bend by John D. and Joseph H. Defrees. This prospectus was printed in the "Beacon" under date of May 23, 1832.^a

"In establishing a newspaper in so new a country as this," say the publishers, "we knew that we had many difficulties to encounter; many deprivations which are not known in the old and densely populated parts of the 'West,' with which to contend. One main difficulty when we commenced was the

want of mails. People were not willing to subscribe without being certain of receiving their papers regularly. This difficulty has been greatly remedied since the first number was issued. There is now a mail twice a week to Fort Wayne; twice a week to Detroit, via Niles; and once a week to Chicago—besides several others will yet be established;—thus giving the people throughout the whole St. Joseph country an opportunity of regularly receiving the papers. This, then, can be no longer urged against subscribing for so valuable an acquisition to every family as a weekly newspaper. . . . The inhabitants of the St. Joseph country should support a paper somewhere within its limits. The interests of the whole country are so closely connected that it can make no difference whether it is published in Indiana or Michigan."

VI. DRAINAGE.

Not the least important of the public improvements of St. Joseph county has been the drainage of our low lands. Not only have the swamps and other wet lands in this way been reclaimed and made fertile and productive, but such drainage has been one of the most effective means for the improvement of the public highways. If it is true, as recently declared by the United States postal authorities, that the public roads of Indiana are better improved than those of any other state in the Union, there need be no doubt that this excellent condition is first of all due to the thorough drainage which has been made. Grading, graveling and macadamizing are of course necessary for the making of the best roads; but all such work would be quite useless if the roads were not first thoroughly drained. The steps to be taken for the making of good roads, then, are, first of all, thorough drainage, then grading and graveling, or the putting down of other material for a solid roadbed.

Sec. 1.—THE SWAMP LAND ACT.—On September 28, 1850, congress passed the swamp land act, giving to the several states "the

^a. The first copy of this paper, then called "The North-Western Pioneer and St. Joseph's Intelligencer," was issued at South Bend, November 16, 1831. It was the first newspaper published in this region, north of the Wabash or west of Detroit.

swamp and overflowed lands therein," to enable such states to reclaim said lands by the construction of "the necessary levees and drains." This grant of the general government was consequently coupled with the following condition: "*Provided, however,* That the proceeds of said lands, whether from sale or by direct appropriation in kind, shall be applied, exclusively, as far as necessary, to the purpose of reclaiming said lands by means of the levees and drains aforesaid."^a Under this act the state of Indiana came into possession of the lands of the Kankakee valley and other overflowed lands, and the state made some feeble attempts to comply with the proviso requiring that the lands so acquired should be drained. The drainage attempted was inefficient and altogether inadequate, and the old state ditches thus constructed have long been filled up. In fact, they were never of any value. In 1850, the people of the state were without either knowledge or means for the drainage of the Kankakee.

The subject of the drainage of this vast valley continued, however, to be agitated by the people, and by an act approved April 11, 1881, the general assembly authorized the governor to appoint a civil engineer to make a survey of the Kankakee region and other large districts of wet lands in the state, with a view of determining the best method of drainage.^b

Sec. 2.—PROFESSOR CAMPBELL'S SURVEY.—Governor Albert G. Porter, with the utmost wisdom, appointed as civil engineer under this act Professor John L. Campbell, of Wabash College, the most competent man in the state for the position. Professor Campbell's report is so important a historical document in relation to St. Joseph county, and indeed to all northern Indiana, that it seems well to preserve it entire as he sent it to the governor. His survey was the first movement towards the successful drainage of the great valley,

a. See *Tollston Club v. State*, 141 Indiana Supreme Court Reports, p. 197.

b. Acts, 1881, pp. 561-563.

and no history of any part of northwestern Indiana would be complete without a reference to this report.^a The writer had the pleasure of receiving from Professor Campbell the following letter enclosing a copy of this report:

U. S. COAST AND GEODETIC SURVEY,
Crawfordsville, Jan. 19, 1889.

Senator Howard,

Dear Sir: I enclose to you a copy of my report on the Kankakee made in 1881 which may be of some service to you in the consideration of the bill introduced by you for the removal of the obstruction at Momence, Ill.

My estimate for this work on page 26 was \$22,500, which was a minimum or a very low estimate. Your proposed \$40,000 is much better. Wishing you success,

Very truly yours,

J. L. CAMPBELL.

REPORT UPON THE
IMPROVEMENT OF THE KANKAKEE RIVER
AND THE DRAINAGE OF THE MARSH
LANDS IN INDIANA.

By John L. Campbell, Chief Engineer.

To His Excellency, Albert G. Porter, Governor of Indiana:

Sir—I have the honor herewith to report the results of my surveys of the Kankakee region, and of the marsh lands in Allen, Huntington and Knox counties, which were made in accordance with your general instructions, under the act of the general assembly, approved April 11, 1881.

I had the honor to acknowledge, May 5, 1882, the receipt of my commission from you as chief engineer, and I proceeded immediately to make the preliminary examinations and preparations necessary for beginning the field work July 1, 1882.

It was deemed expedient to provide tents and camp equipage for the field corps, and this outlay was more than justified in the actual saving in the cost of subsistence, and in the increased facilities for the prosecution of the work.

The chief instruments needed for the survey were the transit and the level, and these were rented at a small cost. The chain and other minor things required were purchased.

In the organization of the field corps, with your approval, Messrs. Albert B. Anderson,

a. For some account of the Topography of St. Joseph county, see Chap. 1, of this history.

John M. Coulter, and Alfred R. Orton were appointed assistant engineers.

In the division of work Mr. Anderson performed the duties of general assistant engineer, and took special charge of the reconnaissance in advance of the corps. For this position he had been well fitted by the experience of three years as my assistant in the United States Geodetic Survey in Indiana.

Prof. John M. Coulter, of Wabash College, was assigned to the position of surveyor, and in addition to his duties with the transit, he was specially charged with the examinations of the soil and underlying strata, which you directed to be made along the line of the survey. Prof. Coulter's well-known reputation as one of our most learned botanists and geologists, is the best evidence of his fitness for the part of the work committed to him.

Mr. Orton, an accomplished civil engineer, with a successful experience of fifteen years, was assigned to the most important position of leveler. The lines of levels run by Mr. Orton on this survey were carefully tested by repetition, and are believed to be accurate in every particular.

The other members of the corps were: Rodmen, Jesse Blair and George W. Benton; flagmen, Charles B. Landis and Edwin H. Anderson; chainmen, George W. McConnell and Henry Forsland; axeman, James M. Simpson; commissaries, William H. Scott and William H. Shooler; cook, Wesley Foster.

The faithfulness and efficiency of every member of the corps are cordially acknowledged.

In the many exposures and hardships incident to a survey through the Kankakee marshes, there was no shrinking from duty, and I am glad to add that not a day was lost by any one on account of sickness.

Our tents were pitched on the first of July, near South Bend, and the field work was continued from that date, without interruption, until August 30.

GENERAL TOPOGRAPHY.

The Kankakee region in Indiana lies chiefly in the counties of St. Joseph, Laporte, Starke, Jasper, Porter, Newton and Lake.

The Kankakee river takes its rise in the elevated marsh land near South Bend, in Sec. 16, T. 37 N., R. 2 E.; thence it runs through St. Joseph county to Sec. 14, T. 36 N., R. 1 E., from which point it forms the boundary line between Laporte, Porter, and Lake on

the north, and St. Joseph, Starke, Jasper, and Newton counties on the south.

The river leaves the state in Sec. 1, T. 31 N., R. 10 W., and in the state of Illinois, by its junction with the Des Plaines, forms the Illinois river.

The Kankakee river is noted for its extreme crookedness. Father Stephan, who made a careful survey of the channel, reports two thousand bends from the source at South Bend to Momence, Illinois. By the same authority the approximate length of the river between these points is two hundred and forty miles.

The water in the stream is remarkably clear and is of excellent quality for domestic purposes. The iron, and possibly other mineral substances held in solution, give the water valuable tonic properties.

The exceptional healthfulness of the Kankakee region as compared with other large swamp districts, may be due in a great measure to these mineral qualities.

The bed of the river generally is sand and fine gravel, and the banks are very low. The chief tributaries of the Kankakee on the north side are Grapevine, Little Kankakee, Vails, Mill, Hog and Crooked creeks; on the south side, Potato and Pine creeks, Yellow river and Bogus creek. Yellow river is the most important tributary and is scarcely inferior to the Kankakee above the junction of the two.

West of Bogus creek on the south side, and of Crooked creek on the north side, the small streams from the uplands lose themselves in the marshes and have no well defined inlets to the river.

The entire area of country drained by the Kankakee and its tributaries in Indiana is over sixteen hundred square miles, or approximately one million of acres.

The country adjacent to the river is a broad plain, varying in width from one to twenty miles, measured by sections north and south, with an average width of about ten miles.

This plain has a declivity westward of a little more than one foot to the mile.

Along the irregular border of the plain, on both sides, are sand ridges, which give to the region the proper designation of the Kankakee valley.

This valley is for the most part an unreclaimed marsh; and except along the river banks and on occasional small sand islands, it is destitute of timber.

Coarse prairie grass, wild rice and weeds, grow in the greatest luxuriance in all parts of the marsh, and, in many places, even in the bed of the river itself.

Frequently the highest water of the year is caused by the rank grass growth in the channel of the river during the summer season.

The soil is a rich vegetable loam and sand, varying in depth from five feet to a few inches. Its general richness may be inferred from the rank growth of grasses, even in the lowest portion of the marshes, where the water remains during the entire year.

In St. Joseph county, and in parts of LaPorte, Porter and Lake counties, the adjacent uplands have a plentiful admixture of clay, and the drainage from these uplands for ages has been adding fertility to the marshes, so that, not without reason, it is believed that these lands, when reclaimed, will be of the best quality.

In Starke, Jasper and Newton counties, the uplands are more sandy, and consequently the marshes adjacent have less depth of soil; but there is no part of the valley which is not worth far more than will be the cost of reclamation.

From its source to the mouth of Mill creek, the river runs through the open marsh, but below this point the banks on one or both sides are covered with quite large trees.

In many places the channel is greatly obstructed by fallen timber, which must be removed when the improvement of the river is attempted.

The timber belt rarely exceeds a mile in width, but the area yet uncut is very valuable.

THE SURVEY.

The line surveyed begins in St. Joseph county, Indiana, at station A, near the S. W. corner of N. E. $\frac{1}{4}$ of Sec. 16, T. 37 N., R. 2 E., where the small branch which is the source of the Kankakee crosses the Grand Trunk and Chicago railway; thence S. $56\frac{1}{4}^{\circ}$ W., 12.85 miles, along the general line of the river, to station B, near the middle of the north line of S. W. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 23, T. 36 N., R. 1 W., a point on the bank of the river; thence S. $34\frac{3}{4}^{\circ}$ W., 3.80 miles through the west part of Mud lake to station C, near the west line of S. W. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 4, T. 35 N., R. 1 W., a point at the middle of the bridge over the Kankakee, on the line of the Indianapolis, Peru and Chicago division of the Wabash, St. Louis and Pacific

railway; thence S. $59\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ W., 3.45 miles, to station D, near the N. W. corner of S. W. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 13, T. 35 N., R. 2 W., a point at the middle of the bridge over the Kankakee on the line of the Baltimore and Ohio railway; thence S. 31° W., 3.35 miles, to station E, near the N. E. corner of the S. W. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 34, T. 35 N., R. 2 W., a point on the bank of the river; thence S. $53\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ W., 7.42 miles, to station F, near the S. E. corner of S. W. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 22, T. 34 N., R. 3 W., a point in the open marsh on the north side of the river at the head of a gap through "Pup Grove"; thence S. $45\frac{3}{4}^{\circ}$ W., 1.20 miles, to station G, in N. W. corner of S. E. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 28, T. 34 N., R. 3 W., a point on the line of the New York, Chicago and St. Louis railway; thence S. $51\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ W., 6.43 miles, to station H, on the south line, near S. W. corner of S. E. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 15, T. 33 N., R. 4 W., a point on bridge number —, on the line of the Pittsburg, Cincinnati and St. Louis railway; thence S. 63° W., 4.66 miles, to station I, on the middle line of N. $\frac{1}{2}$ Sec. 36, T. 33 N., R. 5 W., a point near the head of "Sand Channel"; thence S. 89° W., 6.9 miles, to station K, east of the middle line of Sec. 35, T. 33 N., R. 6 W., a point in the open marsh on bridge over slough on road leading to Baum's bridge; thence S. $50\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ W., 2.05 miles, to station L, near the middle of the east line of S. E. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 4, T. 32 N., R. 6 W., a point in deep slough in gap through "Long Ridge"; thence S. $66\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ W., 0.9 miles, to station M, near the center of N. W. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 9, T. 32 N., R. 6 W., a point in the open marsh; thence S. 79° W., 5.32 miles, to station N, near the S. E. corner of N. E. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 16, T. 32 N., R. 7 W., a point in the open marsh; thence S. 60° W., 3.9 miles, to station O, near the center of Sec. 25, T. 32 N., R. 8 W., a point on the grade of the Indiana, Illinois and Iowa railway; thence by the survey and grade of the Indiana, Illinois and Iowa railway 12.83 miles to the state line; and thence, by the same railway survey, 6.8 miles to Momence, Illinois.

From station N, near the S. E. corner N. E. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 16, T. 32 N., R. 7 W., the line for the improvement of the river will run S. $66\frac{1}{4}^{\circ}$ W., 5.45 miles, to station P, near the middle of the east line of S. E. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 27, T. 32 N., R. 8 W., a point in the Kankakee river; thence S. $53\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ W., 1.25 miles, in the general channel of the river to station Q, near the middle of the line which separates sections 33 and 34, T. 32 N., R. 8 W., a

point in the river east of the bridge over the Kankakee, on the Chicago and Indianapolis division of the Louisville, New Albany and Chicago railway; thence S. 80° W., 2.75 miles, to station R, near the middle of the north line of N. W. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 6, T. 31 N., R. 8 W., a point in the river; thence west 2.15 miles, by a new channel, to station S, near the N. E. corner of Sec. 3, T. 31 N., R. 9 W.; thence S. 85° W., 5.20 miles, to station T, on the west line of Sec. 1, T. 31 N., R. 10 W., a point in the river on the state line between Indiana and Illinois.

The Illinois section begins at station T, on the state line; thence N. 82° W., 2.00 miles, by a new channel, to cut off a great bend, to station U, a point in the river; thence S. 70° W., 3.40 miles, in the general channel of the river, to station V; thence N. 60° W., 1.75 miles in the general channel of the river to station W, a point in the river below the mouth of Bull creek; thence S. 74 $\frac{1}{2}$ ° W., 1.50 miles, in the channel, to a point in the river below the dam at Momence.

The total distance, as shown by the survey, from the starting point at station A, near South Bend, to the state line, is..... 75.06 miles.
From the state line to Momence, is 6.80 miles.

Total..... 81.86 miles.

The distance on the proposed line for the improvement will be measured from the mouth of Grapevine creek, nine miles from South Bend, and will not differ from the line of the survey, until the line comes to station O, in the river, Sec. 26, T. 32 N., R. 8 W. From this station, the proposed line for the improvement will be in the general direction of the river itself, and it will be considerably longer than the straight lines measured in the survey.

THE LEVELS.

The line of levels was run as near as possible with the line of the survey, and care was taken always to select firm ground for the instruments. The levels were carefully tested by repetition and are believed to be accurate.

The following tables give the levels which show the general slope of the Kankakee river and marsh:

Ocean level	0.0
Lake Michigan	585.

Starting point, Grand Trunk R. R., Sec. 16, T. 37 N., R. 2 E.....	721.6
Crum's Point Bridge, surface of water.....	709.1
Free Bridge, surface of water.....	691.9
I., P. & C. R. R. Bridge (Mud Lake), surface of water	689.8
B. & O. R. R. Bridge, surface of water....	687.5
Barnes Bridge, surface of water.....	685.4
P., Ft. W. & Chicago R. R. Bridge, surface of water	682.1
Austen's Bridge, surface of water.....	676.3
P., C. & St. L. R. R. Bridge (English Lake), surface of water.....	667.1
L., N. A. & C. R. R. Bridge, surface of water	666.1
Dunn's Bridge, surface of water.....	663.7
Grand Junction, surface of water.....	660.5
Baum's Bridge, surface of water.....	659.4
L., N. A. & C. R. R. Bridge (Chicago Division), surface of water.....	635.7
Blue Grass Bridge, surface of water.....	632.2
State line	624.3
Mouth of Bull creek, surface of water.....	619.1
Below dam at Momence, surface of water..	613.5

The following additional levels are in the marsh along the line of the proposed new channel:

Point where line crosses N. Y., C. & St. L. R. R.	681.1
Point where line crosses P., C. & St. L. R. R.	672.4
Point where line crosses L., N. A. & C. R. R.	669.8
Point where line crosses C. & A. R. R.	668.5
Point station I, Sec. 36, T. 33 N., R. 5 W....	668.3
Point Grand Junction	660.5
Point Shaffner's marsh (Sec. 12, T. 32 N., R. 7 W.).....	649.6
Point station, Newton county line.....	642.

The following cross sections furnished me by the chief engineers of the several railways named, show the general outline of the valley and its adjacent ridges:

Baltimore & Ohio Railway:

Walkerton (East)	718.
Kankakee river	687.5
Union Mills (West).....	758.

Pittsburg, Ft. Wayne & Chicago Railway:

Hamlet (East)	699.
Kankakee river	682.1
Hanna (West)	709.

New York, Chicago & St. Louis Railway:

Kankakee river	676.3
Chicago & W. Michigan R. R. (West)....	686.

Pittsburg, Cincinnati & St. Louis Railway:

North Judson (East).....	708.
Kankakee river (English Lake).....	667.1
La Crosse (West).....	680.

Chicago & Atlantic Railway:

North Judson (East).....	708.
Kankakee river	666.3
Kouts	684.

Louisville, New Albany & Chicago Railway:

San Pierre (South).....	705.
Kankakee river	666.1
La Crosse (North).....	680.
Wanatah (North)	732.
Hebron, on P. C. & St. L. R. R.....	676.
Shaffner's marsh	649.6
I, I. & I. R. R. (due south).....	677.

Louisville, New Albany & Chicago R. R., Chicago Division:

Rose Lawn (South).....	675.
Kankakee river	635.7
Lowell	665.

The total difference of level from station A, the small rivulet in Sec. 16, T. 37 N., R. 2 E., near South Bend, which is the source of the Kankakee, to the surface of the water below the dam at Momence, is one hundred and eight and one-tenth (108.1) feet. The total distance, as shown by the survey, is eighty-one and eighty-six hundredths (81.86) miles.

The average slope of the marsh is approximately one and three-tenths (1.3) feet to the mile.

There is no part of the line where a slope of one foot to the mile can not be obtained, without any serious variation from an uniform depth for the new channel.

I have made the estimates of capacity for the new channel on this lowest basis of one foot fall to the mile, although in nearly every part the fall will be considerably more.

The mean level of the Kankakee valley is 674.5 feet above the ocean, from which it is important to notice that, notwithstanding its general marshy character, it is a broad valley which has a mean elevation of ninety (90) feet above Lake Michigan, and of one hundred and sixty (160) feet above the water in the Wabash river at Lafayette.

THE SOIL AND UNDERLYING STRATA.

In accordance with your special instructions, careful examinations were made of the soil and vegetable growth along the marsh, and frequent borings were made for the purpose of determining the underlying strata. These borings were made with a two and one-half inch iron tube, sunk to the depth of from eight to twelve feet, and the strata were examined by using the sand pump.

Reliable sections were obtained near South Bend at Crum's Point bridge, Free bridge, Lemon's bridge, Baltimore & Ohio railway crossing, Barnes' bridge, Austen's bridge, Huncheon's farm, Stowell's farm, Baum's

bridge, Shaffner's marsh, Thayer's station, and the state line.

From these borings the character of the entire valley is properly determined.

Within the depth which will be required in the improvement of the Kankakee, no stone obstruction will be found from its source at South Bend to the limestone ledge near Momence, Illinois. Throughout the state of Indiana the underlying strata are fine sand, increasing downward to coarse sand and gravel. Occasional thin layers of blue clay are found, but the excavations can be made generally in loose sandy soil and fine gravel.

The soil proper consists of a dark sandy loam, varying in thickness, and sometimes found even to the depth of five or six feet.

Profitable crops of wild hay are annually harvested from a large part of the marsh, and the partially recovered portions are found to be especially adapted to the culture of timothy, clover and blue grass. For stock farms this region will be surpassed by no section of the state.

The cranberry plant is native to the country, and the experiments already made for its culture are most encouraging.

Mr. Lamb has a farm in Starke county, near English Lake station, on the P., C. & St. L. railway, on which he has a field of cranberry plants, twenty acres in extent, under the most successful cultivation. The yield is enormous, and in 1882 the crop harvested was seventeen hundred bushels. The receipts for this crop this year will be not less than four thousand dollars.

The Beaver Lake region, in Newton county, is a good sample of the reclaimed marsh land along the Kankakee, and the results in this section are so satisfactory that the most earnest efforts should be made to recover all the overflowed lands.

MARSH AREA.

The number of acres in the marshes along the Kankakee and its principal tributaries which may be recovered by judicious drainage, is not less than four hundred thousand.

The acres included in the assessments made by the Kankakee Draining Company were:

St. Joseph county.....	39,633
Laporte county	124,253
Porter county	75,543
Starke county	153,625
Jasper county	90,459
Newton county	79,854
Lake county	61,438

Total 624,805

These assessments included lands adjacent to the marshes which would be commercially benefited by the improvement of the river, and therefore give an aggregate considerably in excess of the overflowed lands. Owing to the favorable location of the Kankakee region with reference to the great commercial metropolis of the northwest, and the facilities furnished by the numerous railways which pass through it, there will be a rapid increase in the value of the lands as soon as the drainage is effected.

Estimating this increase at twenty dollars per acre, the aggregate addition to the wealth of the state will be eight million dollars (\$8,000,000) on the estimated four hundred thousand acres reclaimed.

Or, estimating the general increase in value for the entire section drained by the Kankakee at ten dollars per acre, the added wealth to the state will be ten million dollars (\$10,000,000).

Certainly this is a problem worthy of the best efforts of the state.

THE IMPROVEMENT.

The drainage and recovery of the Kankakee marshes will include: First, the construction of a better main channel than now exists, for the flow of the river; second, the straightening and deepening of the beds of the streams which empty into the main stream; and third, the digging of a large number of lateral ditches through the swamps to the improved channels.

The portion of the work which seems properly to belong to state and national supervision, is the improvement of the main channel of the river. The other parts of the work may be left to the owners of the land, to be executed under our general drainage laws.

Two streams, the Kankakee and Grapevine creek, unite near the northwest corner of Sec. 4, T. 36 N., R. 1 E., nine miles from South Bend and form the Kankakee river.

This junction seems to be the proper place for the beginning of the improvement under state supervision.

The approximate length of the river in the state from this initial point is two hundred miles, as measured along the crooked channel, and the average fall per mile is less than four inches.

The velocity of the stream is nearly uniform and is about one and a half miles per hour, or one and two-tenths feet per second.

The general declivity of the marsh through which the river flows, is 1.3 feet per mile.

It is proposed to reduce the length of the river by the improvement, so that the distance from the initial point to Momence, Ill., will not exceed eighty-five miles, and the average fall per mile will be increased to more than twelve inches.

The experiments of Messrs. Richards and Stephans, made in 1871, and reported by Mr. Bennet, civil engineer, show that the Kankakee river, one mile above Momence, Ill., has a sectional area of 1,026 square feet, a mean velocity of 1.424 feet per second, and the volume of discharge of 1,452 cubic feet per second.

At the state line the sectional area is 543 square feet, the mean hydraulic depth is 4.5 feet, the calculated mean velocity is 2.35 feet per second, and the volume of discharge is 1,271 feet per second.

According to the same authority, the dimensions of the new channel proposed by the Kankakee Draining Company were: Width at top, 52 feet, width at bottom 42 feet, depth 10 feet, inclination one foot per mile, area of cross-section 470 square feet, calculated velocity 3.32 feet per second, volume of discharge 1,558 cubic feet per second.

In the determination of the dimensions of the new channels which will be required, I have assumed the correctness of the experiments made to determine the flow at the state line, and that the volume of discharge at ordinary stages of water will not exceed 1,271 cubic feet per second.

To provide sufficient capacity for ordinary floods, I have given the lower end of the new channel, fifteen miles above the state line, an area of cross-section of 500 feet, and the calculated volume of discharge 1,358 cubic feet per second.

It is proper to remark that so much depends on physical features peculiar to each particular case, that hydraulic formulas can serve only as general guides in the solution of any given problem. Absolute results can not be reached, and there is always room for honest differences of opinion among engineers as to the accuracy of conclusions.

The formulas used in the calculations for the velocities and volumes are taken from Fanning's Engineering, and apply primarily

to smooth, open and straight channels. (See foot note.)

The side slopes of the new excavations are estimated at one and one-half horizontal to each vertical foot in depth.

For convenience in the detailed descriptions of the improvement the following divisions are made:

Division I. From the initial point at the mouth of Grapevine creek, Sec. 4, T. 36 N., R. 1 E., to the lower end of Mud lake, at Lemon's bridge and the bridge of the Indianapolis, Peru and Chicago railway.

Division II. From the end of Division I, to the mouth of Mill creek, Sec. 7, T. 34 N., R. 2 W.

Division III. From the end of Division II, by a new channel to the mouth of Crooked creek, Sec. 36, T. 33 N., R. 6 W.

Division IV. From the end of Division II, by the old channel, and from the town of Knox, on Yellow river, Sec. 22, T. 33 N., R. 2 W., to the place where Crooked creek, the new channel and old channel, form a grand junction.

Division V. From Grand Junction, by a new channel, to a point in the river in Sec. 33, T. 32 N., R. 8 W., marked station Q on the map, near the bridge on the line of the Indianapolis & Chicago Air Line railway.

Division VI. From station Q, along the general line of the river, to the state line, Sec. 1, T. 31 N., R. 10 W.

Division VII. Illinois division. From the state line along the general line of the river to Momence, Illinois.

Division I.

From the initial point at the mouth of Grapevine creek, Sec. 4, T. 36 N., R. 1 E., to the lower end of Mud lake, Sec. 4, T. 35 N., R. 1 W.

The river begins in the open marsh and is entirely free from timber to the end of this division. The Crum's Point bridge is near the beginning of this division. "Free Bridge" is in Sec. 26, T. 36 N., R. 1 W., and Lemon's

bridge and the bridge of the Indianapolis, Peru & Chicago railway, are at the terminus of the division.

Mud lake is only a widening of the river on account of a slightly less fall than the average. The diminished velocity has caused the deposit of soil, and increased the growth of grasses and weeds in the stream.

The improvement of this division will require the straightening of the channel in the general line of the river. The new channel could be made perfectly straight without any timber obstruction, but, by slight deviations from a straight line, at least ten per cent. of the cost of excavation may be saved, by using as much of the present channel as possible, without material increase in distance.

The length will be 8.5 miles.

The dimensions proposed for the channel in this division are, width at bottom, 27 feet; width at top, 45 feet; depth, 6 feet.

These dimensions would give area of cross-section 216 square feet, mean hydraulic depth 4.26 feet, calculated mean velocity, with a fall of one foot to the mile, 2.105 feet per second; volume of discharge, 455 cubic feet per second.

The excavations will measure for each linear yard 24 cubic yards, for each mile 42,240 cubic yards, for the entire division, 8.5 miles, 359,040 cubic yards. This aggregate may be reduced ten per cent. for the old channel appropriated in the new, leaving a total for the first division of 323,136 cubic yards.

Division II.

From the terminus of Division I to the mouth of Mill creek, Sec. 7, T. 34 N., R. 2 W.

The river in this division runs through the open marsh, and is free from timber obstruction. The Baltimore & Ohio railway bridge is in this division. The length of the division will be 11.3 miles. The improvement will be along the general line of the river, and the route for the new channel will be nearly a straight line.

The dimensions proposed for the new channel are—width at bottom 27 feet, width at top 48 feet, depth 7 feet. These dimensions will give area of cross-section 262.5 square feet, mean hydraulic depth 4.6 feet, calculated mean velocity 2.187 feet per second, volume of discharge 574 cubic feet per second.

The excavations will measure for each linear yard 29.16 cubic yards, for each mile 51,321 cubic yards, for the division, 11.3 miles, 579,927 cubic yards. This aggregate

$$V = \sqrt{2 \frac{g r_i}{m}} \quad \text{Volume of discharge} = S \times V.$$

S = Area of cross-section.

v = Mean velocity.

g = Accelerating force of gravity = 32.2 feet.

C = Wetted perimeter = sides and bottom of channel.

t = Air perimeter = surface.

r = Mean hydraulic depth = $\frac{S}{C - 1.4 t}$.

i = Sine of the angle of inclination.

m = A tabulated coefficient dependent on r .

may be reduced ten per cent. for the old channel appropriated in the new, leaving for the *second division* 521,935 cubic yards.

Division III.

From the terminus of Division II, at the mouth of Mill creek, by a new channel, to the mouth of Crooked creek, Sec. 36, T. 33 N., R. 6 W.

The Kankakee river below the mouth of Mill creek has a belt of timber along its banks, which would make the cost of straightening the river, as in Divisions I and II, very great.

The great deflection of the river from the general direction of the valley makes it important to shorten the distance by a new channel.

The line proposed for the improvement lies in a remarkable part of the valley. The line will be clear from timber obstruction, except about one and a half miles at the lower end, where it passes through the belt of river-bank timber into the old channel. The line lies for the most part in a series of deep marshes, now impassable, and well known in the neighborhood as a deep slough, sand channel, etc. This division will be crossed by the Pittsburg, Ft. Wayne & Chicago; the New York, Chicago & St. Louis; the Pittsburg, Cincinnati & St. Louis; the Chicago & West Michigan; the Chicago & Atlantic, and the Louisville, New Albany & Chicago railways. The new channel will take the greater part of the water of the improved river above Mill creek, and all the surface drainage on the north side in Laporte and a part of Porter county. The length of the division will be 21.5 miles.

The proposed dimensions for the new channel for this division are at the upper end—width of bottom 27 feet, width at top 51 feet, depth 8 feet, area of cross-section 312 square feet. At the lower end—width at bottom 33 feet, width at top 57 feet, depth 8 feet, area of cross-section 360 square feet. The mean measure will be—width at bottom 30 feet, width at top 54 feet, depth 8 feet, area of cross-section 336 square feet.

These dimensions will give—mean hydraulic depth 5.23 feet, calculated mean velocity 2.405 feet per second, mean volume of discharge 808.4 cubic feet per second. The volume of discharge at the lower end will be 878.4 cubic feet per second.

The mean dimensions will give—for each linear yard 37 1-3 cubic yards, for each mile 65,707 cubic yards, for the division, 21.5 miles, 1,412,700 cubic yards.

Division IV.

From the terminus of Division II at the mouth of Mill creek, by the old channel of the river, and from the town of Knox, Sec. 22, T. 33 N., R. 2 W., on Yellow river, to the point where Crooked creek, the new and the old channels, form the grand junction. It is important to preserve and improve the old channel of the river in this division, for the purpose of draining the large territory on the south side, including the Yellow river country.

The new channel of Division III will relieve the present bed of the most of the water above Mill creek, and its relative carrying capacity will thereby be largely increased; but owing to its extreme crookedness, it will be necessary to expend a liberal amount in dredging and in cutting off the most troublesome bends, in order to increase the velocity of flow, which would otherwise be diminished below its present rate. The English lake region is similar to that above called Mud lake, and is only an enlargement of the river, of rather an extensive widening of the deep marsh border. In this lake the wild rice and grass grow in the greatest luxuriance. Austen's wagon bridge, Sec. 34, T. 34 N., R. 3 W.; Lougee's wagon bridge, Sec. 24, T. 33 N., R. 4 W., and Dunn's wagon bridge, Sec. 15, T. 32 N., R. 5 W., are in this division; and also, bridges on all the railway lines mentioned in Division III, except the Chicago & West Michigan.

For the improvement of this division, I would recommend the expenditure of not less than \$80,000.

Division V.

From Grand Junction, Sec. 36, T. 33 N., R. 6 W., by a new channel, to a point in the river in Sec. 33, T. 32 N., R. 8 W., marked on the map as station Q, near the bridge on the line of the Indianapolis & Chicago railway.

At Grand Junction, the new channel or the upper Kankakee, the old channel or the Yellow river section, and Crooked creek, unite their waters and form the enlarged lower river.

From Grand Junction to the state line, and to Momence, Ill., there is plenty of water for the purposes of navigation, and it is desirable that the improvement below Grand Junction should be made with reference both to drainage and navigation. The route proposed for the new channel, as shown by the map, will be through the open marsh, entirely free

from timber obstruction, except one mile of river bank timber on the west end, and is admirably located with reference to the drainage of some of the deepest marshes in the entire valley.

Another route may be adopted, nearly if not quite as good as the one proposed, by running the new line more directly west after it enters Newton county, and terminating in the river north of station Q; thence by the straightened river to the terminus at station P. The cost of the two routes will be about equal.

The length of the division will be 16 miles.

The dimensions proposed for the new channel for this division are—at the upper end, width at bottom 36 feet, width at top, 63 feet, depth 9 feet, area of cross-section 445.5 square feet. At the lower end—width at bottom 42 feet, width at top 69 feet, depth 9 feet, area of cross-section 499.5 square feet. Mean measure—width at bottom 39 feet, width at top 66 feet, depth 9 feet, area of cross-section 472.5 square feet.

These dimensions will give—mean hydraulic depth 6.06 feet, calculated mean velocity 2.7 feet per second, volume of discharge 1,275.7 cubic feet per second. The volume of discharge at the lower end station will be 1,358.6 cubic feet per second.

The mean dimensions give for each linear yard 52.5 cubic yards, for each mile 92,400 cubic yards, for the division (16 miles) 1,478,400 cubic yards.

The old channel of the river below Grand Junction receives no important creek, and only a small expenditure will be required to keep this channel open for its limited drainage area.

Division VI.

From the terminus of Division V, at station Q, along the general line of the river to the state line.

The increased velocity of the river in this division, owing to its increased slope and the general direction of the stream, make the improvement desirable along the general line of its present flow.

A new channel in Sec. 33, T. 32 N., R. 8 W., one mile in length, and a similar one, chiefly in Sections 1 and 2, T. 31 N., R. 9 W., two and a half miles long, will be required. The dimensions of these new channels are estimated the same as in Division V—per mile 92,400 cubic yards— $3\frac{1}{2}$ miles 323,400 cubic yards.

The other improvements in this division will consist in a general straightening of the channel, the removal of timber obstruction and dredging the channel to secure an additional depth of two feet.

The estimated length of the division after the improvement has been made, will be fifteen (15) miles.

Messrs. Cass, Singleton, Williams, Luck & Co. are constructing a large ditch, twenty feet wide and six feet deep, on the north side of the Kankakee, which will be an important part of the general improvement.

This ditch is located on the map, and extends from Sec. 29, T. 33 N., R. 7 W., in a general southwesterly direction to the river near the state line.

The marsh is very wide in this region, but when the land is reclaimed, as it doubtless will be when this ditch is completed, it will be as beautiful and as rich as any portion of the state.

The enterprising owners have two steam dredging machines in successful operation, and the construction of the ditch is progressing satisfactorily.

Division VII.—Illinois Division.

From the state line along the general course of the river to Mokence, Illinois.

Beyond the jurisdiction of Indiana it will be necessary to continue the improvement of the river to a point below the dam at Mokence.

A new channel, beginning a short distance from the state line and running west nearly two miles, will cut off a great bend of the river and effect an important saving in distance.

The dimensions of this channel should be the same as in Division V, and owing to its short length it will readily adjust itself to any required size by the action of the stream itself.

The other improvements of this division will be similar in every particular to those in Division VI, until the rock ledge near Mokence is reached.

This obstruction is a limestone ledge which extends about one and a half miles in width, and its removal is a necessity for the proper improvement of the river.

The increased velocity of the straightened channel above will carry down large quantities of soil and sand, for which a free outlet must be provided by opening a way through the rocky ledge.

Even now the improvements in the Beaver lake region have increased the growth of grasses and weeds in the river at Momence and this will be further increased to a very damaging degree, unless this free outlet is provided.

The general government has ordered a survey of this portion of the river, and the methods for this improvement doubtless will receive proper consideration. A channel forty feet in width and five feet in depth will be large enough to meet the requirements of the new improvement, which will give approximately for the entire length 60,000 cubic yards.

After the completion of the improvement of the river, the estimated distance from the state line to Momence will be 12 miles.

The total distance as shown by the preceding division will be:

Division I	8.5 miles.
Division II	11.3 miles.
Division III	21.5 miles.
Division V	16.0 miles.
Division VI	15.0 miles.
Division VII	12.0 miles.

Total 84.3 miles.

Division IV is not included in this estimate of the length of the new channel.

The entire work may be divided into two general parts, the first including Divisions I, II, III and IV, from the initial point to Grand Junction, Section 36, T. 33 N., R. 6 W., and the second including Divisions V, VI and VII, from Grand Junction to Momence.

The distance from the initial point to Grand Junction will be 41.3 miles, and from Grand Junction to Momence, 43 miles.

It is entirely feasible to begin the improvement of either of these general parts without delaying for the other, and pending the settlement of the proper question of the relation of the general government to the lower portion as a navigable stream, it is recommended that work be begun as speedily as possible on the upper portion.

METHODS AND COST.

In the construction of the new channel for the Kankakee, it will be necessary to use steam dredging machines.

The best forms of these machines, as now constructed, are made to float in channels of their own making. The Kankakee open marshes and sandy soil afford the best field for the economic use of these dredging machines. The two now in use by Messrs. Cass,

Singleton, Williams & Co., are constructed after an excellent model, and the work being done by them is satisfactory. Five to six men are required to do the work on each boat, and one machine can excavate thirteen hundred cubic yards per day.

The engine has forty-horse power at sixty pounds of boiler pressure.

All the operatives are comfortably fed and lodged upon the boats.

The special machinery for the excavation consists of a series of scoops attached to an endless chain, which passes over a projecting arm in the forward part of the boat, this arm being adjustable to any point in front, where it is desired that the excavation be made.

The scoops deliver their loads into an elevated chute, which is inclined about 30 degrees, and extends over the side of the boat far enough to deposit the excavated earth at the proper distance from the ditch.

In the Kankakee improvement a number of these machines will be required. For the wide channels it will be more expeditious and economical to use the machines in pairs—one digging half the width and the second following close behind and digging the remaining half.

In addition, it will be found necessary to have small steam tenders to carry supplies to the dredge boats, as in many parts of the marsh it will be impossible to reach the boats by wagons.

The cost of the dredging machines will be from \$7,000 to \$10,000 each.

I am not able to say what is the lowest possible price at which this work can be done with these dredging machines—or rather the lowest price per cubic yard at which the contract could be made with responsible and capable parties.

The manufacturers of dredging machines claim that the expense of moving earth will be from two to three cents per cubic yard. This amount, however, can not include the use of capital invested, wear of machinery, and necessary losses by breakage and other delays.

Persons with some experience in this kind of work think that five to seven cents would be a fair price, including interest on capital and all risks incident to the work; while others believe that contracts with responsible parties can not be obtained at less than ten cents per cubic yard.

Herewith I submit the cost of the earth

work at both seven and ten cents per cubic yard, and if a less price can be realized it will only be the more satisfactory.

According to the foregoing estimates, the amount of earth work included in the improvement, from the initial point to Grand Junction, will be:

Division I	323,136 cubic yds.
Division II	521,935 cubic yds.
Division III	1,412,700 cubic yds.

Total	2,257,771 cubic yds.
At 7 cents per cubic yard the cost of this excavation would be.....	\$158,043 97
Or at 10 cents per cubic yard.....	225,777 10
The amount proposed for Division IV is	80,000 00
Making a grand total of.....	238,043 97
Or of	305,777 10

The amount of earth work included in the improvement from Grand Junction to the State line and to Momence will be:

Division V	1,478,400 cubic yds.
Three and a half miles of Division VI	323,400 cubic yds.

Total	1,801,800 cubic yds.
At 7 cents per yard this will cost....	\$126,126 00
At 10 cents per yard this will cost...	180,180 00
The estimated expenditure for the remaining 11½ miles of Division VI is \$6,000 per mile, or for the division, \$69,000; making a grand total from Grand Junction to the State line of	195,126 00
Or	249,180 00
The estimated cost for Division VII, Illinois Division, is 10½ miles, at \$6,000 per mile	65,000 00
One and a half miles rock excavation at \$15,000 per mile.....	22,500 00

Total	\$ 87,500 00
The total cost from Grand Junction to Momence, on the estimates at 7 cents, will be.....	\$282,626 00
On the estimate at 10 cents, will be..	336,680 00
The total cost from the initial point to the State line, at 7 cents, will be	433,169 97
At 10 cents, will be.....	545,975 10
The entire cost from the initial point to Momence will be, at 7 cents....	520,669 97
At 10 cents.....	642,457 10

GENERAL RESULTS.

Divisions.	Miles Length.	Cubic Yards.	Cost at \$0.07.	Cost at \$0.10
I	8.5	323,136	\$22,619.52	\$32,813.60
II	11.3	521,935	36,535.45	52,193.50
III	21.5	1,412,700	98,889.00	141,270.00
IV			80,000.00	80,000.00
V	16.	1,478,400	103,488.00	147,840.00
VI	15.	3¼ 323,400	22,638.00	32,340.00
VII	12.	11½	69,000.00	69,000.00
Totals	84.3		\$520,669.97	\$642,457.00

In addition to the cost of construction, the question of maintenance of the new channel requires consideration. The same causes which produced the present crooked river will, in a less degree, affect the straightened stream, and continued care will be required to preserve an unobstructed flow.

The broad valley of the Kankakee marsh is doubtless the result of glacial action. At the close of the glacial period, we may suppose that a shallow river extended from bank to bank of the valley. This stream had a slope of about one foot to the mile, and a consequent velocity rapid enough to take up the particles of fine sand and carry them forward. The retardation along the borders would cause the deposit of the sand, and thereby make the stream more narrow by the formation of banks. The narrowed and deepened stream would have an increased velocity, and hence, other masses of sand would be taken up by the current and carried forward to form obstructions in the general direction of flow. Following the lines of least resistance, the channel would be diverted from its original direction and would change from straight to crooked, and continue to change so long as the velocity was too great for the stability of the sand bed over which the river flows. By these processes, doubtless, the sinuous Kankakee was formed; and its present length, with its many windings, approximately determines the velocity consistent with permanence in the wide marsh which it now so imperfectly drains.

The formation of the timber line along the river may be explained in like manner.

During freshets the low lands would be overflowed, and the soil and sand brought down by the increased current would be deposited, first along the banks of the river, thereby raising the surface next the stream enough above the level of the marsh to permit the seeds of trees to grow, which would not germinate in the swamp itself.

If we assume that the river now has an approximately stable bed, the result mainly of the free action of natural forces on the sandy soil, it is evident that any increase of velocity will affect this stability and introduce a disturbing element which will require special attention.

The banks of the new channel will likewise deliver quantities of sand into the current until they assume their proper angle of rest

and are protected by grass or other vegetable growth.

The lateral ditches, also, will bring down masses of sand which will, if left uncared for, form bars where these ditches empty into the river.

To meet these difficulties it will be necessary to keep at work one or two dredging machines until the new channel has assumed a partially stable condition.

Grass grows most luxuriantly in all parts of the Kankakee valley, and from this cause we may expect that the banks will be covered very rapidly. After the drainage has been once accomplished and the lands brought under cultivation, there will be a great diminution of the volume of water to be carried off.

The absorbent power of the reclaimed land and the evaporating surface will be increased, and the quality of surplus water will be proportionally diminished.

The diminished volume will give a relative increased capacity with less depth, and thus by degrees the new channel will become stable, while at the same time it fulfills all the requirements for complete drainage.

DIVISION OF EXPENSES.

In this improvement it is proper to consider the relation which the Kankakee sustains to the navigable waters of the Mississippi system, and to what extent the expenses of the work should be borne by the government of the United States.

The Kankakee has always been considered a navigable stream, but the point above which it can not be properly so classed never has been fixed.

Major Jared Smith, of the U. S. Engineers, in charge of the river and harbor improvements in this state, made an examination of the Kankakee in 1879, and reported favorably for its improvement for a distance, by the river, of one hundred and fifty miles. Major Smith's report will be found on pages 1,455-60, Executive Documents, Second Session Forty-Sixth Congress 1879-80, Vol. 4, Engineers, No. 1, part 2.

Major Smith's reconnoissance was made by a small steamer from Momence as far up the river as Baum's bridge, and in this entire distance he reports abundance of water for navigation. He says: "The greater portion of the distance of 120 miles, which I thus went over, had a depth of five (5) or more feet, and

I found no case where it was less than two feet, and but few as small as three feet."

Baum's bridge is but two miles below the point named in this report as "Grand Junction."

I fully concur in the opinion expressed by Major Smith, and believe that there will be a supply of water sufficient to maintain a reliable depth of two and a half to three feet at the lowest stage, even after the channel has been straightened and improved for general drainage.

The uniform slope of the bed of the Kankakee, and the absence of any rock obstruction in the entire State, will obviate the necessity for the construction of dams for navigation purposes, so that it will be entirely feasible to make the improvement for the double purpose of drainage and navigation.

From Momence to Grand Junction there are but one railway and two wagon bridges. It will not be difficult, therefore, to provide an open way for navigation.

The manifest importance of this improvement, as a part of the general system of water communication through the Mississippi river, will certainly command favorable action.

It is respectfully recommended that the General Government be requested to consider the improvement of the Kankakee for the purposes of navigation, in connection with the State work for drainage, from Momence to Grand Junction.

DRAINAGE TO THE TIPPECANOE.

The short water-shed to the Kankakee on the south side below English lake, has suggested a possible route for the new channel of the Kankakee southward through this dividing ridge to the Monon, and thence to the Tippecanoe and Wabash rivers; and, in accordance with your directions, I made a survey in that section.

The line was run from the mouth of a small creek which empties into the Kankakee in the N. E. $\frac{1}{4}$ Sec. 35, T. 33 N., R. 4 W., a short distance below the P., C. & St. L. R. R. at English lake; thence up this stream five miles to the dividing ridge near the section line, between Sections 23 and 26, T. 32 N., R. 4 W.; thence down a small tributary of the Monon to the head of the Monon ditch, in Pulaski county, Sec. 6, T. 31 N., R. 3 W.; thence to a point in the same ditch in Sec. 33, T. 30 N., R. 4 W., called Hickory Grove, northeast of Francesville.

The levels on this line show that the summit

of the ridge, five miles from the starting point, is 46 feet above the level of the water in English lake, and allowing 6 feet for depth of the river and 1 foot fall per mile, a cut will be required at the summit of 57 feet. At the county line, two miles further south, the cut will be 43 feet in depth. The fall from the head of the Monon ditch to Hickory Grove, a distance of twelve miles, is 40 feet; and, with the same slope as before, the depth of the ditch would be 15 feet at this point.

The impracticability of the route being so manifest, I abandoned any further survey at this point. It is important to remark that the fine slope to the marsh along the Monon from its source to Cooper's mill, and the very fertile marsh valley along the river, should prompt immediate and active efforts to complete the drainage already partly accomplished by the "Monon Ditch." To finish this important work will require the enlargement of the ditch, the straightening of the channel in the lower portion, and probably the removal of the dam at Cooper's mill.

ALLEN AND HUNTINGTON COUNTY MARSHES.

During the month of October I made an examination of the extensive swamp lands in Allen and Huntington counties, along the line of the Wabash, St. Louis & Pacific railway. The field leveling was done by Messrs. Anderson & Orton.

The marsh region embraces twenty-five thousand acres, and is nearly equally divided between the two counties. In Allen county the marsh is chiefly prairie, but in Huntington county a considerable portion is in the wood land.

In range twelve, running quite through the county, lies the dividing line between the waters which flow through the Maumee to Lake Erie and those which flow through the Wabash to the Ohio and on to the Gulf of Mexico.

The great marsh begins southwest of the city of Ft. Wayne, and stretches along Little river to the limestone ledge near Huntington.

Little river rises in the south part of Allen county, and runs northward to within a few miles of Ft. Wayne, where it is lost in the marsh, but it reappears again with definite banks and channel in Sec. 25, T. 30 N., R. 11 E.

Through the Richardville Reservation the marsh extends quite to the St. Mary river, and it is both feasible and desirable to direct the upper portion of Little river, by a new chan-

nel, through this marsh to the St. Mary. From six to ten feet fall may be found from this marsh to the St. Mary, and there are no stone or timber obstructions in the line of the proposed new channel.

The following table shows the elevations, referred to sea-levels from Ft. Wayne along the general line of the marsh to the surface of the water below the lower dam at Huntington:

P., Ft. W. & C. R. R. depot, Ft. Wayne.....	784.
Crossing P., Ft. W. & C., and Ft. W. & M. R. R.	792.8
Little river, in Sec. 25, T. 30 N., R. 11 E, at crossing W., St. L. & P. R. R.....	757.5
Little river, at crossing R. R., Sec. 26.....	756.1
Little river, at crossing R. R., Sec. 33.....	754.7
Little river, at Aboite station.....	751.3
Little river, at Roanoke station.....	746.5
Little river, at Mahan.....	741.1
Little river, at Sec. 4, T. 28 N., R. 10 E.....	740.4
Little river, at foot of ripple.....	737.0
Little river, at upper dam at Huntington (top)	732.7
Little river, at surface of water below dam	724.7
Little river, at lower dam at Huntington (top)	723.5
Little river, at surface of water below dam	715.9

The chief obstruction to the drainage of Little river is the ledge of limestone which lies across the channel at Huntington. The entire fall from the starting point, in Allen county, seventeen miles from the upper dam at Huntington, is thirty-two feet, but nearly one-half of this fall is found in the five miles at the lower end. The improvement of the river and the recovery of the marsh lands above will require the removal of the upper dam at Huntington and the opening of a channel through this rock obstruction.

Several years ago a company was formed for the purpose of making this improvement of Little river and the recovery of the marsh prairie. The length of the improved channel of Little river, contemplated by the company, was sixteen and one-half miles from the upper dam at Huntington to a point west of Ft. Wayne, where the river first crosses the line of the Wabash, St. Louis & Pacific Railway.

The rock excavation near Huntington was estimated at sixty-two thousand cubic yards, and the probable cost per yard for removal was seventy cents, giving an aggregate of \$44,400. I am not able to give an estimate of the cost of the earth work which will be required without further surveys. It is safe to say, in general terms, that the entire improvement can be made at a cost not exceeding \$100,000, an average cost of four dollars per acre for the marsh land recovered.

The nearness of this vast marsh to one of the largest and most flourishing cities in the state, makes its reclamation especially important. These lands are now practically worthless, but when recovered will have a value at least of thirty (\$30) dollars per acre, or an aggregate value of \$750,000.

KNOX COUNTY SWAMPS.

The extensive area south of Vincennes, in Knox county, known as Cypress Swamp, lies in the belt of territory between Wabash and White rivers, above their junction. The low lands begin near the city of Vincennes, and, interspersed with sand hills or ridges, constitute a series of swamps embracing not less than 15,000 acres. The marshes have but little elevation above the river at ordinary full stage, and during heavy floods they are submerged to the depth of five to ten feet. The soil is very rich and the lands will be valuable when recovered.

The reclamation of this section will require the opening of suitable ditches for drainage and protection from overflows.

A small stream called River Dechee runs through a part of the marsh, and is lost in the marsh itself, but reappears, and, through a fairly defined channel, empties into the Wabash.

A State ditch was once constructed from the Dechee to White river, and by the enlargement of this incomplete work the upper portion of the marsh may be drained. The channel of the Dechee to the Wabash will furnish the proper line for the improvement of another part of the marsh.

In order properly to protect the lands from overflow, it will be necessary to construct levees along the Wabash from the point where the present levee near the city ends, to the rapids, and, also along White river above the junction of the two rivers. Additional surveys will be required to determine the cost of these improvements.

In the eastern part of the county there is another extensive marsh, known as Montour's pond, embracing six to eight thousand acres which is not subject to overflow from the river.

The levels run by the County Surveyor show a fall of two to three feet per mile, from the deepest part of the pond to White river. This section can be readily drained to White river, and when recovered it will be equal in value, for agricultural purposes, to any part of Knox county.

In the conclusion of this report, I deem it proper to acknowledge the invaluable assistance I have received from yourself, in the facilities furnished for the work and in the discussion of methods for its prosecution.

I am specially indebted to the State Geologist for his cordial co-operation, and for the information and assistance which he has given to me.

I desire to express my thanks to the railway companies of the State for favors received, and to the many citizens of the State who have kindly furnished to me valuable information.

The popular interest everywhere expressed in the success of this undertaking, shows how strongly the people will sustain efforts tending to promote the real prosperity of the State. Respectfully submitted,

JOHN L. CAMPBELL,
Chief Engineer.

Sec. 3.—REMOVAL OF THE MOMENCE ROCK.—In Division VII of Professor Campbell's report, the "Illinois Division," he says:

"The other improvements of this division will be similar in every particular to those of Division VI, until the rock ledge near Momence is reached. This obstruction is a limestone ledge which extends about one and a half miles in width, and its removal is a necessity for the proper improvement of the river. The increased velocity of the straightened channel above will carry down large quantities of soil and sand, for which a free outlet must be provided by opening a way through the rocky ledge."^a

The removal of the limestone ledge, which acted as a dam to the Kankakee at Momence, and thus obstructed the drainage of the valley all the way from Momence to South Bend, remained a problem from the date of Professor Campbell's report until the convening of the legislature of 1887. The writer was a member of that legislature and considered it a duty to his constituents to seek some means of securing an outlet to the Kankakee through the natural rock dam at Momence. During that session, however, political controversies rendered it impossible to make any

a. See Chap. 1, Subd. 6, of this History.

headway in this important matter. The subject was then pretty thoroughly discussed, however, and at the beginning of the session of 1889 a mode of procedure was adopted which finally proved effectual.

Two difficulties presented themselves,—the physical obstacle of the limestone ledge, and the question of jurisdiction over the territory occupied by the rock. The Momence rock is within the state of Illinois, a few miles below the Indiana state line, and it was not at first clear to the members of the legislature how they were to acquire the right to go into another state to make an improvement such as that proposed. This difficulty was happily overcome by the action of land owners in Kankakee county, Illinois, who procured deeds to a strip of land, including the river bed, from the Indiana line to and including the rock at Momence. These deeds were drawn to convey to the state of Indiana an easement in the lands and river bed for the purposes of drainage. There were forty such deeds delivered to the auditor of state. A legal opinion was then procured, to the effect that the state of Indiana, like any other land owner, having a right of easement for drainage in the river bed from the Indiana line to and including the limestone ledge, might enter upon those lands and make the necessary improvement. The Illinois authorities afterwards contested this right, and there was much tedious litigation in the Illinois courts; finally ending, however, by a decision of the court of last resort that the state of Indiana had a clear right to make the improvement.

The law question being solved, the legislature, by an act approved March 7, 1889,^a passed an act appropriating forty thousand dollars for the removal of the rock at Momence, in the state of Illinois, the work to be done under direction of three commissioners and a civil engineer; the commissioners to be appointed by the governor and the engineer to be selected by the commissioners.

a. Acts, 1889, p. 291.

Before the passage of the bill, numerous conferences were held in relation to the necessity of this drainage by Indiana and Illinois land owners. The following is a report of one such conference held in Chicago on January 18, 1889:

“A number of gentlemen interested in the drainage of the overflowed and wet lands situated in the Kankakee valley met this afternoon in the club-room of the Palmer house. About one hundred persons, including representatives from all the counties interested, were present. Clem Studebaker of South Bend, Ind., was elected chairman and J. M. Youche of Crown Point, Ind., secretary.

“The following resolutions were introduced and adopted:

“‘Resolved, That it is the sense of this meeting that the first and most important step to enable the land owners to drain and reclaim the 1,700 square miles of swamp and overflowed lands of the Kankakee valley in the state of Indiana, is that of cutting a channel of sufficient width and depth through the ledge of rock which extends across the Kankakee river at Momence, Ill., so as to afford an outlet for the marshes, and to accomplish this we request an appropriation be made by the state of Indiana from the state treasury of such a sum as will bring about these improved conditions.’

“On motion, a committee of three was appointed from each county to solicit signatures to a petition to be presented to the Indiana state legislature requesting these improvements, as follows:

“Lake county, J. W. Brown, J. A. Little, Oscar Dinwiddie; Porter county, W. D. Howell, Dr. John Blackston, De Forest L. Skinner; Newton county, John Brady, John Sink, James De Wolf; Jasper county, Isaac D. Dunn, William Danke, George Hoehn; LaPorte county, J. N. Conboy, Patrick Huncheson, George Dennison; St. Joseph county, Dixon W. Place, Asa Knott, Clem Studebaker; Starke county, W. H. Coffin, Dr. Henderson, J. H. McLaughlin.

"A committee of three was then appointed by the chair to present these petitions to the legislature of the state of Indiana. This whole matter was presented to the legislature two years ago, but nothing was done. It is claimed that a large ledge of rock in the Kankakee river at Momence, Ill., is the cause of the overflow which submerges millions of fertile acres in the Kankakee valley in Indiana. When this obstruction is removed, the gentlemen interested in the movement claim that this large tract of swamp land will be drained and can be put under cultivation."

The following is the legal opinion pronouncing in favor of the validity of the law. It was from one of the ablest firms of attorneys then in the state:

"Indianapolis, Ind., Feb. 22, 1887.

"Hon. T. E. Howard,

"Chairman Committee on Swamp Lands,

"Senate Chamber,

"Indianapolis, Indiana.

"Dear Sir:—Pursuant to your request of yesterday, we have examined Senate Bill No. 237 with such care as the limited time has permitted.

"Two questions may possibly be raised as to the constitutionality of this bill, namely:

"1st. Can the state of Indiana acquire and hold real estate within the territorial limits of the state of Illinois?

"We have been unable to find, either in the constitution or statutes of Indiana, or in the decisions of the supreme court of Indiana, any statement, provision or ruling prohibiting the state of Indiana from acquiring and owning real estate within the territorial limits of another state. By the decisions of courts of other states, and of the supreme court of the United States, it seems to be conceded that the United States, or any state, may acquire and become the owner of real estate within the territorial limits of another state, subject in all respects to the laws of the state within which such real estate is situated.

"‘Rorer, on Inter-State Law,’ states the proposition thus:

"‘The ownership of lands by one state within the territorial limits of another state is in no wise different from that of the ownership of an individual person. The title and estate in

such case is acquired and held subject to all the incidents of ordinary private ownership, so far as regards the mere circumstance of a state being the owner.’

"‘Rorer on Inter-State Law,’ p. 213.

"The doctrine, as thus laid down, seems to be supported by several well considered cases, among which the leading cases seem to be:

"Burbank et al. v. Fay et al., 65 N. Y. Repts. 62.

"Biddle Boggs v. Merced M. Co., 14 Cal. 375, 376.

"Pollard’s Lessee v. Hogan (dissenting opinion of Justice Craton), 3 How. U. S. Repts. 232-233.

"United States v. Chicago, 7 How. U. S. Repts. 194.

"We find no case in our state reports touching this question. There may be such decisions but if they are, they have escaped our notice. If, therefore, the laws of Illinois permit, we do not think the constitution or laws of Indiana prohibit the state of Indiana from acquiring and holding the real estate described in this bill.

"One state acquiring real estate within the territorial limits of another state acquires and holds such real estate subject in all respects to the jurisdictional and municipal regulations of that other state. In other words, it would be useless for the legislature of Indiana to attempt to assert its jurisdictional and municipal control over any real estate within the territorial limits of the state of Illinois. It must stand in Illinois simply as any other private owner of real estate, and must be and become subject in all respects to the municipal regulations and jurisdictional powers of that other state.

"2d. Has the state of Indiana the right to expend moneys derived from general taxation in opening that part of the channel of the Kankakee river within the territorial limits of Illinois, as contemplated by this bill?

"The only objection to such use of said funds derived from general taxation would be that it might be urged that this legislation would fall under the designation of ‘local’ or ‘special’ legislation, and be prohibited by Article 4, Sections 22-23 of our State Constitution, and that it would be in effect applying funds raised by general taxation to the exclusive benefit of the owners of the land reclaimed by the contemplated deepening of the channel of the Kankakee river. But we do

not think these objections could prevail against this bill.

"We understand, from the preamble to the bill, that some portion of the land to be benefited by opening a channel through the Momence ledge still belongs to, and is the property of the state of Indiana. We assume this to be true and on that assumption are of the opinion that the objections above named are untenable for three reasons:

'First.—The contemplated improvement would be an improvement by the state of Indiana upon its own property, held by it in the state of Illinois.

"Second.—The contemplated improvement would be a permanent benefit to the swamp lands still belonging to the state of Indiana.

"Third.—The contemplated improvement would be a work of public utility and a municipal sanitary regulation, promotive of health, preventive of disease, and greatly conducive to the general welfare.

"The supreme court of Indiana has repeatedly held that when the public health and general welfare of the commonwealth are involved, such objections as those above named are invalid. This is the principle underlying and supporting the following decisions of our state supreme court:

"Tillman v. Kircher, 64 Ind. 104.

"Deisner v. Simpson et al., 72 Ind. 441.

"Wisniew v. The State, etc., 97 Ind. 162.

"Anderson v. Baker, 98 Ind. 589.

"We have paid no particular attention to the second and third sections of the proposed act, because they seem to be merely directions with regard to the work to be done in opening the channel of the Kankakee river, if the real estate in Illinois is procured and conveyed to the auditor of state for the state of Indiana, as provided by the first section of the act.

Yours most respectfully,

"McDonald, Butler & Mason."

Some of the very interesting correspondence in relation to the bill is here given:

"U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey,

"Crawfordsville, Ind., Jan. 21, 1889.

"Hon. T. E. Howard, Senator, etc.

"Dear Sir: I notice with special pleasure the introduction by you, in the senate, of a bill providing for the removal of the rock obstruction in the Kankakee at Momence, Ill.

"This is one of the most important measures that can come before the legislature, and I earnestly hope that it will meet with the

favor which it deserves.

"I can only reaffirm the statements and recommendations made to Governor Porter of the survey made by me in 1882.

"The increased value to the state of the millions of acres in the Kankakee region, would in a few years repay in taxes the amount now asked in aid of the work.

"The sanitary interests involved in this vast unreclaimed marsh are sufficient to warrant the expenditure proposed,—while the good name of the state demands the recovery of this dreary waste, now so unpleasantly prominent from the numerous national highways which cross it.

"The removal of the obstruction at Momence is the proper beginning of the improvement—and this is certainly a very reasonable part of the general cost of the work for the state. Permit me to refer your committee to my report to the governor in 1882, and to say that the added years have only increased the importance of the statements then made. Very respectfully yours,

"J. L. Campbell."

"U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey,

"Crawfordsville, Ind., Feb. 15, 1889.

"Hon T. E. Howard.

"Dear Sir: By referring to page 24 of my report you will find my estimate of work on the Momence ledge is based on a channel in the rock forty feet wide and five feet deep, giving approximately 60,000 cubic yards,—and estimated to cost, above the probable value of the stone removed, 37½ cents per cubic yard. This gives \$15,000 per mile, as stated on page 26.

"It may not be safe now to estimate the cost of removal at less than 50 cents per cubic yard, which would make the channel I proposed cost \$30,000.

"I regard the dimensions I proposed as sufficient for drainage and all ordinary flow of the river.

"For excessive floods and ice gorges the present bed and banks will afford sufficient protection.

"However, these dimensions can be increased as far as the limits of the appropriation and the contracts made for the work will allow—and I therefore suggest that the dimensions of the channel be left to the commission—perhaps stating as a minimum the channel I recommended, 40x5 feet, or its equivalent.

Very respectfully,

"J. L. Campbell."

"South Bend, Ind., Feb. 11, 1889.

"Hon. T. E. Howard, Senate Chamber, Indianapolis.

"Dear Senator: Yours of the 9th notifying me that a joint committee of the senate and house will give parties interested in the Kankakee drainage bill a hearing on the evening of Thursday, the 14th inst., is at hand. I regret that I cannot be there. If I am well enough to leave home, which at present seems somewhat doubtful, I must go to New York to-morrow night to attend an important business conference. I must therefore beg you to present to the committee my compliments and regrets. Kindly ask them further to permit me to hope that they will be favorably impressed with the statements and arguments which will be presented to them by the promoters of the bill. I can truly say that my concern for its success is mainly inspired by regard for the general welfare. My own property adjacent to the Kankakee river is near its head waters, and the fall at this point, I am assured, is practically sufficient for drainage purposes. But aside from the private interests which might be subserved by the passage of this bill, there are certainly abundant reasons in favor of the measure that are of a general character. I take it that there will be no question that the improvement is one highly desirable to be made, and it will be easily shown that it is of a nature which cannot well be undertaken by private parties, but must be done, if at all, through state aid. Gentlemen will show the committee conclusively, I think, that the successful drainage of the Kankakee, dependent upon the removal of the obstruction provided for in the bill, would greatly improve the sanitary condition of the northern part of the state. These low, wet lands are declared by all the authorities on the proper conditions for the public health to be malarious and fever breeding. State aid ought to be cheerfully afforded on this account if for no other reason. Yet, I contend that for purely selfish motives the state may well undertake this improvement. The drainage would reclaim and make valuable large bodies of land the property of the state, that are now practically useless, valueless. It would also add so materially to the value of other lands as to greatly increase their assessment valuation, and so bring rapid returns to the coffers of the state. But again, as a matter of state pride, I feel that the legislature should vote

aid for the purpose of this bill. The principal trunk lines between Chicago and the east traverse this marshy section of our state, and the observations of travelers give credit to the belief widely entertained that Indiana is a good state for emigrants to avoid. Other reasons of weight will no doubt be presented to the committee, favorable to this measure, and these which I have hastily touched upon will, I trust, be more cogently and forcibly set forth. Hoping that the committee will give due weight to what shall be said in favor of the proposed legislation, I am,

Very respectfully yours,

"Clem Studebaker."

Immediately after the passage of the bill the South Bend Times published the following congratulatory editorial:

"Considering the fact that so many people find it irksome to investigate, inquire and think, it is perhaps not at all strange that a matter of such transcendent importance as the reclamation of the vast Kankakee region should have received comparatively little consideration and awakened relatively little interest, even in this part of the state.

"It is remarkable, however, that during the entire session of the general assembly nearly everybody at the state capital seemed to be bitterly opposed to Senator Howard's bill for the removal of the obstructions in the Kankakee river at Momence. The press of Indianapolis was freely utilized to awaken prejudice against that measure. But still more remarkable is the sudden change wrought in public sentiment by the final passage of the bill. All at once the immense advantages likely to accrue to the state are being recognized and favorably discussed. It is freely said that it is the most far-reaching and important piece of legislation that has ever passed the general assembly in the interest of northern Indiana. Roseate predictions are made as to the future of the Kankakee region, which it is now said will become the garden spot of the state.

"The blasting out of the rock at Momence is declared to be but the beginning. We are told that the owners of the swamp lands

of the Kankakee valley will immediately, after that outlet is made, clean out and straighten the old river, putting enough money into the work, if necessary, to equal the present value of the lands. Such an investment is morally certain to bring ten-fold returns. We shall take frequent occasion to speak of this matter as developments are made in the near future.

“Senator Howard is entitled to unstinted praise for his perseverance and tact in pushing this measure in the face of all the opposition arrayed against it. And too much cannot be said in recognition of the zeal with which Representative Edward A. Metzger, aided by his colleague, Mr. William H. Stull, urged favorable action by the house. Mr. Metzger had charge of the bill in the house, and started out with the determination to secure enough votes for its passage, ‘or know the reason why.’ In this he succeeded beyond hope or reasonable expectation. The vote on the final passage in the house stood 58 in favor to only 25 against. This remarkable achievement again proves that where there is a will there is usually a way, and that a good and just cause can be made to prevail when the right man takes hold and determines to win.”

The following, from an Indianapolis paper, of date August 1, 1890, gives some of the subsequent history of the work up to the time of letting the contract for the removal of the rock:

“The Momence rock has been a sort of nightmare to every man who has attempted to make a home in the Kankakee region. As a breeder of malaria, mosquitoes and melancholia the Momence rock has had no rivals. It has caused half a million acres of land within two hours of a city of over a million people to remain a ‘slough of despond’ instead of the garden spot of Indiana. It has been a ‘hell-gate’ upon which politicians of the region wrecked their aspirations. ‘Send me to the legislature and I’ll remove the rock,’ is the platform upon which many a

politician elevated himself to the legislature. However, the rock was too much for him, and he immediately returned to private life. In 1882 an aspirant for congressional honors said: ‘If you want the rock removed, send me to congress,’ and the candidate was elected by a majority of 2,000.

“The so-called Momence rock is a ledge of limestone through which the Kankakee river cuts a shallow channel for a mile and a half near the town of Momence, Ill., eight or ten miles west of the state line. Through this ledge of rock the channel must be lowered from five to seven and a half feet to give the Kankakee the necessary fall from the state line. But this is not the only obstacle. Near Momence the river forms an island. For years a dam was maintained on each side of the island for water power. These two dams caused the water to back up to Indiana. The Illinois courts always protected the dam owners whenever the land owners of Indiana attempted to remove the dams. The Cass estate, representing 40,000 acres of overflowed land in Lake county, seeing no other way to reclaim it, purchased the dams, the island and the adjacent lands, with the object of removing them whenever the state should take hold of the ‘rock.’

“Meanwhile, the Chicago & Western Indiana railroad company built across the island. From the Cass estate the railroad company bought the east part of the island, which was converted into a picnic grounds, the Cass estate reserving the control of the dams, the ice privileges and riparian rights. The boating is excellent up the river for ten miles. During the picnic season the railroad runs excursions to Momence island nearly every day from Chicago, Terre Haute, Vincennes and other points. With the boats rented at 10 cents an hour and fare the company derives an annual revenue of \$30,000. Every winter an enormous quantity of ice is cut here and shipped to Chicago over this road, adding many thousand dollars to the income in the way of freight. To drain the Kanka-

kee marsh the dam of the main channel must be removed and rock blasted seven feet from one mile above the picnic grounds to five feet one-half mile below it. This will wipe out the picnic, boating and ice transportation, and the beautiful island will return to its ante-railroad condition, but the state of Indiana will gain \$8,000,000 in natural wealth. In order to avoid a constitutional obstacle, Mr. Shelby secured from the owners of the adjacent lands deeds to the channel of the river from the state line to the lower point of proposed improvement. These conveyances were made to the state of Indiana. At this stage Senator Howard took hold of the matter and the result was that when the legislature adjourned the state had accepted the channel of the Kankakee, in the state of Illinois, and \$40,000 was appropriated to remove the rock. This work was intrusted to three commissioners appointed by the governor.

"Prof. John L. Campbell of Wabash college, Isaac D. Dunn of Jasper county and J. B. Kimball of Noble were selected. Prof. Campbell's appointment was an excellent one, he being a practical engineer, besides having made an exhaustive survey of the whole region in 1882. William M. Whitten of South Bend was appointed engineer, and, with Prof. Campbell, made the survey and prepared specifications. This report was adopted May 17, 1889. The next step was to advertise for bids to remove the rock; but Commissioner Dunn, who had been appointed a committee on right of way, reported that the railroad company claimed, under the Illinois law, the riparian right to the middle of the stream on both sides of the river, thereby giving it a strip 100 feet wide across the river. Conceding the claim, the board requested the auditor and attorney general to secure from the railroad company trust deeds to the right of way for these 100 feet.

"Mr. Dunn was also appointed to negotiate with the company for the privilege of cutting through the one-hundred-foot strip.

But, having conceded this much to the company, the railroad officials now claimed that, having paid taxes on the estate for seven years, they also owned to the middle of the stream, which also gave them an interest to the dam and water privileges, and on June 28, 1890, the attorney of the road notified the commissioners that an attempt to dig under their bridge or remove the dam would be met with an injunction. Then followed a correspondence between the commissioners and the railroad officials until December, when the board decided that nothing more could be done, and they adjourned to await the action of the next legislature.

"But public opinion in the Kankakee country would not brook this delay; and, in order to satisfy Mr. Shelby and Senator Howard, who represented the dissatisfied citizens, a meeting was held yesterday. Messrs. Howard and Shelby and ex-Senator Youche of Lake presented the matter before the board in such a way that the commissioners receded from their position, and consented to advertise for bids. They had delayed this very action because the railroad company threatened an injunction suit, and had taken for granted that the railroad acquired priority of ownership to the channel, whereas Mr. Shelby proved to their satisfaction that the railroad acquired no right by paying taxes for seven years, for the good reason that the company paid taxes on the island last year for the first time. The company claimed that the Cass estate, in selling the island, did not reserve the riparian rights, when the fact is that riparian right is still vested in the Cass estate. Besides, Senator Howard yesterday showed that the commissioners had no right to suspend work upon a threat; that it was their duty to advertise and let the contract, that no injunction can be brought by the company till the contractors reach the railroad bridge, and Mr. Shelby satisfied them that when the bridge was reached nine-tenths of the work would be completed, and as for the dam, he had ordered it torn down. The

railroad company had stopped the destruction, but he had brought an action in the United States court to restrain the company from interfering with his dam. He promised to take care of all litigation. Therefore the board decided to authorize the state auditor to advertise for bids in the Sentinel and Journal for the state of Indiana and the Chicago Herald and Tribune for Illinois. Bids will be received in four sections or for the whole work.

"It was not through any wrong motive that the board delayed its work, but it feared to get into litigation and exceed its authority. If the railroad company had not interfered with the work the 'Momence rock' would perhaps before this time be no more.

"Out of the \$40,000 there remains \$37,428.27, the balance having been spent in survey, traveling expenses and clerk hire.

"Senator Howard has no interest in the improvement save that of a representative of his constituents. Mr. Youche represented the Lake county swamp angels and Mr. Shelby, who is vice-president of the G. R. & I. railroad, represents 20,000 acres in Lake. To him the state of Indiana owes the right of way of the channel and the destruction of the dams. It is safe to predict the work will be pushed from now on."

A little later the contract was let; and the Chicago Tribune, in an editorial, showed that even thus early the opposition first manifested by the Illinois authorities had disappeared, and the people of the metropolis of the west became aware that the removal of the limestone ledge in the Kankakee, and the drainage of the great valley, instead of being an injury would be of great benefit to the city of Chicago.

The article from the Tribune was as follows:

"The contract has been let for the removal of the rock ledge in the Kankakee river at Momence, and it is probable that within a year a million acres of fertile land, now spoiled with swamp water, will be open to the

sun and ready for the plow-share. While the stretch of naturally fertile land which is to be redeemed lies mostly within the limits of Indiana it is tributary to Chicago. The crops and garden truck raised there will come here, or to those Chicago outposts, such as Hammond, which this city has planted on Indiana soil.

"Some persons have claimed that the removal of this limestone uplift in the Kankakee would increase the spring floods in the Illinois and do damage, which the Chicago drainage trustees would be called on by the farmers to make good. It has been alleged also that immense quantities of silt would be carried down stream, be deposited in the Illinois river, and add to the difficulties of its navigation. But on consideration there seems no good reason to expect any of these misfortunes. All that the small rock cut will do practically will be to drain off the swamp water. It will be doing but on a far smaller scale what hundreds of miles of tile-drains and drainage canals are doing now in Illinois. It may add at the most an inch to the height of the flood waters of the Illinois river in spring. After the river has fallen and is within its banks the increased flow will be a good thing for navigation down to the Mississippi.

"As the 'cut' will be a rock one and cannot be enlarged by the flowing waters, there need be no more fears of silt than there will be from the waters of the Desplaines flowing through the deep rock cut which this city intends making southward from the Sag. There will be no marked addition to the quantity of sedimentary matter already carried down the Kankakee. If the cut were through alluvium it might be otherwise, but it is through rock and will remain stationary in size.

"Thus the carrying out of this great drainage scheme will be a positive benefit to Chicago and be attended with no drawbacks. It will enlarge its tributary territory and will not interfere with its drainage plans."

Mr. William M. Whitten, for many years the very competent surveyor of St. Joseph county and city engineer of South Bend, was the civil engineer in charge from the beginning to the end of the work at Momence. Two of the commissioners first appointed, however, resigned from the trying task. These were Professor Campbell and Mr. Dunn. The important work, however, had been accomplished. Franklin Landers, of Indianapolis, and John Brown, of Crown Point, Lake county, were appointed in their place; and these officials, with Mr. Kimball, originally appointed, carried the work to a successful conclusion. By an act approved March 6, 1891, the legislature gave greater freedom of action to the commissioners and engineer; while, by another act, approved March 4, 1893, an additional appropriation of twenty-five thousand dollars was made to complete the work.^a

The outlet at Momence thus secured, the drainage of the Kankakee under the general laws of the state was taken up and actively prosecuted, year after year, by the land owners in all the counties of the valley. The suggestion made by the French traveler Charlevoix, in his letter written, in 1721, from his camping place on Portage prairie, that the Kankakee river could with little trouble be cut into a straight canal,^a has been accomplished. The Kankakee has been cut into a straight, deep channel, effectually draining the valley from the source of the stream, at South Bend, through the counties of St. Joseph, Laporte and Starke; and the people are preparing to extend this magnificent drainage system through the remaining counties of Indiana and Illinois, down to the opening made through the rock at Momence. Land values, which before the cutting of the limestone ledge were so low as in many cases not to be equal to the small assessment for taxes, have steadily risen, until the drained and cultivated farms of the

valley are worth from fifty to seventy-five dollars an acre. The Kankakee valley is indeed rapidly becoming the "garden of Chicago," which it was at first called in derision; and it will at no distant time be the richest farming section in the state of Indiana.

Sec. 4.—GENERAL DRAINAGE.—The general laws under which the drainage of the Kankakee valley was undertaken and successfully prosecuted, after the removal of the rocky ledge at Momence, were enacted in 1881; that for proceedings in the circuit court, by an act approved April 8, 1881; and that for proceedings before the county commissioners, by an act approved April 21, 1881.^a This legislation which, with its several amendments made at almost every subsequent session of the legislature, has been productive of the utmost good to the state of Indiana. Our low lands have become dry and fertile, and malaria has been banished from our homes. The good name of the Hoosier state has, as a consequence, been established throughout the nation. To be a resident of Indiana has come to be associated with culture, refinement and happy homes. Our lands are the most fertile in the country; our highways are the dryest and most substantial; and the health of our people is the most satisfactory. To no cause are we more indebted for these blessings than to our drainage laws. These laws were reported to the legislature by the codification commission of 1881, and are said to have been drawn by the eminent jurist James S. Frazer, a member of the commission. By successive amendments and modifications of the original acts, we have come to have the simplest, most equitable and most satisfactory drainage laws. By the application of these laws every acre of farm lands in St. Joseph county and every mile of highway has been rendered dry and clean, and is far on the way to perfection. The application of the drainage

^a. Acts, 1891, p. 198; Acts, 1893, p. 328.

^a. For Charlevoix' letter, see Chap. 2, Subd. 5.

^a. Acts, 1881, pp. 397-422.

laws has done much for all Indiana, for no part more than for St. Joseph county.

VII. FARMERS' SOCIETIES AND FAIRS.

Sec. 1. — AGRICULTURAL SOCIETIES. — As early as January 22, 1829, the legislature of Indiana passed an act for the incorporation of agricultural societies.^a Afterwards, by an act approved February 7, 1835, provision was made for elections in counties and townships for the formation of such societies. Provisions were likewise made in said act for the creation of a state board of agriculture.^b Still another act, approved February 19, 1838, was passed for a more simple method of organizing agricultural societies.^c By the revised statutes of 1843, a codification of the best provisions of the three acts of 1829, 1835 and 1838, was effected.^d

The first attempt in this county to form an agricultural society was made under the act of 1835. On the first day of the May term of that year, being May 4, 1835, the board of county commissioners entered the following order:

“Ordered by the board that public notice be given that the citizens of the county of St. Joseph assemble at South Bend, on the last Saturday in the present month, to organize a county agricultural society, agreeable to the statute in such case made and provided.”

On the application of five freeholders of German township for the formation of a local society, as also provided for in the act of 1835, the board, on the same day, entered the following order:

“It is ordered that public notice be given for the citizens of German township to assemble at the school house in district No. 2, congressional township No. 38, for the purpose of organizing a township agricultural society, on the first Saturday in June, pur-

suant to the act of the general assembly of 1835.”

It does not appear that any township but German, the banner agricultural township of the county, made application for the formation of a society. Nor indeed was German itself, or even the county, ready to maintain an agricultural society. A township society was, however, established in Penn, in the next year, 1836. But the time was not yet ripe for the formation of agricultural societies.

Under the simpler provisions of the act of 1838, a successful meeting for the organization of an agricultural society was finally held in South Bend, June 12, 1841.^a The incorporators were among the most prominent of the early citizens of the county. Their names were as follows: George Sumption, David Hoover, Israel De Camp, Charles Sumption, Matthew B. Hammond, William S. Vail, Aaron M. Parker, Sr., John J. Deming, Evan Chalfant, Samuel Brooks, James Stuckey, Charles W. Pomeroy, Francis R. Tutt, Thomas P. Bulla, Tyra W. Bray, Hiram Doolittle, William Milliken, Samuel Witter, Thomas D. Baird, Charles M. Tutt, William H. Patteson, E. S. Sheffield, Joel Garst, Albert Monson, William Cosgrove, Samuel C. Sample, Elisha Egbert and John Gilmore.

This first agricultural society organized with the following officers: President, John J. Deming; vice-president, Thomas D. Baird; secretary, Tyra W. Bray; treasurer, Francis R. Tutt; directors, Thomas P. Bulla, George Sumption, Hiram Doolittle, M. B. Hammond, Jonathan A. Liston, Samuel Brooks and Israel De Camp.

The first and only fair conducted by this original organization was held on October 11, 1841. The premium list named twenty-three articles for which prizes were offered. Among them were: Best ten yards of jeans; best ten yards of flannel; best ten yards of linen; best sample of sewing silk; best cheese, not less than ten pounds; best beet

a. R. S., 1831, p. 67.

b. Acts, 1834, p. 87; R. S., 1838, p. 63.

c. R. S., 1838, p. 61.

d. R. S., 1843, p. 405.

a. Chapman's Hist. St. Joseph County, p. 561.

sugar, not less than ten pounds; best half acre of ruta-bagas; best five acres of tame grass; best cultivated farm, not less than thirty acres.

No further action seems to have been taken by the society until April 19, 1851, when a re-organization was effected, with the following officers: President, Powers Greene; vice presidents, Reuben Dunn and Gilman Towle; secretaries, Schuyler Colfax and George C. Merrifield; treasurer, William Miller. A constitution and by-laws reported by Mr. Colfax were adopted. The meeting then adjourned until May 17th, when Mr. Merrifield delivered an address upon the advantages of agricultural and horticultural societies. The membership was then reported to be one hundred and thirty-two. Mr. J. L. Jernegan was elected a delegate to attend the meeting of the state board of agriculture. Numerous other meetings were held during the summer and fall, at which valuable papers were read, followed by discussions of great interest. A very successful county fair was held in the court house yard on October 16, 1851.

The interest aroused in the pursuit of agriculture, horticulture and floriculture continued unabated for many years. In the fall of 1852 the fair was held at Mishawaka, the people of the town paying all the expenses. An excellent address was made at this meeting by the Hon. John B. Niles, of Laporte,

For the fair of 1853, two acres of ground on Washington street, in South Bend, three squares west of the court house, were leased. This property was afterwards purchased by the society; which continued with varying success to hold its meetings and annual fairs on this ground until 1857.

On March 15, 1858, the society was again re-organized, this time under provisions of an act of the general assembly for the encouragement of agriculture, approved February 17, 1852.^a At this meeting the following officers were chosen: President, John

Drulinger; vice-president, William F. Bulla; treasurer, William Miller; secretary, Milton W. Stokes; directors, Elmer Rose, George C. Merrifield, Jacob Snyder, John Kingery, Jacob Rush, Jeremiah White, John Smith, P. S. Stambaugh, E. M. Irvin, Thomas R. Tutt, John F. Ulery and John Moore.

On this re-organization, the location of the fair grounds was again changed. The two-acre tract on West Washington street was sold; and, in its place, the company, on April 13, 1858, purchased about seven acres and a half on Portage avenue, taken off the south side of lot one hundred and twelve, of the state bank's first addition of outlots to South Bend.

The first fair on the new grounds was held on September 28, 29 and 30, 1858. The society now entered upon a period of prosperity which continued for ten or twelve years, after which a state of indifference again intervened. The last annual fair was held September 16, 17, 18, 19 and 20, 1872. Even before that time, that is, on December 16, 1871, the grounds had been platted and offered for sale as the St. Joseph County Agricultural Society's Addition to the City of South Bend. During the war these fair grounds were occupied as a military camp for quartering and organizing troops.

Some zealous spirits still continued to keep up an agricultural society. In 1873 an exhibition was held in connection with the northern Indiana fair; and efforts were made to continue annual exhibitions on grounds west of South Bend, on Division street, being lots five, six and seven of Harper & Ruckman's survey. These lots were ten acres each, and the grounds were ample. The exhibits shown on those lots were interesting and of value to the people of the county; but the enterprise was not successful financially.

By an act of the legislature, in force March 18, 1873,^a boards of county commissioners were authorized, on petition of the majority of the voters of any county, to invest not to

a. 1 R. S., 1852, p. 98; 1 Gavin and Hord, p. 60.

a. Acts, 1873, p. 118.

exceed five thousand dollars in the purchase of real estate to be used for the purposes of agricultural and horticultural fairs. On April 20, 1881, at a special meeting of the board of county commissioners of St. Joseph county, a petition such as required by the statute was filed with the board; and thereupon an order was entered for the purchase of forty acres of land on the north side of the St. Joseph river, between South Bend and Mishawaka, being the southeast quarter of the southeast quarter of section seven, township thirty-seven north, range three east, to be used for agricultural fairs.

On February 3, 1881, the Northern Indiana Agricultural Society was formed with the design to hold fairs on grounds to be purchased by the county, under the provisions of the act of 1873. It was a stock company, each share five dollars and the number of shares without limit; the purpose was to promote the interests of agriculture in northern Indiana.

The incorporators were among the strong men of the county, representing every township, and were as follows: William Miller, Portage; Robert M. Savidg, Clay; Edward A. Metzger, Harris; Ashbury Lindley, Warren; Irwin Skinner, Portage; Dr. J. R. Brown, Greene; William O. Jackson, German; Peter N. Huff, Portage; William H. Stull, Center; J. H. Eberhart, Penn; William D. Rockhill, Portage; Elias Rupel, Center; Thomas B. Chalfant, Clay; Alexander H. Price, Liberty; Samuel Bowman, Center; Basil Rupel, Center; Aaron Jones, Penn; Charles G. Towle, Penn; Christian Holler, Warren; C. L. Stiles, Penn; Nathaniel Frame, Portage; George W. Shade, Center; Henry Studebaker, Penn; George W. Locke, German; D. F. Miller, German; Henry Barth, Portage; John R. Shank, Penn; Seth Hammond, Greene; Asa Knott, Greene; William C. Jackson, German; John C. Ulery, Greene; James R. Miller, German; Charles Frank, Madison; Chauncey N. Fassett, Portage; D. B. Jewell, Madison; W. W. Butterworth, Penn; Edward A. Jernegan, Penn;

J. M. Wommer, Penn; Joseph Miller, Penn; Studebaker, Portage; John M. Studebaker, John Jackson, Center; Isaac N. Miller, Olive; F. R. Eberhart, Penn; A. Eberhart, Penn; Christian M. Wenger, Portage; Clement Portage; Peter E. Studebaker, Portage; Jacob F. Studebaker, Portage.

The Northern Indiana Agricultural Society, with its splendid list of incorporators, its free grounds and the fresh enthusiasm infused into agricultural interests in this and the neighboring counties, continued to flourish and to furnish exhibitions of a very high order for many years. It was not until the World's Fair at Chicago, in 1892 and 1893, with its extraordinary exhibits from every part of the earth, that the people began to show a want of interest in the simpler and more homelike display of our local fair. Nevertheless it is good to remember how much pleasure and profit all our people received from those fine exhibitions on the county grounds between South Bend and Mishawaka. The time will yet come when the memories of those days will inspire the people to renew, at least for a time, those annual farmers' reunions.

The fortunes of the society having declined, by reason of the indifference of the people and the consequent falling off of the attendance at the fairs, a new society was formed, March 31, 1899, to take over the property, and, if possible, to revive interest. The old name, the "St. Joseph County Agricultural Society," was restored; and the incorporators were: Charles G. Towle, William D. Rockhill, Abram W. Byers, Ashbury Lindley, Daniel W. Beall, William O. Jackson, John B. Witwer, W. C. Jackson, Thomas H. Jackson, Adam W. Shidler, Edward A. Metzger and Samuel Bowman.

The end had come, however, and on June 4, 1903, the St. Joseph County Agricultural Society made a formal surrender of the county grounds, which were accepted by the board of commissioners. With this surrender the history of agricultural societies in

St. Joseph county came to a close. On April 3, 1906, the grounds were placed in the custody of the city of South Bend, to be used as a public park, as related in chapter ninth of this work.^a The name Pottawatomie was given to the park by the city.

It has been matter of regret that the county fairs should be discontinued; and there are already indications that renewed efforts will be made at no distant day to have those profitable and enjoyable annual exhibitions again provided for the people of the county. If county fairs are again instituted, as they ought to be, care should be taken to have them strictly agricultural and horticultural. Mechanical and other exhibits should be encouraged only in so far as they concern the cultivation of the land and the improvement of live stock, crops and other products of the soil. In the past the tendency ran too greatly to mere exhibitions, as such, and the farmer and gardener naturally lost interest. The fair became a city show rather than a farmer's exhibition. Even horse racing should be only sparingly admitted. The continued success of our horticultural society shows where our county fairs failed. Let the fair be an exhibition of the products of the farm and the garden, including of course so much machinery, vehicles and implements as relate to these products. If the farmer or the gardener wishes to go to other shows he can do so; but let the fair be his own show, the annual reunion where he and his friends may come together.

Sec. 2.—HAILSTORM, FLOOD AND TORNADO. —The county fair held in 1886 was marked by one of the few disastrous natural phenomena that have visited this county. The older inhabitants tell us of destructive floods that occurred on the St. Joseph river, one on January 15, 1847, and one on June 17, 1855. We have also seen, in chapter seventh of this history,^b that this locality was visited, on August 9, 1865, by a tornado from the south-

west, which did much damage in the city of South Bend, unroofing the court house, blowing down one bent of the old Water street bridge, and overturning and injuring many buildings. Except the floods of 1847 and 1855 and the tornado of 1865, there is no record of any excessively violent action of the elements within the limits of the county until the great hailstorm of 1886.

About fifteen minutes after two o'clock on the afternoon of Wednesday, September 22, 1886, this hailstorm, coming from a point a little east of north, broke over the north central part of St. Joseph county. In less than five minutes, the ground was white with hailstones from the size of a walnut to that of a hen's egg, and even larger. Some picked up off the streets in South Bend measured eleven inches in circumference. Window glass was broken in about every house in South Bend. On the county fair grounds, horses were struck, and ran, with buggies, wagons and carriages, in every direction. The people, crowded all over the grounds, were wild with fright; but, happily, no one was seriously injured. In the region of the storm, the chief loss suffered was the destruction of window glass. It is doubtful whether a single window on the north side of any building was left without broken panes of glass. The Oliver Chilled Plow works and the Studebaker works, each, suffered a loss of from ten to twelve thousand lights. The loss of the churches was very great, especially in the destruction of stained glass. The Reformed church, First M. E. church, First Presbyterian church and St. Joseph's Catholic church lost the stained glass on the north sides of the buildings. The damage to glass at Notre Dame was estimated at a thousand dollars. A peculiar accident was the knocking of the hour hand off the face of the city clock.

The storm originated just north of Niles, was three miles in width and extended for about seven miles south of the city of South Bend. The largest stones fell over the ter-

a. Chap. 9, Subd. 3, Sec. 4.

b. Chap. 7, Subd. 2, Sec. 2.

ritory from Notre Dame and St. Mary's to points just south of South Bend. The form of the stones that fell in the city and on the fair grounds was spherical; further south the stones were jagged. At either side of the line of hail there was a heavy fall of rain. The duration of the storm, in any one place, was about seven minutes.

Comparing the hailstorm of 1886 with the tornado of 1865, it is noticeable that they proceeded from nearly opposite directions,—the tornado up the Kankakee valley, from the southwest; and the hailstorm from a little east of north.

Sec. 3.—HORTICULTURAL SOCIETY.—On November 9, 1892, the St. Joseph County Horticultural Society was formed, on petition to the State Horticultural Society, and by action of that body, as provided by statute. The membership is without limit, new members being admitted at any regular meeting on the vote of a majority of the society. Honorary members are also provided for. The meetings of this society are to a great extent of a social character and have been of exceeding interest to the members. A feature of the membership is that the wives of members are admitted, without payment of dues, to the full privileges of the society. Much good has accrued to the fruit interests of the county, by reason of the discussions and deliberations, as well as by the exhibitions, of this very successful society.

Sec. 4.—FARMERS' FIRE INSURANCE COMPANY.—On August 25, 1877, the Farmers' Mutual Fire Insurance Company, of St. Joseph county, was organized. The principle on which the society proposed to act was that all losses should be paid by a pro rata assessment on all the members. The plan has proved successful, and the farmers of the county have secured insurance for their property at actual cost. The membership has always included the best farmers of the county. The original incorporators of the company were:

Samuel Bowman, Aaron Jones, William D. Rockhill, George H. Stover (Center township), Adam M. Shidler, Basil Rupel, Elias Rupel, Asa Knott, Christian Holler, Louis De Coudres, Neely Frame, Thomas B. Chalfant, William O. Jackson, Edwin M. Irvin and James R. Miller.

Sec. 5.—THE GRANGE, FARMERS' INSTITUTES, ETC.—A society that has been of the greatest good to St. Joseph county farmers, by reason of its perfect organization and the close friendship which it secures among its members, is the Grange. St. Joseph Valley Grange, No. 584, has been most successful from the beginning, and its members have been among the most influential in the order. In the person of Aaron Jones, the local organization has frequently furnished the master for the Indiana State Grange; and for several years Mr. Jones was the most efficient master of the National Grange. Indeed, it was chiefly through him that the farmers of the United States have become a living force in shaping the internal policy of the nation. The present officers of the St. Joseph Valley Grange are: Master, John Layton; secretary, Mrs. William Golden; treasurer, Carrie E. Webster. The officers of Pomona Grange, No. 31, are: Master, L. P. Robertson; secretary, Maud Gray; treasurer, Mrs. Samuel Bowman.

For many years the citizens of St. Joseph county have enjoyed the pleasures and advantages of yearly Farmers' Institutes, in which a full week is taken up in valuable instruction and discussion, during the fall or winter season. These institutes have been schools, in which study and recreation have been combined in an eminent degree. Distinguished lecturers from Purdue University and other seats of learning are always provided. The institutes at which Governor and Mrs. James A. Mount were present are treasured in the memory of all the people of the county.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE TOWNSHIPS.

In chapter fifth, subdivision second, we have seen that St. Joseph county proper, as originally formed, was thirty miles square; and that, in addition, there was attached to the county for governmental purposes all the unorganized territory west to the Illinois line, including the present counties of Laporte, Porter and Lake, as well as parts of Marshall and Starke. Afterwards all unorganized territory to the south was added for jurisdictional purposes. The area of the county proper included ranges one and two west, and one, two and three east, and extended thirty miles south of the Michigan line.

I. THE FIRST DIVISION OF THE COUNTY INTO TOWNSHIPS.

On November 25, 1830, the county board, then styled the board of justices, divided the whole county, including the attached territory, into four townships, as follows:

Sec. 1.—MICHIGAN TOWNSHIP.—The attached territory on the west, that is, all west of the line dividing ranges two and three west, and extending to the Illinois state line, was called Michigan township. This township included the territory now embraced within the western part of Laporte county and all of Porter and Lake counties. It was called Michigan township from the circumstance that it was bounded on the north by Lake Michigan.

Sec. 2.—DESCHEMIN TOWNSHIP.—The first township east of Michigan embraced ranges one and two west, and was called Deschemin.

Range two west is now within Laporte county, as is also the west half of range one west. A part of the east half of range one west is all of Deschemin township that still remains in St. Joseph county. The name of the township was, no doubt, a corruption of the French *Du Chemin*, by which name Hudson lake was formerly known. This lake was in the heart of the township. As we have seen, the name first given to Hudson lake—*Du Chemin—Of the Road*, was no doubt taken from the great east and west road, long known as the “Great Sauk Trail,” and afterwards as the Detroit and Chicago, or simply the Chicago road.^a

Sec. 3.—GERMAN TOWNSHIP.—East of Deschemin was German township, embracing range one east and also the west half of range two east, and extending consequently nine miles east of the second principal meridian. The township therefore included the eastern part of the present township of Olive, all of Warren, the western part of German and Portage, the greater part of Greene and Liberty, the west part of Union and the east part of Lincoln. It is said to have been named from some German settlers then residing within its boundaries.

Sec. 4.—PORTAGE TOWNSHIP.—All of the county east of the middle line of range two east was called Portage township. The east boundary of the county at that time was the east line of range three, so that Portage township was a range and a half in width, the same as German. It included the eastern

a. See Chap. 2, Subd. 5; also Chap. 5, Subd. 4.

parts of the present townships of German, Portage and Union, all of Clay and Center and the western parts of Harris, Penn and Madison. The township was named from the old portage extending through the township from the St. Joseph to the Kankakee.

II. SECOND DIVISION INTO TOWNSHIPS.

On September 7, 1831, being the first meeting of our first board of county commissioners, the board repealed and set aside the order of the board of justices, made November 25, 1830, and ordered that the county be divided into three townships, as follows:

Sec. 1.—PORTAGE TOWNSHIP.—The order of the county commissioners was that Portage township should embrace ranges two and three east. The township included the present townships of German, Clay, Portage, Center and Union; the east parts of Greene and Liberty; and the west parts of Harris, Penn and Madison,—being about one-half the area of the present county. It included, besides, a part of Marshall county.

Sec. 2.—CENTER TOWNSHIP.—Ranges one east and one west were by the same order formed into the township of Center. This township embraced all of the present county of St. Joseph west of the east line of Warren township, and nearly all of the east tier of townships of the present county of Laporte, besides parts of Marshall and Starke counties.

Sec. 3.—HIGHLAND TOWNSHIP.—All the territory west of range number one west was formed into a township which was called Highland. No part of this township was within the present limits of St. Joseph county. The township, no doubt, received its name from the high lands of rolling prairie.

Sec. 4.—COMMISSIONERS' DISTRICTS.—In the same order the county board provided that Portage township should form the first county commissioners' district; Center township, the second district; and Highland township, the third district.

III. THIRD DIVISION INTO TOWNSHIPS.

On January 9, 1832, the county of Laporte was organized, taking from St. Joseph county all territory west of the middle line of range number one west. On the 31st of the same month the legislature detached from Elkhart county and added to St. Joseph county the west half of range number four east.^a It therefore became necessary for the county board of St. Joseph county to make a third division of the county into townships. Accordingly, on May 6, 1832, it was ordered that the county be divided into three new townships, as follows:

Sec. 1.—PENN TOWNSHIP.—All that part of St. Joseph county lying east of the line dividing ranges two and three east was formed into a township called Penn. The township so formed embraced all the territory now included in the townships of Harris, Penn and Madison, and also the east parts of Clay, Portage, Center and Union.

Sec. 2.—PORTAGE TOWNSHIP.—By the same order range two east was formed into a township which was called Portage. This township included the territory embraced within the present township of German, besides parts of Clay, Portage, Greene, Center, Liberty and Union.

Sec. 3.—OLIVE TOWNSHIP.—All of the county lying west of range two east was constituted a township called Olive. This township included the territory embraced in the present townships of Warren, Olive and Lincoln, and parts of Greene and Liberty. The township was named after Olive Stanton Vail, wife of Charles Vail, who settled in the township in 1830.

Sec. 4.—COMMISSIONERS' DISTRICTS.—The board in the same order re-arranged the county commissioners' districts, as follows: The first district embraced all of the county east of range two east; the second district, all of the county within range two east; and the third, all of the county west of range two east. The first district, consequently, em-

a. See Chap. 5, Subd. 9, of this History.

braced all the territory of Penn township: the second, all of Portage; and the third, all of Olive. These townships have been very much changed since that time; but the county commissioners' districts have remained unchanged since the order so made by the county board, January 9, 1832.

IV. TWO LOST TOWNSHIPS.

Besides the townships of Michigan, Deschemin and Highland, which were lost to St. Joseph county on the west, we also lost two others; one on the south and one on the northeast.

Sec. 1.—PLYMOUTH.—On September 1, 1834, the county board ordered that all the territory of the county lying south of the north line of congressional township thirty-five north, should form a new township to be called Plymouth. The township so formed included the south parts of the present townships of Madison, Union and Liberty, and all of Lincoln. It also included so much of the present counties of Marshall and Starke as then formed a part of St. Joseph county.

In the order setting off the township the board provided for an election for the choice of two justices of the peace for said township, to be held on the 27th of September, 1834. On October 13th of the same year the election so held was contested before the board; when the contest was sustained and a new election ordered. Both elections were held "at Grove Pomeroy's, in said town of Plymouth, in St. Joseph county." Mr. Pomeroy was himself appointed inspector of election until the ensuing April election. At the May term, 1835, of the county board, Samuel D. Tabor was "allowed the sum of one dollar and a half for making a return of the election of Plymouth township."

The town of Plymouth, now the county seat of Marshall county, was situated in and gave its name to the township of Plymouth. We have already seen that the plat of this town was filed and recorded in the office of the re-

corder of St. Joseph county, in October, 1834.^a The commissioners' records show that on December 7, 1835, there was recorded therein the description and plat of the "survey of the state road from Goshen in Elkhart county, to Plymouth, in St. Joseph county."

By an act of the legislature approved February 7, 1835, the north boundary of Marshall county was defined to be the north line of congressional township thirty-four, leaving all of township thirty-five in St. Joseph county. This congressional township, as we have seen, was included in the civil township of Plymouth. The act of February 7, 1835, does not seem to have been intended as completing the organization of Marshall county; but by an act passed at the next session of the legislature, February 4, 1836, the county was finally organized, and the north boundary of the county was extended to the middle line of congressional township thirty-five, thus leaving in St. Joseph county only so much of Plymouth township as was included in the north half of congressional township thirty-five.^b The consequence was that Plymouth, as a township of St. Joseph county, ceased to exist, the territory still remaining being attached to the adjacent townships of the county, as their boundaries were defined by successive orders of the board of county commissioners.

Sec. 2.—WASHINGTON.—But few of the people of St. Joseph county are aware that Washington was the name of a township once provided for by order of our county board. This township was located in the southeast corner of the county, and embraced all of fractional congressional township thirty-eight that lies east of the west line of sections eight, seventeen, twenty, twenty-nine and thirty-two, township thirty-eight north, range three east. It included the territory of the present township of Harris, the north part of Penn and the east part of Clay.

^a. See Chap. 5, Subd. 4.

See Chap. 5, Subd. 9.

The order for the formation of the township was made May 4, 1835; and in the same order it was provided that all elections in the township should be held at the house of Jonathan Hartsell. It does not appear, however, that any election took place in Washington township; and the order for the formation of the township was itself expunged from the record of the board, for the reason, no doubt, that the action taken was not favored by a majority of the people affected. During the next year, as we shall see, a smaller township, that of Harris, was formed out of a part of the same territory, omitting the south tier of sections proposed for Washington township.

V. THE PRESENT TOWNSHIPS.

Considering only the territory now within the limits of St. Joseph county, the original townships, as formed by order of the county board, May 6, 1832, were Penn. Portage and Olive. Portage then embraced the territory covered by range two east: Penn. all east of that range; and Olive, all west of it.

The three county commissioners' districts coincided with the same descriptions; and, while the townships have changed very much since that time, the commissioners' districts have, as already said, remained unchanged to this day.

Our thirteen civil townships, as now constituted, have resulted from the subdivisions made in the three original townships of Penn. Portage and Olive, as ordered from time to time by the board of county commissioners.

Sec. 1.—GERMAN.—On January 6, 1834, the township of German was formed, embracing all of congressional fractional township thirty-eight north, range two east, together with one tier of sections on the west, taken out of range one east. This township, therefore, the first to be carved out of the original three townships, was taken almost wholly out of Portage township, only the western tier of sections coming out of Olive. The territory of the township is now included in the pres-

ent township of German, the west part of Clay and the east part of Warren.

By an order of the county board for the formation of Warren township, November 5, 1838, the tier of sections on the west of German was attached to Warren; and by a like order for the formation of Clay township, May 5, 1840, that part of German east of the St. Joseph river was attached to Clay. These changes left German township of the dimensions which it still retains; namely, all of congressional fractional township thirty-eight north, range two east, which lies west of the St. Joseph river. The first German township, that formed by order of the board of justices, November 25, 1830, was a much more extensive territory, embracing range one east and the west half of range two east. Doubtless the name of the new and smaller township was given with a wish to retain the favored name given to the first township.

German township is by nature one of the most favored townships in the county; and the locality is undoubtedly the most famous in our early history. Portage Prairie covers the greater part of the township; and this prairie constitutes one of the finest farming districts in the world. The township is purely an agricultural one; and is said to be the wealthiest township per capita in Indiana.

Historically the township is most interesting. The famous portage between the St. Joseph and the Kankakee crosses this and Portage township. Over this portage the commerce between the lakes and the Mississippi passed for ages. Over this went Marquette, La Salle and Charlevoix. Here, near the spot yet known as Mount Pleasant, was once the great Miami village, where, in 1681 La Salle made his celebrated treaty with the Miami tribe. Here, at the junction of the portage with the St. Joseph river, was once the ambitious county seat of St. Joseph county, called also St. Joseph. A little further up on the river was the little and, for a time, more important town of Portage, where there was a ferry

across the river, and where the over sanguine projectors felt sure that a great town must grow up. But the Miami village, Mount Pleasant, St. Joseph and Portage have all passed, leaving not a vestige of their former urban life. Riverview cemetery almost reaches the site of La Salle's landing, and extends out, as if in sympathy with the dead towns of St. Joseph and Portage. A little lower down the stream, is the new and beautiful county asylum, for the poor and helpless, lately erected in close proximity to those historic scenes and surroundings.

That the old portage is in German township, that the first county seat was there and that its prairies are among the finest farm lands in the world, is quite enough to enable us to understand why this should be the first township to be carved out of the original three. From the nature of things, such a locality must have attracted settlers in the very beginning. William Brookfield, our first surveyor, and the man who laid out our first and our second county seat, came in 1827. In chapter fourth, subdivision fourth, we have already given the names of some of the other settlers of this township, from 1827 to 1833.

The first church erected was a brick building still standing on section eighteen, township thirty-eight range two east. It is German Baptist, and was erected in 1851. But church services were held at a much earlier date. The first pastor was Elder David Miller, who organized a congregation in 1831. Aaron Miller was also a minister of the church.

John Martindale, a minister of the Christian church, and Robert Martindale, his brother, a minister of the Baptist church, were also religious teachers in the early history of the county, preaching and holding services in school-houses and private homes.

A Methodist church, erected in 1854, passed to the Baptist church, and is still occupied by that church. Elder Campbell was the first minister to hold services in the church.

This church is located in the southwest corner of section fifteen. Mr. Josiah G. Keltner has been an active member of this church, and the membership has been steady and continuous from the beginning.

There is a Universalist church on section thirty-two. The congregation was organized in 1858. The first pastor was the Rev. Jacob Merrifield.

The first school house in the township was built at Mount Pleasant; and schools have been maintained ever since by this intelligent community; from those conducted in the simple log school house of the first settlers to the comfortable edifices of the present day. The census of the township, for 1890, showed five hundred and thirteen inhabitants. This population had increased, in 1900, to five hundred and thirty-six.

The record of German township, save in the efforts to build up towns, has been that of a prosperous community. This prosperity has been purely agricultural. The people of the township have accepted and believed in the truth, that there is no more happy or useful life than that of the contented farmer who has reached comfortable conditions. This is the ideal life; and such rural communities are the security of the strength and stability of our free institutions.

Sec. 2.—GREENE.—The second township to be carved out of the original three was Greene, which was formed January 4, 1836. The following were the boundaries of the township as then constituted: Commencing at the southeast corner of section one, township thirty-six, range two east; thence west to middle of section three, same township and range; thence north to the north line of section twenty-seven, township thirty-seven, range two east; thence west to the Kankakee river; thence with the Kankakee to the LaPorte county line; thence south to the south line of congressional township thirty-five; thence east to the east line of section thirty-six, township thirty-five, range two east; thence north to the point of beginning. This

territory included the present townships of Greene, Liberty and Lincoln; also the west part of Union and the southwest part of Center, besides the northwest part of what is now Marshall county, but which at the time was still in St. Joseph county.

By the act of February 4, 1836, fixing the northern boundary of Marshall county, the south line of Greene township was made to coincide with the present south boundary of St. Joseph county, as far to the east as the township then extended.

On March 6, 1837, by the order of the county board in forming the township of Union, all of the territory east of the present township of Liberty and south of the present township of Center was taken from Greene and attached to Union.

By the order of the county board, made May 2, 1837, the township of Liberty was formed. In this order the south line of Greene was fixed as at present, that is, the middle line of congressional township thirty-six.

Finally, by the order of May 6, 1840, forming Center township, the east line of Greene was fixed as at present, to-wit, the middle line of range two east.

By orders of the board of county commissioners, made September 8, 1841, July 1, 1843 and June 6, 1844, various slight changes were made in the boundaries of the townships of Greene, Olive and Warren, resulting, however, in leaving the Kankakee river as the boundary of Greene on the northwest, as fixed by the order of January 4, 1836, when the township was first formed. But after the drainage of the valley and the drying up of the Kankakee along this boundary, it was found that the great ditch, which was cut for the purpose of making that drainage, would be a more suitable division line between the townships than the winding line of the dried up river bed. Accordingly, on June 20, 1898, the commissioners made the following order:

"The board having under consideration

the changing of the boundary lines between the townships of Olive, Warren and Greene, made necessary by private individuals causing a large ditch [The Miller Ditch] to be dug through the Kankakee marsh, thus drying up the Kankakee river which has been the boundary line between said townships, find that it would be of public interest and benefit that the old lines be vacated, and that the middle line of said ditch, as now established and dug, shall be the dividing line between said townships, from and after this date."

The great ditch which was thus made the boundary between the township of Greene, on the one side, and the townships of Olive and Warren on the other follows closely the general line of the Kankakee river, whose place it has taken both as a water-course and as a boundary.

The Kankakee river extends along all of the northwest side of the township; while in the northeast part is Sumption prairie, one of the richest and most beautiful of the prairies of St. Joseph county. The township is further remarkable by reason of its numerous lakes,—Goose lake, Duck lake, Wharton lake, Bolin lake,—and many others. The township has always been purely an agricultural one.

In the reminiscences of Mr. Daniel Greene, found in chapter fourth, subdivision fifth, of this history, a full and interesting account of the early settlement of this township is given. The beauty and fertility of Sumption prairie made this one of the sections of the county to which settlers were first attracted. The prairie was named from George Sumption who settled upon it in April, 1830; while the township received its name from the Greene family. Daniel Greene's father, John Greene, first visited northern Indiana, on horseback, in 1830. He continued his explorations of Indiana and southern Michigan in 1831; and, finally, in 1832, the family, with many kinfolk and friends from Greene county, Ohio, made their removal to Sump-

tion prairie, which was to be their permanent home. Samuel Leeper, in company with his father-in-law, Joseph Rohrer, first came to the St. Joseph valley in August, 1829. In March, 1830, he brought his family here from Ohio. They located near McCartney's creek, just north of the crossing of the Michigan road, where David R. Leeper was born, January 12, 1832. They subsequently removed to a point on Sumption prairie road about three miles south of South Bend. Daniel Greene married Mr. Samuel Leeper's daughter. Those early settlers seemed to give character to the population of the township; and the inhabitants of that beautiful section of the county have to this day stood breast to breast with the most intelligent and progressive of our citizens. It is an ideal farming community; and what has been said in this respect of German township is true also of Greene.

The Methodist church was the first to be established in the township. This was in 1832, under the Rev. Nehemiah B. Griffith.^a As in German township, the services were for a long time conducted in private houses and in the log school houses. In 1841 a church edifice was erected. Numerous zealous ministers have served the worthy members of that church from the date of its first organization by Mr. Griffith, in 1832, until the present time. Among them are the Reverend James Armstrong, R. T. Robinson, G. M. Beswick, Richard Hargrave, Warren Griffith, Elias Cook, Mr. Moore, J. S. Donelson, Hiram Ball, Thomas Hackney, Albion Fellows, P. H. Bradley, John Mahon, George Guion, A. Byers, A. Hayes, Jesse Hill, J. H. Claypool, John E. Newhouse, E. W. Lowhouse, J. J. Hines, J. Robertson, B. H. Bradberry, Reuben Saunders, Francis Cox, O. H. Beebe. In 1865 the society built a new and commo-

^a Mr. Daniel Greene, whose interesting reminiscences are given in Chap. 4, Subd. 6, of this work, says that George Baker, father of Adam S. and George W. Baker, was instrumental in establishing this first Methodist church in Greene township, and that he there organized the first Sunday school south of South Bend.

dious church, thirty-six by fifty-five feet in dimensions, with basement.

In 1836, the Rev. Alfred Bryant, of South Bend, organized the first Presbyterian church in Greene township. Other ministers have been the Reverend Messrs. Tombley, Reeves and Brown. The latter was a chaplain in the Civil war. The first members of this church were John McCullough and his family and Mr. and Mrs. Hammond. Members of the Greene family and others soon after joined. The original church was built in 1838. Previous to that date services were held in a school house on the site now occupied by the church, on the farm of Mr. McCullough.

On February 22, 1846, Elders Samuel Miller and Peter Hummer organized a Baptist society. Other ministers have been Elders McDonald, Hastings, Hitchcock, Miller, Craft, Vaughn and Finch. The society, like others, at first occupied a school house; but in 1852 they took measures for the erection of a church, which was completed in 1855.

The German Baptists, known also as Dunkards, whose purpose is to live the simple, primitive life of the early Christians, erected at an early day, what is usually called the Oak Grove church. One of the earliest ministers of this church was Mr. Whitmer.

In 1868, the Rev. James Ferris organized the Adventist church. This society has one of the finest brick churches in the township.

A society was also established which built a church in the southeast part of the township, known as Maple Grove church. This society was afterwards removed to Olive Branch, in Union township, where, in 1878, they erected a beautiful little church which the society still occupies.

A society of the Evangelical church was at an early date also organized in the township.

As might be expected from the character of the good people of the township, not only were churches provided for, but also schools.

The first school house in the township was erected in 1832. There were then neither special nor common school funds available; and the people came together and built the simple log structure, with its puncheon floor and clapboard roof. To keep up the schools of those early days the people voluntarily taxed themselves for the necessary funds. Among the early teachers were Messrs. Holloway, Rohn, Dwindle, and Miss Greene. By the United States census of 1900, the population of Greene township was seven hundred and seventy-two.

Sec. 3.—HARRIS.—In subdivision fourth of this chapter, it is shown that the township of Washington was formed in the southeast corner of St. Joseph county, by order of the county board, made May 4, 1835. This order was canceled soon after it was made; but a few months later, on January 5, 1836, the township of Harris was formed in the same locality, but embracing less territory. The boundaries of Harris township, as formed by the last mentioned order were as follows: Commencing at the northwest corner of section eight, township thirty-eight, range three east; thence south to the southwest corner of section twenty-nine, same township and range; thence east to the county line; thence north to the state line; thence east to the place of beginning.

By an order made May 5, 1840, the county board, in forming Clay township, detached a section and a half in width, east and west, off the west side of Harris and attached the same to Clay. On December 7, 1842, another half section in width, east and west, was detached from Harris and added to Clay. By these two orders Harris was reduced to its present dimensions, to-wit: Beginning on the north boundary of the state, at the northwest corner of fractional section ten, township thirty-eight north, range three east; thence south to the southwest corner of section twenty-seven, same township and range; thence east to the line dividing St. Joseph and Elkhart counties; thence north to the

north boundary of the state; thence west to the beginning.

Harris resembles Greene township in one particular: it contains one of the finest upland prairies in the county, and it also contains a large area of lowland. There is, however, no river in or near Harris, as there is in Greene; but a sluggish stream, known as Sheffield creek farther down, formerly led through the marsh land to the St. Joseph river. This stream has been converted into a great state ditch; and the lowlands have become nearly as valuable as the uplands of Harris prairie.

The prairie and the township both received their name from Jacob Harris, who settled in the township in 1830. In the same year or the year previous came the Baldwins, David and Josephus. Samuel Bell came with his father-in-law, Jacob Harris. During the same year, 1830, came Adam Miller, a Baptist preacher; also Adam Ringle. Other very early settlers were: Joseph Buell, Henry Augustine, Jacob Meyer, Mr. Hartzell, Robert Kennedy, David Ringle and his sons Samuel and Levi, Arbogast Zaehle, W. and E. M. Irvin and James Lowry.

The first school-house was of logs, and in dimensions fourteen by sixteen feet. A large fireplace, into which a big "back-log" was first placed, with a "fore-stick" supported on "and-irons" furnished the means of securing a roaring fire for the winter days. The chimney was of short sticks laid like the logs of the house, and, like the logs, chinked with mud made of stiff clay.

The first school master was Robert Kennedy. He was one of the good and strong men, not only of Harris township, but of St. Joseph county itself. He afterwards removed to St. Edward, Nebraska, and there bore the same high character that had distinguished him in Indiana.

The churches that have been organized in Harris township are the Presbyterian, the Evangelical and the Christian.

Harris township is distinguished by having

a thriving, though as yet quite small town, the town of Granger, situated on the Grand Trunk railroad. This road passes northeasterly from Mishawaka, through Penn and Harris townships. The next station beyond Granger is Edwardsburg, in the state of Michigan. The population of Harris township by the census of 1900, including the town of Granger, was four hundred and eighty-one. The township is next to the smallest in the county, having but a section of land more than Center. But, like Center, Harris makes up in quality for what it lacks in quantity.

Sec. 4.—UNION.—On March 6, 1837, by order of the county commissioners, the township of Union was formed, with the following boundaries: Beginning at the northwest corner of section twenty, township thirty-six, range two east; thence south to the county line; thence east to the southeast corner of section eighteen, township thirty-five, range three east; thence north to the northeast corner of section nineteen, township thirty-six, range three east; thence west to the place of beginning.

The following sections were afterwards taken from Madison and added to Union: sections seventeen, eight and five, and the west half of sections sixteen, nine and four, township thirty-five, north; also sections thirty-two and twenty-nine, the west half of section thirty-three, the southwest quarter of section twenty-eight and the south half of section twenty, township thirty-six, north,—all in range three, east.

The first settlements in this township were on the Michigan road lands. Elijah Lineback, John Henderson, John Gardner and the three Rectors, John, Jacob and Mark, came in 1833. Other very early settlers were: Hubbard Henderson, John, James and Eli Moon, James Annis, Michael Hupp, Abijah Mills, William H. Robertson, Henry Hardy, Esau Lamb, Daniel Glenn, Amos Heston, Henry Riddle, John Riddle, James Watson, John Shively, William Hughes, Joseph Morris, W. Nickelson, David Whiting and John Long.

Originally the soil of this township was not looked upon with favor by settlers. It was chiefly heavily timbered clay and marsh land; and while the soil was a strong and fertile one, yet not until after its drainage was the locality looked upon as desirable for farming. The drainage has now to a great extent been accomplished, and some of the choicest farms of the county are to be found in Union township.

There is but one town in the township, the village of Lakeville. This town was built up near the banks of Riddle's lake, just south of the town. Pleasant lake and numerous other pretty little lakes are in the vicinity. At first Lakeville depended upon the travel along the Michigan road and upon the slowly growing settlements in the vicinity; but after the building of the Vandalia railroad its prosperity was assured, and since the Wabash from Toledo to Chicago was built through the town, its growth has been rapid.

One mile north of Lakeville, in 1858, was built the first church in the township. This was built by the Methodist Episcopal Society, which had been organized about 1839.

The United Brethren Society was organized about the same time as the Methodist Episcopal. The meeting place of this society was about two miles north of Lakeville. In 1878, they removed to Olive Branch, and built the church of that name of which we have made mention in the sketch of Greene township.

The Advent Society erected a church in 1880. For a great number of years previous to this the society held meetings in the school-houses and in private houses. In the summer of 1862, they held protracted services in a tent erected for that purpose.

The Christian Society has a fine church in Lakeville.

In 1875, a Union church was erected in the northeast part of the township where different denominations hold services.

The first school-house in the township was erected in 1836. As in other parts of the county, this primitive house of learning was

built of logs, with split slabs laid together for a floor. The schools and school-houses of the present day are a credit to the intelligence of the enterprising and prosperous citizens of this township. The population of Union township by the census of 1900, including the town of Lakeville, was one thousand, seven hundred and thirty-three.

Sec. 5.—LIBERTY.—Liberty followed Union very closely. By order entered May 2, 1837, the county commissioners provided that the following territory should be embraced within a township to be known as Liberty: Beginning at the northwest corner of section twenty, township thirty-six, range two east; thence west to the Kankakee river; thence down the river to the Laporte county line; thence south to the Starke county line; thence east to the west line of Marshall county; thence north to the north line of Marshall county; thence east to the southeast corner of section eighteen, township thirty-five, range two east; thence north to the place of beginning.

The township continued as formed in 1837, until June 7, 1866, when all the territory south and west of the following line was taken from Liberty and formed into Lincoln township: Beginning at the intersection of the south line of Congressional township thirty-six with the Kankakee river; thence east to the southeast corner of section thirty-six, township thirty-six, range one west; thence south to the southwest corner of section six, township thirty-five, range one east; thence east to the southeast corner of section five, township thirty-five, range one east; thence south to the Marshall county line. Liberty township, as so limited, has continued unchanged ever since.

The region along the Kankakee is low land, but has been reclaimed. Several small lakes are found in other parts of the township, the lands in the vicinity having also been reclaimed by drainage. The uplands are in general exceedingly fertile; gravel and sandy

soils being found in certain localities. The lands were all heavily timbered.

Settlements were first made in 1833, near the site of the present town of North Liberty. Those who came that year were Jacob and John Earhart, John Kane and Isaac Townsend. Other early settlers were: Daniel Ross, Jesse Palmer, James Loring, John and David Rupel, Joseph Liggett, Amos Liggett, Levi and Benjamin Collins, Daniel Antrim, James P. Antrim, Samuel Loring, James Cole, Franklin Pearce, Jacob Dukeman, Samuel and S. G. Williams, Rheinhard Cripe and Mr. Waldsmith,—all worthy pioneers, who laid broad and deep the foundations of an industrious, well-ordered and prosperous community.

The town of North Liberty is located in the northwest part of the township; and is a growing and prosperous community, being situated at the junction of two of our great railroads, the Wabash and the Three "I," now operated by the Lake Shore Railroad Company. The town was laid out January 12, 1836, by Daniel Antrim and James P. Antrim. Tyra W. Bray, one of the early engineers of the county, who had been already county surveyor and who was afterwards county auditor, was the surveyor of the town plat. Some of the most enterprising business men of North Liberty have been the Houser Brothers, the Cole Brothers, Norman S. Miller and Houser & Knepp. The inhabitants of North Liberty and of the township generally, are chiefly of the sturdy Pennsylvania German stock.

The Methodist Society built the first church in the township. It was built in the town of North Liberty in 1851. A finer one was erected in its place in 1878. Some of the most eminent ministers of the church in North Liberty have been the Reverends A. Bradley, R. H. Saunders, Samuel T. Cooper, H. B. Ball, Nelson Green, James Green, Samuel Godfrey, J. C. Metzger, S. Lamb and C. W. Miller.

The Adventists erected a church in North

Liberty in 1868. The Episcopalians a little later. The German Baptists are amongst the most numerous of the Christian societies in the township. They have two churches in the country. The Evangelical denomination is also represented. Also the Lutheran and the United Brethren.

The usual first log school-house was erected in 1838. Since that date the schools have grown numerous and have improved as others in the county. A high-school was erected in the town of North Liberty in 1868.

Notwithstanding the prosperous town of North Liberty, with its fine railroad facilities; the township is nevertheless essentially an agricultural district. The farming community is an example of all that is characteristic of good American citizenship. But little litigation reaches the county seat. The people lead sober, industrious and contented lives. The nation is strong in the lives of such citizens. There is no happier life than that of the Liberty township farmer. According to the census of 1900, the population of the township, including that of the town of North Liberty, was one thousand, eight hundred and forty-three, North Liberty having five hundred and four.

Sec. 6.—WARREN.—The sixth township to be formed by subdivision of the original three,—Penn, Portage and Olive—was Warren, so called for Warren county, Ohio, from which many of the first inhabitants of the township emigrated. The order for the formation of this township was made November 5, 1838; the boundaries then provided for being as follows: Beginning on the state line, at the intersection of the range line between ranges one and two east; thence west to a point eighty rods west of the northwest corner of section ten, township thirty-eight, range one east; thence south to Grapevine creek; thence down the creek to the Kankakee river; thence up the Kankakee to the range line aforesaid; thence north to the beginning.

By the orders of September 8, 1841, July 1, 1843, June 6, 1844, and June 20, 1898,

already referred to in this chapter and subdivision, in the history of Greene township, certain minor changes were made, from time to time, in the western and southern boundaries of Warren township. The Grapevine creek was always too insignificant a stream to be made a township boundary; and the Kankakee itself, after the turning of the river into a great ditch, under operation of the drainage laws, was equally unsuited for the purpose.

The result of the various orders referred to was that the west boundary of the township remained as originally fixed, namely, the line running south from a point on the state line eighty rods west of the northwest corner of fractional section ten, township thirty-eight, range one east; except that, in section twenty-one, township thirty-seven, in the same range, for the second eighty rods from the north, the west boundary is removed one hundred and twenty rods west of the range line; and for the remainder of the distance south through that section, and south through section twenty-eight, and through the north half of section thirty-three, the same township and range, the boundary is removed one hundred and sixty rods west of the range line, while for the remainder of section thirty-three the boundary is placed two hundred and forty rods west of the said range line.

Along the southwestern border of Warren township, as we have seen in relation to Greene, the Kankakee proper, by reason of drainage, ceased to be the boundary; while the great ditch which absorbed the river was substituted for it also as the boundary between Warren and Greene.

The range line between ranges one and two east remains as the eastern boundary, and the state line as the north boundary of the township.

As we said, in chapter first, subdivision ninth, in considering the lakes of St. Joseph county, Warren township is distinguished by its numerous beautiful lakes, extending through the whole length of the township,

from the Michigan border to the waters of the Kankakee. Clear lake, of the extreme northern group, is partly in the state of Michigan. In the neighborhood are Mud lake, Deer lake, and Twin lakes. Further south is Augustine lake. Then, midway from north to south, come Woolverton, Bass and Chain lakes, the group being connected and known together as Chain lakes. Further south, and near the present township of Portage, is Fish or Chamberlain lake.

Chain lakes, one of the most beautiful clear water groups to be found anywhere, are drained by a branch of the Grapevine; through which the waters find their way into the Kankakee river. The lakes of Notre Dame are the only lakes in the county which rival the beauty and celebrity of Chain lakes. They were a favorite resort of the Indian long before the coming of the white man; and perhaps of the Mound Builder long before the coming of the Indian. They are located a little to the west of the famous Portage; and many of those who journeyed up the St. Joseph and down the Kankakee, or the reverse, often turned aside for rest and enjoyment on the margins of those clear, deep blue sheets of water. The chief prehistoric remains of the county have been found in this vicinity.

The quiet beauty of prairie, lake and woodland has ever characterized the landscape of Warren township. Fertility of soil and beauty of scenery are the portion of the favored inhabitants of this region.

The first settlement of the township dates from 1831, when Reynolds Dunn took up a farm to the northwest of Chain lakes. Other settlers who came very early were, W. W. Brick, Peter Wikoff, George Witter, John Kingery, Walter Field, Jesse Frame and his sons, William, Nathaniel, Cornelius, Isaac, David and Jesse, Nathaniel Wilson, Isaac W. Phillips, Harvey Buckles, James Dunbar, Joseph P. Jones, Joseph Price, Thomas Jackson, Calvin Myler, John Skiles, Theophilus Case, Jacob Mikesell, George Dunnahoo,

Abram Brown, Jonathan Platts, William Crum.

The inevitable log school house appeared as early as 1839, or sooner. As in other parts of the county, the school houses were at first voluntarily built by the combined labors of the hardy pioneers.

German Baptists were among the first to organize a religious society. They erected a church in 1879.

Three railroads cross the township from east to west,—the Lake Shore, the Grand Trunk, and the St. Joseph & Southern, now operated by the Michigan Central. Two interurban lines are also projected and partly constructed,—the Chicago, South Bend & Northern Indiana, formerly the Indiana railway; and the Chicago, Lake Shore & South Bend. In connection with these interurban lines, it is the design to establish pleasure resorts at Chain lakes.

There are two towns in Warren township. One of these is on the Lake Shore railroad, about seven miles west of South Bend; at first called Warren Center; afterwards, Sweet Home; and then Lindley. The railroad station is now called Lydick. The town is little more than a railroad station, having, however, a post office and some small business houses. The other town is Crum's Town, formerly Crum's Point, located on the Grand Trunk. It is also a small place, but of somewhat more importance than the town on the Lake Shore. The population of Warren township, including the town of Lindley and the town of Crum's Point, according to the census of 1900, was nine hundred and forty-four.

Sec. 7.—CLAY.—The township of Clay was formed May 5, 1840. The boundaries fixed by the order of that date were as follows: Beginning on the state line, at the intersection of the St. Joseph river; thence east to the middle point of the north line of fractional section nine, township thirty-eight, range three east; thence south through the middle of sections nine, sixteen, twenty-one, twenty-eight and thirty-three, to the south line of con-

gressional township thirty-eight; thence west to the St. Joseph river; thence down the river to the place of beginning.

By order of December 7, 1842, the east half of sections nine, sixteen, twenty-one, twenty-eight and thirty-three was taken from Harris and Penn townships and added to Clay; thus fixing the boundaries of Clay township as they have since remained, to-wit: Bounded on the north by the Michigan state line, on the east by the middle line of range three east, on the south by the south line of congressional township thirty-eight, and on the west by the St. Joseph river.

It will be noticed that the west part of Clay, being that part within range two east, and lying along the east side of the St. Joseph river, was formerly in German township; while the east part, that is, all within range three east, was in Harris and Penn townships.

The inhabitants are proud of the distinction that the township was named after Henry Clay, who at that date had reached the highest place in the estimation of the American people. The first settlements, which were amongst the earliest in the county, were near the St. Joseph river, in what was then Portage, afterwards German and now Clay township. Benjamin Potter, John Hague and William McCombs came in 1829. John and Peter Cripe and Thomas Longley came in 1830; Peter and Jacob Eaton in 1831. Other early settlers were: William Smith, John H. Smith, John C. Stutsman, Evan C. and Thomas B. Chalfant, James Stuckey, William F. and Thomas P. Bulla, Samuel Brooks, Jonathan Hardy, Francis Jennings, Joseph and Stephen Ulery, Oliver P. Stucky, Menzo Webster, David Sossaman, Jacob Chirhart, Gideon Draper and Ariel Euclid Drapier, John Eyler, Lambert McCombs and John Weaver. In the reminiscences taken from the paper of William D. Bulla, in chapter fourth, subdivision sixth, will be found very many interesting details of the life of Thomas P.

Bulla and other early settlers in Clay township.

Mr. William H. Drapier, now of Indianapolis, and famous as the author of the Indiana legislative Brevier Reports, but once a Clay township boy, the son of Ariel E. Drapier, draws attention to the circumstance that Gideon and Ariel E. Drapier, Thomas P. and William F. Bulla and Evan C. Chalfant, all settled on section thirty-one, township thirty-eight, range three east, the Drapiers taking up one quarter, Chalfant one quarter and each of the Bullas one quarter; and also to the further circumstance that Evan C. Chalfant married the sister of Thomas P. and William F. Bulla, while Thomas P. Bulla himself became the husband of Hannah, the daughter of Gideon Draper. It is further interesting to note that the Bulla family were closely related to the distinguished Julian family of Wayne county, Indiana, of which George W. Julian and Jacob B. Julian were perhaps the best known representatives. Both the Julian and the Bulla families were uncompromising opponents of African slavery.

The most interesting features of the landscape of Clay township consist of the scenery along the St. Joseph river and around the deep blue lakes of Notre Dame. The Michigan Central railroad, and the Southern Michigan railway (interurban) run through the township, from south to north. The roads, in general, are finely graveled; and excellent farms are found in every section. The soil is chiefly sand and gravel, there being but little clay or lowland within the limits of the township. The crops average well, and are more uniform from year to year than on stronger soils, failures being very rare; while the soil is easily worked, from March to December, in wet seasons as well as in dry. Corn, vegetables and fruit are most successfully cultivated.

The occupations of the people of Clay township are almost exclusively agricultural. Four miles north of South Bend, at a picturesque point on the river, there stood for many

years a flouring mill, called in later years the Sheffield mill, and more recently the Siders' mill. The water power was supplied by a small but constant stream usually known as Sheffield creek, which drained the low lands extending through the southwesterly section of this township and into the marshes in the south part of Harris, almost to the little town of Granger. But the drainage laws have changed all this. A "state ditch" has taken the place of the pretty stream, and the old mill has disappeared from its picturesque eminence on the banks of the St. Joseph. A little above the grist mill there was for a time a saw mill run by the same stream. A Mr. Weaver also had a carding and fulling mill there in an early day. Further up the little stream Stephen Ulery at one time ran a carding machine. On another small stream leading from the Notre Dame lakes to the St. Joseph, a Mr. Graham had a fulling mill. But all these "infant industries" have disappeared; and the people of the township, except alone those connected with the University of Notre Dame and St. Mary's Academy, are wholly devoted to farming.

On Saturday, July 6, 1901, there appeared in the South Bend Weekly Tribune, a paper on the *Passing of the Old Gray Mill*, which contained many facts of interest in relation to this ancient "Sheffield" or "Siders'" mill. The paper was undoubtedly from the pen of Mr. Richard H. Lyon, and ought to be preserved in this history of Clay township. Reminiscence and description will be found admirably intermingled in this charming story:

"For more than 60 years the old gray mill stood a picturesque object on the banks of the St. Joseph river four miles north of the city of South Bend. It was the most ancient and most interesting landmark of its kind in all this region. Gray it was in color originally, then it was painted red, but the storms of over half a century had beat against its antiquated clapboards until they had gone back to brown and gray. Of quaint style of architecture,

planted in a sequestered, romantic spot, it had all through its long existence filled a mission of usefulness, as well as attracting the attention of painter and poet, of historian and romancer, of the curio fiend and the lover of the beautiful in nature.

"For more than a mile past the site of the old mill the river pursues a straight course and its current sweeps smoothly along, bright, sparkling, never changing. Winding gracefully through a wild glen rippled a clear little brook, that rose many miles away and coursing through a wide stretch of farming lands found its outlet in the St. Joseph at this point. It supplied the mill with power, pouring its waters over the big wheel into the broad river. On every side the willow and the alder, the cedar, the juniper brush, the rugged oak and the spreading maple, the sumach and the elder, the thorn tree and the wild grape vine grow in profusion, adding to the charm of a picture of nature and ancient art unsurpassed anywhere.

"Before the days of the modern highway and bridges the pioneers came for many miles over the Indian trails through the forest with their grain to be ground at this mill. A primitive ferry took those across who lived on the opposite side of the stream, and the fame of the mill extended far away. It is related by one of the early settlers of this region that the meeting in the autumn seasons of the year of farmers who came to the mill with their grists, were memorable events. Often there would be a line of teams reaching half a mile in either direction, each driver waiting his turn. On these occasions the teamsters had a jolly time. They would indulge in all kinds of sports to while the hours away, even to racing horses on the level stretch of road over the hill, in foot races, games of quoit pitching, shooting at a mark and the like. Many would bring their guns along and to "kill time" would go out in the woods and kill big game. Not infrequently a deer was brought in and the men, building a big fire of logs, would have roast venison, roast corn and roast pota-

toes for supper. Then they would gather around the fire and spin yarns far into the night. In later days, over macadamized roads and across the iron bridge near by, the descendents of those first settlers came with their grists to the same old mill by the river's side. In the first days of the country's settlement there floated up and down the river past the old mill's door, the keel boats, arks and steamers of the early navigation period and many a salute did the white capped miller give to the jolly boatmen as they sped along.

"Thus the wheels of the old mill turned on day after day and its massive beams were thick with the dust of more than three score years, when one summer night an innocent, but decidedly unsentimental, disrespectful muskrat dug a hole beneath the flume, the rains came in torrents, the foundations were washed away and when the morning appeared the ancient structure was lying upon its side a helpless ruin. Soon the torn and broken remnants were cleared away, the damaged dam repaired and an insignificant looking one-story, slightly built affair now fills the place of the old gray mill of the pioneers.

"The mill was built in the winter of 1836-'37, by Jonas Harris, a Quaker from Richmond, Ind., who came to this county in 1832. He designed the building and with its quaint, old-fashioned windows, doors and high roof, it stood and was used for over 60 years exactly as he had constructed it. Burton Swearingen and Samuel Brooks, both practical millwrights, were the contractors, and during the summer of 1837 the mill was first put in operation, with Ephraim Trueblood as its first miller. In that early day there were very few grist mills in the St. Joseph valley, and it is believed this was the first one, certainly it was the last of the pioneer grinding establishments to go. Its dimensions were 26 by 36 feet, three and a half stories in height. It had two sets of buhrs from the beginning, one for flour and one for meal, and it kept these two only all through its existence. The

original water wheel was of the cumbersome overshot variety, but later this was supplanted by the less cumbersome turbine wheel.

"Mr. Harris died about the year 1843, and according to his own request was buried on the farm back of the house. It was his desire that his remains be laid at rest in that peaceful, picturesque place, and never disturbed. A few years later his wife, Barbara Beeson Harris, died and was laid beside him. Here also others of the neighborhood were buried when they had laid aside the burdens of life, including the mother and an uncle of ex-Councilman Sorden Lister, whose home was north of the old mill. All the bodies were removed, however, to other cemeteries, with the exception of Mr. and Mrs. Harris, whose dust in accordance with their wish lies undisturbed on the spot of their pioneer struggles and pleasures. Their resting place is really unknown, as the ground has long been used for agricultural purposes, obliterating all traces of the old burial spot.

"The farm connected with the mill property originally contained 160 acres and after Mr. Harris' death, with the exception of some portions divided among his children, the place, including the mill, was bought late in 1843, by J. and E. S. Sheffield and Edward Carpenter, of New York city. Mr. Carpenter, whose wife was a sister of the Messrs. Sheffield, came here the following year and took charge of the mill, Charles Deyo acting as miller.

"Mr. Carpenter about this time began the construction of the large and substantial house that still stands on the bluff in the rear of the mill. It was the country mansion of this whole region in that early period. Its frame of the heavy barn beam style was put together to stay. Its foundation of native field granite, floors of oak and doors of solid black walnut, and its large dimensions, with two mammoth chimneys, gave it an imposing appearance. The rooms were many and of good size and the house was originally warmed by five big fireplaces.

"Mr. Jay S. Carpenter, an esteemed resident of the city, who was the elder son of Mr. and Mrs. Edward Carpenter, came here from New York, his birthplace, to make his home with his parents in 1846, and remembers the site of his new home in this wild spot as really a paradise to his youthful mind. In front of the house the trees had all been cleared away and a broad grassy lawn extended from the front steps to the high bluff above the mill. From the front doorway, for nearly a mile to the south the river was plainly in view and the freight boats and steamers could be seen daily plodding their way along the stream. Often they would stop at the mill and take on a load of flour, for there was a big sale in the east for the excellent flour then made by the little Sheffield mill far away out in the Indiana wilderness on the St. Joseph. Across the river was a beautiful landscape of forest and clearing and distant prairie. In rear of the house still stood the primitive forest, the great trees towering toward the skies in their undisturbed majesty, while with the undergrowth all removed a clear view was obtained for a long distance and the ground in summer was covered with a solid carpet of green turf. At the foot of the bluff the old mill was grinding away night and day, the rattle and rumble of its wheels and the coming and going of the settlers with their grain and flour gave life to the otherwise quiet spot in the wilderness. The Lister house, now gone, was a little ways north of the Carpenter house and there was a well worn path along the river bank between the two.

"Mr. Carpenter ran the mill successfully for a few years and then moved to the city, living in the quaint residence at the corner of Main and Madison streets, so long the home of his daughters, the Misses Mary and Emma Carpenter, and where he died in 1851. He was a brick mason by trade and his last work in the city was building the First M. E. and the First Reformed churches. His son, Oscar D. Carpenter, of the Folding Paper Box Company, of this city, was born at the old

house by the mill. John Sheffield afterwards settled in the city and with Charles Deyo for several years conducted a milling business where Hill Bros. are now located. Then he finally moved to Toledo, O., and carried on the same business there.

THE MILL'S MANY OWNERS.

"The old mill had many owners. Mary Elting came into possession of it on a mortgage sale in 1860. In 1864, Dr. Robert Harris and Elisha Hall bought it and the next year Dr. Harris sold his interest to Mr. Hall, who conducted it for a year and then sold out to John Siders in 1866. Mr. Siders and sons conducted it for many years and it became best known in the community by the name of Siders' mill. The late John F. Kirby was one of the later owners of the property and for a few years before its collapse it was in the possession of James L. Robinson. Four years ago he sold out to the South Bend Power Company, the present owners of the property, who tore away the historic structure and erected the one-story building in its place.

"The Ullery creek, upon which the old mill stood was utilized for other manufacturing purposes in early times. A saw mill was erected by Jonas Harris on his property, about half a mile above the mouth of the creek, and this he ran as did the Sheffields and Mr. Carpenter, who came after him. It has long since passed into oblivion, except that a portion of its frame was removed near the old grist mill and converted into a stable. Near where the creek crosses the Niles road north of Notre Dame, Stephen Ullery, over half a century ago, ran a little carding mill, but all traces of this have disappeared.

"The old gray mill of the pioneers is gone yet it lives in the hundreds of pictures of various kinds, great and small that adorn the homes and public places of this community, chief among them being the large painting on the Auditorium drop curtain with its appropriate couplet from the valley's most gifted poet, the lamented Ben King:

“ ‘For my soul it seems caught in Old Time’s undertow,
And I’m floating away down the river St. Joe.’ ”

The history of Notre Dame and St. Mary’s will be reserved for another chapter. In Mr. Bulla’s reminiscences, already referred to, will be found some reference to early educational matters in the township. It is said that the first school taught in the township was in Mr. Eyer’s house by Charles Murray. The first school house was in the location now known as Stover’s, on the Edwardsburg road, the teacher being Daniel A. Veasey. Since 1868, the German Baptists have had a church in the middle of the western part of the township. Among the pastors have been Jacob Cripe, Christian Wenger and John B. Wrightsman. There is no other church in the township, except those at Notre Dame and St. Mary’s. According to the United States census for 1900, the population of Clay township, including that of Notre Dame and St. Mary’s, was one thousand, one hundred and fifty.

Sec. 8.—CENTER.—Center township is one day younger than Clay. It was formed May 6, 1840, with the following boundaries: Beginning at the northeast corner of section thirty, township thirty-seven, range three east; thence west to the northwest corner of section twenty-seven, same township, range two east; thence south to the southwest corner of section fifteen, township thirty-six, range two east; thence east to the southeast corner of section eighteen, same township, range three east; thence north to the beginning.

Center has the distinction of being one of the two townships of the county whose limits have remained unchanged since their formation. The other is Lincoln township.

The Michigan road passes north and south through the middle of the township, angling northeasterly; while the old Michigan boundary passes east and west through the north

half of the township. The result is that the lines of survey are somewhat irregular.

The soil is, in general, a strong clay. In the northwest there is a good deal of low land. Rupel lake, in the “Rupel settlement,” is in this vicinity. This territory is drained by Wenger’s creek, which flows down through Portage township and reaches the St. Joseph almost at the exact south bend of the river. As in case of other such lands throughout the county, these low lands have been in a large measure reclaimed by drainage and now constitute the most valuable lands of the township. The general character of the soil and of the people in the north part of Center is like those of the neighboring parts of Greene township; while in the southern part the soil and the population resemble those of the adjacent parts of Union township. Altogether, the soil and the people are amongst the best in the county.

The first settlements were made early in the thirties, although it is said that Nathan Rose purchased his land from the Pottawatomies in 1829. Other very early settlers were: Andrew Milling, James and Ashur Palmer, from whom Palmer Prairie was named, John Rose, Henry Stull, Peter Rupel, Col. John Smith, George Smith, Isaac Lamb, Abiel Hungerford, Tyra W. Bray, James and Richard Inwood, William Phillips and William H. Robertson.

Elizabeth Rose, daughter of Nathan Rose, was the first child born in the township. Mathias Stover was elected first justice of the peace. Very few justices or constables however, have qualified or acted in the township. It is a simple law abiding people, who obey the laws without restraint or compulsion of any kind. The pioneer log school-house was erected on Nathan Rose’s farm, on the Michigan road, in 1835. A little later a frame school building was erected on Col. Smith’s farm, on the same road. Among the early teachers were Mary Milling, Benjamin Gibbons and Daniel Robertson. The German Baptist church, known as the Palmer Prairie

church, was built in 1859. David Miller and Christian Wenger were among the first pastors. As we have seen, in chapter sixth, subdivision sixth, the first infirmary owned by the county was located in Center township, where it remained nine or ten years, from 1846 to 1855.

The Vandalia railroad runs north and south through Center township. Nutwood, a station rather than a town, is located on the railroad. Except this station, the township is purely agricultural. It is the smallest township in the county, containing but twenty sections of land. But the land makes up in quality what it lacks in quantity. The population by the census of 1900, was six hundred and eight.

Sec. 9.—MADISON.—By order of the board of county commissioners, made March 4, 1845, so much as was then left of Penn township was divided into two townships, by a line due east and west through the centers of sections eight, nine, ten, eleven and twelve, township thirty-six, range three east, and through sections seven, eight and nine, same township, range four east. The south one of these townships was called Madison, the name Penn being retained for the northern township.

The north boundary of Madison remains unchanged; the east boundary is the Elkhart county line; and the south boundary, the Marshall county line. The west line of the township, after some slight changes, is now as follows: Beginning at the southwest corner of the northwest quarter of section eight, township thirty-six north, range three east; thence south to the southwest corner of the northwest quarter of section twenty, said township and range; thence east to the northeast corner of the southeast quarter of said section twenty; thence south to the southwest corner of the northwest quarter of section twenty-eight, said township and range; thence east to the center of said section twenty-eight; thence south to the south line of St. Joseph county.

The territory now known as Madison town-

ship did not attract settlers until a comparatively late period in the history of the county. The land was heavily timbered and the soil a strong clay, while swamps and low ground met the explorer at every turn. Brave, hardy pioneers, however, perceived the rich quality of the soil of this timbered region. The sawmill and the ditch converted the forbidding region into the most valuable farming section of the county. While the drains were preparing the land for tillage, the sawmills converted the timber into lumber; so that the courageous settlers were enabled not only to make their living, but even to accumulate wealth, while waiting for their lands to become dry enough for the plow. The soil of Madison township, as might be expected, is of inexhaustible fertility; and today the most favored sections of St. Joseph county yield to Madison in the production of every grain and vegetable and fruit that grows in our climate. The population, like that of Union and southern Penn, is to a great extent, of the vigorous Pennsylvania stock, which is so substantial and valuable an element in every community of which it forms a part. It was such a brave hearted, strong bodied people that brought a change over the face of Madison township, until the wilderness and the swamps have literally blossomed as the rose.

The first settlers, Mr. Cline, Mr. Bennett and Christian Helminger, came in 1840. Other early settlers were Godfried Enders, Mr. Palmer, Peter Kline, Adam Kiefer, William Border, Thomas Crakes, Jonathan Gilman, Christian Grose, John Schaffer, Philip Berger, Adam Rader, Michael Kettring, Philip McClellan, Levi Knowlton, Philip, Jacob and John Marker, Daniel B. Jewell, Samuel Shearer, Eli Leslie, Joseph Meyer, Anthony Albert, Adam Layman, Joseph Zeiger, Michael Smith, Amos Jewell, Hiram Locker, Jacob Hetzel, Jacob Conrad, David Newcomer, Andrew J. Strobe, Daniel Holmes, Adam Mochel, John Kelley, Charles Kelley, Henry Flory, Harrison Pen-tecost, John Hawkins, Jacob Loucks, A. C.

Heiner, John Shenefield, John Barkey, Jacob Birk, Jacob Futler and Henry Fox.

There are but two small towns in the township, Woodland, in the northwest part, and Wyatt, in the south. The latter is situated on the Wabash railroad, the only railroad in the township.

The first church building in Madison township was a log house, built at Woodland. This was erected by the Methodists, who afterwards built a finer structure at the same place. Later the church was purchased by the Evangelicals. Three or four miles to the east of Woodland, the Evangelicals have another church. In the southwest part of the township, near the Yellow river, the society known as the Evangelical Association erected a church in 1864. The United Brethren also have a society and a church edifice in the township.

The German Lutherans have a church in Woodland, which was built in 1868. Among the pastors have been the Rev. Conrad Schuster and the Rev. George Rosenwinkle.

As might be inferred, the principal occupations of the people of Madison township have been in the timber and lumber business and the business of farming. In all of these they have succeeded in an eminent degree. It need hardly be said that the education of the children was never neglected. The township, which is now populous and wealthy, has the only rural high school in the county. Wisely the substantial citizens of the township have provided that the ambitious youth of the community may receive a superior education without the expense, and still more without the dangers, attendant on going away from home at an age when parental care is more than at any other time needful to save the dear ones from excesses which are but miserably paid for by the most finished intellectual training that any school or college can give. According to the U. S. census for the year 1900, the population of Madison township, including Woodland and Wyatt, was two thousand, two hundred and four.

Sec. 10.—LINCOLN.—The last township to be formed out of the original three,—Penn. Portage and Olive—was Lincoln. This township, as we have seen, was at first a part of Liberty. The boundaries of the township of Lincoln, as fixed by the order of the county board, made June 7, 1866, are as follows: Beginning at the southwest corner of section thirty-four, township thirty-five, range one west, being the southwest corner of St. Joseph county; thence east, on the line between St. Joseph and Starke counties, to the southeast corner of section thirty-six, same township and range; thence north three miles, to the northwest corner of Marshall county; thence east, on the line between Marshall and St. Joseph counties, two miles; thence north two miles; thence west two miles; thence north one mile; thence west to the Kankakee river and the Laporte county line; thence south, by the Laporte county line, to the place of beginning.

As in the case of only one other township, that of Center, the boundaries of Lincoln have remained unchanged since its formation.

The lands of Lincoln township have become valuable through drainage. With the dredging and straightening of the Kankakee and the construction of the great river drains through St. Joseph, Laporte and Starke counties, the rich bottoms that were formerly water covered have been changed into meadows and corn fields. The inhabitants of the township have shown the greatest enterprise in this as in all other directions. The people of Holland, in building their dykes against the sea, have made that country the garden of Europe; and the people of Lincoln, as also the inhabitants of the other townships along the Kankakee, by lowering and straightening that winding stream, have turned their lowlands into rich farms and gardens.

The first settlements in the territory now forming Lincoln township were made as early as 1835. Christian Fulmer came during that year. Soon after came Thomas H. Wiley,

Philo Ruggles, Joshua Cole, Washington Fuson, Thomas Barton, Archibald Goit, Samuel Lorens, Ebenezer Jones, Charles and Jackson Usher, Charles Havens, Morris Frost.

The Methodist Episcopal was the first society to erect a church in the township. This was built in Walkerton, in 1859, under direction of the Rev. J. E. Newhouse and the Rev. James Johnson, the latter being the presiding elder. The society was long known as the West York Mission church. The Baptists erected a church in 1870, and the Catholics in 1876. The Presbyterians, United Brethren and Seventh Day Adventists also have churches in the township.

The first school house was erected in 1858, about a mile from the present town of Walkerton, and was removed into the town in 1876. Graded schools of a high order, including a high school in Walkerton, have long since provided for a superior education for the youth of the township.

No section of St. Joseph county has a brighter future than Lincoln township and its enterprising town of Walkerton. The population of the township, according to the census of 1900, was one thousand, five hundred and ninety-nine. This included the population of Walkerton, which was eight hundred and eighty-five.

Sec. 11.—PENN.—When on May 6, 1832, by order of the county board, St. Joseph county was divided into three townships, corresponding with the three county commissioners' districts, Penn township was made to comprise the whole of the territory of the county lying east of range two east. By subsequent sub-divisions, as we have seen, all of the present township of Harris, part of Clay, part of Center, part of Union and all of Madison, were taken from Penn.

Parts of Penn were added to Portage also, as follows: On January 5, 1836, the west six sections of congressional township thirty-seven, range three east; and on September 4, 1850, the west half of section five, same township and range. Of the six sections so added

to Portage, January 5, 1836, the south two, on May 6, 1840, became a part of the township of Center.

Notwithstanding the great amount of territory taken from Penn, it still remains the largest township in the county, containing sixty-five and a half sections of land, almost equal to two congressional townships. It is perhaps also, take it altogether, the richest township in the county. The soil and characteristics of the south part of the township are quite similar to those of the adjoining township of Madison, as heretofore described. The St. Joseph river flows from east to west through the north part of the township. The river receives two small streams, Twin Branch and Baugo, from the south, and another from the north side of the river. These small streams drain large tracts of low lands on either side of the river. The large marsh between Mishawaka and the hills to the south, and extending almost from the west to the east of the township, is the principal of these lowlands. This is the swamp behind which La Salle lost his way, as related in chapter first of this work. Through drainage, all these lowlands have now become tillable, and are amongst the most fertile lands of the county.

A unique industry has grown up from the cultivation of these fertile swamps, particularly that which may be called the La Salle swamp. Such reclaimed swamps have in many cases been devoted to the cultivation of celery, as at Kalamazoo; and that industry has been engaged in at Mishawaka. But it was found that these reclaimed lowlands were even more perfectly adapted to the cultivation of peppermint. The following account of this peppermint industry will be of particular interest in connection with the history of this county, and especially the history of Penn township:^a

“The reports that the peppermint growers and oil distillers of northern Indiana, south-

a. Taken principally from a report written for the Indianapolis News, of October 13, 1906.

ern Michigan and Wayne county, New York, under the leadership of James A. Everitt, of Indianapolis, and his American Society of Equity, are entering into a combine to inject some 'equity' into the mint markets, and also the reports from Washington that the eyes of the attorney-general have been directed toward the infant combination, calls to the attention of Indiana a supremacy enjoyed by her in the world's commercial markets of which few of her citizens know anything.

"If the ordinary Indiana eater of peppermint drops, chewer of peppermint gum, or user of peppermint oils for medical or commercial purposes were put on the witness stand and questioned concerning where, according to his opinion, the peppermint for the world is made, he would probably credit it to distant tropical lands.

"As a matter of fact the world's supply of high grade peppermint oils and flavors comes from the northern Indiana counties, from those in southern Michigan and from Wayne county, New York; and the low grade supply comes from Japan. The Indiana 1906 crop has just been harvested and distilled on the northern Indiana farms and it represents a little more than 50,000 pounds of the 250,000 pounds national production. Probably a half of it will be exported to England and Germany and some of that may even come back on the Indiana markets as the supreme grades of Mitcham, England, peppermint oils and essences.

"The Indiana mint crop, which has just been put into oil, represents considerably more than \$100,000 of value in ordinary markets. It is understood that the Everitt combine of mint growers proposes to hold the oil for market quotations of approximately \$2.75 a pound.

"Mishawaka is the peppermint capital of the Indiana industry and when the almost one thousand acres of peppermint fields that lie in what might be called the Mishawaka district are in harvest, and when the distilling

plants are running, the air is filled with the aroma of the mint.

"When the crop is ready for harvesting the reaper is driven out of the timothy or clover meadow into the peppermint field and there the crop is felled with a three-and-a-half-foot swath, and is raked up like clover, and by the same process into windrows. Into the fragrant fields come the hay wagons and on them the mint is loaded by men who sweat as profusely under their bending pitchforks as they do under the same forks and same loads in the hay field.

"But the mint does not go up into the barn loft. While it is yet green, it is hauled to the distillation plants and is dumped in ton lots into great wooden casks. In these it is tramped tight and the covers are let down and screwed on tightly, and a steam vent in the bottom of the great cask or distilling vat is opened. The steam pressing up through the mint causes the oil in the leaves to liquefy and join the steam, and this oil-steam passes out through the top and through pipes is run into the condensing pipes, over which cool water is kept running.

"The temperature of these pipes is so low that the steam precipitates and finally, after running the long course of the pipes, the water and oil come out into separating tanks. Here the oil separates completely from the water and floats on top of it, and the water under its own pressure is discharged. The ton of mint is left for about an hour in the distilling tanks and the ton produces, ordinarily, from ten to twelve pounds of oil, though in seasons when the oil values are heavy it will run above this.

"The ordinary oil yield is twenty-five to thirty-five pounds an acre, which selling at \$2.50 a pound, would run from \$62.50 to \$87.50 cash. But there is nothing certain in these figures. At times the mint crop in this part of the state has run up to sixty-five and even seventy pounds an acre, and at times it has dropped to less than twenty pounds, while

the prices have run as wide a range—from 50 cents to \$6 a pound.

“It is a very costly crop to produce, the weeding having to be done by hand, while the distillation requires considerable labor. Still in years of average production of oil for each acre and of average market price the mint farmer is in clover.

“While Mishawaka is really the Indiana peppermint capital—its district covering practically all of the fields in St. Joseph county—the culture is carried on in parts of Elkhart, Lagrange, Noble, Steuben, DeKalb, Marshall and Laporte counties, and has been introduced recently in an experimental way into the Jasper county Kankakee swamps.

“Like broom corn and many other crops, mint can be grown almost anywhere, but only with commercial success and excellence in very limited areas. Thus far in all of this country only Wayne county, New York, southern Michigan and the northern tier, or tier and a half, of Indiana counties, have been found suitable to its culture. It thrives in just those old lake and drained swamp beds that made Kalamazoo famous for celery.

“A black muck-sand loam is the soil in which it is raised with greatest success, and that soil must, like that used in raising the finest grades of celery, be situated in a finely-drawn climatic zone. Mint of greater growth and finer appearance perhaps has been grown in the fine soils of Illinois, in Kansas and in Oregon by people from this part of Indiana who wished to take the industry into new sections, but while it was most promising in appearance it was found, on subjecting it to the distilling process, to be decidedly short on oil, and therefore not a profitable crop.

“The plant looks a great deal like alfalfa or clover, when growing in the field, and it grows high enough to reach almost above a man’s knees. It has a stalk a great deal resembling the clover or alfalfa stalk, and its roots are of much the same character. It would naturally be thought that a considerable part of

the oil would be found in the stalk, but hardly a trace of it comes from any other part of the plant than the leaves.

“The under side of the leaf, when it is green, has a sort of velvety finish. When placed under a powerful glass it is seen that the soft finish is made up of minute oil cells. In these the oil is carried. It seems that the oil supply is much greater when there is a season of hot weather. It seems also to diminish when there is a drop in temperature. Where does it go, or from whence the increased supply, no one seems to know. When the plant is nearing maturity a person going into a mint field and running his hand through the growing plants finds it “finished” with mint oil with so great staying power that the odor will remain for many hours.

“Jerry Woodward, who lives in Mishawaka, is known over northern Indiana as the “Indiana Peppermint King.” With his brothers, Walter and William, he has about 320 acres in mint, and this year the Woodward crop ran more than 4,000 pounds. The Woodwards are the largest growers in Indiana and the second largest in this country and possibly in the world, as the Japanese, who supply the inferior oil, are said, individually, to be small growers. The greatest grower is A. M. Todd, who lives in Kalamazoo, and generally has 600 to 800 acres in mint.

“There are a number of Indiana growers who raise from 100 to 150 acres of mint a year. Each of these has his own distilling plant and distills the crops of the smaller growers.

“In respect to marketing the crop as a finished oil or spirit, the peppermint growers of this country who distill their own crops, nearest approach the German potato growers, who distill their crop into alcohol in their own farm distilleries.

“The mint grown by these commercial culturists is a cross between the wild America and the old English mint. The growing in this country was begun a century or more ago in Wayne county, New York, the wild

mint being used. At that time Mitcham (England) peppermint oil was standard and was sold to all countries. It was, in fact, very limited in quantity and the grower that made the name famous only grew his mint in a small garden and bought the mint grown by others. He, however, developed a very superior plant, and this later was crossed with the American plant grown in New York. From New York it was brought to Michigan and from Michigan into Indiana sixty or seventy years ago, probably the first Indiana grower being Elam Eller, of St. Joseph county. The Woodward Brothers, who moved from Michigan to Mishawaka, seventeen years ago, were the first extensive growers.

"In recent years the acreage has been greatly increased. As yet the principal jobbers who buy the oil have their headquarters in Michigan. The exportation is done through New York and Boston, and probably now runs in excess of 125,000 pounds a year. As a rule the oil is marketed in four-pound cans.

"Peppermint oil is used for the most part as an essential oil in the manufacture of confections and chewing-gum, though it also is largely used as a medicine, especially in fighting certain contagions. Though a total production of, say, a quarter of a million pounds, does not figure into much bulk, the possibilities of this amount of peppermint oil are better grasped by the simple statement that one ounce of peppermint oil will flavor a barrel of sugar and a barrel of sugar will make a great deal of candy and chewing-gum filler.

"One of the greatest markets open to the growers is that of supplying the chewing-gum factories, of which there are over 6,000 listed in this country. The general impression is that a large percentage of the oil is used in setting prints in dress goods, but at least at this time other cheaper oils are used.

"The mint plant is grown from roots which are carefully carried through the winter. They are planted in rows about as far apart as corn rows and are cultivated much the

same as corn for some time. Then they throw out runners, much like the sweet potato does, and cultivation from that time on has to be by hand. Weeds grow very thick and quickly, as a rule in the loose soils used and they all have to be pulled out by nimble fingers. A stand of peppermint is good for three or four years, at the expiration of which time a short rest for the soil is followed in a year or two by replanting.

"As it grows the crop is a beautiful one and a delightful one to the sense of smell. It is, all considered, next to the sunflower crops of Clark county, probably the most interesting and prettiest crop grown in the state."

The soil of Penn township, except in the south part and in the lowlands, is in general a fertile sand and gravel. In places, particularly in the vicinity of the river, the landscape is most charming, resembling that of our finest prairies.

The first settlements of the township were very early. William and Timothy Moat came in 1828. Others among the first settlers of the township were William Holt, Jesse Skinner, Samuel L. Cottrell, Jesse Bell, Henry Huntsinger, Jonathan Macy, Jacob, George and Edward Byrkit, James Curtis, John and William Ireland, George W. West, George Eutzler, Joseph Coe, Daniel, David, William and George Hollingshead, Daniel and Samuel Edwards, John McKnight, Braddock and Uriah Chandler, William and Menzo Webster, and Isaac Parks.

The early life of the settlers was much the same as that of those in the other townships, with the exception, perhaps, that what may be called the public life of the people was, to a great extent, concentrated in and near the town of Mishawaka, and somewhat also at Osceola. In the chapter on cities and towns will be found details of the history of these places. Schools and churches were organized here as in other townships, and here also the religious societies frequently used the school houses for churches until they were able to have both. The first church edifice was built

in Mishawaka. The first school house was erected in 1832. On the Baugo creek, near the site of the present town of Osceola, a saw mill was built in the same year. The power of the little stream has been used ever since for milling purposes, both for saw mill and grist mill. The name of Zelotes Bancroft and that of his family is inseparably connected with the milling business at this point.

The Lake Shore railroad and the Grand Trunk both pass through Penn township; as does also the interurban line formerly known as the Indiana railway, but now as the Chicago, South Bend and Northern Indiana. There is also a line of railway extending from Mishawaka to Elkhart to which the name of Mr. Bucklen of Elkhart is given, but whose future seems as yet not to be fully known. The population of Penn township, outside the city of Mishawaka, as shown by the United States census for 1900, was two thousand, five hundred and fifty-seven. This included the town of Osceola.

Sec. 12.—PORTAGE.—By the order of May 6, 1832, forming the three townships of Penn, Portage and Olive, Portage was made to include all of range two east. This range was also fixed as the limits of the second commissioner's district of the county. While the three commissioners' districts have remained unchanged, the big townships, as we have seen in the preceding pages, have been subdivided and changed almost beyond recognition.

Range two east, which at first constituted Portage township, now embraces all of the present township of German and part of Clay, Greene, Center, Liberty and Union. But the present Portage, while embracing but a fraction of the old township of the same name, is itself not confined to the original range and commissioner's district, but, as we have seen in considering the history of Penn township, extends over into range three east and into the first commissioner's district.

The township of Portage, as now consti-

tuted, with the exception of the part within the Kankakee valley, consists almost altogether of high and slightly rolling lands. As the history of Penn township centers chiefly in that of the city of Mishawaka; so, in even a greater degree, the history of Portage township centers in that of South Bend. The history of South Bend, which will be given in another chapter, will therefore substantially cover the history of Portage township. The earliest history of the county also, as already set out in chapter four, is in substance, a history of Portage township for the time covered. The first settlers of the county were settlers of what is now Portage township; Pierre Navarre, in 1820; Alexis Coquillard, in 1823; Col. L. M. Taylor, in 1827, and the others as mentioned in chapter fourth. The first churches and school-houses were also in what is now South Bend. The first flouring mill, in 1831, and the first tannery, a little later, both erected by William McCartney, were in Portage township, on McCartney's creek, a little below the present limits of South Bend. That the city of South Bend has become the chief part of Portage township is still further apparent from the United States census for 1900, where the population of the township, including the city is shown to be thirty-six thousand, eight hundred and ninety-six; while the population of the city alone appears as thirty-five thousand, nine hundred and ninety-nine, leaving for the township outside the city, eight hundred and ninety-seven.

Sec. 13.—OLIVE.—The third township, formed May 6, 1832, comprised all of the county west of range two east, which territory also constituted the third commissioner's district. The township, as then formed, included not only the present township of Olive, but also Warren, part of Greene and Liberty and all of Lincoln; besides the parts on the west and south that were afterwards attached to Laporte, Starke and Marshall counties, by the several acts of the legislature, as detailed in chapter fifth, subdivision ninth, of this

history. In addition to the territory so taken from Olive township by the acts of the legislature, the board of county commissioners, by the several orders made in forming the townships of Warren, Greene, Liberty and Lincoln, took other territory from Olive, on the east and the south, as already detailed in our history of those townships. With all its losses, however, Olive, in size, is still the second township in the county, being exceeded in territory only by Penn. By the census of 1900, Olive township, including the town of New Carlisle, had a population of one thousand, nine hundred and ninety-eight; or fourteen hundred and ninety-one outside the town.

In another respect Olive is the first of our townships; that is, in the beauty of her prairie scenery. We have many beautiful prairies in St. Joseph county, but the finest of them all is Terre Coupee prairie, extending in length, east and west, six or seven miles, clear across the township, and in width, north and south, four or five miles. There can be no more beautiful stretch of garden land in all the world.

The first settlements of Olive township were made in 1830. The township received its name from Olive (Stanton), wife of Charles Vail, who settled in the township in that year. Other settlers who came then or soon after were Joseph Adams, Jacob and Israel Rush, John, Barzilla and Gamaliel Druliner, Samuel Garwood, Jonathan Hubbard, grandfather of the Hon. Lucius Hubbard, of South Bend, Garrett and Henry Nickerson, William White, John Carskaddon, Jacob Egbert, John Egbert, George Boyd, James Garoutte, Benjamin Redding, Job Smith, Henry Ranstead and John Reynolds.

In chapter four, subdivision sixth, will be found the reminiscences of Hugh V. Compton, giving his recollection of events in the early history of Olive township. These reminiscences give us a vivid picture of pioneer life in the township.

The following additional reminiscences have been secured through the courtesy of Mr.

Albert H. Compton, son of Hugh V. Compton.

Mr. Jesse Haines says: The Haines family came in 1830. Israel Rush was the first justice of the peace. John Banker was an associate judge of the St. Joseph circuit court. He lived on Terre Coupee prairie, and walked to South Bend to perform his judicial duties. The first election held in Olive township was at the home of John Druliner, in a log house. Charles Vail was inspector of that election. Being a Quaker, he would not administer an oath, but required the members of the election board to affirm.

One evening in 1831, a little before the organization of the township, Judge Egbert, while taking supper with Mr. and Mrs. Charles Vail, said to Mr. Vail: "This being the best and most beautiful township in St. Joseph county, it shall be named for your girl wife." Hence the name Olive township.

About 1836, Samuel Garwood sold a tract of land on the prairie to Jonathan Hubbard, who laid out and platted the town of Terre Coupee. A man named Hamilton built a hotel at the place; and from the name of the hotel the town gradually became known as Hamilton. Mr. Haines relates that in 1832, his father, then living in what is now Hudson township, Laporte county, becoming alarmed on account of the rumors as to the Black Hawk uprising, took his wife and six children in a four-horse wagon, riding himself on horseback, while Mrs. Haines carried a flint-lock musket across her lap; and so provided they started for the Carey Mission near Niles. On reaching the home of Samuel Garwood, at Terre Coupee, or Hamilton, they found the people building a fort, and concluded to stop there. After a few days, finding that the danger was over, they returned home.

The early settlers of Olive township were principally from Warren county, Ohio. They came by way of Niles, Michigan, or by Crawfordsville, Indiana; the land office being located at Crawfordsville. Those routes were taken to avoid the Kankakee and Grapevine marshes.

The Rev. James Armstrong is said to have been the first missionary of the Methodist church in St. Joseph county. Principally through his efforts, the first Methodist society was organized at the house of Paul Egbert, near Terre Coupee, or Hamilton, in the year 1830, by the Rev. E. Felton, of the Ohio conference. The class then formed consisted of eight members, of which John Egbert was appointed class-leader. The work of the church was re-organized in 1834, by Mr. Armstrong, then presiding elder, who died in the fall of that year. The church has since been regularly continued. The first church edifice was built at Hamilton, in 1839 and 1840. The prime movers in the erection of this building were Paul and John Egbert and Jonathan Hubbard. The church was the best one then north of the Wabash. Oliver Emery was the architect. The erection of this church is entitled to more than ordinary consideration as one of the first important steps taken in the advancement of civilization in St. Joseph county.

Early in 1868, the Christian, sometimes called the Campbellite, church was organized in New Carlisle by the Rev. Ira J. Chase, then stationed at Mishawaka. Mr. Chase was assisted in his work by the Rev. W. M. Roe, of Rolling Prairie; and, on March 29, 1868, a society was organized in the chapel hall of the New Carlisle Collegiate Institute. A church building was dedicated March 13, 1870, the Rev. Mr. Chase delivering the sermon. The church has continued to prosper. The Rev. Ira J. Chase was afterwards governor of Indiana.

The land where New Carlisle now stands was at first owned by a man named Bourissau, who was married to an Indian woman. On the death of Bourissau, his children sold the land to Richard Carlisle, who platted the town and gave it his own name. The hotel in New Carlisle was built in 1836 by Richard Cranmer who occupied it for a time and then sold it to Joseph Ivens. Mr. Ivens remained the proprietor for several years, and by his

genial and hospitable way of entertaining acquired for his hotel a great reputation as one of the best houses on the "stage line."

The following are some recollections of fifty years ago by the venerable Mrs. R. J. Pidge:

"Yes, it is half a century since I came to New Carlisle. I was married January 27, 1847, to Rev. A. H. Pidge, at Big Prairie Ronde, Mich., and arrived here on January 31st; and it has been my home ever since.

"Very many changes have taken place since that time. In looking over the past fifty years the scenes and events come to my mind like a panorama, which I have no words to describe.

"At that time Carlisle was a very small place, only a few persons who were here then are left; most of them have passed away from earth.

"There was a hotel, a dry goods store, a post office (kept in a blacksmith shop), and perhaps some other small shops. The hotel was kept by Joseph Ivens. There was no church or school house in the town then, no railroad. The only public conveyances then were the large four-horse stage-coaches which, perhaps, the present generation never saw. There were no church services held here then; but a few years before Schuyler Colfax's mother, Mrs. Mathews, had organized a Sunday school in her own house, assisted by Mr. Mathews and her son Schuyler. She told me she made little tea parties to raise money to buy books.

"We attended church at Hamilton, which was then the most important town of this vicinity. In a year or two Rev. Abram Salisbury, a Methodist minister, was appointed to the circuit. He resided at Byron, between here and Laporte (our parsonage was there then). On Sunday morning he came here and preached at 9 o'clock and then went to Hamilton and preached at 11 o'clock. I forgot to say that Rev. Mr. Salisbury preached in what was then called the old Mormon

Temple. It stood where Dr. Davis' residence is at present.

"In 1852 there was a school house built on the lot where Mrs. Hubbard's house now stands, which was used for church purposes and Sunday school until our present M. E. church was built, during the pastorate of John R. Eddy in 1858 and 1859. The Lord only knows the great efforts and many sacrifices it took to build this house for Him, and when the day for dedication came we all rejoiced in this final event. I think it was in September, 1859, that our church was dedicated. Rev. J. M. Eddy of Chicago, brother of our pastor, preached the dedication sermon."

The following paper by Granville Woolman was recently read at the Woman's Club Banquet, New Carlisle:

"My father came to this county in 1830 with three of his neighbors to look the country over and learn whether they would like it and could better their condition. On their return my father was the only one that concluded to come. He made arrangements to move in 1832, but rumors of the Black Hawk war had broken out and by the time they had reached us it was to the effect that every white man, woman and child was murdered in the most cruel manner, that property was all destroyed and the Indians reigned supreme. While that was not the case, it had the effect to stop the emigration for the time being.

"My father not being entirely satisfied came in 1833, and liked the country still better. He purchased the land where we now live, for which he paid \$2.50 per acre, it being Indian land, and moved in 1834 in company with Samuel Bates, his brother-in-law. We left Ohio August 20, and arrived here September 4th. The roads were quite bad part of the way, especially through the Black swamp and Grapevine, consequently we made slow progress compared with travel nowadays, about 20 miles a day. My father drove three horses, one of which he rode; the leader

was driven by a single or jerk line. The roads across the marsh were very bad and continued so most of the way across the prairie. When we arrived at the edge of the prairie father said to mother, 'Here is Terre Coupee, if the bottom has not fallen out.' Not a very pleasing sight, I assure you. Mud was 12 to 15 inches deep with water frequently standing either side of the road. We finally arrived at our 'Bunker Hill,' and a far more pleasing sight it seemed. This somewhat overcame the first unfavorable impression. There was but one cabin and that was located where the Christian church now stands. That and the land belonged to a family by the name of Bourissau, a half-breed Indian. We crossed to the north side of the prairie, where our land was located, and selected a place to build near where the buildings now stand. The road ran about 15 rods south of the building and remained there for a number of years.

"We immediately built a shanty, intended for a stable, covered with clapboards held down by weight poles, and with a door cut in one end of the shanty. Clapboards laid crosswise extending to the opening between the logs, with bedding on, made a comfortable lodging place. With a slab for a table and stools made out of the same material, pins driven in the logs on which to hang wearing apparel, a dirt floor and a camp fire, we were quite at home.

"My father went to the east end of the prairie and bought a quarter of beef. As we had no place to keep it, father climbed up a small tree near the shanty, to cut off a limb; and with mother's help managed to hang it up.

"But the meat served to attract the wolves, which came in large numbers, howling, snarling and snapping around the shanty. The dogs we brought to devour all the wolves in the west came through the door with a rush, slipped under the bed and were very docile until the wolves left. I never could understand why they were so afraid of

wolves when they had never been attacked by them.

"Every one who passed along the road and saw the shanty and covered wagon would stop and inquire where we were from, and if we had come to stay.

"Mrs. Abbie Druliner, who lived on the Wade-Reynolds place, came a few days after we had located, introduced herself and inquired where we were from; hoped we would be satisfied, saying that they needed people to help improve the country and as we were near neighbors she hoped we would remain as such.

" 'We have been here two years,' she said, 'and anything we have in the way of provision that you haven't we want to divide with you. I have the material for making soap; come over and help make it and we will divide.' Whether this kind act had anything to do with their friendship or not, I assure you they were fast friends all their lives. They visited each other, their neighbors, and the sick and needy. Everyone seemed delighted to have new comers and worked for one another's interest. The Indians were quite numerous, passing along the road in squads of two to twenty. You may imagine how a boy of ten would feel after hearing all about the depredations the Indians had committed the past two years. It so happened one day in my father's absence that I went down near the road to cut some wood out of a large oak top. We had an old dog, Rover, in some respects like Mary's lamb; wherever I went he was sure to go. He was lying near where I was chopping and all at once commenced growling, his hair standing on end. I told him to be quiet, but I knew that something was up. I commenced looking about and soon discovered two big Indians coming down the road, with feathers in cap, and with tomahawks and scalping knives in their belts. With not much time to think, I bade the old dog be quiet and settled down in the top of the tree, hoping to avoid their notice until they passed. But when they got

opposite where I was one of them straightened up and pulled out a scalping knife. I went out of that tree like a jack rabbit; out ran the old dog; and my hat and everything else landed into the shanty, half way across the room. My mother said, 'What's the matter with thee?' 'Two big Indians; I guess they have scalped me.' The Indians were quite docile, except when they had firewater; then they would pass along the road in single file no matter what their number was, whooping and yelling, with their ponies at full speed. We soon became accustomed to them and had but little fear. Many of their wigwams were very attractive, lined with furs of different kinds and fancy blankets, the squaws sitting on robes doing fancy work, with papooses lashed to boards hanging to a limb or leaning against a tree, and the older children frisking about, practicing with bow and arrow, jumping or running races. The surroundings seemed the height of contentment and they acted very friendly, but would never invite you inside."

The following extract is from a paper by Judge Lucius Hubbard, read by him in the public hall at New Carlisle a few years ago:

"The first record I find of white settlers in Olive township was in 1830. In that year quite a colony seems to have arrived, for I hear of Jacob and Israel Rush, John, Barzilla and Gamaliel Druliner, John Jacob and Paul Egbert Jacob and Joseph Adams, Samuel Garwood, Charles Vail, Garrett and Henry Nickerson, Wm. White and John Carskaddon.

"In the same year, 1830, an act of the legislature had formed St. Joseph county, and as the law then stood it was governed by a board of three justices. The board of justices divided the county into four townships, Michigan, Deschemin, German and Portage. What is now Olive, was in Deschemin, taking a strip of Laporte county on the west.

"The year 1832 was an eventful one in the history of Olive township. The board of commissioners reorganized the township and laid it out under its present name. Charles Vail

had married Olive Stanton and this was the first marriage among the white settlers, and to her was given the honor of fixing her name upon the new township.

"In June, 1832, the Black Hawk war broke out. We can hardly realize the fear and trouble it brought upon our old settlers. It may seem strange to us now, that less than one thousand poorly armed Saes and Foxes in western Illinois could awaken such fears as they did in the summer of 1832.

"But this was when Fort Dearborn and half a dozen log huts were all of what is now Chicago, and when five hundred volunteers were all that could be mustered in northern Indiana and southern Michigan. Black Hawk was no stranger. He had often led his tribe along the Sauk trail that is now the road through Terre Coupee on his way to Malden, Michigan, to receive the government annuities. Then northern Indiana was still the home of the Pottawatomies, and to the north, in Michigan, the Ottawas were still numerous and powerful. It was not then as now that the news was flashed across the continent by telegraph, or that we could talk hundreds of miles over a wire.

"The tale of the frightened and fleeing settlers, its horrors as it sped from cabin to cabin, uncontradicted, until in the imagination of the fearful, the whoop of the savage was heard borne on the night wind and the smoke of burning dwellings was seen in the west by day. This is no exaggeration. At one time the report came that the Saes had reached Door Village, in Laporte county, and that they were burning houses and murdering settlers on their way east. Many fled to Ohio. One fugitive had stopped to pass the night at Samuel Garwood's. Some mischievous or badly scared traveler spread a report that the Indians were coming. At midnight he huddled his half-dressed wife and children into his wagon and hurried on. I have spoken of this to mention the only fort or military erection of any kind ever built in

Olive township. It was commenced in May, 1832, and was located on land now owned by Eugene Wykoff. The location was chosen for its nearness to a narrow strip of timber that ran out into the prairie about half a mile on the lands of John Druliner, now owned by James Reynolds, and far enough from the woods so that there would not be a hiding place within rifle shot of the fort. A trench was dug about four feet deep around a square of three or four rods on a side. In this sticks of timber were set 12 or 16 feet long. They were left round if not more than 4 or 5 inches in diameter, and if larger split in halves. The ditches were filled and on the outside the prairie was broken up and the sods piled against the palisades about breast high so as to stop chance balls which might otherwise pass between the palisades.

"A shallow ditch was left just outside the embankment. It was the plan to erect blockhouses at each corner with loop holes for riflemen, higher than the palisades, from which the sentinels could watch over the prairie on all sides. The work on the fort went on rapidly at first; but as reports of coming Indians were heard, some stole away.

"The work lagged as the scare grew old. The blockhouses were never finished and when the news of the capture of Black Hawk came the work stopped. The palisades were carried off for firewood and after a few years a few rotten timbers in the ground and a rank growth of grass was all that marked the site of the old fort. Over thirty years ago I could not find its locality.

"Plainfield was the first platted village in the township, platted in December, 1833. The village of Palestine was next laid out in December, 1834. It was about $1\frac{1}{2}$ miles east of Plainfield, and you can't point out its site. In fact, I doubt if many of you ever heard of it.

"August 15, 1835, Richard Carlisle laid out the village of New Carlisle, the only town that has survived: for the village of Hamil-

ton, later Terre Coupee, laid out in 1837, is on its way to join Plainfield and Palestine."

Mention is made in Mr. Haines' reminiscences of the Carey Mission, near Niles. Although that mission, like the mission at Fort St. Joseph,^a above Niles, was without the limits of St. Joseph county, and even beyond the boundaries of the state of Indiana, yet so intimately was each of those missions connected with the early settlement of the St. Joseph valley, that no history of any county that borders upon our beautiful river would be complete without some account of both of them.

Just over the Michigan line, half way between Niles and Buchanan, in the great northern bend of the St. Joseph river, but at a considerable distance to the south of the stream, was located the Carey Mission, named after a distinguished Baptist missionary to the East Indies, an institution well known in the early history of southern Michigan and northern Indiana, and of particular interest to the neighboring people of Olive township and western St. Joseph county during the years immediately following the first settlement of the township. The Carey Mission was established in 1822 for the education of Indian children. The founder was the Rev. Isaac McCoy, a zealous Baptist missionary and educator. Mr. McCoy and his assistants exhibited the greatest self-sacrifice and zeal in their effort to build up in the wilderness an educational institution that might serve as a center from which Christianity and civilization should be diffused among all the Indians of the northwest. A large farm was cleared and comfortable log buildings erected which served as dwellings, school houses and barns. Good crops of wheat and other grains were raised, and, in 1825, a flouring mill was built, the first mill west of Tecumseh or Ann Arbor, and for a time the only one within a hundred

miles of the mission. The enterprise attracted the favorable attention of the people of Michigan, and Lewis Cass, then governor of the territory, sent agents at different times to examine into the management and work of the mission. The reports were most favorable. At one time there were as many as two hundred Indian pupils in the institution, and the future of the mission seemed very bright. White emigration, however, proved to be the ruin of the work of the benevolent missionary. It was foreseen that the Indian title to the adjacent lands would soon be extinguished, and that the Indians would be forced to remove to the west, as indeed proved to be the case in a very few years. "Accordingly," says Mr. Edward B. Cowles, from whose history of Berrien county, Michigan, the foregoing account is chiefly taken, "preparations were made at the mission for bringing it to a close, and for its removal beyond the western boundary of Missouri. It was not fully wound up, however, until 1832."^a The name of the "Carey Mission," and of its founder, the Rev. Isaac McCoy, were familiar words in the history of St. Joseph county during the existence of the mission, from its establishment, in 1822, until its dissolution and removal, in 1832.

Among the towns in Olive township are Warwick and Terre Coupee, formerly called also Prairie Coupee, but better known as Hamilton. These are on the Great Sauk Trail. Hamilton was at one time a place of considerable importance. The Methodist society erected the first church at Hamilton, in 1839, or a little later. Another old town is Plainfield, a little north of the present Terre Coupee railroad station on the Lake Shore. The principal town of the township, and one of the prettiest towns in the county, is New Carlisle, sometimes called Carlisle Hill. It stands on a fair eminence overlooking the beautiful Terre Coupee prairie. Where else could the ideal rural home be found, if not

^a. For the history of Fort St. Joseph's see Chap. 2, Subd. 4.

^a. Cowles' Berrien County Directory and History, Niles, Michigan, 1871, pp. 31-39.

here, on this fine hill, before which stretches out so fair a garden of delights? Beautiful Terre Coupee, how the view must have transported the early missionary, *coureur des bois*, traveler or emigrant, or even the stolid Indian, as he passed from the thick woods while

making his way along the old Sauk trail and this vision of lovely landscape burst upon his eyes. Prairie Coupee, a prairie cut out of the dark woods and lit up with the light of heaven, it must have seemed to his enraptured vision.

CHAPTER IX.

THE TOWNS.

Incidentally, in the general history of the county and in that of the townships, as well as in the reminiscences set out in various chapters, much of the history of our cities and towns has necessarily been already detailed. It is not the purpose to repeat what has thus been sufficiently stated, but it seems proper that our several municipalities should have separate chapters, in which, without unnecessary repetition, a connected urban history of the county may have a place.

I. TOWNS THAT WERE.

In a new country, with few inhabitants, the forests yet standing and the soil uncultivated, except in spots few and far between, without roads, except trails winding through the woods, over the prairies and along the marshes; and, with all these, also ambitious men seeking fortunes in the increased values which may come to lands happily located for the purposes of commerce and manufactures, it is to be expected that many towns will be started with glowing prospects, never to be realized. It has been so in St. Joseph county, and the plough runs over many a townsite of which even the present proprietor does not know the name.

Sec. 1.—ST. JOSEPH.—The first of those half forgotten towns was St. Joseph. This town, located at La Salle's portage on the St. Joseph river, in section 27, township 38 north, range 2 east, in what is now German township, was, on May 24, 1830, selected as the county seat of St. Joseph county, by the

commissioners named in the act organizing the county, approved January 29, 1830.^a On September 14, 1830, the town was formally laid out by William Brookfield, our first county surveyor, who was the owner of the tract.

The plat of St. Joseph was the first town plat laid off and recorded in St. Joseph county, and by reason of this circumstance, and because the town was our first county seat, the following quotations and other particulars taken from the venerable record will be of historical interest:

"Town of St. Joseph, by William Brookfield.

"All the blocks in this town plat, excepting those on which 'Brookfield's square' are written, belong to the county, agreeably to his donation to the county. Donation September 14, 1830. Those blocks on which 'Brookfield's squares' are written are exclusively his own."

"State of Indiana, }
"St. Joseph County, } ss.:

"On this eighth day of November, in the year of our Lord eighteen hundred and thirty, personally appeared before me, Lathrop M. Taylor, recorder of St. Joseph county, William Brookfield, and acknowledged the within instrument to be his free act and deed for the purposes therein expressed.

"Given under my hand and seal the day and year first above written.

"L. M. Taylor (Seal.)"

There is on the plat a representation of the St. Joseph river, turning sharply to the north,

a. See Chap. 5, Subd. 2, of this work.

with the following lettering: "Big St. Joseph River of Lake Michigan;" and on the margin of the river, at the turn, the words: "Portage of the Kankakee."

The following title is also shown: "A correct diagram of the county seat called St. Joseph, in the county of St. Joseph, state of Indiana."

"The Michigan State Road" is shown to enter the plat at the corner of "South street" and "Broadway," three quarters of a mile south of the river, and it turns west on "Wesley" street, at the corner of Wesley and Broadway, two hundred rods south of the river. Its direction on Broadway is nearly northwest, and it is there marked on the plat "Michigan State Road." On Wesley street appear the words: "Michigan State Road, running due west to Lake Michigan—33 miles nearly due west."

Thirty-three squares, of ten lots each, are found on the plat. Of these, four are marked "Brookfield's squares." Half a square, or five lots, is marked "Public square." Two lots are marked "Episcopal church;" two, "Methodist church;" five, "court house;" three, "jail;" two, "Presbyterian church;" three, "market;" two, "Baptist church;" two, "Academy;" two, "R. Catholic church;" and two, "United Brethren in Christ." The remaining lots, two hundred and sixty-eight in number, were given to the county.

The north and south streets are marked, "Brookfield," "Washington," "Jefferson," "Broadway," and "Madison;" and the east and west streets, "North," "Berry," "Worth," "Evans," "Ross," "McBane," "Wesley" and "South." Each street is sixty-six feet wide, except Washington, Jefferson and Madison, which are each ninety-nine feet in width, and Broadway, which is one hundred and twenty-three feet wide. The alleys, which all run north and south, are each three rods wide. The lots are each five rods in width by eleven rods in length.

Berry, Worth, Evans, Ross and McBane streets were named after the five commission-

ers appointed by the legislature to locate the county seat.^a

St. Joseph was never more than a projected town, a town on paper, and was never in fact the county seat, even during the short period it was nominally so. The county business was from the beginning transacted in the house of Alexis Coquillard, in the town of South Bend. The people were not satisfied with the location of the county seat at St. Joseph, and, as shown in chapter fifth, subdivision seven, of this history, the legislature, in the year 1831, passed an act and named commissioners for the re-location of the seat of justice. On May 12, 1831, the commissioners so appointed removed the county seat from St. Joseph to South Bend, from the historic Portage at La Salle's Landing, to the south bend of the river. The "bend" is about four miles above the portage; but the city has so extended that the north limits are now but a mile and a half above, and the time may yet come when the territory of the present county seat will take in the old county seat.

All that is left of St. Joseph is the pioneer plat in the office of the county recorder. Mr. Brookfield left the county and the state soon after the disappointment caused by the removal of the county seat, and the incipient town quietly settled back into its native wilderness.

Sec. 2.—PORTAGE.—The failure of the town of St. Joseph at the old portage did not altogether extinguish the anticipations of those who thought that a prosperous settlement must, in the end, grow up at or near the site of the landing where for countless ages the commerce of the wilderness had been transferred on its way from the lakes to the gulf, and from the gulf to the lakes. One more effort was to be made to establish a town at the portage, and, to make assurance doubly sure, the town itself would be named Portage. St. Joseph had been laid

a. See Sec. 3, Acts, 1829, pp. 28-31, set out in Chap. 5, Subd. 2, this work.

out as a county seat; the new town would be laid out as a seat of commerce, education and manufactures.

The prime mover and the mainstay of the town was Judge Elisha Egbert, one of the most noted men in the history of St. Joseph county. He was judge of the old probate court for seven years, and then became judge of the common pleas court, and held that office from the establishment of the court in 1851 until his death in 1870.^a

On July 12, 1834, the town of Portage was surveyed for Elisha Egbert by Tyra W. Bray, the county surveyor. It was located on the southwest fractional quarter of section 26, township 38 north, range 2 east, about half a mile to the south and east of the site of the former town of St. Joseph. Additional surveys were made in March, 1837, by Thomas P. Bulla for Abner Morse, John Egbert and Jacob Egbert; and as late as February, 1838, a still further addition was made by Lemuel Crawford. The town seemed on the high road to prosperity. Hotels and stores were erected. Physicians took up their abode in the new town, and there were representatives of all lines of business suited to a growing community.

Judge Egbert succeeded in securing from the county commissioners the establishment of a public ferry over the river at this point;^b as well as to have county roads laid out to and from Portage, on both sides of the river.

Still another project was the cutting of a mill race from the Kankakee to the St. Joseph. This was an idea entertained by many a projector of that early day. The Kankakee is many feet above the St. Joseph, and it seemed extremely feasible to dig a mill race which, with so great a head, should supply unlimited water power for mills and machinery. The people of the town of Portage were so sanguine of success in this line that they procured a charter from the legislature for a company to engage in the enterprise. The

act granting the charter was approved January 30, 1837,^a and, amongst other things, provided:

"That William McCartney, sen'r, Franklin W. Hunt, Daniel Dayton, Abner Morse and Elisha Egbert, be and they are hereby authorized to cut a race of such width as they may think proper, commencing at or near the northwest side of the Kankakee pond,^b so as not to divert any of the waters of the Kankakee that naturally flow into the Illinois river down said Kankakee that lies west of the town of South Bend, in such manner that the race shall not extend beyond the southern limits of said pond, in St. Joseph county, Indiana; thence running on the western side of the Kankakee marsh, so as not to injure the hydraulic privileges of any other person or persons, and terminating at or near the town of Portage in said county."

A similar mill race was afterwards dug by Alexis Coquillard and associates, from the Kankakee to the St. Joseph, but the water so leaked away in the loose soil that sufficient did not reach down to South Bend to supply any available power.

A literary and industrial institution of a high order was also projected, of which the Rev. Abner Morse was to be the president. This institution received a charter from the legislature, by an act approved January 30, 1837,^c in which it was provided: "That Abner Morse, Caleb Martin, William McCartney, sen'r, Franklin W. Hunt, Daniel Dayton, S. Brace, Elisha Egbert and George Hunt, sen'r, and their successors in office be, and they are hereby constituted and declared to be a body corporate and politic, by the name and style of the 'St. Joseph Manual Labor Collegiate Institute.'" The trustees were given "power to appoint a faculty in said college, consisting of a president, professors and tutors, as the necessities of the institution may demand, and the faculty so

a. Local Laws, 1836, p. 393.

b. Now Summit Lake, or La Salle Lake.

c. Local Laws, 1836, p. 292.

a. See Chap. 6, Subds. 3 and 4.

b. See Chap. 7, Subd. 2.

appointed, by and with the approbation of the board of trustees, shall have power to grant and confer such degrees in the liberal arts and sciences as are usually granted and conferred in other colleges in the United States." A further provision was that "said institution shall be located at or within two miles of the village of Portage, in the county of St. Joseph, and state of Indiana."

But the "St. Joseph Manual Labor Collegiate Institute" was never anything more than a project on paper; and, like all the other ambitious projects of the town, has been long since altogether forgotten. The panic of 1837 was on, and the promoters of the town suffered reverses, in common with those of many another struggling and hopeful band of projectors in every part of the country.

William McCartney, who appears as one of the incorporators of the "St. Joseph Manual Labor Collegiate Institute," was the owner of a farm on the river, in German township, a little above the town of Portage. This farm is connected in our history with an effort made to establish the only community association ever attempted in St. Joseph county. Timothy G. Turner has left us the following brief account of this ill-starred community:^a

"In the winter of 1845 a community, suggested, probably, by the system of economics elaborated by the French philosopher, Charles Fourier, was established on the McCartney farm, about two miles below South Bend. It was a joint stock company, organized under the name of the 'Philadelphia Industrial Association.' Its objects were economical and social. Its operations continued about two years. The Hon. William C. Talcott, of Valparaiso, Indiana, favors us with the following reminiscences in relation to it:

"I think Mr. McCartney was the first president, and I was secretary during almost its entire existence. It was chiefly through my influence that the association was formed

and managed. There were, probably, more than a hundred persons, old and young, connected with us, from first to last; but I should not think more than about seventy living on the premises at once. During a part of the time they ate at a common table.

"The main cause of their dissolution, I have ever believed, was that Mr. McCartney violated his promise to invest the whole tract of land; and, after we were fully organized and on the ground, ready to receive the title and use the land, he withheld all of the valuable and available portion, and turned us off with the broken, marshy land, lying between the road and the river, at twenty dollars per acre, the appraised price of the entire tract.'" Mr. Turner adds, that while the association failed, Mr. McCartney succeeded in getting his land cleared up and improved for nothing.

It would seem that everything connected with an attempt to build up any enterprise at the old portage was a failure. At first, the old St. Joseph, Brookfield's town, and now Judge Egbert's more hopeful town of Portage, both alike went down before the vigorous municipality growing up at the "south bend" of the river. In the face of financial and other difficulties, the people of Portage became discouraged, and, one by one, all the projected enterprises were abandoned. The town went down as rapidly as it had arisen, until not a vestige of its former glory remained.

With its other misfortunes, the town suffered from a nickname which belittled its pretensions to greatness. The river at this point turned abruptly to the east, and then as abruptly to the west, making a little peninsula which humorous people in derision called a pinhook; and Pinhook the town was named to the end of its days.

The following items concerning the good old town of Portage, under its nickname of Pinhook, are from the genial pen of the lamented Richard H. Lyon, who devoted so large a part of his later years to local historical investigations. His body most appropri-

a. Gazetteer of the St. Joseph Valley, 1867, p. 48.

ately rests in Riverview cemetery, near the site of the historic scenes on which his fine mind so often dwelt:

"The original, ancient, historic Pinhook bend of the St. Joseph river was located a short distance below St. Mary's Academy, about four miles from the city as the stream goes, and was on ground laid out as the town of Portage, platted in 1834, but now wholly extinct. It was nicknamed by the Indians on account of the peculiar strip of land around which the river turned in the form of a bent pin. The French traders, the boatmen and the early settlers of the region adopted the name and Pinhook became one of the most famous points of interest on the river from its mouth to the head of navigation in Branch county, Michigan.

"The Portage town covered the lowland, comprising about 53 acres, east of Riverview cemetery, then owned by Judge Elisha Egbert, now the property of James H. Ray. It took the nickname of Pinhook and was better known by that title by the pioneers than by its real legal name. A ferry was established there and roads led to Pinhook from all directions. Several stores, shops, dwellings and warehouses were built in the town, ground donated for a Congregational theological school, and a distinguished educator of New England, the Rev. Abner Morse, father of the late Congressman William A. Morse, of Massachusetts, sent to start the college enterprise on its way. It never got beyond the purchase of a bell, however, and when the country arose from the financial blow it received in 1837, Portage was no more and the bell went astray somewhere.

"Productive farm lands now occupy the entire site of the old town, not a vestige of any kind of the early habitations being left. The last lot owner in the plat was the late Dr. Daniel Dayton, who was one of the town's original boomers and for a time maintained his office and residence there. Until a few years ago taxes on his real estate holdings in Portage, regularly assessed against the estate,

were as regularly paid, annually, in the aggregate to about 41 cents per annum, although the corporation had ceased to exist for more than half a century. An effort was made to secure water power privileges for Portage through a big race constructed at the base of the high bluff south, west and north of the town, with an outlet on the cemetery association's grounds. A portion of the excavation for this race is the most conspicuous landmark left of Pinhook's palmy days.

"About twenty years ago during a freshet that caused old St. Joe to rise and rage beyond its wonted limit, the river left its circuitous route around the hook, burst over its banks and cut a new channel pretty straight through the pin, thus destroying the remaining glory of the boatmen's ancient landing place and the pioneer town. Since that date, with old Pinhook gone by, the river adhering to its new and straighter channel, the pinhook bend has been removed a short distance down the river, on the east side, where opposite the cemetery highlands the stream makes another graceful turn around a narrow strip of lowland. Here is modern Pinhook, on the estate of Samuel S. Perley, and here it will no doubt remain until the contemplated dam in the river at the Indiana-Michigan line is constructed, arresting the current and backing the water up for miles, completely submerging both ancient and modern Pinhook on the old St. Joe."

Is it the irony of fate that the sites of the lost towns of St. Joseph and Portage are now embraced by Riverview cemetery on the south, and the County Infirmary, on the north? Should the old towns arise for a moment from their ashes, they would find themselves encompassed by the resting places of the dead and of the old and infirm; and they might then, perhaps, fall back into their long sleep with an added sense of the fitness of their surroundings. But would not the ghosts of these dead cities of the old Portage take with them into that sleep of forgetfulness a smile of exultation that across these same grounds,

for long ages, even before Columbus dreamed of the Indies, went up and down the commerce of the wilderness; that along this portage was the pathway of the Mound Builder, the Miami, the Pottawatomie, the coureur des bois and the missionary; that this soil was pressed by the feet of La Salle and Hennepin and Tonti and Charlevoix, and perhaps even by those of the sainted Marquette?

Sec. 3.—PLAINFIELD.—The village of Plainfield was the first platted town to be laid out in Olive township. It was surveyed December 23, 1833, by Tyra W. Bray; and was laid out on "nearly equal portions of the northeast and northwest quarters of section thirty-six and the southeast and southwest quarters of section twenty-five, in township thirty-eight north, range one west." The proprietors were Israel H., Jacob and Hiram Rush. The town is still found upon the map located on the Laporte road, a mile and a half east of New Carlisle; but it is for all practical purposes among the "towns that were," and hence receives notice in this place.

Sec. 4.—PALESTINE.—A mile and a half east of Plainfield, located also on the Laporte road, was once the town of Palestine. It, too, was surveyed by Tyra W. Bray, and stood in "equal parts on sections twenty-nine, thirty, thirty-one and thirty-two, township thirty-eight north, range one east." It was surveyed December 3, 1834, for the proprietors, Martin Clark, Daniel Curry, Abijah S. Reeden and Matthias Kinney. The existence of this old town is so completely obliterated that Judge Hubbard, who was born on Terre Coupee prairie, doubts whether any one on the prairie can point out its site.

Sec. 5.—WILLIAMSPORT.—This town was surveyed by Thomas P. Bulla for the proprietor, John Newell, who acknowledged the plat December 13, 1834. It was located at the junction of the St. Joseph river and Babaugo creek, on the southeast fraction of the northeast quarter of section nine, township thirty-seven north, range four east. It has left no record but its plat.

Sec. 6.—GREENSBURG.—On December 4, 1835, the town of Greensburg was surveyed for Jacob Eutzler, in section twenty-five, township thirty-seven north, range three east. It lay on each side of the South Bend and Goshen road. It does not seem that there was any pressing need for the existence of the town, and on March 6, 1843, it was vacated by order of the board of county commissioners.

Sec. 7.—CANTON.—Thomas P. Bulla was the surveyor of the town of Canton, located on the Babaugo creek, in section sixteen, township thirty-seven north, range four east. The survey was acknowledged December 14, 1835, by the proprietor, William Ireland. This town did not flourish as anticipated, and on June 3, 1844, on the petition of J. E. Hollister, the plat was vacated by the county commissioners. None of the towns in this part of the county, except Osceola, have had more than an ephemeral existence.

Sec. 8.—MOUNT PLEASANT.—There is little left of fair Mount Pleasant except the record of its plat, which reads as follows:

"This is a plan of the Town of Mount Pleasant in St. Joseph county, Indiana. Laid out on a part of the northwest and southwest quarters of section thirty-two and the northeast quarter of section thirty-one in township thirty-eight north and range two east. Each lot is sixty-six feet wide and one hundred and thirty-two feet long, except lots numbered eleven and fifty-five, the width of which is marked within them. The width and the course of the streets is marked in each respectively. The alleys are each ten feet wide, and run parallel with Michigan street. The lots, which are numbered, form the town plat, and nothing more nor less. Surveyed by Tyra W. Bray, St. Joseph County Surveyor.

"Before me, L. M. Taylor, recorder, personally came the within named proprietors,—David Miller, Ashbury Baltimore, Henry Brown, Jacob Ritter and James R. McGee, and acknowledged the within to be their true act and deed for the purposes within represented.

"Signed, sealed and delivered in my presence, August 19, 1836.

"Attest: Lathrop M. Taylor, Recorder."

The town continued to maintain a feeble existence until by an act of the legislature, approved January 17, 1850, the plat was formally vacated.^a Mount Pleasant was the third town to rise and go down in German township; St. Joseph, Portage and Mount Pleasant, all within the limits of the great Miami village where La Salle held his memorable conference, in May, 1861.^b A church, a school, farm houses and other farm buildings now remain to mark the site of the town, well named Mount Pleasant.

Sec. 9.—TERRE COUPEE.—The town of Terre Coupee, also known as Hamilton from Hamilton's tavern,^c was located on each side of the Chicago road, the old Sauk trail, in the southeast quarter of section nine, township thirty-eight, range one east. The survey of the town was made by Thomas P. Bulla for Jacob Egbert who acknowledged the plat April 12, 1837. Additions made to the plat were acknowledged January 30, 1841, by Jacob Egbert and Jonathan Hubbard. Terre Coupee, or Hamilton, as it is more frequently called, was for a time a very prosperous town, located as it was on the great through line of travel from the east. But with the building of the Lake Shore railroad through New Carlisle the greatness of Hamilton declined; and even its original name of Terre Coupee was transferred to the Lake Shore railroad station, two miles east of New Carlisle. The plat was vacated by order of the county commissioners, June 10, 1841. As the Hon. Lucius Hubbard, who spent his boyhood in and about the town, says in his reminiscences, which are set out in the preceding chapter, the town "is on its way to join Plainfield and Palestine."

An interesting item as to the burial of veterans of the war of 1812 in the old grave-

yard at Terre Coupee, and at other points in Olive township, appeared recently in the Indianapolis News, and is here inserted:

"Probably no township in Indiana is the burial place of so many soldiers of the war of 1812 as Olive township, the largest town of which is New Carlisle. At the village of Hamilton, on the old Chicago road, formerly the Great Sauk Trail, where the stages from Detroit to Chicago changed horses, is a quaint old graveyard. The veterans of the war of 1812 who are buried there are John Cooper, David Dalrymple, Gabriel Druliner, Moses Ivins, Wm. D. Jones, Joshua Keene, John Lane, Leonard R. Rush, Jacob White and Virgil Reynolds.

"Three soldiers of the Indian war buried at this place are William Burden, Samuel Reynolds and Elias Heaton. In the Olive Chapel cemetery, in the same township, are four veterans of the war of 1812. Two are in the New Carlisle cemetery and two at Maple Grove."

Sec. 10.—DENNISTON.—This town was laid out in July, 1837, on the northeast fractional half of section twelve and the south part of section one, township thirty-seven, range two east. The proprietors were Garrett V. Denniston and Joseph Fellows, who laid out the town in connection with their ownership of the water power on the St. Joseph river.^a As in the case of others, however, their enterprises were overthrown by the panic of 1837; and, on September 3, 1845, the town of Denniston was formally vacated by order of the board of county commissioners. The site of the town was nearly identical with that of Lowell, afterwards laid out and since become a part of the city of South Bend.

II. UNINCORPORATED TOWNS.

Sec. 1.—OSCEOLA.—The original plat of Osceola, near the extreme east of the county, in Penn township, was laid out in 1837. The record is as follows:

"This is a plat of the town of Osceola, in

a. See Chap. 7, Subd. 1.

a. Local Laws, 1849, p. 99.

b. See Chap. 2, Subd. 2.

c. See Chap. 8, Reminiscences of Mr. Jesse Haines.

St. Joseph County, Indiana, laid out on the west part of the southwest part of section nine, in township number thirty-seven north, range four east. The lots are each sixty-six feet front, and one hundred and thirty-two feet back, except those which are fractional. The width and courses of the streets are marked on each respectively. The alleys are each fourteen feet wide, and lie parallel with the streets.

“JOHN A. HENRICKS.

“November 17, 1837.

“N. B. The beginning corner to resurvey any of the lots in this plat is the corner on the river, between sections eight and nine.”

The main street in the town comes in from the west as “Vistula street,” and goes out on the east as the “Road to Toledo.” The plat shows an elaborate system of mill races, triple in form, connecting the river on the north, with the Babaugo creek, on the east. A small island is also shown on the river. This plat was vacated by an act of the legislature, approved January 31, 1842.^a

An addition to Osceola, by William C. Thrall, was platted April 24, 1856. This was to the south of the site of the original plat, on the east half of the northwest quarter of section sixteen, township thirty-seven north, range four east. The plat was surveyed by Milton W. Stokes, who also made the survey of another addition June 4, 1859.

The town grew in its additions, rather than in the original plat, which, as we have seen, was vacated before the platting of the additions. This was no doubt due to the building of the Lake Shore road further from the river than the original plat, through section sixteen instead of section nine. The main Elkhart-Toledo public highway runs through the former site of the original plat, while the Goshen highway passes through the additions.

The town received its musical name from Osceola, the famous Seminole chief, who was taken prisoner by General Jessup in October, 1837, a few weeks before the town was plat-

a. Local Laws, 1841, p. 163.

ted. The town of Osceola had but a feeble growth until the building of the interurban railway from South Bend to Goshen in 1899 and 1900. The Indiana Railway Company built one of its power houses at Osceola, and new life appeared at once in the old town. Even without the building of the power house, the extending of the interurban through Osceola would have worked a transformation in the life of the town. It came at once to have many of the advantages of a suburban town, easily accessible as it was to Elkhart and Goshen, on the one hand, and to Mishawaka and South Bend, on the other. After the completion of the interurban lines from South Bend to the west, there will be a keen rivalry between Osceola and New Carlisle, one at the extreme east and one at the extreme west of the county, and both admirably located as residence towns, with hourly connection with metropolitan cities to the east and the west. The population in 1900, was one hundred and seventy-seven.

Sec. 2.—CRUM'S POINT.—On April 21, 1875, Christian Holler laid out the original plat of the town of Crum's Point, on the line of the Grand Trunk railroad, in Warren township, not far from the junction of the Grapevine creek with the Kankakee river; and located on the southwest quarter of the southwest quarter of section twenty-seven, township thirty-seven north, range one east. The survey of the town was made by Matthias Stover, September 7 and 8, 1874. On January 20, 1882, Mr. Holler platted an addition to the town. With the drainage of the upper Kankakee valley, Crum's Point, or Crum's Town, as it is frequently called, has become the center of a rich agricultural district, and is quite likely to grow to be a place of considerable importance. The population, in 1900, was one hundred. The town is on one of the main gravel roads leading southwest from South Bend and connecting with the road to North Liberty and Walkerton.

Sec. 3.—GRANGER.—The great farmer's movement organized during the latter part of

the nineteenth century, and known as the Grange was commemorated by the founding of the town of Granger, in Harris township, by Thomas J. Foster, April 3, 1883. The town is near the Michigan line, on the east side of what is now the Big Four railroad, in fractional section seven, township thirty-eight north, range four east. An addition to the town was made by Mr. Foster in September of the same year. The population in 1900, was yet small, being but sixty-seven souls. A more suitable name than Granger could not have been selected for the town. It is situated in the heart of the rich and beautiful Harris prairie; and the country, both in Indiana and Michigan, is one of the finest farming districts to be found anywhere. An extensive grain trade is carried on over the Big Four.

Sec. 4.—WYATT.—East of Lakeville, on the northeast quarter of the southwest quarter of section thirty-four, township thirty-six north, range three east, in Madison township and on the Wabash railroad, is the new and busy town of Wyatt. It was laid out and platted March 27, 1894, by Jeremiah Beehtel and Louisa Beehtel. When the Wabash came through the heavy timbered section of the south part of Madison township, and the drainage of the rich lands turned that wet region into fertile farms, the need of a shipping town was evident, and Wyatt came in answer to the pressing needs of the enterprising people. In 1900 the population had reached one hundred and seventy; and the town promises to be one of the pushing, bustling communities of the county.

Sec. 5.—LINDLEY.—The youngest of our towns is Lindley, in Warren township. It lies on the north side of the Lake Shore railroad, in the north part of the northwest quarter of the northeast quarter of section two, township thirty-seven north, range one east. It was platted September 6, 1901, by Ashbury Lindley and Mina Lindley. The locality, though but little more than a railway station, has had a surfeit of names. For a long time it was known as Warren Center, and that was

the name of the railroad station. The name given to the post office, however, was Sweet Home, a very pretty designation for a country town; this name has been changed to Lindley. Recently the railroad company hunted up a fourth name, and the station is now called Lydick. It would be fitting that all should compromise on the honored name of that worthy pioneer, Ashbury Lindley, who lived his good life in the neighborhood, and platted the town. A little to the west of the town is the crossing of the branch of the Michigan Central railroad, running from South Bend to St. Joseph, on lake Michigan. The census of 1900 shows the population of Sweet Home to be thirty-four.

Sec. 6.—WOODLAND.—At the corner of sections fifteen, sixteen, twenty-one and twenty-two, township thirty-six north, range three east, in Madison township, the town of Woodland has been in existence during a time extending back at least as far as the year 1860. The town was never platted; although on August 7, 1899, Mochel's plat, practically an addition to the town, was laid out on the north half of the northwest quarter of said section twenty-two. The place has always been a business center of some importance. Schools, churches, groceries, post office, physician's office, saw-mills, blacksmith shop, and other like features of a rural town have always been maintained. The population in the year 1900 was ninety persons. Some of those who have been prominent in the business of the town are: Martin Fink, William Shenefield, Dr. Bishop, Adam Mochel, Frederick Weber, Conrad Kelley, Michael Kettring, Philip Buhler, Dr. Fisher, Frederick Lang and Charles Frank, the saw-mill and lumbermen, Scott, Shenefield, Thomas Crakes and many others. In the lumber business particularly, Woodland has been a busy town. No less than four or five saw-mills were, at different times, at work in and around the town.

Sec. 7.—WARWICK.—In the northwest quarter of section eighteen, township thirty-eight, range one east, in Olive township, is

another unplatted hamlet, which seems advancing to the dignity of a busy center. It is known as Warwick, and is located on the old Chicago road, or Great Sauk Trail, at the intersection of the South Bend and St. Joseph branch of the Michigan Central railroad. The population is very small.

Sec. 8.—NUTWOOD.—This town is a station on the Vandalia railroad, in Center township, in the south part of section three, township thirty-six north, range two east. It has a post office; and in 1900 had a population of forty-three. Some other little hamlets, or collections of houses, may be found in different sections of the county; but they are hardly more than pleasant neighborhoods and need not be referred to as towns.

III. INCORPORATED TOWNS.

Sec. 1.—NEW CARLISLE.—One of the oldest of our towns, as it is one of the most beautifully situated, is New Carlisle, which from its picturesque eminence overlooks fair Terre Coupee prairie in Olive township. The town was founded in 1835 by Richard R. Carlisle, a unique character of our early history. He was of a restless disposition, a sportsman and a traveler rather than a pioneer settler. He did not remain in the town to which he gave his name, and is said to have spent his last days in Philadelphia. The land on which the town was laid out had been obtained from the Indians by one Lazarus Bourissau, a Frenchman who married an Indian wife. It was from the children of Bourissau that the land was purchased by Carlisle. The dedication and acknowledgment of the town plat reads as follows:

“This plat represents the Town of New Carlisle, situated in the northeast quarter of section thirty-four, in township thirty-eight north, in range one west, in St. Joseph county, Indiana. Each lot is one hundred and thirty-two feet in length by fifty feet in width. All the streets and alleys cross at right angles—variation north eight degrees and twenty minutes west. The width of the streets is

marked in each respectively. [Michigan street is shown to be one hundred feet in width; and Front, Chestnut, Cherry, Filbert, Arch and Race, each, sixty feet.] The alleys lying parallel with Michigan street are each sixteen and one-half feet wide; those of a contrary course are each eight feet wide.

“RICHARD R. CARLISLE,

“Proprietor.

“The beginning point to re-survey any of the lots of this town is at a stone at the northeast corner of No. thirty-three.

“Surveyed by Tyra W. Bray, St. Joseph County Surveyor.”

The plat was acknowledged by Mr. Carlisle August 15, 1835.

On March 15, 1837, R. R. Carlisle filed and acknowledged a very much extended plat of New Carlisle, on the same general plan as the first. This last plat was printed and lithographed in the city of New York, and contains a beautiful view of the town overlooking Terre Coupee prairie. Apparently a large number of these printed plats were prepared. They were no doubt intended to be circulated throughout the east and to attract attention to the beautiful town.

New Carlisle, though still a small place, could hardly fail to hold its own in the struggle for existence. The fine eminence on which it stands; the unequaled landscape which spreads out before it; the rich agricultural county that surrounds it; and the absence of any rival town for many miles,—all united to attach its people to the old town and to draw others to it. The coming of the Lake Shore railroad, in 1851, secured the stability of the little municipality. On June 7, 1866, Samuel C. Lancaster and thirty-one others filed with the board of county commissioners a petition for the incorporation of the town; and the board fixed June 30, 1866, for an election to determine the question. On September 4, 1866, the report of the election was filed with the county board, and it showed forty-four votes for incorporation and six against it. Thereupon the board entered an

order incorporating the town, under the name of New Carlisle.

Under an act approved March 3, 1899, towns not having more than fifteen hundred inhabitants, and having no school indebtedness, were authorized to transfer their schools and school property to the trustees of the townships in which such towns respectively should be located.^a New Carlisle took advantage of this law and transferred its schools to the jurisdiction of the trustee of Olive township; and, consequently, it has since been simply a civil and not a school town. The schools of New Castle are nevertheless of a high order and excellently conducted.

The New Carlisle Collegiate Institute, a school for the education of both sexes, was erected by the Methodist Episcopal church, in 1859; and the school was opened in 1861, under the patronage of that church. The Institute took high rank as a classical school;^b and continued to flourish for seven or eight years. The Institute building was a substantial two-story brick structure, forty-four by seventy-five feet. The expense of conducting the school, however, proved too heavy for the church; and accordingly the building was purchased for the use of the school town of New Carlisle.^c An exceedingly interesting reunion of the surviving students of the old Institute took place August 29, 1907, which was attended by about eighty alumni from different parts of the country. At the close of the reunion, a regular organization was perfected.

The population of the town of New Carlisle, according to the census of 1900, was five hundred and ninety-seven.

The New Carlisle Gazette, one of the best of our county papers, was established February 6, 1880, by George M. Fountain and George H. Alward. It was at first independent in politics; but at the end of six months Mr. Fountain bought out his partner, and

continued the publication of the Gazette as a Republican journal, until his election as clerk of the St. Joseph circuit court, when the present proprietor, Mr. E. L. Maudlin, took charge.

On the incorporation of the town, it would seem that the people of New Carlisle had everything needed to make life full and content: Churches, schools, shops, stores, newspaper, all located in one of the most beautiful landscapes in America; and with these, and more than all these, a highly moral and intellectual community. It is an ideal home for the philosopher, the artist or the poet, as well as for the contended, right living American citizen. With the completion of the two interurban railways soon to connect the town with South Bend, on the east and with Laporte, Michigan City and Chicago on the west, it would seem that nothing will remain to make New Carlisle one of the most desirable residence towns in the country.

Sec. 2.—NORTH LIBERTY.—The town of North Liberty, situated in Liberty township, followed close after New Carlisle. It was founded in 1836 by Daniel Antrim. The dedication of the plat is as follows:

"This is the plat of the Town of North Liberty, in St. Joseph county, Indiana. Laid out on the southwest quarter of section twenty-eight and the southeast quarter of section twenty-nine, in township thirty-six north, in range one east. The streets and alleys cross at right angles, bearing east, west, north or south. The width of the streets is marked in each, respectively. [The streets are each sixty-six feet in width, except Main street, which is eighty-two and a half feet wide.] The alleys lying north and south are each sixteen and one-half feet wide; those lying east and west, fourteen feet wide. Each lot is ten rods, east and west, by four rods north and south, containing one quarter of an acre.

"Laid out for the purposes above mentioned, as witness my hand, this 12th day of January, 1836.

“DANIEL ANTRIM.

a. Acts, 1899, p. 373.

b. Turner's Gazetteer, 1867, p. 73.

c. See Chapman's Hist. St. Joseph County, p. 768.

"N. B. The corner of sections twenty-eight, twenty-nine, thirty-two and thirty-three is designated as the beginning point in surveying the town plat.

"Surveyed by Tyra W. Bray, St. Joseph County Surveyor."^a

Since the extension of the Wabash railroad and the Three "I" railroad through the town, North Liberty has become one of our most important centers of business and population.

So far as can be learned, the first newspaper, the North Liberty Herald, was established about the year 1892. The Herald was published for nearly four years. On March 23, 1895, publication of the North Liberty News was begun by its present editor and proprietor, Mr. Dell M. Woodward. The News is a sprightly well conducted paper, and fully meets the wants of the people of North Liberty and vicinity. About the year 1903, the North West Indianian was started at North Liberty, but continued for only about a year. The population of North Liberty, according to the United States census of 1900, was five hundred and four. The town was duly incorporated June 8, 1894.

Sec. 3.—LAKEVILLE.—The town of Lakeville is situated in Union township, on either side of the Michigan road; and is located on the east half of the southeast quarter of section thirty-four, and the west part of the southwest quarter of section thirty-five, in township thirty-seven north, range two east. It receives its name from a number of small lakes south of the town, the chief of which is Riddle's lake. Originally this was merely a place of rest and refreshment for the accommodation of travelers, merchants and others doing business along the great highway leading through the state from the Ohio river to Lake Michigan. After the opening of the Michigan road and before the coming of the railroads, immigration and commerce for northern Indiana sought this north and south highway from Logansport to Michigan City, instead of pro-

a. See the history of Liberty Township, in the previous chapter.

ceeding, as formerly, along the Indian trails from Fort Wayne and Detroit, or coming up the St. Joseph from Lake Michigan. The immigrant seeking a home upon the Michigan road lands or bringing his family and household goods to the home already selected; the speculator intent upon picking out the fat of the land or in projecting towns in the wilderness, and the merchant bringing up his goods from the Wabash,—all moved along the great thoroughfare, on foot, on horseback, by the lumbering stage coach or in the weighty Pennsylvania wagons that perchance had once rolled across the Alleghanies, bearing in their capacious bosoms the seeds of future commonwealths. And on this thoroughfare Lakeville was a modest station.

The original plat of the town, consisting of Lots A. B. C. D. E. & F., on the west side of the Michigan road, is first shown on record as lying north of and adjoining Coquillard's addition to the town; which addition was platted August 18, 1857, by Alexis T., Alexis and Frances C. Coquillard. Alexis Theodore Coquillard was the son; Alexis, the nephew; and Frances C. Coquillard, the widow of the elder Alexis Coquillard, one of the founders of the city of South Bend. The original plat was itself afterwards placed on record December 23, 1859; but again in connection with the Coquillard addition.

Like others of our towns, Lakeville was for many years of slow growth. When the Michigan road, from South Bend to Plymouth became a plank road, an infusion of new life for a time gave an air of prosperity to the little hamlet, and several additions were platted to the town; but after a few years the plank road became out of repair and the old planks were taken up and the toll houses removed. After another interval the Vandalia railroad came in, and still later the Wabash gave connection with Chicago and with the east. The town has since prospered, and is now one of the busiest of our small municipalities. Additions have been platted by John Henderson, Michael Hupp, Stephen A. Ulery

and Sarah E. Rush; and the population, in 1900, had reached three hundred and fifty. The drainage and improved cultivation of the surrounding lands have also tended to establish the town upon a substantial basis, and Lakeville is now sure to go on prospering and to prosper. Lakeville became an incorporated town by order of the board of county commissioners, July 7, 1902.

Sec. 4.—RIVER PARK.—River Park occupies the territory between South Bend and Mishawaka, on the north side of the St. Joseph river. The original plat was acknowledged April 7, 1892, by Albert J. Horne and Benjamin F. Dunn. Several additions have since been platted, the principal of these being Fordham and Berner's Grove. A petition for the incorporation of the town was filed with the county board May 7, 1900, and an election ordered for May 23, 1900. While the election was in favor of incorporation, yet, on remonstrance being presented and considered, the commissioners refused to order the town incorporated. From this decision of the board an appeal was taken to the circuit court, where the decision was reversed; and an order was made by the court, December 28, 1900, incorporating the town of River Park. The town has grown rapidly, the population being now estimated at from two to three hundred people. It has a post office, an excellent school and many business houses suited to the needs of a suburban population. A fine fruit nursery is conducted by Mr. John B. Witwer, who, like the great majority of his townsmen, has a most delightful home in River Park. The South Bend watch factory, which rivals Elgin and Waltham in the superior quality of its watches, is located in River Park.

Pottawatomie Park adjoins the town of River Park; although this fine pleasure ground, the largest in the county, was placed in the custody of the city of South Bend by the county commissioners. The park consists of sixty acres, including forty acres formerly used for

the St. Joseph county fair grounds. On the discontinuance of the holding of annual county fairs on those grounds, an act, approved March 1, 1905,^a was passed by the legislature authorizing the county commissioners to place such lands in the care of the city authorities, to be used as a park, which on April 3, 1906, was done in this case. The county afterwards added twenty acres of fine woodland on the north, formerly a part of the old county farm. The city of South Bend, in accepting this trust, gave to the grounds the exceedingly appropriate name of Pottawatomie Park. The late Richard H. Lyon, whose fine taste and historical instinct were sensibly affected by the erection of this noble park for the use of the people of the county, wrote the following beautiful tribute to the friendly Indians, after whom the park was named:

"The action of the South Bend authorities in adopting the name Pottawatomie for the new park on the old fair grounds, recently donated to the city by the county commissioners, will meet the general approbation of this community. It is a commendable proceeding, thus honoring the great nation of red men, who with their cousins, the Ottawas and the Chippewas, once possessed and occupied this vast territory now embraced in northern Indiana, by giving to the largest and most important tract of the region dedicated to public use this highly appropriate title in recognition of a tribe whose name is written high in Algonquin history.

"Too little attention is paid in this part of the west to the preservation of good old Indian names by the white race that took the land from their dusky brethren, the original and rightful owners. South Bend's streets, most of her leading ones, are laid out on Indian trails, yet not one bears an Indian name with the sole exception of Miami street, formerly the old Turkey Creek road. There have been distinguished red men enough associated with the early history of this country

a. Acts, 1905, p. 108.

to have afforded each of our important thoroughfares a representative Indian name. In the states east of us, particularly in New York and New England, Indian names of appropriate significant meaning have been generously applied to streets, public buildings, parks and private estates, thus preserving permanently the quaint lore of the original Americans.

"Every Indian word and especially an Indian name, has a distinct meaning and that is one reason so many have been adopted by the whites of the east. The word Pottawatomie has its peculiar definition or meaning in English. The Indians of this race were said to be experts in starting fires from the rubbing of two sticks together, hence they were called flame creators or blaze blowers. They originated in the Green bay country, Wisconsin, and followed the explorer, Robert Cavalier de La Salle, into the St. Joseph valley, soon after he discovered this region in 1679. It is an important fact that the first friendly service that La Salle received from either whites or Indians, after he launched out on his tour of the discovery of the great northwest, was at the hands of a Pottawatomie chief. The Pottawatomies were ever the white man's friend, but the white man was not always their friend, at least did not always treat them as they deserved.

"During the Chicago massacre in 1812 and the Black Hawk war of 1832, the Pottawatomies of the St. Joseph valley rendered invaluable service to the whites, which at the time was duly appreciated, but forgotten in after years when the government obtaining possession of their lands by subterfuge, bundled the most of them off to Kansas, where they were given a small and unfruitful reservation for the vast and rich lands they and their fathers once owned here. The last of the tribe to leave this vicinity was the Pokagon band, which removed from the original village on the old Sac and Fox trail down the river near Bertrand to VanBuren and Cass counties, Michigan, in 1836.

"There is not a full-blooded Pottawatomie living in St. Joseph county now. Not many moons in the past the brave red man held undisputed sway in the wilds hereabouts, but his wigwam, his hunting grounds, his war whoop and his quaint garb have all disappeared and in their place the productive farms, the thriving cities and villages of the white man cover the landscape. Nothing is left of the Pottawatomie but the unknown graves of his ancestors, the memory of his useful deeds and his extreme friendliness toward his white brethren. Why should we not honor his memory by christening the new and extensive park with the name of Pottawatomie? When shall we see a statue of a representative Pottawatomie chief placed in a conspicuous spot in the grand park?

Sec. 5.—WALKERTON.—The town of Walkerton, not far from the center of Lincoln township, is one of the most flourishing centers in northern Indiana. Except the cities of South Bend and Mishawaka, it is the largest and most important municipal corporation in St. Joseph county. The town, as it now stands, is a combination of different towns and additions, all united under the name and government of Walkerton. The first of these corporations was that of West Troy, laid out by Elias D. Jones in the southeast part of the northeast quarter of section twenty-three, township thirty-five north, range one west. This town was platted by Mr. Jones December 14, 1854.

On June 20, 1856, William C. Hannah platted the town of Walkerton, which was laid out in the southwest quarter of section twenty-four, in the same township and range as West Troy. Burk's addition to West Troy was platted April 27, 1860. On December 11, 1868, Jacob Rupel had the plats of his first three additions to Walkerton placed on record. A fourth addition was platted by him on July 2, 1875, and a fifth on January 23, 1884. Dixon W. Place platted his first addition to Walkerton September 3, 1887. All

these corporations and additions, with the subsequent growth of each, are now united in one vigorous municipality, the center of an active and enterprising business and farming community.

The town was named from John Walker, the promoter of a railroad through the town, from Plymouth to Laporte, known at first as the Indianapolis, Peru & Chicago railroad, but long since become a part of the Lake Erie & Western system, extending from Indianapolis to Michigan City. This railroad, during the feeble period of its existence, was nicknamed the Pe-wee road. Two other railroads unite with the Lake Erie & Western to make Walkerton an important railroad center. These are the Baltimore & Ohio, and the Three I, otherwise the Chicago, Illinois & Southern. The Lake Erie and the Three I are under the control of the Lake Shore system. These railroads are of great moment to Walkerton and the southwest part of the county. Formerly the connections with the outside world were practically confined to exits by way of Plymouth and Laporte. Now, in addition, the people are in close connection with Chicago and the east by the great trunk line, the Baltimore & Ohio, and with the county seat at South Bend, as well as with the Illinois coal fields, by the Three I, or Chicago, Illinois & Southern, as it is now called.

Mr. Samuel J. Nicoles, long a leading citizen of the town, as he is indeed a Christian gentleman, whose citizenship would be an honor to any community, gives the following comprehensive statement of present conditions: Walkerton, says Mr. Nicoles, is compactly built, with a very good class of homes in the residence sections, and with good two-story brick buildings in the business part. Among these is an excellent hotel. Another is the two-story cement stone building, occupied and owned by William A. Endly, the enterprising editor and proprietor of the Walkerton Independent.

The first newspaper established in the town was the Walkerton Visitor, the first copy of

which was issued by Henry S. Mintle, April 7, 1875. Mr. Mintle continued the publication until his death, May 13, 1886, when the paper was sold to J. F. Endly, who changed the name to the Walkerton Independent. Since the death of Mr. Endly, his son, William A. Endly, has continued the publication of the Independent, which has become a first class newspaper.

In 1879, before J. F. Endly became the owner of the Independent, he started the publication of the St. Joseph County Republican, which, in 1881, he sold to D. M. Eveland. This paper was afterwards purchased by Theodore Needham, who, in turn, sold it to Burroughs & Son. Later it ceased publication, and the presses and material were removed to Laporte.

The Walkerton State Bank, with a capital of twenty-five thousand dollars, is a well conducted and very safe and conservative institution. A grain elevator of ample capacity is owned and managed by a reliable company with abundance of capital. The merchants are agreeable and accommodating business men, and carry at all times large and well assorted stocks of goods. The town is also well supplied with lawyers and doctors. There is a substantial brick school building, in which is conducted a graded school, including a first class high school.

There are at present five church organizations: the Presbyterian, the Catholic, the United Brethren, the Methodist and the Seventh Day Adventist. Two of these have recently built fine church edifices, one of cement stone and one of pressed brick. Another has in course of erection a fine large building of stone and concrete. The first church to be erected in the town was by the Methodists, in 1859. The Baptists erected a church in 1870, and the Catholics in 1876. The Presbyterian society, as stated by Mr. Endly, was organized February 5, 1876, with sixteen members, when the old Baptist church building was used as its house of worship.

The present fine edifice was formally dedicated June 12, 1904.

The streets of Walkerton are wide, with cement sidewalks extending in every direction, and with shade trees on either side. The town is in some degree committed to municipal ownership of public utilities. It has a well constructed and well managed system of water works; and also a fine electric light plant. Both are owned and operated by the town.

After several fruitless attempts, Walkerton became an incorporated town June 8, 1877. The first petition for incorporation was filed with the county auditor December 2, 1873, and an election was ordered for the 22nd of the same month. By reason of irregularities in the proceedings, the commissioners refused to act favorably on the petition. A second petition was not filed until March 8, 1876, when an election was ordered for April 3, 1876. No further proceedings were had

on this second petition. The third petition was filed with the board March 5, 1877, and an election was ordered for April 2nd following. The report of this third election was returned on June 8, 1877; and the board of county commissioners finding everything regular and according to law, an order was entered duly incorporating the town.

By the census of 1900, the population of Walkerton was one thousand and thirty-seven. The town has grown rapidly since that date, and Mr. Nicoles estimates the present population at fifteen hundred. With its enterprising citizens, its fine farming surroundings and its excellent railroad facilities, Walkerton is, besides, well located, being at a sufficient distance from South Bend, Laporte, Plymouth and Knox to admit of free and ample growth. Its future is assured; and St. Joseph county has good cause to be proud of her southwestern capital.

CHAPTER X.

THE CITY OF MISHAWAKA.

I. FORMATION AND INCORPORATION.

Unlike as they are in many respects, there is one thing in which Mishawaka resembles Walkerton. The town consisted originally of several towns, plats and additions, which, ultimately, were brought into a single municipal body. To this municipality was given the musical name of Mishawaka, a name which before the union did not belong in a distinctive manner to any of the divisions.

Sec. 1.—THE ST. JOSEPH IRON WORKS.—The first and principal of these minor divisions was the St. Joseph Iron Works, a town laid out in 1833 by Alanson M. Hurd, who is therefore generally regarded as the founder of the city of Mishawaka. The following is Mr. Hurd's dedication and description of his plat:

"The exterior line of this village plat begins on the top of the bluff, on the south side of the St. Joseph river, and runs thence south seventy poles to a stake; thence west eighty and $1/1621$ poles to a stake; thence north sixty-one poles to a stake; thence west seventeen poles to a stake; thence north sixty-two poles to the river; and thence, as the river meanders, one hundred fourteen and one-half poles, containing fifty-two and seven-tenths acres. The subdivision is as this plat represents. Each lot is four by eight perches, containing, of course, thirty-two square perches each. The alleys are sixteen and a half feet wide, and the width of each street is marked in them respectively. This village is laid out on the north part of lot number

six and the northeast part of lot number five, in school section number sixteen, township thirty-seven north of range number three east, called the town of the St. Joseph Iron Works.

"In testimony I have hereunto set my hand and seal, this 15th day of July, 1833.

"A. M. HURD."

Acknowledged July 15, 1833, by William L. Earl, his attorney-in-fact. "Laid out and surveyed for Earl and Hurd, by T. W. Bray, St. Joseph county surveyor." The river is marked in the plat as the "Great St. Joseph River."

The original plat was re-filed by A. M. Hurd, on February 21, 1835, together with additions on the north, west and south. It is this second plat that is usually referred to as the "Original Town."

On October 23, 1835, a plat of out lots was filed by Mr. Hurd, lying on the west of the original town, and opposite the island in the river at that point. On this last plat the name of the principal east and west street is recognized as the "Vistula Road."

On August 17, 1836, Francis P. Taylor acknowledged and filed his plat as an addition to the town of St. Joseph Iron Works. This plat was surveyed by Thomas P. Bulla, and the road from the west is called "Vistula and Loteas Road."

The name St. Joseph Iron Works was taken from that of a company of the same name which Mr. Hurd, Mr. Earl and others had organized for the manufacture of iron

at this point. Bog iron ore was found in considerable quantities in the swamp under the hills south of the town, being the same swamp around which La Salle was forced to find his way on the night in December, 1679, when he got lost in seeking for the portage to the Kankakee.^a Mr. Hurd and his company were of opinion that the ore in this marsh would prove inexhaustible and that his iron works would expand into a flourishing manufacturing town. The construction of a blast furnace for the reduction of the ore had been commenced the spring previous to the platting of the town, and was completed in 1834.

The company was duly incorporated by an act of the legislature, approved January 22, 1835, in which it was declared, "That Alanson M. Hurd, of the county of St. Joseph, John J. Deming and John H. Orr, and their associates, be, and they are hereby constituted a body corporate and politic, by the name and style of the president, directors and company of the St. Joseph Iron Works, for the purpose of manufacturing iron."^b

By section 6 of the act, it was provided "That the said corporation shall be and they are hereby authorized to erect a dam across the river St. Joseph, at the head of the Mishawaka rapids." The dam thus authorized was built by the iron company in 1835. It was the first dam across the St. Joseph river and is still in good condition.

The elaborate title of the company, being the "President, Directors and Company of the St. Joseph Iron Works," proved to be needlessly cumbrous, and the legislature, by an act approved February 1, 1836, shortened the name of the corporation to the "St. Joseph Iron Company."^c Under this title the company continued to operate its furnaces and manufacture iron until 1856, when the bog ore was exhausted. The business of the corporation was thereupon changed to manufacturing. A foundry was put in oper-

ation, and plows, cultivators and other like machinery were manufactured. In 1868 the name of the corporation was again changed and it has since been known as the St. Joseph Manufacturing Company. This old corporation has been one of the effective forces in building up Mishawaka and in making it a great manufacturing center.

Alanson M. Hurd and other enterprising citizens, not content with the building of the dam and laying the foundation of great manufacturing industries, were desirous of having a bridge across the river. For this purpose a charter was obtained from the legislature by an act approved February 7, 1835,^a in which it was provided, "That N. M. Wells, A. M. Hurd, John J. Deming, J. H. Orr and O. Hurd, with their associates, be and are hereby constituted a body corporate and politic, by the name and style of the Mishawaka bridge company, for the purpose of constructing a bridge across the St. Joseph river at the Mishawaka rapids, in the township of Penn, in the county of St. Joseph." The bridge was finally constructed in 1837. It was built across the river at Bridge street and was a substantial structure creditable to the private enterprise of its builders. This was the first bridge to be placed across the St. Joseph river.^b

It will have been noticed that although the official name of the town was the St. Joseph Iron Works, yet the name Mishawaka persisted in indicating its presence, even before its time. In each of the acts of the legislature to which reference has been made the name Mishawaka appears; the president, directors and company of the St. Joseph Iron Works were authorized to build a dam "at the head of the Mishawaka rapids," and the company incorporated to construct a bridge over the river was styled "the Mishawaka bridge company," and was authorized to build its "bridge across the St. Joseph river at the Mishawaka rapids." Even earlier

a. See Chap. 2, Subd. 2.

b. Local Acts, 1834, p. 79.

c. Local Laws, 1835, p. 206.

a. Local Laws, 1834, p. 87.

b. See Chap. 7, Subd. 2.

than this action on the part of the legislature of the state of Indiana, was the action of the United States government. In the spring of 1834 a post office was established for the new town and the name of Mishawaka was given to the post office at the suggestion, it is said, of Mr. Yerrington, the first postmaster. It is said, too, that this was the name of an Indian village formerly located on the site of Taylor's addition to the St. Joseph Iron Works.^a

Sec. 2.—BARBEE'S PLAT.—The first recorded plat, however, on which the name of Mishawaka appears is that made by William Barbee and Henry Harman, April 2, 1835. For convenience, perhaps, this plat is usually referred to as Barbee's addition; but it does not appear to have been intended as an addition, but rather as an independent town. The name of the St. Joseph Iron Works nowhere appears, although the Barbee plat adjoins the "Original Town" on the east. The title is "Plat of the Town of Mishawaka," and it was acknowledged April 20, 1835, as the "Town Plat of Mishawaka," by the proprietors, "William Barbee and Henry Harman, by William Barbee as Agent." The description by the surveyor, Tyra W. Bray, reads:

"This plat represents the town of Mishawaka, in St. Joseph county, Indiana. Laid out by William Barbee and Henry Harman on the 20th day of April, 1835, on a part of the northwest fractional quarter of section fifteen, in township thirty-seven north, and in range three east (2 Mer.), and on a part of the northwest quarter of the southwest quarter of the same section. The beginning point of this plat is the quarter section corner on the line dividing sections fifteen and sixteen, running thence north fifty-six poles to a stake; thence east five poles to the northwest corner of lot number eleven, etc., etc."

Sec. 3.—FOWLER'S ADDITION.—The next

^a Chapman's Hist. St. Joseph County, Chicago, 1880, p. 790.

plat laid out is entitled "Fowler's Addition to Mishawaka." The surveyor's description is as follows: "Town plat for G. W. R. Fowler, north side river St. Joseph, opposite St. Joseph Iron Works. First lot, No. 1, north of the southwest corner of section ten, 14½ rods, size of lots four rods in front, eight rods back. All streets four rods. Alleys one rod, running north and south, having eight lots in a block. T. P. Bulla, surveyor." The plat was acknowledged April 22, 1836, by "George W. R. Fowler, the proprietor of the above mentioned and described village."

Sec. 4.—INDIANA CITY.—During the same year another plat, called "Indiana City," was laid out on the north side of the river. This appears also as an independent town. The plat was acknowledged June 28, 1836, by the proprietors, Joseph Battell, James R. Lawrence and Grove Lawrence, and is described as follows: "This is a plat of Indiana City, in St. Joseph county, Indiana, laid out on the south half of section number nine and the northwest fraction of section sixteen, in township thirty-seven north, in range three east." Between Joseph street and the river the plat shows a vacant tract marked "Reserved for water power," and a mill race is shown from the rapids along the north side of the river, down to the "Island." The mill race, however, was never dug along the plat of Indiana City, and consequently the vacant tract was never used "for water power." Years afterwards this slightly tract, high over the St. Joseph river, was presented by Mr. Battell to the city of Mishawaka, to be used as a public park. It has been kept up and maintained by the city, with walks and drives, green-sward, flowers and shade trees. The delightful spot is known as Battell Park. The plat of "Indiana City" discloses another circumstance showing that Messrs. Battell and Lawrence were ambitious of great things for their town. Two large squares, of several acres each, are set apart for public purposes;

one is marked "College Green," and the other "Court House Square." No college has been erected on the "College Green," nor has any court house been built upon the "Court House Square"; and "Indiana City" itself was destined soon to lose its own identity.

Sec. 5.—OTHER ADDITIONS.—On March 8, 1837, the plat of "H. H. Fowler's Addition to Mishawaka," also on the north side of the river, was acknowledged by Henry H. Fowler.

On April 19, 1837, Thomas P. Bulla surveyed a second plat for G. W. R. Fowler, laid out on the southwest fractional quarter of section ten, township thirty-seven north, range three east, "Commencing eighty rods east of the southwest corner of section ten." There is nothing on this plat to show whether it was intended as an addition or not; there being no reference to any other plat.

Sec. 6.—UNION OF THE TOWNS.—At the close of the year 1837, there were therefore no less than four independent town plats, besides the additions. On the south side of the river were the St. Joseph Iron Works, platted by Alanson M. Hurd; and Mishawaka, platted by Barbee & Harman. On the north side, were Indiana City, platted by Battell & Lawrence; and Fowler's village, platted by George W. R. Fowler. Taylor's, as well as Hurd's own additions, recognized the St. Joseph Iron Works; while the remaining additions seemed to recognize Mishawaka. The post office, as we have seen, was also called Mishawaka.

On February 17, 1838, an act of the legislature was approved, designed to bring the several towns and additions under one name.^a The act declared:

"That the name of the town of St. Joseph Iron Works and the name of the town of Indiana City, in St. Joseph county, be, and the same are hereby changed to that of Mishawaka; and that all the lots now laid out on either side of the Big St. Joseph river,

^a Local Laws, 1837, p. 410.

whether included within the towns of St. Joseph Iron Works, Indiana City, Mishawaka, or additions thereto, be included within the incorporation of the town of St. Joseph Iron Works (hereafter to be known by the name of Mishawaka)."

Thus was unity given to the several towns and their additions, gathered "at the head of the Mishawaka rapids, in the township of Penn, in the county of St. Joseph." For convenience of reference, the old divisions are still recognized as the "original plat," "Taylor's Addition," "Barbee's Addition," "Lawrence & Battell's Addition," and the several "Fowler's Additions"; but all these, and many others since formed, are merged under the happily chosen name of Mishawaka.

The word Mishawaka is Indian, meaning, as it would seem, Big Rapids; the etymology being similar to that of the word Michigan, signifying Great Lake. The town therefore took its name from the most remarkable natural feature of the locality, the great falls in the river at this point. This, too, gave to the citizens an indication of the fine water power that could be secured by throwing a dam across the river just above the rapids. The actual fall of the river for a few rods at the rapids has been found to be two feet and nine inches. Thus, Mishawaka's future history as a manufacturing town was recognized in the very name given to the infant municipality,—the town of the big rapids, the town of the great water power. The iron ore which had suggested the name of the St. Joseph Iron Works has all been taken from the bog where it was once thought to be inexhaustible; but the water power of the rapids which suggested the name of Mishawaka remains a perennial boon to the town and to the city which has grown from the town.

Sec. 7.—INCORPORATION.—Even before the date of the act of the general assembly uniting the several divisions, the town, under the name of the St. Joseph Iron Works, had

already been incorporated. On Monday, the first day of September, 1834, being the first day of the September term, 1834, of the board of commissioners of St. Joseph county, the following order was entered:

"Now at this day comes in before the board Orlando Hurd and files a petition of the inhabitants of the town of St. Joseph Iron Works, praying for the said board to order an election in said town, that they may have the said town incorporated. And the said board, after examining the premises and the evidence adduced, order and direct that notice to the said citizens be given to meet at the house of Orlando Hurd on the last Saturday in this month, to elect trustees of said incorporation."

For some reason which does not appear of record, the election was not held as ordered; and, on Tuesday, January 5, 1835, being the second day of the January session of the board of county commissioners for that year, the following further order was made:

"It is ordered by the board that an alias notice be given to the citizens of St. Joseph Iron Works to meet at the house of Orlando Hurd and elect trustees for the incorporation of said town."

The following return was made of the election so called:

"At a meeting of the qualified electors of the village of St. Joseph Iron Works, held pursuant to public notice given by the sheriff of the county of St. Joseph, at the house of Orlando Hurd in said village, on Saturday, the thirty-first day of January, one thousand eight hundred and thirty-five, for the purpose of electing five trustees in and for said village, Elias Smith was called to the chair and John J. Deming appointed clerk. And thereupon the said chairman and clerk were duly sworn to the faithful discharge of their duties respectively, in superintending said election, by Samuel J. H. Ireland, Esq., one of the justices of the peace in and for said county. The votes of the electors were then taken and canvassed, and

the result of said election declared to be as follows: James White, Alexander Sandilands, John J. Deming, Samuel Stancliff, Henry De Camp, trustees.

"It witness hereof I have hereunto set my hand this 3 Apl., 1835.

"Jno. J. Deming, Clerk."

This was the first town incorporation in St. Joseph county, preceding by a few months the incorporation of the town of South Bend.

II. BUSINESS ENTERPRISES.

From the beginning Mishawaka has been noted for its business enterprise. The founders and early settlers of the town were men remarkable for their public spirit. They were enterprising, pushing, persevering. They built the first dam across the St. Joseph, and likewise erected the first bridge, and both by private means. A mill race was dug on each side of the river; and early use was made of the unequalled water power at the rapids.

The *St. Joseph Iron Works*, the original corporation organized by Alanson M. Hurd to reduce the iron ore found in the bog south of town long continued to be the leading business corporation. Under the name of the St. Joseph Manufacturing Company, and engaged in the production of plows and other farming implements, it continues to this day as one of the business forces of the community.

Another company, organized under an act approved February 17, 1838,^a was the *Mishawaka Iron and Manufacturing Company*, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars, the incorporators being John N. Sherman, Orlando Hurd, George W. R. Fowler, Charles W. Pomery and Alonzo Delano.

In 1836, leading citizens of the town had taken a prominent part in organizing the first insurance company of St. Joseph county, *The St. Joseph's County Mutual Fire Insurance Company*. By an act approved Feb-

^a. Local Laws, 1837, p. 211.

ruary 8, 1836,^a the company received a charter from the legislature, the first section of which provided:

"That Samuel Sample, Horatio Chapin, L. M. Taylor, A. Coquillard, John Brownfield, Elias Smith, Orlando Hurd, J. E. Holister, J. H. Orr, Francis P. Taylor, A. M. Hurd, and all other persons who may hereafter associate with them in the manner herein prescribed, shall be a corporation by the name of the St. Joseph's County Mutual Fire Insurance Company, for the purpose of insuring their respective dwelling houses, stores, shops, and other buildings, household furniture and merchandise, against loss or damage by fire."

This company is of interest, if for no other cause, in that it brought together, seemingly for the first time, the prominent founders of South Bend and Mishawaka. It is of interest for another reason, that its organization and management seem to have been quite similar to those of the present St. Joseph County Farmers' Fire Insurance Company, which for many years has proved so successful and economical for the insurance of the property of the farmers of the county.

During the year 1834, Orlando Hurd opened a hotel for the accommodation of the traveling public; and in the following year Francis P. Taylor erected the first flouring mill. The town at the rapids was thus fairly under way.

At this early date, after the St. Joseph Iron Works had been incorporated, but before the passage of the act of the legislature organizing the several town plats into the one town of Mishawaka, and before the erection of the bridge over the river, we have a ray of light thrown upon the condition of the enterprising community, in a record left by Dr. E. W. H. Ellis, one of the early settlers of St. Joseph county. Dr. Ellis tells us that he reached the north bank of the St. Joseph river, "opposite Mishawaka," August 7, 1836, and was taken across the river by the

^a. Local Laws, 1835, p. 157.

ferryman. He adds that the population was then not over five hundred; and that the population of South Bend at the same time, was not over eight hundred.

While the dam was built, the races dug and a number of manufacturing plants organized at an early day; yet the greater number of the concerns that have given to Mishawaka its high place as a manufacturing center are of a later date. The most important step taken, perhaps, in giving stability and activity to the Mishawaka manufacturing industries, was the organization, June 28, 1867, of the *Mishawaka Hydraulic Company*. This company was made up chiefly of the manufacturers already engaged in using the water power of the river. The list of names of the incorporators alone is sufficient to show the importance attached to the proper management and care of the dam, races and other things connected with the use and protection of the invaluable water power, from the beginning regarded as the true source of the prosperity of the town. The incorporators of the Hydraulic Company were:

George Milburn, Ann M. Studebaker, Thomas H. Milburn, Washington J. Brower, John S. Ball, David Nottage, Horace B. Martin, Lorenzo W. Martin, George Kuhn, John Kuhn, Anthony Kuhn, Albert Cass, Adolphus Eberhart, Palmer C. Perkins, Adoniram B. Judson, Nelson Ferris, William Dawley, Martin K. Lushbaugh, Thomas Costello, Warren Palmer, Joseph Warden and the St. Joseph Iron Company, by Henry G. Niles, trustee.

The subscribed capital of the company was fifty thousand dollars; and the objects stated in the articles of association were to keep up the dam, water power, races, banks and other matters connected with the power, and to sell and dispose of water power to other manufacturers.

The *Mishawaka Furniture Company* was organized October 10, 1867, with a capital of sixty thousand dollars. The incorporators

were: Adoniram B. Judson, Robert Montgomery, Lewis T. Booth and De Witt C. Eggleston.

On August 23, 1869, the famous *Milburn Wagon Company* was incorporated, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. The incorporators were: George Milburn, Thomas H. Milburn and John Milburn. The business of the company was the manufacturing of wagons, farm implements and other business incident thereto.

George Milburn was a man of extraordinary energy and force of character. His company at once entered upon a career of great activity and prosperity; and it seemed that Mishawaka was about to become one of the great wagon making centers of the world. The company reported the value of vehicles manufactured during the year ending July 1, 1873, at four hundred and forty-six thousand, six hundred and fifty-two dollars. During the same year, however, an unfortunate controversy arose between the company and the town. Mr. Milburn asked for certain facilities for side tracks along the streets from the factory to the Lake Shore railway which the authorities of the town felt unable to agree to. Instead of exercising a spirit of forbearance towards one another, the parties allowed the breach to widen until the Milburn Wagon Works abandoned the town of Mishawaka where they had grown and prospered. Inducements held out to the company to locate in Toledo had perhaps something to do in completing the estrangement.

It was an unhappy quarrel for both town and company. A mammoth building in process of erection by the company at Toledo was blown down by a storm on December 4, 1873, entailing a loss of over twenty thousand dollars. In other respects it does not seem that the company prospered as it would have done in the town of its origin and vigorous youth. As for Mishawaka itself, the loss of the factory seemed almost irreparable. Coming as it did, so soon after

the fearful conflagration that destroyed the business section of the town, on September 5, 1872,^a the blow was such as might well stagger the energies of the people. For years, the silent walls of the Milburn wagon works were an unpleasant sight to those who had so long hoped and labored for Mishawaka's prosperity. But, by degrees, this loss, as well as that occasioned by the great fire, was overcome. The vacant buildings, one after another, were filled with new industries; until, finally, the wounds were all healed, and the good town went ahead and flourished as if no harm had ever been suffered. As in case of Chicago after its fire, or San Francisco after its earthquake, it was demonstrated that Mishawaka, by reason of her situation and surroundings, was destined to be a successful manufacturing center, so that even what appeared as overwhelming calamities could not destroy her.

Among the plants established in the early seventies and later that had very much to do in determining the success of Mishawaka as a manufacturing town were the following:

The *Andrews School and Church Furniture Company* was incorporated December 20, 1870, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars. The incorporators were: William W. Ferris, S. E. White, J. Q. C. Vandenbosch, William N. Dunn, James Welliver, Henry G. Niles and Alfred H. Andrews.

The *Hollow Axle Manufacturing Company* was organized March 4, 1871, with a capital of twenty thousand dollars; the incorporators being: George Milburn, William A. Lewis and William Moffitt.

The *Bostwick Refrigerator Company* was incorporated August 10, 1873, with a capital of twenty thousand dollars. The incorporators were: Joseph Bostwick, Thomas A. Bless, Christian Bless and William Bostwick. They manufactured not only refrigerators, but also other house furnishing goods.

The *Mishawaka Woolen Manufacturing*
a. See Subd. 3 of this chapter, Sec. 13.

Company was incorporated January 31, 1874, with a capital of twenty-five thousand dollars. The incorporators were: George Hartstein, Jacob Beiger, Martin V. Beiger, D. A. Dixon and George E. Wells. This company has become noted for its success in the manufacture of wool boots; the extent of the manufacture and sale of such wool felt boots having long since attained mammoth proportions.

On July 14, 1873, the *Perkins Wind Mill and Ax Company* was incorporated. The capital was fixed at forty thousand dollars. The incorporators were: Palmer C. Perkins, Pardon J. Perkins, Albert Hudson, Luther I. Clark, Byron C. O'Connor, Jacob C. Snyder and Reuben E. Perkins. By degrees the production of windmills engaged the attention of the company to such an extent, that, on September 9, 1902, on petition to the St. Joseph circuit court, the name was changed to the *Perkins Wind Mill Company*. The company has sold its products all over the United States. During the year preceding its incorporation, the concern made and sold over one hundred wind mills; and the production and sales have increased enormously since that date. Perkins' windmills are as well known in Michigan or Nebraska as they are in Indiana.

The *Mishawaka Wagon Company* was incorporated January 18, 1876, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars; the incorporators being Robert Montgomery, De Witt C. Eggleston and Charles E. Sillsbee.

Several paper and wood pulp companies were established, as follows:

March 4, 1880, the *Mishawaka Wood Pulp Company*; capital, fifteen thousand dollars; incorporators, Lucius Clark, John F. Clark and Robert R. Clark.

April 21, 1881, the *Mishawaka Paper Company*; capital, fifteen thousand dollars; incorporators, George H. Taylor, Lucius Clark and Robert F. Fram.

February 24, 1882, the *A. Gaylor Pulp Company*; capital, twelve thousand dollars;

incorporators, Lucius Clark, Albert Gaylor and Edmund C. Westervelt.

April 1, 1887, the *Mishawaka Pump Company*; capital, nine thousand dollars; incorporators, William Miller, J. W. Vanden Bosch and W. L. Kimball.

The *Mishawaka Pump Company* was incorporated February 27, 1883, with a capital of ten thousand dollars. The incorporators were James Dougherty, John H. Uline and George Dougherty.

The *St. Joseph Milling Company* was organized July 2, 1883, with a capital of sixteen thousand dollars. The incorporators were: Adolph Kamm, Simon Yenn, John J. Schindler and Caspar Kuhn. The mill was erected in 1861 by George Kuhn, Caspar Kuhn and August Kellner. It was afterwards operated by George Kuhn; and finally by the corporation organized in 1883, as before stated.

Somewhat more than a quarter century ago, Wallace H. Dodge founded at Mishawaka, Ind., what has since become known as the *Dodge Manufacturing Company*. The embryo was in the form of a little sawmill property for the production of hard-wood lumber. This industry prospered so well that on February 24, 1880, the Dodge Manufacturing Company was incorporated by Wallace H. Dodge, William W. Dodge and Elizabeth H. Dodge. The business continued to grow rapidly and steadily, with every indication of most gratifying prosperity. Within a year, however, in 1881, the little factory was totally destroyed by fire.

The loss of its uninsured plant was a serious one for the young concern, but rebuilding was undertaken at once, on a larger and more substantial plan.

As an indication of the growth of the factory, it may be stated that the original capital was fixed at fifty thousand dollars, and that, in 1897, it became necessary to increase the capital to five hundred thousand dollars. Two products of this factory have brought fame to it from all over the world,—one is



N. H. Dodge



ORIGINAL DODGE FACTORY, 1873.



FACTORY AS REBUILT 1882.



VIEW OF THE DODGE MANUFACTURING CO.'S PLANT.



Melville W. Mix

the wood split pulley, designed to be clamped to iron shafts; the other is the use of the continuous wrap system of rope transmission power, using a single endless rope, in successive wraps, to convey power, instead of the old plan of using separate ropes. Wallace H. Dodge, the founder of the company and the perfecter of its notable inventions, was perhaps the most original mechanical genius produced by St. Joseph county. Unhappily, he died in 1894, in the prime of his manhood. He was not only a genius, but a most amiable and lovable gentleman. His brother-in-law, the Hon. Melville W. Mix, succeeded to the presidency of the company.

On November 27, 1885, the *Power and Transmission Publishing Company* was organized by Wallace H. Dodge, Edward A. Jernegan and Alexander L. Thorp, with a capital of ten thousand dollars.

The purpose of this company was the "Manufacture, publication and sale of a series of mechanical journals in the interests of manufacturers, millers, master mechanics, and all interested in the use and transmission of power." The monthly magazine called *Rope Transmission Power* published by this company reached so large a circulation as to affect very sensibly the business and standing of the post office at Mishawaka.

Two other companies organized by Wallace H. Dodge bore directly on the welfare of the town.

The first of these was the *Mishawaka Water Works Company*, incorporated September 9, 1890, with a capital of twenty thousand dollars. The incorporators were Wallace H. Dodge, Henry G. Niles and John J. Schindler. The town was in need of a system of water works, but financially unable to build them. The purpose of the organization, as stated in the articles of incorporation, was to "construct water works for the use of the town of Mishawaka, to rent to the town of Mishawaka for an annual rental, and after the payment of a given

amount of rent then to deed such water works to said town."

Of like character to the water works company was the *Dodge Electric Light and Power Company*, incorporated November 29, 1890, with a capital of twenty-five thousand dollars. The incorporators were: Wallace H. Dodge, William W. Dodge, W. B. Hosford, R. D. O. Smith, Charles Endlich, George Phillion and Melville W. Mix. The object of this organization was the production of "electric light, heat and power for commercial, domestic and manufacturing purposes."

Mishawaka was thus supplied with water and light, and given easy terms of payment for utilities which had become absolutely necessary for the comfort and safety of the people. With the rapid growth of the town, however, there grew up a demand for the extension of water mains and electric light poles and wires, which the municipality found itself unable to supply. This need grew more acute from year to year; until finally a sentiment developed in favor of the formation of a private corporation by public spirited citizens, who, in the interests of the public welfare, should agree to take upon themselves the burden of sustaining the water works and electric light works, and issuing bonds to complete the payments still due the Dodge companies, and also in sufficient amount to procure means to extend the water mains and electric facilities so as to satisfy the wants of the people. This plan involved the sale of the water works and the electric light plant to the proposed company, reserving to the city the continued management together with an option to repurchase the same as soon as able to do so.

As there was some doubt whether the city had power to make such a sale, an act was passed by the legislature, approved February 26, 1903, giving the necessary power.^a

The next step taken to carry out the plan was the organization of the *Mishawaka Pub-*
a. Acts, 1903, p. 89.

lic Utility Company, which was incorporated April 1, 1903, with a capital of ten thousand dollars. Carrying out the public character of this work, which was purely in the interests of the public, and without profit to the company, a large number of the most patriotic and public spirited citizens became incorporators, as follows: Martin V. Beiger, James A. Roper, E. Volney Bingham, Frederick G. Eberhart, Jr., Everett G. Eberhart, Manuel M. Fisher, Vincent Bruner, Melville W. Mix, Nicholas Schellinger, Frank R. Eberhart, William B. Hosford, Henry G. Niles, James De Lorenzi, John A. Herzog, Adolph Kamm, William M. Clark, John E. Baker, Edward A. Jernegan, Francis X. Ganser, Charles Endlich, Simon Yenn, John J. Schindler, David A. Shaw, Albert Gaylor and William N. Schindler.

That list is Mishawaka's roll of honor. The water works and electric light plant were taken over by the Utility Company; bonds were issued for one hundred thousand dollars, the old debts were paid off; the water pipes and electric appliances extended for the accommodation of the citizens; a city hall was erected; the water works and electric light works meanwhile continuing to be operated wholly by the city. The stipulated rents have been paid to the Utility Company, and are applied by the company to the payment of interest on the bonds and the making of stated payments upon the principal. When the city becomes possessed of sufficient means to take up the remainder of the bonds, it has the option to do so, and will then be entitled to a deed back from the company. This arrangement has relieved the city of Mishawaka of an exceedingly embarrassing situation; and has given to the inhabitants the facilities of a first class system of water works and electric light, bringing also in their train an extended sewer system and paved streets and sidewalks.

The *Beatty Felting Company* was incorporated January 2, 1886, with a capital of

fifty thousand dollars, for the "manufacture and sale of felt goods." The incorporators were Dempster Beatty, Luthera Beatty and Emmett L. Beatty. The company is one of the strongest in Mishawaka, and has built up a great plant for the manufacture of felt boots.

On March 7, 1887, the extensive *Kamm & Schellinger Brewing Company* was incorporated. The capital was fixed at sixty-five thousand dollars; the incorporators being, Adolph Kamm, Nicholas Schellinger and William Bender, Jr.

The *Mishawaka Factory Company* was incorporated July 4, 1887, with a capital of twenty thousand dollars, and with Frederick A. Rohleder, Joseph Bostwick and Jared R. Morse as incorporators. It was organized "For the purpose of manufacturing various articles of wood and iron, furnishing motive power and factory buildings connected therewith, etc."

The *Mishawaka Pulley Company* was organized March 19, 1888, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. The incorporators were John J. McErlain, Frank A. Baker and Charles T. Lindsey.

On August 12, 1890, the *Mishawaka Furniture Manufacturing Company* was incorporated with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. The incorporators were: J. P. Creque, A. J. Wheeler and Leonard Adsit.

The *Eberhart Milling Company*, with a capital of fifteen thousand dollars, was incorporated June 25, 1891. The incorporators were: Henry G. Niles, Adolphus Eberhart and John H. Eberhart.

The *Mishawaka Pad and Harness Company* was organized, with a capital of ten thousand dollars, on November 27, 1893. The incorporators were: C. K. Beam, John May, Fred W. Shultz, H. A. Camfer and J. F. Tascher.

On June 24, 1902, the *Roper Furniture and Carpet Company* was incorporated, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars. The in-

corporators were: C. J. Wenderoth, J. A. Roper, H. C. Roper, L. E. Roper, C. A. Roper and N. E. Roos.

The *Major Brothers' Packing Company* was incorporated February 10, 1906, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. The objects of the company are to buy, sell and slaughter cattle, hogs and sheep, and to vend meats and other products. The incorporators were: Ambrose J. Major, Frank T. Major and Frederick Major.

While the date of incorporation is given as to each of the foregoing companies, yet it will be understood that in most cases the business was actually begun and under way before the organization of the corporation, in some cases for many years. As a rule, the manufactories that have made Mishawaka famous have grown from small beginnings. Indeed, that has been one source of their success. The proprietors grew up with their business, and each member of the firm or corporation had the experience of years in building up the institution from its simple beginning until it had attained state and national reputation.

The *Mishawaka Mills*, erected in 1836, were long operated by Joseph Miller and William Miller, and, with the *St. Joseph Mills*, long gave to Mishawaka a high reputation for the production of superior flour. The *Ripple Mills*, erected and long owned by A. Cass & Company, and afterwards by J. H. & A. Eberhart, added their share to this enviable reputation.

In addition to her manufactories, which have made the name of Mishawaka a household word throughout the United States, all lines of business characteristic of a wide-awake and progressive town have flourished in the busy town. Indeed, it is doubtful whether there is anywhere a city of the size of Mishawaka in which so large a business has been done for so many years. It is truly a hive of industry.

III. RELIGIOUS, EDUCATIONAL AND SOCIAL.

The religious, moral, educational and social well being of Mishawaka has at all times kept pace with its business development. Churches and schools have been provided for from the beginning. The result is that the population of Mishawaka has at all times ranked high in morals and intelligence.

Sec. 1.—THE EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—On January 25, 1907, the people of St. Paul's parish, Mishawaka, took part in a notable service, being the dedication of their fine new church by the Right Rev. John Hazen White, bishop of the diocese of northern Indiana. It was indeed a great day in the history of St. Paul's Church. The congregation left the old church, which had been attended by them for no less than seventy years, and entered the new temple, one of the handsomest church edifices in the state. The following historical reminiscences were brought out in connection with the dedication of the new church:^a

Just seventy years ago Friday, January 25, 1837, St. Paul's Day, there was organized in Mishawaka St. Paul's parish, and it was most fitting that the seventieth anniversary should be celebrated Friday evening in the dedication of the handsome new St. Paul's Episcopal Church on East Second street.

The old church vacated is noteworthy both as to history and tradition. It is located on Spring street between First and Second streets and stands on a high hill, which is said to have been the burying ground of the Indians many years ago. Tradition says that here the Indian chief, Elkhart, and his bride, Mishawaka, after whom this city was named, are buried. The hill is rich in gravel and a part of it has largely been sold. Nearly two years ago the site, a church and rectory were sold to Mrs. J. A. Roper, Harry Roper and

^a. From the South Bend Tribune, January 26, 1907.

other members of the Roper family, who will move the church to First street and remodel it into a house.

The church to the best knowledge of the members was erected in 1837. This is doubted by some who claim that in 1842 the lots were purchased of Sarah M. and N. S. Hollister, Troy, N. Y., by the vestrymen, Hiram Doolittle, John H. Orr, J. E. Hollister, Samuel P. Knight and Norman Eddy, afterward a colonel in the army, for "\$100, good and lawful money," and that in 1843 lumber was purchased of Judge Deming, who then owned a saw mill south of the town. There is no positive record, however, of the building of the church, and as the Hollisters were members here it is possible that the structure was erected in 1837. Mrs. D. H. Smith, who is well along in years and has resided here a long time, says the church was erected in 1836 and dedicated January 25, 1837. The old bell now in the belfry cracked from hard usage was made in 1836. It has been suggested that the Historical society, of South Bend, should have this bell, on account of its historic associations and age.

The church is the oldest in the diocese, and one of the oldest in the state. The rectory was erected in 1876. Very little can be learned regarding the early history of the church or its rectors, but it is known that some of the most influential men of the country were baptized, confirmed and many of them married in this old house of worship which is still in a good state of preservation.

In 1860 Elias Birdsall was rector; Joseph Adderly served in 1866. He was followed by Richard Brass. In 1872 J. Gierlow came and in 1874 M. C. Stanley was the rector. Other rectors were as follows: 1881, S. Rosevelt; 1883, A. Prentiss; 1886, J. G. Miller; 1888, Frederick Thompson; 1890, A. Prentiss, followed by Rev. De Lou Burke; 1899, H. D. B. MacNeil; 1902, the present incumbent, Rev. J. A. Linn.

Sec. 2.—THE BAPTIST CHURCH.—What is said to have been the original Baptist church

in St. Joseph county, was constituted at a meeting held at the house of Eli B. Mead, a few miles south of Mishawaka, February 11, 1837. The meeting was presided over by the Rev. Mr. Price, of Edwardsburg, Michigan. Elan S. Colby, of Lockport, was present, and acted as clerk. Mr. Alger, of Mishawaka, was also present. Those examined by Elder Price and pronounced a church were: Isaiah Ferris, Jacob M. Gaylor, Jonathan Buck, John Barton, Lucinda Ferris, Sr., Elizabeth Ferris, Azubah Gaylor, Anna Buck, Delinda Barton and Parmelia Ferris. The church so organized was to be known as "The First Baptist Church of Penn Township." John Barton was chosen as the first clerk, and B. J. Ferris as first treasurer. Jacob M. Gaylor and Jonathan Buck were elected trustees. A small log church building was erected in 1838. The first pastor was the Rev. Adam Miller. In 1849 a large frame church building was erected about four and a half miles south of Mishawaka. By emigration and removals to Mishawaka, as well as by death, the membership declined, until the church became extinct; so that the story of this first Baptist church is now purely historical.^a

There was another organization of the Baptist church, in Mishawaka, previous to 1840; but this also has become extinct. This was succeeded by the church organized May 14, 1867, by Elders T. P. Campbell, of South Bend, and B. P. Russell, of Niles, Michigan, and other brethren from the churches of South Bend, Niles and Penn township. There were eighteen charter members of this church. The Rev. M. T. Lamb was the first pastor, Palmer C. Perkins first clerk, and J. C. Snyder first treasurer. The first deacons were John Merriman, A. J. Ames and J. C. Snyder. Other pastors were the Rev. F. Moro, the Rev. H. H. Lipes, the Rev. B. P. Russell, the Rev. H. J. Finch and the

a. For many of the facts relating to the early churches of Mishawaka credit should be given to Chapman's Hist. St. Joseph County, p. 798, and following.



Rev. Auguste B. Oechtering

Rev. Fred A. Lankin. In the northeast part of Penn township is still another society, the Pleasant Valley Baptist Church.

Sec. 3.—THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH.—About the year 1843, the Christian church was organized at Mishawaka. Harris E. Hurlbut, A. Alden and Morris Hartwick were the first elders; and S. B. Hutchinson, A. L. Wright and C. Hartman, the first deacons. Among the early ministers of this church were, R. Wilson, C. Martin, J. Martindale, P. T. Russell, H. E. Hurlbut, William T. Horner; afterwards came Elders Lane, New, Beggs,

men from Notre Dame. Among these first missionaries were, the Rev. Francis Cointet, the Rev. J. F. Gouesse, the Rev. W. Master-son, the Rev. R. A. Shortis, the Rev. Alexis Granger and the Rev. Edward Sorin. The first regular pastor was the Rev. John Mayer, appointed in July, 1857. He was succeeded, in 1859, by the Rev. H. Koenig. In March, 1860, the little church was destroyed by fire; and during the same year a new church, of ampler proportions, was erected on the south side, at the corner of Third and Spring streets. Mr. George Milburn, though not a



ST. JOSEPH'S CATHOLIC CHURCH, MISHAWAKA.

Green, Shepard, Sutton, Ira J. Chase, William B. Hendrin, R. Fauret, S. K. Sweetman and C. P. Hendershot. Elder Ira J. Chase, who became pastor in 1867, and remained for two years, was afterwards governor of the state of Indiana, succeeding to that high office on the death of Governor Alvin P. Hovey, November 23, 1891.

Sec. 4.—THE CATHOLIC CHURCH.—The first organization of a Catholic congregation in Mishawaka was in December, 1848, when a church edifice erected on the north side of the river, was dedicated. Previous to that date there were occasional services by clergy-

member of the church, materially assisted in this undertaking, and he is held in grateful remembrance by the congregation. In January, 1861, this church was dedicated as St. Joseph's Church by the Right Rev. John H. Luers, who in 1857 had been appointed as the first bishop of Fort Wayne. In 1865 a parochial school was built. In May, 1867, the Rev. Auguste Bernard Oechtering became pastor and remained in charge of the parish until his lamented death Sunday afternoon, December 27, 1902. The thirty-five years of the Rev. Father Oechtering's pastorate were distinguished by extraordinary activity. As

results of his labors, St. Joseph's congregation increased in a manifold manner. He left after him also one of the finest churches in northern Indiana, besides an excellent pastoral residence, and a school building and parish hall suitable to the needs of a city far larger than Mishawaka. Long before his death, Father Oechtering was universally looked upon as one of the representative citizens of Mishawaka, ever foremost in promoting the interests of the city of his choice. His successor was the Rev. Louis A. Moench, the present pastor, who is carrying on the good work of St. Joseph's congregation to the utmost advantage of the people and with the good will of all the people of Mishawaka. During the year succeeding Father Oechtering's death, the Flemish Catholics of Mishawaka formed a congregation of their own, under the efficient direction of the Rev. Charles L. Stuer. They have a neat church, under the name of St. Bavo's, and also an excellent parochial school.^a The corner stone of St. Bavo's church was laid May 8, 1904; and the church completed that year. It was solemnly blessed by Bishop H. J. Alerding, New Year's Day, 1905.

Sec. 5.—THE EVANGELICAL ASSOCIATION.—There have been two Evangelical Associations. The Mishawaka Evangelical Association was organized in 1846, with fifteen charter members. The organizer of the association was the Rev. G. G. Platz, who was also the first presiding elder. The first pastor was the Rev. William Kolb. The association erected a house of worship in 1857, and another and finer church in 1872.

The Coal Bush Evangelical Association is located three and a half miles south of Mishawaka. It was organized in 1847, also by the Rev. G. G. Platz. A church was erected in 1856. The Rev. Henry Arlen held services for this association, and also for the association in Mishawaka.

The rules and regulations of the Evan-

^a. See St. Joseph County Atlas; Higgins Belden & Co., Chicago, 1875, p. 21.

gelical Association resemble those of the Methodist church; and consequently they are sometimes called German Methodists.^a

St. Andrew's Evangelical Church was organized in 1864, with twenty-five members, by the Rev. Philip Wagoner. The congregation erected a church edifice the same year. This society differs in certain respects from the Evangelical Association, although some disposition has been shown to unite the two societies.



M. E. CHURCH, MISHAWAKA.

Sec. 6.—THE METHODIST CHURCH.—This church has greatly prospered in Mishawaka. The Mishawaka Methodist Episcopal Church was organized in 1835. The chartered members were Richmond Tuttle and wife, Joseph Skeritt and wife, Susan Hurd and brother. The society at first worshiped in a vacant store building, which was also used by the Presbyterians. The first church building was erected in 1836; another was built in 1844, which was afterwards sold and then used by a furniture store. In 1872, a

^a. Known also as Allbrights.

large and elegant church was erected on West Second street, which is still occupied by a large and earnest congregation. The M. E. Church is also represented by another society in Penn township, the Tamarack Methodist Church, seven miles southeast of Mishawaka. This class was organized in a log school house, December 19, 1855, by the Rev. E. P. Church, with eleven charter members,—A. B. Lamport, A. M. Lamport, Roxy Lamport, Willard Rockwell, Deborah Rockwell, Elam Crouch, Benjamin Pickard, Isaac Ghrist, Esther S. Ghrist, Edwin Sawyer and Phoebe Sawyer. Services were held in the Tamarack school house until 1880, when a church thirty-four by fifty feet was erected.

The Free Methodists are also represented in Mishawaka. Their society was organized in 1877. They have not a large membership.

Sec. 7.—THE LUTHERAN CHURCH.—The Lutheran church was organized at Mishawaka prior to 1848, by the Rev. Philip Bernventher, with about twelve members. The membership increased considerably during the following years, and a parochial school was established by the congregation. Among the pastors was the Rev. Gustavus Rosenwinkel.

Sec. 8.—THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.—The Presbyterian church at Mishawaka was organized July 25, 1834, by the Rev. N. M. Wells, at the house of Philo Hurd. The charter members were: The Rev. N. M. Wells, Elias Smith, Alma Smith, Levi Dean, Polly Dean, Philo Hurd, Martha Hurd, Alanson M. Hurd, Sarah L. Hurd and Willis S. Garrison. The first elders were Philo Hurd and Elias Smith. The first deacon was Philo Hurd. On January 29, 1835, John J. Deming was received into the church as an elder, and was elected clerk. A chandelier now in the church was presented to the society by Judge Deming's daughter, Mrs. Charles Crocker, of San Francisco. The first church building was erected in 1837. Another was erected in 1845. The latter was burned

in the conflagration of September 5, 1872, by which no less than thirty-two buildings were destroyed in the business section of the city. The energetic membership of the church, consisting of some of the best stock of Mishawaka, with the courage of their fellow citizens, rebuilt their church at once; only making a greater and a better building, as their fellow citizens built up a greater and better Mishawaka.

Sec. 9.—SCHOOLS.—The architecture of the pioneer school house was a very simple matter. It was a small cabin, built up of round logs. The floors were made of puncheons;



HIGH SCHOOL, MISHAWAKA.

that is, small logs split in halves, with the flat sides turned up. The doors were likewise of puncheons, as were the seats and desks. A huge fireplace occupied one end of the room, and was piled with great logs cut fresh from the woods. The roof was made of clapboards, fastened by poles laid lengthwise, three feet apart, from the eaves to the crown of the roof. The chimney was built up of sticks, the chinks filled in with moistened clay. The windows consisted of a log removed from a part of one side of the building, the opening closed with greased paper. Often the pupils found the "window" well named, when the cold wind came sharply through the "eye" of the dark little building.

The revenues of the schools were at first supplied entirely by subscription. Our school laws, as well as most other things relating to our social and industrial life, have greatly changed since 1832, when the first log school house in Penn township was built. The first school building in Mishawaka itself was a small frame structure erected in 1834. The first teacher in this school is said to have been a Miss Sheldon, of White Pigeon, Michigan. Greater interest, perhaps, has been taken in the public schools by the people of Mishawaka than by those of any other community in this part of the state. One result of this interest is the existence of the fine school buildings of the city. The high school, with its fine grounds, is, as it may well be, the pride of the city. Prof. Elisha Sumpston, remembered as one of the most painstaking and zealous educators of the state, did very much to place the schools of Mishawaka on the high plane which they have so long occupied. The several parochial schools, especially that built up by the Rev. A. B. Oechtering, are equally an honor to the good people of Mishawaka.

Sec. 10.—REMINISCENCES.—The following reminiscences of early life in Mishawaka are from the graceful pen of Mrs. Marion B. Vanpelt, daughter of Mr. John Niles, long a resident of Mishawaka and one of the earliest settlers of St. Joseph county. From the intimate relations of the Niles family with all the first residents of Mishawaka, the opportunities enjoyed by Mrs. Vanpelt to obtain the multitude of facts here detailed were such as have been possessed by very few of those who have written of our early history. The paper was read before the Northern Indiana Historical Society, in the month of May, 1901. It will be found to refer to the names of many persons and places mentioned heretofore in this work, in treating of the history of Penn township and of Mishawaka:

“In looking backward more than three score years it is best to forget for a little our

modern environment and if possible close our ears to the noise of the bustling present and take this May ramble among the old homes of Mishawaka along grass grown streets and sunny lanes by the brookside and over the hills of the village, now nearly lost in the city of today. From the vigorous memory of the daughter of a pioneer settler in the little town, who as a girl, was one of a merry company gathered at the home built by Mr. A. M. Hurd in 1834, we glean this word picture of that hospitable abode.

“‘Imagination fondly stoops to trace
The parlour splendours of that festive place.’

“Its one story and basement formed a commodious dwelling divided by a hall and having two rooms on either side. The location on the site of Dr. Grimes’ residence probably favored a ground floor entrance to the kitchen and work rooms below. In those days houses were often built with a cellar kitchen and it is quite possible that a lift or sliding cupboard was used to convey the savory dishes of that period of good old-fashioned cookery, to the dining room above at the end of the hall on the first floor, as there is one in existence in a house built on the same bluff. The furnishings of this home were good and substantial, the windows being curtained after the most approved fashion of the day, in drapery, half red and half white, and the whole effect of the establishment was considered elegant. Mrs. Wing, who has so kindly imparted much of this story of the past, was often a guest at this home and it was there that a spirited reply to a merry bantering challenge from a young man, the burden of whose song was, ‘Westward Ho!’ led to the marriage of Maria Tuttle and Andrew M. Wing. Fire was a grim enemy as well as a useful servant in those early days. This home and the one built by Mr. John Orr, which stood where Mr. Fisher now lives, were burned.

“Very dimly remembered and a somewhat misty tradition, the first home built by Mr.

Philo Hurd, the father of A. M. Hurd, probably stood near the site of Mr. Kamm's house at the west end of Second street, and is said to have been built of wood and brick combined. Its beautiful garden within a prim hedge of box is one of the sweet memories of a lady who played as a child among the old-fashioned flowers.

"Beside another old home, 'remembrance wakes with all her busy train.' Still sturdy and sound, a familiar landmark to the few remaining to tell us of its hospitality, an old friend to those of a later day, who can recall the story of the ghost in the garret and remember the luscious fruit on the big pear tree in the garden, stands the old Orr house on Main street. Built in 1835 by Mr. Asa Taylor, the father of Mrs. John Orr, its black walnut timbers, solid foundation walls of St. Joseph county granite, and massive chimney six feet wide, speak of the wisdom of one who builded better than he knew. A part of the chimney still stands in the big cellar. What mighty fires must have roared in its giant throat! What bed-time lullabies and cheery neighborhood chat enlivened the eventide in those old days in the spacious living room! The hall and staircase are on the south side, extending the length of the parlor with doors on the north opening into parlor and living room. A smaller room at the end of the hall and the kitchen and wash room in the wing at the back were included in the original structure. The wing on the north side of the house was added at a later period and was probably used for a nursery or family room. The upper story contains four bed rooms and an old-fashioned garret, where the heavy black walnut beams may still be seen. Upon the floor of this garret the children of the family spread their treasures of Indian relics, and not many years ago quantities of stone arrow heads were seen there. A part of the household once gathered about the hearth stone of this home, sleep in the plat of earth given to Indiana City for a cemetery by men who saw in a

vision bright the fair and goodly proportions of that ambitious hamlet rise from the green sward.^a And one comes now and then to look upon the scene where the days of boyhood slipped away and wonders why the old house seems small and plain. We, too, living in the opening era of an electric age, must summon up the rural setting of the little village.

"To me more dear, congenial to my heart,
One native charm than all the gloss of art.'

"The noble forests, the sweep of the river alive with the laden craft of the pioneer, the sunny brooks winding in and out of cottage gardens, the green slope of the gentle hills formed the scene, obscured now, it is true, by the mists of rolling years, but clear enough to enable us to realize the verdant beauty of the scene so inspiring to the pride which filled the hearts; the courage which strengthened the purpose of those early settlers and builders of homes in the little community.

"Directly across the street and attached to the Kuss grocery is a portion of one of the old dwellings, built by Mr. Henry Johnson in 1835, and on the southwest corner of the same block may be seen the old Delmo House, built by Mr. Zenas Dunbar at about the same time. It resembles the Orr house and is still a comfortable dwelling, having a central hall with square rooms on either side and a wing at the back. Mr. Dunbar having lost heavily by the washing out of the dam, sold this property to Mr. Delmo, who lived there a number of years. Of the Andrew Taylor house opposite, no especial details were learned. It must, however, have been built at an early day, and is now most interesting because of its unaltered appearance and the fact of having been the family residence since its erection. The quaint porticos are a distinctive feature of the old-fashioned cottage, and as such it is hoped

^a. The Mishawaka cemeteries are all within the former plat of Indiana City.

that it may be preserved. The small house on the corner of First and Spring streets was built by Edward Mulligan, one of the molders in the old bog iron furnace. In the parlor of this cottage mass was said by the Reverend Father Cointet, then a young priest at Notre Dame. The Reverend Father Sorin, of blessed memory, often held services there at a time when no church was available. An altar was raised on the parlor table and the small bedroom next the parlor was used as a place to learn the order in which the early homes of the village were built, but very evidently a number were raised at nearly the same time. So, during our ramble past the portals of these simple homesteads and treading in the footsteps of those who lived and loved and toiled and hoped and prayed, so long ago, we reach the old Nicar house which might have been called Brook Side, so closely did the waters of the little stream in which all the children of the village played and paddled in by-gone summers past the doorway. Robert Nicar, its builder, came from Virginia, and the broad chimneys of that little home were the "Golden Mile Stones" of his southern heart. In the kitchen fireplace swung the crane and the pot-hooks of a past regime. The house was low and wide, with two rooms opening from a small entry, fronting on First street, and was considered a roomy cottage.

"Up yonder hill the village murmur rose."

"Up the hill, past old Saint Paul's, whose fluted pillars and hand-carved doors give silent testimony of the honest, patient work of men, not called contractors nor architects, but carpenters, a calling dignified by the Master whose symbol gleams above the little steeple, we pass one or two old houses, and on the left hand side in the high bank, so says an 'oft-told tale' whispered among the children as they played on the hill side in the summer evenings, an Indian chief lies buried by the hands of those who found him on his rude bier.

"The house back of the church and fronting the high school, known for years as the James Smith property, was built by Mr. Wilson and is now owned by Mrs. Leonard Adsit, of South Bend. It probably dates from about 1839, and, though much enlarged, still preserves the harmonious lines of houses built at that time, having a story and a half upright, and one story wing, with pillared porch, giving a touch of the colonial to its exterior. The interior finish of hand-wrought doors and window casings is still sound and pleasing, but the great charm of this old home, and lovingly remembered by those who played in childhood beneath its trees, was the garden. The big grass plat in the northwest corner, completely shaded by an immense tulip tree, the long well-kept walks between trim flower beds and leading from the house to the little gate opening into the church yard appeal to remembrance. Surely, such peonies—red, pink and white—never grew in any other garden. There honeysuckle and snowballs, ribbon grass and roses flourished in profusion.

"Where smiling spring its earliest visit paid,
And parting summer's lingering blooms delay'd."

"On the spot now occupied by the high school building and grounds another old home and its well-kept boundaries was for many years one of the landmarks of Mishawaka. Mr. Zelotes Bancroft built the house and his wife, one of Mr. Philo Hurd's daughters, more familiarly known in later years as Mrs. Edwin Hollister, played the little pipe organ in St. Paul's church. We feel the sweet spirit of those days unmarred by the vandalism of street commissioners when told that an elevated walk leading from her gate to the church was built that the dainty lady might pass in stormy weather unharmed to her labor of love at the organ, brought from Waterloo, N. Y., where it once stood in a

hotel. Pathetic, indeed, is the little chant and hymn book marked Z. Bancroft and published by Elam Bliss in 1836, now among the relics in the collection belonging to the Northern Indiana Historical Society.

"It is not possible to give more than a passing glance at some of the old homes, but we must linger for a little before two houses on West street near the spot once known as the Indian burial ground. The one now occupied by Mr. Samuel McQuillan was built by Levi Dean, a son-in-law of Mr. Philo Hurd. The second, near the corner, where steel rail and noisy engines have usurped the place once made lovely by the brook's song, was built by A. M. Hurd, as a home for his father, Mr. Philo Hurd, who lived there until his death.

"The McQuillan home, known for many years as the Samuel Towle place, has been enlarged and changed somewhat, but the charm of the old time has been carefully preserved. The heavy cross-paneled door, made from black walnut and having an iron knocker with a brass plate, was recently brought from the garret and restored to its old place at the entrance to the hall. The staircase and all of the woodwork is of the same dark material, the large fireplace in the sitting room having curious cupboards like doors below the mantel to enclose the hearth stone when not in use. An old painting below the parlor mantel piece and thought by one who has lived there for many years to have been an original decoration, is most interesting. All of the timbers in this house are of heavy walnut and a recent attempt to reduce the size of an exposed beam was found to be quite impracticable. In the door yard of this old home are many fine old trees, survivors of the forest primeval, which were probably cherished by the first inmates who were valued members of the community.

"Indeed, the very walls of these old homes seem reminiscent of the simple, cordial hospitality which prevailed during the early growth of the village, when singing schools

and donation parties were the chief social functions. From letters written in 1837 and 1838, we learn that music and musical parties were the principal amusements. The village contained one piano and expected the arrival of another at that time.

"The Ireland house is another relic. It was built by Mr. Goodrich, but has for so many years been occupied by the Ireland family that it has become part and parcel of that name. One of the household treasures is a record of the first marriage in the village, dated March 29, 1834, a faded reminder of one of the early duties of Squire Ireland.

"The Looman Smith house, now owned by Mr. Daniel Bieger, is one of the few brick houses built at an early day, and must have been erected during the forties. Like others of that era, it is solidly framed and finished in black walnut. The carving on door frames and window casings is very good and more elaborate and ornate than was usual at that time. There is a large fireplace in the sitting room, and a hall originally led from this room to a staircase on the other side of the main part. The designer must have contemplated the use of solitary confinement as a means of family discipline, as a small, dark room was formerly a part of the house. This home was rather gloomy in appearance at one time, but, although unchanged externally, seems completely transformed.

"The home on the corner of Hill and Second streets was built by Mr. Colby at an early date and was originally much like the Adsit house. It was owned for many years by Mr. John Niles. The increasing needs of the household and the numerous clan of kindred ever welcomed there caused its roof to widen over many additions extending on all sides and without regard for artistic appearance, but was always essentially old-fashioned, roomy and comfortable. Divided and enlarged in late years, only the front of the main house and a portion of the wing remain the same. It was once famous for its

rose garden and from the place in the days of its first ownership Gilbert Colby, afterward a successful manufacturer, moved all of his worldly possessions across the street in a wheelbarrow to his first home, having a cash fund of 25 cents as a nucleus of his fortune.

"The home of Mrs. Marcella Terry was built by Robert Montgomery when he was a young man. The main part of the house is said to have been rafted down the river from Michigan. An exposed beam gives a quaint look to the front room of the wing, and if the giant elm which shelters under its spreading branches the entire house could whisper tales of the men and women who have lived and died since that old tree was young, we would need no better historian.

"Many points of interest must be passed unnoticed in this paper, but we must not miss the old house standing beside the Terry homestead. Its native heath was the high school playground and has been mentioned as the Bancroft cottage. It was, however, the home of Mr. Allan Sisson until moved to its present site, and stood back of another famous garden during the intervening years which link the old days to the present. Another old home near by recalls the builder, one of the men who helped to bring the cylinder for the furnace many weary miles, a kindly Scotchman, James White by name. The house was surrounded by a fine orchard which was then at the west end of Third street. It was a pretty old place and was sold by Mr. White to Mr. Colby and afterwards became the home of Mr. and Mrs. James Oliver. One old apple tree marks the spot where many others made fragrant the Maytime of years long past, but a public highway has swept away all traces of the garden. The house, still used as a dwelling, was built in 1835.

"Gone is the little pink house which stood on the banks of the creek back of M. Tromp's home. It used to nestle under the trees at the foot of the garden, like a pink lady-

slipper. There were bees and blossoms and happy children in that cosy cottage garden during many summers. In the little kitchen were baked the delicious tarts, always in demand for donation parties and made famous by the art of Grandpa Martling, who never parted with the recipe brought from 'Merrie England.'

"The house of Mr. Charles Towle, built by Judge Demming during 1835, is one of the veteran homesteads. Its present sound condition bears witness to the fact that sturdy hewn timbers and handmade nails were used by Mr. Wing and his fellow craftsmen who framed and finished the old landmark. In the parlor in the northeast corner of the house Mary Demming and Charles Crocker were married with not a soul among the wedding guests to dream of the golden dower to be won for the happy pair from the undeveloped resources of the far west. It became the home of Mr. Gilman Towle, who enlarged and improved it in various ways and is now an ample and dignified homestead. Here, too, was a dear old garden where, beneath the mould, a tiny bit of china was found not long ago which fitted the broken edge of an old colonial plate found between the walls of the house.

"The house built by Mr. Asher Miller some time during the forties and now the home of Mrs. Booth is in design and detail a most pleasing member of the group of old timers. The quaint look given by the projection of the center beyond the columned porches of the wings is unique and like the New England village homes. The roomy parlor has a beautifully carved mantle piece, supported by Ionic columns, and happily the ornaments so entirely in keeping with the design are old hand wrought candelabra purchased for the house by Mrs. Edwin Hollister when she was chatelaine of this old home. In this parlor she played upon the first piano brought to St. Joseph county while children and grown-ups stopped outside to listen to a novelty more wonderful in the western village than

automobiles in the same streets today. The room in the right wing was called the Bishop's room, as the Millers and Hollisters often entertained that right welcome visitor. In the large room at the back, evidently used occasionally as a dining room, there is a sliding cupboard running from below. The large room in the basement seems to have been finished for a dining room, as glass knobs and brass button shaped fastenings give an air of elegance to the interior.

"During the summer of 1834, Mr. Joseph Skerritt built a house on the corner directly west of the Booth house. No trace of it has been found but many persons will remember it as the Harris house. The old Si Burt house was once the residence of Mr. Doty and here under her father's roof, Miss Susan Doty and Mr. James Oliver were married by the Rev. Norman Kellogg. Mr. George Merrifield was one of the wedding guests and presented the bride with a bouquet of roses from his garden. 'Transplanted to memories' fair fields they still bloom, 'A thing of beauty and a joy forever.' The house has been turned around and changed in appearance. The joist beams are round logs and all of the timbers so heavy that alterations were difficult to make. Mr. George Merrifield is still growing roses on land purchased in 1838 and where, mid scenes of pastoral beauty on the grassy slopes of the lovely river valley, the lines of the old Indian trail may be traced. The spring about which the red men camped still sends its waters, a tiny cress filled stream, to the river and the lark spur which grew about the cabin of Joseph Pemberton in 1831 blooms as cheerily as ever. The house built by Mr. Merrifield now belongs to the Cass family. It was made after the good old fashion of thick timbers cut on the river bank; has large chimneys and once boasted a huge 'dutch' oven, where 12 loaves of bread and numerous pies were baked at one time and removed on a big shovel. The house occupied by the family at present was built by Mr. Jacob Merrifield somewhat later. The

fact that many of the primitive features of the landscape exist about this old home is most delightful in this day of ravenous growth. Returning down the street we reach the site of the old Barbee tavern, which, incorporated into the modern residence of Mrs. Quigg, offers no suggestion of the roadside hostelry, where the stage once drew up with a flourish of whip and horn. The bar was in a wing on the left and the landlord's name was Kellogg. Another tavern stood on the corner west of the Doty house, and there were three others in the town. All succumbed in due time, leaving the field to Orlando Hurd of jovial memory.

"The Judson home, built during the early years of Mishawaka's prosperous growth, was a pretty place and intended by Mr. Judson to be the home of his old age. The material, carefully selected, was the best to be had. 'I am building upon a rock,' said the master of that home. Alas! that the adverse winds of an unkind fortune should have swept him from that haven. The house, completely remodeled by its present owner, presents a new face to the passer and as the home of Mr. Martin V. Belger is one of the attractive places of East Second street.

"The house built by Mr. Albert Hudson was the first brick dwelling erected in town, and has always been a family possession. It looks quite the same, and though older and a little worn is familiar as in the old time.

"A late fire has changed the Henry Johnson house. Built in 1838, it was at that time the finest dwelling in northern Indiana and presented the only colonial front in the village. With spacious double parlors and handsomely finished interior, it was much admired by townsfolk and visitors. There was originally a large, open fireplace in the kitchen and doubtless the cooking was done there. Much of the substantial mahogany furniture placed in this home by Mr. Johnson was purchased by Mr. George Milburn, who bought the property many years ago and lived there with his family until their departure to To-

ledo. Mrs. Milburn treasures in her Kansas home the fine old furniture brought from the East.

"It is quite remarkable that so many of the old walls remain for us to ponder over, and enter today, when we consider that Mishawaka is a western town, not placed among the rocky hills of the East. The cottage built by Mr. Milburn on Fourth street is still a cozy dwelling standing in a large garden, and Mr. William Milburn built an old style house in the same block and lived there several years. It finally became the home of Mr. and Mrs. A. M. Wing and the latter resides there with her niece, Mrs. J. R. Hudson. The house has the same interior finish and much the same arrangement of the others described in this paper.

"On the north side of the river are many old homes, well preserved and worthy of description. It is not possible to mention more than one at this time. Mr. William Sisson built this home when Indiana City still preserved its identity and it is very little changed, the old hardwood finish and brass door knobs remaining intact. The property was bought by the order of the Sisters of the Holy Cross, and Mother Angela lived there for some time.

"A portion of Earl's tavern, built in 1833, still stands, and one room of the foundry boarding house is a part of Mr. Charles Sandilands' residence. A jolly set of moulders must have met around the table where Mrs. Ireland supplied the wants of the brawny workers. One of the pranks of those merry men, related by Mr. Merrifield, was a mad chase to capture a fat pig to grace the rousing supper always given in the old furnace after 'blowing out.' Foreman Lucas led his men eastward over the Barbee creek, en route over hill and dale, the odors wafted from a dutch oven suggested its savory contents. Having secured the pig and homeward bound, the foragers stole oven and all, to the utter bewilderment of the housewife, whose Saturday baking added zest to the feast of roast

pig eaten around a glowing fire in the furnace that night.

"From pork to pictures is a wide digression, but that art and artists were not wanting in the village the portraits of Mr. and Mrs. Wing, exhibited by the historical society, give evidence. They were painted in 1847, by Mr. William Utley, afterwards a colonel in the civil war, where he became famous for conducting a negro boy who wished to join the Federal army into the Union lines in a hollow square formed of his men, with bayonets fixed, the rebels in full pursuit. Young Mr. Utley was a nephew of Mr. Wing, who lived in Mishawaka for a time, painting other portraits of which little has been learned.

"The fact that 'a prophet is not without honor save in his own county' is generally found to be most unpleasantly true, but that Rose Hartwick Thorpe has written real poetry none will deny. She lived as a child in a little cottage near Barbee creek and spent hours dreaming by the brookside.

"Many years have passed since the old homes visited in this Maytime were new, but they served their day and generation well and from their doors the builders passed to rest, while many of the sons and daughters of those scattered households have won distinction in the fuller, more restless life of today."

Sec. 11.—SOCIETIES AND CLUBS.—While, as might be inferred from Mrs. Vanpelt's reminiscences, Mishawaka has always been a home town, a city of homes; yet the friendly spirit of the people has, from the beginning, manifested itself also in the formation of social, benevolent and patriotic associations.

St. Joseph Lodge, No. 27, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, was organized about 1843. Among the members at that time were Dr., afterwards Colonel, Norman Eddy, John Niles, Albert Cass, Harris E. Hurlbut, A. H. Long and James Easton. This lodge was afterwards discontinued, but on August 13, 1867, Monitor Lodge, No. 286, was instituted.

The charter members of Monitor Lodge were A. H. Long, James Easton, Washington Gibson, Philip McElvain and Thomas S. Long. On September 5, 1872, the great fire destroyed the lodge hall with all its costly furniture; but very soon a new and finer hall in the Phoenix building, took its place. The lodge is still in a flourishing condition.

A Masonic lodge was organized May 26, 1852. The first officers were: R. S. Alden, W. M.; D. H. Smith, S. W.; J. Holdridge, J. W.; J. E. Hollister, treasurer; T. S. Cowles, secretary; A. C. Foot, S. D.; W. M. Wood, J. D., and A. L. Brimsmid, Tyler.

The following is believed to be a list of about all the other societies and clubs of the city as they now exist:

Fidelity Rebecca Lodge, No. 122, I. O. O. F.—Mrs. Vona Borden, N. G.; Mrs. Marie Burkhart, secretary.

Free and Accepted Masons, Mishawaka Lodge, No. 130, F. & A. M.—A. H. Henwood, W. M.; John W. Hutchinson, recorder.

Grand Army of the Republic, Houghton Post, No. 128—Manuel Fisher, post commander; Charles Frank, adjutant.

Improved Order of Red Men, Mishawaka Tribe, No. 304, I. O. R. M.—John C. Quick, sachem; George Hitesman, secretary.

Independent Order of Foresters, St. John's Court, No. 1490.—B. F. Pew, chief ranger; P. A. Young, secretary.

Catholic Order of Foresters, St. John's Court, No. 952.—John Barry, chief ranger; William Gehl, secretary.

Catholic Order of Foresters, Sacred Heart Court.—Mrs. Minnie S. Vincent, chief ranger; Mrs. Anna Winters, record keeper.

Knights and Ladies of Columbia, Mishawaka Council, No. 2, K. & L. of C.—C. F. Taylor, scribe.

Knights of the Maccabees, Mishawaka Tent, No. 12, K. O. T. M.—W. J. Armstead, commander; F. A. Partridge, record keeper.

Knights of the Modern Maccabees, Twentieth Century Tent, No. 1121.—Elbert Robin-

son, commander; George Hitesman, record keeper.

Annex Christian Association.—Everett G. Eberhart, president; Vernice Ludwig, secretary.

Catholic Benevolent Legion, St. Joseph Valley Council, No. 503, C. B. L.

Catholic Knights of America, St. Michael's Branch, No. 498, C. K. of A.—John J. Schindler, recording secretary.

Knights of Pythias, Mishawaka Lodge, No. 453, K. of P.—William Garman, C. C.; Frank P. Christoph, K. of R. and S.

Uniform Rank, Knights of Pythias—Walter C. Herzog, captain; William Drumhiller, recorder.

Ladies' Branch W. O. W., Home Grove Circle, No. 10, W. O. W.—Mrs. Lizzie Philion, guardian; Mrs. Minnie Spaeth, secretary.

Ladies of the Maccabees, Mishawaka Hive, No. 68, L. O. T. M.—Mrs. Ella Middleton, commander; Mrs. Allie Michael, record keeper.

Ladies of the Modern Maccabees, Mishawaka Hive, No. 907.—Carrie Diltz, commander; Bertha Beeman, record keeper.

Royal Arch Masons, Mishawaka Chapter, No. 83.—Tabor Ham, H. P.; John W. Hutchinson, secretary.

Masonic Club of Mishawaka—H. A. Edris, president; Guy Richards, secretary.

Order of Eastern Star, Mishawaka Chapter, No. 26, O. E. S.—Amelia Henwood, W. M.; Allie Michael, secretary.

Mishawaka Court of Honor, District Court, No. 167.—J. A. Rishel, chancellor; Mrs. Hazel Pontius, secretary.

Modern Woodmen of America, Mishawaka Camp, No. 4788, M. W. A.—Fred Schroeder, con.; B. Kraushanski, clerk.

Woodmen of the World, Enterprise Camp, W. O. W.—E. K. Reed, C. C.; A. C. Brown, clerk.

Bricklayers', Masons' and Plasterers' Union, No. 39.—Alfred Swift, president; Harry Lowder, secretary.

Odd Fellows' Mishawaka Encampment, No.

98, I. O. O. F.—R. S. Selders, C. P.; Harry Knee, scribe.

Order of Owls, Mishawaka Nest, No. 4.—W. E. Zweigle, president; H. D. Roper, secretary.

Order of Patricians, Mishawaka Court, No. 104.—J. E. Roper, sen.; Enos E. Long, scribe.

The Pathfinders, St. Joseph Lodge, No. 59.—J. A. Purviance, president; Margaret Ayers, secretary.

The Protective Home Circle, Mishawaka Circle, No. 518.—Guy S. Thompson, president; Amelia Behny, secretary.

The Rathbone Sisters, Sunlight Temple, No. 286.—Mrs. Clara Austin, com.; Mrs. Minnie Huntsinger, record keeper.

Royal Neighbors of America, Spring Camp, No. 1992, R. N. A.—Mrs. Effie Pelton, orator; Mrs. Clara Austin, recorder.

The St. Joseph Benevolent Society.—Charles Koeppen, president; A. G. Hoerstmann, secretary.

Twentieth Century Club.—D. J. Campbell, president; R. P. Wines, secretary.

Council of Royal and Select Masters, Mishawaka Council, No. 19, R. & S. M.—W. P. Robinson, H. P.; John W. Hutchinson, recorder.

The Country Club of the St. Joseph Valley.—M. P. Reed, president and treasurer; H. T. Reynolds, secretary.

The Dodge Club—Melville W. Mix, president; A. J. Williams, secretary.

Sec. 12.—SOLDIERS' MONUMENT ASSOCIATION.—On June 4, 1874, the Mishawaka Soldiers' Monument association was formed, for the purpose of erecting a monument to commemorate the deceased soldiers and sailors who enlisted in the war for the Union from Mishawaka and Penn township. The incorporators of this patriotic society were:

Almon Stuart, Elizabeth Stuart, Martin Barnhart, Minerva Barnhart, James H. Loughman, Abbie A. Loughman, M. A. Curtis, William H. Judkins, Belle M. Judkins, Nelson Ferris, F. R. Eberhart, J. M. Manwaring, James Aitken, S. M. Garom, B. Hol-

comb, B. R. O'Connor, F. J. O'Connor, William B. Hoover, Elias Hoover and J. Q. Z. Vandenbosch.

As the people of Mishawaka and Penn township had supported their first schools by voluntary subscriptions and had built the first dam and erected the first bridge across the river, in the same public-spirited manner, so now they began to solicit from one another the means necessary to do honor forever, both to their patriotic dead, and also to the patriotic living who thus generously remembered the heroes who had gone out from their neighborhoods to battle for the Union, the constitution and the laws.

For ten years the work of contribution and preparation went bravely on, until, in September, 1884, the people assembled in beautiful Battell park, to dedicate the noble memorial. The material selected was white bronze. The monument is surmounted by the figure of a soldier about to load his gun, and the whole structure is in harmonious proportion and with appropriate inscription. At the base, on the four sides, are read Shiloh, Vicksburg, Chickamauga and Mobile, while higher up, on the north and south sides, are the names of no less than fifty-eight other famous fields on which Mishawaka and Penn township boys did battle for their country.

Much praise is due those who had the good taste to cause the monument to be placed out in the heart of Battell park, not hiding it in among lofty buildings, nor crowding it out upon the street corners, but giving to it spacious grounds where its beauty may be seen and admired. This park, extending for a distance of three squares along the river front, and overlooking the whole city from the highlands between Joseph street and the water's edge, is, with its fine forest trees, one of the most attractive pleasure resorts in northern Indiana and forms a magnificent setting for the soldiers' monument.

Sec. 13.—THE PRESS.—The first newspaper published in Mishawaka seems to have been the Mishawaka Tocsin, established in 1841 by

Wilbur F. Storey, afterwards famous as editor of the Chicago Times. Mr. Storey remained in charge of the Tocsin for but a short time and disposed of it to George Merrifield. In 1845 Thomas Jernegan purchased the paper and removed it to South Bend, changing the name to the Indiana Tocsin. The Tocsin was no better sustained in South Bend than in Mishawaka and was soon discontinued.

In 1848 Dr. E. W. H. Ellis established a paper called the Free Democrat. It supported Martin Van Buren for the presidency against Lewis Cass. The paper did not survive the campaign of 1848. The Mishawaka Bee, started in 1846 by S. P. Hart, was also of short duration, being discontinued after two years.

In 1853 the people seemed to be ready for a permanent newspaper. In that year D. C. Ireland began the publication of the Free Press. After two years Mr. Ireland sold out to L. A. Elliott, who changed the name of the paper to the Mishawaka Enterprise and soon after disposed of it to Archibald Beal. In 1865 Norman V. Brower became the owner of the paper. Finally, in 1872, the Enterprise was purchased by Edward A. Jernegan, since which time the name of Jernegan has become almost synonymous with that of the Enterprise. The paper and its publisher suffered, in common with the rest of the city, in the calamity of September 5, 1872.^a Both, however, rose nobly to the task before them and not only overcame that disaster, but, after that event, the Enterprise, more than ever, deserved its title. It is praise enough of the Mishawaka Enterprise to say that it has kept pace, step by step, with the progress of the good city of Mishawaka itself.

As for the enterprise of the city at this time, it may be noted, as stated by the press in the succeeding summer: "Outside the burnt district, more buildings have been put up this season than ever before. This can be set down as Mishawaka's most prosperous

year." And that was written within less than a year after what seemed to be the complete destruction of the town. It was enterprise, not to say "The Enterprise," that built up a new Mishawaka.

The plucky people had so far overcome their calamity that on the first anniversary they made up their minds to have a meeting to celebrate their victories of the year. This is what the South Bend Tribune said on the evening before the anniversary:

"One year ago tomorrow night Mishawaka was visited by the most destructive conflagration that ever occurred in this part of the state. Over sixty buildings were burned, at a loss of nearly two hundred thousand dollars, and many who were not animated with the pluck and enterprise of the citizens of Mishawaka believed that the town had received its death blow. We wish that all such could be at the anniversary celebration tomorrow night, in Phoenix hall, and then take a glance over the rebuilt town—its solid brick blocks—and see how far they were from reading our plucky neighbors aright."

The Mishawaka Enterprise did its full share in that eventful year's work.

On July 4, 1891, there seemed to a young man an opportunity for another paper in Mishawaka, and the Mishawaka Democrat was launched upon the sea of journalism by William P. O'Neill. That his anticipations were well founded seems to have been justified by the event. The Democrat has continued to hold its place and has thus shown that there was room for two newspapers in Mishawaka.

Sec. 14.—MISHAWAKA SUMMARY.—Mishawaka is beautifully situated on the St. Joseph river, one of the most picturesque streams in the world, in the center of a fertile valley, 90 miles east of Chicago. It is one of the most healthful and most charming places of residence. It has every modern convenience. While it is a manufacturing city with several of the largest plants of their kind in the world it has retained that simplicity which

^a. See Subd. 2, this chapter.

makes life worth the living. The Hen Island dam across the St. Joseph river a few miles above the city creates a lake 30 feet deep, nearly a mile wide at points and 14 miles long. Pickerel, bass, croppies, perch and other fish abound. Mishawaka is advertised world wide.

City hall.

A theater.

High school.

Veneer plant.

Plow factory.

Cigar factories.

Masonic temple.

Healthful climate.

Good newspapers.

Population 10,000.

A beautiful park.

An orphans' home.

One G. A. R. post.

A famous brewery.

Artificial ice plant.

One national bank.

Pipe organ factory.

Rural mail routes.

Reasonable taxation.

Four public schools.

Beautiful residences.

Fine machine shops.

An automobile plant.

Odd Fellows' temple.

Paid fire department.

Four Catholic schools.

Fifty miles of sewers.

Free delivery of mail.

Two telephone systems.

Two express companies.

Large furniture factory.

Three parochial schools.

Vegetable slicer company.

Over 30 fraternal societies.

Three medicine companies.

Felt shoe and slipper plant.

Three bridges across river.

An aluminum last company.

Gamewell fire alarm system.

A folding carriage company.

Annual pay rolls of \$2,000,000.

Three miles of electric service.

Thirteen church organizations.

Four square miles of territory.

Largest pulley factory in world.

Gas, electric and water service.

A building and loan association.

Twelve handsome church edifices.

Twenty-five miles of water mains.

Three trust and savings companies.

Largest knit boot factory in world.

The largest rubber factory in the west.

The finest of manufacturing facilities.

Macadam, asphalt and brick pavement.

A malt cream and medicine company.

Largest windmill factory in the world.

Power house generating 10,000 horse electric power.

A large number of modern stores handling every commodity.

IV.—TOWN AND CITY GOVERNMENT.

From the election of the first board of trustees of the town of the St. Joseph Iron Works, January 31, 1835, and the act of the legislature, approved February 17, 1838, re-incorporating said town, together with adjoining towns and additions, under the name of the town of Mishawaka, as set out in the first subdivision of this chapter, the people continued for over sixty years to be satisfied with their simple and inexpensive form of government. But as the town grew in population and as new and diversified interests manifested themselves with the years, it became apparent that a more efficient form of government was needed; consequently, as the old century drew to a close the people prepared to take upon themselves the obligations and to secure the advantages of a city form of government.

On January 23, 1899, a petition, signed by five hundred and thirty-seven voters, being more than one-third of the voters of the town, was presented to the board of town trustees, asking for the incorporation of the town of Mishawaka as a city. The board fixed Febru-

ary 20, 1899, as the day of election, when the people should determine the question of incorporation. The opposition to the change was quite pronounced; but, at the election, seven hundred and two voted for incorporation, and only three hundred and thirty-six against it. On March 1, 1899, the board divided the new city into five wards and ordered notice to be given for the election of city officers on the first Tuesday of May, being May 2, 1899. After the election the board of town trustees met for the last time, on May 8, 1899, to close up town affairs and turn over the government to the city officers. The accounts showed the receipts of the treasury for the last fiscal year to be \$38,114.76, and the expenditures \$27,368.01, leaving a balance for the new government to start out on of \$10,746.75. Thereupon the board of trustees of the town of Mishawaka, after a government extending from January 31, 1835, to May 8, 1899, adjourned sine die, and Mishawaka entered upon its career as a city.

The last board of town trustees, who closed up the affairs of the old corporation and superintended the transfer of Mishawaka from a town to a city government, were: John C. Protsman, Charles E. Drapier, John J. Schindler, John W. Zigler and Peter W. Ipses.

The new city council proceeded at once to elect a city attorney and other officers to be chosen by the council. The first and third Mondays of each month were fixed upon for the regular meetings. At the next meeting, May 15, 1899, the mayor appointed the council committees, and the machinery of the city government was fairly started. The order adopting a seal for the city of Mishawaka was as follows:

"The seal of said city shall consist of a circular device, around the margin of which shall be inscribed the words, 'City of Mishawaka, Indiana,' and in the center thereof the American flag, across which shall be inscribed the word 'Liberty.'"

The officers of the city of Mishawaka since its organization have been as follows:

May, 1899: Mayor, Manuel M. Fisher; clerk, Henry C. Eggleston; treasurer, William M. Clark; street commissioner, Charles H. Doolittle; marshal, Grant Needham; attorney, Archibald G. Graham; councilmen, First Ward, Lorenzo D. Partridge, John Z. Wilklow; Second Ward, William B. Hosford, Millard F. Kerr; Third Ward, Samuel G. Todd, Peter Tollens; Fourth Ward, Jesse H. Gaines, Alfred S. Hess; Fifth Ward, Milton McKnight, William Lerner.

May, 1900: Mayor, Manuel M. Fisher; clerk, Henry C. Eggleston; treasurer, William M. Clark; marshal, Grant Needham; street commissioner, Charles H. Doolittle; attorney, Archibald G. Graham; councilmen, First Ward, Albert E. Kreutz, John Z. Wilklow; Second Ward, Millard F. Kerr, William B. Hosford; Third Ward, Samuel G. Todd, Peter Tollens; Fourth Ward, Jesse H. Gaines, Alfred S. Hess; Fifth Ward, Milton McKnight, William Lerner.

May, 1902: Mayor, Melville W. Mix; clerk, Horace G. Eggleston; treasurer, William M. Clark; marshal, Jerome Rossman; street commissioner, Charles H. Doolittle; attorney, Edward A. Howard; councilmen, First Ward, Albert E. Kreutz, August H. Herzog; Second Ward, John A. Graham, Leander Delcamp; Third Ward, Peter Jansen, Henry De Groote; Fourth Ward, Alfred S. Hess, James H. Nettleton; Fifth Ward, Otto Muinch, Alvin A. Keltner.

May, 1904: Mayor, Melville W. Mix; clerk, Francis X. Ganser; treasurer, William M. Clark; marshal, Frederick Stockberger; street commissioner, Charles H. Doolittle; attorney, Archibald Graham; councilmen, First Ward, August H. Herzog, Lorenzo D. Partridge; Second Ward, Leander Delcamp, David H. Wilber; Third Ward, John J. Schindler, Peter Jansen; Fourth Ward, Jesse H. Gaines, James H. Nettleton; Fifth Ward, Albert T. Garner, Joseph Colbert, Edward H. Sutherland.

November, 1905: Mayor, Charles Frank; clerk, Walter Michael; treasurer, William M. Clark; marshal, Benjamin F. Jarrett; street commissioner, Charles H. Doolittle; attorney, William P. O'Neill; board of health, Dr. James J. Bostwick, secretary, Dr. Christian A. Dresch, Alfred S. Hess; councilmen, First Ward, Lorenzo D. Partridge; Second Ward,

John D. Fulmer; Third Ward, August H. De Groote; Fourth Ward, William L. Minzey; Fifth Ward, Burton Varney; at large, Frank McNabb, Frederick W. Kuss.

As shown by the United States census, the population of Mishawaka, in 1860, was 1,486; in 1880, 2,640; in 1890, 3,371; in 1900, 5,560.

CHAPTER XI.

THE CITY OF SOUTH BEND.

I.—BEGINNINGS OF THE TOWN.

Sec. 1.—THE MICHIGAN ROAD.—“At this point is a beautiful site for a town.” These words, written in 1828, are found entered on the field notes of the second survey of the Michigan road. The point referred to is where the survey of the road reached the south bend of the St. Joseph river—the site on which the town, now city, of South Bend was afterward founded, and where it has flourished in a far greater degree, no doubt, than the prophetic surveyor could then have anticipated. It is quite certain that the construction of the Michigan road to the south bend of the St. Joseph river, according to the second survey, instead of running it directly from Logansport to Michigan City, across the marshes, as contemplated in the first survey, had a decided influence in promoting the early growth of the town.^a Yet the place was an important trading point for several years before the coming of the road and even before any survey was made.

Sec. 2.—NAMES GIVEN TO THE TOWN.—As we have already seen, Alexis Coquillard established an Indian trading post at this point in 1823.^b He was agent of the American Fur company and his trading post was called the Big St. Joseph's Station, to distinguish it from another trading post at Fort Wayne, on the little St. Joseph river, conducted for the same fur company by his father-in-law, Francis Comparet.

^a. See Chap. 5, Subd. 1, Sec. 3; also Chap. 7, Subd. 2.

^b. See Chap. 4, Subd. 4.

We have likewise seen that, in 1827, Lathrop Minor Taylor, or Col. L. M. Taylor, to use the name by which he is generally known, established a trading post here, as agent for Samuel Hanna & Co., of Fort Wayne.^a The Northern Indiana Historical Society has come into possession of Col. Taylor's account books. The opening entry on these books is dated at “St. Joseph's, Indiana,” October 29, 1827, and the name “St. Joseph's” is retained throughout the books of the company. Indeed, it would seem that this was for some time the recognized name of each of the trading posts. Years afterwards, when these trading posts had developed into a town, and the ambitious citizens became dissatisfied with the name of South Bend, which to them seemed plebeian and meaningless, public meetings were held to consider other names for the incipient Queen City of the St. Joseph Valley; and among the names then suggested was this old one of St. Joseph's or St. Joseph. At that time, and even long afterwards, serious efforts were made for the revival of the original name given to the trading posts of Coquillard and Taylor.

In 1829 a post office was established, and on June 6, 1829, Lathrop M. Taylor was commissioned as first postmaster. In connection with the establishment of the post office is the mystery of still another name for the new town. In Mr. Taylor's commission he was appointed postmaster at “Southold, Allen county, Indiana.” The county of Allen

^a. Chap. 4, Subd. 4.

then extended over this part of Indiana, but no one has ever given a satisfactory explanation of Southold as the name of the town. There is a town of this name in Suffolk county, New York, on the coast of Long Island sound, and, for want of a better explanation, the supposition has been entertained that an official connected with the post office department and having some charge of the appointment of post masters, may have been familiar with this town of Southold, on Long Island, and so have designedly or by mistake suggested the name for the new town on the banks of the St. Joseph. This, however, is mere conjecture, and the origin of Southold as a former name of our city is yet to be discovered. The name was retained but a short time, and on October 18, 1830, the United States authorities directed the name of the post office to be changed to South Bend, which has since been retained. It has been said that the origin of this name is due to Alexis Coquillard, but it is plain that the name came naturally from the location of the town upon the river. Up to a recent time the place was often referred to, simply as "The Bend," and even yet one occasionally hears this irreverent appellation applied to the fair metropolis of northern Indiana. From the most remote time, the great south bend of the Big St. Joseph's was, to the red man, and to the white man, as it is to the geologist of our day, the most remarkable natural phenomenon of the region south of the great lakes. The portage of the St. Joseph was hardly more noted than the bend two miles up the river; and it was for a time uncertain at which of these historical points the coming town would be built, whether at the "Portage" or at the "Bend."

As a matter of fact, as we have already seen, two efforts were made to build a town at the portage, but Mr. Brookfield's old "St. Joseph" and Judge Egbert's "Portage" are both among the towns that were.^a

It was natural enough that the town built

at the bend should be referred to as "The Bend," even before it was formally given that name. It is an instance in which the name was given to the locality long before the existence of the town itself. The town was built at the bend, and hence called "The Bend." Some dignity was added to the woodsman's simple designation by prefixing to it the word "South," suggested by the location of the bend, strengthened also, perhaps, by the accidental name of Southold first given to the post office. South Bend it is, and South Bend it will be, for the people have become attached to the simple and expressive, even if homely, title that has come down to us from that geological catastrophe which turned the Kankakee from its ancient bed and swept it, in this noble bend from the south, until it found its way, as the St. Joseph, into the waters of Lake Michigan.^a

SEC. 3. —THE ORIGINAL PLAT OF SOUTH BEND.—The town of South Bend was laid out by Alexis Coquillard and Lathrop M. Taylor on the 28th day of March, A. D. 1831. The dedication and description, as entered on the recorded plat, are in the following words:

"Town of South Bend, by Alexis Coquillard and Lathrop M. Taylor.

"The aforesaid town is laid off on the northwest fractional quarter of section number twelve and on the southern part of the southwest fractional quarter of section number one, of township number thirty-seven north, and range number two east of the second principal meridian of the State of Indiana. Each lot is ten rods east and west and four rods north and south, containing one quarter of an acre. The fractional lots, according to the number of feet and rods marked on the sides of said lots. The alleys, running east and west, north and south, through the center of each square, are fourteen feet wide. Lots numbered two hundred and forty-seven, two hundred and forty-eight and two hundred and forty-nine are hereby donated for the purpose of building a court-

a. Chap. 1, Subds. 2 and 7.

a. See Chap. 9, Subd. 1.



THE SOUTH BEND OF THE ST. JOSEPH RIVER FROM WHICH THE CITY DERIVES ITS NAME.

house and gaol on, whenever the county seat of said county may be established at the town aforesaid. And lots numbered sixty-seven and two hundred and eight are hereby donated to said town of South Bend for the use and purpose of erecting school houses thereon. And lot numbered three hundred and twenty-one is hereby donated to the Methodist society, for the purpose of erecting a church thereon. And also lots numbered one hundred and seventeen and one hundred and eighteen are hereby donated to the Catholic church for the purpose of erecting suitable buildings for a church thereon.

"In testimony whereof, the said Alexis Coquillard and Lathrop M. Taylor, proprietors of said town of South Bend, have hereunto set their hands and seals this 28th day of March, in the year of our Lord one thousand, eight hundred and thirty-one.

"Alexis Coquillard.

"Lathrop M. Taylor."

"State of Indiana, St. Joseph County, ss.:

"On this 28th day of March, A. D. 1831, Alexis Coquillard and Lathrop M. Taylor, the proprietors named in the foregoing instrument and town plat of the town of South Bend, personally appeared before me, one of the associate judges of the St. Joseph circuit court in and for said county, and severally acknowledged the signing and sealing of the aforesaid instrument of writing, and the aforesaid plat, to be their own free act and deed for the purposes therein expressed.

"Given under my hand and seal the day and year first above written.

"William Brookfield,

"Asst. J. C. C.

"The within town plat was recorded March 28th, 1831."

William Brookfield, who took the acknowledgment of the foregoing plat, as associate judge of the St. Joseph circuit court,^a was himself also the surveyor of the plat, as ap-

pears from the following additional entry found on the same record:

"The scale by which this town is laid off is ten rods to the inch.

"William Brookfield, Surveyor.

"March 28, 1831."

The river is marked on the plat as the "Big St. Josef river."

Sec. 4.—SOUTH BEND THE COUNTY SEAT.—We have seen, in chapter fifth of this work, that the town of St. Joseph, as laid out by William Brookfield at the old portage, was the first county seat of St. Joseph county; that, on petition of the people of the county, the legislature, by an act approved February 1, 1831, appointed commissioners to re-locate the county seat; and that on May 12, 1831, the commissioners so appointed, after having met at the house of Mr. Brookfield, and "after making all the examinations," re-located the county seat at South Bend.^a

The master hand of Alexis Coquillard was shown in the change of the county seat. Mr. Coquillard's house was at first the only convenient building in the county for holding the meetings of the county board, and was, therefore, in fact, the seat of the county government, even though the legal seat of justice was nominally at the projected town near the portage. Considering, therefore, that for the first years of the county's history the actual place of government was at the residence of Mr. Coquillard, it may be said that South Bend was always the real county seat, even during the short time that the town of St. Joseph was the nominal seat of government.

But it was not enough that the county business was actually done at South Bend, or rather "at the house of Alexis Coquillard," to use the expression in the records. It was also necessary that South Bend should be the county seat according to law. The steps in bringing about the change taken in chronological order, were: First, The petition pre-

^a. As to Mr. Brookfield's office of Associate Judge, see note to "Circuit Court," Chap. 6, Subd. 2, Sec. 4.

^a. See "Location of the County Seat," Chap. 5, Subd. 7.

sented to the legislature, in December, 1830, signed by one hundred and twenty-five citizens of St. Joseph county, praying for a relocation of the county seat; Second, The act approved February 1, 1831, appointing commissioners to consider the question of re-location, and to act thereon as they should judge best; Third, The platting of the town of South Bend, March 28, 1831; Fourth, The meeting of the legislative commission, on May 9, 1831; Fifth, The concessions made by Coquillard and Taylor, in addition to those shown on the original plat, to wit: Fifteen lots given to the county; lot three hundred and forty-one given to the United Brethren church; lot four hundred and three to the German Baptists; lot two hundred and thirty-four to the Presbyterians; four acres to the town for a cemetery; also three thousand dollars in cash to the board of county commissioners for the use of the county of St. Joseph. All these additional donations were made "in consideration that the county seat of St. Joseph county, in the state aforesaid, shall be permanently located at the South Bend, in said county." As to the title to the lots the further agreement was made that they were "to be legally conveyed in a reasonable time after the patents shall have issued to the said Coquillard and Taylor, in consideration that the county seat shall be permanently located at South Bend, in said county." To secure the donations, Coquillard and Taylor executed their individual bond, and also filed the written guaranty thereof, signed by Samuel Hanna, Joseph Rohrer, Samuel Studenbaker and David H. Colerick; Sixth, The conclusion of the legislative commission, May 12, 1831, after receiving the foregoing concessions and after an examination of "the present seat of justice for said county," was "that public interest requires a removal of said seat of justice." Thereupon they "immediately proceeded to select a suitable site for the county seat of said county of St. Joseph; and, after making all examinations required by law,

have selected the town of South Bend, as laid out and recorded on the records of said county, and have hereby established the same."

Thus was the town,—called at first "The Bend," then the "Big St. Joseph's Station," then "St. Joseph's," then "Southold," and finally "South Bend,"—brought into existence—platted March 28, 1831, and made the permanent county seat of St. Joseph county May 12, 1831. In chapters fifth and sixth of this history, in detailing the early chronicles of the county, we have given further particulars of the early history of the town. As the county seat of St. Joseph county, the history of the county for a long time necessarily included the greater part of the history of the town, and it is not necessary to repeat these details in the present chapter.

II.—THE TOWN GOVERNMENT.

Sec. 1.—THE FIRST INCORPORATION.—Although the town was platted and made the county seat in 1831, yet there were no steps taken to secure an incorporation until 1835, when a petition for that purpose was laid before the board of county commissioners. On Tuesday, September 8, being the second day of the September term, 1835, the board of county commissioners made the following order:

"Ordered, that the sheriff of said county give notice to the citizens of South Bend, by advertising the same, to meet at the court house, in the town of South Bend, on the 3rd day of October next, and then and there to elect trustees for the incorporation of the town of South Bend. The said order was granted on petition of the two-thirds of the citizens of South Bend filed."

The election was held on October 3, 1835, as ordered, and the following board of town trustees elected: William P. Howe, Horatio Chapin, Peter Johnson, John Massey and James A. Mann. Horatio Chapin was chosen as the first president of the board. In 1837 Edmund Pitts Taylor, brother of L. M. Taylor, was made president, and Francis R. Tutt

secretary. During the panic of 1837 the town languished and for a time the organization was wholly abandoned.

Sec. 2.—THE SECOND INCORPORATION.—But, as shown in a previous chapter, local conditions grew better in a few years.^a By a special act of the legislature, approved December 28, 1842, the South Bend Manufacturing Company was incorporated. The object of this organization was to finish the dam across the St. Joseph and so make use of the power of the river. This work was begun during the spring of 1843, and in 1844 the dam was completed, together with a mill race on each side of the river. This great accomplishment roused the people to a realization of the fine prospects before them for building up a great manufacturing town at the south bend of the St. Joseph.

The old prophesies were about to come true. Coquillard, in 1823, had not established the "Big St. Joseph's Station" in vain, nor had Taylor, in 1827, been mistaken in following with another Indian trading post, at "St. Joseph's, Indiana," nor, in 1828, did the surveyor of the Michigan road err in judgment when he wrote on the face of his field notes: "At this point is a beautiful site for a town," nor was that correspondent of the Indianapolis Journal deficient in mental vision, who, under date of November 30, 1830, wrote the following:

"Having lately traveled through the north part of Indiana, I am of the opinion that a description of it will not be without interest to your readers. Traveling west, I passed the southern bend of the St. Joseph river, at the intersection of the Michigan road, where it is supposed the seat of justice of St. Joseph county will ere long be established. This town, I have no doubt, will in a very few years become one of the most important towns north of Indianapolis, and it is a misfortune that the law of the last session authorizing the partial opening of the Michigan road, did not

cause it to be opened to the St. Joseph at this bend."

So, with the panic past, the Michigan road became a great north and south thoroughfare, the boats up the St. Joseph bringing here the commerce of the lakes, the county seat fixed, the mill dam and the two mill races completed, the population rapidly increasing, and, in a word, all the early anticipations far on the way to fulfillment, it was high time to start again the wheels of local government. By reason of the failure to elect officers or to keep up the meeting of trustees formerly elected, it was a matter of doubt whether the original incorporation had not altogether lapsed. In this dilemma it was thought best to apply to the legislature for a special charter, as might be done under the constitution of 1816, then in force. This course was accordingly taken, and, by "An act incorporating the town of South Bend, St. Joseph county, Indiana," approved January 15, 1844,^a the new charter was granted, as follows:

"Section 1. *Be it enacted by the General Assembly of the State of Indiana*, That Benjamin F. Price, William H. Patteson, John Brownfield, Abraham Wilson and Ricketson Burroughs be and they are hereby appointed trustees of the corporation of the town of South Bend, St. Joseph county, Indiana, to serve as such until the first Monday in March, 1845, and until their successors are elected and qualified, as hereinafter directed.

"Sec. 2. That the said trustees, at their first meeting, after the passage of this act, shall elect a president from their own body, whose duty it shall be to preside at all meetings of the board and preserve order, put all questions, and upon an equal division of the board, give the casting vote, and at the close of each meeting shall sign the minutes of the same. And the said trustees shall also, at said meeting, or as soon after as may be convenient, appoint all officers necessary to carry into effect the provisions of this act, and

^a. See Chap. 7, Subd. 1.

^a. Local Laws, 1843, pp. 35-44.

make to them such compensation as to said trustees shall appear reasonable and right.

"Sec. 3. The said president and trustees of said town and their successors in office shall be a body politic and corporate, with perpetual succession, by the name and style of 'The President and Trustees of the Town of South Bend.' "

By other sections of the act, the following additional provisions were made: The first election was fixed for the first Monday in March, 1845, and annually thereafter on the first Monday in March each year. The town was to be divided into five wards, and one trustee elected from each ward. Trustees should be residents of the wards from which they were elected. It was provided that the limits of the corporation should extend to and embrace the original plat of the town, with all additions of in-lots or out-lots "which have been or hereafter may be made thereto." The right to amend or repeal the charter was reserved by the legislature. The old incorporation was expressly dissolved, but not so as to impair the deed made March 1, 1841, by Alexis Coquillard for the cemetery west of the town.

By an act approved January 19, 1846,^a certain amendments to the foregoing charter were made, chiefly affecting the assessment and collection of taxes. These provisions were also made applicable "to the charter of the village of St. Joseph Iron Works, or Mishawaka, in said county."

Sec. 3.—THE OFFICIALS OF THE TOWN.—The trustees named by the legislature, chose John Brownfield as president and William H. Patteson as clerk. The same board, appointed Dr. William A. Brown, Dr. Daniel Dayton, Dr. E. S. Sheffield, Dr. A. B. Merritt, Dr. Louis Humphreys, Mr. A. M. Lapierre and Mr. B. F. Miller as a board of health. The duties of this board were of unusual importance by reason of an epidemic of small pox then prevalent in the town. John Hooper was

appointed town marshal, and after a few days was succeeded by Evan C. Johnson.

The first election under the new charter, as required by the statute, was held on Monday, March 3, 1845; and resulted in the election of the following named trustees: John Brownfield, Benjamin F. Price, William H. Patteson, Ricketson Burroughs and Joseph Andre. The trustees selected John Brownfield as president; Charles M. Heaton, as clerk; Schuyler Colfax, as assessor; Albert Monson, as treasurer; and William Snavelly, as marshal.

The names of the subsequent town officers, elected and appointed, so far as can now be learned, are set out below. In some years there were no elections, the old officers holding over; and in other cases we have no record of the officers elected or appointed. The officers, so far as known were as follows:

1846.—President, John Brownfield; Trustees, Lathrop M. Taylor, William H. Patteson, Harrison M. Crockett and Benjamin F. Miller; Clerk, Charles M. Heaton; Treasurer, Albert Monson; Marshal, Jacob Grassnical; Assessor, Jacob Hardman.

1848.—President, John A. Henricks; Trustees, John Hooper, A. M. Lapierre, Benjamin Wall, John Beeraft; Clerk, Charles M. Heaton; Treasurer, John Brownfield; Assessor, Daniel Dayton; Marshal, Charles B. Chandonai.

1850.—President, Solomon W. Palmer; Trustees, John M. Veasey, David P. Gerberck, Abraham Wilson, (No election in Second Ward); Clerk, John M. Veasey; Treasurer, John Brownfield; Assessor, Daniel Dayton; Marshal, John Beeraft.

1851.—President, Matthias Stover; Trustees: David P. Gerberck, Charles A. Stover (resigned), Lathrop M. Taylor (appointed to fill vacancy), A. G. Deavitt, John Beeraft; Clerk, Daniel Matthews; Treasurer, John Brownfield; Assessor, Jacob Hardman; Marshal, John Beeraft.

1858.—President, Henry Carleton; Trustees, Jesse L. Walterhouse, Thomas S. Stanfield, Edmund Pitts Taylor, H. A. Finley;

^a. Local Laws, 1845, pp. 312, 313.

Clerk, Daniel Matthews; Assessor, Cassius Caldwell; Marshal, Charles Vinson.

1859.—President, Benjamin F. Price; Trustees, John A. Henricks, Elmer Rose, George W. Matthews, Isaac Ford; Clerk, Daniel Matthews; Treasurer, Daniel Dayton; Assessor, John Caldwell; Marshal, William S. Saunders.

1860.—President, Benjamin F. Price; Trustees, John T. Lindsey, Edmund Pitts Taylor, George W. Matthews, Dwight Deming; Clerk, Edwin E. Ames; Treasurer, Daniel Dayton; Assessor, Elisha Sumption; Marshal, William S. Saunders.

1861.—President, Edmund Pitts Taylor; Trustees, John C. Knoblock, John Hooper, Aaron A. Webster, Wright Clapp; Clerk, Edwin E. Ames; Treasurer, Daniel Dayton; Assessor, Charles M. Baker; Marshal, William S. Saunders.

1862.—President, Edmund Pitts Taylor; Trustees, John C. Knoblock, John Hooper, Aaron A. Webster, Wright Clapp; Clerk, George H. Alward; Treasurer, Daniel Dayton; Assessor, Elisha Sumption; Marshal, Daniel Roof.

1863.—President, John A. Henricks; Trustees, Charles W. Martin, William Miller, John Gallagher, Ulrich Foegley; Clerk, George H. Alward; Treasurer, Elisha Sumption; Assessor, C. William Price; Marshal, Evan C. Johnson.

1864.—President, John A. Henricks; Trustees, Charles W. Martin, William Miller, Esq., (father of General John F. Miller, so called to distinguish him from William Miller, afterwards Mayor), Aaron A. Webster, Ulrich Foegley; Clerk, George H. Alward; Treasurer, George W. Matthews; Assessor, Elisha Sumption; Marshal, Daniel Roof.

1865.—President, Henry Carleton; Trustees, William G. George, Thomas S. Stanfield, Lemuel M. Staples, John Gallagher; Clerk, George H. Alward; Treasurer, George W. Matthews; Assessor, Elisha Sumption; Marshal, Daniel Roof.

III. THE CITY GOVERNMENT.

In 1865, the town organization came to an end, and South Bend was incorporated as a city. On May 8, 1865, John H. Keedy and two hundred and eighty-five others presented a petition to the trustees of the town praying for an incorporation as a city. Thereupon it was ordered by the board of trustees that an election be held at the sheriff's office in the court house, on Monday, May 22, 1865, between the hours of nine, A. M., and four, P. M., to determine whether said town should be incorporated as a city.

The election resulted in favor of a city organization. At a special session of the board of town trustees, held on Friday, June 2, 1865, the report of the election was laid before the board, whereupon the following preamble and order were made and entered of record:

“Whereas, at an election held on the twenty-second day of May, 1865, the citizens have decided by a large majority (286 ayes, 194 nays) that the town of South Bend should be incorporated as a city:

“Ordered, that the city be divided into three wards, and that an election be held on the fifth of June, 1865, for the election of officers.”

The first city officers, elected on Monday, June 5, 1865, and all subsequent city officers for each year, to this date, are here set out in full:

Section 1.—OFFICERS.—Chronological table of Municipal Officers of the City of South Bend from its incorporation, May 22, 1865, to July 1, 1907:

1865.—Wm. G. George, Mayor; Geo. H. Alward, Clerk; Geo. W. Matthews, Treasurer; Daniel Roof, Marshal; Washington Saunders, Civil Engineer; Elisha Sumption, Assessor. Councilmen—First Ward, William Miller and John Klingel; Second Ward, William Miller and Thomas S. Stanfield; Third Ward, John Gallagher and Israel C. Sweet.

1866.—W. G. George, Mayor; John Hag-

erty, Clerk; John H. Spain, Treasurer; Jacob K. Huston, Marshal; Elisha Sumption, Assessor; Rufus Rose, Civil Engineer; A. B. Wade, City Judge; J. A. Hartman, Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, William Miller and John Klingel; Second Ward, T. S. Stanfield and David Stover; Third Ward, Isaac Ford and A. B. Merritt.

1867.—W. G. George, Mayor; John Hagerty, City Clerk; Joseph B. Eaker, Treasurer; W. Carlton, Marshal; Matthias Stover, Civil Engineer; A. B. Wade, City Judge; J. A. Hartman, Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, S. F. Myers and William Miller; Second Ward, T. S. Stanfield and David Stover; Third Ward, T. W. Defrees and A. B. Merritt; Fourth Ward, A. Russwurm and Samuel Parry.

1868.—Louis Humphreys, Mayor; David M. Rennoe, Clerk; Joseph B. Eaker, Treasurer; Lea P. Johnson, Assessor; George W. Foulke, Marshal; Geo. H. Alward, City Judge; Matthias Stover, Civil Engineer; Cassius Caldwell, Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, S. F. Myers and William Miller; Second Ward, T. S. Stanfield and William Miller; Third Ward, T. W. Defrees and Elliott Tutt; Fourth Ward, Andrew Russwurm and S. L. Cottrell.

1869.—Louis Humphreys, Mayor; David M. Rennoe, Clerk; Joseph B. Eaker, Treasurer; Lea P. Johnson, Assessor; George W. Foulke, Marshal; Geo. H. Alward, City Judge; John R. Foster, City Attorney; Matthias Stover, Civil Engineer; Cassius Caldwell, Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, William Miller and John H. Keedy; Second Ward, William Miller and T. S. Stanfield; Third Ward, Elliott Tutt and T. W. Defrees; Fourth Ward, S. L. Cottrell and A. T. Coquillard.

1870.—Louis Humphreys, Mayor; David M. Rennoe, Clerk; John G. Maughermar, Treasurer; George W. Foulke, Marshal; George Pfleger, City Judge; John R. Foster, City Attorney; Lea P. Johnson, Assessor; Matthias Stover, Civil Engineer; Cassius

Caldwell, Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, John H. Keedy and William Miller; Second Ward, Lucius Hubbard and Clement Studebaker; Third Ward, T. W. Defrees and Adam Bernhard; Fourth Ward, A. T. Coquillard and A. C. Staley.

1871.—Louis Humphreys, Mayor; David M. Rennoe, Clerk; John G. Maughermar, Treasurer; George W. Foulke, Marshal; George Pfleger, City Judge; John R. Foster, City Attorney; Lea P. Johnson, Assessor; Matthias Stover, Civil Engineer; Cassius Caldwell, Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, William Miller and Irvin Skinner; Second Ward, Lucius Hubbard and Clement Studebaker; Third Ward, Adam Bernhard and Elliott Tutt; Fourth Ward, A. C. Staley and A. T. Coquillard.

1872.—William Miller, Mayor; David M. Rennoe, Clerk; John G. Maughermar, Treasurer; J. A. Hartman, Marshal; Mark Whinery, City Judge; Edward Egbert, City Attorney; Lea P. Johnson, Assessor; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; Charles Zigler, Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, Irvin Skinner and Charles Hartman; Second Ward, Clement Studebaker and John R. Foster; Third Ward, Elliott Tutt and Alex. Staples; Fourth Ward, A. T. Coquillard and N. S. Marsh.

1873.—William Miller, Mayor; David M. Rennoe, Clerk; John G. Maughermar, Treasurer; William Crews, Marshal; Mark Whinery, City Judge; Edward Egbert, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; Charles Zigler, Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, Charles Hartman and Joseph Warden; Second Ward, John R. Foster and Seeley R. King; Third Ward, Alex. Staples and William Simmons; Fourth Ward, N. S. Marsh and Peter Weber.

1874.—William Miller, Mayor; E. W. Hoover, Clerk; Jacob N. Massey, Treasurer; Robert Hardy, Marshal; John Hagerty, City Judge; Edward Egbert, City Attorney; George W. Sumption, Assessor; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; Charles Zigler,

Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, Joseph Warden and A. Defrees; Second Ward, Seeley R. King and A. N. Thomas; Third Ward, T. W. Defrees and M. N. Walworth; Fourth Ward, Peter Weber and Simon Raff; Fifth Ward, William Simons and J. M. Asire.

1875.—William Miller, Mayor; E. W. Hoover, Clerk; Jacob N. Massey, Treasurer; Robert Hardy, Marshal; John Hagerty, City Judge; Edward Egbert, City Attorney; George W. Sumption, Assessor; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; Charles Zigler, Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, A. Defrees and Ricketson Burroughs; Second Ward, A. N. Thomas and Robert Harris; Third Ward, M. N. Walworth and A. J. Jaquith; Fourth Ward, Simon Raff and Dwight Deming; Fifth Ward, J. M. Asire and Lester F. Baker.

1876.—A. N. Thomas, Mayor; E. W. Henriks, Clerk; D. C. Rush, Treasurer; George Bernhard, Marshal; William L. Farr, Assessor; John Brownfield, Jr., City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; Charles Zigler, Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, Ricketson Burroughs and Daniel Dayton; Second Ward, Robert Harris and E. P. Taylor; Third Ward, A. J. Jaquith and W. W. Giddings; Fourth Ward, Dwight Deming and L. A. Hull; Fifth Ward, L. F. Baker and L. R. Richardson.

1877.—Alexander N. Thomas, Mayor; E. W. Henriks, Clerk; D. C. Rush, Treasurer; George Bernhard, Marshal; William L. Farr, Assessor; John Brownfield, Jr., City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; Charles Zigler, Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, Daniel Dayton and Ricketson Burroughs; Second Ward, E. P. Taylor and George F. Nevius; Third Ward, W. W. Giddings and H. C. Crawford; Fourth Ward, L. A. Hull and Jonas Lontz; Fifth Ward, L. A. Richardson and S. W. Palmer.

1878.—Lucius G. Tong, Mayor; E. W. Henriks, Clerk; D. C. Rush, Treasurer; E. C. Johnson, Marshal; William L. Farr, As-

essor; Lucius Hubbard, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; Dennis O'Neil, Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, Ricketson Burroughs and Daniel Dayton; Second Ward, George F. Nevius and Nathaniel Frame; Third Ward, H. C. Crawford and James Butler; Fourth Ward, Jonas Lontz and T. E. Howard; Fifth Ward, S. W. Palmer and George W. Loughman.

1879.—L. G. Tong, Mayor; E. W. Henriks, Clerk; D. C. Rush, Treasurer; E. C. Johnson, Marshal; William L. Farr, Assessor; Lucius Hubbard, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; Dennis O'Neil, Street Commissioner. Councilmen—First Ward, Daniel Dayton and Sorden Lister; Second Ward, Nathaniel Frame and Joseph Henderson; Third Ward, James Butler and W. W. Giddings; Fourth Ward, T. E. Howard and J. A. Neuperth; Fifth Ward, George W. Loughman and William S. Weaver.

1880.—Levi J. Ham, Mayor; Fred B. Williams, Clerk; D. C. Rush, Treasurer; George Bernhard, Marshal; William L. Farr, Assessor; John Hagerty, City Attorney; Arthur J. Stace, Civil Engineer; A. Defrees, Street Commissioner; John M. Studebaker, A. C. Staley, Jacob Strayer, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, Sorden Lister and Irvin Skinner; Second Ward, Joseph Henderson and David Stover; Third Ward, W. W. Giddings and James Butler; Fourth Ward, J. A. Neuperth and T. E. Howard; Fifth Ward, William S. Weaver and George W. Loughman.

1881.—Levi J. Ham, Mayor; Fred B. Williams, Clerk; D. C. Rush, Treasurer; George Bernhard, Marshal; William L. Farr, Assessor; John Hagerty, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; A. Defrees, Street Commissioner; J. M. Asire, A. C. Staley, Jacob Strayer, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, Irvin Skinner and Sorden Lister; Second Ward, David Stover and J. P. Creed; Third Ward, James Butler and Peter Makielski; Fourth Ward, T. E.

Howard and Samuel C. Lontz; Fifth Ward, Geo. W. Loughman and N. J. Bernhard.

1882.—Levi J. Ham, Mayor; Fred B. Williams, Clerk; E. R. Wills, Treasurer; George Bernhard, Marshal; William L. Farr, Assessor; John Hagerty, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; A. Defrees, Street Commissioner; Patrick O'Brien, J. M. Asire, Jacob Strayer, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, Irvin Skinner and Sorden Lister; Second Ward, David Stover and J. P. Creed; Third Ward, Cornelius Hagerty and Peter Makielski; Fourth Ward, T. E. Howard and Samuel C. Lontz; Fifth Ward, H. E. Jackson and N. J. Bernhard.

1883.—Levi J. Ham, Mayor; Fred Williams, Clerk; E. R. Wills, Treasurer; George Bernhard, Marshal; William L. Farr, Assessor; John Hagerty, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; A. Defrees, Street Commissioner; William Mack, P. O'Brien, J. M. Asire, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, Irvin Skinner and T. E. Knoblock; Second Ward, David Stover and William H. Longley; Third Ward, Cornelius Hagerty and Peter Makielski; Fourth Ward, T. E. Howard and J. C. Dille; Fifth Ward, H. E. Jackson and N. J. Bernhard.

1884.—George W. Loughman, Mayor; B. B. Kimble, Clerk; John Roth, Treasurer; Thomas Hoban, Marshal; John Hagerty, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; James Butler, Street Commissioner; N. P. Bowsher, William Mack, P. O'Brien, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, T. E. Knoblock and Sorden Lister; Second Ward, W. H. Longley and John Yant; Third Ward, Peter Makielski and Cornelius Hagerty; Fourth Ward, J. C. Dille and Martin Hoban; Fifth Ward, N. J. Bernhard and W. S. Anderson.

1885.—George W. Loughman, Mayor; B. B. Kimble, Clerk; John Roth, Treasurer; Thomas Hoban, Marshal; John Hagerty, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; James Butler, Street Commissioner;

John C. Birdsell, Sr., N. P. Bowsher, William Mack, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, T. E. Knoblock and Sorden Lister; Second Ward, Robert Harris and John Yant; Third Ward, Frank Kowalski and Cornelius Hagerty; Fourth Ward, J. C. Dille and Martin Hoban; Fifth Ward, A. J. Rudduck and W. S. Anderson.

1886.—George W. Loughman, Mayor; B. B. Kimble, Clerk; John Roth, Treasurer; Thomas Hoban, Marshal; Lucius Hubbard, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; James Butler, Street Commissioner; E. R. St. John, J. C. Birdsell, Sr., N. P. Bowsher, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, T. E. Knoblock and M. R. Staley; Second Ward, Robert Harris and John Yant; Third Ward, Frank Kowalski and L. T. Stedman; Fourth Ward, J. C. Dille and Martin Hoban; Fifth Ward, A. J. Rudduck and George H. Asire.

1887.—George W. Loughman, Mayor; B. B. Kimble, Clerk; John Roth, Treasurer; Joseph Turnock, Marshal; Lucius Hubbard, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; James Butler, Street Commissioner; Alex. Staples, E. R. St. John, J. C. Birdsell, Sr., Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, M. R. Staley and P. O'Brien; Second Ward, John Yant and David Stover; Third Ward, L. T. Stedman and Jacob Janowski; Fourth Ward, M. Hoban and S. C. Lontz; Fifth Ward, George H. Asire and A. J. Rudduck.

1888.—William H. Longley, Mayor; David Casey, Clerk; John Wagener, Treasurer; L. T. Stover, Marshal; T. E. Howard, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; James Butler, Street Commissioner; Charles H. Pavey, Alex. Staples, E. R. St. John, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, P. O'Brien and Henry F. Elbel; Second Ward, David Stover and Hanford T. Roberts; Third Ward, Jacob Janowski and Adam Weaver; Fourth Ward, S. C. Lontz and Joseph E. Robert; Fifth Ward, A. J. Rudduck and Joseph E. Williams.

1889.—William H. Longley, Mayor; David Casey, Clerk; John Wagener, Treasurer; L. T. Stover, Marshal; T. E. Howard, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; James Butler, Street Commissioner; R. L. Braunsdorf, Charles H. Pavey, Alex. Staples, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, Henry F. Elbel and A. S. Ginz, Second Ward, Hanford T. Roberts and Chris. Fassnacht; Third Ward, Adam Weaver and Peter Makielski; Fourth Ward, Joseph E. Robert and J. F. Weiss; Fifth Ward, Joseph E. Williams and Thomas A. Kerr.

1890.—William H. Longley, Mayor; Cornelius Hunt, Clerk; John Wagener, Treasurer; Lewis T. Stover, Marshal; T. E. Howard, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; A. Defrees, Street Commissioner; Jonathan Mathews, Water Works Trustee. Councilmen—First Ward, A. S. Ginz and Henry F. Elbel; Second Ward, Chris. Fassnacht and Hanford T. Roberts; Third Ward, Alex. Rex and Jeremiah Hagerty; Fourth Ward, J. F. Weiss and John Taggart; Fifth Ward, Thomas A. Kerr and George Kerner; Sixth Ward, Peter Makielski and Chas. V. Korpall; Seventh Ward, Joseph E. Robert and M. J. Roach.

1891.—William H. Longley, Mayor; Cornelius Hunt, Clerk; John Wagener, Treasurer; Lewis T. Stover, Marshal; T. E. Howard, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; A. Defrees, Street Commissioner; S. L. Brubaker, R. L. Braunsdorf, Charles Pavey, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, A. S. Ginz and Henry F. Elbel; Second Ward, M. J. Worrell and Hanford T. Roberts; Third Ward, Jeremiah Hagerty and Fred Schafer; Fourth Ward, John F. Weiss and John Taggart; Fifth Ward, Thomas A. Kerr and George Kerner; Sixth Ward, Valentine Duszynski and Chas. V. Korpall; Seventh Ward, M. J. Roach and Joseph E. Robert.

1892.—David R. Leeper, Mayor; Louis A. Hull, Clerk; Will A. Rutherford, Treasurer; Benjamin H. Rose, Marshal; O. M. Cunning-

ham, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; A. Defrees, Street Commissioner; Chas. M. Collins, Chas. W. Clapp, Chas. Brehmer, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, J. B. Haberle and A. S. Ginz; Second Ward, James H. Roberts and M. J. Worrell; Third Ward, Fred Schafer and Jeremiah Hagerty; Fourth Ward, Addison McNabb and J. Ed. Skillman; Fifth Ward, Chris. Sieg and Thomas A. Kerr; Sixth Ward, Frank Gonsiorowski and V. Duszynski; Seventh Ward, S. C. Schmidt and M. J. Roach.

1893.—David R. Leeper, Mayor; Louis A. Hull, Clerk; Will A. Rutherford, Treasurer; Benjamin H. Rose, Marshal; Joseph G. Orr, City Attorney; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; A. Defrees, Street Commissioner; Chas. M. Collins, Chas. W. Clapp, Chas. Brehmer, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, J. B. Haberle and A. S. Ginz; Second Ward, James H. Roberts and W. B. Russell; Third Ward, Fred Schafer and Jeremiah Hagerty; Fourth Ward, Addison McNabb and J. Ed. Skillman; Fifth Ward, Chris. Sieg and Thomas A. Kerr; Sixth Ward, Frank Gonsiorowski and Anton Bilinski; Seventh Ward, S. C. Schmidt and M. J. Roach.

1894.—David B. J. Schafer, Mayor; Louis A. Hull, Clerk; Will A. Rutherford, Treasurer; Wilbert Ward, City Attorney; Dr. C. Stoltz, Health Officer; William M. Whitten, Civil Engineer; John Yant, Street Commissioner; Otto M. Knoblock, Chas. M. Collins, Chas. W. Clapp, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, Isaiah H. Unruh and J. B. Haberle; Second Ward, Marcus W. Doolittle and James H. Roberts; Third Ward, Peter B. Johnson and Fred Schafer; Fourth Ward, J. Ed. Skillman and Addison McNabb; Fifth Ward, Albert G. Harlin and Chris. Sieg; Sixth Ward, Anton Bilinski and Frank Gonsiorowski; Seventh Ward, Patrick A. Joyce and S. C. Schmidt.

1895.—D. B. J. Schafer, Mayor; Louis A. Hull, City Clerk; Wm. A. Rutherford, Treas-

urer; Wilbert Ward, City Attorney; Dr. C. Stoltz, Health Officer; Wm. M. Whitten, City Engineer; John Yant, Street Commissioner; Otto M. Knoblock, Chas. M. Collins, Chas. W. Clapp, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, J. B. Haberle and I. H. Unruh; Second Ward, J. H. Roberts and F. W. Doolittle; Third Ward, Fred Schafer and P. B. Johnson; Fourth Ward, A. McNabb and J. Ed. Skillman; Fifth Ward, Chris. Sieg and A. G. Harlin; Sixth Ward, Anton Bilinski and F. Gonsiorowski; Seventh Ward, S. C. Schmidt and Patrick Joyce.

1896.—D. B. J. Schafer, Mayor; Louis A. Hull, City Clerk; Wm. A. Rutherford, Treasurer; Wilbert Ward, City Attorney; Dr. C. Stoltz, Health Officer; Wm. M. Whitten, City Engineer; John Yant, Street Commissioner; John T. Kelley, Samuel C. Lontz, Wesley Hill, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, Sorden Lister and Isaiah H. Unruh; Second Ward, Thomas V. Evans and Marcus W. Doolittle; Third Ward, Henry Hartzer and Peter B. Johnson; Fourth Ward, Patrick Joyce and J. Edward Skillman; Fifth Ward, Henry C. Morgan and Albert G. Harlin; Sixth Ward, Martin Zielinski and Anton Bilinski; Seventh Ward, John W. Fites and William Kingsley.

1897.—D. B. J. Schafer, Mayor; Louis A. Hull, City Clerk; Wm. A. Rutherford, Treasurer; Wilbert Ward, City Attorney; Dr. C. Stoltz, Health Officer; Wm. H. Rosenerans, City Engineer; John Yant, Street Commissioner; S. W. Hill, John T. Kelley, F. V. Krzeszewski, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, Sorden Lister and Isaiah H. Unruh; Second Ward, Thomas V. Evans and Marcus W. Doolittle; Third Ward, Henry Hartzer and Peter B. Johnson; Fourth Ward, Patrick Joyce and J. Edward Skillman; Fifth Ward, Henry C. Morgan and Albert G. Harlin; Sixth Ward, Martin Zielinski and Anton Bilinski; Seventh Ward, John W. Fites and William Kingsley.

1898.—Schuyler Colfax, Mayor; Louis A. Hull, City Clerk; Wm. A. Rutherford, Treas-

urer; O. M. Cunningham, City Attorney; Wm. H. Rosenerans, City Engineer; John P. Butler, Street Commissioner; John T. Kelley, John F. Irvin, F. V. Krzeszewski, Water Works Trustees; Schuyler Colfax, J. C. Stover, Dr. H. A. Fink, Board of Health. Councilmen—First Ward, Sorden Lister and John Beyrer; Second Ward, Thomas V. Evans and George A. Knoblock; Third Ward, Henry Hartzer and Frank Essex; Fourth Ward, William Schermann and P. A. Joyce; Fifth Ward, Henry C. Morgan and James N. Thumm; Sixth Ward, Martin Zielinski and Peter Koczorowski; Seventh Ward, J. W. Fites and W. H. Kingsley.

1899.—Schuyler Colfax, Mayor; Louis A. Hull, City Clerk; Wm. A. Rutherford, Treasurer; O. M. Cunningham, City Attorney; Wm. H. Rosenerans, City Engineer; John P. Butler, Street Commissioner; F. V. Krzeszewski, John F. Irvin, William Turnock, Water Works Trustees; Schuyler Colfax, J. C. Stover, Dr. H. A. Fink, Board of Health. Councilmen—First Ward, Sorden Lister and John Beyrer; Second Ward, Thomas V. Evans and George A. Knoblock; Third Ward, Henry Hartzer and Frank Essex; Fourth Ward, William Schermann and P. A. Joyce; Fifth Ward, Henry C. Morgan and James N. Thumm; Sixth Ward, Martin Zielinski and Peter Koczorowski; Seventh Ward, J. W. Fites and W. H. Kingsley.

1900.—Schuyler Colfax, Mayor; Louis A. Hull, City Clerk; Wm. A. Rutherford, Treasurer; O. M. Cunningham, City Attorney; John F. Meighan, City Engineer; John P. Butler, Street Commissioner; Dr. H. A. Fink, Health Officer; John F. Irvin, William Turnock, Marshal Hughes, Water Works Trustees. Councilmen—First Ward, John Beyrer and Henry F. Elbel; Second Ward, George A. Knoblock and Hugh T. Montgomery; Third Ward, Frank Essex and J. Henry Hartzer; Fourth Ward, P. A. Joyce and Gustav A. Stueckle; Fifth Ward, James N. Thumm and James H. Loughman; Sixth Ward, Peter

Koczorowski and Leo M. Kucharski; Seventh Ward, W. H. Kingsley and M. J. Somers.

1901.—Schuyler Colfax, Mayor; Louis A. Hull, City Clerk; Wm. A. Rutherford, Treasurer; E. P. Stanfield, Comptroller; Wilbert Ward, City Attorney; Alonzo J. Hammond, City Engineer; John G. Barker, Park Superintendent; J. W. Fites, Street Commissioner; Charles M. Butterworth, M. D., Health Commissioner; Arthur L. Hubbard, Samuel Leeper, Charles L. Goetz, Board of Public Works; R. Orchard Cotton, George W. Feaser, Andrew J. Ward, Board of Public Safety; Peter Kline, Superintendent of Police; Irving W. Sibrel, Chief of Fire Department; A. G. Bailey, Sealer of Weights and Measures; William L. Benitz, City Electrician. Councilmen—First Ward, John Beyrer and Henry F. Elbel; Second Ward, George A. Knoblock and H. T. Montgomery; Third Ward, Frank Essex and J. Henry Hartzler; Fourth Ward, P. A. Joyce and Gustav A. Stueckle; Fifth Ward, James N. Thumm and James H. Loughman; Sixth Ward, Peter Koczorowski and Leo M. Kucharski; Seventh Ward, W. H. Kingsley and M. J. Somers.

1902.—Edward J. Fogarty, Mayor; Nelson H. Kyser, City Clerk; George G. Feldman, Judge City Court. Councilmen—First Ward, Henry F. Elbel; Second Ward, Dr. H. T. Montgomery; Third Ward, J. Henry Hartzler; Fourth Ward, Gustav A. Stueckle; Fifth Ward, James H. Loughman; Sixth Ward, Leo M. Kucharski; Seventh Ward, Mitchell J. Somers; John C. Schreyer, George N. Whiteman, Peter Koczorowski, At Large.

Department of Finance—Fred W. Martin, City Comptroller; George J. Martin, Deputy City Comptroller.

Department of Law—Benjamin F. Shively, City Attorney.

Department of Public Works—William A. McInerny, President; John W. Papezynski, Edwin Nicar, Nelson H. Kyser, Clerk; Harvey F. Rostiser, Deputy Clerk.

Water Works—George W. Shock, Superintendent.

Engineering—Alonzo J. Hammond, City Engineer.

Streets and Alleys—John P. Butler, Street Commissioner.

Parks—John G. Barker, Superintendent.

Cemetery—James D. Gillis, Sexton.

Department of Health and Charities—Dr. D. W. McNamara, Commissioner.

Plumbing Inspector—Fred P. Futter.

Department of Public Safety—Robert Codd, President; J. T. Niezgodzki, H. A. Lundy.

Police Department—James McWeeny, Superintendent.

Fire Department—Wilfrid Grant, Chief.

Weights and Measures—John T. Willett, Sealer.

Electrician—William E. Williams.

1903.—Edward J. Fogarty, Mayor; Nelson H. Kyser, City Clerk; George G. Feldman, Judge City Court. Councilmen—First Ward, Henry F. Elbel; Second Ward, Dr. H. T. Montgomery; Third Ward, J. Henry Hartzler; Fourth Ward, Gustav A. Stueckle; Fifth Ward, James H. Loughman; Sixth Ward, Leo M. Kucharski; Seventh Ward, Mitchell J. Somers; John C. Schreyer, George N. Whiteman, Peter Koczorowski, At Large.

Department of Finance—Fred W. Martin, City Comptroller; George J. Martin, Deputy City Comptroller.

Department of Law—Frank H. Dunnahoo, City Attorney.

Department of Public Works—William A. McInerny, President; John W. Papezynski, Edwin Nicar, Nelson H. Kyser, Clerk; Harvey F. Rostiser, Deputy Clerk.

Water Works—George W. Shock, Superintendent.

Engineering—Alonzo J. Hammond, City Engineer.

Streets and Alleys—John P. Butler, Street Commissioner.

Parks—John G. Barker, Superintendent.

Cemetery—James D. Gillis, Sexton.

Department of Health and Charities—Dr. D. W. McNamara, Commissioner.

Plumbing Inspector—Fred P. Futter.

Department of Public Safety—Robert Codd, President; J. T. Niezgodzki, H. A. Lundy.

Police Department—James McWeeny, Superintendent.

Fire Department—Wilfrid Grant, Chief.

Weights and Measures—John T. Willett, Sealer.

Electrician—William E. Williams.

1904.—Edward J. Fogarty, Mayor; Nelson H. Kyser, City Clerk; George G. Feldman, Judge City Court. Councilmen—First Ward, Albert P. Sibley; Second Ward, Marion S. Gorski; Third Ward, Albert Bernhard; Fourth Ward, Gustav A. Stueckle; Fifth Ward, Charles G. Folsom; Sixth Ward, Peter Koczorowski; Seventh Ward, Charles E. Maurer; George N. Whiteman, Jacob E. Kuntz, Casimir Woltman, At Large.

Department of Finance—Fred W. Martin, City Comptroller; George J. Martin, Deputy City Comptroller.

Department of Law—Frank H. Dunnahoo, City Attorney.

Department of Public Works—William A. McInerny, President; John W. Papezynski, Edwin Niar, Nelson H. Kyser, Clerk; Harvey F. Rostiser, Deputy Clerk.

Water Works—Fred Schafer, Superintendent.

Engineering—Alonzo J. Hammond, City Engineer.

Streets and Alleys—John P. Butler, Street Commissioner.

Parks—Herman H. Beyer, Superintendent.

Cemetery—James D. Gillis, Sexton.

Department of Health and Charities—Dr. D. W. McNamara, Commissioner.

Plumbing Inspector—Fred P. Futter.

Department of Public Safety—Robert Codd, President; J. T. Niezgodzki, H. A. Lundy.

Police Department—James McWeeny, Superintendent.

Fire Department—Wilfrid Grant, Chief.

Weights and Measures—John T. Willett, Sealer.

Electrician—William E. Williams.

For the years 1905, 1906 and 1907, the officers were the same as for 1904, with the following exceptions: Councilmen—First Ward, Frank Rogers; Second Ward, Frank S. Hosinski; Seventh Ward, Herman Lang; Second, at large, John A. Hans; Third, at large, Adam Zell. By the Municipal Code of 1905 the name of the office of Comptroller was changed to Controller.

Sec. 2.—GROWTH.—WARDS.—POPULATION.—When the city of South Bend was organized, in 1865, it was divided into three wards, and these continued unchanged for two years. In 1867, Lowell, an unincorporated town on the east side of the St. Joseph river, was annexed to the city and designated as the Fourth Ward. Although additions continued to be made to the city from time to time, yet there was no further change in the wards until 1874, when a large extent of territory having been taken in, on the south and east sides of the city, the Fifth Ward was created. In 1890, there was a rearrangement of the wards, by reason of unequal growth in different sections; and the city was then divided into seven wards, by dividing the fourth into two wards, the Fourth and the Seventh, and creating the Sixth Ward in the southwest part of the city. In 1892, the incorporated town of Myler, lying south of and adjoining South Bend, was united to the city, by the votes of a majority of those voting on the subject, in the city and the town, at an election held in both corporations on May the third of that year. There was some litigation resulting from the act of union, but the supreme court held that the union had taken place according to law.^a The territory of Myler was attached to the existing wards of the city, without increasing their number. In 1896, the wards were once more rearranged, but not increased

^a. See the City of South Bend against Lewis, 138 Ind. 512.

in number. The east side of the river was again made one ward; while the old town of Myler, together with other territory on the south side of the city, was made the Seventh Ward. There has been no further change, except as the wards have been added to from time to time, by annexation of adjacent territory to the city. Up to the time of the adoption of the Special Charter of 1901, the wards of the city of South Bend, like those of all other cities of the state, were represented by two councilmen each, one elected every other year; but since the adoption of the charter, and also under the present Municipal Code, each ward has been represented by one councilman only, while three additional councilmen have been elected by the city at large. The purpose of this change was, undoubtedly, to diminish the importance and power of the wards, as separate divisions of the city; while the election of three councilmen at large would secure an elevation in the character of the council, give the city, as a whole, direct representation in the legislative body, and would, almost certainly, result in the election of a majority of the council who should be in sympathy with the views of the mayor and other executive officers of the government. Effectiveness and harmony of action have thus been given to the city government; while personal responsibility has been placed upon the single councilman from each ward, as well as upon the mayor and the heads of the several executive departments.

Not only since the organization of the city, but even from the original platting of the town, and the first organization of the town government, South Bend has grown steadily, in business, in civic development and in population. This growth has never been spasmodic, advancing one year and declining another. There never was a boom in business or population; but always, through good report and evil report, through panic and prosperity, an even, steady, irresistible advance, like the quiet flow of a noble river. The population of South Bend, as taken at the dif-

ferent periods of the history of the town and city, is a good indication of this steady growth.

In 1831, when the original plat was recorded, and the county seat was located at the new town, the population was 128; in 1840, it had increased to 728; in 1850, it was 1,652; in 1860, 3,833; in 1870, 7,206; in 1880, 13,392; in 1890, 21,819; and in 1900, 35,999. No estimate has placed the population in 1907 at less than 50,000; and the people have confidence that the census of 1910 will show the good city at the south bend of the St. Joseph to have more than 60,000 inhabitants. "At this point is a beautiful site for a town."

Sec. 3.—THE SPECIAL CHARTER.—By an act approved March 8, 1901,^a South Bend was given a special charter, based upon the act of March 6, 1891,^b granting a special charter to the city of Indianapolis. These charters embodied the principles of what has been called modern city government. The chief purpose was to separate the powers of government into the three departments,—legislative, administrative and judicial,—after the plan adopted in the constitution of the United States and the several state constitutions.

The legislative, or law making, department was the common council; the administrative functions were confided to the mayor and the several officers and boards to be appointed by him; while the judicial department was placed in a court presided over by a city judge.

The principal advantage of this form of city government was to secure greater unity and independence in the government, and also greater responsibility and efficiency on the part of city officers. Under former laws the common council not only passed ordinances but practically controlled all departments of the city government. Such a system had proved sufficient for the wants of a primitive form of town and city government, when the population was small and it was easy for each

a. Acts, 1901, p. 198.

b. Acts, 1891, p. 137.

officer to be acquainted with all the wants of the community. By degrees, however, various private and local interests began to have undue influence upon the members of the common council; and as the membership was numerous, and each one particularly interested in his own ward, the responsibility to the city at large could not easily be fixed. In the new form the council was confined to its proper functions,—the making of laws and ordinances; the responsibility of enforcing these laws and ordinances, as well as the general laws of the state, was placed in charge of the mayor and his appointees, while punishment for the violation of the laws and ordinances was entrusted to the city court, instead of, as formerly, to the mayor and his court. The new system gave entire satisfaction to the people of South Bend, as it did to the people of the other cities of the state where it was adopted.

Sec. 4.—THE MUNICIPAL CODE.—So great an improvement were the special charters over the old municipal laws, that there came to be a desire on the part of the people of all the cities of the state to have a revised municipal code, according to which every city should have the benefit of the so-called charter form of government, so far as the system could be applied to each, making due allowance for difference of population and other conditions. By means of a common code it was desired also, so far as possible, to do away with a vicious habit which had grown up of securing from the legislature the enactment of a multitude of special and local laws for the different cities, in plain violation of the spirit of the state constitution, though not perhaps of its letter.

Accordingly, by an act approved March 9, 1903,^a the legislature created a codification commission, to consist of the secretary of state and two other persons to be appointed by the governor, whose duty it should be to prepare for the action of the succeeding legislature a bill for a “compilation, revision and codifica-

tion of the statute laws of the state of Indiana, concerning public, private and other corporations,” as well as concerning other subjects named in the act, if the commission should have time or deem it proper.

The most important “compilation, revision and codification” of the statutes concerning “public corporations” which suggested itself to the mind of this commission had relation to the chaotic condition of the laws for the government of the towns and cities of the state. The preparation of a municipal code was therefore begun very early in the time given the commission for its work; and at the opening of the legislative session for 1905, “A Bill for An Act Concerning Municipal Corporations,” as prepared by the commission, was laid before the general assembly. By an act approved March 6, 1905,^a this bill, with many modifications, some of them undoubtedly beneficial, and others, it is believed, injurious, finally became a law, placing all the towns and cities of the state, as classified, for the first time under a uniform code of laws.

Besides the towns, for which the simplest form of government is provided, there are five classes of cities. The cities of the fifth class, those under ten thousand population, according to the last United States census, of which class Mishawaka is one, are governed with as few officers and at as moderate expense as consistent with efficient government. Indianapolis is the only city of the first class, and in that class the system is most complete. Evansville and Fort Wayne are the only cities of the second class. South Bend and Terre Haute are the principal cities of the third class. As a city of the third class, under the code, the system of government does not greatly differ from that under the special charter. Under the charter, and still more so under the municipal code, South Bend enjoys perhaps the best form of government that a city with its population and attendant conditions could have. Under the code, we have good government; public improvements are

a. Acts, 1903, p. 391.

a. Acts, 1905, pp. 219-410.

advanced, and our town has become indeed a city beautiful.

IV. CITY IMPROVEMENTS.

Many of the most important improvements of the city have already been noted in treating of the public improvements of the county;^a among these, the mill dam and mill races on the St. Joseph, the bridges over the river, the railroads, street and interurban railways, the electric plant and the telegraph and telephone lines. Other public improvements will now be referred to:

Sec. 1.—STREETS AND SIDEWALKS.—The first systematic grades of the streets of South Bend were established on surveys made in 1865, by Rufus Rose, city engineer. The grades so established are usually referred to as the "Rose Grade." The street improvements were at first a simple working or grading of the streets to the grade so established. Afterwards, the streets were graveled, there being an abundance of good road gravel easy of access just northwest of the city.^b The next improvement made was to pave the gutters on each side of the roadway with cobble stones, the stones being from three to seven inches in diameter. These cobble stones were also used in paving the alley crossings on the sidewalks; the remainder of the sidewalks being at first paved with boards or planks, and afterwards with brick. The work to this point may be called primitive street improvement.

The manner of doing this primitive work is well illustrated by the following ordinance for paving the sidewalk on the north side of Washington street, along what is now the south front of the Oliver hotel:

"Section 1. Be it ordained by the common council of the city of South Bend, That the sidewalk on the north side of Washington street, between Main street and the first alley west, be graded to the grade established by the city engineer, and that the same be paved with brick fourteen feet wide.

^a. See Chap. 7, Subds. 1, 2, 3, 4 and 5.

^b. See Chap. 1, Subd. 7.

"Sec. 2.—Unless said sidewalk is graded and paved by each land owner in front of his property by the tenth day of November, 1866, the street commissioner will immediately advertise the work to be done by the best bidder by the twenty-fifth day of November, and the cost thereof will be assessed upon the property in front of which the grading and paving is done, to be collected according to law.

"Passed October 15, 1866.

"W. G. GEORGE, Mayor.

"JOHN HAGERTY, City Clerk."

The first steps towards the paving of the streets were taken in 1865, the year in which the city was incorporated. On December 5, 1865, an ordinance was passed by the common council for the paving with cobble stone of a part of Michigan street and a part of Washington street. Section four of this ordinance reads as follows:

"Sec. 4. That Michigan street, from Market street,^a to the south side of Washington street, and Washington street to the west side of Main street, shall be graded as provided in the first and second sections of this ordinance,^b and paved with small boulder stone of not less than three nor more than five inches in diameter. The center of the street when paved to be one inch below the top of the curbstone. The gutter at the bottom, to be one foot below the center of the street, and the street to have a regular curve from the bottom of one gutter over to the other. The gutters to be shaped according to the direction of the street commissioner."

This cobble stone pavement was but little, if indeed it was any, improvement over the graveled street; but the people endured it for over twenty years. They endured the cobble stone gutters and alley crossings for even a longer time.

In 1888, a new departure was taken. The people determined to try cedar block pavement. On April 9, 1888, the cobble stone laid down on Michigan and Washington streets

^a. Now La Salle Avenue.

^b. That is, according to the Rose grade.

was ordered replaced with cedar blocks. This pavement won many encomiums for two or three years; but, in the end, it proved even rougher than the cobble stone.

In 1889, a further advance was made. On July 22, 1889, an experiment in brick pavement was determined upon. Jefferson street, from Michigan to Lafayette, was ordered paved with "two courses of hard burned brick." This was the first modern pavement laid on the streets of South Bend. William M. Whitten, then the efficient city engineer, drew up the specifications with great care. The block from Main to Lafayette was an excellent pavement. The brick for the experiment was ordinary building brick, made in the Leeper brick yard in South Bend. This brick pavement was laid down by Martin Hoban, contractor, and remained in good condition until its removal in 1907.

By an act approved March 8, 1889,^a the legislature provided for the payment of the cost of street and sewer improvements in installments of ten per cent a year for ten years. This act, known as the Barrett law, is one of the excellent series of laws enacted by the reform legislatures of 1889 and 1891. The law has proved a boon to the cities and towns of Indiana. It came just in time for South Bend. The brick pavement on Jefferson street was so decided a success that the only question left for consideration was the matter of payment for the work. The city was then up to the constitutional two per cent limit of indebtedness, and the treasury could not be resorted to in order to lighten the burden of the property owner. But by making the payments in ten annual installments, as was done by the Barrett law, the problem was solved. Street and sidewalk pavements, as well as sewers, were at once projected in every business and populous residence section of the city.

In 1898, an asphalt pavement was laid down on Washington street, and two years afterwards one was laid on Lafayette street,

^a. Acts, 1889, pp. 237-246.

and since that time on several other streets. It was said at the time, and has since proved to be true, that the asphalt on Washington street was too dry, had too large a proportion of gravel, and that it would soon "grind out" in spots by the action of the wheels of vehicles passing over it. The complaint on the part of the people on Lafayette street, on the contrary, was that the pavement was too soft, that the wheels would sink into it in warm weather. The Lafayette pavement has grown harder and better with years; but that on Washington street has "ground out" in numerous places, as predicted.

Street paving has gone on in South Bend since 1889, until at the end of the year 1906 there were forty-two miles of pavement. Of this, about thirty-six and a half miles are of brick. The chief part of the remainder is of asphalt; there being a little creosote block and other experimental pavements.

Originally the sidewalks, like the roadways of the streets, were principally of gravel; but plank and boards were also used, and in time brick also. Early in the eighties, the common council prohibited the putting down of any more wooden sidewalks; for the reason that so many accidents had occurred from rotten and broken planks that there were almost constant suits for damages against the city. As early as 1867, John R. Foster laid a cement sidewalk on the north side of West Washington street at the corner of North Taylor street. This cement sidewalk is still in good condition, notwithstanding its age. Soon afterwards cement walks began to come into general use; although for a while there was trouble with persons who claimed to have patents on the proper mixing of the cement. This was but a temporary check, and it was not long until the cement sidewalk was a favorite all over the city. Brick, however, continued to be used for walks until 1907, when its further use for this purpose was forbidden, for reasons similar to those which had caused the disuse of plank sidewalks.

Sec. 2.—SEWERS.—The first sewer in South

Bend was constructed in 1861, long before the incorporation of the city. After several preliminary steps were taken, the board of town trustees, on December 24, 1860, entered into contract with William Mack to construct a circular brick sewer on Washington street, four feet in diameter and twelve hundred feet long, extending from the west line of Lafayette street to the river. It was to be finished by May 1, 1862, the cost to be twelve hundred and forty-three dollars. But one fault has been found with this first and most noted of our sewers. The sewer was not laid low enough. It was provided that, at the commencement of the work, at Lafayette street, the bottom of the sewer, on the inside, should be eight feet and a half below the street grade, and should fall at the rate of three inches to each one hundred feet to the east line of Michigan street, after which the rate of fall should be as required by the board of town trustees. This depth proved quite insufficient to drain the basements of business houses afterwards constructed along Washington street; and it was necessary to correct the defect by the construction of other sewers.

Under the city government all the principal streets have been supplied with sewers, and others are being constructed every year, and paid for by property assessments under the Barrett law. At the close of the year 1906, there were fifty-four miles of sewers in the city of South Bend.

One of the sewers of the city has a peculiar history. On October 8, 1875, the city provided for the construction of what has been called the Lafayette street sewer. This was built, primarily, for the accommodation of the South Bend Iron Works, now known as the Oliver Chilled Plow Works, which had then been recently located in the southwest part of the city, on the Kankakee side of the "divide." The sewer was paid for out of the city treasury; but the owners of lots along Ford, Scott, Railroad, South and Lafayette streets, fronting on the sewer, were allowed to tap the same by paying into the city

treasury sixty-two and one-half cents per front foot.

Sec. 3.—WATER WORKS.—In Turner's South Bend Directory for 1871-2, is the following, entitled, "Water—Fire":

"A company has recently been formed for the purpose of erecting Holly Water Works and furnishing the city with pure water from the St. Joseph river. Action has, however, been deferred for the year 1871, it being considered too late in the season to commence operations. Another year will, doubtless, see this important work completed. A good system of water works would be highly advantageous to South Bend, although we have at present an abundance of most excellent water for domestic use, furnished by wells; while thirty public cisterns, entirely self-supplying, are distributed throughout the city for fire purposes. These cisterns are six feet in diameter, with a minimum depth of six feet of water. No steam fire engine can make any perceptible diminution in the depth. These cisterns form an extraordinary means of protection against fires, and, in connection with a well organized and efficient fire department, serve greatly to reduce the premium on insurance. We have one first-class steam fire engine, which will soon be duplicated. Few cities have so good protection against the ravages of fire as South Bend, and few during the past five years, have suffered so little."

The foregoing paragraph by Judge Turner shows the condition of the city in regard to the subject of water works at the close of the year 1871. The people were becoming restless on the question of adequate fire protection. The actual means then provided for this purpose are disclosed in the statement quoted; while the proposed action to form a Holly Water Works Company shows that the situation was not altogether satisfactory. The Holly system had very earnest advocates. Indeed, the majority of the common council was at first in favor of the Holly system, to such an extent that a contract was entered into for

the erection of Holly Water Works. This system provided for pumping water directly from the river into the mains and water pipes, as it should be required. Two other systems were talked of, the Reservoir and the Stand Pipe systems. It was practically agreed by all parties that the reservoir system, that is, the drawing of water by pipes from a large body of water located on a height above the city, would be most desirable, provided we had such a high location, and the water upon it; but we had neither. The stand pipe advocates said that next in excellence to the reservoir came the stand pipe, or water tower, as Professor Wilcox preferred to call it; that when the stand pipe was pumped full of water the pressure on the water mains throughout the city would be of that equable and uniform character which marked the reservoir system. The Holly advocates replied that if it were necessary to pump water into the stand pipe, why not pump it directly into the mains? The answer to this was that an equable pressure was preferable, besides the stand pipe would be ready at the instant, while the Holly engines might not be in order to do their work at the moment of danger. And so the argument raged for two years.

The leader of the Holly advocates was William H. Beach, one of the proprietors of the first paper mill established in South Bend. The leader for the stand pipe party was Leighton Pine, the superintendent of the Singer Sewing Machine factory, then recently located in this city. Mr. Pine was one of the most able, enterprising and public spirited citizens that ever resided in South Bend. The war between him and Mr. Beach, for it was a war without quarter given or taken, was carried on in the newspapers, on street corners, on the stages of the theaters, in meetings of citizens, and in every other way in which public opinion could be influenced. Great meetings were held in the court house. In one of these Mr. Pine had a small stand pipe erected upon the rostrum, with a faucet at the bottom; and when the little stand pipe was filled

with water, and the faucet turned to represent the tapping of a water main for the fire hose, Mr. Pine's triumph was complete. The little jet of water flew up half way the height of the stand pipe; and the people left the court room shouting for the stand pipe party. As may be imagined, political parties were rent asunder. The elections were on the lines of Holly and stand pipe. The stand pipe won by a tremendous majority; and, in 1872, William Miller was elected mayor, and a majority of the common council were with him in favor of Mr. Pine's plan.



HON. WILLIAM MILLER.

The new city government, backed by the great body of the people, were not only in favor of the stand pipe, but also in favor of municipal ownership. They were resolved that the city should build, own and operate its own water works. It was an era of conflagrations, and the minds of the people were wrought up to a keen anxiety for protection against the dreaded danger. The Chicago fire, the greatest in history, with its loss of two hundred millions of dollars, had occurred on October 8 and 9, 1871. The Mishawaka

fire," with its loss of two hundred thousand dollars, as great as that of Chicago, in proportion to wealth and population, took place on September 5, 1872, in the very heat of the South Bend agitation. And, soon after, on November 9, 1872, Boston had its eighty million dollar fire.

The city authorities, however, were not hasty in action; and it was not until the summer of 1873 that the first steps were taken. On July 7, 1873, a carefully prepared ordinance on the subject passed the common council. The ordinance contained the following provision:

That "William Miller (mayor), Joseph Worden, Peter Weber, Alexander Staples and S. R. King be and they are hereby constituted a committee on behalf of the city of South Bend, and as such are hereby authorized and empowered to enter into a contract on behalf of the city with suitable and responsible party or parties for the erection and construction for said city of a suitable and sufficient system of water works, of what is called the stand pipe system, and as proposed and planned by John Birkinbine; for the purpose of furnishing said city with a sufficient supply of water for fire purposes and fire protection."

This was followed up, on July 9, 1873, by an ordinance for the issue of water works bonds for one hundred thousand dollars. On October 6, 1874, the issue so authorized was supplemented with an additional amount for sixty-five thousand dollars. The great work was under way. The specifications, as reported by John Birkinbine, the very competent engineer, provided for a wrought iron pipe five feet in diameter and two hundred feet high. For the first twenty-one feet, the plates were to be of seven-sixteenth inch iron; for the next twenty-seven feet, of three-eighth inch; for the next thirty-six feet, five-sixteenth inch; for the next forty-eight feet, one-fourth inch; and for the last sixty-eight feet, three-sixteenth inch. The weight of the plates was forty-two thousand pounds. The castings for

the support of the pipe, themselves resting upon concrete foundations, weighed twelve thousand one hundred and eighty pounds. The wrought iron bolts used to put the plates together weighed two hundred and fifty pounds. On July 29, 1873, the committee determined to erect the stand pipe at the crossing of "Pearl, Jefferson and Carroll streets." The actual location was ultimately fixed on the north side of Pearl,^a not far from the intersection of the first alley west of Carroll street, nearly opposite the site of the fort erected in the Black Hawk war, in 1832, where the pipe now stands. The excavation was thirty feet square and fourteen feet below the grade of the street, and was filled with stone imbedded in cement and afterwards grouted, so that the whole formed one solid mass of stone. The specifications further provided for an enclosure of brick, two and a quarter feet from the pipe and rising to a height of one hundred and ninety-five feet from the street. Between the pipe and the protecting wall was a winding stairway of two hundred and ninety steps to the top. A pointed roof over all was to reach a distance of two hundred and twenty-one feet.

Separate contracts were let for the several parts of the work, all under supervision of John Birkinbine. The greatest anxiety was as to the lifting of the stand pipe into position after the plates should be riveted and water tight. This most responsible task was confided to Alexander Staples, then one of the common council and a member of the committee in charge of the water works; and well did he perform the task assigned him. It was determined to raise the great pipe as one piece, rather than in sections, which had been at one time contemplated. In September he began to get his huge gin poles and other necessary apparatus in readiness. On November 11, 1873, the council appointed as special peace officers, George V. Glover, Noah Huggins, William Overacker, Ananias Forst and O. C. Perry, who were directed to obey strictly

a. See Chap. 10, Subd. 3.

a. Now Vistula Avenue.

the orders of John Birkinbine and Alexander Staples, during the momentous and exceedingly dangerous work of raising the stand pipe. This precaution was timely, both for the protection of the people who should be gathered at the time and also for that of the great pipe itself. The undertaking of lifting this mass of iron from the ground to a perpendicular was the greatest engineering feat ever attempted in this part of the country. A like attempt at Toledo resulted in the falling and breaking of the stand pipe when it had been lifted half way up.

On Friday, November the fourteenth, the raising of the massive tube was begun and on that day the stand pipe was elevated about twenty-two feet, on two capstans and with a force of twelve men. On Saturday, the fifteenth, the work of lifting the great pipe was continued, in the presence of five thousand people. Three capstans were used for raising the pipe, one for guiding it and one for pulling it forward. At four o'clock in the afternoon it had reached an elevation of seventy degrees, at which it hung in the air all that night. On Sunday morning the perilous task was resumed; but the pipe again hung in the air over Sunday night. On Monday, November 17, 1873, at eleven o'clock, it was nearly plumb, and at half past two o'clock on that day, the great iron tube stood in position, two hundred feet perpendicular from its rocky base.

An impromptu meeting was at once organized. Mayor Miller mounted a capstan and congratulated the people of the city. "Aleck" Staples, the hero of the occasion, was then called for, and fairly lifted and pushed upon a capstan. His speech was characteristic: "Gentlemen, I can raise a stand pipe like this a great deal easier than I can make a speech." That was all, but it was cheered as loudly as if Edward Everett had spoken.

Alexander Staples was a Union soldier, and his modesty after his great engineering feat was like that of the true soldier on the field of battle who has won the day for his country.

The Star Spangled Banner did not seem too noble a model for the humble verse that sought to glorify his deed; and this was the tribute that was then paid to him. Whatever of history or description may be found in the stanzas will perhaps excuse its insertion in this place:

"The Star-seeking Stand Pipe.

Dedicated to Alexander Staples.

[All day Saturday the stand pipe rose slowly from the earth, until at dark it hung over the city like the leaning tower of Pisa. During the night the wind blew pretty hard, and doubtless many an anxious eye looked out on Sunday morning, to see that our pipe "was still there." Certainly one pair of eyes did so peep out; hence this travesty.]

I.

O say, can you see by the dawn's early light
What we anxiously viewed at the twilight's last gleaming?

Whose huge bulk on gin poles, through the perilous night,

O'er the house-tops beneath was so Pisa-like seeming;

And the lamp-light's bright glare, the dark tube in the air,

Gave proof through the night that our pipe was still there;—

Oh, say, does that star-seeking stand pipe yet rise
O'er the city we love to its home in the skies?

II.

On the bank, dimly seen through the mists of the morn,

Where the 'Bend's busy host in sweet silence reposes,

What is that which the breeze, o'er the tree-tops forlorn,

As it fitfully blows, half conceals, half discloses?

Now it catches the light, as the morning grows bright;

In full glory enveloped, now shines on the hight:—
'Tis the star-seeking stand pipe! Oh, long may it rise,

O'er the city we love to its home in the skies.

III.

And where is that crowd who despondently said,
That the weight of the pipe and the ropes in confusion

Would never allow it to rise from its bed?

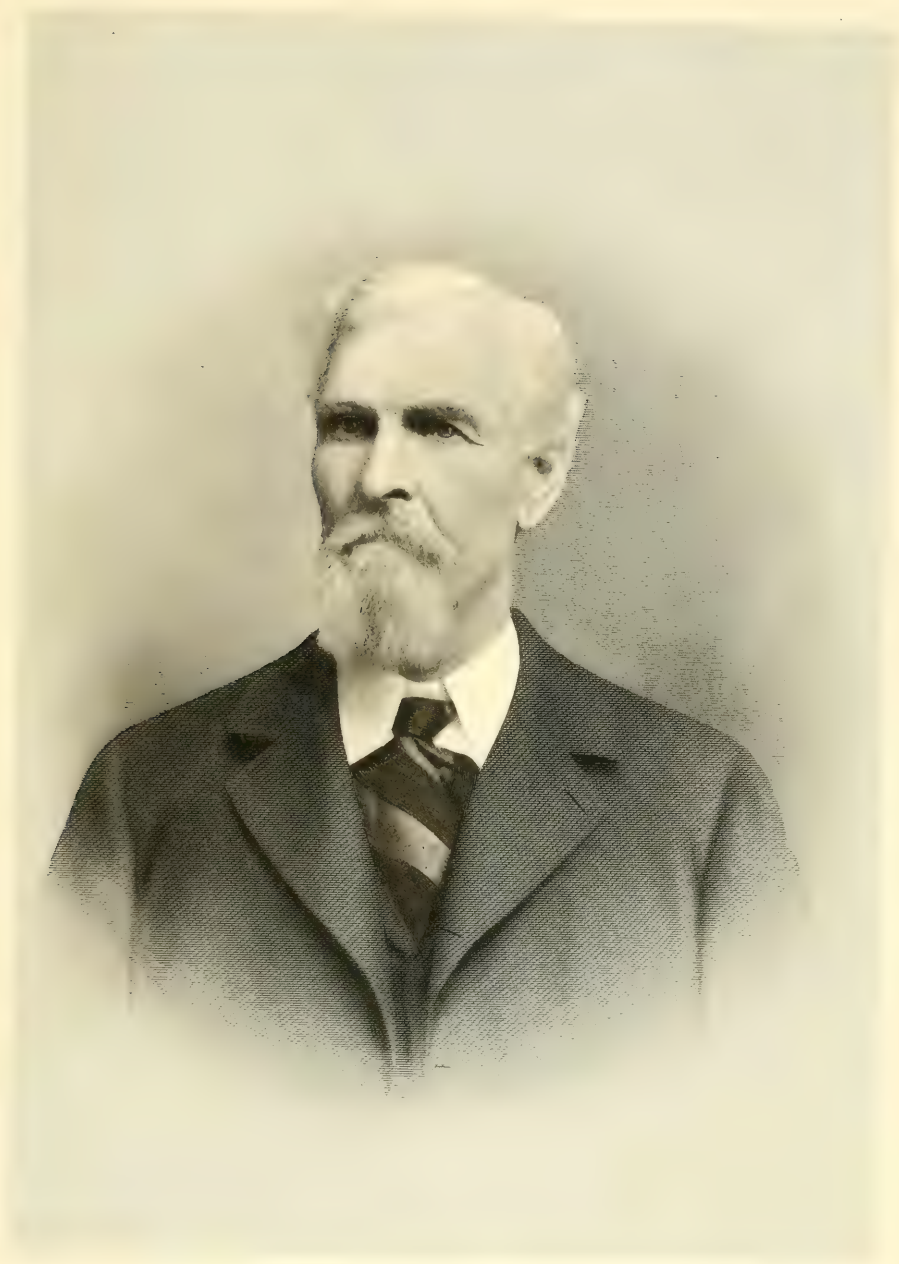
Their cheers have proclaimed that 'twas but an illusion:

No stand pipe so long but Aleck the strong,

With his tackle would lift with a cheer and a song;

And the star-seeking monster in triumph should rise,

Till he Staples the thing to its home in the skies.



Alex Staples

IV.

O there may it ever its blest waters send,
 To save our loved homes from the flames without
 pity;
 While in harmony and peace our united South
 Bend
 Gives praise to the Power that has guarded our
 city.
 A brotherly band, our future is grand,—
 And this be our motto, United We Stand;
 While the star-seeking stand pipe in glory shall
 rise,

O'er the city we love to its home in the skies.

On December 25, 1873, Christmas day, there was an interesting sequel to the Holly-Stand-pipe controversy. A wager had been laid between Leighton Pine, representing the stand pipe forces and John M. Studebaker, who had favored the Holly system. The wager was for a cow. Mr. Studebaker agreed to stand in the belfry over the Studebaker works; and Mr. Pine proposed to drive him from the belfry with a one inch stream from a hydrant near the works, while, at the same time, five other one inch streams should be thrown from as many other hydrants in the vicinity. There were three judges, Edwin Nicar, John C. Knoblock and Caleb Kimball, named to stand with Mr. Studebaker in the belfry, where they could see the other five streams and be able to decide on all questions relating to the test. Schuyler Colfax also stood in the belfry with Mr. Studebaker. Before those who stood in the belfry knew what had happened, the one inch stream from the street below had driven them from their station, and the stream flew clear over the top of the cupola. Mr. Studebaker gracefully turned the cow over to Mr. Pine. His friends had her gaily decorated with ribbons, and so marched with a band and in carriages to his residence. Two days afterwards Mr. Pine donated his prize to the Ladies' Benevolent Aid Society, by whom she was sold, and several times re-sold, for the benefit of the poor of South Bend. So ended the famous controversy, in a triumphant victory for Leighton Pine and those who had faith in his genius and leadership. The original cost of the water works was about one hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

Following the test made at the Studebaker works and the jollifications that succeeded, Mr. Colfax made one of his happy little speeches, briming over with interesting historical allusions. "This magnificent Christmas day," said he, "has opened a new era in the history of our busy and prosperous city. Over thirty years ago, the building of the three-story Washington Block,^a the largest frame building at that time in northern Indiana, was commenced with a special celebration and opened the first era of the advancement of our town. Next, the construction of the dam, by the free and generous subscriptions of rich and poor alike, gave us our great water power, and was another and most important forward movement. Then the great manufactures, which have caused our city to be known throughout the length and breadth of the land, gave us another impetus. While today, with the water works, which, from the experiments this morning, seem sure to render efficient fire protection, we continue our advancing progress among the cities of the state, and take another onward stride toward the future before us."

The city water works continued under the management of a committee of the common council, known as the water board, until, by an act approved March 25, 1879,^b the legislature provided for the election of a board of three water works trustees, the first board to be selected by the common council; after which the trustees should be elected by the people. The first board so elected should be chosen one for one year, one for two years and one for three years. At every subsequent annual election one trustee should be elected for three years.

By the special charter,^c the water works were placed in custody of the board of public works, where they also remain under the municipal code.^d Under all these boards,—

a. On the north side of Washington street, from Main street to the first alley east.

b. Acts, 1879, p. 88.

c. Acts, 1901, p. 198.

d. Acts, 1905, p. 219.

the committee of the common council, the trustees of the water works and the board of public works—the manner of conducting the business has been practically the same. The immediate control of the works has been in the hands of a superintendent selected by the board and under its direction. The finances have been cared for by a water works clerk.

The names of all members of the board of public works have been given in the list of city officers. The names of the members of the former water works boards are as follows:

1873. Joseph Worden, Peter Weber, Alexander Staples and S. R. King.

1875. M. N. Walworth, Dwight Deming and Alexander N. Thomas.

1876. Dwight Deming, Edmund P. Taylor and W. W. Giddings.

1877. W. W. Giddings, Edmund P. Taylor and George F. Nevius.

1878. George F. Nevius, Solomon W. Palmer and Nathaniel Frame.

1879. O. H. Brusie, John M. Studebaker and Alexander C. Staley.

1880. John M. Studebaker, Alexander C. Staley and Jacob Strayer.

1881. Alexander C. Staley, Jacob Strayer and J. M. Asire.

1882. Jacob Strayer, J. M. Asire and Patrick O'Brien.

1883. J. M. Asire, Patrick O'Brien and William Mack.

1884. Patrick O'Brien, William Mack and N. P. Bowsher.

1885. William Mack, N. P. Bowsher and John C. Birdsell.

1886. N. P. Bowsher, John C. Birdsell and Edwin R. St. John.

1887. John C. Birdsell, Edwin R. St. John and Alexander Staples.

1888. Edwin R. St. John, Alexander Staples and Charles H. Pavey.

1889. Alexander Staples, Charles H. Pavey and Robert L. Brannsdorf.

1890. Charles H. Pavey, Robert L. Brannsdorf and Jonathan Matthews.

1891. Robert L. Brannsdorf, Jonathan Matthews and Samuel L. Brubaker.

1892. Jonathan Matthews, Charles M. Collins and Charles W. Clapp.

1893. Charles A. Brehmer, Charles M. Collins and Charles W. Clapp.

1894. Charles M. Collins, Charles W. Clapp and Otto M. Knoblock.

1895. Charles W. Clapp, Otto M. Knoblock and Samuel C. Loutz.

1896. Otto M. Knoblock, S. Wesley Hill and John T. Kelley.

1897. S. Wesley Hill, John T. Kelley and F. V. Krzeszewski.

1898. John T. Kelley, F. V. Krzeszewski and John F. Irvin.

1899. F. V. Krzeszewski, John F. Irvin and William Turnock.

1900. John F. Irvin, William Turnock and Marshal Hughes.

At first, only the water of the St. Joseph river was pumped into the stand pipe. While this gave the people fire protection, what they had looked for, and also the use of water to sprinkle the streets and lawns; yet they soon began to look for water for domestic use also. The first superintendent of the water works, Everett L. Abbot, made a happy discovery just in time to meet this want. He sank a driven well, about a hundred and ten feet deep, near the water works pumping station and not far from the river bank. This was our first artesian well. The water rose to the surface, and proved to be pure and wholesome. The question was whether wells enough could be sunk to supply the stand pipe. To test the quantity of water that underlay the great bed of clay through which the pipe had been driven, and particularly to see how far, if any, the flow of the first well would be diminished by the sinking of another in the vicinity, well after well was sunk near the water works station, until thirty-four six-inch wells or over have been sunk in that locality. The problem was solved; reservoirs were constructed into which the waters from the artesian wells flowed freely; the river

water was turned off and the stand pipe and water mains were filled with the purest water in the state. To supply more wells as the population of the city has increased, a new station, at the foot of North Michigan street, was erected and new wells, to the number of thirty-seven more were sunk. Still a third station has recently been secured further down on the river; and from all of these it is believed that an ample supply of the purest water for fire and domestic use can be obtained sufficient for a city of over one hundred thousand population.

It need hardly be said that since the supply of artesian water has been obtained the people have asked for water on almost every street of the city. Over eighty miles of water mains have been laid to this date, and the demand is still for more. No tax is more freely paid by the people than the water rents; and, while the original outlay by the city was large, yet the investment has been a profitable one. During the year 1907, the substantial sum of twenty thousand dollars was transferred from the water works rent fund to the general fund of the city treasury. At the same time the people have had an abundant supply of pure water at most reasonable rates, with no grasping water works company to cut down the supply or raise the charges. The municipal ownership of the South Bend water works has been satisfactory from the beginning. The present valuation of the works is nearly one million dollars; the annual income has now reached almost one hundred thousand dollars. The expenses foot up about seventy thousand dollars, which includes interest and wear and tear, leaving to the city a net profit of thirty thousand dollars a year.

Sec. 4.—FIRE DEPARTMENT.—The fire department of South Bend has grown from a bucket brigade, taking water from wells or from the river, to the complete system of today, with its water received directly from the constant pressure of the stand pipe. The first fire organizations were volunteer companies, with a chief and assistants responsible to the

town trustees. The distinction awarded by the public to the bravery of the young fire fighters was usually sufficient inducement to keep up the organizations. To this were added certain favors, as the remission of city poll taxes and exemption of a given amount of property from taxation, as was done by the common council April 19, 1866.

The first regular organization for fire protection seems to have been in 1853, when a hand engine was procured and a company formed, with Edmund Pitts Taylor as foreman and John Caldwell as assistant. The company was named St. Joseph Fire Company Number One. Fire Company Number Two was formed soon after, with Lot Day, Jr., as foreman. In 1857, Union Hose Company Number Three was organized, and a second engine was purchased.

Another step taken at an early day was the securing of a sufficient supply of water by constructing covered cisterns at convenient points. As shown above, in treating of our water works, there were 30 such cisterns before the erection of the stand pipe; and the citizens were re-assured when they learned that "No steam fire engine can make any perceptible diminution in the depth." Perhaps that might not be the case today, after our deep sewers have dried out the ground to a depth of ten to fifteen feet.

The next step in the volunteer service was to procure pumping apparatus, ladders and other implements and machinery necessary for the use of the firemen. One of the simplest styles of pumps was a hand engine placed upon wheels and worked by from two to six firemen on each side of the wagon. A noted improvement on this rude pump was the steam fire engine, which relieved the men of this hard labor, and was besides much more effective in throwing strong streams upon the burning buildings. The most famous of these old fire engines was "Young Hoosier," which gave its name to Young Hoosier Fire Company No. Four. This company, after repeated deliberations in the common council,

extending over a period of several months, was organized January 20, 1868. To show the high character of the citizens who honored themselves by serving in these volunteer fire companies, the original membership of Young Hoosier company is here given: George Hertzell, John C. Knoblock, Alexander Staples, A. Buck, William Buck, John M. Pierce, Alexis Coquillard, Peter Weber, Elijah Hartzell, Warren A. Luce, Edward Gillen, Isaac Miller, Reuben Garrett, Seth F. Myers and Harrison M. Crockett. The company was authorized to increase its membership to thirty persons, taken equally from hose companies numbered one and three. Old number three was soon after disbanded; and on May 29, 1868, the present hose company number three, in the fourth ward, was organized.

A little earlier, on June 17, 1867, a citizens' committee was appointed to report to the council the best means of protection from fire. The committee consisted of the following leading citizens: John Brownfield, chief of the fire department; Dr. Louis Humphreys, chairman of the board of health; Charles W. Guthrie; Clement Studebaker; Woolman J. Holloway; Joseph G. Bartlett; Dr. John A. Henricks; Daniel M. Shively; Lester F. Baker; Dwight Deming; Francis R. Tutt, Daniel A. Veasey and Norman Eddy. The conferences of this committee foreshadowed the water works system and the paid fire department that were to come in a few years.

In 1873, the common council re-organized the volunteer fire department and appointed Edwin Nicar as chief engineer. Captain Nicar served with great efficiency for three years, when Joseph Turnock was appointed to the place and served for a year, being succeeded by Orville H. Brusie, who served for three years. A. B. Culver was then appointed engineer; and after him came Mr. Brusie again and then Isaac Hutchins.

The fire companies in the later years, and before the organization of the paid department, were Delta Hose Company No. 1; Eagle No. 2; Union No. 3; Young Hoosier No. 4;

Mazeppa No. 5; Stand Pipe No. 6, also No. 7; besides Relief Hook and Ladder, which was located with Young Hoosier, at Hose House No. 4. Hose House No. 4, where both Young Hoosier engine, and its company and also the hook and ladder company were housed, was the central fire station and headquarters of the department. This house was on the north side of Jefferson street, between Michigan street and the first alley west. Fire tournaments, in South Bend and in the surrounding towns, were a prominent feature of the old volunteer department. At these tournaments, or exhibitions, the South Bend companies almost invariably carried off the prizes. The tournaments were of great value in keeping up interest in the service, as well as putting in practice the best features of actual fire protection.

On February 23, 1874, a grand review of the fire department and inspection of the new stand pipe and water works system was held, to which firemen and fire committees from neighboring cities were invited. The last days of the old volunteer fire department were among the brightest. On October 6, 1873, the common council, although preoccupied with the completion of the new water works system, yet found time to express the formal thanks of the city to the fine city fire department and its efficient chief, then Capt. Edwin Nicar. Yet the change was coming. On October 19, 1874, it became apparent that the water pressure, present in full force at every hydrant, made all fire companies, except hook and ladder and hose companies, quite out of harmony with the new conditions; and they were accordingly disbanded.

On August 7, 1882, the Gamewell Fire Alarm system, for communicating alarms of fires, was adopted. On July 26, 1886, a committee sent out to examine paid fire departments in other cities reported in favor of the system in operation in Kalamazoo. They recommended for the city of South Bend the following plan: That the city should procure one 2-horse hose

carriage; two 1-horse carriages; one hook and ladder truck, with sixty foot extension ladder, to be drawn by two horses; one 2-horse chemical engine; and that these should be manned by ten paid firemen and a fire chief, to be aided in emergency by twenty called men. The cost of making the change was estimated at nine thousand dollars. The recommendation of the committee was adopted by the common council. The paid fire department was formally organized, November 26, 1886. On January 10, 1887, the department was reported by fire chief Isaac Hutchins as in full working order; and, on his recommendation, all the volunteer companies were disbanded.

Since the establishment of the paid department, in 1886, the work of improvement has gone forward, year by year, until South Bend, without question, has one of the best fire departments in the land,—water works; hose houses; telegraphic fire alarm; efficient officers and men; trained horses; trucks and hose wagons; and all other apparatus necessary for first-class modern fire service. Including the central station, there are eight fire stations and hose houses, distributed at the most advantageous points throughout the city. At the central station there are three companies,—one truck company; one chemical engine company; and one hose company. At each of the other seven stations is found a hose company, provided with full apparatus. The cost of transforming the volunteer department into a paid fire department, in 1886, was estimated at nine thousand dollars. Compared with this is the following expense account for the year 1906: Paid out in salaries, \$46,384.29; paid for running expenses during that year, \$10,664.32. Total expenses for the South Bend fire department, for the year 1906, \$57,048.61.

On the Fourth of July, 1907, the anniversary of the Declaration of Independence was celebrated by the South Bend fire department in the greatest public display ever inaugurated by the "fire laddies" of the city. The

day was delightful; and the street parade one of the finest ever seen in Indiana. The display then made was an exhibition of what may perhaps be regarded as the culmination of efforts to make the department a perfected fire force; for we can hardly conceive of a more complete and efficient fire department than that which South Bend now possesses.

On June 4, 1907, in anticipation of the Fourth of July demonstration, the South Bend Tribune gave an interesting summary of events connected with the history and present condition of fire organizations in the city; and this summary may fitly conclude our historical sketch:

"South Bend has a fire department second to none in the country. It has a reputation that is not confined to this locality, but which is spreading to all parts of the country. The announcement several months ago that the fire department intended to give a Fourth of July celebration this year has attracted the attention of people all over the country, but especially fire departments and parties engaged in the manufacture of fire fighting equipment. As a result many people have inspected the local service and pronounce it the best in the world for a city this size.

"South Bend's paid fire department was organized and pressed into service Nov. 26, 1886, following a resolution of the common council passed the year previous. Since that time it has been maintained and has been under the control of the city government. The present fire department consists of 58 men, 28 horses and the following rolling stock in active service: Seagrave hook and ladder truck, chemical engine, two chief's wagons, supply wagon, electricians' wagon, eight hose wagons. Ten fire companies and eight fire stations are represented in the complete service. In reserve the department has a hook and ladder truck, a hose wagon and a spring wagon.

"The present paid department is the outgrowth of the old volunteer fire department. Prior to the year 1853 South Bend had no

fire department or organized system of protection in case of fire. The first organized effort in that direction was made in this year, when the St. Joseph company, No. 1, was organized and a small hand engine was purchased for its use. Another company was soon after organized and in 1857 Union hose company No. 3, was formed and another engine added to the department. In 1865 a steam fire engine was purchased, which was called the Young Hoosier. After that date various volunteer organizations were formed until the present efficient fire fighting system was given its inception and placed in successful operation.

"Many of the men on the present fire department were leaders in the volunteer movement and did very effective work for the city in that capacity. It is no wonder that the impetus given the fire fighting system by them has developed into the great department of today. Isaac Hutchins, an old time volunteer, was the first chief of the paid fire department, which when organized had but 11 men and 20 call-men. He had two assistant chiefs, John Donahue and Jacob F. Kerner. Later one of the assistants was dropped from the position on the fire department and the call-men plan was also abolished.

"The first companies were those at the central station and consisted of the hook and ladder, or truck company, No. 1, and the chemical company, No. 1. These were located in a small brick building on the north side of Jefferson street between Main and Michigan streets. Later hose company No. 1 was organized. It was across from the Sheridan hotel on the north side of La Salle avenue and was located in a two story frame building, which was not in the best of condition and many a cold winter wind and not a few deluges of water poured into the leaky roof.

"The present central fire station at the southeast corner of Wayne and St. Joseph streets was completed in 1902. Into it the central station companies from the old building as well as hose company No. 1 moved.

The latter company made the transfer July 31, 1902, and the former the day before. This centralized the different kinds of fire fighting apparatus and gave the central a full equipment, greatly strengthening the efficiency of the service. Twenty-one men, nine horses, a truck, a chemical, wagons for the chief and the assistant chief and a reserve truck and a reserve hose wagon are housed in the building, which is one of the best, and the most complete as well as the largest station of the kind, according to investigations, in the country.

"Chief Wilfird Grant and his worthy assistant have been on the department ever since it was organized. They also served in the old volunteer companies, the chief two years with hose company No. 4 and his assistant, William Smith, with hose company No. 3. Mr. Smith entered the volunteer service in 1877. Grant was elevated to the captaincy and was later promoted to chief, a position he has filled with the very greatest credit since Sept. 1, 1902. Smith was appointed second assistant in 1892 and was made first assistant in 1898, a position he has filled with acceptancy and thorough efficiency all these years.

"The chiefs of the paid fire department have been as follows: Isaac Hutchins, William Baker, Jacob F. Kerner, Irving Sibrel and Wilfird Grant."

The valuation of the property of the South Bend fire department, as estimated by the board of public safety, at the close of the year 1906, was \$131,461.68, distributed as follows:

STATEMENT OF ASSETS—FIRE DEPARTMENT.

Central Fire Station, house and lot	\$40,000.00
Less amount still due.....	12,223.31
Total	\$27,776.69
Contents of Central Fire Station, including Truck Co. No. 1, Hook and Ladder, Hose Co. No. 1, and Chemical Engine No. 1. Total.....	\$28,883.20
Chief's Barn and contents at Central Fire Station, including wagons, horses, etc.....	\$ 1,047.80

No. 2 Hose House and Lot.....	\$ 4,900.00
Contents	3,857.45
Total	\$ 8,757.45
No. 3 Hose House and Lot.....	\$ 7,199.87
Contents	3,640.10
Total	\$10,839.97
No. 4 Hose House and Lot.....	\$ 5,628.00
Contents	3,941.65
Total	\$ 9,569.65
No. 5 Hose House and Lot.....	\$ 5,135.00
Contents	3,918.45
Total	\$ 9,053.45
No. 6 Hose House and Lot.....	\$ 4,965.00
Contents	3,458.43
Total	\$ 8,423.43
No. 7 Hose House and Lot.....	\$ 7,929.49
Contents	3,656.00
Total	\$11,585.49
No. 8 Hose House and Lot.....	\$ 6,478.04
Contents	3,920.36
Total	\$10,398.40
Supply Barn and Sheds at No. 3	
Hose House	\$ 1,500.00
Contents	3,574.65
Total	\$ 5,074.65
Blacksmith Shop at Central	
Fire Station. Contents.....	\$ 51.50

The organization of the fire department and the location of the several companies for the year 1907 is as follows:

Chief Headquarters, Central Fire Station, No. 202-204-206 E. Wayne St.	
Wilfrid Grant	Chief
William Smith	Assistant Chief
Harry E. Coil.....	Secretary
Truck Company No. 1, Central Fire Station.	
John Haney	Captain
Otto Lockstidt	Lieutenant
George Vahlert	Driver
Charles Moritz	Ladderman
John F. Howard	Ladderman
Harry Brazy	Ladderman
Chemical Engine No. 1, Central Fire Station.	
Irving Sibrel	Captain
Charles Warrell	Lieutenant
James Auer	Driver
Percy Alford	Pipeman
John Hull	Chief's Driver
Hose Company No. 1, Central Fire Station.	
Adam Seifert	Captain
Edward Luther	Lieutenant
Roy Knoblock	Driver
William Bernhard	Pipeman
August Bailey	Pipeman
August Kraszewski	Pipeman
Hose Company No. 2, West Sample Street.	
Henry Entzion	Captain
William Freeh	Lieutenant

Joseph Shirk	Driver
Frank Kuliberda	Pipeman
Thomas Harrens	Pipeman
Hose Company No. 3, North Hill Street.	
John Stoney	Captain
Alfred Virgil	Lieutenant
Louis Lederer	Driver
William Furey	Pipeman
Frank Kubiak	Pipeman
John Schroth	Pipeman
Hose Company No. 4, West Thomas Street.	
Camile De Vleeschouwer	Captain
Henry Czajkowski	Lieutenant
Karl Yensen	Driver
John McKeel	Pipeman
John Borkowski	Pipeman
Hose Company No. 5, East Sample Street.	
August Hoglund	Captain
William Heiman	Lieutenant
George Stilwell	Driver
Edward Tohulka	Pipeman
Louis Torok	Pipeman
Hose Company No. 6, Portage Avenue and Lindsey Street.	
Frank Strickler	Captain
Alex. Frederick	Lieutenant
Paul Egresces	Driver
Harry Hinkle	Pipeman
Paul Wegner	Pipeman
Hose Company No. 7, South Bend and Notre Dame Avenues.	
Oscar Stallard	Captain
Thomas Hartford	Lieutenant
Edward McNulty	Driver
James Scott	Pipeman
William Baker	Pipeman
Hose Company No. 8, Washington and Olive Streets.	
John Wentland	Captain
Michael Touhey	Lieutenant
Anton Sroda	Driver
Andrew Anderson	Pipeman
Anton Topel	Pipeman
Chester Vanarsdel	
.....	Houseman and Weighmaster
Edward Koehler	
.....	Lineman for Department

Sec. 5.—THE CITY HALL.—Until a little prior to the year 1899, the city of South Bend does not seem to have made any move towards securing a city hall for the transaction of its affairs. During the whole period of town and city government, up to that time, the business of the municipality was conducted in offices leased for the purpose. In the '70's and early '80's, these rented offices were on Washington street, between Main and Michigan; after which, a disastrous fire compelled a removal to Michigan street, between Washington and Market, now

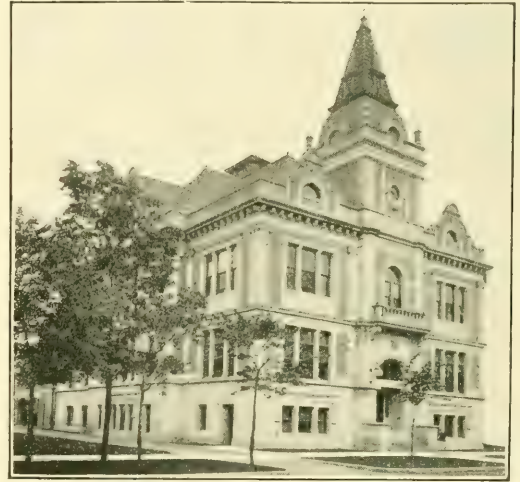
Colfax avenue. In the later '80's and early '90's, the offices were on Jefferson street, between Main and Lafayette; and afterwards on Michigan street, in what was long known as Price's Theater.

On October 18, 1899, the mayor and common council entered into a contract with James Oliver for the erection of a city hall suited to the needs of the growing metropolis of the St. Joseph valley. Not long previous to this time the city had purchased a site for a building, on North Main street, between Colfax and La Salle avenues, with the intention of erecting a permanent home for the municipality as soon as funds sufficient for that purpose could be procured. But South Bend was nearly up to the constitutional limit of its indebtedness, and it became evident that if a city hall was to be built within a reasonable time, it must be built by private parties.

In this emergency, Mr. Oliver, who had often before manifested his public spirit in favor of the community in which he had built up his great fortune, came to the assistance of the promoters of this civic enterprise. The contract entered into provided that he should have permission to enter on the premises owned by the city and erect thereon a city hall, the building to remain his property unless and until the city should exercise an option given in the contract to purchase the same. The hall should be suited to the needs of the city, and according to plans and specifications named, and the work let to the best bidder, the cost not to exceed seventy-five thousand dollars. The contract further provided that when the building should be constructed it should be leased to the city for twelve years, at an annual rental of seven thousand two hundred dollars, payable from year to year, as the same should accrue. It was also provided that the city should have an option to purchase the building at any time at a price equal to the original contract cost, with four per cent interest, less the several amounts of rent then paid, also with

four per cent interest. In case this option should not be exercised, the property should remain Mr. Oliver's, and in that case he should have the right to purchase the grounds.

As there was some doubt as to the validity of this contract, in order to test the matter, suit was brought by a property holder to enjoin the city from performance. The circuit court held that the contract was in effect a purchase, under the guise of a lease, and was therefore invalid. The supreme court, however, decided that, by reason of the option, the city undertook no obligation of purchase, and that the contract was valid.^a

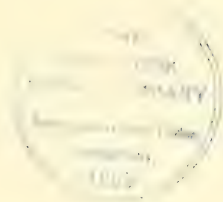


CITY HALL, SOUTH BEND.

Mr. Oliver, accordingly, went ahead and constructed the building; and the city has since continued to pay him the annual rental, as stipulated in the contract. Although the city has assumed no obligation to purchase, yet as soon as it finds itself with sufficient funds, there is no doubt that it will exercise its option of purchase, and thus become the owner of this beautiful and convenient city hall.

The building is in keeping with its noble purpose. All the city officers and boards,

^a. See *City of South Bend v. Reynolds*, 155 Ind., p. 70.





A. Coquillard

including the police department, are housed within its ample walls. Indeed, it is doubtful whether any city in Indiana is provided with a more substantial, elegant and convenient city hall.

Sec. 6.—PARKS.—In the year 1878 the first public expression was made in favor of a park for the city of South Bend. While generous in many respects, as we have seen, the proprietors of the original plat of the town seem never to have thought of a park. It may be that the fine oak openings which formed the site of the town, together with the Parkovash on the east side of the river and Portage Prairie on the northwest, to say nothing of the other beautiful prairies and woodlands in the vicinity, made the whole country a natural park, so that perhaps the doughty founders of the city would have smiled at the idea of reserving valuable town property for so useless a purpose as park or pleasure ground. Yet the founders of other towns as pleasantly situated did not think it unwise to set apart public squares and plots of ground for pleasure resorts for the people. The lack of liberality in this respect is painfully apparent in our confined court house grounds; and here a comparison with the neighboring county seats makes our deficiency the more marked. In Goshen, Plymouth, Valparaiso and Laporte a full square is devoted to the court house; but in South Bend but one quarter of a square was set apart in the beginning for that purpose. The county commissioners afterwards bought an additional lot for the county jail, and still later bought two more lots, one for the present jail and one upon which the old court house has been placed. The founders of the city of Kalamazoo, were more far sighted in this particular, having laid aside two full squares for public parks, in addition to a square for the county buildings.

Even in 1878, when the subject of parks was first broached, the grounds considered were most unpromising. They consisted of an overflowed swamp waste along the east

side of the St. Joseph river, extending from Jefferson street to Division street. It was at first but a dumping ground; but, in the course of years, the unsavory locality has become the most beautiful spot in South Bend, and is known to the public as Howard Park. A more detailed history of this park will be given at the close of this section.

But little further interest seems to have been taken in public parks for many years. In 1889, however, Alexis Coquillard, who inherited the enterprise and public spirit, as he did the name, of his distinguished uncle, the founder of the city, showed his zeal in this direction by making a gift of four lots to Howard Park, and, still more, by offering to the city for park purposes a fine tract of ground, of nearly one hundred acres, on the east side of the corporation. He went so far as to lay out this park, plant trees and grade boulevards, walks and drives. In Coquillard Park, the city of South Bend seemed about to have one of the finest parks in the west. Unhappily, Mr. Coquillard, in the midst of his laudable enterprise, and in what should seem to be the prime of his active and useful life, died on February 25, 1890. With his death the life seemed to leave the noble project which he so fondly cherished. It was not until 1906 that all controversies as to this gift were settled, and the city accepted, in compromise of all its claims, a tract of ten acres, taken out of the grounds in dispute, for which the name of Coquillard Park has been retained.

With the coming in of the new century, attention was drawn to the large tract on the St. Joseph river, at the foot of Michigan street, which had been purchased in 1895 by the city for the use of the water works department. The building of a pumping station on those grounds, and the sinking and capping over of numerous artesian wells, left the greater part of the tract suitable for use as an additional park, without interfering with its use for water works purposes. The

grounds were accordingly graded, planted and improved as a park.

On November 27, 1900, David R. Leeper died. He had been born very near to the present limits of the city of South Bend, on January 12, 1832 and was during the whole of his vigorous manhood one of our most honored citizens. He represented the county in the state legislature, in both house and senate, and was also mayor of the city. His residence, during the later years of his life, just north of the river and near the new park, perhaps also suggested his name as one that might most appropriately be bestowed upon it. The beautiful stretch of

in 1905, by the placing of a drinking fountain in this park, the gift of Mrs. Mary P. Bugbee, in memory of her husband, Almond Bugbee.

Another park along the river is La Salle Park, located on the east side of the river, near the Sample street bridge. This will be only a park in name until the bayou in the river at that point has been filled up. When finally improved La Salle Park, like all our other river parks will be a place of beauty.

The Studebaker Park, in the southeast part of the city, named in honor of Henry Studebaker, and the Kaley Park, in the southwest part, are among the largest and



LEEPER PARK, SOUTH BEND.

ground along the river, including the island near the south shore, was accordingly named Leeper Park. In 1904, there was an extension of the park to the north along the river, from Michigan street to Lafayette street. Meanwhile a boulevard had been constructed all along the river, from Marion street to Michigan street, which has since been extended north, the intention being ultimately to have a continuous driveway down to River View cemetery and the old portage. Leeper Park is destined therefore to be one of the finest pleasure grounds anywhere along the banks of the St. Joseph. The name of another worthy citizen of South Bend was honored,

most valuable of our recent acquisitions. These fine breathing places are gifts to the city by public spirited donors whose names they bear. Pottawatomie Park, the old county fair grounds between South Bend and the town of River Park, has been described in connection with the history of River Park.^a

A comprehensive summary of the condition of the park system of the city, at the close of the year 1906, will be found in the following extract from the report of Herman H. Beyer, the park superintendent, for that year:

“The year 1906 was marked by numerous
a. Chap. 9, Subd. 3, Sec. 4.

park extensions in South Bend. The city acquired in the past year approximately seventy-eight acres of park property, distributed as follows: Coquillard park, comprising ten acres, secured by the city in the settlement of the old Coquillard park litigation. This ground is in the northeastern part of the city on East Campau street. It lies directly east of the Perley school and is a very desirable site for a public park. The most important park property which was added to our park system is the old County Fair grounds, presented to the city of South Bend by the county commissioners for park purposes. This ground is situated on the north side of Mishawaka road just beyond the eastern city limits. It comprises about sixty acres and is a most beautiful piece of rolling and wooded land. This tract will be known as Pottawatomie Park, in honor of the tribe of Indians of that name who formerly inhabited this locality.

"The city has also acquired by purchase an addition to Kaley Park which contains about three acres. This addition is a great improvement to the park as it is now entirely surrounded by streets. Formerly the south line was bounded by an alley which prevented a proper development of this beautiful piece of wooded ground. The next property acquired by purchase was about four acres from Messrs. Anderson and DuShane. This is situated at the foot of North Lafayette street, and will make a valuable addition to Leeper Park. It also forms a connecting link with the river shore drive (Marion boulevard) and Chapin Park.

"A great deal of work has already been done in the new park grounds. At Coquillard Park a great many trees and shrubs were planted; the entire park was seeded, and laid out with drives and walks.

"Kaley Park was thoroughly cleared of leaves and underbrush, twenty-four park benches were stationed in this park which were appreciated by the many people that

sought rest and shade in this beautiful piece of woodland.

"We have also done considerable work in Pottawatomie Park. This work was limited to the removal of stumps and underbrush. At this park were also placed thirty benches, which were much appreciated.

"There has also been considerable work done in Leeper and Howard Parks the past year. The west end of Leeper Park between Main and Lafayette streets, was graded, seeded and planted with trees and shrubs; this will soon bring this part of the park into good condition.

At Howard Park the new addition was developed. In this location was erected the beautiful Studebaker fountain that was donated to this park by Mr. John M. Studebaker, who is greatly interested in the development of this park. The band concerts at Leeper and Howard Parks were very much appreciated by the thousands of people that gathered in the parks on Sunday afternoons during the season.

"Our Zoo at Leeper Park is one of the chief attractions at that park on account of the numerous donations of pets that were received the past year. We were compelled to increase our cage room to take care of this fine collection of pets. This department is receiving considerable attention and is making gratifying progress."

After the foregoing report was made, Mr. Calvert H. Defrees, in the summer of 1907, placed in Howard Park a fine bronze drinking fountain; which, like the electric fountain presented by Mr. Studebaker, and the drinking fountain in Leeper Park, presented by Mrs. Bugbee, is highly appreciated by the throngs of summer visitors.

Closely connected with the pleasure resorts of the city, yet not of them, is Springbrook Park, owned and managed by the Chicago, South Bend & Northern Indiana railway company, and situated near the river on the line of the interurban, between South Bend and Mishawaka. Upon the grounds are a

baseball enclosure, a casino and numerous other places of amusement. Throngs of people visit Springbrook during the summer season.

In the light of the splendid progress that has recently been made in extending and ornamenting our parks, it may be interesting now to look back over the history of our first park, the first effort at park making in our beautiful city. On April 7, 1903, the following paper was read before the Northern Indiana Historical Society by the writer of this history:

THE STORY OF A PARK.

"Prior to the year 1878, the tract along the east bank of the St. Joseph river in the city of South Bend, stretching from Jefferson street to the Grand Trunk (formerly Lake Huron) railroad, was an impassable morass, breeding malaria in summer and good in winter for skating only. Cottrell avenue ran on the eastern side of the tract, and the ownership of the part between the avenue and the river was in doubt. This morass was claimed by Mr. William Heck, who platted the same into lots, which, however, remained vacant and unimproved, except that a part of the ground was scooped out deeper to make an ice pond for the cutting and storing of ice in the cold season.

"The place had become a nuisance in the summer as an ague breeder; but, as the city had no unquestioned control over it, the means of relief were not apparent; and yet the people were insistent on some plan for the abatement of the nuisance. Few persons in those days thought of parks, still less did any dream of turning this swamp into a pleasure ground. Something however, had to be done in the interest of the public health; and here, as in many other cases, necessity became the mother of invention.

"On October 14, 1878, the writer of this paper, then a member of the city council, offered the following resolution, which was adopted:

" 'Resolved, by the common council of the city of South Bend, Indiana, That the city attorney is hereby directed to examine the title of the city to that tract of overflowed land lying along the east bank of the St. Joseph river, between the Jefferson street bridge and the Chicago & Lake Huron railroad, and bounded as follows: On the north by Jefferson street, on the east by Cottrell avenue, on the south by Division street, and on the west by the St. Joseph river; and if the title of the city to said tract is found to be good, then that the attorney report an ordinance to the council setting apart said tract as a city dumping ground for the deposit of all refuse matter from the streets and alleys of the city, with the view of finally filling, leveling and planting said ground, and thus, in time, converting the same into a public park or pleasure ground for the use of the citizens of South Bend.'

"On November 25, following, the city attorney, now the Hon. Lucius Hubbard, reported that, in his opinion, the said lands were a part of Cottrell avenue, but that as 'Heck's addition' they were held adverse to the city; and he requested authority to bring suit in the circuit court to quiet the title of the city; which authority was granted.

"On January 6, 1879, the attorney reported that John and George Beck, who appeared to have title to the greater part of 'Heck's addition,' were willing to quit claim to the city their supposed interest for one hundred dollars, each party to pay one-half costs of suit in court.

"On February 3, 1879, the city offered to pay sixty dollars for the lots in Heck's addition held by John and George Beck. This offer was accepted and the purchase made.

"On February 4, 1879, the Hon. Lucius Tong, then mayor of the city; Jonathan P. Creed and Charles LaCoss quit-claimed for a small consideration four other lots in Heck's addition. And on February 17, 1879, the city engineer was directed to mark the boundaries of the park.

"On March 17, 1879, pursuant to a motion therefor introduced by the writer, ordinance No. 524, establishing the city park and placing the same under the control of the city marshal, was adopted by the common council.

"On April 5, 1880, also on motion of the writer, the board of public improvements was authorized to plant 50 trees, elm and soft maple, upon the narrow ridge of ground near the river bank; which was done. The maples all died, and some of the elms also, but many of the elms have grown and flourished, and now afford grateful shade in the summer weather.

"Afterwards, on like suggestion of the writer, the city purchased the Semortier property, between Hill street and Cottrell avenue, being lot 170, Cottrell's first addition to Lowell; and on June 4, 1883, the common council vacated that part of the avenue between the Semortier lot and the river, thus greatly enlarging the original ground.

"No further action, except the gradual filling up of the low ground, was taken until November 5, 1889, when Alexis Coquillard, as a gift for the park, made a deed to the city of lots 195, 196, 197 and 200 in Cottrell's first addition. Lot 200, so given by Mr. Coquillard, proved to be of exceptional value, inasmuch as it fronted upon St. Louis street, and thus enabled the authorities afterwards to connect the walks and driveways of the park directly with that street.

"During the fifteen years, from 1878 until 1893, the 'City Park' was little more than a by-word among the people, and in the city press. The locality was indeed an unsavory one. At first a quagmire, the filling of street cleanings made it only slightly less offensive; and those who saw a future 'public park or pleasure ground' in the repulsive tract were compelled to suffer much obloquy in connection with the embryotic park. But the refuse continued to be covered from time to time with fresh earth; and when the years 1892, 1893 and 1894 came around, the people began to see that, in the end, the originators of

the park on the St. Joseph were sure to be vindicated. To give some idea of the work accomplished, it is said that the filling, or 'made ground,' is, in places from ten to fifteen feet deep.

"On June 8, 1891, the common council elected a board of park commissioners, consisting at first of Frank Mayr, Corwin B. Vanpelt and Samuel S. Perley. On October 5, 1891, this board reported that steps should be taken for the improvement of the park. The filling was at this time nearly complete, and the ground almost ready for covering with fresh soil, preparatory to grading, laying out walks and planting to grass, flowers and trees. On July 10, 1893, the park commissioners took the first important action looking to the permanent improvement of the grounds. The members of the board at that time were Corwin B. Vanpelt, Frank Mayr and Joseph E. Robert. They recommended the appropriation of \$5,000 for the erection of a sea wall along the river front and for other necessary work. The matter was before the council for several months; and it was not until June 25, 1894, nearly a year afterwards, that ordinance No. 949, making the appropriation requested, was finally passed.

"On February 26, 1894, the city engineer, William M. Whitten, reported that he had nearly ready for the engraver a new map of the city and desired to have a name given to the park, so that he might enter the same on his map. The engineer in his report was kind enough to refer to the action taken by the writer while a member of the council in securing the grounds for the city and providing for their enlargement and improvement; and he suggested that the writer's name be therefore given to the park. The council accepted Mr. Whitten's suggestion; and by a unanimous vote ordered that the tract should thereafter be known as 'Howard Park.'

"On June 25, 1894, Corwin B. Vanpelt, Martin J. Roach and Oren G. Huff were elected park commissioners.

"On February 25, 1895, the commissioners asked that the park cease to be further used as a dumping ground. The city then procured other ground for the purpose, since known as La Salle Park, adjoining the new Sample street bridge, and also lying along the east side of the St. Joseph river.

"The commissioners now sought for a competent landscape artist to lay out the park, and were exceedingly fortunate in securing the services of Mr. John G. Barker, at whose magic touch the former swamp began at last to assume the fair outlines of a pleasure ground. Under his skilled hand a wonderful transformation has taken place. Those who enjoy the park, as it is today, owe a debt of gratitude to Mr. Barker. He has shown by apt illustration how 'a thing of beauty is a joy forever.'

"During the summer of 1895 the fine sea wall and cement walk along the river was constructed. The report filed by the commissioners, November 19, 1895, shows receipts \$5,673.96, and expenditures \$5,663.62. The funds in the hands of the board were most judiciously expended. The results of that summer's labors are not only for the pleasure of those now living, but for the enjoyment of thousands yet unborn.

"The good work continued. The trees flourished from year to year. The green sod grew firmer. The gravel walks and drives were extended until they wound gracefully over the whole tract. During the summer months picturesque mounds of flowers mingled their bright colors with the deep green of the grass and trees and with the silvery sheen from the waters of the St. Joseph.

"And, lest the people in their enjoyment should forget that life is not all a holiday and that there had been times that tried men's souls, Captain Vanpelt, president of the board, secured three fine guns that had done service during the war, and had them mounted where they remain today, as if on guard against any possible enemy that might

appear upon the placid bosom of the fair St. Joseph.

"On October 25, 1897, the board, in a petition filed with the city council, began to agitate the procurement of additional land to the east of the park up to the alley first west of St. Louis street. The demand for that addition did not then, however, seem to be sufficiently urgent to induce the city fathers to yield to the request of the park commissioners. That extension was destined to come, but only after many years.

"With his third, and final, report, filed January 24, 1898, Captain Vanpelt, in the following words, feeling perhaps that he had done his work of love, and done it well, handed in to the common council his resignation of the office which he had so acceptably filled: 'Owing,' he said, 'to the pressure of private business, I feel it my duty to tender you my resignation, to take effect immediately. I desire to thank you, on behalf of the board of park commissioners, for the uniform courtesy and consideration you have at all times extended to us in the matter of the improvement of Howard Park, transferring a pestilential tract into what is, even now, a clean and wholesome spot, which, in time, will inure to the benefit of the general public.'

" 'C. B. Vanpelt,

" 'President and Treasurer.'

"Would that every public servant might lay down his burden with as much honor to himself and with as many good wishes from the public who have been so greatly benefited by his unselfish labors.

"Captain Vanpelt had a worthy successor in the person of Irving A. Sibley, who was elected in his place, and who continued the same progressive methods, until the enactment of the new city charter, when the department of parks was placed in charge of the board of public works.

"On Friday evening, August 18, 1899, the park was formally dedicated as a public pleasure ground, in one of the most splendid civic demonstrations ever witnessed in the

queen city of the St. Joseph valley. The dedication was in connection with a patriotic festival in honor of Indiana's distinguished soldier, Henry W. Lawton, then winning his laurels in the Philippines. Dedication and festival were under the auspices and direction of Auten Post No. 8, G. A. R., of which the writer was then post commander, and Auten Relief Corps No. 14, W. R. C. Full and graphic accounts of the double celebration were given in the city press next day.

"The following paragraphs are abbreviated from *The Times*:

"South Bend's park commissioners well earned the praise bestowed upon their park-making efforts by the great multitude that thronged Howard Park at the Gen. Lawton memorial festival and park dedication. The results were a pleasing surprise to the many who had not before visited the park; and many friends were made for park expenditures so judiciously directed.

"It was an imposing parade that was formed on South Michigan street in front of Auten Post headquarters, last evening, led by Col. George M. Studebaker and Capt. David A. Ireland on horseback. When the line of march reached the Jefferson street bridge there was a crowd found on that structure that was simply alarming from its density, and all breathed easier when the procession had passed over. At the park there was a vast multitude, one of the largest ever gathered in South Bend."

"The Tribune said:

"Silvery rays of many electric lamps and the full flood of moonlight turned pretty Howard Park into a fairyland last night; and the thousands of visitors who strolled over its winding paths, its graveled roads and well-kept lawns, and gazed into the quaint and picturesque St. Joseph, will long remember the dedication of what is to be the most beautiful little park in Indiana.

"As the thousands assembled on the city's pleasure ground to take part in the formal dedication of the place and to do honor to

that Indian who is distinguishing himself in the Philippines, they found a revelation, for Howard Park was never more beautiful nor the river more sparkling than on last evening.

"The speaking was from the open pavilion in the center of the park. The speakers, who were introduced by Post Commander Howard, of Auten Post, as master of ceremonies, were Mayor Colfax, Congressman Abraham Lincoln Brick, Attorneys Stuart McKibbin and George E. Clarke and Captain Edwin Nicar."

"The articles in the city papers were elaborate and enthusiastic in the extreme; but the foregoing condensed extracts will suffice to give some idea of the wonderful interest awakened among the people by the final opening of the park upon the St. Joseph.

"In 1901, on the re-organization of the city government under our special charter, the commissioners who had done their work so well, turned over the park to the new board of public works, consisting of Arthur L. Hubbard, Samuel Leeper and Charles L. Goetz. During the administration of this efficient board the park became so frequented a resort that attention was drawn more and more to the need of extending the area of the grounds set apart by the city for recreation and breathing places for the people. Early in their administration the board established La Salle Park, an admirably situated tract half a mile further up the river. Soon afterwards, over a mile down stream, they laid out the fine Leeper Park, which includes the dainty island in the river at that point.

"The urgent desire of the people for the enlargement of Howard Park wrought upon the public-spirited and enterprising nature of one of South Bend's most eminent, as he is one of her most wealthy, citizens, Mr. John M. Studebaker; and in August, 1902, the board of public works received from Mr. Studebaker a deed for lots 187 and 188 in Cottrell's first addition, together with two thousand dollars in cash for the further im-

provement of the park. This timely gift was made conditional on the purchase by the city of lots 183, 184, 185 and 186, also to be added to the park. The purchase of those lots was accordingly made by the city at the price of twelve thousand, five hundred dollars; and the east limits of the park were thus extended to the alley next to St. Louis street, carrying out the design so long entertained by the park commissioners, as well as by the board of public works.

“As we have already seen, Mayor Tong, Mr. Creed and Mr. LaCoss practically donated four of the original Heck lots to the city

eastern part of the park, it was the desire of many people that the soldiers’ monument, about to be erected by the county should be located on those high grounds, where it could be seen to so good advantage from all the city and surrounding country. The location finally chosen was different; and time only must tell whether a mistake has been made or not.

“With the ground clear from the river to the east side of the recent acquisition, the artist hand and brain of Mr. Barker will give us, with Howard Park and Leeper Park, pleasant recreation grounds, surpassing in



HOWARD PARK, SOUTH BEND.

when the park was first projected; and, afterwards, Alexis Coquillard gave four Cottrell lots for the same public use, bringing the grounds out to St. Louis street on lot 200. Finally, Mr. Studebaker added two lots more, with a gift of money for the same worthy purpose. So it has been that the generosity of high-minded citizens has combined with the ceaseless activity, wise economy and excellent taste of the officials in charge to make this park what it has now become, an ornament to our city and a place of delight for all our people.

“After the purchase of the last lots, giving a high and commanding position in the

beauty, extent and attractiveness those of any of our near-by sister cities.

“Howard Park will attain to its destined outlines and usefulness only when the lots immediately on the east are added to it. The grounds will then be bounded by Jefferson street, St. Louis street and the St. Joseph river. It will be a pleasure ground most romantically and at the same time most conveniently situated, consisting of nearly twenty acres of ground, lying in the very heart of the city, and stretching along the banks of the St. Joseph—by far the finest river in Indiana. That will, without doubt, give our fair city, if we have it not already, the most

delightful small park in the state, perhaps in the country.

To conclude, it will soon be twenty-five years since the passage by the common council of the original resolution first proposing to convert into a public park the tract of low and overflowed land lying between Cottrell avenue and the St. Joseph river. It has taken all those years to bring about the transformation proposed by the terms of the resolution. But the work is done, and the citizens of South Bend are in the actual use and enjoyment of the anticipated pleasure ground. Let us trust that this is but the first of the many public parks that are to adorn our beautiful city."

During the four years that have passed since the writing of the foregoing paper, the materials for "the continuation of the story" of Howard Park have been added to, by reason of the presentation of an ornamental electric fountain by John M. Studebaker and a bronze drinking fountain by Calvert H. Defrees.

On July 21, 1906, there was a double dedication in the park, as there had been on August 18, 1899, when the park itself was opened to the public, and at the same time the people united with the dedication a patriotic festival in honor of General Lawton, then doing honor to his country, and particularly to his state, during the war in the Philippines. On July 21, 1906, the people came together to dedicate the Studebaker fountain and also to witness the opening of the beautiful Melan bridge over the river, at Jefferson street, then recently completed. On the Monday evening following the dedication, the following particulars in relation to the exercises appeared in the South Bend Times:

"The outpouring of people Saturday night to witness the dedication of the electric bronze fountain presented the city for Howard park by John M. Studebaker, must have been greatly pleasing to that gentleman for the appreciation of the gift it evidenced. Estimates of the crowd assembled in the park

are from eight to ten thousand. It was a good natured assemblage, standing patiently through the concert given by Miller's band preceding the ceremonies, and listening intently to the speakers.

"Mayor Fogarty brought the assemblage to order, speaking of the pleasure it gave him to be permitted to preside at a meeting of this nature, when two such magnificent gifts as the fountain and the Jefferson street bridge were to be received by the city. He then introduced Mr. Studebaker.

"The address of the latter was of an extemporaneous order and of a happy nature. He said it was not his purpose to attempt making a speech, but he wanted to speak a few words to the young men who stood before him.

"He was surprised and delighted at the sea of faces before him; the appreciation of the gift thus shown was ample compensation.

"The incentive for giving the fountain to Howard park, he said, came from his travels over the country and visits to the parks of the larger cities. He had found that the parks most frequented were those made most attractive through public or private enterprise. This reflection caused him to reach the decision to do something that would make Howard park more attractive, and from it came the suggestion of an electric fountain as the best thing he could do.

"Mr. Studebaker then became most interestingly reminiscent, and told of his start in life; how he had struggled along, believing in the principle that God helps those who help themselves, eventually leading up to what made it possible for him to make the city this gift. It was at this point that he wished the close attention of his young auditors.

"'Fifty-six years ago,' said Mr. Studebaker, 'I landed in South Bend as poor a boy as stands before me tonight. The only shoes I wore were those God had given me. I lived with my parents in a log cabin and there are men and women here today who

can remember it. I got up at 4 o'clock in the morning and walked one or two miles in the woods where I cut my two cords of wood a day. That is the way I got my start. The opportunity for young men then was not very great or promising. It is better today. Times have changed it is true, but the opportunities are here just the same. The trouble is that many do not avail themselves of them, and are not willing to work as it is necessary to gain a start in life, and oftentimes fail to save and store away their earnings.'

"In his concluding remarks Mr. Studebaker made reference to the new bridge, and told of the struggle to get commissioners who would go on with these improvements. Where the commissioners were unable to realize the necessity for new bridges they were superseded by men who did. The improvements of the city had made, he said, South Bend known far and wide as a progressive and enterprising city, and it would grow still greater. Best of all, he said, was that in all these improvements there had been no grafting by officials.

"Mr. Studebaker then formally presented the fountain to William A. McInerny, president of the board of public works.

"The address of Mr. McInerny was a highly creditable effort, and in his remarks he took occasion to make it known that this was not the first evidence of public spiritedness on the part of this honored citizen. He said that Mr. Studebaker was an extensive traveler and greatly interested in municipal government. When he found something that was a departure from old established lines of government and that was an improvement, he brought the ideas home and laid them before the board.

"In the years he had served upon this board, Mr. McInerny said, he had always found Mr. Studebaker ready to co-operate in any necessary improvement and one who had never turned a deaf ear to requests for advice upon matters where his opinions would be of value to the board.

"The Hon. John B. Stoll, of The Times, referred to the value citizens of Mr. Studebaker's type were to a city, and also called attention to what an institution of the Studebaker factory's magnitude meant to South Bend. He said it should be the object and endeavor of every citizen to help improve South Bend as Mr. Studebaker had done. The poorest and humblest could do their mite and yet accomplish wonders by the planting of a tree, a shrub or a flower and keeping their lawns and premises in a neat, tidy condition.

"Congressman Abraham L. Brick was the last speaker. He spoke of the efforts to make the city more attractive and more beautiful and how its fame has spread. He had seen the new bridge built at Boston and although it was some spans longer he could honestly say that it was no prettier than the Jefferson street bridge, while he was confident that the county got better value for its money at less cost, than did the Boston builders.

"Mr. Brick referred to the charges of grafting that were being made over the country, taking occasion to say that citizens of South Bend could rest assured that there were no such conditions existing here. He believed in giving full credit to whom credit was due, and it was certainly due the present city administration for the improvements that were going on and the clean streets with the limited funds at hand.

"At Mr. Brick's close the water was turned into the fountain and as the cascades began falling over the basins the electric lamps burst into blaze, revealing the full magnificence and beauty of the gift of this most public spirited citizen and generous donor."

The Times took occasion in the same issue to speak in deserved praise of the public spirit of the citizens of South Bend who had been liberal in bestowing of their means in making their city beautiful. Some of these items are of special historical interest, and are here inserted for that reason:

"The thousands of people," said the Times, "who turned out last Saturday to witness

the dedication of the Studebaker fountain in Howard Park bore eloquent testimony to the high appreciation which the citizenship of this municipality feels in the beautifying of the queen city of the St. Joseph valley.

"Calvert H. Defrees is deserving of honorable mention in connection with the installation of the Studebaker fountain in Howard Park. With commendable generosity and by the manifestation of an appreciable public spirit he constructed free of charge the approaches to the fountain—the modern walks leading to that ornamentation of the city's most inviting resting place. In doing this voluntarily and gracefully, the name of Mr. Defrees is given an honorable place in the list of South Bend's benefactors. Doubtless the well-known contractor will find much satisfaction in contemplating that he has rendered a good service to those who seek recreation and joy in Howard Park.

"There are still opportunities for well-to-do citizens of South Bend to do something for the city by way of adornment and usefulness. Good examples have been set; emulation should follow according to circumstances and inclination. The Studebaker fountain in Howard Park serves as a pointer. It was, on a smaller but none-the-less appreciated scale, preceded by the widow of the late Almond Bugbee in rearing a fountain in Leeper Park. Epworth Hospital and St. Paul's church constitute imposing monuments to the memory of that noble citizen, the late Hon. Clement Studebaker. The Y. W. C. A. will soon be provided with a splendid home through the generosity of Mr. and Mrs. George Wyman. The Studebaker Manufacturing Company will presently give us a superb building for the Y. M. C. A., supplementing the spacious Auditorium. The Olivers have supplied the city with a magnificent hotel, preceded by an elegant opera house. Valuable school sites have been generously donated by Samuel S. Perley, James Oliver, the Muessel estate and Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Kaley; and Mrs. Jennette Reynolds has en-

dowed the Humane Society with a \$5,000 fund."

The following also, from an editorial in the same issue of the Times, coming as it does from the philosophic and eloquent pen of the Hon. John B. Stoll, its able editor, is in the truest vein of appreciation of the deeds of those eminent citizens who have made South Bend renowned throughout the world and beloved by her own people:

South Bend on Saturday evening, wrote Mr. Stoll, accepted and dedicated the beautiful Studebaker fountain in Howard Park.

The formal ceremonies are, however, but introductory to the real acceptance and dedication of the fountain. These will continue day after day and year after year, as the citizens singly or in groups seek the wholesome recreations of the park, listen to the falling waters of the fountain, quaff its refreshing bounty or feast their eyes upon its beauty. Little children will accept it as they play about its base or laughingly dip their childish fingers in its waters. Youths and maidens will accept its influences unconsciously, perhaps, in their absorbed devotion to one another; tired manhood and womanhood will accept it in an hour snatched for rest from weary toil; old age will accept it as an aid to contemplation—and all will dedicate and rededicate it to purposes of culture and comfort. Nor will this acceptance and dedication be confined to the present time or to those now living.

When this generation shall have passed away, when its successor shall have come and gone and others still and others shall have followed; when the great industries which have built up our city and which effectuate its present prosperity may have passed into forgetfulness, this fountain, giving forth its waters like some of the old Roman structures that have blessed their localities for 2,000 years, will be annually accepted and consecrated by the people who centuries hence shall come after us. When the Studebaker wagon or automobile even shall perchance have become as obsolete as is now the chariot of the ancients, this fountain "gives bond in enduring brass" to guard the name of its donor and immortalize the trust committed to it.

This trust is to express, in material form, a bond of sympathy between employer and employee—between capital and labor. It

manifests a recognition by one whom fortune has favored of the obligations which prosperity has laid upon him. "Noblesse oblige"—nobility imposes obligation—was the motto of the old feudal lords of France.

In this land of equal manhood there are no lords and retainers, no barons and peasants—the highest rank may be reached by those in humblest conditions. But there are those whose organizing genius, financial skill or executive ability, combined with favorable circumstances, enables them to amass fortunes. They are the captains of industry, leaders of the hosts of enterprise. Such leaders are a blessing to any community. In their enterprise a city grows and its citizens prosper. The employment they furnish becomes a means of frugal comfort to many others, and of fortune to some. Of course, the concentrated profit means greater wealth to the few whose capital is risked and whose business ability is chiefly responsible for success or failure. If now, out of these accumulations the holder feels himself, under the obligations of good fortune, bound to use a part for the benefit of the citizens at large, his activities become a double blessing, and his individual success is still more the success of all.

South Bend is fortunate in her capitalists. They have not built up their fortunes in doubtful speculations or by crushing feebler competitors. They have conducted legitimate business enterprises in such a way as to benefit their co-workers as well as to enrich themselves. They have honestly earned the rewards that have come to them. They also are generous in sharing their surplus. Charities, churches, hospitals and Christian associations, in plans completed or projected, are continuously and munificently aided. The city, too, has been beautified by the generous expenditure of money not all with hope of return. This Studebaker fountain, though conspicuous, stands not alone as evidence of a generous, broad-minded public spirit in the successful men of the city. It may well be accepted as a type of what has been and is yet to be.

V. BUSINESS ENTERPRISES.

Sec. 1.—THE STUDEBAKER BROTHERS MANUFACTURING COMPANY.—The writer of this history is indebted to the courtesy of Col. Charles Arthur Carlisle for the following sketch of

the evolution of the modern vehicle; including also an account of the organization of the Studebaker company and the development of its mammoth manufacturing business. The article has already been published in a widely circulated vehicle journal, and has received general commendation as a modest but comprehensive treatment of a most interesting subject. The article is followed by a summary of the Studebaker history since the coming of Henry and Clement Studebaker to South Bend, in 1852; also written by Mr. Carlisle:

All vehicles prior to 1750 A. D. were absolutely springless and the leather thorough-brace, which preceded the steel springs, did not come into use until the end of the seventeenth century (about 1692).

Westward Ho! the advance of civilization carries us through all Europe, across the Atlantic, and we see the birth of a new nation—a people who will outrank and outshine all others in progress. In 1768 Boston proudly boasted of having twenty-two carriages of every description. In 1798 the number had increased to one hundred and forty-five.

In 1770 President Quincy, of Harvard college, wrote as follows of a stage journey between Boston and New York:

"The carriages were old and shackling, and much of the harness made of ropes. One pair of horses carried us eighteen miles. We generally reached our destination for the night, if no accident intervened, at ten o'clock and, after a frugal supper, went to bed, with a notice that we should be called at three next morning, which generally proved to be half-past two, and then, whether it snowed or rained, the traveler must rise and make ready by the help of a horn lantern and a farthing candle, and proceed on his way over bad roads, sometimes getting out to help the coachman lift the coach out of a quagmire or rut, and arriving at New York after a week's travel, wondering at the ease as well as the expedition with which our journey was effected."

In 1775 Washington went to take command of the American Army. It took him eighteen days to go from Philadelphia to Cambridge, Massachusetts.

With the improvement of good roads and the advancement of civilization we find the

industry of vehicle construction developing and spreading in America. The leading styles then in use throughout Europe naturally became the patterns followed by the American craft, but here we began to mingle the ideas of the English, the French and the German, and development shows we made rapid progress.

In 1736, among the passengers who arrived at Philadelphia on September 1st, on the ship *Harle*, with Ralph Harle as master, from Rotterdam, as per the original manuscripts now in the Pennsylvania state library, were:

Peter Studebecker, age 38 years.

Clement Studebecker, age 36 years.

Henry Studebecker, age 29 years.

Anna Margetha Studebecker, age 38 years.

Anna Catharine Studebecker, age 28 years.

These brave pioneers, like others who were flocking to the shores of the land of the free and the home of the brave, entered upon the plain life before them. In 1830, in the village of Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, yet unknown to fame, nestling at the foot of the mountain, quiet and lovely, forming a scene of rustic beauty and of ideal life, lived John Studebaker, worthy son of a worthy sire, a village blacksmith, whose motto hung upon the door:

“Owe no man anything,
But love one another.”

He built wagons, shod horses and did all kinds of work at the forge and anvil. He did honest work and his fame spread, and people came from afar, because they knew of it. He was poor, but he was young, and he was strong, and he was of good heart. While he hammered at the anvil his good wife was running the spinning wheel or making into garments the cloth she had spun and woven. Cheerful, happy, industrious and economical, she was a fit helpmate for such a man.

Into this home of frugal but domestic bliss Henry and Clement (the latter afterwards known as Clem Studebaker, of national fame, a man honored among men and beloved by all who knew of him,) were born.

In 1835, after long and anxious thought and prayer, John Studebaker, with his wife and two sturdy boys, decided to move farther west, hoping there to find greater prosperity. A wagon was built for the family use, the type and style of the Conestoga, or prairie schooner; another for the forge and anvil and tools; a third for the household articles, and with all of these the little family with brave

hearts put their trust in God and set their faces toward the West.

Ashland, Ohio, was selected as the place for the new home, and there a new shop was erected and the hard-working smith once more began the battle of life.

At Ashland three other sons were born to the happy smith and his wife—John Mohler, Peter E., and Jacob F. So far as the loving parents were able, each child was given a common school education, but better than this was the inspiration of love of honest toil and living inculcated through the lessons taught by the father and mother. They taught them industry, frugality and honest dealings, and as each of these boys learned his trade he was taught how to put an honest and conscientious endeavor into everything he undertook.

It is a far cry from a village blacksmith shop, with its solitary forge and one anvil, to a factory covering more than one hundred acres of land, employing more than three thousand workmen, using more than fifty million feet of lumber and thousands of tons of refined bar iron and steel; manufacturing and selling more than one hundred thousand vehicles in a single year.

In 1852, Henry and Clem Studebaker, the oldest of the five brothers, set their faces again to the westward, and saying “good-by” to loved ones at home, moved overland from Ashland, Ohio, to South Bend, Indiana, then a bustling little community located as an important trading post upon the banks of the beautiful St. Joseph.

With sixty-eight dollars in cash and stock-in-trade, these two boys opened a blacksmith shop in South Bend, Indiana. The first year they built two wagons, shod horses and laid the foundation for their greater success. One of these wagons was found in daily use thirty-three years afterwards.

Within a few years, Henry, desiring to retire from the firm of H. & C. Studebaker, his interest was bought by John M., the third son, who, like his brothers, was no stranger to the anvil and the forge. Little by little, but ever pressing forward, like the great oak from the acorn, these brothers developed and grew.

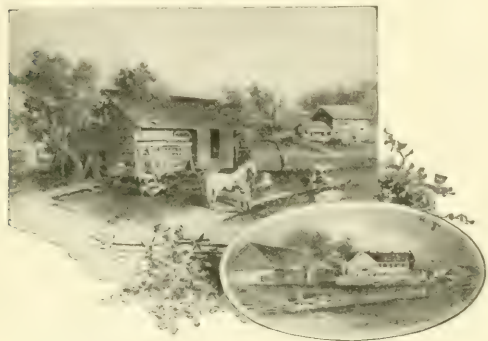
A few years later the fourth son, Peter E., bred to buy and sell, joined his brothers, Clem and John M., and together they continued the march for great victory.

St. Joseph, Missouri, was at that time the great western point, where congregated the

pioneers who were going overland to penetrate the gold fields and the fertile valleys of the western plains. There located, Peter E. Studebaker opened the first repository for the sale of Studebaker vehicles. Growing in the confidence and respect of the people, the demands for the Studebaker product, so ably represented by its western manager and so splendidly and honestly made by the brothers, Clem and J. M., at the factory, began to roll in upon them, and additional facilities were required. The youngest brother, Jacob F., was taken into the firm and the work of building, vending and spreading its influence became almost a herculean task, but the emergencies as they arose found willing and capable energies equal to the demands.

In 1852 two wagons were built; in 1904 more than one hundred thousand vehicles of every description were made and sold.

They pushed into the West with the advance of civilization, they spread to the South, the North and the East.



ORIGINAL STUDEBAKER PLANT.

The government in 1864 gave them their first great order, and every demand upon them was promptly and quickly met, ever keeping before them the motto of their sire: "Owe no man anything, but love one another."

Fire swept in upon them, and within a few hours their frame factory buildings were almost entirely destroyed. Before daylight the next morning one brother could be seen flying to the eastern markets for new equipment; another to Chicago for temporary relief; another superintending the removal of the debris and arranging for reconstruction. These men knew how to meet an emergency, and they set aside all grief and thought of loss, and inspired the confidence of others

with their brave, determined hearts and willing hands.

Out of the ashes of the fire rose quickly brick and stone structures, equipped with modern appliances and machinery, and almost before their great loss was known broadcast the announcement was rushed, over wire and by mail, from mouth to mouth their story ran, and the world saw and knew of their greater achievement—a modern factory of brick and mortar, splendidly equipped, improved facilities, almost doubling the former output in capacity, ready for business, not a loss of trade, not a dissatisfied customer. Is it any wonder that they grew in the confidence and respect of the people? Why, apparent hardships seemed almost a pleasure to such men. Often, though, have I heard Clem Studebaker tell the true story; that is, the story of those dark hours at home, when all the world seemed asleep; there the great struggle of these men was uncovered, there the true strength of the man's honest heart was seen. The love and devotion of a true wife, the blessings and comforts of a happy home, come to such a man as the inspiration of prayer, and God leads him out of darkness again into the sunshine.

Ever keeping apace with the demands upon them, the Studebaker Brothers increased their variety of styles, until it embraced every type of vehicle for pleasure or business use, from a two-wheeled cart or a farm wagon to a Presidential landau, and inclusive of electric and gasoline automobiles.

Lord Roberts, the military head of the armies of Great Britain, in South Africa, in his official report, said:

"Wagons were imported for trial from the United States, and these proved to be superior to any other make, either of Cape or English manufacture. The wheels were of hickory and the metal work of steel. They were built by Messrs. Studebaker Bros. Mfg. Co., who have a great vehicle factory at South Bend, Indiana.

"The superiority of these vehicles was doubtless due to the fact that such are largely used in America for the carriage of goods.

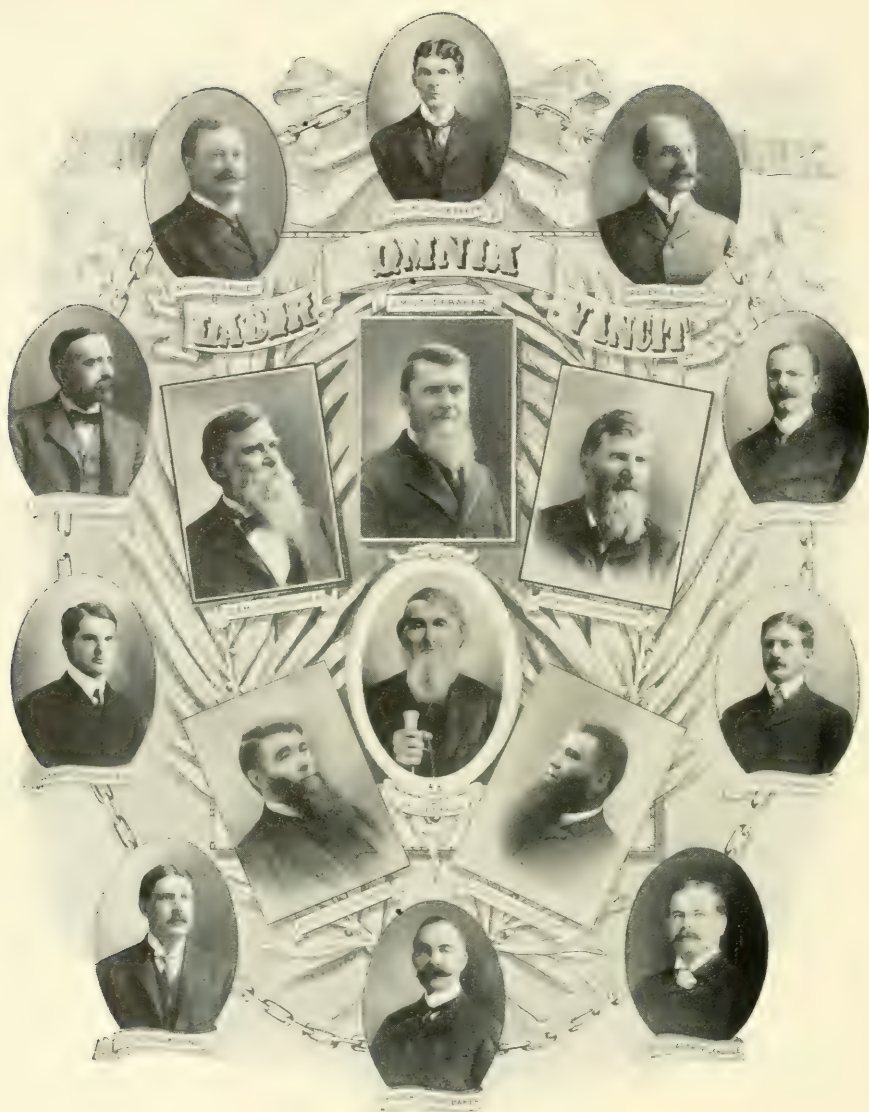
"It may be added that the wagons in question cost considerably less than the Bristol pattern wagon."

This splendid testimonial was looked upon as a triumph for the American manufacturer and the skill of the American mechanic. The Studebaker ambulance, service and field



STUDEBAKER MANUFACTURING PLANT.





**Founders and Officers of
Studebaker Brothers Manufacturing Company.
South Bend, Indiana.**

ADDRESSES OF BRANCHES

- Studebaker Bros. Co. of N. Y., Broadway and 7th Ave., Cor. 48th St., New York, N. Y.
- Studebaker Bros. Mfg. Co., 378 to 388 Wabash Ave., Chicago, Ill.
- Studebaker Bros. Co. of California, Cor. Market and 10th Sts., San Francisco, Cal.
- Studebaker Bros. Mfg. Co., Cor. Hickory and 13th Sts., Kansas City, Mo.
- Studebaker Bros. Co. Northwest, 330 to 336 E. Morrison St., Portland, Ore.
- Studebaker Bros. Co. of Utah, 157 to 159 State Street, Salt Lake City, Utah
- Studebaker Bros. Mfg. Co., Cor. 15th and Blake Sts., Denver, Col.
- Studebaker Bros. Mfg. Co., 317-319 Elm Street, Dallas, Texas.

wagons, have been the standard for government use and have been found in our great conflicts.

Today magnificent Studebaker repositories are seen in New York, Chicago, Kansas City, San Francisco, Portland, Oregon, Denver, Salt Lake City, Dallas, with more than ten thousand selling agencies penetrating almost every corner of the civilized world.

The New York Sun, under date of September 4th, 1904, says: "How rarely now one sees a foreign name-plate on a carriage in New York. How often a few years ago. There is no question but that Studebaker did most to make American carriages better than those of Europe—better in character and style of design, better in workmanship. In fact, Studebaker has built the spirit of sturdy and progressive Americanism into the vehicle itself."

Henry and Clement Studebaker, having received a common school education and having learned their father's trade, wagon-making, moved from Ashland, Ohio, in 1852, and settled in South Bend, Indiana. Here they opened a blacksmith shop on Michigan street, where they shod horses, built two wagons the first year, and laid the foundation for their greater successes. Their cash capital and stock in trade was \$68. In 1858 Henry retired from the firm of H. & C. Studebaker, his interest being purchased by John Mohler, the third son, for \$5,200. A few years later Peter E. joined his brothers and located the first repository for the sale of their output at St. Joseph, Mo. In 1868 they were incorporated as a stock company, capital \$75,000. As the business grew, Jacob F., the youngest brother, was taken into the company.

In 1872 their frame factory north of the Lake Shore & Michigan Southern Railway was completely destroyed by fire, entailing a loss of \$80,000. New works were immediately erected south of the railroad, on the present site. In 1874 the works were again burned to the ground, the loss amounting to \$350,000, including 2,400 wagons; but out of the ashes grew a modern factory, splendidly equipped with improved facilities, almost doubling the former output in capacity and making all

types of vehicles. These works now constitute the largest wagon and carriage manufactory in the world, covering more than 100 acres; employing more than 3,000 workmen; using more than 50,000,000 feet of lumber, and thousands of tons of refined bar iron and steel; manufacturing and selling more than 100,000 vehicles of all descriptions in a single year.

The present officers of the company are as follows: John Mohler Studebaker, president; Geo. M. Studebaker, vice-president; Clement Studebaker, Jr., treasurer; John M. Studebaker, Jr., secretary.

In 1891 the Studebakers commenced the manufacture of harness in all its branches, and in 1906 the business was incorporated under the name of Studebaker Harness Company. Their annual product approximates 25,000 sets of complete single and double work, team and driving harness, besides a large output of collars, strap work and patent leather saddlery.

Keeping pace with the march of progress and the advent of self-propelled vehicles, the Studebakers in 1902 embarked in the manufacture of automobiles. The business was incorporated as the Studebaker Automobile Company; large buildings were erected and equipped; and the Studebaker automobile has already gained an enviable reputation, not alone in this country but abroad. The output consists of gasoline passenger cars, electric passenger cars, and electric wagons and trucks for commercial purposes.

The several Studebaker companies have been evolved from a little blacksmith shop to their present proportions in the city of South Bend, and their agencies and ware-rooms are spread throughout the civilized world. Their policy is permanent and fixed, and the spirit of American progressiveness and integrity characteristic of the founders of the parent company, has been handed down from father to son, and in like manner will be transmitted to the next generation, each being particularly trained in knowing

how to do his work best as a part of an organization complete in all its details.

Sec. 2.—THE OLIVER PLOW WORKS.—James Oliver was born in Liddisdale, Scotland, August 28, 1823, and came to America with his parents when he was twelve years of age. After a stay of one year in Seneca county, New York, the family removed to Mishawaka, Indiana, where Mr. Oliver was married and where he continued to live until the year 1855, when he came to South Bend. During the last ten years of his residence in Mish-

awaka, he was in the employment of the St. Joseph Iron Works, where he became an expert in the foundry business and other matters relating to the manufacture of machinery and farm implements.

full share of mishaps; the water power being at one time washed away, while afterwards, on December 24, 1859, the works were totally destroyed by fire. But these hardships only served to infuse new energy into the sturdy manufacturer, who rebuilt his foundry and constantly increased his business. It was in this foundry that Mr. Oliver began and perfected his experiments in the manufacture of chilled plows, and thus laid the foundations of his great fame and fortune.

On July 22, 1868, Mr. Oliver, in connection



RESIDENCE OF JAMES OLIVER. THE FAMOUS PLOW MANUFACTURER. SOUTH BEND.

awaka, he was in the employment of the St. Joseph Iron Works, where he became an expert in the foundry business and other matters relating to the manufacture of machinery and farm implements.

In 1855, Mr. Oliver formed a partnership with a Mr. Lamb and Mr. Fox in the foundry business. The foundry was named the South Bend Iron Works, probably by reason of Mr. Oliver's long association with the St. Joseph Iron Works in Mishawaka. The foundry in South Bend was located on Mill street, on the west race. The establishment had its

with some of his enterprising friends, incorporated the South Bend Iron Works—afterwards developed into the famous Oliver Chilled Plow Works. The incorporators were: James Oliver, Thelus M. Bissell, George Milburn, John Brownfield and Clement Studebaker. In time the stock of the corporation passed entirely into Mr. Oliver's hands, and those of his wife and children, James Oliver and his son, Joseph D. Oliver, becoming the sole active owners and managers of the mammoth establishment.

When the little foundry on Mill street be-



James Oliver

came too small for the immense business that began to crowd into it, Mr. Oliver purchased a large tract in the southwest part of the city of South Bend, or rather outside what were then the city limits. There has grown up the largest plow factory in the world, the Oliver Chilled Plow Works, out of which daily carloads of the famous chilled plow go to every quarter of the globe. The value of the great plant hardly admits of estimate, running as it does into millions of dollars.

Within the past two or three years the Oliver Company has become the owner of the greater part of the stock of the South Bend

On October 12, 1901, the company was reorganized under the more fitting title of the Oliver Chilled Plow Works, with a capital of five hundred thousand dollars. This sum, vast as it is, is but a small part of the great property which it represents, as the most extensive plow works in the world.

Sec. 3.—THE BIRDSSELL MANUFACTURING COMPANY.—The Birdsell Clover Huller was invented and perfected by John Comly Birdsell, while he was engaged in farming in Monroe county, New York. After several years of thinking and experiment the famous machine was patented in 1855. Ten years more



RESIDENCE OF J. D. OLIVER, SOUTH BEND.

Manufacturing Company. The old mills and factories have been removed, and the new owners of the water power have constructed an electric light plant, using the water power of the river to generate the electric fluid, as heretofore noted in this history.^a The electricity so generated is used not only to give light, heat and power to the immense factory, but also to light and heat the Oliver Opera House, the Oliver Hotel, and the residences of Mr. Oliver and those of his son, Joseph D. Oliver, and his daughter, Mrs. Josephine Oliver Ford, wife of Ex-Congressman George Ford.

were given to its improvement. In 1864 Mr. Birdsell's factory, which had been erected on his farm in New York, was destroyed by fire. He then determined to remove to the west, and settled at South Bend, Indiana, where, notwithstanding vexatious and expensive litigation growing out of infringements on his patents, the business grew rapidly. On March 8, 1870, the Birdsell Manufacturing Company was incorporated by Mr. Birdsell and his sons, Varnum O., Joseph B., and Byron A.—John Comly Birdsell being made president, and Joseph Benjamin Birdsell, treasurer. Brief biographies of father and son are found elsewhere in this work. In the same

^a Chap. 7, Subd. 1, Sec. 4.

year, a five-story brick factory building was erected, which is still the main building of the Birdsell plant. At the time this was the largest factory building in South Bend.

In 1887, the company began the manufacture of farm wagons, which enterprise has nearly equalled in success that of the clover hulling manufactory. The company has long enjoyed the distinction of having the largest clover huller factory in the world. The Birdsell clover hullers are used in every civilized nation of the world. Agencies for its sale are now established in every state in the Union where clover grows, and likewise in Great Britain, France, Italy, Germany, Russia and other countries in the old world. No article manufactured in South Bend has brought more honor and fame to the city than the Birdsell Clover Huller.

Sec. 4.—THE SINGER SEWING MACHINE COMPANY.—The Singer Sewing Machine Company was originally incorporated under the laws of the state of New Jersey with a capital of ten millions of dollars; and this has since been increased to thirty millions. The three principal plants of the company are near Glasgow, Scotland, at Elizabeth, New Jersey, and at South Bend, Indiana. The plant at Glasgow is the largest sewing machine factory in the world, and has a capacity of twenty thousand completed machines a week. Other factories are at Hamburg and Berlin, Germany. The cabinets and cases manufactured at South Bend are finished here complete for the American trade and shipped to Elizabeth, where they are perfected and then supplied to the trade. Cases and cabinets are also shipped from South Bend direct to the great factory at Glasgow, and likewise to Hamburg and Berlin, for the European trade.

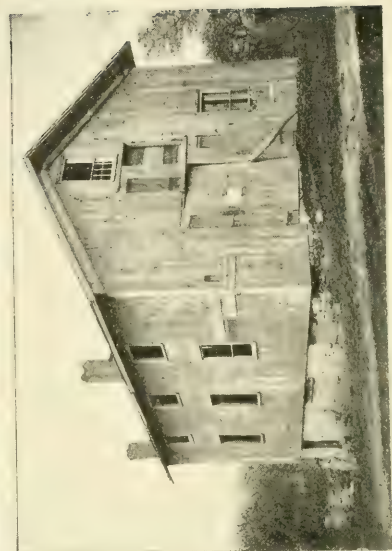
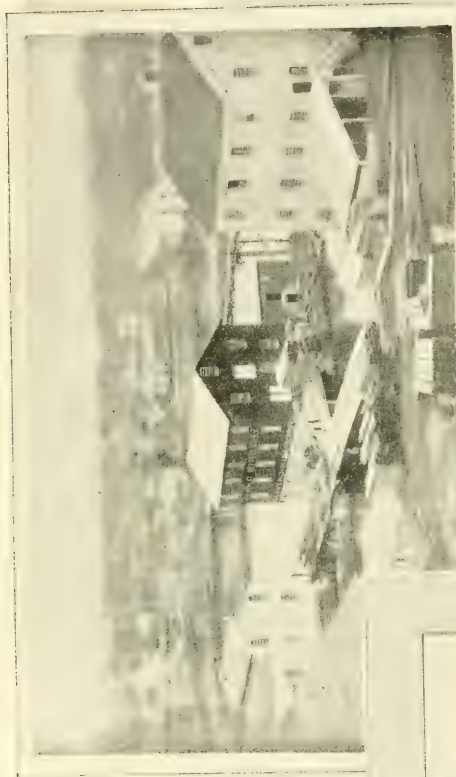
The South Bend Singer plant was established in 1868. At that time the capacity of these works was one thousand cabinet sets a week. Today the capacity of the South Bend works approaches ten thousand sets per day, while over two thousand persons are employed in the various departments.

The South Bend plant was originally located on East Madison and North Emrick streets, adjoining the tracks of the Michigan Central railroad; and the buildings were increased in size from year to year until all the available territory in the locality was occupied. In 1899 and 1900 preparations were made for the moving of the plant to another part of the city, in order to accommodate the constantly increasing business. A tract of about sixty acres, at Division and Olive streets, adjoining the Lake Shore railroad tracks was accordingly purchased; and the erection of massive structures of brick was at once begun, which with the vast lumber sheds had by the close of the year 1901, nearly covered the vast area. Even persons who had fair knowledge of the vastness of the business of the Singer Company could hardly believe that so much business space could be occupied. But the new works are filled with men and machinery and the enormous daily product already mentioned is the result.

The genius of the Singer Company in South Bend was Leighton Pine, already spoken of in connection with the building of our city water works.^a Mr. Pine was not only the untiring genius of the Singer Sewing Machine Company in South Bend; he was, in addition, one of the most valued citizens of the city, always foremost in what pertained to the welfare of the community of which he was so highly honored a member.

Sec. 5.—THE O'BRIEN VARNISH WORKS.—The O'Brien Varnish Works has a history similar to many others in South Bend. It is the creation of a man of energy and force of character, combined with good business capacity. The company was organized May 31, 1878, with a capital of twenty thousand dollars, and is now owned and managed entirely by Mr. Patrick O'Brien and his very capable sons. The officers are: Patrick O'Brien, president; George L. O'Brien, vice-president; William D. O'Brien, secretary; and Frederick O'Brien, treasurer. The plant has increased to very large proportions, pro-

^a. Ante, this chapter, Subd. 4, Sec. 3.



FIRST HULLER FACTORY, QUAKER-HILL, N.Y. 1858



CORNING BROS., QUAKER-HILL, MONROE CO. N.Y.
Where first Clever-huller was built 1858.

FACTORY BEND
South Ind.
1863



THE BRIDGE FACTORIES OF TODAY.

ducing not only varnish, as originally contemplated, but also all oils and materials going to the manufacture of paints. The company has won a very high place among the manufacturers of the city.

Sec. 6.—THE STALEY MANUFACTURING COMPANY.—Alexander C. Staley was one of the substantial men of South Bend, and became a successful manufacturer of woolen underwear. The A. C. Staley goods have for many years been well known to the trade of the country. On July 24, 1888, Mr. Staley, with his son, Marion B. Staley, and William H. Longley organized the A. C. Staley Manufacturing Company, which has continued to maintain the reputation of the founder. After the death of Mr. A. C. Staley, Marion B. Staley and other stockholders continued the business which has developed into very large proportions. The present stockholders and managers are the Stephenson brothers, who also constitute the Stephenson Manufacturing Company. In 1907 the name of the A. C. Staley mills, and that of the company, was changed to Stephenson Underwear Mills.

Sec. 7.—THE SOUTH BEND TOY WORKS.—The South Bend Toy Manufacturing Company was organized December 22, 1882, with a capital of fifteen thousand dollars, for the purpose of making croquet sets and other articles of wood, chiefly intended for amusement. The incorporators were John W. Teel, Frederick H. Badet and William T. Carskaddon. It is said to be at present the largest establishment of the kind in the world. Before incorporation the works were known as the Teel & Badet Company, and are sometimes so called even now.

Sec. 8.—THE KNOBLOCK-HEIDMAN COMPANY.—This company has been very successful in the manufacture of electrical apparatus. The present owners and managers are Otto M. Knoblock, William H. Miller, and George H. Heidman. The company was originally organized May 17, 1900, with a capital of one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars, as the Miller-Knoblock Electric

Priming Manufacturing Company, the incorporators being John C. Knoblock, Otto M. Knoblock, William H. Miller, Horace G. Miller, Albert W. Morrell and C. Warren Sheets.

Sec. 9.—THE SOUTH BEND CHILLED PLOW COMPANY.—The Knoblock Brothers' Manufacturing Company was organized April 18, 1871, for the manufacture of farm implements, the incorporators being John C. Knoblock, William Knoblock, Theodore E. Knoblock and John H. Dolman. Out of this company grew the St. Joseph Reaper and Machine Company. In 1876, the Company began the making of chilled plows, and on July 1, 1878, was reorganized as the South Bend Chilled Plow Company, with Adam S. Baker, as president; John C. Knoblock as treasurer; and George W. Baker as secretary. Ever since the closing of the Northern Indiana College, at the west end of Washington street, the company has occupied the buildings and grounds of that institution. Other buildings, however, have been erected and the lands of the company much extended. The present officers are: W. L. Cassaday, president; A. D. Baker, secretary and treasurer. The company has become one of the great manufacturing concerns of the city, and its plows are everywhere acknowledged to be among the best made at any place.

Sec. 10.—THE FOLDING PAPER BOX COMPANY.—This company was incorporated December 2, 1893, for the manufacture of paper boxes of every kind. The incorporators were William H. Barger, Marvin Campbell and Myron Campbell. The capital stock was twenty-five thousand dollars. The present owners and managers of the plant are: Marvin Campbell, president; John B. Campbell, secretary; Myron Campbell, treasurer; and John Campbell, manager. The company has prospered from the beginning, and the business operations have become very large.

Sec. 11.—THE SOUTH BEND WOOLEN COMPANY.—This fine plant has been in operation for a great number of years, and has always been noted for the excellent quality of the

cloth manufactured. The efficient managers in the beginning were Joseph Worden, George W. Lewis, Corwin B. Van Pelt and Henry G. Niles. It was, as these names will indicate, an institution originating in Mishawaka. The present managers are: Henry G. Niles, president; Corwin B. Van Pelt, vice-president; S. A. Niles, secretary; Henry G. Niles, Jr., treasurer and manager; and William Fisher, superintendent.

Sec. 12.—THE INDIANA FOUNDRY COMPANY.—This is one of our latest acquisitions. The company was organized April 17, 1903, with a capital of ten thousand dollars. Like most of our successful manufactories, it had a modest beginning; but it has developed rapidly. The incorporators were: William N. Bergan, Alonzo A. Forsyth, Joseph Bergan, Frederick L. Dennis, Edward Bergan, Hiram W. VanNest and Chauncey N. Fassett. The present officers are: Frederick L. Dennis, president; William N. Bergan, vice-president; F. H. Fassett, secretary; Chauncey N. Fassett, treasurer and general manager; M. Konzen, cashier and purchasing agent.

Sec. 13.—THE LA SALLE PAPER COMPANY.—This company is now under the sole management of Frank P. Nicely. The building in which the business of manufacturing paper is carried on, situated on East Madison street, on the east race, is deserving of particular notice from the circumstance that here, when Beach & Keedy were the proprietors, the first paper made in South Bend was manufactured. It is at present the only factory in South Bend for the manufacture of paper.

Sec. 14.—THE WINKLER BROTHERS' MANUFACTURING COMPANY.—The friendly relations of the members of manufacturing companies in South Bend is manifested by the number of companies organized by families—the Studebakers, the Olivers, the Birdsells, the O'Briens, the Knoblocks, the Stephensons, the Campbells, the Hunts, the Colmers, and many others; and more recently, the Winklers. The Winkler Brothers are also distinguished for

their success before the organization of any corporation. Like the Studebakers, they began at the anvil and the bench. On October 29, 1902, when their business in the manufacture of wagons and other vehicles had increased to mammoth proportions, they found the necessity of becoming incorporated. The capital was fixed at seventy-five thousand dollars; and they purchased a large vacant tract on the Lake Shore railroad, in the southwest part of the city, where they erected a most complete and modern factory building, which was completed and occupied during the past two years. The present officers are: Frederick C. Winkler, president; Charles H. Winkler, vice-president; John G. Grim, secretary; Remy Vuylsteke, superintendent.

Sec. 15.—OTHER MANUFACTURING COMPANIES.—South Bend is essentially so much a manufacturing city that it would be quite impossible in this work to give an extended notice of each, or even of a majority, of the companies now organized and engaged in almost every variety of manufacturing. The following is but a partial list of companies not yet mentioned, most of which would be entitled to far more notice than that which can here be given:

The Matthews Steam Boiler Works, long conducted by that good, industrious citizen, Jonathan Matthews.

The Indiana Lumber and Manufacturing Company, one of the present live companies of the city, at the head of which is the genial and energetic Christopher Fassnacht.

The Colfax Manufacturing Company, engaged in the building of light wagons, and which preserves in our industrial history the name of our most distinguished citizen of other days, Vice-President Schuyler Colfax, and that of his son, also Schuyler Colfax, former mayor of South Bend.

The Stephenson Manufacturing Company, makers of wood turnings. This is the same corporation mentioned in connection with the A. C. Staley Manufacturing Company.

The South Bend Iron Bed Company.

The Colmer Brothers, makers of tools and bicycle specialties.

The Hunt Brothers' Wagon and Carriage Works.

The Davies Shirt Company; and the Wilson Brothers' Shirt Manufacturing Company. Both of these are very prosperous, and the Wilson Company has a number of very large buildings.

The South Bend Watch Company, having a factory situated near the eastern city limits, between South Bend and Mishawaka. The quality of the watches made in this factory is quite equal to that of those made at Elgin or Waltham.

Still other manufacturing industries are: The Boiler Compound Manufacturing Company; The Hull Brothers' Boiler Company; Thaddeus Talcott's Boiler Works; Maurer, Labadie & Company, boiler makers; The Northern Brass & Aluminum Foundry; The Frank Fisher Brick Kilns; The Frank Perkins Brick Kilns; The South Bend Brick Company; The Jacobson-Peterson Broom Works; The Botts & Klaasen Concrete Works; The Calvert H. Defrees Concrete Works; The R. S. Hollowell Concrete Works; The Henry C. Eckler Building Material Manufacturers; The Miller & Donahue Lumber Manufacturing Company; The Smith & Jackson Lumber and Manufacturing Company; The Ziegler-Stickler Lumber and Manufacturing Company; The Ideal Concrete Machine Company; The Edmondson Concrete Machine Company; The R. Z. Snell Cement Block Machine Manufacturers; The South Bend Machine Manufacturing Company; The Williams-Forrest Machine Company; The South Bend Chandelier Company; The McErlain & Elbel Cigar Box Manufacturers; Bernard J. Engeldrum, Charles L. Goetz, Omacht & Stedman, and eighteen to twenty other cigar manufacturers; The South Bend Dowel Works; The Sibley Drill Manufacturers; The George Cutter Electric Specialty Company; The Russell & Ober Excelsior Man-

ufacturers; The Wells-Kreighbaum Extension Table Manufacturers; The N. P. Bowsher Feed Mill Manufacturing Company; The Indiana Anchor Fence Company; The Worden Bucktail Fishing Tackle Company; The Anderson Brass Foundry; The Meyer Foundry and Manufacturing Company; The Sibley Machine Tool Company; The South Bend Foundry Company; The John Gannen Grill Company; The William Neidhart Grill Manufacturer; The John A. Neuperth Grill Manufacturer; The Owen Harness Snaps Manufactory; The John D. Haberle Machine Works; The Schock Machine Company; The Charles M. Starr Machine Works; The Perfection Mattress Company; The Russell & Ober Mattress Makers; The Turner Oil Filter Company; The South Bend Pulp and Plaster Company; The Beall Non-Pounding Frog and Crossing Company; The John Beyrer Roofing Company; The Lauber & Weiss Galvanized Works; The Cassady Rotary Engine Company; David Armstrong Rubber Stamp Factory; The H. A. Pershing Office Supply Works; The Bailey & Ingram Rubber Stamp Works; The August Soderberg Snuff Factory; The South Bend Spark Arrester Company; The Malleable Steel Range Manufacturing Company; The C. G. Folsom & Co. Stove Company; The South Bend Tent & Awning Company; The Indiana Tent & Awning Company; The James W. Camper Tent & Awning Works; The South Bend Spring Wagon & Carriage Company; The John Dyer Weather Strip Works; the Chauncey Pippinger Weather Strip Works; The South Bend Split Pulley Works.

Sec. 16. -BANKS.—Closely connected with the manufactures and general business of South Bend are its banks. These institutions are almost coeval with the municipality itself. The State Bank of Indiana was chartered on January 28, 1834, with headquarters at Indianapolis, and with authority to establish ten district branches throughout the state.^a Dr. John A. Henrieks and Hon. Thomas D. Baird, assisted by Hon. George

^a R. S., 1838, pp. 92-115.

Crawford, of Elkhart county, secured the location of one of the branch banks at South Bend. On February 22, 1838, a public meeting was held at the court house to express the great satisfaction of the people with this action; and on February 24, 1838, a dinner was given at the Exchange hotel in honor of the same event. Subscription books were opened July 2, 1838, Alexis Coquillard, Lathrop M. Taylor and John Grant acting as commissioners. The books were closed August 4, 1838, with more than a thousand shares subscribed over the amount required. The bank was opened for business November 24, 1838. It was first located in a two-story brick build-

Among the presidents of our first bank, the South Bend Branch of the State Bank of Indiana, were Tyra W. Bray, John Egbert, Lathrop M. Taylor, Anthony Defrees, Jonathan L. Jernegan, Samuel C. Sample and Ricketson Burroughs. Marshall P. Chapin, as teller, settled up the affairs of the bank at the expiration of the charter. The officers of the second bank, the Bank of the State of Indiana, during its existence, from 1858 to 1864, were: President, John Brownfield; cashier, Horatio Chapin; and teller, John T. Lindsey.

The First National Bank of South Bend was organized September 5, 1863, by Charles



OLD FIRST NATIONAL BANK.

ing at the northeast corner of Michigan street and what is now Colfax avenue. In 1841, the long familiar building opposite, with its imposing porticos, on the southwest corner of the same streets, was occupied by the bank; and there it remained until the expiration of the charter, in 1858.

On March 3, 1855, a charter had been obtained for a bank to be known as the Bank of the State of Indiana, with a capital of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars, to begin business on the expiration of the charter of the old bank. This bank continued until the establishment of national banks, in 1864.

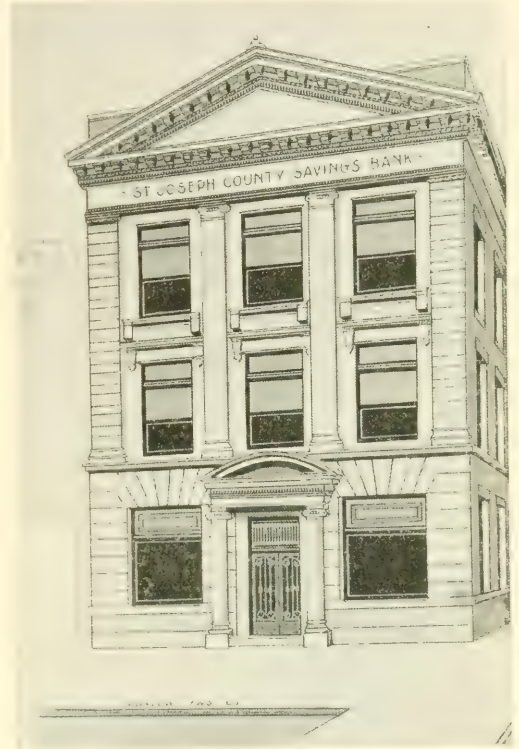
N. Culver, Thomas S. Stanfield, John A. Henricks, Ethan S. Reynolds, John Reynolds and Ransom Hubbard. The capital stock was one hundred thousand dollars. The bank opened for business in the old St. Joseph block, at the corner of Washington and Main streets, November 30, 1863. Thomas S. Stanfield was the first president and John T. Lindsey first cashier. The directors were Thomas S. Stanfield, John Reynolds, Ethan S. Reynolds, John A. Henricks and Ransom Hubbard. William Miller, afterwards Mayor Miller, became president in 1867, and in the same year Charles W. Guthrie became cashier. In 1869 John A. Henricks was elected president. On

January 13, 1871, Caleb A. Kimball was elected cashier, a position which he has ever since held. John R. Foster was afterwards president, and was succeeded by Lucius Hubbard, who is still president. The vice-presidents have been Albert G. Cushing, Ethan S. Reynolds, Edward B. Reynolds and Marion B. Staley, the present incumbent. On the burning of the old St. Joseph block, in 1865, the bank was removed to the building of the old State Bank of Indiana, where it remained for thirty-five years. On June 10, 1900, the bank was again located on the site of its original quarters, in the Oliver hotel block, at the northwest corner of Washington and Main streets.

The South Bend National Bank was organized in 1870 by John Brownfield, William Miller, Lucius Hubbard, Schuyler Colfax, William Mack, Powers Green, Darwin H. Baker, Benjamin F. Price and Caleb A. Kimball. John Brownfield was the first president. He was succeeded, in 1888, by William Miller, who remained president until his death, February 21, 1901. Marvin Campbell has been president since the death of Mr. Miller. The bank was for many years located in the Price Theatre building on Michigan street, adjoining the old State Bank building. It is now on the same street, near the corner of Washington street.

The origin of the St. Joseph County Savings Bank is principally due to Theodore J. Seixas, one of the brightest financiers in the history of the county. The bank was incorporated November 25, 1869. The incorporators were Louis Humphreys, John C. Knoblock, Thelus M. Bissell, Joseph Worden, Adam S. Baker, T. Wilkes Defrees, David Greenawalt, Almond Bugbee, William F. Bulla and John C. Birdsell. The bank was opened for business in January, 1870. The first bank building was located on the east side of Main street, a little north of Washington. The location was afterwards changed to a point nearly opposite, on the west side of the same street. Afterwards, for a time, it was at

the southwest corner of Michigan and Jefferson streets. In 1883, the present site was purchased, at the northeast corner of Main and Center streets, where a commodious bank building was erected. In 1900 this building was greatly enlarged and improved. The bank has now as commodious and pleasant quarters as could be desired. The business has continued to increase in an extraordinary degree, from the beginning. In



ST. JOSEPH COUNTY SAVINGS BANK,
SOUTH BEND.

1870 the deposits were seven thousand, two hundred and sixty-seven dollars and ninety-eight cents. They are now over three and a quarter millions. The depositors number nearly ten thousand, and over thirteen hundred thousand dollars have been paid to them in interest. Mr. Seixas served as secretary and cashier until 1878, when he was succeeded by the present incumbent, Lucius G. Tong. The first president was Louis

Humphreys. On the death of Dr. Humphreys, George W. Matthews became president. On the death of Mr. Matthews, in 1895, Jacob Woolverton became president. In the year 1900, the St. Joseph Loan and Trust Company was organized in connection with the bank, and has since done a most extensive business. It may be said that the extraordinary success of the St. Joseph County Savings Bank has been due chiefly to the business ability, kindness and strict integrity of Theodore J. Seixas, Lucius G. Tong and the other managers of its concern. The present officers of the bank are: President, Jacob Woolverton; vice-president, Benjamin F. Dunn; second vice-president, George U. Bingham; secretary and treasurer, Lucius G. Tong. The officers of the trust company are: President, John M. Studebaker, Sr.; vice-president, Jacob Woolverton; second vice-president, George U. Bingham; secretary and treasurer, Lucius G. Tong.

The People's Savings Bank was organized in 1875 by Joseph B. Arnold, Jr., and others. Mr. Arnold was the first president. The trustees were: Hiram Jackson, Newton Jackson, Aaron Webster, Henry B. Hine, George W. Swygart, Andrew J. Jaquith, Joseph B. Arnold, Sr., and Joseph B. Arnold, Jr. The business was successfully carried on for ten years, when the bank voluntarily closed, paid its depositors in full and retired.

The foregoing may be considered as the historical banking concerns of the city. The remaining banks and trust companies, all of which are doing an excellent business, are: The Citizens' National Bank, the Merchants' National Bank, the American Trust Company and the Citizens' Loan, Trust and Savings Company.

VI. RELIGIOUS, EDUCATIONAL AND SOCIAL.

Sec. 1.—THE METHODIST CHURCH.—From May 6th to May 13th, 1906, the First Methodist Episcopal Church of South Bend held its diamond jubilee, in commemoration of the first organization of the local society.

Through the courtesy of the Rev. Madison H. Appleby, present pastor of the church, the following historical sketch, published in connection with the jubilee, is here given:

"Organized Methodism north of the Wabash river had its beginnings in 1831, when from the Illinois conference N. B. Griffith was appointed to the Ft. Wayne mission, Madison district, Allen Wiley, presiding elder.^a

"On the 24th of January, 1831, Rev. N.



FIRST M. E. CHURCH, SOUTH BEND.

B. Griffith and Benjamin Ross and family arrived at South Bend. Samuel Martin and wife and Benjamin Potter and wife, who were members of the Methodist Episcopal Church, had preceded them. N. B. Griffith came as a missionary, but as there was a deep snow on the ground and the weather was very cold, and as the few families in the village were

^a. But see Chap. 8, Subd. 5, Sec. 13, of this history. While the first regular organization may have been under the Rev. N. B. Griffith, as stated, yet it appears that the Rev. James Armstrong organized the first Methodist church in the county, at Hamilton, on Terre Coupee Prairie, in 1830.

sheltered in cabins and half-faced shanties, no room could be had large enough to accommodate the people for preaching. On the evening of the 31st of January, these Methodist families met at the house of Benjamin Ross and held a prayer-meeting, which was the first Methodist worship, if not the first Protestant worship, held in South Bend.

"Some time in March following, the Rev. Leonard B. Gurley, on a missionary tour, arrived and preached in the house of Benjamin Ross; but as the field had been provided for by the appointment of Mr. Griffith, he did not remain.

"Early in April Mr. Griffith returned, and on the evening of the 6th collected the people in the bar-room of a small tavern kept by Benjamin Coquillard, a Roman Catholic, and preached; after which he organized the first class, consisting of Samuel Martin and wife, Benjamin Potter and wife, Benjamin Ross and wife, Rebecca Stull and Simeon Mason. Martin and Ross were appointed leaders. In June, 1831, William Stanfield and wife came to South Bend and were added to the class by certificate, and Mr. Stanfield was soon afterward appointed leader. About the same time Samuel Newman and wife were also added by letter. In August Jacob Hardman, M. D., and in the fall Samuel Good and wife joined by certificate. A Sabbath school was organized and officered as follows: Superintendent, William Stanfield; secretary and treasurer, Horatio Chapin; teachers, H. Chapin, E. R. Tutt, Elliott Smith and Dr. Hardman. This was a union school. In 1835 the first Methodist Sunday school was organized. It met for a time in John Brownfield's kitchen. The first church building was erected on North Main street in 1835-36. A brick church building was built, in 1851, on the site of the present building, at the corner of Main and Jefferson streets. It was dedicated on the 17th of August of that year. The present building was completed in 1871. A parsonage on the site now occupied was built in 1866, during the pas-

torate of Dr. C. A. Brooke. This building was torn down and replaced by the present modern and commodious structure, in 1905. The following men have served the church as pastors since its organization, in 1831:

"N. B. Griffith, R. S. Robinson, G. M. Beswick, B. Phelps, S. R. Ball, James S. Harrison, David Stiver, William M. Farley, G. M. Boyd, Zachariah James, F. Crane, John H. Bruce, John B. De Motte, Milton Mahin, John P. Jones, T. C. Hackney, Henry C. Benson, E. S. Preston, James Johnson, James C. Reed, A. A. Gee, C. S. Burgner, William Wilson, Joseph C. Reed, G. Morgan, S. T. Cooper, Clark Skinner, C. A. Brooke, John Thrush, J. H. Swope, G. M. Boyd, H. A. Gobin (two terms), J. C. Stephens, S. B. Town (two terms), W. H. Hickman, H. M. Middleton, J. H. Hollingsworth, E. P. Bennett and M. H. Appleby."

The second society established in South Bend by the Methodist church was the Michigan Street Church, or Grace Church, as it is more properly called. This church was organized in 1869, with one hundred and thirty-seven members. The first pastor was the Rev. William R. Mikels. This church has continued prosperous to this day.

The German Methodist Episcopal Church was organized in 1872 by the Rev. Philip Walker, of Michigan City. The first pastor was the Rev. William Keller. The society has a fine brick church at the northwest corner of Lafayette and Wayne streets. The present pastor is the Rev. Henry Karnopp.

The other Methodist churches of the city are: The Free Methodist Church, the Rev. B. R. Parks, pastor; the Lowell Heights Methodist Church; and the Mount Olive African Methodist Episcopal Church, the Rev. Cyrus E. Roberts, pastor. There is also the River Park Methodist Episcopal Church.

The Milburn Chapel, in memory of her father, George Milburn, was built on West Thomas street, in 1883 by Mrs. Clement Studebaker at a cost of ten thousand dollars. Before his lamented death Mr. Studebaker

began the erection at the corner of Laporte and Colfax avenues of what has since become the finest church edifice in northern Indiana, if not in the state. It has been dedicated under the name of St. Paul's Memorial Church; and is a fitting monument to the memory of the great and good man who projected it, as well as to that of Mr. Milburn, for whose commemoration the original chapel was built. Clement Studebaker, known and beloved by the people of South Bend, could have no fitter monument than this magnificent church of Saint Paul's. The present eloquent and

wives and their children, forming and organizing the pioneer church. At the first meeting held in the house of Horatio Chapin, Rev. M. M. Post, of Logansport, officiated as moderator, and John McConnell, of Crawfordsville, was elected the first elder. Later on, August 17, 1834, another meeting was held and more families united with the church, and the Lord's supper was celebrated. On the next day following, Horatio Chapin was elected an elder, and was later ordained by Rev. A. B. Brown of the then territory of Michigan. For over a year they were with-



FIRST PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, SOUTH BEND.

learned pastor is the Rev. William Forney Hovis.

SEC. 2.—THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.—The Presbyterian church in South Bend had its inception in 1831, when Horatio Chapin and William Stanfield organized the first union Sunday school in a log school house. The history of the First Presbyterian Church in this city has recently been published under the auspices of the church; and, by permission of the reverend pastor, Dr. Henry Webb Johnson, it is inserted in this history, as follows:

"On the third day of May, A. D. 1834, in the then wilderness, abounding with Indians, the First Presbyterian Church of South Bend was organized by families, husbands and

out a pastor, and held services in private houses, and in a log school house, that stood where the Jefferson school house now stands. Here it was that their first pastor, Rev. Alfred Bryant, preached to them in October, A. D. 1835. Mr. Bryant was a young man, a graduate of Princeton College, and was sent out by the Board of Home Missions, who paid two-thirds of his salary. He was a scholarly and saintly man, and thoroughly devoted to the work of his Lord and Master. He came here with his young wife to face the hardships of the wilderness, and ready to toil with all his powers, that he might preach the gospel. With his own hands he planed and sawed and dressed lumber, and prepared seats and

a pulpit for his little flock, and with a few hundred dollars left him from his father's estate, he in later years bought a lot on Main street which he used for the benefit of the church. His earnest, self-sacrificing labors laid the foundation of the church of to-day. The church society was then without a building to worship in. Horatio Chapin owned a large two-story building on Michigan street, near the Water street bridge. In the first story he kept a dry goods store, and in the large upper rooms were the cradle and nursery of the infant church. How often must their thoughts have turned to that large upper room where centuries before their sorrowing Master instituted the Lord's supper in remembrance of Him. In this upper room the first Sabbath school was organized with Horatio Chapin for superintendent. It began with twelve scholars. The Hon. Samuel Hanna, of Fort Wayne, donated a lot at the corner of Lafayette and Water streets for a church building, and here, in 1836, a small frame church was erected, which in later years was converted into a dwelling, and still remains as such to-day. The first bell of this church was of Spanish make, and was imported by a Catholic church, but for some reason was not accepted, and was purchased and sent here by a sister of Mr. Bryant. This bell was later disposed of in some manner, and later still another bell, cast in New York in 1838, was purchased and is still owned by the church. For over half a century its soft mellow tones sent its ringing invitation to enter the house of God, and tolled solemn funeral notes for the dead.

"The location of the church was found to be not central enough, and the pastor, Mr. Bryant, raised all he could by subscription here, obtained \$300 from his esteemed friends and relatives, borrowed \$500 on his own responsibility, and turned all over to the trustees. With this, in 1839, a new church was built on Main street, on the next lot south of the Y. M. C. A. building, now owned by Mrs. Jacob Kerner. The church was a fine

structure for the time, and had a basement for the Sabbath school. Here in this building, Revs. George Gordon, Robert R. Wells, A. Kerr, J. T. Umstead, A. Y. Moore, Dr. John C. Brown, D. D., and Walter Forsyth, ministered to the church. During Dr. Brown's ministry he enlisted in the army and became chaplain of Colonel Eddy's Forty-eighth regiment, and died in the service. Rev. Walter Forsyth, a native of Scotland, who had been apprenticed as a machinist or engine builder, but afterwards studied and prepared himself for the ministry, succeeded Dr. Brown. He was a young man full of enthusiasm, and untiring in his labors, and to his active efforts, the third church was built of brick with a spire 145 feet tall, in the year 1866, on the corner of Lafayette and Washington streets.

"At the time it was built, it was the finest church building in the city. In this edifice the Rev. Mr. Forsyth was succeeded by the Revs. James F. Knowles, Henry M. Morey and George T. Keller. Under the pastorate of the Rev. Mr. Keller, in 1887, the brick church was leveled to the ground, and the present beautiful stone church was planned and begun. The work had hardly commenced when the pastor passed away from his earthly labors and entered into heavenly rest. His loss was keenly felt and universally deplored. For a year the church worshipped in the Y. M. C. A. building, without a pastor, awaiting the completion of the new stone edifice. On its completion the Rev. Henry Webb Johnson, D. D., the present loved and able pastor, was called to the church, and under his pastorate the church has been signally blessed. It would be impossible in a brief sketch to review the labors of the several pastors of the church. The church, however, will ever hold their labors and sacrifices in grateful remembrance.

"During the pastorate of the Rev. Mr. Keller, in the year 1884, the church celebrated its semi-centennial, the exercises lasting three days, and the entire history of the church during the fifty years preceding was

fully reviewed and all ending with a banquet to celebrate her jubilee year. Many of the leading events of the church will have to be omitted in this brief article.

"Nor can we recount here the self-denying, faithful devotion to the interests of the church, of those who were long identified with her, who bore her burdens, who shared her adversity and prosperity, who labored heartily and zealously to build up and strengthen the church, and to secure her peace and prosperity. It is all bound up in the volume of their lives, to be read by the great Head of the church, who in that great day will say, 'Well done, good and faithful servants, enter ye into the joy of the Lord.'

"Nor will the church in all its history ever forget her warm friends, who helped in her work, and aided and encouraged her, when in need of help and encouragement, and for them and theirs the blessing and favor of God will be their reward.

"The church has had men and women within its fold of marked ability and great influence which they exerted to make the world better. Some have been noted as authors (as Miss Finley, author of the popular Elsie stories), others as jurists, editors, educators, legislators, officers of the county, city, state and nation, and of the army, bankers, professional men, business men, ministers, pastors, missionaries, and many others too numerous to mention, who have used their talents and influence to advance Christ's Kingdom in the church and world. The church to-day has entered into their labors. Of the workers in the Sabbath school, brief mention will be made of a few. Of the superintendents, mention has been made of a few, and of the secretaries, were Edwin B. Crocker, Schuyler Colfax, John T. Lindsey and Colonel A. B. Wade. Judge Crocker afterwards became chief justice of the state of California. Of the teachers were Judge Thomas S. Stanfield, who once taught a Bible class, and Prof. Benjamin Wilcox, Dr. Louis Humphreys, Julia M. Bacon, who later be-

came a missionary in India, and a host of other able and efficient teachers, now in heavenly rest. One of the early superintendents was Joseph L. Jernegan, then president of the State Bank, a lawyer of great ability, who later became prominent in his profession in New York City, and afterwards resided in Florence, Italy, where he died. But the list might be extended and multiplied at length, if space permitted. We have only mentioned some now deceased, and none now living. Such in brief are some of the events in the history of the church. That the labors of those gone before us may not have been in vain, this heritage planted and watered by them and blessed of God, and left to us, must be maintained and the work carried on in the same earnest, zealous spirit. Our prayers and labors and our sacrifices must be given till the night of death shall come to each, when our mission here shall end.

"The pastors of the church have been: Alfred Bryant, 1843; George Gordon, 1844; Robert R. Wells, 1844-46; A. A. Kerr, 1846-48; Justice V. Olmstead, 1848-49; A. Y. Moore, D. D., 1849-61; James C. Brown, 1861-62; Walter Forsyth, 1862-71; James F. Knowles, 1872-74; Henry M. Morey, 1874-79; George T. Keller, 1880-88; Henry Webb Johnson, D. D., 1889.

"The following are some of the Sabbath schools teachers: John McConnell, Horatio Chapin, Dr. James B. Finley, Francis Miller, Joseph L. Jernegan, Edward Carpenter, George W. Matthews, Sr., John Grant, Eliphalet Ferguson, Jacob N. Massey, Henry Fisher, Charles W. Martin, Joseph G. Bartlett, Robert Johnson, Joseph B. Arnold, Sr., George W. Cook, John M. Campbell, Marshall P. Chapin, Benjamin Wilcox, Daniel Greene, A. H. Wheeler, Dr. Louis Humphreys, Henry C. Crawford, Elmer Crockett, Willis A. Bugbee, Samuel F. Allen, Ernest F. Grether, James Miller, William O. Davies, Frank M. Hatch, Will U. Martin and Daniel S. Marsh.

"The following members of this church are

ministers in charge of congregations: Rev. George Thompson, Hamilton, Ohio; Rev. Charles Evans, Hoboken, N. J.; Rev. John N. Mills, Evanston, Ill."

The Trinity Presbyterian Church is located at the corner of North St. Peter street and East Colfax avenue, the Rev. Samuel M. King, pastor. The Westminster Presbyterian Church is located at the corner of North Scott and West Lindsey streets; the Rev. Henry B. Hostetter, pastor. Hope Presbyterian Chapel is on South Leer street; the Rev. Prentiss H. Case, pastor.

Sec. 3.—THE REFORMED CHURCH.—The Reformed Church of South Bend was organized in 1849 by the Rev. David McNiesh. The brick church erected in that year at the corner of Lafayette street and Colfax avenue continued to be occupied until two years ago, when the present beautiful modern building was erected in its place. The parish was re-organized March 31, 1870, by the Rev. William J. Skillman. The most noted pastor in the history of this church was the Rev. N. D. Williamson, who became pastor in July, 1872, and who was known and honored as Father Williamson by hundreds of persons besides those who were members of his church. The pastor since the completion of the new church is the Rev. Israel Rothenberger. In 1873 a Mission Chapel was built on the corner of Lafayette and Sample streets; but this has been discontinued.

Sec. 4.—THE CATHOLIC CHURCH.—In the year 1901, there was issued a brief history of St. Joseph's Catholic Church, situated at the southeast corner of La Salle avenue and Hill street, in the city of South Bend. Incidentally, this sketch contains much local history relating also to other Catholic churches in the city. The facts here stated are abbreviated from the sketch so published in 1901:

"St. Joseph's Church is the oldest Catholic establishment in South Bend. A short sketch of its history during the last fifty years is hereby submitted. For his material

the compiler depended on public and private records and the recollections of some of the oldest members of the parish.

"On the 18th day of September, 1847, before Justice Johnson Howell, the Right Rev. Celestine de la Hailandière, bishop of the diocese, in trust for St. Joseph's congregation, bought of Christopher W. Emerick and his wife, lots 133, 134 and 135, situated on Main street, now La Salle avenue, in the village of Lowell, now the Fourth ward of



ST. JOSEPH'S CHURCH, SOUTH BEND.

the city of South Bend, for the consideration of fifteen dollars; and Catherine, the wife of Christopher W. Emerick, in consideration of the sum of one dollar to her in hand paid 'relinquished said Celestine de la Hailandière to the aforesaid premises.'

"At that time South Bend belonged to the diocese of Vincennes, and regular transfers of the trust were made as follows: At the end of 1847, to the Right Rev. John S. Bazin; in 1848, to the Right Rev. Maurice de St. Palais; then in 1857, when the diocese of

Fort Wayne was established, to the Right Rev. J. H. Luers; in 1871, to the Right Rev. Joseph Dwenger; in 1893, to the Right Rev. Joseph Rademacher, and in 1900, to the Right Rev. Herman Joseph Alerding, the present incumbent, who was consecrated bishop of Fort Wayne on the 30th day of November, the Feast of St. Andrew, 1900.

"Lots 133, 134 and 135 are the premises on which the present St. Joseph's church and parochial residence stand, the southeast corner of Hill street and La Salle avenue.

"In the early forties the village of Lowell was owned by the elder Alexis Coquillard, the uncle of our late Alexis and Benjamin Coquillard, and of the Mesdames Sherland, Miller, Decker, Rupel, Campeau, Beaubien, Meeker and Wills. But in 1847 a large portion thereof had been deeded to Christopher W. Emerick. Coquillard, Emerick and Sorin were considered the enterprising spirits of the time; and, no doubt, a place for a church was donated by Emerick, though not a Catholic, in a spirit of enterprise.

"The Catholics of South Bend, however, were not as yet numerous enough, and consequently not as yet able to erect a church, and, like their brethren of the neighboring woods, towns, cities and states, they continued to depend on Notre Dame for their spiritual wants, which were administered by the Rev. Fathers Edward Sorin, Alexis Granger, Francis Cointet, Richard Shortis, Thomas Flynn, B. S. Forcee, and other fathers of the Congregation of the Holy Cross.

"Father Sorin with his small band of six Brothers arrived here and founded Notre Dame on the 26th day of November, 1842. On his arrival he found at Notre Dame a small log chapel which had been erected by Father Stephen Theodore Badin, the first priest ordained in the United States of America.

"Father Badin, it is said, never collected any pew rent, nor did he ever pay a cent for any services rendered to him. To boat captains and to ox-drivers calling for fare he would reply simply, 'I am Father Badin!'

"In this chapel the earliest Catholic settlers joined in divine worship with the Indians who had been civilized, instructed and christianized by such early missionaries as Father Badin, Father de Seille and Father Petit. The regularly kept records of these early missionaries, as far as they have been secured by Prof. James F. Edwards, the manager of the archives of the Bishops' Memorial hall at Notre Dame, date back to the year 1830.

"The site of the chapel is religiously preserved at Notre Dame. An arbor vitæ hedge marks the lines of the original foundations and a large stone cross with a suitable inscription tells the visitor that this is a sacred spot.

"It was in a small cell behind the altar of this chapel that the saintly Father de Seille succumbed to his labors in 1837. When he felt the end approaching he longed for the Last Sacraments, those very consolations of religion which he had so many times administered unto others. His nearest brother priests then had stations in Chicago, in Logansport and in New Albany. He knew that even these were for the greater part of the time away from home on missionary fields, and to make sure of receiving the rites of the church at the hands of one of them, he sent three of his faithful Indians for a priest, one to each of the above named posts. Father Louis Neyron, of New Albany, was the only one that could be found. He followed his guide, through woodland tracts, without any other thought before his mind but the sad duty of ministering, as he thought, at the bed side of a dying brother priest. But when he arrived he found the chapel surrounded and filled with Indians who, in silent mourning, were praying for the repose of the soul of the departed shepherd of their own souls.

"Father de Seille was dead three days, and the Indians never thought of either touching or disposing of his body. In his last hour he had asked his Indians to carry him to the tabernacle of the altar, whence his own dying hand drew forth the Blessed

Sacrament and administered to himself the Holy Viaticum. Father Neyron made preparations for the burial, and one of his warmest recollections in favor of the docility of the Indians on the one hand, and the zeal of Father de Seille on the other was the fact that, at the funeral, the Indians sang the Requiem Mass from beginning to end, in a manner which would put to shame many a more pretentious church choir.

"This same Father Neyron had charge of St. Joseph's congregation from 1864 to 1867. A native of France and an attaché of Napoleon's army previous to his ordination to the priesthood, he had labored in the American missions under Bishops Bruté, de la Hailandière, Bazin, De St. Palais, Flaget and other pioneer prelates for thirty years, when in 1862 his health failed and he retired to Notre Dame for rest. But to attend to the little parish of St. Joseph's at the very door of Notre Dame was for him but play.

"On the 14th day of September, the feast of the Exaltation of the Holy Cross, in the year 1853, the Very Rev. Father Edward Sorin, then provincial superior of the priests, brothers and sisters of the Order of the Holy Cross in America, bought of Samuel L. Cottrell and Catherine his wife, lots 124, 125 and 126 in the town of Lowell for the consideration of two hundred and fifty dollars. As a part of the consideration the deed provides that the property be used '*For the benefit of the Catholic School of St. Joseph's County, Indiana.*' This property, at present known as the northeast corner of Hill street and La Salle avenue, is now exclusively used for school purposes and is under the management of the Sisters of the Holy Cross, the trust having been transferred to them for the consideration of one dollar.

"The same year, 1853, Father Sorin erected on the above-named property a brick structure, twenty-two by forty feet, to serve as a school and at the same time as a church for the Catholic population of South Bend. The school has long been known as the Assump-

tion School; and the church first as St. Alexis, but now for many years as St. Joseph's. A little addition was made to the rear of the building to serve as a residence for the sisters who taught the school.

"Both church and school were then under the patronage and the title of St. Alexis, which name, however, never belonged to the congregation that worshipped therein and which, even as far as the school is concerned, is no longer in existence.

"Mass was said here every Sunday for the people of South Bend and the Indians of the neighboring woods, and once a week for the sisters of the school and their pupils.

"Thus hand in hand together started school and church, and the wise pioneers appreciated the fact that the school is the more important of the two. The school received from the beginning a full corps of resident teachers, whose kitchen was regularly supplied by the commissioner of Notre Dame.

"In the St. Alexis Church, which was opened in 1853 and was used for Divine worship until the year 1866, the following reverend fathers have taken charge of the spiritual wants of the congregation: Edward Sorin, Alexis Granger, J. Bourget, E. Leveque, Peter Paul Cooney, Thomas Carroll and other priests of the Holy Cross. But these can scarcely be called pastors. They were not resident priests. They all resided at Notre Dame, taught there all week and then on Sundays did missionary work for St. Joseph's congregation in South Bend, for the Catholic congregations of Laporte, Logansport, Goshen, Kalamazoo, Niles, Bertrand and other missions, the very names of which would, after this comparatively short time, be lost from the memory of a more prosperous succeeding generation if it were not for the baptismal, marriage and funeral records which they so faithfully kept and which are preserved at Notre Dame. Father Sorin, during this time and for many years to come may be put down as the real pastor, who would on Sundays, and whenever on week

days a priest was wanted, send the one who to him appeared most available.

"In the year 1859 the Catholic population of South Bend had largely increased, and the people living in the western part of the town considered themselves numerous enough to have a church of their own. Father Sorin at once encouraged the enterprise and sent a priest to take the matter in hand.

"This priest was Father Thomas Carroll, then newly ordained and in charge of St. Joseph's congregation, in St. Alexis' chapel. He found a ready ear when he went among the people who were then arriving or passing here, and persuaded them to settle permanently in South Bend. With the unanimous good will of the people, the young priest organized St. Patrick's congregation and built the old St. Patrick's Church on Division street, one block west of Taylor.

"While engaged in this work Father Carroll taught catechism daily for all the children of South Bend in St. Alexis' school and said mass there every morning. All sick-calls and other demands on the pastor were sent to the sisters of the school, who, as a rule, knew where the reverend father could be reached. Father Thomas Carroll may, therefore, be said to have been the first priest to whom was entrusted the whole charge of South Bend.

"When the old St. Patrick's Church was built, Father Carroll continued to attend to the whole of South Bend on week days, but gave his time to St. Patrick's Church on Sundays. For Sunday services St. Joseph's congregation then again depended on Notre Dame; and the records show that Fathers A. Granger, William Corby, C. Exel, J. Bourget, J. C. Carrier, L. Neyron, P. Hartlang, A. Lemonnier, S. Daugherty, L. J. L'Etourneau and Julius Frere of Notre Dame conducted services on Sundays. It would appear from this that St. Joseph's Church may rightly be called the mother church of St. Patrick's, St. Hedwige's, St. Mary's, St. Casimir's, St. Stanislaus', St. Stephen's and the Sacred Heart Churches, of South Bend."

The first church and the first school had been put up at the expense of Notre Dame. The second church, however, was to be erected on the diocesan property and at the expense of the congregation. Accordingly Father Louis J. L'Etourneau, who succeeded Father Louis Neyron, in September, 1867, started a subscription for the new church.

The contract for building the church was given to Mr. Hodson, for \$1,385.76. It was a frame building, 40x60 feet, and was erected on lot 133, the southeast corner of Water and Hill streets, on the site of the present St. Joseph's Church. The church was completed in September of 1868, by which time Father L'Etourneau had been succeeded by the Rev. Julius Frere.

In the year 1862, a frame building, eighteen by twenty-six feet, was erected on Lowell Heights, at the northwest corner of South Bend and Notre Dame avenues, to serve as the first school for larger boys. Here Brothers Raymond, Daniel, Romuald and Philip, surnamed the "Presbyterian" (because he was a lineal descendant of John Knox) taught the school for several years; and the large boys whom they made good still speak, at this late day, with the fondest recollections, of the school-masterly abilities and the eccentric methods of these early masters.

On the 13th day of September, 1869, Father Frere, then pastor of the new church on the original church property, had this school house moved from the hill into the middle of the parish, to the site of the present parochial residence, and Brother Raymond taught the boys here until March 3, 1871, when Father Demers, a succeeding pastor, sold "la petite ecole a Cottrell" for one hundred dollars, and the larger boys were returned to the sisters in St. Alexis' school, which had in the meanwhile been called "The Assumption Academy." La petite ecole is now a neat little residence. It stands on East Madison street and may be recognized by the name of Martin Hoban, which this lad en-

graved on a door post while attending school on the hill.

In 1866 the original St. Alexis' Church was found to be too small for the congregation, in spite of the comparatively recent exodus of the people who now formed St. Patrick's Church; and a larger church was built on the site of the present church.

On the 26th of December, 1872, at high noon, this church, from some unknown source, took fire and burnt to the ground. The congregation then returned to the old St. Alexis' Chapel across the street, with the Rev. Peter Lauth as their pastor; and Father Sorin bought the block on which St. Joseph's hospital now stands for a new church. Beyond the fact that the insurance money for the old church was used, and that five thousand

was paid to William Neddo for the block now purchased, no one ever knew what the new church cost. Father Sorin drew the plan; Brother Charles superintended the work; and Brother Edward, treasurer of Notre Dame, paid the bills.

Several pastors succeeded one another in "the church on the hill," until the year 1880, when the Rev. Michael Ph. Fallize became pastor. Under his pastorate the present beautiful church at the corner of La Salle avenue and Hill street was erected. It was on September 22, 1886, that the stained glass windows on the north side of this church were destroyed by the hail storm, as already related.^a Father Fallize also built for a school and parish hall the brick building on the south side of the church lots, which has however, until the year 1907, been chiefly used as a pastoral residence.

In the fall of 1888, Father Fallize took his departure for East Bengal, India, where he has since remained as a devoted missionary. The succeeding pastors have been the Rev. James Gleeson, the Rev. Nicholas J. Stoffel, and the present zealous pastor, the Rev. Peter Lauth. During the pastorate of Father Lauth the parish has greatly flour-

ished. In 1907 the fine parochial residence was erected.

The most noted civic and religious demonstration in which St. Joseph's parish ever took part was the commemoration of the discovery of America on the afternoon of Sunday, October 16, 1892. In the parade through the city it required forty-five minutes to pass a given point; and it is estimated that five thousand persons participated.

The pastors of St. Patrick's Church, after the Rev. Thomas Carroll, the founder of the parish, were the Rev. Peter Paul Cooney, who became a famous chaplain during the Civil war; the Rev. Louis Neyron, a veteran of Napoleon's wars, who was on the retreat from Moscow and at the battle of Waterloo; the Rev. Paul Gillen, the Rev. Joseph C. Carrier and the Rev. William Corby, all chaplains in the Civil war; the Rev. Peter Lauth, now pastor of St. Joseph's; the Rev. Father O'Mahoney, a distinguished pulpit orator; the Rev. Daniel J. Spillard; the Rev. Dennis J. Hagerty; the Rev. Father Clark; and the Rev. John F. De Groote, the present pastor.

Under the pastorate of the Rev. Father Hagerty the new church on Taylor street, near the head of Wayne, was built. Under the pastorate of the Rev. Father Clark, the parish hall and school on Scott street was erected. These two buildings the church and the hall, have established St. Patrick's parish on a substantial basis; they are both modern and elegant, as well as convenient and useful, structures.

As St. Patrick's is the child of St. Joseph's; so St. Mary's, St. Hedwige's, St. Stephen's and the Church of the Sacred Heart bear the same filial relation to St. Patrick's, having gone forth from the latter; while St. Casimir's and St. Stanislaus' have developed from St. Hedwige's. All the congregations are large, and the parishes prosperous. The pastor of St. Hedwige's is the veteran Rev. Valentine Czyzewski; the pastor of St. Mary's is the Rev. Joseph Scherer;

^a Chap. 7, Subd. 7, Sec. 2.

the pastor of St. Casimir's, the Rev. Anthony Zubowicz; the pastor of St. Stanislaus', the Rev. R. A. Marciniak; the pastor of St. Stephen's, the Rev. Michael J. Biro; and the late pastor of the Sacred Heart Church, the Rev. Peter Klein, deceased, his successor not yet being appointed.

Each of the Catholic churches has a flourishing parochial school with teachers under the direction of the pastor. There are, besides, two academic schools of a high order,—the Assumption school, already mentioned, attached to St. Joseph's Church; and St. Joseph's Academy, attached to St. Patrick's

Rev. Peter Johannes, the good priest who founded and built up during the last twenty years of his life the church and school of St. Mary's parish.

Sec. 5.—THE BAPTIST CHURCH.—The first Baptist Church in South Bend was organized September 14, 1836, with the Rev. James M. Johnson as pastor.^a Mr. Johnson served as pastor for about six months, and was succeeded for a time by the Rev. M. Price, of Cassopolis, Michigan. There was a revival of the organization in March, 1842, when the Rev. Alexander Hastings was chosen pastor. The following reverend pastors have served



FIRST BAPTIST CHURCH, SOUTH BEND.

church. The graduates of St. Joseph's Academy rank with those of the best high schools. The foundation of the Assumption school, as we have seen, dates from the year 1853. It was greatly enlarged and improved in 1907, under the administration of Sister Boniface. St. Joseph's Academy dates from 1866. It was built up under the direction of the efficient Sister Ambrose, a sister of the Rev. William Corby, chaplain in the Civil war, and for several years before his death the able provincial of the Order of the Holy Cross in America. The history of the Catholic church in South Bend should not be closed without special commemoration of the

the church since 1842: Mr. William L. H. Stocker; E. T. Manning; S. L. Collins; D. Thomas; A. S. Ames; Ira Corwin; C. Ager; T. P. Campbell; M. Mulcahy; J. L. M. Young; T. E. Egbert; C. D. Chaffee; A. B. Chaffee; Carl D. Case; E. S. Stucker; G. M. Lehigh; David Cooper; and William Kirk Bryce, the present eloquent and energetic pastor.

It was in the month of January, 1874, during the pastorate of the Rev. Mr. Young, that the frame church at the corner of Main

^a South Bend and the Men who have Made it, 1901, p. 37; Higgins Belden St. Joseph County Atlas, 1875, p. 24.

and Jefferson streets, on the present site of the post office, was burned. This is known in local annals as the Baptist church fire, and was one of the most terrible fire contests that the old volunteer fire department ever experienced. The weather was intensely cold and many of the firemen never recovered from the dreadful exposure then experienced. This building had been moved from the next lot south in 1864; and was at that time greatly enlarged and improved. After the fire of 1874, the building was repaired and used by the congregation until their removal to the fine stone edifice at the corner of Main and Wayne streets, in January, 1887. The

Mount Zion Baptist Church, 116 North Birdsell street, the Rev. H. M. Stoval, pastor; the Immanuel Baptist Church, 875 South Marietta street, the Rev. W. F. Bostick, pastor; the Quincy Street Baptist Church, the Rev. Henry B. Finch, pastor, organized in 1906; and the First Swedish Baptist Church, corner of Laurel and Napier streets.

Sec. 6.—THE EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—St. James' Episcopal Church was organized as a parish July 28, 1868, with the Rev. George P. Schetky, as rector. Through the munificence of Judge Powers Green, a church building was erected in 1869 on the north side of Wayne street, a little east of Lafayette; and



ST. JAMES EPISCOPAL CHURCH, SOUTH BEND.

old frame building was removed to the grounds of the Studebaker wagon factory, where it still continues to do service. The present field stone church, one of the most elegant and commodious in the city, was erected in 1886, but not occupied until 1887.

The Rev. Carl Delos Case came to the church in April, 1895, and remained for four years. He won the admiration of the community as well as of the members of his own church. The present pastor, the Rev. William Kirk Bryce, has taken a like high place in public esteem.

Besides the First Church, there is the

was dedicated with appropriate services on September the fifth of that year. In January, 1871, the church was moved to a point a little north of the northwest corner of Lafayette and Jefferson streets. This building was again moved in 1898; this time to the northwest part of the city, where it was used as the Westminster Presbyterian Church. The lot on which it had stood was sold at the same time, and the present site, on the west side of Lafayette street, between Washington and Colfax, was purchased. On this lot the present handsome brick church was erected in 1894. The church was solemnly dedicated on

Christmas eve of that year, at a midnight service, by the Right Rev. Bishop of Springfield, George Franklin Seymour. It is one of the finest churches in the city, and is valued at over thirty thousand dollars. The present rector is the Rev. Francis Milton Banfil, who was installed January 1, 1899.

Sec. 7.—THE LUTHERAN CHURCH.—St. Paul's Evangelical Lutheran Church, of South Bend, was organized in 1878 by the Rev. Henry Siek. The original church, built on the southeast corner of Jefferson and William streets, was dedicated August 21, 1878. The Rev. Paul Heid was the second pastor. He was succeeded by the present pastor, the Rev. Trangott J. Thieme. The congregation has a large and substantial church building, and is in a flourishing condition. A noteworthy feature of this church is the excellent and largely attended parochial school which is attached to it. The history of this school is coeval with that of the church itself. While the parish was in its infancy, the first pastor, the Rev. Mr. Siek, taught the school himself. Afterwards, when conditions improved, a teacher was employed. And now, for several years past, two teachers are constantly engaged.

The Holy Trinity English Lutheran Church is located at the corner of Sherman avenue and Lindsey street. The Rev. William Brenner is the pastor.

The Swedish Evangelical Lutheran Gloria Dei Church is located at the southwest corner of Chapin and Kerr streets. The Rev. John F. Borg is the pastor. The congregation, which is very numerous and zealous, has erected a beautiful concrete stone church.

Sec. 8.—THE EVANGELICAL CHURCH.—St. Peter's Evangelical Church was organized in 1863. The congregation has a handsome brick church at No. 429 West La Salle avenue. The Rev. Charles Koenig is the pastor.

Zion Church, located at No. 231 South St. Peter street, was established in 1888, by the Rev. Martin Goffeney, who has been pastor of the church from the beginning. In 1892 a

school was established in connection with the church; and in 1895 a neat parsonage was built. Both church and school are in a flourishing condition.

The First Church Evangelical Association is located at the northwest corner of Lafayette and Monroe streets. The pastor is the Rev. Fred Rausch. The congregation has a beautiful new brick church.

Mizpah Church is located at No. 126 West Monroe street. The Rev. James H. Rilling is the pastor.

The South Bend Evangelical Hungarian Protestant Church is located at No. 1422 West Washington street. The pastor is the Rev. Stephen Csepke.

The Swedish Evangelical Mission Church is located at the corner of Scott and Orchard streets.

Sec. 9.—THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH.—The Christian Church of South Bend was first organized on Portage prairie, at a point about four miles north of the city limits. The Rev. W. McIlvaine, a zealous minister, was the first pastor. In the spring of 1851, Elder McIlvaine secured the old seminary on West Washington, where services were held for a year. The lot on which the present church stands, on the east side of Main street, between Wayne and Division, was purchased in 1852, and a church erected that year. In 1878 a larger building was erected on the same lot. This church building has been materially enlarged and improved since that time.

The membership of this church has embraced many of the best citizens of the city. Among the pastors after the Rev. Mr. McIlvaine have been,—John Martindale, Reuben Wilson, Gideon Drapier, Frederick J. Thomas, W. J. Homer, J. Belton, H. N. Lord, W. B. Hendrix, William P. Ailsworth, J. Hurd, George W. Sweeney, J. H. Stover. The present pastor is the Rev. G. W. Henry.

The Indiana Avenue Christian Church is located at the corner of Indiana avenue and Witwer street. This church was established

principally through the zeal and eloquence of the Rev. P. J. Rice. The present pastor is the Rev. Arthur C. McHenry. There is also the Linden Avenue Christian Church, located on Lincoln street.

Sec. 10.—OTHER CHURCHES.—Other prominent churches in the city are the following: The First Brethren Church, located at No. 1212 South Michigan street, the Rev. David Eikenberry, pastor; the First United Brethren in Christ Church, No. 522 South Michigan street, the Rev. R. J. Parrett, pastor; the German Baptist Brethren, corner of Cushing and Van Buren streets, the Rev. S. F. Sanger, pastor; the First Church of Christ, Scientist, corner of Madison and Main streets; the German Baptist Brethren Church, corner of Indiana avenue and Miami street, the Rev. Hiram W. Kreighbaum, pastor; the Beulah Chapel Evangelical Association, corner of Brick and Euclid avenues, the Rev. Noah F. Platz, pastor; the Sons of Israel, No. 420 South William street, the Rev. Max E. Altfield, pastor; the Temple Bethel, corner of La Salle avenue and Taylor street, the Rev. Abraham Cronbach, pastor; the Mennonite Brethren in Christ Church, corner of Lindsey street and Harrison avenue, Miss. Kate Bredemus, pastor.

Sec 11.—THE YOUNG MEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION.—On November 27, 1906, the cornerstone of the 4-story and basement brick building, with stone trimmings, at the northeast corner of Main and Wayne streets, which is to be the house of the Y. M. C. A. of South Bend, was laid, with impressive ceremonies. In the copper box inserted in the cornerstone were placed various articles and documents which may be of rare historic interest to some future generation, when, perhaps, this then venerable structure shall give place to another edifice. Amongst the documents placed in the box were a history of the Young Men's Christian Association, prepared by Mr. Miller Guy, an officer of the local association; a history, by Mr. Charles Arthur Carlisle, of the Studebaker Brothers' Manufacturing Company,

through whose munificence the building is to be erected, and a history of the city of South Bend, by the writer. Through the courtesy of Mr. Guy the following sketch of the local association is taken from the general history deposited by him in the copper box then sealed up in the cornerstone of the Y. M. C. A. building:

The local Young Men's Christian Association of the city of South Bend dates from the ninth day of March, 1882. It was born of the great series of union revival meetings then being held under the leadership of Dr. L. W. Munhall, of Indianapolis, and who was at that time state secretary of the Young Men's Christian Association of the state of Indiana. This first meeting was preliminary, and record of it has been preserved as follows:

"South Bend, Indiana, Thursday, March 9th, 1882.

"Nine-thirty o'clock P. M.

"In compliance with a call made by Dr. L. W. Munhall, state secretary of the Young Men's Christian Association of Indiana, a large number of people met in the lecture room of the First M. E. Church, at the close of a revival service.

"The meeting was called to order by Dr. Munhall, who proceeded to state the object and aim of association work, and to urge the organization of a Y. M. C. A. in South Bend.

"The sense of the meeting was then taken and on motion Marvin Campbell was made secretary pro tem., after which it was moved and seconded that we proceed with the organization at once.

"On motion the various pastors of the city churches were then appointed a Committee on Constitution, and directed to report at the next meeting.

"A committee on permanent organization was called for and appointed as follows:

"E. C. Westervelt, of the First Presbyterian church.

"H. F. Clipfell, of the First Christian church.

"J. H. Wilson, of the First Methodist church.

"Geo. W. Loughman, of the Mich. St. Methodist church.

"Samuel Kinney, of the Baptist church.

"C. Liphart, of the German M. E. church.

"H. S. Fassett, of the Episcopal church.

"J. G. Kline, of the Evangelical church.

"Jasper E. Lewis, of the Reformed church.

"After a general discussion of the favorable auspices under which we are about to organize and the bright prospects of success, an adjournment was had until Friday night at the close of service.

"Marvin Campbell, Secy. pro tem.

"O. H. Palmer, Secretary elect."

The permanent organization of the local was effected on the following evening, being Friday, March 10, 1882.

The meeting was called in the basement of the First Methodist Church at the corner of Main and Jefferson streets, to hear the reports of the committees on organization. Sixty-three names were subscribed as charter members. The membership fee was fixed at one dollar per year. The official minutes of this first regular meeting of the association are as follows:

"South Bend, Indiana, March 10th, 1882.

"Friday, Nine-thirty P. M.

"Pursuant to adjournment, a meeting of those interested in the organization of a Young Men's Christian Association was called to order by Dr. L. W. Munhall, in the lecture room of the First M. E. church, at the close of a revival service.

"The committee on constitution presented its report through the chairman, Rev. S. B. Town.

"The constitution submitted was substantially that subscribed to by the Y. M. C. A. at Indianapolis, and was unanimously adopted.

"Sixty-three names were then attached to the instrument, after which the committee on permanent organization made a report, which was accepted and confirmed by the unanimous election of the following officers for the ensuing year.

Hon. Clement Studebaker, President.

Hon. Schuyler Colfax, 1st Vice President.

VICE PRESIDENTS.

Elmer Crockett,	1st Presbyterian.
Marvin Campbell,	1st Methodist.
Andrew J. Ruddick,	Mich. St. Methodist.
Jacob Ginrich,	German Methodist.
William Mack,	Baptist.
Francis M. Hatch,	Reformed.
Herbert S. Fassett,	Episcopal.
Chas. Hartman,	Christian.
Emil Pabst,	Evangelical.
John P. Rosen,	Swedish.

George A. Baker, Cor. Secretary.

Orlando H. Palmer, Rec. Secretary.

Willis A. Bugbee, Treasurer.

EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE.

Samuel F. Allen	Jasper E. Lewis
George W. Loughman	Gilbert L. Elliott
George T. Hodson	Henry F. Clippell
Daniel Achenbach	

BOARD OF TRUSTEES

John M. Studebaker	Eugene B. Adams
David Warner	William Mack
M. N. Walworth	Darwin H. Baker
Nathaniel Frame	Josiah G. Keltner
Schuyler Colfax	

"Congratulations and commendations having been extended the meeting adjourned.

"O. H. Palmer, Secretary."

Doubtless by few institutions of its kind can the claim be made and substantiated that their first officers and governing bodies were superior to or equal in ability to those who consented to act and work for the good of the local association. The records of the proceedings of the board of trustees, executive committee and directors, disclose the fact that the Hon. Clement Studebaker held the office of president for two years, presided personally over its meetings, and was rarely absent from its business sessions, and that the Hon. Schuyler Colfax, its first distinguished vice president, assumed the duties of the office given him, and continued in touch with its affairs until his death.

Among the first officers chosen was Mr. Elmer Crockett, who has since given continuous service as, and still is, a member of the board of directors. Myron Campbell, who was an active charter member, and elected a director during the first few months after the organization, has since continuously served in that capacity and is now treasurer of the association. Marvin Campbell and Willis A. Bugbee are still members of the board of trustees.

On account of the interest which attaches to it, in the light of recent developments in our local work, a report of a meeting held at the home of President Clement Studebaker is given in full, and is as follows:

"South Bend, Indiana, April 8th, 1882.

"Upon invitation of the president, a meeting of the association was held at his residence, to which a number of the business men of the city were invited, that they might hear the objects and aims of association work discussed by several Y. M. C. A. workers from abroad. Order was called by the president, who requested Dr. L. W. Munhall, state secretary, to open the meeting and state the object of it.

“He was followed by Mr. Haughey, chairman of the executive committee of the Indianapolis association; S. A. Kean, a prominent banker of Chicago and treasurer of the association in that city; J. V. Farwell, the ‘Merchant Prince’ of the same city; J. E. Deffenbaugh, former general secretary of the association at Burlington, Iowa, and Hon. Schuyler Colfax, of South Bend.

“Each of the speakers presented the interest of the South Bend Association, and they spoke of the work of the Y. M. C. A. in general in forcible, plain and practical terms, urging those present to make large contributions of time and money to the organization in South Bend.

“With a feeling that a lively interest had been created in our cause adjournment was had without date.

“O. H. Palmer,
“Rec. and Gen’l Secretary.”

The executive committee at a meeting held on the ninth day of April, 1882, elected Mr. Orlando H. Palmer general secretary, to take charge of the work for one year from the fifteenth day of April, following, at salary of \$1,000 per year.

Steps were taken immediately to secure suitable quarters in which to carry forward the work. The executive committee entered into negotiations with the South Bend National Bank for the use of the second and third stories of its building at 129 and 131 North Michigan street, known at the time as the “Old Price Theater,” and leased the same for three years at \$400 per year. The first regular meeting of the society was held in that place on May 17th, 1882, and was called to order and presided over by the Hon. Clement Studebaker. Reports of the progress of the work at that gathering showed a total membership of 177 young men at the time.

Under the secretaryship of Mr. Palmer the work was ably and vigorously pushed. Religious and social meetings were held regularly; the membership reached 250; a library of several hundred volumes was secured, and his recognized ability gave the movement a good standing in the community. He received a call to the general secretaryship of the Indianapolis association, and left this field January 30, 1884, to begin work at that place.

Immediately after the retirement of Mr. Palmer from the local work Mr. J. C. Stephens was engaged to fill the position temporarily, and held it until the following fall.

On the twenty-fifth day of September, 1884, the board of directors extended a call to George S. Fisher, of Anderson, Indiana, to take the position of general secretary in this city. The offer was accepted and Mr. Fisher took up the work soon after. He held the position for about one and one-half years.

In the spring and summer of 1885 Mr. Fisher organized and conducted the canvass for funds with which to purchase a home. Under his direction subscriptions to the amount of \$8,000 were secured, for the purpose of purchasing and equipping the “Old Hotel Bristol,” at 122 and 124 South Main street. The property was owned by Dr. Robert Harris and Warren Irwin, and was offered for \$11,000. The owners executed an agreement to convey the same for that amount on the second day of May, 1885. The requisite amount for the cash payment of \$5,000 and repairs estimated at \$3,000 being secured in the meantime, the deeds were executed for the same to the association on the eleventh day of August, 1885, and the work of repairing and renovating the building was taken up forthwith by the secretary.

The building had been used for a number of years as an old hotel, without rating, and as a cheap boarding house. Previous to its occupation by the Y. M. C. A. there are no traditions or prior history connected with it, that the association desires to perpetuate. The boys never ceased calling it the “Old Joint,” and it appears that the name had come down from the time whereof “the memory of man runneth not to the contrary.” On the sixteenth day of December, 1885, Secretary Fisher reported to the board of directors that the building had been formally opened to the public for association purposes.

Mr. Fisher thus securely placed the local work upon a final and lasting foundation. He was a bright, active, energetic young man, with executive ability, and a genuine hustler. The membership reached 310 during his term. He left South Bend early in the year 1886, and became state secretary of the Young Men’s Christian Associations of Kansas.

The year following the retirement of Secretary Fisher from this field may be appropriately termed the “Dark Ages” of our local history. The movement suffered a dangerous relapse and it almost proved fatal. The secretaryship went begging, and the canvass for a building fund had apparently exhausted the generosity of many of its supporters. The

board called as general secretary Mr. C. A. Tiebout, who accepted, but resigned a few months later on the twelfth day of October, 1886. Public meetings were abandoned; debts for current expenses accumulated and remained unpaid; interest on the mortgage notes was not paid; the membership scattered and the members failed to renew upon expiration, and the directors talked of disbanding. F. J. Lewis Meyer, who was secretary of the board of directors, as a volunteer worker gave much time and attention to the work and held it together until the next secretary was secured, in the early spring of 1887.

Leslie C. Whitcomb will always be remembered as one of the bright particular stars in our local firmament, and was one of the best secretaries the state of Indiana has ever had. As a young man he came to South Bend to sell life insurance, and incidentally became interested in the work of the association. The directors asked him to take the position as general secretary for two or three months on trial. He took up the work under discouraging circumstances. The fully paid membership had decreased to less than 100 and an indebtedness for current expenses to the amount of \$2,000 had remained unpaid. The work had become disorganized and the workers discouraged. The old building soon became a scene of general activity under his guidance. The membership was increased to 255 on May 10th, 1887, and on February 8th, 1888, before the end of his first year, reached a total of 334, 163 of whom were active, and 171 associate members. The average number of men taking gymnasium work was about one hundred, and in the educational classes about fifty. A staff of committee men and helpers numbering about seventy-five was organized. Every department of the work, religious, social, educational and physical was set in motion. An entertainment course was provided; a free employment bureau was maintained, and capable physical directors were employed.

It was during the secretaryship of Mr. Whitcomb that an eventful meeting was held, which should be remembered as one of our historical landmarks.

Mrs. J. M. Studebaker, always a warm friend and faithful worker of the association, extended a special invitation to all the committees to meet at her residence on "Sunny-side." About seventy-five were present. Reports of all the different lines of activity were read and commented upon, and Mr. J. M.

Studebaker, Sr., made a short talk, in which he said that he was surprised and delighted to learn that such effective work was being done in our community, and that it had given him new light on the scope and importance of the Y. M. C. A. work.

Pondering these words anew after a lapse of one and a half decades, and in the light of subsequent developments, this event may be "remembered with the things that were among the high tides of the calendar." Mr. Whitcomb held the position until January 1, 1892. Mr. Logan succeeded him as acting secretary until July 30, following, when W. F. Carey was called to the field.

Mr. Carey was a hard working conscientious official and did efficient service, maintaining a good average for the six years of his term. All the departments were kept going. The membership averaged about 275. He resigned May 5, 1898, and became general secretary of the association at Pottsville, Pa. He, too, will be remembered as one of the builders of our work.

On June 30, 1898, Mr. Paul H. Metcalf became general secretary and held the position until July 31, 1899. He resigned for the purpose of accepting the assistant pastorate of an institutional church in Elyria, Ohio. Mr. Metcalf revived the entertainment course idea which had been abandoned some years before, and was so successful that the first series netted profits to the amount of \$527.57 for the association.

From August 1, 1899, to May 15, 1902, the association was without the services of a regular general secretary. The writer of this sketch and Prof. Calvin O. Davis of the city high school, as members of the board of directors, gave considerable time to the work, but were unable to prevent a serious falling off in membership and interest. It was exceedingly difficult to secure a leader with the meagre equipment on hand. Mr. Guy was acting secretary until January 1, 1901, and Mr. Davis followed until May 15, 1902.

On May 21, 1902, Eugene S. Willis, of Brooklyn, N. Y., was called at a salary of \$1,200 per year, and on September 1 of the same year Francis A. Messler was engaged as assistant general secretary. When Willis and Messler began the work it soon reached its normal standing, and it was during the period of their associate work that the great event of our association life transpired.

A banquet, attended by the leading business

men of the city, was given in honor of the three Willis brothers, who were prominent Y. M. C. A. workers, and were here visiting their brother. The banquet was held in the New Oliver hotel on Saturday evening, December 20, 1902. The day following a large Sunday afternoon meeting was held in the First Presbyterian Church, in charge of the four Willis brothers. About four hundred men were in attendance, and its influence was far-reaching. It was then that Mr. J. M. Studebaker, Sr., president of the Studebaker Bros.' Manufacturing Company, decided to make a Christmas gift to the local association, and addressed a communication to its directors to that effect. But the gift was to be a greater one than even Mr. Studebaker himself then contemplated.

On December 31st, 1902, the Studebaker Bros.' Manufacturing Company closed the first semi-centennial period of its history, and to commemorate the founding of the great enterprise, and its growth from a small shop, to the greatest manufacturing plant of its kind in the world, and in memory of the five brothers who had founded it, and built it up, the company resolved upon a monumental work in behalf of the Young Men's Christian Association of South Bend, and pursuant to the resolution addressed a communication to the board of directors, as follows:

"South Bend, Indiana, December 31, 1902.

"Mr. E. S. Willis, Secretary Y. M. C. A. South Bend, Indiana.

"DEAR SIR:

"At a meeting of the board of directors of Studebaker Brothers' Manufacturing Company this morning action was taken of interest to your association in South Bend, which is best expressed in the words of the resolution itself, as follows:

"Resolved, That on this 31st day of December, 1902, making the closing of the fiftieth year since the founding of the business of Studebaker Brothers' Manufacturing Company, this board, desirous of carrying out the oft-expressed wish of each of the five Studebaker brothers that some day this company would in the city of South Bend, where their business was founded and grown to its present proportion, erect some building which should be devoted to philanthropic purposes, and which should be in the nature of a memorial and thank offering; believing that a gift to the Young Men's Christian Association of a permanent home will best serve this pur-

pose, we do hereby decide that this company will erect and present to the Young Men's Christian Association of South Bend a building for its use as a permanent home; this to be done at the earliest opportunity, as speedily as possible, and that this intention be communicated to the association and their disposition thereon be obtained."

"You will kindly bring the foregoing to the attention of your board of directors as early as practicable and transmit to us their conclusions with respect to the offer. Anticipating your prompt action we are, with a Happy New Year for yourself and the Y. M. C. A. of South Bend,

Truly yours,

"Studebaker Bros.' Mfg. Co.,

"By J. M. Studebaker,

"President."

On New Year's Day, 1903, a committee appointed by the Y. M. C. A. directors responded to the proposition as follows:

"South Bend, Indiana, January 1, 1903.

"Studebaker Bros.' Mfg. Co.,

"J. M. Studebaker, President,

"South Bend, Indiana.

"GENTLEMEN:

"At a special meeting of the board of directors of the South Bend Young Men's Christian Association, held on New Year's Eve, 1902, your committee consisting of Col. George M. Studebaker, J. M. Studebaker, Jr., and Clement Studebaker, Jr., brought to us your letter and a copy of the resolution passed by your board of directors, proposing to erect and present to this association a permanent home for its work.

"Immediately upon receipt of your generous offer our board with one voice voted to accept the same. From the remarks of each present we can assure you that their gratitude was profound and they were unable to express the joy and thankfulness they felt in their hearts. At their request the undersigned committee hereby tenders a formal acceptance of your proposition on behalf of the directors and trustees of the South Bend Young Men's Christian Association and on behalf of the young men of this community who are to be the beneficiaries of this sacred trust.

"It seems eminently fitting to us that such a monument as you propose should be erected here in memory of the five brothers who came to this city as young men, grew with its growth, contributed so largely to its prosperity and here met with such abundant success.

We rejoice and feel thankful that the future association work in our beautiful city will always be linked with a name that is as dear at home as it is well known and honored abroad.

"Trusting that this gift of the New Year will also reward the donors with the same full measure of joy that we have experienced, we beg to remain,

"Yours very sincerely,
 "Marvin Campbell,
 "W. O. Davies,
 "F. A. Park,
 "Miller Guy,
 "Eugene S. Willis."

The Young Men's Christian Associations of the world have been the recipients of many magnificent gifts and subscriptions from the great merchants, bankers and captains of industry, but the foregoing undertaking of the Studebaker Brothers' Manufacturing Company eclipsed all former records in behalf of this movement, and stands today as the greatest instance and example of the vitality, strength and prosperity of this brotherhood of young men, now over seven hundred thousand strong. This single gift, made unconditionally by a single corporation, involves the expenditure of over three hundred thousand dollars, in the purchase of real estate and the erection of the building.

Mr. Willis resigned at the end of his first year, and on June 1st, 1903, Assistant Secretary Francis A. Messler, was elected to succeed him at a salary of \$1,200 per year.

On August 14, 1903, the association sold its property at 122-124 South Main street for \$17,000, but continued to occupy the building under a lease until July 1st, 1905, when it moved to No. 222 South Main street, into the building now owned by the Studebaker Bros.' Mfg. Co., which they generously repaired and fitted up for a temporary home of the association until the new building will be ready.

Mr. Messler had charge of the work until July 1, 1906, when he took up the work as general secretary of the association at Battle Creek, Michigan. He has been assigned a place in the front line of our secretaries. He was capable and efficient and an indefatigable worker. The association was prosperous under his management. When he first came into the field as assistant secretary there were but 125 members on the records; he saw it reach its high water mark at the end of the great contest in the spring of 1906, with 700 young men enrolled as members. At the close

of the contest a splendid banquet was given to the new members in Place Hall, at 226-230 South Lafayette street, and was attended by about four hundred men and boys. He first organized a canoe club and tennis club, in addition to carrying on the general work in the other departments.

Mr. F. M. Armstrong succeeded as acting secretary from July 1st to September 1st, 1906.

On September 1st, 1906, Mr. F. W. Lillie, the physical director, was engaged to take up the secretarial work in addition to the conducting of the physical department, and is now acting general secretary of the association.

During the year 1907 the beautiful building, the gift of the Studebaker brothers to the Young Men's Christian Association, was enclosed. When completed, as it will be early in the year 1908, the South Bend association will have one of the most complete edifices of the kind in the world. All the pursuits sanctioned by the history and customs of the Y. M. C. A., physical, mental and moral, will be amply and elegantly provided for. It is in the doing of such work as the Studebaker brothers have here done that men of wealth and public spirit endear themselves to the people.

The following are the presidents of the South Bend Y. M. C. A. since its organization:

Clement Studebaker, Mar. 10, 1882, to Mar. 4, 1884.

Samuel F. Allen, Mar. 4, 1884, to Apr. 4, 1885.

Dr. J. A. Kettring, April 15, 1885, to Sept. 19, 1885.

J. C. Neville, Sept. 19, 1885, to Sept. 21, 1887.

Wm. Mack, Sept. 20, 1887, to Sept. 21, 1892.

W. O. Davies, Sept. 21, 1892, to Oct. 12, 1894.

Elmer Crockett, Oct. 12, 1894, to Feb. 6, 1900.

W. O. Davies, Feb. 6, 1900, to Nov. 23, 1901.

Miller Guy, Nov. 23, 1901, to Dec. 4, 1903.

Elmer Crockett, Dec. 4, 1903, to Sept. 21, 1904.

W. O. Davies, Sept. 21, 1904, to Sept. 25, 1905.

Christopher Fassnacht, Sept. 25, 1905, to —
 Sec. 12.—THE YOUNG WOMEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION.—What the Studebaker Bros.'

Manufacturing Company has done for the Young Men's Christian Association by the erection of the building referred to in the preceding section that Mr. George Wyman and his wife, Mrs. Clara L. Wyman, have done for the Young Women's Christian Association, by the erection of the beautiful association building on the west side of Lafayette street, between Washington street and Colfax avenue, just north of St. James' Episcopal church. This is a three-story building with a basement, and is constructed of pressed brick with stone trimmings. As might be expected, the structure is modern and complete throughout, and altogether suited to the taste, health and comfort of young ladies. The accommodations are the most liberal, providing, as they do, for the physical, intellectual and moral welfare of the young women of the city, who seek to partake of its advantages. The building was constructed during the year 1906, and early in 1907 Mr. and Mrs. Wyman turned it over to the association, furnished and complete.

Sec. 13.—HOSPITALS.—In 1873, after the burning of St. Joseph's old church, as related in section four of this subdivision, the Rev. Edward Sorin purchased as the site for a new church large lot, or square, number nine in Cottrell's First Addition, bounded by Cedar, Notre Dame, Madison and St. Peter's streets. It was believed that this site would be more central than the former location. It proved, however, that lot number nine was not so desirable a place for a church as had been anticipated. When, therefore, in 1880, the Rev. Michael Ph. Fallize became pastor of St. Joseph's and concluded that a new church building was needed, he determined to return to the grounds at the corner of Hill street and La Salle avenue. Some other use must therefore be made of large lot number nine, and the little brick church building. It was then that this square was purchased by St. Mary's Academy, to be used as the site for a hospital. The old building was accordingly prepared for its new use, and the hospital was opened

in the year 1882. The people were not at that time accustomed to hospital service, and there was for a few years even a repugnance on the part of many sick persons to enter a hospital. The facilities for caring for the sick and injured became so apparent, however, and the good words spoken by the patients who had been nursed by the sisters were so generous and hearty that patients increased in number year after year; and after ten years' experience it was determined that more room and a better building were needed. The new St. Joseph's Hospital was then planned, and on April 26, 1903, the cornerstone was laid with elaborate ceremonies and in the presence of a large concourse of people. The building, as now completed and furnished, is one of the most complete hospitals in the country. It is admirably adapted to its purposes, located on high grounds overlooking the city, with large and pleasant rooms and with complete modern appliances and all conveniences for the careful nursing of its patients. This hospital is in charge of the Sisters of the Holy Cross.

The Epworth Hospital, whose handsome building is located at the northeast corner of Main and Navarre streets, originated in 1892. It was at first intended as a home for unfortunates, and was in charge of the Woman's Home Missionary societies of the Methodist church and the Dorcas society of Milburn Chapel. Since that time the hospital has steadily grown in public favor, and is one of the best constructed hospital buildings in the state. Mrs. Clara A. Carr is the superintendent. The board of lady managers is: President, Mrs. George M. Studebaker; vice-presidents; first, Mrs. C. H. Myers; second, Mrs. F. P. Eastman, third, Mrs. J. B. Stoll; fourth, Mrs. Martha Hillier; secretary, Mrs. K. C. De Rhodes; treasurer, Mrs. Charles Haecke; finance committee, Mrs. Charles Arthur Carlisle, Mrs. Charles Krieghbaum, Mrs. F. J. Lewis Meyer, Mrs. Charles Russ and Mrs. M. M. Stull. The board of trustees is: President, Marvin Campbell; vice-president, William R. Boyd; secretary, John Roth; treas-

urer, John C. Paxon; Col. George M. Studebaker, Judge Lucius Hubbard, John Chess Ellsworth and Lloyd F. Weaver.

There is a unique custom established in the city, designed to secure contributions for the support of both city hospitals. It is called Tag Day, and was instituted chiefly through the efforts of Mr. Charles Arthur Carlisle. The day is observed at some fixed time in the pleasant weather in May or June, when an active and eager host of ladies place themselves at conspicuous points in the city and distribute hospital tags to every comer. It is not considered in good form on those anniversaries to be without a hospital tag pinned upon the breast. Those who are thus tagged contribute what they feel disposed to the good ladies, who thus toil from six o'clock in the morning until six o'clock in the evening in their sweet work of charity. The contributions are divided equally between the two hospitals.

Sec. 14.—HOTELS.—David Rohrer Leeper was born near the intersection of McCartney's creek with the Michigan road, now Michigan avenue, just beyond the present city limits, January 12, 1832, and died at his home, on the Hights north of the St. Joseph river, in this city, November 27, 1900. He was identified with the growth of this city from his infancy, and had, especially during his later years, given a great deal of his time and attention to our early history. Of this history, did his modesty permit, he might truthfully say with Virgil's hero: "All of which I saw, and a great part of which I was." As representative and senator in the general assembly of the state, and still more as mayor of his city, he won the admiration of his fellow citizens; yet his tastes were literary rather than political. He was fond of gathering up the facts of the early history of the city and county and then writing them out in an interesting story, in the simple and elegant style of which he was so consummate a master. In March, April and May, 1900, a few months before his untimely death, Mr. Leeper

wrote for the South Bend Times a series of gossip papers on the early hotels of the city. Incidentally, these sketches contain much historical matter and personal reminiscences. From them the greater part of this history of our hotels is taken, almost word for word:^a

The history of the hotels of South Bend has in several instances been given more or less attention through the local newspapers and otherwise. If the present effort in the same direction should show in some particulars more detail and closer approach to accuracy, it will be owing solely to the fact that more time and patience have here been given to the matter than would be practicable in the rush of ordinary newspaper work. Yet the writer did not flatter himself that his narrative was exhaustive or free from error.

Within its first decade there were, altogether, eleven taverns operated in the town. Just when the first two of these were opened may not at present be easily determined. The earliest documentary evidence on the subject known to the writer is to be found in the records of the county commissioners' court, where, at their first session, September, 1831, Calvin Lilly, Benjamin Coquillard and Peter Johnson were each granted a license for this purpose. On November 23, following, the advertisements of Lilly and Coquillard appeared in the North-Western Pioneer, this being the second number of that newspaper; the first number is missing from the preserved file. Lilly's place is said to have been the first and Coquillard's the second, both dating back to 1830. These claims appear to be based solely upon tradition and cannot now be verified. Both Lilly and Coquillard boarded some of Brookfield's men when he was surveying the town plat in the spring of 1831, which may signify, as far as it goes, that they were keeping tavern at that date.

Mr. Lilly's announcement runs as follows:

"SOUTH BEND INN.

"Calvin Lilly.

"Has opened a House of public Entertainment on St. Joseph Street. His table is furnished with the best the country will afford—his Bar is supplied with the choicest of Liquors—and his stable with provender.

a. Acknowledgments are due to Mr. H. S. K. Bartholomew, of Goshen, Indiana, for the use of these papers. Mr. Bartholomew is himself an enthusiastic student of our early history. He is president of the Elkhart County Historical Society.

"No exertion will be wanting to render general satisfaction to those who may favor him with a call."

This building stood on the northeast corner of lot 37, which is the irregular tract lying southwest of Vistula avenue and west of St. Joseph street. The property seems to have belonged to Edmund Pitts Taylor, who advertises the same for sale, April 17, 1832, possessing to be given May 1, and described it as "a good frame house, two stories high, with a brick cellar—likewise a two-story hewed log house and kitchen, well calculated for a public stand and situated in as beautiful and pleasant part of town, as any other. The lot is 200 feet front on Pearl street."

May 22, 1832, the North-Western Pioneer makes the following announcement: "The Printing Office has been removed to the second story of the house formerly occupied as a tavern by Mr. Lilly, on the corner of St. Joseph and Pearl streets." St. Joseph street is here mentioned first, which may have some significance, indicating that this was then the principal street, the Michigan road not having been constructed, and the "dragoon trace" between Fort Wayne and Chicago at that time crossing Bowman's creek near the present Henry Studebaker's barn, intersecting St. Joseph street at about Wayne, and then following the former down to Pearl. The place was now certainly vacated as a hotel. It has not been possible to find out anything of its subsequent history. If part of the building was a frame, as is stated, it was most likely the first of the kind in the state north of Logansport. E. P. Taylor, the owner, as is well known, was a brother of Latrop M. Taylor, one of the founders of the town, and came to this locality not long after his brother. Most people of today remember "Pitts" Taylor best as the owner and operator of a sawmill on the West Race, and his immense log piles on and about the present site of the stand-pipe and over the adjacent bluff.

The *Union Hall*, a "House of Public Entertainment," in the language of that day, was owned by Benjamin Coquillard, brother of the elder Alexis, and father of the late Alexis, the well known capitalist and wagon manufacturer. The building stood on the site of the L. F. Baker rooms attached to the rear of the present Citizens' National Bank. Some say the location was on the point across the alley; but that is hardly probable, for Mr. Coquillard did not own any ground there and it

is not likely that he would have built on ground belonging to somebody else, especially as his brother was half owner of the whole town plat. The frame that preceded the present brick and that was long known as the Harris corner, was built in 1838 by Wm. H. Patteson; and now, modified in external appearance, stands on the northeast corner of Jefferson and St. Joseph streets. Mr. Patteson was long a merchant in South Bend, was recorder of the county, and always a staunch pillar of the Baptist church. The late "Deacon" Hatch called him "Praying Billy." The two were partners. They did business, as Hatch was wont to say, according to the scripture; they watched and prayed, Billy doing the praying and Hatch the watching. Humble as the Union Hall was in itself, it was nevertheless quite ambitious in its pretensions. The proprietor, in his advertisement, "hopes, by his long experience in the business, to give general satisfaction to those who may favor him with a call. His table is furnished with the best the country affords. His bar is supplied with the choicest of liquors." His advertisement appears in the same issue of the paper as Lilly's, and his license also bears the same date as Lilly's; though it has been claimed—on what authority is not known—that the *South Bend Inn* was the first to begin business. It is not probable that his career as mine host was long continued. At any rate his last license was issued in September, 1832, and on November 10, following, the title passed to his brother Alexis, he having held it exactly one year.

Calvin Lilly in 1831 purchased of the original proprietors lots 28, 29 and 30, which comprise the block lying on the west side of Michigan street between Jefferson and the first alley north, being 198 by 165 feet, or three-fourths of an acre. On this property he erected a one-and-a-half-story frame house, which was known as *Lilly's Tavern*. The proprietor took out a tavern license for this stand at the September term. It was in the bar room of this establishment that the first circuit court of the county was held on October 29, 1832, with Hon. John R. Porter as the president judge. The session lasted but a single day. The first case was a divorce suit and was successful, thus establishing a reputation for the state in this line which it has since zealously sustained. The second case was for libel, and the third the prosecution of a woman for selling liquor to the Indians.

A son of this defendant learned his trade as a tanner with Mr. Bugbee, and is now, if living, a respected citizen of one of the flourishing county seats of northern Indiana, having represented the county in the legislature for one or more sessions. Mr. Lilly appeared at the commissioners' court for a tavern license the last time at the May term, 1834. March 9, 1835, he sold to John Fowler, and went his way to swell the tide setting as the star of Empire takes its way. From a rather cursory examination of the record, Mr. Fowler appears to have held but one license as tavern-keeper, this having been issued at the September term, 1835. What happened here for several years succeeding this date, cannot now be learned. But in 1837, Mr. Almond Bugbee, to whom the writer was indebted for much of the information used in this article, boarded at the place, the location being indicated by a large swinging sign, which bore in sharp relief the, at that day, anomalous legend, "Temperance House."^a By the way, in passing, it may be remarked that while drinking may have been quite as common in those days as at present, the cause of temperance was then perhaps given much more serious attention. Early in this very year the Rev. Alfred Bryant was at the head of a temperance movement which received 156 signatures, among which were those of the father, mother, two uncles and an aunt of the writer. These, indeed, needed no such formality for self-protection; for not one of them touched, tasted, or handled. Some reader may think that this laudable trait might have been better sustained among some of the very few descendants now living. Of those 156 whose names were thus enrolled, but one remains to tell the story. He had been in the village but a few weeks. The letters t. t. a. follow his signature, meaning teetotal abstinence, a designation he has ever since maintained, in letter and in spirit. It goes without saying, remarks Mr. Leeper, that I refer to our well-preserved and highly esteemed octogenarian, Almond Bugbee. I do not know how long Mr. Fowler kept the Temperance House. The last occupant of the place in the Forties was James Doan, who was a blacksmith at the end of the West Race, and made the first steel plow known in Northern Indiana. He crossed the plains in 1849, the entire distance on foot. A year or two later his body, still warm, was found on the trail between Carson valley and Placerville,

a. See Chap. 13.

where he had been murdered and robbed. In 18— Mr. Fowler sold all his real estate to David Stover, and moved to California. To the latter gentleman I am also indebted for much old-time data. Hale and hearty at four score and four, he now resides at his cosy semi-country home near Springbrook. Mr. Fowler had several sons and one or more daughters. One of the daughters was the mother of the Listenberger brothers, Albert and Miner. Alexander, the second son, was a Mexican war veteran, and lost a thumb at the storming of the Heights of Cerro Gordo. He also made an honorable record as a colonel of infantry in the war for the Union.

The building, so long known as Lilly's Tavern, according to Judge Turner in his Gazetteer of the St. Joseph Valley, was moved to Jefferson street, and used as a warehouse for the Studebaker Wagon Works. I know not what became of it afterward, but believe it to be a part of the livery stable on West Jefferson street.

The *Michigan Hotel* was situated on the southwest corner of Michigan and Washington streets, now known as the Coonley drug store corner. It was erected by Peter Johnson, father of Ex-City Councilman Johnson, grandfather of Thad. S. Taylor, and, several years later, an associate judge. Mr. Johnson moved with his family to South Bend from Logansport early in 1831. Ice was still in the Tippecanoe and in Yellow river, but was too rotten for safe crossing; so that Indian canoes had to be obtained with which to ferry. The trail from the south then swung to the westward through what is now Liberty and Greene townships, this county, to avoid the lakes, marshes and heavy timber on the direct route, afterward taken by the Michigan road. Mr. Johnson was a practical carpenter and builder, and began at once the erection of his hotel and stable, the latter on the alley at the west end of the lot. The main building was a two-story structure, and may still be seen at 215 West Navarre. There was also a wing attached, which fronted on Washington street. The license was granted to commence August 1, that year. The same season Mr. Johnson built the Fairplay, which was the first keel boat to gladden the waters of the St. Joseph. Washington street between Michigan and Main was his shipyard. Here he erected the necessary scaffolding upon which he mounted the largest pirogue available. This he split in two with a whip-saw. Then oak plank of

the proper length were ripped out in like manner and bent to match the contour of boat along the line of its clearage. Now, with the knees, beams, calking, pitching, running-board, enclosing, pike-poles, and rudder-sweep, the boat was launched for service. Mr. Johnson was also the contractor and builder of our first court house.

In 1834, the license for this house was issued in the name of Mr. Wm. L. Earl, father of Mrs. A. B. Merritt, of this city, and Wm. L. and Daniel Earl, of California. Mr. Earl was previously a partner with Alanson M. Hurd in the iron works and town plat of Mishawaka, and was keeping tavern there, says Mrs. Merritt, at the time of the great meteoric shower, in 1833. He alleged that Hurd swindled him out of his interests in that locality. In 1835, when the United States land office was opened at Laporte, the *Michigan Hotel* did a thriving business. At the September term, 1836, Mr. Earl took out license for Earl's Tavern, a stand which he erected that season at the present site of Lakeville, he having purchased for this purpose a 40 acre tract of Jacob Rector, grandfather of our Attorney J. D. Henderson. In the same year Mr. Johnson sold the Michigan Hotel property to one Charles Thrasher, and built a sawmill on the edge of the bluff at the rear of the present residence of Hon. J. B. Stoll. This was the first attempt to employ steam power for manufacturing purposes in St. Joseph county and the experiment proved a dismal failure. It cost more for fuel than the mill could earn. Daniel Gephart appears to have kept the hotel for a short time, having taken out license at the September term, 1836. Levi Wills followed; then John Mowry and Isaac M. Baldwin, September, 1837; several months after Levi Wills again, in January, 1838. Mr. Wills, it may here be stated, afterward kept "Our House" at Mt. Pleasant, this county. In 1850, he crossed the plains to California. He there engaged in supplying some of the Hangtown markets with beef cattle, and soon after was killed by a wild steer. The hotel property was sold December 12, 1837, by Mr. Thrasher to Abram R. and John H. Harper and John N. Smith. On February 27, 1838, a permit was granted these proprietors to occupy for 120 days a part of Michigan street opposite this lot and the one adjoining on the south for making improvements on this property. What these improvements were does not appear; perhaps the erection of the wing to the west

was one of them. It was the Harpers, probably, that changed the name to *American Hotel*, a name borne on its large swinging sign to the close of its career. In 1838, Renatus N. Koehler came to South Bend from Pennsylvania, and clerked in Harper's store for awhile. In January, 1839, he and Thomas Duey, having formed a partnership, rented the hotel and ran it till November, 1840. Now the Harper brothers themselves carried on the business, and later Abram alone took charge. In January, 1845, the smallpox broke out in the village and spread to an alarming extent. From first to last there were about 75 victims and the percentage of fatalities was very great. Some of the patients were quartered in this hotel and Harper, rather than have these taken to the pest house, had the doors closed.

Louis Comparet, brother of Mrs. Alexis Coquillard, and long a noted wit of the town, had a very severe attack of varioloid among the earliest of the attacked. He recovered in season to be of much service in attending other patients, among these our ex-mayor, William Miller, who was at the American. Jacob N. Massey, happening to meet Louis on the street, inquired as to Miller's condition, and was told the case was very serious. Jacob was very pious; and his thoughts turning beyond things of earth, earthy, he asked Comparet whether he thought Miller would like to see a preacher. "Oh, yes! Oh, yes!" said Louis, seizing heartily upon the opportunity to perpetrate a joke. Jacob soon found the Rev. Mr. Pratt, the Baptist minister here, and brother of United States Senator Daniel D. Pratt, of Logansport. Both the preacher and the senator were men of giant frames and stentorian lungs. Preacher Pratt consented to serve without hesitation, though he may have wondered why Mr. Massey did not see his own preacher, Alfred Bryant, long the Presbyterian pastor here. Well, Mr. Pratt prepared himself for the ordeal as well as he could, covering his face with a bandanna handkerchief. As he opened the door of the scourged chamber, Louis, now happening to be in and expecting a scene, slipped out. Pratt approached the bedside and asked Miller as to whether his services were desired, and was told that no such request had been made. He then inquired whether he should come again, with the reply that there was no necessity for him to thus expose himself. Nor did he. This story with many variations, was for many

years retailed as the stock joke of the town. I have given Mr. Miller's version of the incident, as he related it to me a few days ago. In 1847, August 25, Koehler & Duey again became the landlords, and now the owners as well. Mr. Koehler was the actual head, as Mr. Duey, for his part, took charge of the farming interests of the firm.

Another story was current about the town for many years, happening during this management. One James McGoggy, a carpenter, who had a terrible impediment of speech from a bad case of hare-lip, came into the bar room one day, in a state, seemingly, of considerable excitement. Elmer Rose was with him. Addressing Mr. Koehler, McGoggy went on to detail that Rose and he had just bet the drinks on a certain dispute between them, and asked whether they could get the grog and pay for it when the wager was decided. Mr. Koehler, with his usual suavity, but by no means his usual sagacity, set out the jug. Both quaffed down a generous potation. McGoggy now proceeded to explain. "Well, Mr. Koehler," said he, "Elmer and I were looking at your sign post out there and wondering which way it would fall when it rotted off at the bottom. We got to disputing about it and finally made the bet. I bet it would fall south, and Elmer, the fool, bet it would fall north." Of such, it appears were the wit and humor when the bar room was the social resort of the town. In 1850, Koehler & Duey sold the property to Capt. Samuel L. Cottrell and the furnishings to Col. Adam S. Baker, our now venerable townsman, of 908 South Michigan street. Mr. Baker kept the hotel till the Michigan Southern and Northern Indiana railroad was completed, which I think was in 1851. Daniel Haight and George Clark, his brother-in-law, next became the proprietors. They remained as such only about six months. Sylvanus G. Gaylord then operated it, probably till he and Lot Day, Jr., succeeded to the proprietorship of the St. Joseph hotel, which was on December 28, 1858. This seems to have been the last use made of the so-called American corner as a hotel. Indeed, the lower floor had for some time prior been used for merchandising by Ezekiel French and a Mr. Adams, and perhaps after them others. It was the longest-lived hotel known to South Bend, running as such for about a quarter of a century. The present three-story brick was erected in 1866 by Ex-Sheriff Solomon W. Palmer, Dr. George F. Nevius and James

Bonney, the latter our veteran photographer.

Next in order seems to come the *Eagle Hotel*. I do not know much of this hostelry. It is one of the three hotels marked on the first map of South Bend, made, as would seem from some of its data, early in 1837. It was a story and a half frame that stood on the southeast corner of Lafayette and Washington streets, across from the present First Presbyterian church. The lot was purchased of Samuel Hanna by Levi Barnes and Samuel C. Russ, jointly, on November 16, 1835. Both were carpenters and joiners, and doubtless put up the building. Samuel C. Russ was licensed to keep tavern here at the May term, 1836, and again at the September term, 1837. Russ was succeeded by John A. Prestana, who became owner of the property August 24, 1841. Prestana sold to Amable M. Lapierre, April 26, 1843, and moved from here to Chicago. Mr. Willis A. Bugbee remembers the family well and visited them in that city, they having a son about his age. Mr. Lapierre was a Frenchman, and withal an ardent Methodist, although brought up a Catholic. He was a bricklayer and plasterer by trade, and was the head mason on the first college building put up at Notre Dame. The smallpox here in 1845 marked him as one of its victims, and he carried a badly pitted face to his grave. He was also involved in the noted Norris fugitive slave case, and I think, as a consequence, lost his property through process of the United States court at Indianapolis. Later, he removed to Niles, where he was gathered to his fathers some years ago. John A. M. Lapierre, of 113 East Navarre street, is his nephew. Mr. Bugbee boarded with Russ a while in 1837. His bedchamber was the loft with nothing between him and the star-bespangled firmament save the shingle roof, through which the snow often filtered with a liberality that did not always evoke joyous apostrophes to "the beautiful." There were flush times then. The Kankakee canal^a was in course of construction, so was the East race. Judge Garrett V. Denniston, who, with "Prince" John Van Buren, Gen. Wm. J. Worth, of Mexican war renown, and others, was pushing the last-named enterprise, was one of the boarders. There were about twenty in all. The current rate was \$3.00 for board and lodging; cheap enough, in all conscience, one would think, since most supplies were at that time as high or higher than at the present day. But,

a. See Chap. 9, Subd. 1, Sec. 2.

nevertheless, a dollar looked much larger than it does to our vision. Benj. R. Hall was running the Exchange at the same time. He had syndicate ideas in his head, and organized a combination among the craft to advance the rate to \$3.50. At once there arose a loud protest. The hotel patrons of the several establishments held a meeting and vigorous resolutions were adopted. Mr. Bugbee, backed by those of the Eagle Hotel, presented a series of these fulminations to his landlord. John Milligan, of The Free Press, got out fiery "dodgers" headed "Insurrection," and had them scattered about the streets. The big two-story Collmer building on Vistula avenue, built by Robert Wickersham, was rented and a man named Larabee engaged to take charge of it as a community boarding house for the irate "insurrectionists," as they were pleased to call themselves. The upshot was a back-down on the part of the hotel keepers, a restoration of the old rate and the abandonment of the boarding house project. The Eagle Hotel building burned down a few years ago and the site is now graced with the elegant Kizer & Woolverton block occupied by the Eliel drug store.

The Washington Block was the pride of the town in its day. The site was on lot 19, which lies on the north side of Washington street from Main to the first alley east. The lot was purchased February 5, 1833, from State Senator Samuel Hanna, of Fort Wayne, by Samuel Studebaker, who was the original owner of the Martin L. Wenger farm, now embraced within the city limits. March 1, 1836, Mr. Studebaker sold the same to Hiram Rush; but there being some deferred payments the deed was not made till 1840. Mr. Studebaker, dying meantime, the conveyance was executed by the late Judge Thomas S. Stanfield, as commissioner in chancery. Mr. Rush, immediately after the purchase in 1836, subdivided the lot into blocks fronting upon Washington street, about if not exactly, as marked off by the several buildings that occupy the ground today. The purchasers were James and Wm. Wickersham, Charles Egbert, F. J. and E. Townsend, and Wm. M. and John Parker. The building was a frame, 60 feet deep by 145 feet long, the whole three stories above the ground with a basement. Thus extending from Main street east on Washington to within 20 feet of the alley, it was for that day and for so small a village a quite imposing structure, as its front eleva-

tion appeared in its white paint varied with window shutters in green. The two Wickershams owned three of the blocks and were the prime movers in the enterprise. Both were carpenters and joiners, as was also their brother Robert, and these three did the bulk of the work, William superintending and doing the laying out. Ralph Staples arrived in the village just as the rafters were being placed, and thereafter was a conspicuous figure on the job. From that time forward for many years there were few buildings requiring carpenter work, hereabouts, either in town or county, that Ralph did not have a hand in their construction. Sixty-two feet of the west end of the building in question was planned and fitted up for a hotel and took the name *Washington House*, which it bore to the end. It was owned by the two Wickershams, James and William. The first license for the tavern, as such called in the official records, was taken out by William and Robert Gephart at the September term, 1837; but the establishment was opened August 1, the previous month.

Andrew Simmons succeeded the Gepharts, taking out the county license in his name at the March term, 1838, while the town incorporation license was issued to Alva Simmons, his wife, May 15, following. Simmons was keeping the place as early as February 3, that year, at which date David Scott took breakfast there and had his horse fed, after having foully murdered and robbed his friend Joshua Copeland on Rolling Prairie. Mr. Bugbee at the same time did some repairing on Scott's bridle. Scott was overhauled at Edwardsburg, taken back to Laporte, tried, convicted, and hanged in the presence of an immense concourse of people. Gephart and Richmond were the next proprietors, their license being dated September, 1838. The next license was issued to Robert Gephart at the May term, 1839. The widow of Robert, I may here state, is still living in Niles, at the age of 73. On December 12, the same year, Mary Gephart, widow of Daniel and mother of Robert and William, figures as the proprietress through an advertisement of the hotel furniture and fixtures for sale. From the spring of 1840 for several years the stand seems not to have been occupied. At least, definite data are not at present known. Chauncey S. Fassett and John Hooper each took the station as mine host here for awhile, but exactly when or how long have not been ascertained. I interviewed

a lady in this city on the subject. She was married in 1844, and at once took rooms in the Washington House, occupying them for a year or more. Mr. Fassett, she said, kept the hotel during that time. From Mr. Bugbee's abstracts of titles, which he kindly allowed me to consult, we learn that Mr. Hooper purchased an interest in the property February 13, 1845, and that he sold this interest to Stephen Fields, December 18, 1847. If this period of part ownership affords any clue to Mr. Hooper's occupancy, it is about all I have been able to find, except that the lady to whom I have just referred stated that he was living there at the time of the death of his mother-in-law, Mrs. Jane Smith. Mr. Defrees, the accommodating sexton of the city cemetery, at my request, found the proper inscription on Mrs. Smith's tombstone in the Hooper lot, which gave her death as on May 1, 1845.

I have a distinct personal recollection of seeing Mr. Fassett then. We lived on a farm three to four miles distant from town. He was the customer for the butter we had to spare, paying 10 cents per pound by the year whatever the current price. I was attending school in town, living at home and walking back and fourth for the sake of muscular development. I sometimes had to carry the dairy product to boot. But I do not recall the date. Nor do I remember even having seen Mr. Hooper about that place. In 1848, "Black" John Rush succeeded to the proprietorship, his advent as such being duly heralded in *The Register*, in which, under date of February 18, he announces that he has rented the hotel, "refurnished and refitted it up in the most convenient style." This was the first instance after 1832 that any direct reference to any "hotel" in South Bend had been found, and afforded much relief, as the musty pages of *The Register* and of the few stray copies of *The Free Press* were being eagerly searched. Mr. Rush kept the place till March 3, 1849, when the ownership passed to John Grannis and John Hammond. Mr. Rush, wife and two daughters crossed the plains to California in 1850, the two former dying of cholera in Sacramento shortly after their arrival. The oldest daughter, Julia, married William L. Earle and now lives in Jolon, California. Mr. Hammond became the active manager of the hotel and became its sole owner till it went into "innocuous desuetude," as Grover Cleveland would say. This was probably in about 1856, when the first St. Joseph

Hotel was opened. The three story brick on the alley east of the hotel, now occupying part of the site, was erected by Joseph G. Bartlett in 1865, T. Wilke Defrees and Elias V. Clark, contractors.

In 1837, Benjamin Wall began tavern keeping on the southeast corner of Michigan and Jefferson streets. Upon the great swinging sign, in conspicuous letters, was the alluring scroll, "Traveler's Rest." The license was issued at the November term. Mr. Bugbee was a guest at the opening spread. Mr. Wall kept the place a number of years. The writer well remembers the guide-board on the tall sign post that, with its index finger, so long pointed the wayfarer to the south, advertising him that it was "65 miles to Logansport."

The property was purchased by Mr. Wall of the writer's father, and, it is believed, did not prove satisfactory as a hotel venture. The building was removed by Alex. Staples to 1221 Laurel street, where it may still be seen.

The *Franklin House*, on the south side of Washington street, stood on lot 36, on the first alley corner east of Odd Fellows Hall. An oval signboard mounted upon a high post, and inscribed with the name of the house, invited such as were hungered and athirst. It was the property of Henry and Margaret Diehl, both immigrants from Germany. The former was the maternal uncle of Charles Vinson, Sr., of this city, and Margaret was the sister of John Bert (or Beard, as generally called), who for many years kept a similar house in Mishawaka. He was the father of Henry Bert, the well-known meat market man, of this city. The first record we have of Henry Diehl in South Bend is that of a license to retail liquor, taken out at the September term, 1837. He then occupied a log house on the east side of Michigan street somewhere between Washington and Colfax avenue. The same kind of license was issued to him a year after that date, and also at the May term, 1839. At the September term, 1840, he received his first license for tavern keeping. January 15, 1838, he purchased the corner referred to, with 29½ feet fronting on Washington street and extending back 118 feet along the alley. The building was a two-story frame, covering the Washington street frontage, and extending back 70 feet. His barn was on the rear end of lot 33, on which Edward Fredrickson is now doing business. He could not pay for this lot, and it reverted to the grantor, Samuel Leeper. Mr. Diehl was a baker by trade and the fame

of his ginger-bread soon became known far and wide. The writer remembers distinctly how tempting it looked, dark-brown from the Orleans molasses, and the top crust deftly corrugated. A kind of root beer of his make also drew many customers. But his greatest attraction, perhaps was his musical clock. Set in motion, a number of automatic musicians would file out in front and at the signal of the leader the instruments were properly adjusted and the melody began to pour forth. At the end to the right was a clown whose antics kept time to the cadence. Mr. Bert had the same kind of a clock at Mishawaka. The writer acknowledges his profound indebtedness to each of these instruments for sundry free entertainments. The Diehl clock was sold by Mr. Charles Vinson in the settlement of the estate to Edward Buysee, the jeweler, for \$20, and Mr. Buysee, in turn, sold it to some Chicago party; so the mock orchestra may still be amusing the unsophisticated somewhere.

Mr. Diehl died November 19, 1841, at the age of about 35 years, and the funeral services were held at the Presbyterian church. He is said to have been quite intelligent and comely of person. His wife survived him many years, and, for some time—I do not know how long—continued the business. There were three children, Mrs. Catharine Schreck, Malinda, widow J. George Vinson, and John H., all of whom are still living and residents of this city.

The *Lafayette Hotel*, afterwards named the *National*, then the *St. James*, and now the *Windsor Hotel*, is situated at the southeast corner of Lafayette and South streets. On July 13, 1865, writes Mr. Leeper, President Whitten, father of William M. Whitten, for many years city civil engineer and county surveyor, purchased of the late George Knoblock the *Lafayette Hotel*, a one-story frame on the southeast corner of Lafayette and South streets. He enlarged the building by putting on another story and adding other improvements. In the following December, the place was opened as the *National Hotel*, with Mr. Whitten and Thomas J. Slick, his son-in-law, proprietors. July 28, 1868, Sarah A. Matthews, widow of Daniel Matthews, deceased, and daughter of Mr. Whitten, purchased part of the property, at \$5,000, and Mr. Slick retired. The business was continued in the firm name of Whitten & Matthews till 1874, when L. H. Packard took charge. In 1877, we find

R. Wansbrough thus acting. This is the year the building was partially destroyed by fire; but was soon rehabilitated, making it a three-story, as you see it today, when it was rechristened the *St. James*. Mrs. Matthews had now become the sole owner.

We shall now have to run over the succeeding proprietorships hastily as details would be tedious. L. H. Packard, 1879; Matthews & Crawford, 1880; Matthias M. Faulknor, 1881-2-3-4-5; Clem Crawford, 1885; Byron J. McElrath till May 18, 1888, when the irrepressible Louis Pfeiffer stepped upon the scene, purchasing the property, refurnishing the hotel, making certain improvements, and in general instilling new life and a thrifty air into the place. Louis seems to be there to stay, whoever else in that business may come and go as the years roll on.

The *Grand Central Hotel*, on South Michigan street, 114-116, was built and owned by Daniel M. Shively. Henry C. Knill was the first proprietor, opening in 1875. M. L. Dennis succeeded Mr. Knill in 1882. Frank Knill, Thomas Ragan, Henry C. Needham, A. K. Price, George W. Reynolds, S. H. Rice, Warner B. Titus and Mrs. S. J. Junkin followed in order as the lessees. Under Mr. Reynold's regime the name was changed to *Reynold's House*; under Mr. Titus' to *Titus House*; and now it is the *Columbia*. It was the first house in South Bend to introduce the passenger elevator, having put in one of these in May, 1879, and was the only hotel in the city with such a convenience till the opening of the new Oliver.

The *European Hotel*,^a afterwards used as the Y. M. C. A. hall, 122-124 South Main street, was erected by Dr. Robert Harris and Edward M. Irvin in 1880, and was opened by L. H. Packard the following year. In 1883, Mrs. Anna R. Smith became the proprietress, and changed the name to *Hotel Bristol*, under whose management the establishment eked out a precarious existence for about two years, when it was finally closed as a hotel.

The *Grand View Hotel*, on the northeast corner of St. Joseph street and Vistula avenue, was built by Christopher Muessel in 1892-3, and opened August 11, 1893, by John Ober. Then came, in order, Byron L. McElrath, September 28, 1896; Godfrey E. Knight, March, 1897; Mrs. Ida Powell, June, 1898; T. M. Morrison, March, 1899, who changed the name to *The Morrison*. It is now called the

a. See Chap. 11, Subd. 6, Sec. 11.

Avenue Hotel. The building is a substantial and sightly four story brick and the view from the location is one of the most picturesque in the city. It is the property of the heirs of the original projector, as above stated.

The *Exchange Hotel*, now known as the *Sheridan House*, was erected in 1840 by William L. Earl, who was its first landlord. It is located on the southwest corner of Michigan street and La Salle avenue, formerly Water street. This was originally the heart of the little town. On the northeast corner of the same streets was the Indian trading post of the American Fur Company, in charge of Alexis Coquillard, which he called the "Big St. Joseph's Station." At this point, too, was the first ferry across the St. Joseph. Naturally enough, therefore, was the place selected for the Exchange Hotel, which, under different names, has prospered to this day. It was for a time managed by Mr. Gibbs, and known as the *Gibbs House*. Dwight Deming also had charge of it for a long time, when it was known as the *Dwight House*. Samuel Ragan owned it for a time and called it the *Sheridan House*, after the great Union general. On being enlarged and improved a few years ago it received its present name, the *New Sheridan*. Other proprietors have been, Captain Mills, Jeremiah H. Knight, George Horn, William Mason, John F. Kirby. In 1895, it came into the hands of Bird Bickford who managed it until his death, since when it has been in charge of his family. It is, and has always been, an excellent hotel.

The *Hotel Johnson*, now the *Lafayette Hotel*, situated adjacent to the Grand Trunk passenger station on the north side, was built by Johnson & May, in 1895. It was badly damaged before its completion by the burning of John R. Shank's livery barn, and was purchased by Charles L. Goetz and the late Louis Benz and leased by them, June 1, 1896, to Alexander Curtis, who at once won a liberal patronage and has since maintained the stand as a favorite resort for the local and transient public. Mr. Curtis was by no means a novice in the hotel business, having, previously, long and acceptably filled that station at the Milburn House, Mishawaka. He also, by the way, belongs to one of Penn township's earliest pioneer families, being himself a native of that section, not of yesterday, either. He bears vivid recollections of the luxuries of the round-log cabin, the country schoolmaster's hickory sprout, and corn-hoeing barefoot

among the nettles, as well as do some of the rest of us.

Under the heading of "hotels" the following houses are mentioned in the city directories, but were perhaps more in the nature of boarding houses than hotels: Emmet House, corner of Franklin and South streets, F. Sullivan, 1869-70-71-72. 1871-72, Kunstman House, 125 South Michigan street, Andrew Kunstman, and, later, Conrad Oltsch; and Union House, corner of Michigan and Center streets, Franz Bauer, Jr., later Arnold & Vahlert, and now John C. Wagner. 1873-74, Lafayette House, 77 Michigan street (old numbering), George Knoblock & Son. 1876, South Bend House, 76 Michigan street, Frank Ambos. 1889, Hotel Royal, 117 West Washington street, Mrs. M. Vanderhoof. 1892, Hotel Washington, 538 South Scott street, M. Pfaffenbach.

The *Second St. Joseph Hotel* is the quaint looking three-story brick, with four dormer windows now known as 115-117 Colfax avenue, and partly occupied by Schuler & Klingel, the wholesale fruit, feed, and produce dealers. It was built and owned by the late David Greenwalt, being planned expressly for a hotel. Mr. Greenwalt was from Lebanon, Pa., and had the peculiar Pennsylvania ideas of architecture. The brick building on Water street directly north of this hotel presents another example of Mr. Greenwalt's architectural taste, as did the J. F. Studebaker residence, before remodeled, just east of Sunny-side.

The hotel was opened September 10, 1868, by Chauncey Nichols, formerly of the Bond House, of Niles, as proprietor, and L. H. Packard as clerk. The next year Barber and Slocum took the place, and this management was succeeded by E. L. Abbott, in 1871; by Jerry H. Knight and Henry Galloway, in 1872; by Henry Galloway, in 1873-4-5; and by John G. Greenawalt, in 1876, at the close of whose lease the St. Joseph Hotel, with its large imposing sign, ceased to exist. The name St. Joseph was twice applied to a hotel in this city; at first to a hotel on the site of the present Oliver and afterwards to this hotel on the north side of Market street, or La Salle avenue, as the street is now called.

After the second St. Joseph Hotel ceased to exist, as above stated, the building stood untenanted till about 1880, when Marvin Campbell became the lessee, with an extensive stock of hardware. With Marvin's characteristic

hustle the locality became a brisk and stirring center. Mr. Campbell sold his business in 1886 to Munroe & Creviston. To them succeeded Munroe & Keltner; and after them came Schuler & Klingel.

The first hotel on the site of the present Oliver was *The Old St. Joseph*. The name did not continue without interruption, and in one of the intervals the name of St. Joseph was taken by the second St. Joseph, on Market street, or La Salle avenue. In 1852, the late President Whitten, father of civil engineer William M. Whitten, purchased of the late Evan C. Chalfant, of Clay township, 54 feet of the west end of lots 240 and 239, this being part of the site of The Oliver block. He also purchased the next lot north and the one now occupied by Louis Nickel, Jr., & Co. There was a one-story frame on Washington next to the alley. Mr. Whitten put another story on this for his family residence and alongside of it he erected a two-story wagon shop. Just east of this building he had a blacksmith shop. William Conrad, later, became interested with Mr. Whitten in both ownership of the property and the business, the firm name being Whitten & Conrad. The former was a blacksmith and the latter a wagonsmith.

Mr. Conrad, later, became a resident of Warsaw, where he still resides. He is a staunch Democrat; is always seen at Democratic district gatherings and has served as a member of the state central committee.

In about 1857, Mr. Whitten removed his shop to the rear end of the lot just across the alley east of the present postoffice, and converted his two buildings on Washington street into one, and added at the rear a one-story part, 30x40 feet, thus forming what became the first St. Joseph Hotel. About the first of December, 1859, John A. Derbin leased this property and went to keeping tavern, calling the place The Derbin Hotel. County Assessor Thomas J. Slick clerked there about three months, commencing in December, that year. Mr. Derbin was an uncle of Yoppie Hogue, of the Hogue studio, Jefferson street.

About June 1, 1861, Mr. Derbin was succeeded by M. M. Shultz, who changed the name to National Hotel. Mr. Shultz (father-in-law of J. Edward Skillman, of the Singer works), continued here until 1862, when Mr. Whitten and his son-in-law, Harvey C. Borden, took possession and rented the west half of the St. Joseph Hotel of Elisha Egbert and Mary J. Higinbotham, connecting this with

the frame by an arched way. The west room of the St. Joseph Hotel was used for the office. The name National Hotel was continued under the new arrangement. In February, 1865, about two months before the great fire, Lot Day, Jr., purchased Mr. Borden's interest. There were some deferred payments. The loss was total, with no insurance. There was not the scratch of a pen to witness the indebtedness, yet it was paid to the last cent, without a whimper or quibble. The Days, it may be added, were long a prominent family in and about South Bend. Captain Lot Day, the elder, settled here in 1832, carried on the tanning business in several places, one of his tanyards being on Michigan street, just north of Navarre. Was also a brick manufacturer, and was the contractor in the erection of the first brick jail. He served as county commissioner, twice as sheriff, and once as state senator.

At a celebration of the Fourth of July, 1844, young Lot Day, then about 21, was acting as cannoneer. The cast-iron piece was placed on the bluff, about where the stand-pipe now lifts its lofty column. A charge prematurely exploded, driving the ramrod, with its rough swab end, through Lot's hands, tearing off the right hand entirely and the thumb off the other hand, besides terribly lacerating the remaining four fingers, but these were saved. Lot walked from the scene of the accident to the old Eagle Hotel (southeast corner Washington and Lafayette), then occupied by his sister Mary Ann, wife of William Norton. Here, a Dr. Brown and Dr. Merritt amputated the arm and dressed the other wounds, the former operating and doing a bungling job. This, I believe was prior to the use or knowledge of anæsthetics in the practice of surgery. David Stover, ex-Mayor Miller and Thomas E. Beyerly witnessed the operation. Much sympathy was aroused for the unfortunate young man, and liberal contributions were made by the citizens for his schooling, under the tutorship of Prof. C. M. Wright, who was long the leading educator in this section.

In 1846, the two Lots, father and son, were candidates on the Democratic ticket, the one for the state senate and the other for sheriff. The county was decidedly Whig, and each had a strong competitor, but both were elected. Lot, Jr., succeeded himself as sheriff by a largely increased majority, and at the close of his second term as such was

elected county recorder. Later, he was a member of the first board of directors of the state prison North. Of splendid figure, pleasing address, and a genial, generous nature, Lot Day, Jr., was beloved by everybody that knew him, even by the schoolboy and the frowsy urchin playing "knuckles" on the sidewalk. The elder Lot was among the early overland emigrants to California, where he died. The younger Lot went there, too, later; kept the National Hotel, at Sacramento, for awhile, and died in that state, some ten or more years ago.

After the destruction of the first St. Joseph Hotel by the fire of 1865, a continuous block, consisting of three-story business buildings and Good's Opera House, was erected by the several owners of the ground on the site of the hotel. On December 24, 1878, the block so erected was again destroyed in what is known as the St. Joseph hotel fire, one of the most disastrous that the city has ever known. The firemen worked vainly to extinguish the flames, while the temperature was five degrees below zero. Six buildings were destroyed with their contents, involving a loss of sixty thousand dollars, while several firemen had their hands and feet frozen.

One of the indirect results of this terrible fire was the building and naming of the *First Oliver House*. In the spring of 1879, the owners of the St. Joseph block decided to rebuild the entire frontage in a uniform style of architecture, the lower floors to be occupied as stores, while the upper stories should be converted into a hotel and the restored Good's Opera House.

Out of compliment to Mr. James Oliver, the new hostelry was christened the Oliver House, which was formally opened on the evening of July 14, 1879, with Jerry H. and Godfrey E. Knight, proprietors. The Knight Bros. ran the place for nearly ten years, and were followed, successively, by Jones & Cox, J. S. McFarland, father-in-law of Melville E. Stone, founder of the Chicago Daily News, W. B. Titus, Phelps & Parsons, Parsons & Faulknor, Faulknor & McElrath, Rice & Faulknor, and S. H. Rice. Under the latter's management the house was finally closed with a supper on the evening of April 30, 1898, after a period of nearly nineteen years. Few tears followed its going, for it betokened the beginning of the gorgeous up-to-date and splendidly equipped new hotel, The Oliver.

The new *Oliver Hotel*, which was erected

and furnished by the public spirit and munificence of Mr. James Oliver, was dedicated by a public reception at which there was a great outpouring of the people from the city and from the surrounding cities, towns and country, on the evening of December 20, 1898. On the following day the hotel was formally opened for business.

Mr. Leeper closes his painstaking, graphic and complete hotel reminiscences with this generous eulogy of the Oliver and its builder:

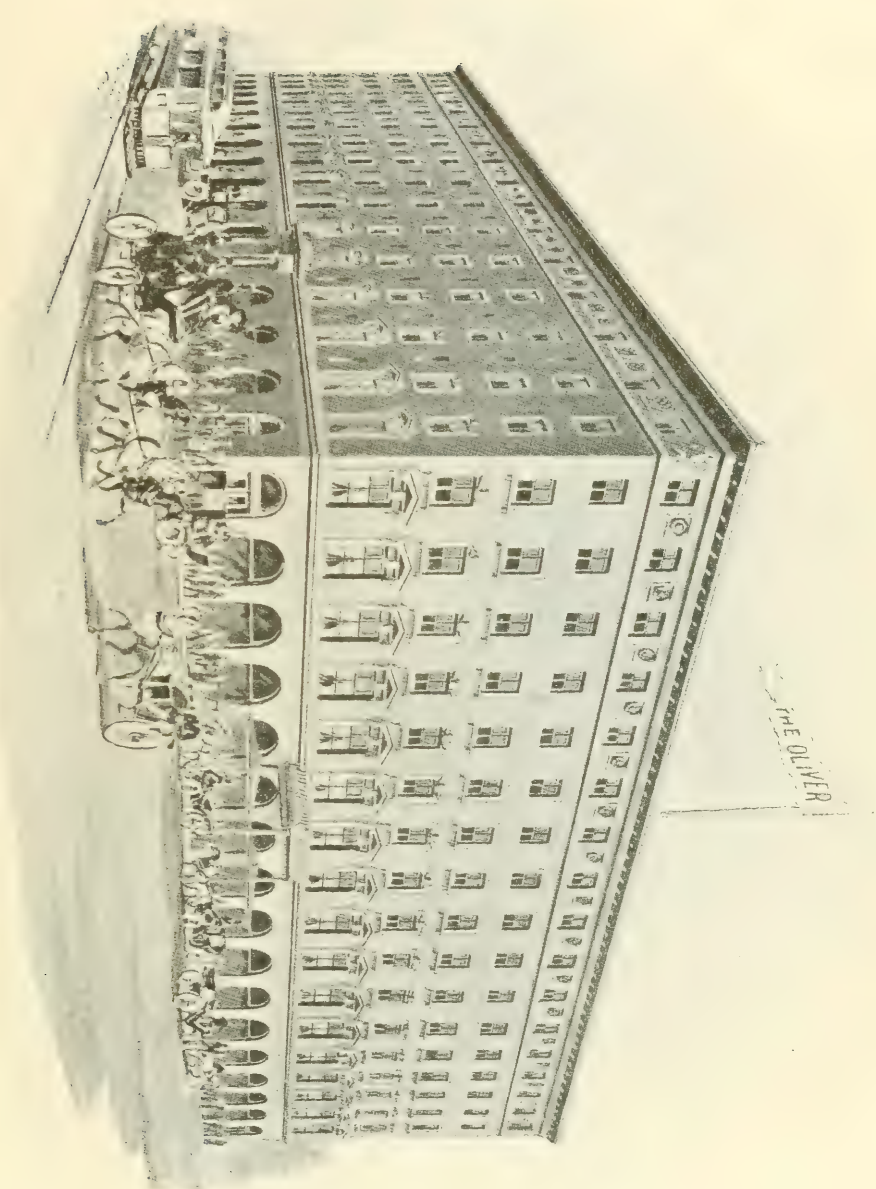
"The Oliver of today needs no writing up. It speaks for itself, as the pride of South Bend, as unexcelled in the state or in the West, as the latest and highest ideal of hotel appointments, as an enduring monument to its public spirited and free-handed founder, James Oliver."

The Oliver hotel is one of the most magnificent structures occupied for hotel purposes in the west.^a It has a frontage on Washington street of one hundred and sixty-five feet, and on Main street of one hundred and thirty-five feet. It is six stories in height, and of the most tasteful and imposing design of architecture in the renaissance style. The lower story is of light colored stone, and the upper stories of cream colored brick, with enriched terra cotta architraves, and with an elaborate and artistic frieze and cornice of terra cotta. The Washington street entrance is marked by a handsome Doric portico, with massive stone pedestals; and the Main street entrance is protected by an elaborately designed porte cochere of wrought iron.

The interior decorations and furnishings of the Oliver are superbly artistic and most beautiful in every detail, from the expansive and imposing rotunda, with its grand fresco ornamentations, to the sleeping apartments upon the upper floors. The parlors, dining rooms, guest chambers, halls and corridors are all finished in most beautiful designs and with the highest regard for artistic harmony and richness.

The paintings in the rotunda are works of art, and represent, in life size figures, the seasons, fine arts, poetry, architecture, sculpture, painting, the elements, water, fire, earth, and air, and music, song, the drama and the dance. The parlors, the Louis XVI and the Oriental rooms are marvels of beauty and finish, and are most luxuriously furnished; and the main dining room, with its flower-

^a. This description is chiefly from "South Bend and the Men who have Made it," pp. 52, 53.



OLIVER HOTEL, SOUTH BEND.

decked ceiling and tapestry panels upon the walls, is a dream of beauty. The spacious banquet room is most elaborately decorated, the panels in the walls are finished in crimson silk, with a background of deep cream, colored with gold, while the ceiling represents a large tinted panel, embellished with forty-five life-size allegorical cherubs, emblematic of the arts and seasons.

In every respect the new Oliver Hotel is one of the most magnificent and imposing edifices, and, in every detail and finish and furniture, is artistically beautiful and enduringly attractive.

In the rotunda is a massive gold loving cup, presented to Mr. Oliver by his friends, commemorative of the erection of the hotel. It is of superb design, with bas relief medallions of Mr. and Mrs. Oliver, and miniature reproductions of the pioneer factory and the modern works of the Oliver Chilled Plow Company. Aside from its intrinsic and artistic value, this loving cup is prized by its honored recipient rather as an evidence of the high esteem in which he is held by his friends and associates in this city which has been the scene of his labors and triumphs, from the day he came to Mishawaka, a poor boy, in the fourteenth year of his age, until he has entered upon his eighty-fifth year, blest with untold wealth and full of honors by reason of the great public benefits to which he has applied so generous a share of this wealth.

Sec. 15.—SCHOOLS.—By Article Nine of the Constitution of 1816, it was made the duty of the legislature "to provide by law for a general system of education, ascending in a regular gradation from township schools to a state university, wherein tuition shall be gratis, and equally open to all." In the same article particular provision was made for the creation of funds for the support of county seminaries, as intermediate between the township schools and the state university. The system was excellent in theory, but proved to be impracticable, as the funds to support such an elaborate system of education could not be provided.

Accordingly, in the constitution of 1851 the legislature was required only "to provide by law for a general and uniform system of common schools, wherein tuition shall be without

charge, and equally open to all."^a Not only is there no provision for a state university or a county seminary, or other high school, but there is express provision for the sale of county seminaries and requiring that the proceeds of such sale, and also "the moneys and property heretofore held for such seminaries," should become a part of the common school fund. The theory of the framers of the constitution of 1851 was very plainly, that ample provision should be made for a free common school education; but that any one who wished to give his child a high school, or a university education, should do it at his own expense.

Under the old constitution, as we have seen,^b a county seminary for St. Joseph county was established, and was located in South Bend, on the north side of West Washington street, at the intersection of William, on the site of the present high school. After the constitution of 1851 went into effect, the county seminary and grounds were purchased by the South Bend school trustees and have ever since been used for a high school. Whether high schools are at all authorized under our present constitution, has been questioned. But, while no express provision for such schools is found in the constitution, and while the requirement that the old county seminaries should be sold and the proceeds turned into the common school fund, seems like an implied provision against the support of such schools by the state, yet there are some general provisions found in Article Eight, Section One, which make it the duty of the legislature, not only to provide for "a general and uniform system of common schools," but also "to encourage, by all suitable means, moral, intellectual, scientific, and agricultural improvement." However this may be, high schools have been established and placed under control of city school trustees throughout the state.

In South Bend the high school proceeded

^a. Constitution of 1851, Art. 8.

^b. Chap. 6, Subd. 6, Sec. 11.

directly from the county seminary. Indeed, it was but a continuation of the old seminary under a new name and under direction of new officials. It was on July 16, 1853, as we have seen,^a that the transfer of the seminary property was made from the county officials to the board of town trustees. The purchase was on time, and the payments were not all made until after South Bend had become a city and the school functions of the board of town trustees had passed into the hands of the board of school trustees of the city of South Bend. On August 31, 1866, the deed of transfer was formally made, and soon afterwards there was a reorganization of the old school. The name of seminary passed away and that of high school took its place.

An accomplished teacher in the high school has written an interesting historical sketch of the South Bend schools, particularly the high school, from about the date of the deed of transfer of the seminary, which sketch is here inserted with her permission:^b

“The first step toward the organization of the South Bend High School was the appointment of Mr. Daniel Eyer as superintendent of the public schools in 1867. The board of education at that time consisted of Messrs. John Klingel, J. A. Henricks and E. S. Reynolds, and it was due mainly to Mr. Klingel’s efforts that our schools were graded and a high school was established. The schools of the city occupied five buildings: the old Madison school, a brick structure of four rooms; a frame building of two rooms on the site of the present Jefferson building; the Lowell school in the east part of the city, and the seminary on Washington street. Seventeen teachers were employed, and as the schools were entirely ungraded, classes ranging from primary readers to English literature, from notation to geometry, were found in the same room, conducted by one teacher.

“Mr. Eyer proved himself an able organizer, harmonizing conflicting conditions and

bringing order out of chaos; and soon the various schools were pursuing a uniform course of study leading up to the High school. The classification of the pupils who composed the High school was not an easy task, and so numerous were the inequalities in the preparation of pupils, that it was not until 1870 that a continuous four years’ course of study was followed.

“On account of the central location of the old seminary, it was selected as the home of the incipient school, and Mr. Eyer was installed as principal with one assistant. The seminary was a prominent building at that time, and as evidence of the importance of its erection we quote from the St. Joseph Valley Register of September 26, 1845: ‘This building, on the north side of Washington street, west of town, is rapidly approaching completion. It is of brick, two stories high, and is to be surmounted by a cupola.

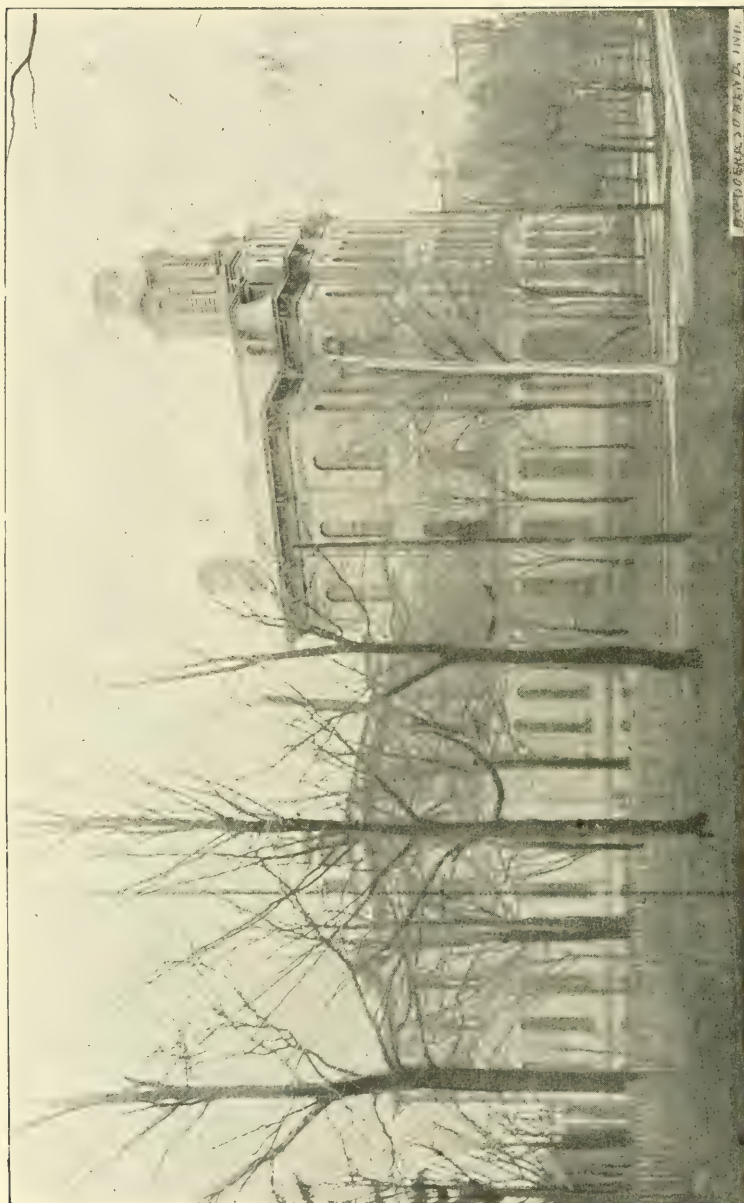
“‘The seminary stands near the center of an acre and a half lot, which belongs to it and which is to be inclosed and improved. There will be two rooms in the building, one below and the other above. The one in the second story is to be the full size of the building, undivided at present by any partition, and the two rooms will comfortably contain all the pupils of the institution for many years to come.’

“The prediction in regard to the capacity of the two rooms, as well as the location, ‘west of town,’ is especially interesting now, in view of our 10 overcrowded rooms and our location in the heart of the city.

“Unfortunately the records of the meetings of the board of education for the period from 1868 to 1873 have been lost, but we are able to give the important changes through the kindness of Mr. John Klingel, whose efficient services were given to our schools for many years. At the close of the first year of the existence of our High school, Mr. A. C. Ross was appointed principal, and Mr. Eyer, who was reappointed superintendent, conducted several classes, in addition to his work of su-

a. Chap. 6, Subd. 6, Sec. 11.

b. Mrs. Esse Bissell Dakin, in The Interlude.



HIGH SCHOOL, SOUTH BEND.

pervision. Professor Ross was succeeded in 1870, by Prof. Benjamin Wilcox, who enjoyed a wide reputation as an instructor. He completed the grading of the pupils and under his guidance the course of study was definitely prescribed, the school increased in numbers and interest, literary societies were established and a new High school building was felt to be a necessity. The time had come when the old seminary no longer comfortably contained all the pupils of the institution.

"Prof. Wilcox, Mr. John Klingel and Dr. J. A. Henricks were the moving spirits in the project of a new building, which assumed definite shape upon paper in the plans of Architect Rose, of Chicago. In April, 1872, the seminary was torn down, the High school occupying temporary quarters in the old Madison building. In September, 1873, the school met in the new building, a part of which was occupied by the Washington school.

"In April, 1874, the first diplomas were issued to a graduating class in assembly hall. The following year the school met with a severe loss in the death of Prof. Wilcox, whose sterling worth and upright character have left their impress upon all with whom he came in contact. His successors have been James DuShane, Charles H. Bartlett, Eugene F. Lohr, Stuart MacKibbin, Mary L. Hinsdale, John M. Culver and Dumont Lotz. Under these instructors the school has grown in numbers, strength and equipment until it stands second to none in our state for thorough instruction and practical work.

"In 1875-76 an additional month was given to instruction. The one course of study was expanded to three courses, Latin, German and English. The average attendance has increased from 50 to 280; the number of teachers from two to 11.

"The library, which consisted mainly of books of reference, numbered 148 volumes in 1887; at present we have 2,000 volumes and 21 periodicals. For a number of years the proceeds of commencement lectures and junior exhibitions were devoted to the pur-

chase of books, but the library has received no additions from this source for several years.

"The library occupies a room upon the second floor and is in charge of the assistant librarian, Miss Maude Ott, from 8 to 12 a. m. and 2 to 4 p. m. Pupils have the privilege of withdrawing books for use at their homes. A complete card catalogue has been made under the supervision of the librarian, Miss Thekla Sack.

"In 1886 a wing of four rooms was added to the building, a physical science room fitted up and the chemical laboratory enlarged and equipped with modern apparatus. In 1898 additional recitation rooms were formed by dividing two large rooms into four smaller rooms.

"Through the influence of Superintendent Moon the yard has become a beautiful park, with broad stone walks, a well kept lawn and high overarching trees, adding greatly to the attractiveness of the building.

"There are two societies connected with the school, the Euglossian and Cleosopie literary societies, founded by Prof. Wilcox in 1870. These societies have been valuable aids in the cultivation of literary taste and forensic ability, and for a number of years engaged in an annual contest during commencement week.

"The school year is divided into two semesters and the annual events are the junior exhibition, the reception tendered the juniors by the seniors, the faculty reception for the seniors, the baccalaureate sermon, class day and commencement."

Following the principalship of Mr. Dumont Lotz came that of Charles H. Bartlett, who held the position of principal of the High school for three and one-half years. After Mr. Bartlett came C. O. Davis, who is now a member of the faculty of the University of Michigan. The present principal, Mr. Isaac E. Neff, succeeded Mr. Davis in September, 1905. The number of teachers now in the high school is twenty-two, and the number of

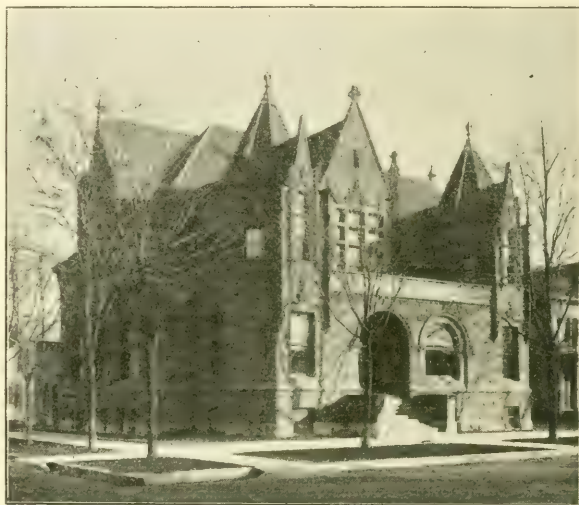
pupils, five hundred and seventy-three. A feature of this school that should be noted is the attention given to manual training. The graduates of the South Bend High school are admitted without examination as students of the colleges and universities of the country.

In 1867, as appears from the foregoing sketch, the city schools were ungraded and were all conducted in a few old buildings. Since that time, as the years have gone on, a complete gradation of studies and classification of pupils, from the kindergarten to the high school, have taken place. During the same period, all the old buildings have been taken down, and fine brick and stone structures been erected in their place, with the best present day appliances in every department. New buildings, of the same superior character, have been located at different points in the city, as increased population made it necessary.

Besides the high school, erected on the site of the old county seminary, the grounds in the rear of that building, and fronting on Colfax avenue, have been purchased and a beautiful building there erected for a grammar school, to be intermediate between the ward schools and the high school. This building is at present used also for the high school classes, the intention being, as soon as funds are available, to rebuild and improve the high school building on Washington street.

In addition to the high school and the grammar school, the city has the following ward, or primary schools, in which the first seven grades are taught: The Jefferson school; the Madison school; the Lafayette school; the Laurel school; the Coquillard school; the Elder school; the Franklin school; the Colfax school; the Linden school; the Oliver school; the Perley school; the Bowman school; the Weidler school; the Muessel school; and the Henry Studebaker school. The schools have been named either from the streets on or near which they are situated or from citizens distinguished in the history of the city.

Under authority of an act of the general assembly, approved March 7, 1881,^a the board of school trustees have established an excellent free *Public Library*, and have housed the same in one of the finest architectural public buildings of the city which is located at the southeast corner of Main and Wayne streets. Steps had been taken as early as 1872 for the establishment of a public library. In that year, principally through the efforts of Dr. Louis Humphreys, William G. George and John Klingel, a library was established in a rear room of a store on the east side of



PUBLIC LIBRARY, SOUTH BEND.

Michigan street, a little north of Washington street. In a short time, to secure more room, the library was removed to the second story of number one hundred and twenty-three West Washington street, where it flourished greatly until the building was burned. After the passage of the law authorizing the school board to establish a free library in connection with the public schools, and before the proceeds of the tax levies for the purpose were collected, Mr. James Oliver advanced the amount necessary to open the library and purchase the first books. Donations were made by Clement Studebaker, Leighton Pine

^a Acts, 1881, p. 47. And see amendment, Acts, 1883, p. 103.

and others, and in 1888, the library was opened on the third floor of the Oliver opera house block. In 1895 the school board purchased the lot at the corner of Main and Wayne streets; and the fine library building was completed that year and early the next, and on May 1, 1896, was formally opened to the scholars of the schools and to the public. The cost was about forty thousand dollars. Miss Virginia Tutt is the present accomplished librarian; and under her excellent management and that of her predecessor, Miss Evelyn C. Humphreys, the library has become an excellent school of instruction, not only for the children of the schools, but for the people at large.

By an act approved March 6, 1865, the legislature revised and codified the laws in relation to the common schools, and provided, amongst other things, for the election in each county of a school examiner, who should have general supervision over the schools of the county.^a

By an act in force March 8, 1873, the office of county superintendent was created, to take the place of that of school examiner.^b The county superintendent was given larger powers than those which had been given to the school examiner, and the office was in many respects made more efficient.

The school examiners for St. Joseph county were: William T. Van Doren, appointed June 7, 1861; Alvin S. Dunbar, appointed November 2, 1861; Charles A. Evans, appointed June 10, 1864; Jacob Merrifield, appointed January 30, 1866; and Elisha Sumption, appointed June 2, 1868.

In 1873, during Mr. Sumption's last term as examiner, the law was passed which abolished the office of examiner and created that of county superintendent, and he served a short time as superintendent, being the first to fill that office. The succeeding county superintendents have been: Andrew J. Foster, appointed July 1, 1873; David A. Ewing, ap-

pointed June 9, 1875; Frank A. Norton, appointed August 12, 1876; Calvin Moon, appointed June 4, 1877; John H. Baer, appointed in July, 1891; and William Clem, the present incumbent, appointed in June, 1897.

The officers of the city schools have been as follows:

BOARDS OF EDUCATION.

1865-'66, Almond Bugbee, Pres.; Rev. C. A. Evans, Sec.; Dwight Deming, Treas.
 1866-'67, Almond Bugbee, Pres.; Rev. C. A. Evans, Sec.; Dwight Deming, Treas.
 1867-'68, R. L. Koehler, Pres.; Philip Wagner, Sec.; Dr. J. A. Henricks, Treas.
 1868-'69, R. L. Koehler, Pres.; John Klingel, Sec.; Dr. J. A. Henricks, Treas.
 1869-'70, Ephraim S. Reynolds, Pres.; John Klingel, Sec.; Dr. J. A. Henricks, Treas.
 1870-'71, Ephraim S. Reynolds, Pres.; John Klingel, Sec.; Dr. J. A. Henricks, Treas.
 1871-'72, John M. Studebaker, Pres.; John Klingel, Sec.; Dr. J. A. Henricks, Treas.
 1872-'73, John M. Studebaker, Pres.; John Klingel, Sec.; Dr. J. A. Henricks, Treas.
 1873-'74, David Stover, Pres.; Daniel Greene, Sec.; Dr. J. A. Henricks, Treas.
 1874-'75, David Stover, Pres.; Daniel Greene, Sec.; Marvin Campbell, Treas.
 1875-'76, Elliott Tutt, Pres.; John Klingel, Sec.; Marvin Campbell, Treas.
 1876-'77, Elliott Tutt, Pres.; John Klingel, Sec.; Elias W. Hoover, Treas.
 1877-'78, Elliott Tutt, Pres.; John Klingel, Sec.; Elias W. Hoover, Treas.
 1878-'79, Elliott Tutt, Pres.; John Klingel, Sec.; Elias W. Hoover, Treas.
 1879-'80, Dr. George F. Nevius, Pres.; Elliott Tutt, Sec.; John Klingel, Treas.
 1880-'81, Dr. George F. Nevius, Pres.; Elliott Tutt, Sec.; John Klingel, Treas.
 1881-'82, Dr. George F. Nevius, Pres.; John Hay, Sec.; John Klingel, Treas.
 1882-'83, John Klingel, Pres.; John Hay, Sec.; Dr. George F. Nevius, Treas.
 1883-'84, John Hay, Pres.; Dr. C. A. Daugherty, Sec.; Benjamin F. Dunn, Treas.
 1884-'85, Dr. C. A. Daugherty, Pres.; John N. Lederer, Sec.; Benjamin F. Dunn, Treas.
 1885-'86, Dr. C. A. Daugherty, Pres.; John N. Lederer, Sec.; Benjamin F. Dunn, Treas.
 1886-'87, Dr. C. A. Daugherty, Pres.; John N. Lederer, Sec.; Benjamin F. Dunn, Treas.
 1887-'88, Dr. C. A. Daugherty, Pres.; Dr. D. M. Calvert, Sec.; Benjamin F. Dunn, Treas.
 1888-'89, Dr. C. A. Daugherty, Pres.; Dr. D. M. Calvert, Sec.; Benjamin F. Dunn, Treas.
 1889-'90, Dr. C. A. Daugherty, Pres.; Dr. D. M. Calvert, Sec.; Benjamin F. Dunn, Treas.
 1890-'91, Dr. C. A. Daugherty, Pres.; Joseph E. Williams, Sec.; Benjamin F. Dunn, Treas.
 1891-'92, Dr. C. A. Daugherty, Pres.; Joseph E. Williams, Sec.; Benjamin F. Dunn, Treas.
 1892-'93, Dr. C. A. Daugherty, Pres.; Joseph E. Williams, Sec.; Benjamin F. Dunn, Treas.

a. Acts, 1865, p. 1; see Sec. 33.

b. Acts, 1873, p. 75; see also Acts, 1899, p. 240.

1893-'94, Dr. C. A. Daugherty, Pres.; Henry F. Elbel, Sec.; Benjamin F. Dunn, Treas.
 1894-'95, Dr. C. A. Daugherty, Pres.; Albert Listenberger, Sec.; Henry F. Elbel, Treas.
 1895-'96, Albert Listenberger, Pres.; Henry F. Elbel, Sec.; Myron Campbell, Treas.
 1896-'97, Albert Listenberger, Pres.; Catharine C. Esmay, Sec.; Myron Campbell, Treas.
 1897-'98, Myron Campbell, Pres.; Catharine C. Esmay, Sec.; John A. Hibberd, Treas.
 1898-'99, Catharine C. Esmay, Pres.; Dr. John Cassidy, Sec.; John A. Hibberd, Treas.
 1899-'00, John B. Stoll, Pres.; Dr. John Cassidy, Sec.; John A. Hibberd, Treas.
 1900-'01, John B. Stoll, Pres.; Dr. John Cassidy, Sec.; Wm. O. Davies, Treas.
 1901-'02, John B. Stoll, Pres.; George A. Baker, Sec.; Wm. O. Davies, Treas.
 1902-'03, John B. Stoll, Pres.; George A. Baker, Sec.; Wm. O. Davies, Treas.
 1903-'04, Francis M. Jackson, Pres.; John B. Stoll, Sec.; George A. Baker, Treas.
 1904-'05, John B. Stoll, Pres.; Dr. Frederick P. Eastman, Sec.; Francis M. Jackson, Treas.
 1905-'06, John B. Stoll, Pres.; Dr. Frederick P. Eastman, Sec.; Francis M. Jackson, Treas.
 1906-'07, John B. Stoll, Pres.; Henry F. Elbel, Sec.; Dr. Frederick P. Eastman, Treas.
 1907-'08, John B. Stoll, Pres.; John C. Paxon, Sec.; Henry F. Elbel, Treas.

SUPERINTENDENTS.

Daniel Eyre.....	2 years.....	1867-1869
L. E. Denslow.....	1 year.....	1869-1870
W. K. Kidd.....	1 year.....	1870-1871
David A. Ewing.....	5 years.....	1871-1876
Alfred Kummer.....	3 years.....	1876-1879
James DuShane.....	12 years.....	1879-1891
Calvin Moon.....	16 years.....	1891-1907

HIGH SCHOOL PRINCIPALS.

Daniel Eyre.....	2 years.....	1867-1869
L. E. Denslow.....	1 year.....	1869-1870
W. K. Kidd.....	1 year.....	1869-1870
Benjamin Wilcox.....	4 years.....	1871-1875
James DuShane.....	3 years.....	1875-1878
Alfred Kummer.....	1 year.....	1878-1879
Charles H. Bartlett.....	11 years.....	1879-1890
Eugene F. Lohr.....	3 years.....	1890-1893
Stuart MacKibbin.....	2 years.....	1893-1895
Mary L. Hinsdale.....	2 years.....	1895-1897
John M. Culver.....	1 year.....	1897-1898
Dumont Lotz.....	3 years.....	1898-1901
Charles H. Bartlett.....	2 years.....	1901-1903
Calvin C. Davis.....	1 year.....	1903-1904
Isaac E. Neff.....	3 years.....	1904-1907

Many of our *Private Schools*, including parochial schools, the Assumption school and St. Joseph's academy, are noticed in the preceding sections of this subdivision. A private school of the utmost value to the commercial and manufacturing interests of the city is the South Bend Business College, in which young men and women are fitted for useful employment as bookkeepers, stenographers and typewriters. This is a first-class school of

its kind, and occupies airy and extensive apartments on the third floor of Nos. 228 to 236 and also No. 304 South Michigan street.

One of the most noted educational institutions conducted under private auspices in northern Indiana was the Northern Indiana College, founded in 1861 and located at the west end of Washington street, in South Bend. It was an incorporated college, for the education of young ladies and gentlemen. The first board of trustees consisted of Schuyler Colfax, William Miller, John H. Harper, John Brownfield, Asbury Clark, George F. Layton, Francis R. Tutt, John W. Chess and Elisha Egbert. The college buildings, beautifully located at the head of Washington street, a mile west of and in full view of the court house, was of brick, fifty by ninety feet and four stories high, including basement. The front was ornamented by a central tower, rising one hundred feet high, from which there was an entrance to every floor of the college. It was a substantial and elegant building and well adapted to the purposes for which it was intended. The college was dedicated on January 10, 1867, and duly opened for the reception of students. This institution which opened with so much promise was continued for but a few years. It suffered and ultimately perished from the same blight that has affected many another institution launched with high hopes under private auspices,—a lack of funds. The erection of the building and the furnishing of the college exhausted the means of its projectors, and as soon as it became evident that the institution was not self-sustaining the enterprise was discontinued. The old college building is now a part of the South Bend Chilled Plow Works.

Sec. 16.—SOCIETIES AND CLUBS.—As appears from reminiscences heretofore set out in this work,^a the people of St. Joseph county have always manifested an interest in their local history. As early as 1867, if not earlier, steps were taken to form a *Historical Society*, for the promotion of the early history of the

a. See, in particular Chap. 4, Subds. 5, 6 and 7.

county. On October 26, 1867, the following prominent citizens met for that purpose: Horatio Chapin, Woolman J. Holloway, George F. Layton, Thomas S. Stanfield, Lathrop M. Taylor, Phillip B. Boone, Charles Morgan, John Brownfield, Louis Humphreys, Almond Bugbee, Joseph G. Bartlett, William L. Barrett, John T. Lindsey, John Reynolds, Mark Whinery, Elisha Egbert, Charles M. Tutt, Benjamin Wall, Ethan S. Reynolds, Jacob Hardman, Benjamin F. Price, Jacob N. Massey, Ricketson Burroughs, Elliott Tutt, Matthias Stover, John A. Henricks, Daniel Greene, Daniel Dayton, Daniel A. Veasey, Charles W. Martin, Schuyler Colfax, Francis R. Tutt and William Miller. This list represents the very highest type of citizenship of the city in the year 1867. On November 2, 1867, the organization was completed, and very interesting meetings continued to be held from time to time, at which valuable papers, reminiscent in their character, were read by pioneer members, Judge Thomas S. Stanfield, Dr. Louis Humphreys and others. But one member of this pioneer historical society of 1867 is now living, Mr. Daniel Greene, whose valuable reminiscences were given in a former chapter. So complete a change have forty years brought about.

On January 22, 1895, a meeting was called to revive interest in historical work. The purpose of the new organization was not only the preparation and reading of historical essays and reminiscences, but also the collection and safe keeping of such data, relics, papers and other matters as would be of interest in the history of this section of the state. To broaden the scope of the work, it was determined to name the society the Northern Indiana Historical Society, and to extend its work to all matters relating to the history of the valleys of the St. Joseph and Kankakee, in so far at least as such matters might throw light upon the history of St. Joseph county and vicinity. On February 4, 1896, the society was formally incorporated, with the following membership:

Lucius Hubbard, Richard H. Lyon, Otto M. Knoblock, George A. Baker, Willis A. Bugbee, Chauncey N. Fassett, Charles H. Bartlett, Ann Thrush Fassett, William B. Starr, Mary Ewing Studebaker, Stuart MacKibbin, Martha O. Hubbard, Bessie A. Baker, George B. Beitner, Thaddeus S. Taylor, Sarah C. Taylor, James Du Shane, Howard S. Stanfield, Flora L. Stanfield, George Ford, William B. Stover. Many valuable papers have been read before this society since its organization, and many old books, papers, portraits and relics have been collected. The relics are carefully marked and are preserved in neat, strong, glass covered cases.

For several years after the organization of the Northern Indiana Historical Society there was a growing desire on the part of the people of the city and county to have a public exhibition of the fine old treasures in the possession of the society and of its members and their friends. This exhibition was finally held on the week beginning February 5, 1900, in what was then known as "the old curry-comb building," on the west side of Lafayette street, between Washington and Jefferson, the site at present occupied as an automobile garage. The moving spirits in preparing this most interesting exhibit were George A. Baker, secretary, Otto M. Knoblock, treasurer, and George B. Beitner, all enthusiastic and active members of the Northern Indiana Historical Society. After the first evening's opening the following graphic and appreciative description of the exhibit was written by the lamented Charles Albert McDonald, then associate editor of the South Bend Times, and himself an earnest member of the society:

"The most optimistic expectations of the most sanguine admirer of the curious, the beautiful, the antique and the wonderful were far exceeded in the grand collection secured by the leading spirits in the Northern Indiana Historical Society, to grace the first historical display ever given under the society's auspices.

"The exhibit, carefully watched and

guarded, occupies nearly two entire floors of the spacious building formerly occupied by the South Bend Curry Comb factory, and was first opened to the public at 5 P. M. Monday, the display to be continued on through this week.

"There on the walls and benches, in cases and frames, on shelves and counters stretched, spread and appealed to the lover of curios a show that would do credit to a city many times the size of South Bend.

"The mound builder, the cliff dweller, the Inca and the American Indian. vied with the Moor, the Japanese, the Chinese, the South Sea Islanders, the Hawaiians and the Hindoos in contribution to the vast array.

"Antique specimens of the bookmaker's art; cloths and vestments of the middle ages; bureaus, boxes, chests, trunks, cradles, jewelry, candlesticks, lanterns, lamps, rich china, pewter dishes, andirons, choicest crockeries, spinning wheels, flax hatches, old clocks, hand forged tools and chains, daguerreotypes, miniatures, portraits, Navajo blankets, ancient parchments, autograph letters, old invitations, army relics of all kinds and of many wars, steel engravings, old paintings, rich old embroideries, idols, temple gongs, old coins, fractional paper currency (shinplasters), postage stamp collections, antique firearms, hand spun fabrics, very old maps, valuable models, old deeds and a vast variety of other objects give one not only hours but days of enjoyable and instructive diversion in viewing and admiring.

"The magnificent Indian relic collections possessed by George A. Baker, Charles H. Bartlett, Baz Rupel, Charles M. Schuell, William B. Stover, Dr. H. T. Montgomery, J. D. Henderson, George O. Ware, Miss Sadie L. Kirby, David R. Leeper and others, are richly in evidence and while not shown in entirety, are given in full variety. It is safe to say that South Bend could get up one of the best Indian relic displays to be seen outside of two or three collections nationally known.

"The Historical Society's splendid display from the ruins of old Fort St. Joseph's, a few miles north of the city, were here shown completely mounted, the work of George A. Baker, and a very artistic job he made of it. The society also shows pictures of the first court house, the old seminary and numerous old portraits.

"One of the many things that attract much attention is South Bend's first post

office, a case with something like eighteen pigeon holes and a large space at the bottom. It was used by Colonel L. M. Taylor when South Bend was called Southold, being so named June 6, 1829, and its name being changed to South Bend October 18, 1830. Mr. Taylor was postmaster here from 1829 to 1838.

"Then there were Colonel Taylor's old books as first Indian trader here and dating back to 1827. The accounts with the Indians present many peculiar names and when compared with the white men in another book, the noble red man is found to be a far better debt payer. These books were carefully kept and are indeed a valuable and interesting feature.

"Another thing in the locally antique that comes in for attention is the old bell used on the now deserted Catholic church at Bertrand, Mich., when it called the red men to worship. This bell was loaned by Notre Dame.

"The various Studebaker families vie with one another in costly, varied and interesting exhibits which fill case after case and shelf over shelf, their part of the great collection being exceedingly conspicuous and abounding with art and historical treasures of great value. They were exceedingly generous in making up the collection and the immediate families' efforts are ably seconded by Hon. and Mrs. F. S. Fish and Mr. and Mrs. C. A. Carlisle. The latter have a particularly fine and varied lot of steel engravings illustrating the life of Washington, while in the Fish collection a most elaborate pewter dish display is supplemented by a vast array of curios from the far East.

"The Olivers have some very interesting features in the display. Mr. William Oliver shows a stove made many years ago at Mishawaka, from bog iron.

"The O'Briens, among the many interesting articles contributed for the occasion, show some exquisite specimens of old china, they being related to the celebrated Wedgewoods, whose name is dear to every china collector's heart.

"Something particularly fine was a massive brass fender, two huge pairs of andirons and a pair of tongs from the great Valeour Aime mansion near New Orleans, these splendid and massive specimens of fireplace furnishings dating back in the early part of the eighteenth century as a feature in the

princely mansion of probably the wealthiest planter in the South. This exhibit is owned by M. B. Staley, A. H. Stephenson and C. N. Fassett, and is conspicuously in evidence.

"The Candlestick Club show an array of candlesticks and snuffers that is dazzling in appearance and of great variety in design. With this display is much from the fine collection of Mr. and Mrs. Otto M. Knoblock along with over sixty tea pots that form Mrs. George B. Beitner's elaborate and interesting showing at the exhibit.

"Mr. and Mrs. J. B. Ferstl showed a line of jewels, portraits, ancient articles of attire, etc., that attracted every eye. They show the Ferstl coat of arms, the document conferring knighthood upon the family several hundred years ago, and also a bureau over 300 years old that came from a monastery and required the work of two monks nine years to complete. It is a rare specimen of the wood worker's art. A helmet worn by Mr. Ferstl and having a bullet hole through it shows that he had been under fire, that being the relic of a battle in the Fatherland.

"J. Q. C. Van den Bosch has a very interesting exhibit in the antiques; Mr. and Mrs. J. G. Elliott show a great and elegant variety of valuable china and other table ware, some being valuable souvenir products; Mrs. Carrie E. Meyer displays among other things some very fine embroideries of the long ago; Miss Vin Farmer shows a wide assortment of curios in which some hand carved boxes are very noticeable. Charles M. Schuell not only displayed Indian relics in great variety, but also a vast array of coins, some ancient clocks, as well as other curiosities.

"A feature that attracted much attention was the relics of the '306' campaign for Grant in 1880 as displayed by Hon. Clem Studebaker, one of that 306. He also showed Pan American congress souvenirs, autograph letters, etc. Another feature in the Studebaker display was two wrought iron chains, shaped in all their sturdy strength by the father of the Studebakers sixty years ago. The bread box used by the Studebaker family was also shown with their royal loan to the exhibition.

"George B. Beitner injected some humor and no small degree of interest by his display of discarded footwear from all sizes and conditions of men. The toe holes appealed eloquently for attention, and various holes, rents and gaps yawned knowingly.

"Among the many others who contributed

articles to the display were Hon. Schuyler Colfax, in connection with his father's active participation in governmental affairs; Auten Post, G. A. R.; Willis A. Bugbee, Mrs. J. E. Williams, R. G. Edwards, Mrs. J. D. Henderson, Mr. and Mrs. Howard S. Stanfield, Horace Reynolds, Mr. and Mrs. Marshall P. Chapin, Mr. Almond Bugbee, Mr. and Mrs. George A. Baker, R. H. Lyon, Dr. G. P. Morey, C. N. Fassett, Mr. and Mrs. Edward McDonald, C. B. Stephenson, Dr. J. M. Partridge, Mrs. Bartlett, Dr. W. D. Chaffee, the Bullas, Will E. Geltz, Thad Taylor and a host of other public-spirited people who seconded the almost herculean efforts of Messrs. George B. Beitner, George A. Baker, and Otto M. Knoblock in getting together so wonderful an aggregation of the unique and interesting. The various articles are systematically tagged and fully described and will repay anyone to take several evenings to completely examine and adequately admire."

Through the courtesy of the school board, the collections of the society were for several years placed in the upper rooms of the public library, and the stated meetings were held there also. In 1906 the board of county commissioners appropriated the first floor of the old court house for the housing of the society and its valuable collections. To prepare the rooms for this purpose and to provide heat and light for the building, the county council, acting under the provisions of a statute enacted for the support and care of historical societies, approved March 11, 1901, provided the means necessary.^a The society, as a consequence of this generous treatment, has most convenient and well-lighted historical quarters. The present officers are: President, Timothy E. Howard; vice-president, Mary Stull Studebaker; secretary, George A. Baker; treasurer, Otto M. Knoblock.

The *Medical Society of Northern Indiana* was organized in May, 1839. At the first meeting, held in the American hotel, the officers elected were: President, Dr. Asa Egbert; vice-president, Dr. George Rex; recording secretary, Dr. Daniel Dayton; cor-

^a. Acts 1901, p. 542.

responding secretary, Dr. F. W. Hunt; treasurer, Dr. A. B. Merritt; censors, Dr. L. B. Rush, Dr. Griffin Smith, Dr. Lyman Griffin, Dr. G. Chapman and Dr. R. L. Gorton.

The *St. Joseph County Medical Society* was organized July 2, 1855, with the following officers: President, Dr. Louis Humphreys; vice-president, Dr. Reuben Pierce; secretary, Dr. J. H. Rerick; treasurer, Dr. Jacob Hardman; committee on admission of members, Dr. J. B. Buchtel, Dr. D. B. Van Tuyl and Dr. J. R. Brown; committee on ethics, Dr. Daniel Dayton, Dr. D. B. Van Tuyl and Dr. J. R. Brown. Other members were: Dr. Andrew Foster, Dr. W. W. Butterworth, Dr. Ross W. Pierce, Dr. F. T. Bryson, Dr. G. F. Myers, Dr. J. M. Stover, Dr. S. Eisenbise, Dr. S. Higenbotham and Dr. S. Laning. From 1859 to 1865, the society seems to have been practically disbanded; but in the latter year, on May 12, there was a re-organization. The revival, however, was but temporary. On April 6, 1875, an organization was again effected, with a statement that the society was a continuation of the organization of 1855. The officers of this last organization were: President, Dr. Levi J. Ham; first vice-president, S. Laning; second vice-president, Dr. John C. Sack; secretary, Dr. G. V. Voorhees; treasurer, Dr. Byron R. O'Connor. The remaining incorporators were: Dr. Louis Humphreys, Dr. John Cassidy, Dr. C. A. Fletcher, Dr. E. W. McAlister, Dr. James B. Green, Dr. S. W. Alexander, Dr. William W. Butterworth, Dr. Joshua A. Kettring, Dr. J. R. Brown, Dr. John Moore, Dr. Robert Moore and Dr. O. P. Barbour.

On July 10, 1874, the *St. Joseph Valley Medical Society* was organized. It was at first composed of physicians residing in St. Joseph, Elkhart and Laporte counties, Indiana, and in Cass and Berrien counties, Michigan. Since that time the locality of membership has been somewhat extended. Dr. Louis Humphreys was the first president and

Dr. E. W. McAlister the first secretary. This has been a strong organization.

The *St. Joseph County Bar Association* has been a society of great influence in the affairs of the county, and of much benefit and pleasure to its members. Among the distinguished early members of the bar were: Elisha Egbert, Jonathan A. Liston, Thomas D. Baird, John Dougherty Defrees, Joseph L. Jernegan, Edwin B. Crocker, Reuben L. Farnsworth and Norman Eddy. Among the noted names of a later date were: Thomas S. Stanfield, James Davis, Alvin S. Dunbar, George W. Matthews, Francis R. Tutt, Timothy G. Turner, William G. George, Joseph Henderson, John F. Kirby, Orlando S. Witherill, Harris E. Hurlbut, George Pfeleger, John R. Foster, George H. Alward, John Hagerty, John Dixon, Edwin G. McCollum, James H. Ellsworth, William A. Dailey and Lucius F. Copeland.

On October 8, 1873, at a meeting held in the court room, the first St. Joseph Bar association was formed. It was a joint stock company, the shares being twenty-five dollars each, with annual dues, afterwards fixed at ten dollars. The purpose was to purchase a law library and to hold business and social meetings. The first officers were: President, Andrew Anderson; secretary and treasurer, Lucius Hubbard. At the third annual meeting Thomas S. Stanfield was elected president. On February 22, 1875, the association had its first annual banquet, which was a notable one. It was at the Dwight House, now the Sheridan. Major William H. Calkins, the eloquent Laporte congressman, spoke to the toast of Washington. The witty and intellectual Charles H. Reeves, of Plymouth, answered to The Legal Profession. The Hon. Lucius G. Long, afterwards mayor of the city, read a most humorous poem, in which all the lawyers at the bar were happily taken off. Alvin S. Dunbar, Timothy G. Turner and Lucius Hubbard followed with appropriate addresses. Two years after—on February 22, 1877, the bar banqueted again

—this time at the Grand Central hotel. Among those then present were: Judge Stanfield, Andrew Anderson, Lucius Hubbard, Geo. W. Matthews, George Pfeleger, George Ford, George H. Alward, Lucius G. Tong, John Hagerty, John Brownfield, Jr., John E. Fisher, Willis A. Bugbee, John R. Foster, Orlando S. Witherill, James H. Ellsworth, Harris E. Hurlbut, John Dixon, Charles Evans, Edwin Nicar and John W. Harbou. Two years again intervened, and on November 21, 1879, the bar varied the programme by presenting the drama of Bardell vs. Pickwick. Dickens himself would have enjoyed this roaring farce, acted by the staid members of the St. Joseph county bar. Even the dignity of Judge Thomas S. Stanfield did not prevent him from taking the part of Mr. Pickwick. Judge Turner represented old Mr. Weller, Mayor Tong presided as Judge Stareleigh. The veteran Andrew Anderson appeared as Sergeant Buzfuz, and William G. George as Sergeant Snubbin. Mr. Skimpin was represented by Judge Hubbard, and Mr. Phunkey by Jonathan P. Creed. George W. Matthews took the part of Mr. Perker, and James Du Shane that of Mr. Dodson. James H. Ellsworth appeared as Mr. Fogg, and John E. Fisher as Nathaniel Winkle. George Ford took the part of Tracy Tupman, and Willis A. Bugbee that of Augustus Snodgrass. George H. Alward was sheriff, and John W. Harbou, clerk. John Hagerty took the part of Thomas Groffin, while John Brownfield, Jr., and Orlando S. Witherill were bailiffs. The lady friends of the lawyers helped out the play, which was an unqualified success. Interest in the association began to flag as the years went on. The fees were regarded as burdensome by many. The affairs of the organization were finally wound up and the library distributed among the remaining members.

In December, 1900, a new association was formed which has been altogether social in its character; although, in a few cases, the organization has not hesitated to meet and

take action on matters affecting the public interest. The main feature of the association is the annual banquet, which takes place on or near Marshall Day, February the fourth, in commemoration of the appointment of John Marshall to the supreme court of the United States.

THE ST. JOSEPH COUNTY BAR ASSOCIATION.

OFFICERS FOR 1907.

GEORGE E. CLARK.....	President
HARRY R. WAIR.....	Vice-President
J. WALTER OSBORN.....	Secretary
ARTHUR L. HUBBARD.....	Treasurer

EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE.

F. J. L. MEYER,	W. G. CRABILL.
THOS. W. SLICK.	

GRIEVANCE COMMITTEE.

W. A. MCINERNEY,	WM. P. O'NEILL.
ANDREW HILDEBRAND.	

MEMBERSHIP COMMITTEE.

T. E. HOWARD.	GEORGE FORD.
R. T. MILLER.	

MEMBERSHIP.

Anderson, Andrew	Jackson, F. M.
Bates, D. D.	Jernegan, R. H.
Bingham, E. V.	Judie, J. A.
Brick, A. L.	Jones, H. W.
Case, G. H.	Jones, V. G.
Creed, J. P.	Kriehbaum, Charles
Crabill, W. G.	Kitch, J. W.
Clarke, George E.	Lambert, F. E.
Creed, Arch. McM.	Lippman, Oscar
Crabill, Clinton	Meyer, F. J. L.
Cramer, B. J.	Miller, R. T.
Dunnahoo, F. H.	MacKibbin, Stuart
DuComb, C. P.	McMichael, J. Alex.
Davey, Charles A.	McInerney, W. A.
Doughty, George W.	McInerney, J. W.
Drummond, Charles P.	Miller, William E.
Elliott, Gilbert A.	Neff, J. E.
Fisher, John E.	Osborn, J. W.
Ford, George	O'Neill, William P.
Feldman, George G.	Pattee, C. E.
Fish, George	Parks, I. K.
Guy, Miller	Pyle, Dan
Graham, A. G.	Parker, Samuel
Garst, Jasper	Rich, Daniel
Gray, Charles P.	Rich, Sanford
Gabriel, F. C.	Romig, I. S.
Hibberd, John A.	Riley, N. S.
Hubbard, Lucius	Steis, Henry A.
Hubbard, A. L.	Shively, Dudley M.
Howard, T. E.	Shively, B. F.
Harris, A. D.	Slick, T. W.
Houlihan, P. J.	Slick, W. A.
Hastings, V. C.	Sinkes, J. L.
Hoban, T. M.	Seebert, E. F.
Hildebrand, A. N.	Schurtz, Daniel
Handley, C. L.	Schwab, E. H.
Howell, Marshall L.	Talbot, J. E.
Holler, Charles F.	Talcott, Thad M., Jr.

MEMBERSHIP (Continued).

Vaughn, D. R., Jr.	Whitcomb, L. C.
Ward, Wilbert	Wurzer, H. F.
Woodward, Fred	Warner, H. D.
Wair, Harry R.	

HONORARY MEMBERS.

WALTER A. FUNK	Judge St. Joseph Circuit Court
VERNON M. VANFLEET	Judge St. Joseph Superior Court
FRANK P. CHRISTOPH	Clerk St. Joseph Circuit Court
WILL N. BERGAN	Deputy Clerk St. Joseph Circuit Court

The *Commercial-Athletic Club* was organized in 1895, when the South Bend Athletic association was formed for the encouragement of athletic games. The institution afterwards took up the commercial interests of the city, although the athletic



COMMERCIAL-ATHLETIC CLUB,
SOUTH BEND.

feature was still encouraged, and in June, 1896, the name was changed to the Commercial-Athletic Club. The fine club house on Colfax avenue, between Main and Lafayette streets, was dedicated October 1, 1896. Since that date the commodious and well furnished club rooms have been the gathering place of the business interests of the city of South Bend. The leading business men of the city there discuss the questions that, from time to time, affect the public welfare, and there have been inaugurated and advanced to successful issue many of the most important enterprises that distinguish the Queen City of the St. Joseph valley.

An association that has done very much to develop a spirit of refinement and kindliness

of feeling in the people, old and young, educated and uneducated, is the South Bend *Humane Society*. This benevolent organization was formed August 20, 1896, with the following representative membership: Theodore Blake, Mrs. S. C. Humphreys, Myron Campbell, Caleb A. Kimball, D. B. J. Schafer, H. P. Blair, L. C. Whitcomb, Jacob D. Henderson, Alfred Klingel, Carl J. Anderson, Patel Kinfer, S. T. Gibson, John Finch, James C. Eberhart, J. P. Hill, M. M. Meyer, John B. Stoll, W. F. Carey, John A. Chockelt, Dr. S. L. Kilmer, C. B. Greene, William A. Rutherford, Charles B. Hibberd, Frederick D. Ellsworth, George Wyman, Corwin B. Van Pelt, Christopher Fassnacht, Henry C. Wheeler, Kemper and Schafer, Miller & Loutz, John C. Knoblock, Joseph E. Williams, L. P. Hardy, Alexander M. Honer, Frank M. Baker, Louis Nickel, Jr., Francis E. Lambert, Jonathan, P. Creed, Benjamin F. Dunn, Henry Heller, Demas D. Bates, Frank Mayr, John Yant, Stephenson Manufacturing company, John G. Slick, Irving A. Sibley, Clement Studebaker, George W. Loughman, Frederick W. Mueller, C. B. Reichelt, Kanouse & Phillips, Samuel Spiro, J. Sosnowski, S. D. Rider, Elmer Crockett.

There has been, perhaps, no humanitarian movement in South Bend that has been more productive of good influence than this. The visit of the humane officer is always attended with the best results. The faithful beasts of burden are no longer cruelly beaten, and no longer stand in the cold without blankets. Cruelty to women and children has been checked. Birds and squirrels are less and less disturbed in the shade trees and on the parks. Dumb animals are no longer turned out into the commons and roadways to suffer and die. Public watering troughs are erected throughout the city. All this results in a kindlier spirit of people towards one another as well as towards the inferior creatures that God has entrusted to human care. There is no organization more creditable to the people of South Bend than their Humane Society. In

the summer of 1907, the benevolent spirit of Mrs. Jennette Reynolds was so attracted to the good work of the society that she endowed it with a gift of five thousand dollars, the income of which is to be used forever for its humane work. During the same year the city took upon itself the care of the watering troughs erected upon the principal streets entering from the surrounding country. The gift of Mrs. Reynolds and the liberal action of the city government have lifted a great burden from the society, and it is now better prepared than ever to continue its benevolent work. The present officers are: President, Thomas C. Barnes; vice-president, Charles G. Folsom; treasurer, Myron Campbell; secretary, Henry A. Pershing; humane officer, Abraham Moore.

Of kindred character to the Humane society is the Associated Charities. The object of this organization is to systematize and regulate the giving of aid to the weak ones of society. It is not so much an alms-giving association as it is one to oversee, guide and advise those who are engaged in works of benevolence and in the care of the helpless and the delinquent. Prisons, poor houses, hospitals, orphan asylums and all agencies, whether public or private, that are engaged in the care of delinquents are equally the objects of the associated charities, who work under the general direction of the State Board of Charities.

The present officers of the society are: President, Hon. Frederick S. Fish; vice-president, Rev. W. F. Hovis; secretary, Otto M. Knoblock; treasurer, Mrs. F. H. Dunahoo. The general secretary is Miss Carrie Rein, and her assistant, Miss Ella E. Hall.

From what has been said in section fifteen of this subdivision concerning the history of public libraries in South Bend, it is apparent that a literary taste has always characterized the people of the city. This conclusion is abundantly borne out by many other circumstances of our history. Education has been fostered from the beginning; public lecture

courses have been maintained; the drama has been well patronized; as shown by the present theatre facilities, including the Oliver opera house and the Auditorium, two of the finest playhouses in the country; but, more than all, the people have taken kindly to literary and scientific societies,—those pleasant weekly or monthly conferences where congenial spirits discuss questions affecting the promotion of culture, refinement and general knowledge. Some of the principal of these societies will be noticed.

On October 4, 1871, the South Bend Library and Reading Room Association was formed, with the following membership: William G. George, Lucius Hubbard, W. J. Skillman, Alvin S. Dunbar, L. O. Turner, Timothy G. Turner, Andrew Anderson, Thomas S. Stanfield, Louis Humphreys, Jasper E. Lewis, William Mack, Mrs. Mahala E. Dunbar, B. M. Hance, Mrs. Sarah A. Bartlett, William H. Beach, E. D. Hartman, Joel M. Partridge, Virgil G. Huey, M. Mulcahy and Sarah A. Matthews.

While it may be true that many such societies flourished but for a time, and then ceased to exist or gave place to others; yet it is clear that the meetings of such a company as the foregoing, even if continuing for but a few years, were productive of the utmost good to the members themselves and to their immediate friends. One such meeting would produce an elevating and lasting influence for the higher and better life, even if but a single paper were prepared and read and then discussed by the members.

Another such association was the Woman's Literary Club, organized in April, 1889, by Anna Thrush Fasset, Louise Taylor, Ellen Wade Colfax, Flora Louise Stanfield, Eloise Taylor, Marie L. Chapin, Lauretta L. Mack, Mary C. Chapman, Mary L. Greenawalt, Henrietta Steel, Nettie Walworth, Marion B. Van Pelt, Martha O. Hubbard, Hattie J. Dunning, Mary E. Humphreys, Hannah M. Peck, Hattie Elder, Mary E. Spain, Abbie J. F. Campbell, Martha E. Hillier, Nellie

Ellsworth, Emma F. Chapin, Lucretia M. Creed, Hattie E. Lantz, Ada M. Studebaker, Catherine E. Esmay, Emma D. Lantz, Anna H. Listenberger, Harriet C. Studebaker, L. H. Pfleger. This club was exceedingly popular and useful, and for many years promoted in a high degree the literary and artistic culture of its members and of the community at large.

The principal woman's literary association existing at present and for many years past is the Progress Club, organized in May, 1895. The first officers were: President, Catherine C. Esmay; first vice-president, Mary Stull Studebaker; second vice-president, Laura Putnam Chaffee; third vice-president, Mary L. Hine; recording secretary, Sarah Louise Kirby; corresponding secretary, Mary Kaufmann Wiggins; treasurer, Mary Porter Le Van. The remaining directors were: Olive Tarbell Birdsall, Elizabeth Kizer, Cora B. Nicar, Sarah Harris, Alberta Buckner Jones, Carrie Johnson, Elizabeth Greene Kettring and Nellie N. Livingston. The subjects engaging the attention of the club include history, literature, current events, art, philanthropy and civics, domestic science and music. It is one of the largest and most influential organizations of its class in the state; and is affiliated with the State Federation of Women's Clubs, of which Alice M. Mummert, of Goshen, is president. The present officers are: President, Esse Bissell Dakin; first vice-president, Stella H. Drummond; second vice-president, Sophie M. Halske; third vice-president, Mary D. Dunnahoo; recording secretary, Florence M. Chandler; assistant recording secretary, Ella Leam; corresponding secretary, Sabra Ann Fralick; treasurer, Adeline G. Smith; directors, Stella H. Drummond, Elizabeth Greene Kettring, Katherine Campbell, Laura B. Shidler, Esse Bissell Dakin, Nadine Folsom, Thekla Sack, Annie S. Miller, Gertrude P. Emerson.

Numerous other clubs have been organized by the women of South Bend, from time to time, as social, literary, philanthropic and

other like needs developed in the life of the community. Amongst those of recent origin are: The Impromptu Club; Carrie Moore, president; Maude Freeman, vice-president; Edith Pershing, secretary; Eva Strayer, treasurer. The Mothers' Club; Kate E. Bulla, president; Mabel Reamer, secretary. The Thursday Club; Martha E. Ward, president; Bessie Burns, vice-president; Emma Fink, secretary; Mrs. Dillon, treasurer. The Wednesday Club; Clara Dunham, president; Mary Chapin, secretary and treasurer.

The membership of The Round Table is limited to sixty gentlemen, residents of the city; while the management of the affairs of the club is entrusted to a board of five governors. The meetings are held on the first Wednesday evening of each month, from October to June. At each meeting a simple table d'hôte dinner is served. After this Attic repast, a member reads a paper on some literary, historical, scientific, social or other subject of general interest. A free discussion of the paper is then in order.

The club was organized during the winter of 1906-7, chiefly through the efforts of Wilbert Ward. The first meeting was held in March, 1907. The Round Table is a delight to its members and a seat at its festive board is esteemed a most valued privilege. There is neither constitution nor by-law, but the following rules are observed:

"While every member is invited to take part in the general discussion, no member will be called upon to speak.

"Speeches will be strictly limited to five minutes.

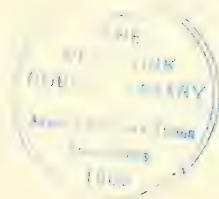
"No member will be permitted to speak more than once except by permission of the Chairman.

"The Speaker will be allowed the last fifteen minutes for reply or explanation.

"There must be no personalities.

"Long stories are not desirable.

"Applications for membership may be made through a member to the Secretary, accompanied by the membership fee, and will





Schuyler Colfax

be passed upon by the Board of Governors.

"No member may bring an invited guest except a non-resident, and then only on conferring with one of the Board, and securing a card from the Secretary.

"Any member who shall be absent from any three consecutive meetings shall cease to be a member of this organization."

Since the organization the board of governors have been: Wilbert Ward (Chairman), Timothy E. Howard, Fred Woodward, John A. Hibberd, W. K. Lamport, William Happ (Secretary and Treasurer).

The Douglas Debating Club meets every Friday afternoon in the court house. The president is Donald A. Kahn and the secretary J. Elmer Peak. The character of the exercises of the club have won the praise of the public.

The Worth Literary Club meets at the Madison school building every Monday evening, from September to June. The club has attained the highest order of excellence, and merits the name which it bears. William G. Elliot is president; Iden S. Romig, first vice-president; Ulysses G. Manning, second vice-president; Daniel Pyle, secretary and treasurer.

The fraternal orders of South Bend are exceedingly numerous. The following Odd Fellows organizations meet in Odd Fellows hall, corner of Main and Washington streets, the oldest fraternal building in the city: South Bend Lodge No. 29, I. O. O. F.; the South Bend Encampment No. 9, I. O. O. F.; Canton South Bend No. 9, I. O. O. F.; Schuyler Rebekah Lodge No. 29, I. O. O. F. The Rebekah Lodge, for women, owes its origin to Schuyler Colfax, who was almost as distinguished as an Odd Fellow as he was as a statesman; in both of which relations his memory is held very dear in his beloved city of South Bend. Other lodges of Odd Fellows are: Robert Blum Lodge No. 278, I. O. O. F.; Helena Rebekah Lodge No. 72, I. O. O. F.; and Grand United Order of the I. O. O. F.

The Masonic Lodges are: Germania Lodge No. 301, F. & A. M.; South Bend Chapter No. 29, R. A. M.; South Bend Commandery No. 13, K. T.; South Bend Lodge No. 294, F. & A. M.; St. Joseph Lodge No. 45, F. & A. M.; Order of Eastern Star, Chapter No. 2. All of the foregoing meet in the beautiful Masonic Temple, recently erected at the northwest corner of Michigan street and La Salle avenue, one of the most elegant and imposing examples of the architecture of South Bend. The remaining Masonic Lodges are: Anderson Commandery No. 4, U. R. of M.; Odessa Chapter No. 28, O. E. S.; St. Peter's Lodge No. 31, A. F. & A. M.

The Knights of Pythias are represented by Crusade Lodge No. 14; O. B. Lancaster, captain; Roscoe Cullar, record keeper. Uniform Rank K. of P., South Bend Co. No. 12; Cadmus Crabill, chancellor commander; A. W. Hildebrand, keeper of records and seals. Moonlight Temple, Rathbone Sisters, No. 255; Bessie Snoke, most excellent high chief; Louise Davies, most excellent past chief; Lizzie Taggart, financial secretary.

The Order of Elks is represented by South Bend Lodge No. 235, B. P. O. E. They have built a fine Elks' Temple on West Colfax avenue, opposite the Commercial-Athletic building. The temple is one of the architectural ornaments of the city. The lodge meets every Monday evening. James B. McCance is exalted ruler; David A. Westburg, secretary; Edward J. Fogarty, treasurer; Edward T. Staley, Edward F. Gaffney and John C. Barrett, trustees.

The Tribe of Ben Hur is represented by South Bend Court No. 41, which meets the first and third Wednesday evenings of each month; and by Beech Tree Court No. 211, which meets on the evenings of the second and fourth Tuesdays of the month. The officers of the South Bend Court are Edward E. Carr, chief, and Lillian Stockwell, scribe; and of Beech Tree Court, Arthur Miller, chief, and Orpha Elliott, scribe.

The Order of Eagles meets every Wednes-

day evening: Michael F. Calnon, past worthy president; Charles Keller, present worthy president; Charles Miller, worthy vice-president; Fred H. Lutzen, secretary; J. Lott Losey, worthy treasurer; W. A. Wahl, L. F. Connell, Joseph Horne, trustees; Dr. Charles H. Taylor, aerial physician.

The Catholic Order of Foresters, St. Edward Court No. 1424, meets on the first and third Tuesday evenings of each month. The Rev. John F. De Groote, S. Director; Charles H. Taverneer, D. H. C. R.; H. M. Fritzen, chief ranger; John J. Gehring, V. C. R.; Amos C. Oberley, recording secretary; Charles A. Schubert, F. S.; Frank J. Zeiger, treasurer; Louis H. Coquillard, Sr., conductor; William Kelly, Jr., conductor; Dr. Daniel W. McNamara, medical examiner; Frank Gooley, Peter Scheibelhut, Jacob A. Fisher, trustees; John C. Buczkowski, inside sentinel; Peter Schuler, outside sentinel.

The Independent Order of Foresters, Court St. Joseph No. 1576, meets on the first and third Mondays of each month. The officers are: Chief ranger, James McGregor; recording secretary, Dr. A. P. F. Gammack; deputy, Sidney Thornton.

The Ancient Order of Hibernians, Division No. 1, of St. Joseph county, founded in January, 1885, meets on the first and third Sunday afternoons of each month. The officers are: John J. Hayes, county president; James Nelson, division president; James Casey, recording secretary; Edward Johnson, financial secretary; Dr. Robert F. Lucas, treasurer.

The St. Joseph County Federation of Catholic Societies meets on the last Sunday of each month; John J. Schindler, Mishawaka, president; John C. Hiss, South Bend, secretary.

The Catholic Knights of America are represented by St. Paul's Branch No. 408, C. K. of A., founded in September, 1885, by the Rev. Michael Ph. Fallize, which meets on the first Sunday and the third Friday evening of each month; John C. Hiss, commander;

Kathryn Hiss, recording secretary; Maude Crepeau, financial secretary; Charles Brechenser, treasurer. St. Boniface Branch No. 701, C. K. of A., meets on the third Sunday of each month; Michael Mathis, president; Jacob Jahn, secretary. St. Mary's Commandery, U. R. of C. K. of A., meets on the first Monday of each month; Eugene Hausler, president; Michael Haas, secretary.

The Knights of Columbus, South Bend Council No. 553, meet on the first and third Wednesday evenings of each month. The present officers are: Grand Knight, John B. Weber; treasurer, Arthur Wolfe; recording secretary, Robert F. Lucas; financial secretary, Frank J. Schumacher.

Knights and Ladies of Columbia, supreme officers: Supreme counsellor, Ormond Kennedy; supreme scribe, John Roth; supreme cashier, Elmer Crockett; supreme medical director, Cornelius H. Myers; supreme attorney, Daniel Rich. Executive board: John Roth, Ormond Kennedy, Elmer Crockett, Cornelius H. Myers, Daniel Rich. Supreme deputies: Anna M. Wright, John D. Roberts. Loyal Workers, K. and L. of C., meet on the first and third Mondays of each month; William J. Wright, secretary and treasurer. Knights and Ladies of Columbia, Interurban Association, meets once a month. South Bend Council No. 1, K. and L. of C., meets second and fourth Wednesdays of each month; Jacob E. Henry, counselor; William B. Wright, scribe. Winona Council No. 39, K. and L. of C., meets on the first and third Thursdays of each month; Stephens Smith, counselor; William J. Wright, scribe.

The Knights of the Maccabees is represented by the following societies: Pixley Division No. 2, U. R. K. O. T. M., meets on the second and fourth Mondays of each month. The officers are: Benjamin F. Berger, colonel of the second regiment; Harry F. Mitchell, brigadier general; D. W. Keefer, adjutant; Calvin Black, sergeant major; C. B. Matthews, captain; Edward L. Stickler, first lieutenant; Jesse B. Hawkins, second

lieutenant: Frank W. Bailey, record keeper; Levi Nave, treasurer.

South Bend Tent No. 1, K. O. T. M., meets on the first and third Monday of each month. The officers are: Levi Nave, commander; Samuel R. Thomas, secretary; Edward L. Strickler, treasurer. South Bend Hive No. 4, L. O. T. M., meets every fourth Friday of each month. The officers are: Anna Secor, lady commander; Alice Mountain, lady record keeper. Schiller Tent No. 20, K. O. T. M., meets every second and fourth Friday of each month. The officers are: Ernest C. Heinrichs, commander; George K. Rohr, record keeper. Schiller Hive No. 84, L. O. T. M., meets every first and third Friday of each month. Miss Seifert is the record keeper.

The Knights of the Modern Maccabees are represented by two societies: St. Joe Valley Tent No. 1108, which meets on the second and fourth Friday of each month; F. M. Caldwell, commander; C. S. Handley, record keeper; Daniel Pyle, finance keeper; and St. Joe Valley Hive No. 900, which meets every first and third Tuesday of each month; Libbie Bloom, Commander; Lulu Penwell, record keeper; Dora S. Raybuck, finance keeper.

The Order of Owls was recently established at South Bend and is chiefly the work of John W. Talbot. The officers of the Supreme Nest are: John W. Talbot, supreme president; Burrell Cramer, supreme past president; George D. Beroth, supreme secretary; J. Lott Losey, supreme treasurer; John J. Johnson, supreme invocator; John D. Burke, supreme warden; Joseph E. Talbot, supreme counsel. The Supreme Trustees are: Dudley M. Shively, South Bend; Frederick Cook, Niles, Michigan; Lemuel Darrow, Laporte, Indiana; T. J. Hewson, Chicago, Illinois; William Vischer, Chicago, Illinois. The Supreme Organizers are Bert Overly and J. M. Culler. The Home Nest meets every Tuesday evening, the officers being: John W. Talbot, president; George D. Beroth, secretary; J. Lott Losey, treasurer. Ladies' Nest No. 1 meets every Friday evening; the officers are: Carrie F.

Clark, president; Carrie B. Long, secretary; Sarah Colby, treasurer. This order has during the short time of its organization experienced a phenomenal growth, having flourishing nests from the Atlantic to the Pacific. It evidently supplies a need in fraternal club life.

Among other fraternal orders now flourishing in the city are: The Order of Patriarchs; the Protected Home Circle; the Red Men, Leota Council No. 44, Degree of Pocahontas, and Montauk Tribe No. 426; the Royal Arcanum, South Bend Council No. 347; Sons of Herman; the Turn Verein; the Polish Turners; the Sokel Polski, M. R.; Royal Neighbors of America; Modern Woodmen of the World; the Woodmen of the World, Fidelity Camp No. 28, Linden Camp No. 42, Harmony Camp No. 78; Woodmen Circle, Live Oak Grove No. 1, Olive Grove No. 12, Linden Grove No. 29; and the National Union.

The neighborhood, social, musical and church clubs and societies are almost without number. Some of the principal of these are: The Choral Club, and numerous other musical associations, orchestras, bands and drum corps; the Country Club of the St. Joseph Valley; the Concord Club; the Indiana Club; the La Salle Club; the Per Se Club; the Sunnyside Golf Club; the Bismarck Club; the Press Club; six Building and Loan Associations; seven Military Organizations, including Grand Army Posts, Women's Relief Corps, Company F, Sons of Veterans and Spanish War Veterans.

VII. THE PRESS.

The history of our newspapers is coeval with that of South Bend itself. The editors, in the main, have been intelligent and broad minded, and have acted on the assumption that their readers were also people of refinement and intelligence. Appeals to passion and prejudice have been the exception. The appeal has rather been to reason, morals,

patriotism, good citizenship and the general welfare of the community.

It is a compliment to the intellectual and moral character of the first inhabitants of the St. Joseph valley that our first newspaper was not only first in South Bend and St. Joseph county, but first in northern Indiana and in the whole region of the extreme northwest. In 1831 there was no newspaper published north of Indianapolis or west of Detroit but that published at South Bend. Even Chicago was without a newspaper. It was here, in St. Joseph county, that the intelligent editor sought out the intelligent reader.

Sec. 1.—THE PIONEER.—It was on Wednesday, November 16, 1831, that John Dougherty Defrees and his brother Joseph H. Defrees published the first number of the Northwest-ern Pioneer and St. Joseph's Intelligencer. The prospectus of the paper was as follows:

“Prospectus of the North-Western Pioneer; and St. Joseph's Intelligencer.

“We have commenced the publication of a weekly newspaper, bearing the above title, in the town of South Bend, Ind.

“Among the many causes which have contributed to the happiness of the human family, the influence of the press must be acknowledged. It is the grand means of disseminating useful information of all kinds, literary, religious, political and scientific. It is the chief engine of knowledge, one of the strong pillars of our liberty, one of the safeguards of the republic. Destroy the *Press*, and to what are we reduced? Take away its liberty, and you sap the foundation of one of the happiest features of our government. To the influence of the *Press*, is attributed the progress of the liberal principles, which now pervade all ranks among many nations of Europe. It gave impulse to the glorious achievements of our forefathers, and to the revolution of July, 1830, in France. The ‘Spirit of Liberty’ is abroad—its banner has been unfurled, and spread its blessings to the world. Its course may for a time be impeded, it may for a moment be trampled upon by

unhallowed despots; but the command is given, *Onward!*—and it will, if the source of intelligence is left open, eventually triumph.

“INFORMATION is conveyed through the medium of newspapers, much cheaper than by any other means. This being the case, and recollecting that ‘*knowledge is power*,’ we cannot see how any family, where there is one that can read, can do without a newspaper.

“The principles which shall govern us in conducting this paper, shall be purely NATIONAL. We unfurl the *Standard* of ‘LIBERTY and UNION’—‘INTERNATIONAL IMPROVEMENT, and the PROTECTION of DOMESTIC INDUSTRY’; and everything having a tendency to infuse a love and adoration for our inestimable federal compact, and the ‘*American System*,’ into the minds of the people, shall be published.

“ALL important state papers, and the proceedings of our NATIONAL and State Legislatures, during their respective sessions, will be laid, with all possible dispatch, before our readers.

“As a *Literary paper*, it shall be our aim to combine in its columns ‘instruction and amusement.’

“TALES of ‘feeling and fancy’ shall occasionally find a place in our paper. Nor will the spirit of chastened humor be ‘frowned austere’ from our pages.

“POETRY in all its variety—

“INTERESTING *Anecdotes, Scraps, Extracts, &c., &c., &c.*

“The people who have emigrated to the St. Joseph country, are enterprising and intelligent: and we confidently look to them for a liberal patronage.

“CONDITIONS: The ‘PIONEER’ is printed on a large super-royal sheet, with entire new materials, and contains as much (*if not more*) matter as any paper in the state, at \$2, paid within three months after receiving the first number, \$2.50 within the year, or \$3.00 at the expiration.

“J. D. & J. H. DEFREES.

"AGENTS FOR THE PIONEER. The following gentlemen are requested to act as agents for us, in procuring subscribers, &c.: E. PENWELL, Esq., *Pleasant Plain*; MR. BRISEL, *Goshen*; CHARLES EGBERT, *Terre Coupee*; AARON STAUNTON, *Door Prairie*; M. C. WHITMAN, *La Grange*; MR. STILSON, *Niles*; ROBERT CLARK, Esq., *White Pigeon*; MAJOR EDWARDS, *Beardsley's Prairie*; SAMUEL HANNA, Esq., *Fort Wayne*; T. J. LARSH, Esq., *Richmond*; JAMES DEFREES, *Piqua, Ohio*; MR. BRITTAIN, *Newberryport,^a M. T.*; MR. HARRIS, *Christiana Mills*; GEORGE KESLING, P. M., *Lebanon, O.*; WILLIAM STEVENS, *Eaton, Ohio.*"

Not considering its politics, which were Whig, it is doubtful whether any newspaper starting in a new country today could put out a more comprehensive, manly and patriotic prospectus than that issued for the North-western Pioneer by its enterprising editors and publishers.

The Pioneer was at first published "on Water street, South Bend, opposite A. Coquillard's store;" that is, on the southeast corner or what is now La Salle avenue and Michigan street. This was one of the centers of the original town. Alexis Coquillard's trading post was on the northeast corner of the same streets; while the original ferry and steamboat landing were at what was then the foot of Water street, where the beautiful concrete bridge now spans the river.

After seven months the place of publication and the name of the paper were both changed. In the issue of May 23, 1832, the change of place was announced as follows: "Removal! The printing office has been removed to the second story of the house formerly occupied as a tavern by Mr. Lilley, on the corner of St. Joseph and Pearl streets." The locality is now known as the southwest corner of Vistula avenue and St. Joseph street. This was at what might be called the original center of the town, near the site of the first trading post of Alexis Coquillard, and near the point where Lathrop M. Taylor estab-

lished his second trading post.^a The change in the name of the paper is best shown in the new prospectus published also in the issue of May 23, 1832, as follows:

"PROSPECTUS of the St. Joseph Beacon: And Indiana and Michigan Intelligencer.

"SIX MONTHS ago we commenced the publication of a weekly newspaper in the St. Joseph country, entitled the 'NORTH-WESTERN PIONEER.' Various considerations have induced us to change its title to that of the ST. JOSEPH BEACON. One of the principal reasons of this change is a wish to associate the name of the country in which the paper is published with its title.

"In establishing a newspaper in so new a country as this, we knew that we had many difficulties to encounter—many deprivations which are not known in the old and densely populated parts of the 'West' with which to contend. One main difficulty when we commenced, was the want of mails. People were not willing to subscribe without being certain of receiving their papers regularly. This difficulty has been greatly remedied since the first number was issued. There is now a mail twice a week to Ft. Wayne, twice a week to Detroit, via Niles, and once a week to Chicago, besides several others will yet be established;—thus giving the people throughout the whole St. Joseph country an opportunity of regularly receiving the paper. This, then, can be no longer urged against subscribing for so valuable an acquisition to every family as a weekly newspaper. That more valuable and essential information is disseminated through this medium than any other way, cannot be denied. Who that is desirous of acquiring a just knowledge of the times in which he lives—of the prosperity or the adversity of the nation of which he is a member—or is anxious to place within the reach of a rising family the means of rendering them useful and intelligent members of society, would refuse to take a newspaper? It has been our

^a. See Chap. 4, Subd. 4, Secs. 1 and 2; and see this chapter, Subd. 6, Sec. 14.

^a. At present St. Joseph, Michigan.

aim—and shall continue to be our highest ambition—to render this paper useful and interesting to ALL, of whatsoever political faith they may be:—but never to become a vehicle for retailing the *party slang* of the day.

“The inhabitants of the St. Joseph country should support a paper somewhere within its limits. The interests of the whole country are so closely connected that it can make no difference whether it is published in Indiana or Michigan.”

The sentiments expressed in the prospectus of the Beacon, as also in that of the Pioneer, do credit to the head and heart of the writer, or writers; and the people of the “St. Joseph country” will always have good cause to honor the memory of the editors and publishers of their first newspaper.

It is easy to detect in the prospectus of the Beacon a note of disappointment. The country,—even the whole St. Joseph country, including also all northern Indiana and southwestern Michigan,—was evidently not yet ready to support a newspaper of the high standard adopted by the Defrees brothers. Joseph H. Defrees sold his interest to his brother in 1833, and removed to Goshen. In 1834, John D. Defrees removed the paper to White Pigeon, Michigan, where he disposed of it to a Mr. Gilbert. This town was also in the “St. Joseph country,” and according to the prospectus of the Beacon it was immaterial whether the paper was published in the state of Indiana or in Michigan territory, provided only it was published in the St. Joseph country.

It is pleasant to add, that although the Defrees brothers failed in permanently establishing a newspaper in the St. Joseph country, yet each of them attained to success in after life. Joseph H. Defrees, through the kindly help of Col. Lathrop M. Taylor, became a distinguished merchant in Goshen. He also represented his constituency in both branches of the state legislature and in congress. John D. Defrees returned to South Bend, studied

law, obtained a lucrative practice, was elected to the state senate, became editor of the Indianapolis Journal and was appointed public printer by president Lincoln.

Sec. 2.—THE REGISTER.—South Bend did not remain long without a newspaper. The Free Press was established by William Millikan in 1836. The paper was fairly successful for a time; but after nine years was discontinued. In September, 1845, the plant and fixtures were purchased by Albert W. West and Schuyler Colfax. On September 12, 1845, the first copy of the St. Joseph Valley Register was issued by Albert W. West and Schuyler Colfax as publishers. Schuyler Colfax was the editor. Thus came into existence the famous Register, for so many years a welcome visitor to hundreds of families in St. Joseph county. It was at first a weekly, six-column folio, 22x32 in size. In politics, the paper was whig. On the subject of slavery, the editor took “the middle ground between the two dangerous extremes.” “We shall be opposed,” said he, “both to Calhounism and Birneyism, viewing them as ultraisms.” “To the first we shall be hostile because it holds that outrageous doctrine that slavery is a national blessing.” “To the other we shall be opposed because its course, we think, tends to rivet the chains of the slave more firmly, to prevent a calm and argumentative discussion of the whole question through the south.” “Without regard, therefore, to these two extremes, we shall be fixedly opposed to enlarging the borders of slavery even one inch, either so far as soil or power and weight in the national councils are concerned, and shall hail with happiness the day when the southern states, after calm examination, shall in a constitutional and legal manner adopt a feasible plan of emancipation, either gradual or immediate.” Such was the statesmanlike position taken by Schuyler Colfax on his first stepping before the footlights on that stage where he was destined to play so important a part in the history of his country. Well would it have been for that country, north

and south, if these moderate views of the future vice-president of the United States had been adopted, rather than appeal to the dreadful arbitrament of war. After seven months, Mr. Colfax became sole proprietor of the Register.

The paper prospered under the business management and editorial supervision of Schuyler Colfax, and with the beginning of the third year it was enlarged to a seven-column folio. Early in the year 1848, as we have seen, the first telegraph line was built from New York to Chicago.^a The enterprising editor of the Register of course made instant use of this new means of receiving information from the outside world. The following, from the issue of December 27, 1849, while in a half humorous vein, is now of historical interest, both as to what had then been done, and, even more, as to what was to be done through the marvelous discoveries of Samuel Finley Breese Morse:

Dispatches appeared in the Register of that date which were sent from New York at four o'clock in the afternoon, and, by reason of the difference in local time between New York and South Bend, were received at South Bend at three o'clock and thirty-five minutes,—apparently twenty-five minutes before they were sent. The editor had this to say of the strange feat: "If Morse ever gets a line across the ocean, by way of Iceland, we shall expect him to furnish European news up to Thursday night every week for our Thursday morning's paper." Morse did not get a line across the ocean; but Cyrus West Field did,—to Ireland, however, and not by way of Iceland. Mr. Colfax's humorous prediction, like that of Puck, that he would "put a girdle round about the earth in forty minutes," has been more than fulfilled, and Thursday evening's European news is now published every Thursday morning; and this Mr. Colfax and the Register both lived to see.

Another historical telegraphic item appeared in the same issue of the Register.

^a. See Chap. 7, Subd. 5, Sec. 1.

"Last Saturday," says the editor, "the atmosphere being dry, cool and pure, and everything else propitious, the proper communications were made, and the operator at Buffalo wrote through beautifully to Milwaukee, eight hundred miles, without re-writing at Detroit. We received our report of that afternoon direct from Buffalo. This is the first time that this has been done, and we believe eight hundred miles is as far as writing has ever been sent by any of the operators on any of the lines of the world." It would seem that the world was still dazed with the marvels of the electric telegraph; and yet, like the vivid anticipations of the Queen of Sheba, the half of its glories were not then made known.

In 1851, Mr. Colfax received his first nomination for congress, but was defeated. During the campaign James Davis, a talented lawyer and writer of the day, occupied the editorial chair. In July, 1853, a Northrup power press, capable of printing a thousand copies of the paper per hour, was placed in the Register office. This was a great advance. In 1854, Mr. Colfax was again nominated for congress, and was this time elected. Alfred Wheeler then became editor; and in April, 1857, the partnership of Colfax and Wheeler was formed, under which firm the paper was continued until Mr. Wheeler became sole owner. Mr. Hall afterwards became a partner of Mr. Wheeler.

In November, 1865, Archibald Beal, who for eight years had been the proprietor of the Mishawaka Enterprise, purchased the Register, in partnership with C. E. Fuller. Two years afterwards Alfred B. Miller and Elmer Crockett, who had been engaged on the paper, purchased the interest of Mr. Fuller, and the firm became Beal, Miller and Company. In January, 1872, Mr. Beal purchased the interests of Mr. Miller and Mr. Crockett; and 1873 Daniel S. Marsh became associate editor. In February, 1874, D. J. Benner purchased a half interest in the Register, and became one of the editors, Mr. Marsh remaining but a short time longer in that capacity. In

August, 1875, the Register Company was formed, with Mr. Beal as president; Edward W. Houricks, secretary; Nish F. Van Winkle, treasurer; Orlando H. Palmer, George H. Alward and Alexander N. Thomas, the remaining incorporators. On October 13, 1878, a new corporation was formed, the Register Printing Company, with Daniel S. Marsh, president; Chauncey N. Fassett, secretary; Herbert S. Fassett, treasurer; Eugene M. Herr and Frank A. Marsh, the remaining incorporators. On September 18, 1875, a daily edition of the Register was established. A Sunday edition was also issued for a time. In 1887, after a notable career of over forty years, the famous journal was discontinued, the plant and fixtures being sold to the Tribune Printing Company. The Register was weakened by the withdrawal of Mr. Miller, Mr. Crockett and others, in 1872, and the subsequent establishment by these young men of the South Bend Tribune.

Sec. 3.—THE TRIBUNE.—On March 9, 1872, the first copy of the South Bend Weekly Tribune was issued by the Tribune Printing Company. The incorporators of the company were Alfred Bryant Miller, Elmer Crockett, James H. Banning and Elias W. Hoover. These gentlemen had all been connected with the Register, and had withdrawn by reason of some dissatisfaction with the management of that paper. They were young men, experienced already in newspaper business and fully determined to issue a progressive, up-to-date journal, such as they believed the people of South Bend and St. Joseph county demanded. On May 28, 1873, the first issue of the Daily Tribune appeared; and since that date the Tribune, daily and weekly, has been one of the strong and influential papers of the state. Alfred B. Miller, the first editor, was a man of marked personality and great force of character; and he made the Tribune a power not only in politics, but in the molding of public opinion on all social and other subjects in which the people were interested. His style as a writer was incisive, persuasive and

popular, with humorous and poetical veins that made the Tribune one of the most readable papers. Accordingly, although the Tribune was Republican, almost partisan, in politics, yet its news and editorial columns were sought by people of all shades of political opinion. At the same time Mr. Crockett, who has been the business manager from the beginning, has so conducted the fiscal affairs that the plant has yearly increased in wealth and has besides made its owners wealthy. One of the fine characters connected with the Tribune in an editorial capacity for many years, Richard H. Lyon, has already been many times mentioned in these pages. He was a writer of the most elegant taste, and did very much to give to the paper its high literary character. Mr. Miller died in the fall of 1892, and Mr. Lyon early in the year 1907. The editorial charge of the paper since their death has fallen into worthy hands, and the original high stand of the Tribune has been maintained. Mr. Frederick A. Miller, only son of Alfred B. Miller, is now the editor-in-chief, and William K. Lamport is associate editor. The veteran Elmer Crockett, the only one left of the original founders, is still the business manager. Charles E. Crockett, son of Elmer, is secretary of the company.

The original site of the Tribune plant was No. 127 West Washington street. Afterwards the company purchased the lot at No. 128 North Main street, with grounds in the rear for its extensive presses and machinery, for a complete printing and bindery establishment. There the company has built up one of the best equipped newspaper and job printing establishments in the state. Typesetting machines have been introduced, and the most modern presses have been installed, including a perfecting stereotype press, electrotyping machines and everything else demanded by the most modern printing office in the country.

Sec. 4.—THE TIMES.—In the year 1853, Ariel Euclid Drapier and his son William H. Drapier began the publication in South Bend of the St. Joseph County Forum. This was



John B. Stoll

the first attempt to establish a Democratic newspaper in St. Joseph county. The majority of the people in the early history of the county were Whigs; and after the founding of the Republican party that party took the place of the Whigs, and under the brilliant leadership of Mr. Colfax maintained its supremacy in county politics. The task of the Drapiers, father and son, in building up a Democratic paper was therefore one of difficulty. Ariel Euclid Drapier was a man of great force of character, and he and his talented son did succeed in making the Forum a powerful newspaper. They were both expert shorthand writers, and their talent in this respect was for many years made use of in the legislature, where they prepared and published the celebrated Brevier Reports, now so valuable from a historical point of view, as preserving the debates, and proceedings of the sessions of the general assembly. This work was carried on by William H. Drapier for many years after the death of his father. During the absence of the father and son in attendance upon the legislature, Charles E. Drapier, a younger son, was in charge of the Forum. A semi-weekly edition of the Forum was published for a few months in 1858, but did not prove a success. For some vigorous language used by the paper in relation to the conduct of the war, it was for a short time suspended during the year 1863, by order of General Milo B. Hascall. The Forum was afterwards sold to Edward Malloy, who, having been a gallant soldier in the Union army, determined to change the name of the paper to the National Union. This name was subsequently changed to the South Bend Weekly Union. In December, 1874, Charles L. Murray, a veteran newspaper man, and formerly a member of the state senate from the Goshen district, purchased the Union and placed it in charge of his son, the brilliant Charles T. Murray. Charles T. Murray changed the name to the Herald, and formed the Herald Printing and Publishing Company, which assumed control of the paper

and started a lively morning daily. On May 22, 1876, Charles L. Murray re-purchased the plant, came to South Bend and assumed charge of the Herald which he conducted in a very able manner, making it one of the most influential Democratic papers in the state. From 1881 to 1883, Henry A. Peed was owner and editor of the paper. He gave to it the name of the South Bend Times, which it has since retained. On September 26, 1881, Mr. Peed formed the South Bend Times Company, the stockholders being Henry A. Peed, Robert L. Peed and Jacob D. Henderson. On March 2, 1882, the paper needing additional capital, the property was taken over by a new company, the Times Printing Company. The stockholders were Joseph Henderson, Sorden Lister, Henry A. Peed, Alfred Klingel, Robert L. Peed, Jacob D. Henderson, Timothy E. Howard and Harrison G. Beemer. In the spring of 1883, the controlling stock in this corporation was transferred to the Hon. John B. Stoll, the brilliant editor of the Ligonier Banner, which Mr. Stoll had made "the ablest Democratic paper in Indiana," as William S. Holman declared to the writer, years afterwards. Of the succeeding history of the Times, it is perhaps sufficient to say that the Democrats of the city and county soon became satisfied that they had in that paper one of the very best in the country and in its editor-in-chief, one of the ablest and wisest editorial writers in the United States. Closely associated with Mr. Stoll, from 1883 until his lamented death, December 15, 1906, was Charles Albert McDonald. But better than mere party service, however desirable that may be, the Times and its accomplished editors had and still have a constituency far beyond all partisan lines. The paper has been in the best sense independent in politics and in all other matters affecting the public welfare. The independence of the press is one of the chief safeguards of the liberties of the people; and this truth the people themselves are quick to recognize. It does not follow that the independent

paper does not sometimes make mistakes, grievous mistakes occasionally, does not at times do violence to the feelings and convictions of its readers and particularly its party supporters; this, however, is far better in the end than to take a cowardly part in the discussion of public questions. Party principles, as in the case of all other principles, must of course control in large degree the sentiments of a party newspaper; any other course would be dishonest with its readers. But within the lines there is ample room for a free and manly course, as was exemplified in the career of Peter Stirling. In this best sense the Times has been an independent party paper; and the people, without respect to party, have appreciated the strong, manly course pursued by the Times and have accorded to it a most generous support. There is indeed no town in the state, perhaps in the whole country, that has two better newspapers than the South Bend Times and the South Bend Tribune. Of course they quarrel with one another occasionally, but the people make allowances for this and appreciate the fact that they are favored with two first class, manly, independent newspapers, devoted, first of all, to the welfare of the Queen City of the St. Joseph valley.

Sec. 5.—THE SUNDAY NEWS.—Besides the Sunday Register, already noted, a Sunday paper was issued for a time by Timothy G. Turner, in connection with his *Annals*, which he began in 1869. His first publication was the *Gazetteer of the St. Joseph Valley*, in 1867. He likewise began in 1871 the publication of a city directory. The annual and the directory were continued until 1881, after which William L. Farr, who had been a canvasser for Mr. Turner's publications, continued the directory, but the Turner's *Annals* and Sunday paper were discontinued.

On April 24, 1887, Chauncey N. Fassett, who had been editor of the Register, issued the first copy of his Sunday News, and has continued since that time to issue the paper every Sunday morning. It has admirably

filled its well recognized place among the established journals of the city, being, as its name indicates, and in harmony with the versatile talent of its genial editor, a newsy, local Sunday morning paper, one that would be sorely missed by every citizen who looks there for the news that is reported after the issue of the Saturday Tribune and Times. The News has occasionally some difficulty in steering its course between the breakers of the Times and the Tribune, avoiding a republication of the news given by either of the two dailies, and taking its own independent course in the discussion of topics pertaining to the city's interests and in giving the news in its own line. It is enough to say that the course pursued by the Sunday News has been a successful one.

Sec. 6.—OTHER NEWSPAPERS.—The *Goniec Polski*, or Polish Messenger, is published in the interests and for the entertainment and information of the very large and intelligent Polish population of South Bend and vicinity. It is a semi-weekly, six-column folio, and is independent in politics. The editor and proprietor is Mr. George W. J. Kalezynski, born and educated in the United States and a master of the English language and literature as well as of the Polish. He is one of the most accomplished and enterprising of the younger leaders of the city of South Bend.

The *Indiana Courier* was established in 1873, and published in the German language in the interests of the German people of South Bend and vicinity. Soon after its establishment the Courier was purchased by Gustav Fickentscher, who changed the name to the *South Bend Courier*. Later Mr. Fickentscher associated with himself in the management of the Courier Mr. Andrew Troeger. The Courier was always a liberal, democratic journal.

The *Industrial Era* was established in the fall of 1879 by Ralph E. Hoyt. It was an advocate of the principles of the national Greenback party. It was published for only a few months and was succeeded by the *South Bend Era*. The first copy of the latter paper

was issued on March 27, 1880, by Benjamin Franklin Shively, who was sole editor and proprietor. Those who had the pleasure of reading this bright, crispy, carefully edited paper, remember its pages with a great deal of satisfaction as the first public work of the brilliant gentleman whose fine oratory was afterwards for years heard in the halls of congress and before the people not only of Indiana, but throughout the whole country. Mr. Shively, a native of St. Joseph county, is without question one of the first orators, as he is one of the wisest statesmen of Indiana.

The Martin Van Buren Free Soil movement



POST OFFICE, SOUTH BEND.

of 1848 was championed for a few months in the Free Democrat, established by Dr. E. W. H. Ellis.

On January 26, 1892, the Post Printing Company was incorporated by John W. O'Bannon, William H. Burke and Gay L. Tafts, for the purpose of engaging in the publication of a newspaper. The office of the Post was located at No. 232 North Main street, and the paper was an exceedingly neat and well edited one. But there did not seem to be any place for it, and it survived but a few months. The editor deserves to be remembered. He was Mr. Herbert Hunt, and was unusually talented and ambitious. He was afterwards one of the most valued re-

porters on the Indianapolis Sun, and eventually removed to the state of Washington, where he became editor of a newspaper on the coast.

Aside from the journals mentioned, a few newspapers representing special interests have been published from time to time, but need not be further referred to. The city seems now to be, and for several years past to have been, fully provided for in this line by the Daily and Weekly Times, the Daily and Weekly Tribune and the Sunday News. No city has better newspapers, and they seem to fully satisfy all the needs of our people in this line.

Sec. 7.—SOUTH BEND SUMMARY.—The following statement is taken from a leaflet issued from the Tribune press, in the general interests of the business men of the city of South Bend. In summing up the advantages of our city as a place of residence and business, this statement seems at the same time to present a comprehensive abstract of what South Bend has attained to, from the year 1820, when Pierre Navarre, the first white man to settle here, built his cabin on the banks of the St. Joseph, even down to this year of our Lord, 1907:

South Bend, population approaching 60,000, the largest city in the northern part of Indiana and the county seat of St. Joseph county, is situated on the St. Joseph river, one of the most picturesque inland streams in the world, six miles south of the Indiana-Michigan line. It is regarded as one of the cleanest, best-paved and healthiest cities in America.

It has eight steam railroads, fine street railways, electric interurban systems to adjacent territory and is one of the best points for manufacturing, general business and residence in the United States. South Bend is 86 miles east of Chicago and within a day's ride of New York city. Manufacturers seeking a location should carefully investigate South Bend and its manifold advantages before arriving at a decision. With scores of prosperous manufacturing establishments, the product of many of which goes to all parts of the civilized world, South Bend is one of the best advertised cities in the universe. It is a stamp of merit for goods to bear the name

of South Bend. Here are a few of the many notable features of our city:

- Six banks.
- A humane society.
- Rural mail service.
- Free kindergartens.
- Garbage crematory.
- A \$75,000 city hall.
- Beautiful residences.
- A government building.
- Good daily newspapers.
- A \$250,000 court house.
- Police ambulance system.
- Two local telephone systems.
- Two well equipped hospitals.
- The world's largest toy works.
- Two loan and trust companies.
- Eight square miles of territory.
- Over 140 miles of public streets.
- Long distance telephone service.
- The world's largest plow factory.
- Freedom from labor disturbances.
- Assessed valuation of \$25,000,000.
- Six building and loan associations.
- A handsome \$35,000 public library.
- Abundant water and electric power.
- Annual payrolls of over \$6,000,000.
- Twenty-four miles of street car lines.
- Historical society and public museum.
- Annual wholesale trade of \$25,000,000.
- Savings bank with \$3,000,000 deposits.
- The world's largest clover huller plant.
- Theatrical and show printing company.
- Fifty passenger trains, nearly all daily.
- One hundred and ninety acres of parks.
- One of the world's largest shirt factories.
- Gamewell fire and police alarm systems.
- Unsurpassed features as a business center.
- A splendid surrounding agricultural region.
- Fifty miles of paved public thoroughfares.
- Extensive gas and electric lighting plants.
- One military company, Indiana national guard.
- The world's largest sewing machine case plant.
- The largest wood turning plant in the world.
- Unrivalled facilities as a manufacturing center.
- Over 100 fraternal and benevolent societies.
- One of the largest watch factories in America.
- Unequaled qualifications as a place of residence.

One of the largest underwear mills in the world.

Largest concrete block machine factory in America.

A business amounting to about \$50,000,000 annually.

The largest exclusively men's underwear mills in America.

American District Telegraph Company messenger service.

Two telegraph companies—Western Union and Postal.

Young Men's Christian Association and fine new building.

The largest paper box factory in Indiana and one of the largest in the world.

Two G. A. R. posts, one Spanish war veteran camp, two W. R. C., one Sons of Veterans.

Eighty-three miles of water mains supplied all year with pure artesian water.

Young Women's Christian Association and beautiful and modern new building.

The largest kitchen range plant in Indiana and one of the largest in the world.

Boarding home for young women under auspices of Young Women's Christian Association.

Splendid opportunities for profitable employment for bright and energetic men and women.

Three of the handsomest theaters in the west, of 1,000, 1,200 and 1,600 seating capacity.

Fifty-two church organizations, many with church edifices of striking architectural appearance.

Population of about 200,000 reached by electric railway service of which South Bend is the center.

Constant bona fide and profitable opportunities for the investment of capital in good manufacturing and other substantial enterprises.

A paid fire department of 12 companies forming one of the best fire departments in the world, besides several private factory fire departments, and 850 fire hydrants.

Eleven hotels of various grades and prices, the Oliver, erected at a cost of \$600,000, being one of the finest and most complete in the world.

Many clubs devoted to social, athletic, literary and dramatic objects, several in their own buildings, besides a large number of lesser social organizations.

Fourteen public and a number of parochial schools, all of a high order, the celebrated University of Notre Dame, for men, the world-famed St. Mary's Academy for women and a commercial college.

Eight railroads—the Lake Shore & Michigan Southern, Grand Trunk Western, Michigan Central, Chicago, Indiana & Southern, Indiana Northern, New Jersey, Indiana & Illinois, Vandalia and Chicago & South Bend.

One hundred and twenty-two artesian wells supplying pure water for domestic, factory and fire protection purposes all the year, the water being forced throughout the city by standpipe pressure supplied by three pumping stations with a daily capacity of 24,000,000 gallons.

Connections by one of the best electric railways in America, with Mishawaka, population 9,000, four miles distant; Elkhart, 19,000, 15 miles; Goshen, 10,000, 26 miles; Warsaw, 7,000, 50 miles; Niles, Mich., 7,000, 10 miles; St. Joseph and Benton Harbor, Mich., population 15,000, 35 miles.

Many manufacturing establishments of various sizes, some the largest in the world, making automobiles, automatic computing scales, adjustable shade hangers, artificial fuel, awnings, alfalfa hullers, automatic field glasses, bicycles, building stone, books, brooms, bricks, beer, blinds, box making machinery, baking powder, boats, blueing, bob-sleds, boiler compound, brick-making machinery, brass articles, box springs, bar fixtures, barrels, bolt threading machinery, clover hullers, cigars, carpets, cultivators, cutlery, cigar boxes, castings, carriage covers, concrete mixing machinery, chandeliers, cement blocks, cornice,

confectionery, carriages, cement bricks, carts, cut building stone, doors, dowels, electric dry batteries, electrotypes, electric house fixtures, electric sparking devices, electric coils, electric switches, electric specialties, engines, furniture, feed mills, flour, fishing tackle, flue brushes, furnaces, folding paper boxes, gas and gasoline engines, gas fixtures, grills, games, grain drills, harness and harness appurtenances, hand carts, harrows, horse covers, hose carts, hardware specialties, ice, ice cream, jewelry, knit underwear, linseed oil, lumber, labels, loose leaf ledgers, machinery, mattresses, malleable steel kitchen ranges, mineral water, milling machinery, mail boxes, mill cogs, motors, office furniture, oil filters, plows, printing press rollers, paper boxes, proprietary medicines, pulleys, paper roll protectors, pony vehicles, porch swings, paste, photo mounts, pulp plaster, power drills, printed matter, rubber stamps, razors, roofing, rugs, railroad supplies, respirators, re-seating machinery, roof paint, rattan specialties, shirts, steel skeins, shipping tags, sewing machine parts, soda water, steam boilers, sash, street sprinklers, soldering fluxes, street sweepers, shovels, street car signs, screens, sleighs, snuff, standpipes, seeders, steam specialties, sheet iron products, stereotypes, spark arresters, stone making machinery, toys, tool specialties, tombstones, tooth paste, telephones and telephone supplies, tents, theatrical posters, tables, varnish, wagons, woolens, wood boxes, watches, willow specialties, water works machinery, wire bound boxes, wire fence, wood turnings, well boring machinery, wagon covers, wind stacker hoods. Most South Bend plants run the entire year.

DISTINGUISHED CAREERS SELECTED FROM THE
INDUSTRIAL, BUSINESS AND PROFESSIONAL
LIFE OF THE COUNTY
AND THE OLDEST
CITIZENS.

The preceding pages of history are rich in personal reference, for it would be impossible to describe the civilization that has grown up within the limits of the county, in the country, the towns and the cities, without having continually in mind and speaking of the men and women who bore the part of pioneers, or who did the work of the second generation, or who during the last quarter century have reaped the rewards of their predecessors and have themselves assumed responsibilities for succeeding generations. "Institutions are but the lengthened shadows of men" is a fine statement of the part individuals play in history, and there are a great many individuals in St. Joseph county who have built enduring monuments in character or industrial enterprise, so that either their names or the institutions with which they completely identified themselves are known by all and have unforgettable places in the county's history. Most of the names which follow have already been mentioned in the preceding pages, but here will be found a more complete account in biographical form of many of the men whose accomplishments have done so much for the development of city and county.

The preparation of the general history of St. Joseph county has been the result of more than a year's diligent and painstaking labor on the part of Judge Howard, of South Bend. Written at the close of a long residence and active participation in the affairs of the county, this history is the expression

of a ripened judgment and intelligent observation of the varied events and the complex development that have attended the splendid progress of the county and its central cities. As a result, this work becomes a valuable contribution to the historical literature pertaining to the St. Joseph valley, and is probably destined to remain for many years the principal authoritative work of local history.

In addition to speaking these words of appreciation concerning the labors of Judge Howard, the publishers deem it fitting to state the principal facts in the career of the author and insert a brief sketch of his life among those of other well known citizens of the county.

Timothy Edward Howard was born near Ann Arbor, Michigan, January 27, 1837. His parents were both of English-Irish ancestry. His father, Martin Howard, was born near Fermoy, county Cork, Ireland, and his mother, Julia (Beahan) Howard, at or near Mount Rath, Queen's county, Ireland, whence both parents came to America and became pioneers of Michigan territory.

The father died when Timothy was fourteen years old, and being the eldest of the seven children, he took charge of the farm and became the principal reliance of his widowed mother and the younger children. The subject of this sketch has long been known for his ripe scholarship and classical learning. The foundation of this knowledge was acquired in his youth, despite the primitive schools then existing in Michigan and the necessary confinement of his farm duties. As a boy he had attended country schools during the winters, and at the age of seventeen had two terms in the Ypsilanti union school, where he enjoyed the instruction of Professor Joseph Estabrook and other excellent teachers. Entering the University at Ann Arbor in his eighteenth year, he was able to continue his studies only until the middle

of his sophomore year, when the home farm again needed his presence. At the age of twenty and again the following year he taught country schools. When twenty-one he was elected inspector of the schools of Northfield, his native township.

Judge Howard first became identified with St. Joseph county, Indiana, as a student in Notre Dame, when he was twenty-two years old. Three years later he was graduated, having taught primary classes during his collegiate career. From the quiet study halls of Notre Dame he took his place as a private soldier in the struggle of the nation for existence. Enlisting, February 5, 1862, in the Twelfth Michigan Infantry, he hurried to the front, and just two months later, April 6, was severely wounded at the battle of Shiloh. After lying for a time in the Marine Hospital at Evansville, he was discharged June 14, 1862, by reason of his wound. His return to Notre Dame was marked by his employment as professor of English literature and other classes in the university. For a number of years his career was identified with this university, and as an educator he is remembered and esteemed by hundreds who are now in active life.

For nearly thirty years he has been almost continuously in public life. Beginning in 1878, he served six years as a member of the South Bend common council. One of the acts which stands to his credit as councilman is the fact that through his efforts the first public park was secured for the city, and later was named Howard Park. During this time, beginning in 1879, he was clerk of the St. Joseph circuit court four years. In 1886 came his election to the state senate, where he served three sessions until his resignation in 1892. His chief services in the upper house were as follows: He was author of the bill to remove the limestone ledge in the Kankakee river at Momenec; assisted in framing the Australian ballot law in 1889; brought in the bill for the establishment of the appellate court in 1891; and framed the bill for the Indiana tax law of 1891. On his resignation from the senate he was elected a judge of the supreme court, serving six years. In addition to these elective offices, Judge Howard has served as city attorney of South Bend and county attorney for St. Joseph county, and has also been selected for service on special commissions dealing with subjects of vital interest or reform in

state government. He was president of the Fee and Salary commission, 1900-01, by appointment of Governor James A. Mount; was appointed by Governor Durbin a delegate to the tax conference held at the Pan-American Exposition in Buffalo, May 23-24, 1901, where he read a paper on the Indiana tax law; and was appointed by Governor Durbin a member of the commission of 1903-05 for codifying the laws of the state.

Our author has long been interested in the history of his county and state and is now president of the Northern Indiana Historical Society. Besides this history of St. Joseph county, he has written miscellaneous papers and books, some of them prepared as text books during his work as an educator and others for special purposes and occasions. By his marriage, on July 14, 1864, at Detroit, to Miss Julia A. Redmond, Judge Howard has had ten children, seven of whom are still living.

HON. SCHUYLER COLFAX. When Schuyler Colfax, vice-president of the United States, congressman from Indiana for many years and one of the speakers of the house of representatives during the period of the Civil war, passed away at Mankato, Minnesota, on the 13th of January, 1885, South Bend lost its most distinguished citizen, and the country not only a leading statesman and patriot, but a good and noble man as well. He was among the most eminent men of the west, whose life record forms an integral part of the history, not alone of South Bend but of the state and nation, and who is therefore most worthy of special mention in a work of this character. In his death the nation lost one of its most progressive citizens, one whose influence was felt in marked degree along intellectual and moral advancement.

As the day with its morning of hope and promise, its noonday of activity, its evening of completed and successful efforts, ending in the grateful rest and quiet of the night—so was the life of this honored man. His career was a long, busy and useful one, marked by the utmost fidelity to the duties of public and private life, and crowned with honors conferred upon him by his home city, state and nation, in recognition of superior merit. His name is inseparably interwoven with the annals of Indiana, with its best development and its stable progress, and his memory is cherished as that of one who made the world better for his having lived.

Schuyler Colfax was a native of the Empire state, born on the 23d of March, 1823, in New York City. As a lad of thirteen he came to New Carlisle, St. Joseph county, where he was educated and early developed a taste for politics and newspaper work. In 1845 he founded the *St. Joseph Valley Register*, and, after filling many political positions of local import, in 1852 was selected as a delegate to the Whig convention which nominated General Winfield Scott to the presidency. In 1855 he was sent to congress and re-elected for six consecutive terms, and from 1863 to 1869—covering such momentuous periods of the Civil war and Reconstruction—ably served as speaker of the house of representatives. His vice-presidential term with General Grant covered the period 1869-73, and in the latter year he retired from public life and returned to South Bend.

In 1868 Schuyler Colfax was united in marriage to Miss Ellen Wade, a niece of the widely known Senator Wade of Ohio. She is a most accomplished lady, whose many acts of charity and kindness have endeared her to the citizens of South Bend and St. Joseph county. One son was born of their union, Schuyler Colfax, Jr., who for many years was an active business man of South Bend and was elected its mayor in 1898, but is no longer a resident of the place.

In his public capacities, Schuyler Colfax was a recognized orator of his day and a wise statesman. In his domestic and personal relations he was a loving husband and an affectionate father; was kind and benevolent, and charitable to a fault; a man beloved by all, especially by the citizens of South Bend and others who knew him best. With him friendship was inviolable and the circle of his friendship was almost co-extensive with the circle of his acquaintance. When those who needed assistance came to him his aid was never withheld. Honor and integrity characterized his every act, and he was never known to take advantage of his fellow man. His name will be honored for many generations as that of one who stood as the highest type of American citizenship.

ALEXIS COQUILLARD. The name Coquillard is synonymous with South Bend, and is intertwined with so many interests of this city that it is difficult to say what is the most prominent feature of its historical relations with South Bend. To the oldest residents, and to those who would learn of the origin of

this city, one of the first personalities in a long list of celebrities is that Alexis Coquillard who, after Peter F. Navarre, became the first white settler on the site of South Bend. He located here in 1823, an agent of the American Fur Company, and as such conducted a trading post in a log cabin that was the first residence of white man in the woods at the south bend of the St. Joseph river. Unlike others in that occupation, who usually retreated before the advance of actual settlement, he remained on the site of South Bend while it was being settled by a thrifty class of pioneers, and until his death in 1855 was closely identified with the interests of the growing town, being one of the proprietors of the first flouring mill and in many other ways a citizen of note and influence.

It was a nephew and namesake of this trader and pioneer whose career is most familiar to the later generation of St. Joseph county. Although it is now seventeen years since his death, he is still remembered with affection and gratitude for his noble character and his usefulness and generosity as a citizen. Many departments of activity were influenced by him while living, and much remains with which his name can still be identified. Having acquired a fortune in his home city and county, he was generous in its expenditure for the benefit of his citizens. A few years before his death he purchased one thousand acres of land adjoining the city, and donated a large tract of it for the purposes of a public park. He established the Coquillard Wagon Works in 1865, and directed it through a prosperous growth until its output was sold in nearly every county in the United States. In ways too numerous to mention, his private interests were intertwined with the progress of the entire community, and among those who helped make South Bend during its first half century of existence he will always be considered as one of the most prominent.

Dying at Battle Creek, Michigan, February 25, 1890, Alexis Coquillard had rounded out a life of sixty-five years. He was born in Detroit, April 29, 1825, where his parents, Benjamin and Sophia (Andre) Coquillard, were among the well known French settlers of that city. Benjamin Coquillard was in almost the first group of notable pioneers who came to St. Joseph county at the close of the decade of the twenties. He brought his family to the site of South Bend in 1829, only



Yours Truly
Chas. A. Trevelyan

a few years after his brother, the fur trader, had located here, although by 1829 the fur-trading period was rapidly passing and the era of permanent settlement had begun. Benjamin Coquillard made of his rough and primitive home a place of public entertainment, or tavern, as it was then known, and it was in this backwoods inn that the boy Alexis gained his first experiences in the world. His tendency to trade early became marked, and while still a boy he was conducting a profitable traffic among the Indians. It is recalled that when he was sixteen years old, L. P. Johnson, who kept a tavern located at the southwest corner of Michigan avenue and Washington street, built a wagon which attracted general attention, this being the first one ever constructed in South Bend. The wagon became an object of envious interest to young Coquillard, and when it was completed he induced his mother to purchase it for him. He put it into service by hauling produce and goods from the river for the few merchants of the town, and soon had paid not only for the wagon but for his team of horses.

As is made clear in other parts of this history, the educational facilities offered at South Bend during the thirties and forties were very meager. In the history of Notre Dame University, Alexis Coquillard's name comes first—the first student. This opportunity for gaining an education came when Father Sorin, in two log houses, commenced the work that proved the nucleus of the present university, and the young boy who so cheerfully rowed him across the river to perform his priestly labors became his first student. Alexis pursued his studies and graduated from the log cabin college.

The spirit of the pioneer has always been strong in the Coquillard family. When the rush to California began, this spirit took hold of Alexis, and, having persuaded his uncle to furnish him with an outfit, he started to find his fortune in the Eldorado. The agreement was that the profits of the venture were to be divided between the uncle who furnished the capital and the nephew who furnished the energy and enterprise. He was one of the lucky forty-niners, for after nine months he returned to South Bend and faithfully divided his little fortune of four thousand dollars with the uncle who had thus stood sponsor for his honesty and good judgment.

The two thousand dollars realized from his

California venture became the working capital with which he built up his fortune. With this money he bought some land near the present family homestead at Mosquito Glen, but he soon found farming too monotonous and its profits too tardy. Following the sale of this property, he turned his attention to real estate dealings, and in that direction gained the greater part of his fortune. His operations were at first confined to the vicinity of South Bend. Another departure was the buying of a sawmill, which directed him into the lumber business, and in a few years he became one of the most extensive lumber dealers of northern Indiana. His real estate interests were growing so rapidly that by 1860 he was reputed to be the largest land owner in St. Joseph county. The founding of the wagon works followed in 1865, and with the extension of his real estate and other operations to various parts of the country, he built up a large fortune.

Of the marriage of Mr. Coquillard to Miss Maud Perley, of Portland, Maine, two sons were born, Alexis and Joseph Alexander, who continue the Coquillard interests in South Bend and are worthy successors of a father whose life and work were of so much importance to South Bend's history.

HON. CLEM STUDEBAKER. Those are rare characters in the world's history who have both the tact and the force of character to overcome all obstacles caused by lack of early education, and take their place not only among the material forces of their country but with the cultured and professionally trained, who have had every advantage afforded by the universities of two continents. But eminent common sense, a great heart and the courtesy of an inborn gentleman will overcome all artificial considerations, especially in these United States of America, and perhaps half a dozen times in a generation a family of characters bearing these strong traits comes to the surface and holds the unbounded admiration of the country. The Studebaker family is of this great democracy, and none of its representatives was more typical of its admirable characteristics than the late Hon. Clem Studebaker.

Mr. Studebaker was born near Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, March 12, 1831, the boy being four years of age when the family moved to Ashland county, Ohio. There his youth was passed, attending the public schools and working with his father at the forge and in his

wagon shop. Through the latter occupation he laid the basis of that thorough and practical knowledge which enabled him in later years to be a prime factor in the founding of the great industry conducted by the Studebaker Brothers Manufacturing Company. When nineteen years old (in 1850) he came to South Bend to live, and was introduced to the locality as a teacher. His career as an educator covered only two terms of school, after which, in partnership with his oldest brother, Henry, he opened a small blacksmith shop near Jefferson and Michigan streets.

It appears that during the first year of what may be considered the establishment of the industry which now has a world-wide fame two wagons constituted the total output, although the brothers also engaged in a general blacksmithing business. Their initial capital was sixty-eight dollars. The successors of these sturdy founders have now in their splendidly equipped office an oil painting of this little blacksmith shop, which proved to be the foundation of the splendid reputation and fortune made eventually by the Studebaker family. The plant is now the largest of its kind in the world, and its wagons and vehicles of all kinds are turned out by the hundreds of thousands, being distributed throughout the civilized globe.

Clem Studebaker, who had so large a share in bringing about this remarkable industrial and commercial development, and although before all else a practical man of rare ability and tireless energy, coupled with an iron determination and a manly ambition to excel in his life work, was at the same time liberal in his outlook and deeply interested in educational and public movements. He was one of the leading Republicans of his state, which he twice represented in national conventions. He was thrice honored as a United States commissioner to the great modern expositions, being a representative to those at Paris, New Orleans and Chicago, and at the World's Columbian Exposition he served as president of the Indiana board of managers. For many years Mr. Studebaker was a member of the board of trustees of DePauw University, was president of the board of trustees of the Chautauqua Assembly in 1889-90, and was selected by President Harrison to represent the United States at the Pan-American Congress held at Washington, where his wide knowledge of commercial conditions, as they existed on the western hemisphere, and his

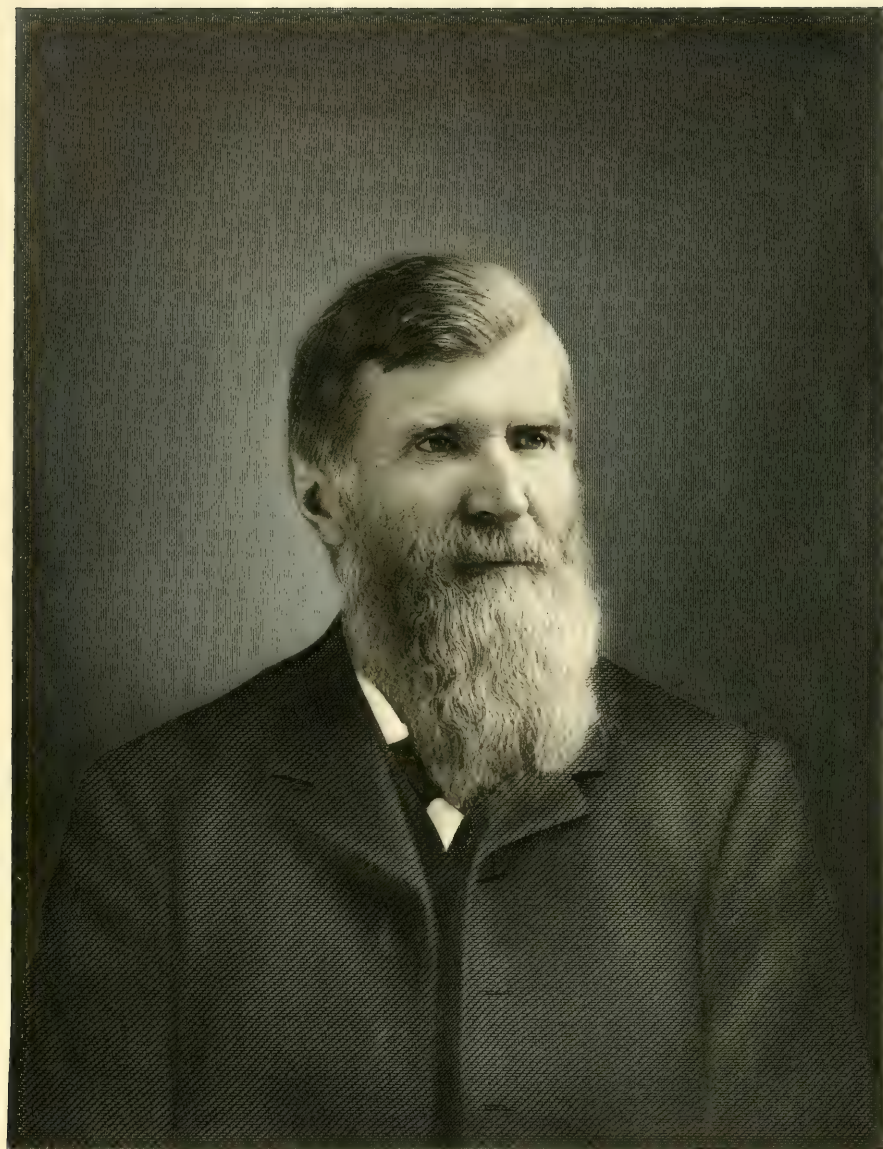
strong personal influence were freely recognized.

Clem Studebaker was not only a man of strength, but one of magnetism, with a sympathetic outflow toward all suffering. He was charitable in spirit, and his benevolence manifested itself in countless practical works. An ideal business man, a good citizen, a helpful friend, a broad philanthropist and man of the world, eager to aid in its best progress, the deceased left a great void both in the public community and in the hearts of countless friends.

Mr. Studebaker's wife, before marriage, was known as Mrs. Ann (Milburn) Harper, daughter of George Milburn, a prominent wagon manufacturer of Mishawaka. Their home, which is one of the finest in the state, is known as Tippécanoe, in commemoration of the famous treaty which is said to have taken place on the ground now occupied by the Studebaker residence. No citizen of Indiana ever passed away whose death was more keenly or generally deplored.

HENRY STUDEBAKER was one of the founders of the great vehicle industry of the Studebaker Brothers Manufacturing Company, and although he retired from the business at an early period in its development, it was quite firmly founded when he retired to the less strenuous career of an agricultural life. He was born near Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, October 5, 1826, the son of John Studebaker, whose sketch appears elsewhere. When Henry was nine years of age the family migrated to Ashland county, Ohio, being transported in a wagon which was built by the father. So it may be that, in reality, John Studebaker was the founder of the business which has carried the name of the family to every part of the globe.

In Ashland county Henry Studebaker was apprenticed to a country blacksmith, working at his trade during the busy season and in the winter months attending the district schools. He finally mastered his trade under his father's instruction, and when he was ready to go out into the world as an independent workman there was no more expert blacksmith than he in that section. In 1847, then of age, he bought a horse and started for the farther west. His first stop was at Goshen, Indiana, where he worked at his trade for some months, but, finding nothing to encourage him in the outlook of the locality, returned to his home in Ohio.



WILLIAM STUDEBAKER



Wm. Studebaker

In 1850 Henry Studebaker, in company with his younger brother Clem, made a trip to South Bend, Indiana, and with their joint capital of sixty-eight dollars established a blacksmith shop. During the following year, in addition to a general business in the line of their trade, they turned out and sold two wagons, which was the commencement of a world-famed business. The prospects were so promising that in 1852 the remainder of the family came from Ohio, making the journey in two wagons. The brothers established their little blacksmith shop at the corner of Michigan and Jefferson streets, under the firm name of H. & C. Studebaker, worked industriously and hopefully night and day, toiled and economized, and, within a few years had the satisfaction of knowing that they had founded a new and profitable industry of unusual proportions for those times. In 1858, with the business fairly on its feet, Henry Studebaker was obliged to retire from it on account of impaired health, disposing of his interest to his brother, J. M. Buying a large tract of land adjoining South Bend, he continued to cultivate and improve it until his death, March 12, 1895, by which time, on account of the general development of the country and the consequent increase in real estate values, coupled with Mr. Studebaker's good management and business judgment, he had reached a position of comfort and agricultural prominence.

Henry Studebaker was a man of strictly temperate habits, being an abstainer from alcohol and tobacco during his entire life. He was of an affectionate disposition, a loving husband and father and a good neighbor and citizen, and possessed altogether a warm, honorable and Christian character. He was a member of the Dunkard Church, and took especial delight in entertaining the brethren and elders at his home. His wife, to whom he was married in 1852, was Susan Studebaker, daughter of Samuel Studebaker, by whom he had the following six children: Mrs. A. W. Bowman, Samuel W., Edith (now Mrs. Ervin Gingrich), Clem W. and Mrs. J. M. Chillas, all of whom are living; and Laura, who died in 1876. The mother and wife passed away June 8, 1871.

In 1873 Henry Studebaker married as his second wife his estimable widow, who now occupies the commodious residence which was so many years a comfortable and happy family home. Mrs. Studebaker was formerly Miss

Priscilla Kreichbaum, and she is the mother of four children: D. Adelle, William, Peter C. (who married Mrs. Olive Lewis), and Arthur. Her devotion as a mother and her feminine talents as a home maker have earned for her the admiration of a wide circle of friends and the honor of the children whom she has reared.

J. M. STUDEBAKER. In this age of colossal enterprise and marked intellectual energy the prominent and successful men are those whose abilities, persistence and courage lead them into large undertakings and to assume the responsibilities and labors of leaders in their respective vocations. Mr. Studebaker has made of life a grand success, steadily overcoming the difficulties and obstacles in his path and working his way upward to the place where success places the laurel on the victor's brow. He was born near Gettysburg, Adams county, Pennsylvania, October 10, 1833. His father, John Studebaker, worked as a blacksmith there, but when his son was two years of age he moved to Ashland county, Ohio.

It was in that county that J. M. Studebaker received the early educational training which fitted him for life's responsible duties, being obliged to walk two miles to attend a country school. At the age of thirteen he began work on the farm of his brother-in-law at three dollars a month, at the same time contributing his earnings to the support of the family. In 1851 the family home was established in South Bend, the journey being made in a wagon built by the father, and they took up their abode in a log cabin four miles from the city in the winter of that year, supplies being obtained by selling wood in South Bend. The lad was a strong and willing worker, and cut two cords a day during the winter of 1851, while his father hauled it to town and secured two dollars a cord. In the spring of 1852 he entered the employ of John Cotton, a wagon maker. In the spring of the following year, 1853, a company was formed to go to California overland, and Mr. J. M. Studebaker gave his services and furnished a wagon, the wood work made by him, and ironed by his brothers, for the privilege of joining the party. The trip was a perilous and weary one, fraught with many dangers and hardships, with mountains to scale, rivers to cross and Indian savages to fight. The leader of the party died as the result from a bite of a scorpion and was buried en route. Finally,

however, the brave little band reached their destination in Hangtown, California, after five months and eight days spent on the road, Mr. Studebaker's cash capital at that time consisting of but fifty cents. He at once found employment at his trade of a wagon maker with H. L. Hines, who in after years became a stockholder in the Studebaker Company and superintendent of the factories. There he battled earnestly and energetically, and by indomitable courage and integrity soon became a partner in the business. By practicing the strictest economy he was while thus connected enabled to save enough funds at the close of five years with which to return to South Bend and also to purchase a half interest in the business of the Studebaker Brothers. At that time the brother Henry retired from the business and engaged in farming, and the firm name was then changed to C. & J. M. Studebaker, Clem doing the blacksmith work and J. M. the wood work. Both were skilled artisans in their respective trades, were ever faithful in the performance of their duties and success attended their efforts. They subsequently took into the firm Peter E., the next younger brother in age to J. M., while later Jacob F. was admitted into the partnership. These brothers have by their own energy and ability built the wonderful business which is known all over the world as the Studebaker Manufacturing Company. The men of influence in this enlightened age are the enterprising, progressive representatives of commerce, and to such ones advancement and progress are due. Although having reached the seventy-fourth milestone on the journey of life J. M. Studebaker still takes an active interest in the business, and is familiar with its every detail. His son, J. M., Jr., and two sons-in-law, F. S. Fish and H. D. Johnson, are also actively associated with the firm, as are also the young men of different branches of the family and by their ability and industry are keeping the firm to the front.

Mr. Studebaker's beautiful home, Sunnyside, is one of the beautiful sights of the city. His name figures conspicuously in the history of St. Joseph county from the period of early development to the present time.

JACOB F. STUDEBAKER. Practical ability of the highest order, combined with the warm traits of humanity and an invariable consideration for the rights and feelings of others, are qualities which mark the Studebakers as

a family; and the late Jacob F. Studebaker inherited these family traits in their full strength. He was therefore a large factor in the erection of the splendid industrial monument which his kindred have erected to the glory of themselves and their descendants. The Studebaker Brothers Manufacturing Company is one of the distinctively great industries of the world, and none of its departments are better or more favorably known than that devoted to the output of carriages, with which Jacob F. was so long identified as manager.

Jacob F. Studebaker was born in Ashland county, Ohio, May 26, 1844, the son of John Studebaker, a sketch of whom appears elsewhere in this work. The old family homestead was near Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, a change of location to the Buckeye state being made in 1835, and, in 1852, to South Bend. At the old seminary there and at the Notre Dame University, the boy obtained the bulk of his education, and early displayed those strong family traits which marked him as a valuable future element in the fortunes of the Studebaker company. His brothers Clem, J. M. and Peter E. were proud to give him full credit for his admirable business and personal qualities. Methodically and surely he advanced from post to post until as manager of the carriage department he was one of the most important personal forces connected with the great industry. Under the stimulus of his practical knowledge and keen foresight the branch of the business under his direct supervision reached mammoth proportions. He was energetic and straight-forward, at the same time kind and considerate to those in his employ.

The nature of Mr. Studebaker's specialty in the business of the company necessarily brought him in contact with the owners and lovers of horses, and he himself became one of the most enthusiastic horsemen in the country. He possessed some of the stars of the turf, but his particular admiration was the Percheron, and he organized the great Percheron Horse Company of Colorado, which has been the means of importing some of the finest specimens of that breed ever brought to the United States.

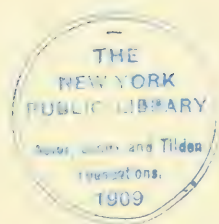
Jacob F. Studebaker found vent for his large activities in other channels than those of business, and in connection with his absorbing duties connected with the Studebaker company, he was interested in the organiza-



P. H. Studebaker



Jacob F. Studebaker



tion of the Agricultural Association, and identified in the leadership of many public enterprises of city, county and state.

In 1864 Mr. Studebaker was united in marriage to Harriet Chord, a daughter of Samuel Chord, a prominent citizen of South Bend, and two daughters have been born to them. The widow has occupied their beautiful home at "Sunnyside" since the death of her husband December 17, 1887. The funeral sermon of the deceased was preached by the Rev. G. E. Farr, and the opening of his address well expresses the sentiment of this review—"Know ye not that there is a prince and a great man fallen." In the field of labor to which he was called Jacob F. Studebaker was truly a prince, and a figure of national importance, while among his intimates his character was but another name for strict reliability and unimpeachable honor.

PETER E. STUDEBAKER. For more than a quarter of a century treasurer of the great Studebaker Brothers Manufacturing Company, the deceased and prominent member of the family mentioned above was long acknowledged to be one of the most far sighted financiers of the country. By virtue of his position with the company he could have been nothing else but a financial leader. He was energetic, a close observer of industrial and commercial conditions, and always prepared for financial depression or booms, guiding the finances of the immense enterprise thus controlled by him according to his wise forecast.

Peter E. Studebaker was a native of Ashland county, Ohio, born April 1, 1836, the son of John Studebaker, who is elsewhere mentioned in this volume. He was educated in the public schools of that section, and in 1852 came to South Bend, Indiana, soon securing employment with Kingsley and Beach, then the leading dry goods merchants of the place. From his clerk's salary of fifteen dollars a month he finally saved one hundred dollars and began business for himself. He thus continued until 1856, when he was married to Dora Han, of Cincinnati, Ohio, and removed to Goshen, Indiana, where he was associated with Joseph H. Defrees, a dry goods merchant of that city, who used to send Mr. Studebaker out with a peddling outfit and in later years he often told how one day while peddling through the country he rapped at a farm house door and the lady of the house came out and informed him she

did not want anything to do with peddlers. He told her he was not a peddler, but a traveling merchant and sold her quite a large bill of goods.

In the connection named, Mr. Studebaker was profitably engaged until 1860, when he began handling his brothers' goods, and made such a success of it that they offered him a partnership in the business. By the acceptance of their proposition he became a member of the firm of Studebaker Brothers, in 1864, and in the following year he established a branch warehouse at St. Joseph, Missouri, at that time an important outfitting town for miners, plainsmen and emigrants. He soon extended their trade over the entire western country, but in 1872 relinquished the St. Joseph office, as his services were in imperative demand as general officer of the company.

In the year named Mr. Studebaker assumed the highly responsible duties of the treasurer-ship of the company, which he retained until his death at Alma, Michigan, October 9, 1897. During that period there was never a time when the brothers doubted his ability to meet any crisis, industrial, commercial or financial, and their confidence in his good judgment was never displaced.

Mr. Studebaker's first wife died in 1865, his second wife, whom he married in 1871, being Mrs. M. L. Guthrie, daughter of Charles W. Ewing, of Fort Wayne, Indiana, and the widow still survives him. Besides Mrs. Studebaker, the members of his family were William F. Studebaker, deceased, and two daughters, Mrs. Nelson J. Riley and Mrs. W. R. Innis.

JAMES OLIVER. A great inventor in the field of agriculture and a real benefactor to mankind, the venerable and venerated James Oliver, the discoverer of the chilled-plow process, stands out pre-eminently among the practical geniuses of the United States, and is at least one striking exception to the sweeping biblical statement that "a prophet hath no honor in his own country." So secure, in fact, is he in the affectionate honor of his neighbors of South Bend and Indiana, and his admirers throughout the west and the United States, that the very warmth with which he is regarded may detract somewhat from a calm consideration of his greatness as a benefactor to the world through his contribution to the progress of the primal and cosmopolitan industry of agriculture. With such men as Fulton and Morse he stands as

one of the historic inventors, who has persevered in the development of his original idea and its application to the good of mankind. There is also one feature in his life in which his family and widely scattered admirers take a well grounded pride, and that is that no suspicion has ever been cast upon the originality of his invention. Perhaps the history of invention furnishes no case like his—unless it be that of Edison—in which the real inventor, fighting for many years against ridicule and ignorant criticism, has emerged triumphant from the long and bitter conflict and enjoyed the legitimate satisfaction not only of seeing his invention recognized by the authorities of the world, but of profiting by it even to the point of opulence. Locally, James Oliver is admired and revered as a public spirited, liberal minded gentleman—practical, but open hearted and warm—and, having passed his more than fourscore years of great and useful toil, the sunset of his life is aglow with the rich colors of a fair western sky.

James Oliver is a Scotchman by birth, or it may be that the discouragements of his earlier years would have completely overwhelmed him. His native place was Roxburyshire, and he was born amid humble circumstances on the 28th of August, 1823. Early in life he learned the value of honest and unremitting labor, and his remarkable success has never weakened his respect and warm regard for the conscientious workman. At the age of twelve years the boy came with his family to the United States, and, after living for one year in Seneca county, New York, they located at Mishawaka, St. Joseph county, Indiana. James at once put his shoulder to the family wheel and became one of the supporters of the household, and in 1840, then seventeen years of age, entered into independent work.

In the year mentioned Mr. Oliver undertook a contract for the Lee Company, of Mishawaka, to lay pump logs in trenches for the purpose of carrying water from a brook, through Vistula street to the race and still house. He was successful in this undertaking and soon after bought his first house and lot in Mishawaka. The still house, however, was later destroyed by fire and it was necessary to seek a new occupation. Soon after the manly youth learned the cooper's trade, getting out his own timber and making his own barrels, sometimes as high as eleven per day. From 1845 to 1855 he was in the employ of

the St. Joseph Iron Works, Mishawaka, where he acquired that practical knowledge of the foundry business which became so useful to him in after years. Prior to this time—May 30, 1844—he had married Miss Susan Doty, of Mishawaka, and commenced housekeeping in the modest cottage which he owned.

In 1855, while waiting at South Bend for a train to Goshen on a matter of business, Mr. Oliver met a Mr. Lamb, who was part owner of a small foundry in South Bend—the first of its kind. The attraction was so mutual that the young man purchased an interest in the enterprise, and thus became a permanent fixture and force. It is by such accidents as this that the destinies of men and the progress of communities are determined.

The little foundry, with its additions, which became the foundation of the mammoth establishment of the present day, was first known as the South Bend Iron Works, the plant being located on Mill street near Washington, not far from the site now occupied by the Coquillard Wagon Works buildings. In a few years Mr. Oliver bought the interest of his partner, and among his first contracts secured the iron work for the new St. Joseph Hotel, which was then being built where the stately Oliver House now stands. While the enterprise was rapidly advancing a flood washed away his water power, and, although he was obliged to install horse power, he completed his contract according to stipulations. On Christmas eve, 1859, a portion of the works was destroyed by fire, but was promptly rebuilt and operated on a larger and a more modern scale. Later, Mr. Oliver was associated with T. M. Bissell, of South Bend, and George Milburn, of Mishawaka, who became heartily interested in the bright prospects and substantial interests of South Bend. In 1864 another fire wiped out the plant, but it was promptly rebuilt and increased in capacity. If ever there was a heroic campaign conducted against adverse circumstances it was this which Mr. Oliver bravely fought, marshalling his forces with masterly skill and unflinchingly advancing toward the triumphant future.

In the new and enlarged works Mr. Oliver continued his experiments which resulted in the perfection of the chilled plow—a plow which is self-scouring, with share and mold-board of chilled cast iron. In spite of ignorant pleasantry of friends and bitter at-



Née H. Dodge

tacks of critics, he patiently labored night and day to prove that his ideas were practicable. The agricultural world knows the result, as the plow trade of the globe was revolutionized. At the Centennial Exposition, held at Philadelphia in 1876, the Oliver Chilled Plow received the encomiums of the expert agriculturists of the world, and the West Race works soon proved too small to meet the demands of the host of converted farmers. Foreseeing this, Mr. Oliver had purchased the Perkins farm of thirty-two acres southwest of the city, and in 1875 commenced the great Oliver Chilled Plow Works which are there located and whose products go to every part of the civilized globe. They are considered in the light not only of one of the greatest public benefits of this section of the state, but among the leading industries of the world.

In 1885, with his son, Joseph D., Mr. Oliver completed a handsome opera house, conceded to be one of the best equipped play houses in the west. It was dedicated, October 26, 1885, by the rendition of the drama, *Louis XI*, by the great actor, W. H. Sheridan. In December, 1899, the magnificent Oliver Hotel was thrown open to the public. It is one of the finest hostelrys in the country, and but another monument to the public spirit and liberality of James Oliver. At his own expense he also erected South Bend's beautiful city hall, generously agreeing to await the pleasure of tax payers for repayment. It is little wonder that the citizens of South Bend take an attitude of deep gratitude and profound veneration toward James Oliver.

The home of this revered citizen is a beautiful residence on West Washington street, and for many years was presided over by his estimable wife, who departed this life on the 13th of September, 1902. In the calm evening of their lives they were dispensers of numberless charities and benevolences, and were blessed with abundant and well merited rewards. The children born to Mr. and Mrs. Oliver are: Joseph D., associated with his father in his large interests, and Josephine, wife of Hon. George Ford, a prominent attorney of South Bend and congressman from this district from 1885 to 1887.

WILLIAM W. DODGE. The one whose name forms the caption of these memoirs was one whose labor, influence and co-operation was a strong moving element in the business, intellectual and moral development of St. Jo-

seph county, Indiana, who rose to prominence through the inherent force of his character, the exercise of his native talent and the utilization of opportunity, and the high regard in which he was uniformly held came through the fact that his was largely an ideal American manhood. While he controlled important and extensive business enterprises, they were largely of the character that promote public progress as well as individual prosperity, and his efforts were directed along many lines in which the community was the sole recipient of benefit. His connection with the manufacturing interests of the state was of the most practical and helpful character, for he aided in shaping the industrial interests and in promoting the educational, æsthetic and moral development of his city, county and state. Aside from his great manufacturing interests, his patriotic citizenship and interest in community affairs found manifestation in his zealous labors for improvements along many lines, and through the institutions of many trade interests, affecting the material growth of this part of the state and nation.

William W. Dodge was born in Mishawaka, January 18, 1861, and was a son of Harlow and Elizabeth Dodge. As a boy he attended the public schools of his native city, and completed his education in the University of Notre Dame. In 1878 Mr. Wallace H. Dodge, his brother, founded the Magic Jack Company, and began the manufacture of a superior wagon jack, and Mr. William W. Dodge became interested in the business. In 1879 the Dodge Manufacturing Company was organized and our subject became the treasurer, and held that position at the time of death, September 1, 1899. About this time the company began to manufacture saw frames, door stops and a line of wooden hardware. On July 10, 1881, the plant burned down and the Dodge Brothers rebuilt and continued the business, and then commenced manufacturing a wood split pulley. In 1884 they discarded all else and confined themselves to the manufacture of The Dodge Independence Wood Split Pulley, and in 1886 they perfected the great system of power transmission by means of manila rope. Through their energy and ability they have built up the great plant that will ever stand as a monument to their progressive business methods and which has branches in all parts of the civilized world. Mr. William W. Dodge

directed the financial affairs of the great enterprise, and the impress of his methods will ever remain with the company. It was his foresight that built up great system in many ways, and his master mind handled the finances of all the branches in all parts of the world. Mr. Dodge was one of the best known and most highly esteemed men that St. Joseph county ever produced; he organized the Western Gas Engine Company, and was its president at the time of his death. During his ever active and useful life, his many excellent virtues endeared him to a constantly growing circle of friends here and abroad.

to Miss Nettie Ford, a most estimable and cultured lady of Mishawaka who, with his son, William Wallace, was left to mourn his loss. Of Mr. Dodge it may be said, in his private life he was distinguished by all that marks the true gentleman; his was a noble character, one that subordinated personal ambition to public good and sought rather the benefit of others than the aggrandizement of self. When those who needed assistance came to him, his aid was never withheld, if it could be rendered, and many a business man and firm of St. Joseph county owes its prosperity in a large measure to the generous



A Corner of the Parlor, Dodge Engineering Association.

He was prominent in church, social and fraternal life, and was a member of the Indiana and Commercial Athletic clubs of South Bend, and the 20th Century Club of South Bend and Elkhart. He was a member of Mishawaka Lodge No. 130, F. and A. M., Mishawaka Chapter No. 19, R. A. M., South Bend Commandery No. 13, Knights Templar, and a member of the Mystic Shrine. His funeral was conducted with impressive ceremonies of his lodges.

Mr. Dodge was married November 26, 1890,

assistance of Mr. Dodge in time of need. His own business career was unassailable. Honor and integrity characterized his every act. He enjoyed to the fullest extent the love and esteem of those with whom he was associated.

WALLACE H. DODGE. Deeds are thoughts crystallized, and according to their brilliancy do we judge the worth of a man to the country which produced him, and in his works we expect to find the true index to his character. The study of the life of the representative American never fails to offer much of pleas-



Library, Dodge Engineering Association Rooms.



Dodge Engineering Association Dining Room.



ing interest and valuable instruction, developing a mastering of expedients which has brought about most wonderful results. The subject of this review was a worthy representative of that type of American character and of that progressive spirit which promote public good in advancing individual pros-



perity and conserving popular interests. He was long prominently identified with the business interests of Mishawaka and St. Joseph county, and while his varied affairs brought him success they also advanced the general welfare by accelerating commercial activity.

Mr. Dodge was a representative of an honored pioneer family in St. Joseph county, and he was one of Mishawaka's native sons, born on the 10th of July, 1848. His father, Harlow Dodge, who is remembered as one of the leading hardware merchants of Mishawaka, was a native of Booneville, New York, but when a young man he came to St. Joseph county, Indiana, this being in the early '40's, and he was first employed as a contractor and builder for the railroad. Subsequently however, he embarked in the hardware business, and as such will be well remembered by the early residents of Mishawaka. During his residence in Mishawaka he was married to Elizabeth Luce, a native also of the Empire State, and they became the parents of four children, two sons and two daughters, all of whom claimed St. Joseph county as the place of their nativity.

Wallace H. Dodge, the eldest son and second child in order of birth, spent the early years of his life in St. Joseph, and received an excellent educational training in the University of Notre Dame. His first employment was in the hardware business, continuing in that line of activity for twelve years. In 1881 he founded what is now the Dodge Manufacturing Company, and to that large corporation he gave the benefit of his time and abilities until his busy and useful life was ended. A history of this manufactory appears on other pages of this work.

For his wife Mr. Dodge chose Hattie E. Vesey, who was born and reared in Michigan, where her father, Madison Vesey, was an agriculturist, having removed to that commonwealth from Vermont. In life Mr. Dodge exercised his right of franchise for the benefit of the Democratic party. Not only in business affairs was he well known, but he was active and earnest in his advocacy of all measures for the public good, and was a worthy and consistent member of the Masonic order. He did all in his power to promote sobriety, morality and godliness among men, and his own upright, honorable life formed an example well worthy of emulation.

MELVILLE W. MIX. For a number of years Melville W. Mix has been prominently identified with the business interests of St. Joseph county as president of the Dodge Manufacturing Company, of Mishawaka, and in that time has become recognized as one of its most valued and useful citizens. Mr. Mix was born in Atlanta, Illinois, November 16, 1865,

his parents being Walter W. and Mary E. (Dodge) Mix. The mother was a native of Mishawaka and a daughter of Harlow Dodge. The father, who was a native of New York, journeyed west in 1859, and at that early day took up his abode in St. Joseph county, being accompanied on the journey hither by his mother and one brother, the former having conducted a millinery store in Mishawaka, the first in the county. In 1863 Walter W. Mix removed to Illinois and resumed his former occupation of a tinner and hardware merchant, having learned his trade in Mishawaka. He is still a resident of Atlanta, Illinois.

In the city of his birth Melville W. Mix received his educational training, graduating in the Atlanta high school in 1881. From the time of his graduation until January, 1885, he was employed in his father's hardware store. In January, 1886, he came to Mishawaka and entered the employ of the Dodge Manufacturing Company, but in the year preceding this he had had charge of their exhibit at the New Orleans Exhibition. Mr. Mix entered this corporation at the very bottom round of the ladder, but his meritorious, honorable effort enabled him to ascend step by step until in 1890 he was given charge of their Chicago branch, thus continuing for four years, when he returned to South Bend in 1894, this being at the time of the death of the founder and president, Wallace H. Dodge. With the latter's brother, William W. Dodge, Mr. Mix was then appointed one of the executors of the estate, also vice-president for the year, while in 1895 he was elected president. Thus he has made for himself a place in connection with the activities and honors of life, has successfully surmounted obstacles and has gained recognition for intrinsic worth of character.

The Dodge Manufacturing Company was founded more than a quarter of a century ago by Wallace H. Dodge. It was first a little saw mill for the production of hardwood lumber, and it is interesting to note that never through all the years of its existence has the saw mill feature been missing from the company's plant. From time to time the production of such wooden hardware specialties as window screens, door stops, tool handles, saw frames, vice handles, mallets, etc., were introduced as the business extended and grew, while later automatic turning lathes and other more improved tools were added. The

industry prospered so well that in 1880 the Dodge Manufacturing Company was incorporated by Wallace H. Dodge, William W. Dodge and George Philion. In 1881, however, the little factory was destroyed by fire, and being uninsured proved a heavy blow to the young concern. But they rebuilt at once on a more substantial plan, and from then until now the business has continued to grow in volume and importance. Foundries and machine shops have been added, for the more extensive manufacture of power transmission iron goods. The Dodge Company were the first to recognize the great possibilities of the wood pulley idea, and developed it into practical commercial fame. They also revolutionized the mechanical world by the invention and introduction of the famous Dodge American or Continuous Wind System of rope transmission. Other numerous devices and appliances which have made the Dodge Company known the world over have from time to time been added, such as the Dodge Iron Split Pulley, the iron center wood rimmed pulley, the safety wood rim fly wheel, the split friction clutch, the Eureka water softeners and purifiers, and many others.

The founder of the company, Wallace H. Dodge, died in 1894, and was succeeded by Melville W. Mix, who has proved a worthy successor and by his careful and able management the business has more than doubled during the last decade. W. W. Dodge, the younger brother, served for years as secretary and treasurer, later as treasurer only, and his death occurred in 1899. George Philion, associated with Wallace H. Dodge as joint inventor of the Independence Wood Split Pulley, continued as superintendent of the company until the time of his death in 1903. The present officers are M. W. Mix, president; W. B. Hosford, vice-president; and Charles Endlich, secretary and treasurer. The company has had a phenomenal growth, and it is worthy of note that since its inception it has never had an unprofitable year. Demands for the Dodge products are showing a steady increase, and the success of the institution is due entirely to the straightforward business methods employed by its officers and to the excellence of its products.

In addition to his connection with this large corporation Mr. Mix is also president of the Mishawaka Trust and Savings Company, which was organized in 1905 to succeed the old bank of Clark & Whitson. He is inter-



W. B. Hosford.



Chas Emelich

ested in the National Veneer Products Company, a new organization, but one which has already demonstrated its usefulness and its success, is a stockholder in the Simplex Motor Car Company, and is connected with many others of the leading corporations of St. Joseph county. He is a member of the Mishawaka Blue Lodge, Chapter and Commandery, past commander of South Bend Commandery No. 13, a member of the Indianapolis Consistory of Scottish Rites and of Murat Temple of the Mystic Shrine. He is also a member of the American Society of Mechanical Engineers, president of the American Supply and Machinery Manufacturers' Association, a member of the Academy of Political and Social Science, of Philadelphia, and is a Democrat in his political affiliations. Mr. Mix was a member of the Indiana Commission to St. Louis in 1904, and from 1902 until 1906 was the mayor of Mishawaka.

The marriage of Mr. Mix was celebrated in 1887, when Zella Louise Kenyon, a daughter of Thomas W. Kenyon, of Lincoln, Illinois, became his wife. Their home has been blessed by the birth of one son, Kenyon, and one daughter, Dorothy L.

W. B. HOSFORD. The sterling characteristics in the life of W. B. Hosford have made him a leader in the business world, and as the vice-president of the Dodge Manufacturing Company his name is widely known throughout St. Joseph county. He was born in Oberlin, Ohio, August 9, 1842. His father, Elihu Hosford, was a native of Vermont but when a young man accompanied his father on his removal to Oberlin, Ohio, where they cleared the land on which the cottage is now located. Remaining there until the early '40s he removed to Owego, New York, which continued as his home until 1860, when he became connected with the well known stove manufacturing company of Fuller, Warren & Company of Troy, New York, with whom he remained for many years. His death, however, occurred in Washington, D. C., in 1890, where he was extensively and successfully engaged in the practice of medicine, he having entered upon the study of that science at the close of the war. Mrs. Elihu Hosford bore the maiden name of Elizabeth Jennings, and was a native of Connecticut.

W. B. Hosford received his educational training in Olivet College of Michigan, and then learned the machinist's trade. Since

entering upon the business world he has had a varied experience, but his path has ever been upward and he is now leaving his impress upon the industrial world. During a period of three years he was employed as an engineer on a Mississippi river steamer, while from 1861 to 1867 he was with the Toledo, Peoria & Warsaw Railroad Company as locomotive engineer, and finally rose to the position of a master mechanic. From 1867 until 1884 he was with the Fuller, Warren & Company manufacturing industry, and in the last named year came to Mishawaka and entered upon his connection with the Dodge Manufacturing Company in the capacity of vice-president, which position he has ever since so ably filled.

In 1866 Mr. Hosford was united in marriage to Emma E. Keener, of Peoria, Illinois, and one son has been born of this union, Hugh H., a prominent resident of South Bend, and one daughter, Eva May, now Mrs. Lampkins. Mr. Hosford is associated with Mishawaka Lodge No. 130, A. F. & A. M., also with the Chapter No. 83, R. A. M., Commandery of Mishawaka No. 51, and the Shrine and Consistory of Indianapolis. He is also an officer of the Grand Commandery of the state of Indiana.

CHARLES ENDLICH. During many years Charles Endlich has been prominently identified with the business interests of Mishawaka, and throughout the entire period of his residence in this city he has been associated with the Dodge Manufacturing Company, in which he now holds the important offices of secretary and treasurer. His birth occurred in Chicago, Illinois, January 5, 1859, but when only two years of age he was taken by his parents to Denver, Colorado, and thence to Reading, Pennsylvania, where he was reared to mature years and received his educational training. In 1878 he accompanied his mother to Colorado, and after a residence in that state of four years came to Mishawaka, Indiana, and in 1882, as a stockholder, became associated with the Dodge Manufacturing Company. His first connection with this corporation was in the capacity of an office clerk, but gradually, step by step, he won his way to the front and to his present high position of secretary and treasurer of the manufactory. His ability and versatile talents are well known and acknowledged, gaining him entrance into many of the leading business interests of the

city, among which may be mentioned his connection with the National Veneer Product Company.

In 1898, in Mishawaka, Mr. Endlich was united in marriage to Carolina Vollmer, born in Reading, Pennsylvania, but reared in Philadelphia, and they are well known in the social circles of this city. Mr. Endlich gives his political support to the Democracy, and fraternally is a Knight Templar Mason.

JOHN COMLY BIRDSSELL. The Birdsell Manufacturing Company's plant at South Bend represents more than a large area of ground, covered with stories of brick and iron, filled with powerful engines, clanking and whirring machinery, and all the wonderful system and tremendously efficient energy of the modern business plant. Admirable and impressive to be sure, but what the casual visitor sees is only the superficial greatness hiding with its bulk a story of human interest.

The nucleus of it all was once contained in the ingenious mind of a quiet, industrious Quaker farmer, who for something like a quarter of a century had pursued his regular vocation on a little farm in Rush township, Monroe county, New York, and with more than the average success of the farmers who were his neighbors and friends. These neighbors had much respect and esteem for the fertile mind and energetic ability of the Quaker, and were accustomed to obtain his services in threshing their seeds and grain with the rather primitive machinery then in use. This occupation furnished opportunities for his inventive ability to develop. The difficulty of separating clover seed from the straw and the expensiveness of the operation were apparent to everyone, but to him alone were the insight and careful toil granted by which the process could be facilitated. He began to work on this problem early in the fifties, and by 1855 had invented a machine combining in itself the characteristics of all the separate machines then used for that purpose. Upon this machine he succeeded in obtaining a patent in 1855, and on his New York farm established, with humble beginnings, the industry which the developments of later years made one of the cornerstones of South Bend's manufacturing greatness.

With the granting of the patent for his clover huller and the manufacture of the first machines, the Quaker farmer, who had up to that time found the difficulties of agricul-

ture only moderate and had pursued the quiet tenor of his way very much as the traditional Quaker is supposed to do, found himself beset by unscrupulous rivalry and competition that taxed his every resource of mind and body and transformed him into a genuine "fighting Quaker." A stern defender of what he believed his rights, he spent years in litigation over his clover huller patents, prosecuting all infringers, and courageously battling for the privileges which alone could insure the success of his manufactures. He spent nearly ten years in perfecting his inventions and in the litigation that this involved.

In 1864 his whole factory on his farm in New York was destroyed by fire. This was a serious loss to the inventor, but South Bend should regard it as a fortunate event, for after the fire he decided to sell his farm and move to this thriving town situated in one of the great states of the central Mississippi valley, where he foresaw the future market for his invention to lie; and also attracted by the excellent quality and cheapness of the timber used in the construction of his machines. After the establishment of the factory in South Bend, as is elsewhere stated, it enjoyed a steady growth, and the founder devoted all his energies to improving still further the clover huller and extending the trade.

With a career so independent, so self-reliant, it seems almost superfluous to speak of antecedents and of the minor facts; and yet, perhaps for the very reason that his life was cast for large undertakings, we want to know some of the more familiar facts that concerned him. Born in Westchester county, New York, March 31, 1815, a son of a Westchester county farmer, Benjamin Birdsell, and his wife, Charity Carpenter, John Comly Birdsell inherited his industry and his primary occupation of farming from a Quaker family that had long resided in that section of the Empire State. In 1822 the family moved west to Monroe county, New York, where the wilderness was yet scarcely broken, and there began making a new farm and home. While a boy in this rather primitive country, John C. attended district school. The meagerness of the education which this supplied was somewhat amended by two terms in the academy of the neighboring village of West Henrietta. During some of the winters that followed he taught school, but

while still a boy began the vocation of farming which he supposed would continue through life. When twenty-one he left home and rented a farm near Mendon, in Monroe county, and three years later purchased a place in the adjoining township of Rush. Just about this time he was married, on June 7, 1838, to Miss Harriet Lunt. There were five children, and their names and dates of birth are: Joseph Benjamin, December 2, 1843 (see sketch); Byron A., March 7, 1847; Varnum O., January 5, 1841 (died December 6, 1875); John C., June 25, 1859; Harriet Elizabeth, died April, 1863. In June, 1879, Mr. Birdsell was married to the wife who still survives, to Mrs. Susan Snelling, of Boston, Massachusetts.

Mr. Birdsell continued as president of the manufacturing company in South Bend until his death, July 13, 1894. The company was incorporated in 1870, with his sons as officers and stockholders. Mr. Birdsell manifested a keen public spirit, and his practical interest in his city was shown during the three years he devoted to his duties as member of the city water works board of trustees. He was a man of robust frame, five feet nine inches in height, weighing about 225 pounds, and all who knew him will never forget the vigor of character that accompanied this physique. His most distinguishing characteristic was his iron determination and his perseverance in the face of discouragements. Though a member of the Society of Friends, there being no meeting house of this sect in South Bend, he became a regular attendant of the Methodist Episcopal church. He was a Republican nearly all his life, but during his last years his enthusiasm for the cause of temperance led him to support the Prohibition movement. For many years he had affiliated with the Masonic order. His travels took him to all parts of the United States, and he talked of men, places and affairs with a familiarity that showed close observation and study. In 1880 he took an extended tour through Europe, Egypt and the Holy Land, spending about fifteen months abroad.

JOSEPH BENJAMIN BIRDSELL. South Bend in the '60s was a community of too infantile growth to have developed any careers, or to have indicated any business prominence. In the nature of things its destiny was the slow but sure unfolding of a prairie site, dependent upon a rich agricultural region, and upon its proximity to a clear and beauti-

ful river. The most adventurous and daring could discern no road to rapid fortune, nor any short cut to any immediate personal aggrandisement. The man who sought wealth only, continued his way to the Pacific coast, necessarily those who tarried here to lend their brain and energy and heart to the making of homes and the establishment of legitimate enterprises possessed patience, courage and pioneer instincts. They were the backbone of the city of to-day. A few remain to tell the story of unsettled conditions, but more left hardy sons to continue their work or to maintain the dignity and purpose of their less happily environed lives. To the latter class belongs Joseph Benjamin Birdsell, whose death, September 27th, 1906, interrupted his forty-second year as a manufacturer of South Bend, and around whose name centers much of the stability and public spiritedness of his adopted city. He was born in Monroe county, New York, December 2, 1844, and was a son of John Comly Birdsell (who in 1855 invented the famous clover huller which bears his name, and whose biography appears on another page of this work). His mother's maiden name was Harriet Lunt. The family migrated from New York in 1864 and settled in South Bend. A small factory for the manufacture of clover hullers was established, most of the work being turned out by hand, all the members of the firm acting as general utility men, doing all phases of the work. Our subject received his education in the common schools of New York state, and after leaving school began work at the age of nineteen years in the office of his father's establishment, continuing thus until 1870, when the Birdsell Manufacturing Company was incorporated, and Mr. J. B. Birdsell was made treasurer. In that year the main building of the present plant, five stories in height, was built, being the first large factory building erected in South Bend. Mr. Birdsell now devoted himself to the affairs of the company with untiring energy. It continued to prosper, and in 1887, in response to the desire of its patrons, the manufacture of wagons was begun. Through his indefatigable efforts the business of the company was greatly extended, not alone throughout America, but to Europe and many foreign ports, and large additions to the factory were made necessary by the increasing trade. To-day the company is not only one of the largest wagon manufacturers in this

country, but enjoys the unique distinction of having the largest clover huller factory in the world. Upon the death of his father in 1894 Mr. Birdsell was chosen president and treasurer of the company, in which capacity he continued until the time of his death. He was a director of the St. Joseph County Savings Bank, served as president of the Municipal League of South Bend and as one of the board of directors of the Associated Charities of this city. He was a member of the Commercial Athletic Club, of the Indiana Club and the Country Club, and derived much pleasure in an informal way from these institutions. Early in the spring of 1906, Mr. Birdsell decided to turn over the active management of this extensive and growing business to his brothers, and retire from the cares involved to enjoy a long merited and well earned rest. With his wife and daughter he had journeyed to Los Angeles with the intention of a sea voyage to the Orient, but was taken suddenly ill and returned to his home, and after a sickness covering a period of three months was called to his final rest, on the 27th day of September, 1906. He is survived by his widow, son and two daughters. As a mark of respect and to show the high esteem in which Mr. Birdsell was held, all of the factories of South Bend were closed on the day that his funeral was held. He was for more than forty years a resident of South Bend, where he became known as a leading representative of business interests, an active factor in community affairs and a valued representative of commercial and social interests. It was not these alone that entitled him to special distinction or won for him the great love that was extended him by those with whom he was associated. It was his kindliness of heart, his generosity, his deep sympathy and abiding tenderness. He was all that is meant by the term, a gentleman and a manly man, strong and vigorous in intellect and reliable in judgment. It may be true that he held decided opinions of his own, but he had the courage of his convictions to express them freely, frankly and fearlessly, which, when said truly, is the greatest eulogy that can be pronounced upon an American citizen. Strong and manly was his life in all its relations, and most beautiful and tender was it in the home circles. His deepest interests centered there, and no personal sacrifice on his part was considered too great if it would

promote the welfare of his wife and children. Having nearly reached the bounds of man's appointed years, at last life's blessings all enjoyed, life's labors done, serenely to his final rest he passed, while the tender memory of his virtues yet lingers like twilight when the sun has set.

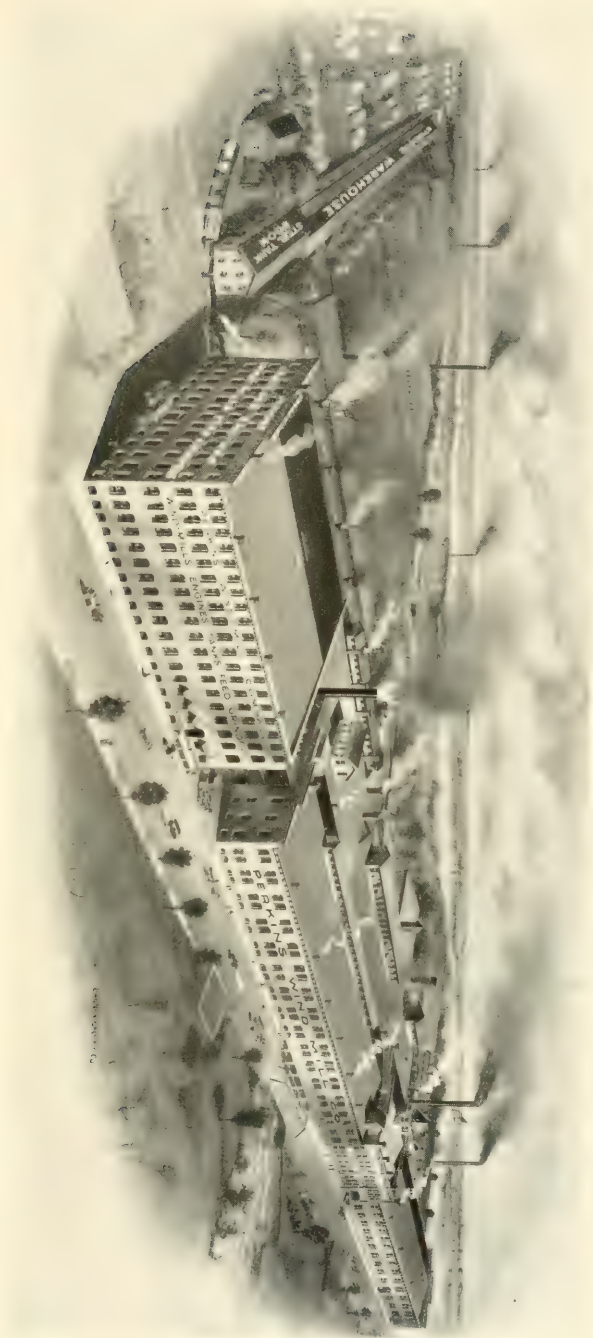
FRANK G. PERKINS. The family of which the subject of this memoir is a most honored representative is a pioneer one of St. Joseph county. They have taken a patriotic interest in everything bearing upon the upbuilding and progress of the community, and have aided in many enterprises which have greatly benefited the city, county and state. Frank G. Perkins, the vice president of the Perkins Windmill Company, was born in Branch county, Michigan, January 28, 1852, a son of Barber and Jane (Boon) Perkins, both natives of New York. In 1842 the father removed to the west, the mother coming earlier in 1836, and they established their homes in Branch county.

The public schools of his native county furnished Frank G. Perkins with his preparatory education, and he afterwards became a student in Hillsdale College. Coming thence to Mishawaka he learned the machinist's trade with the Perkins Windmill Company, owned and conducted by his uncle, P. C. Perkins, and has remained with this large corporation ever since, being now its vice president. He has thoroughly learned the business in every department, and step by step has mounted the ladder of success until he has reached a place of prominence, a just reward of honorable effort.

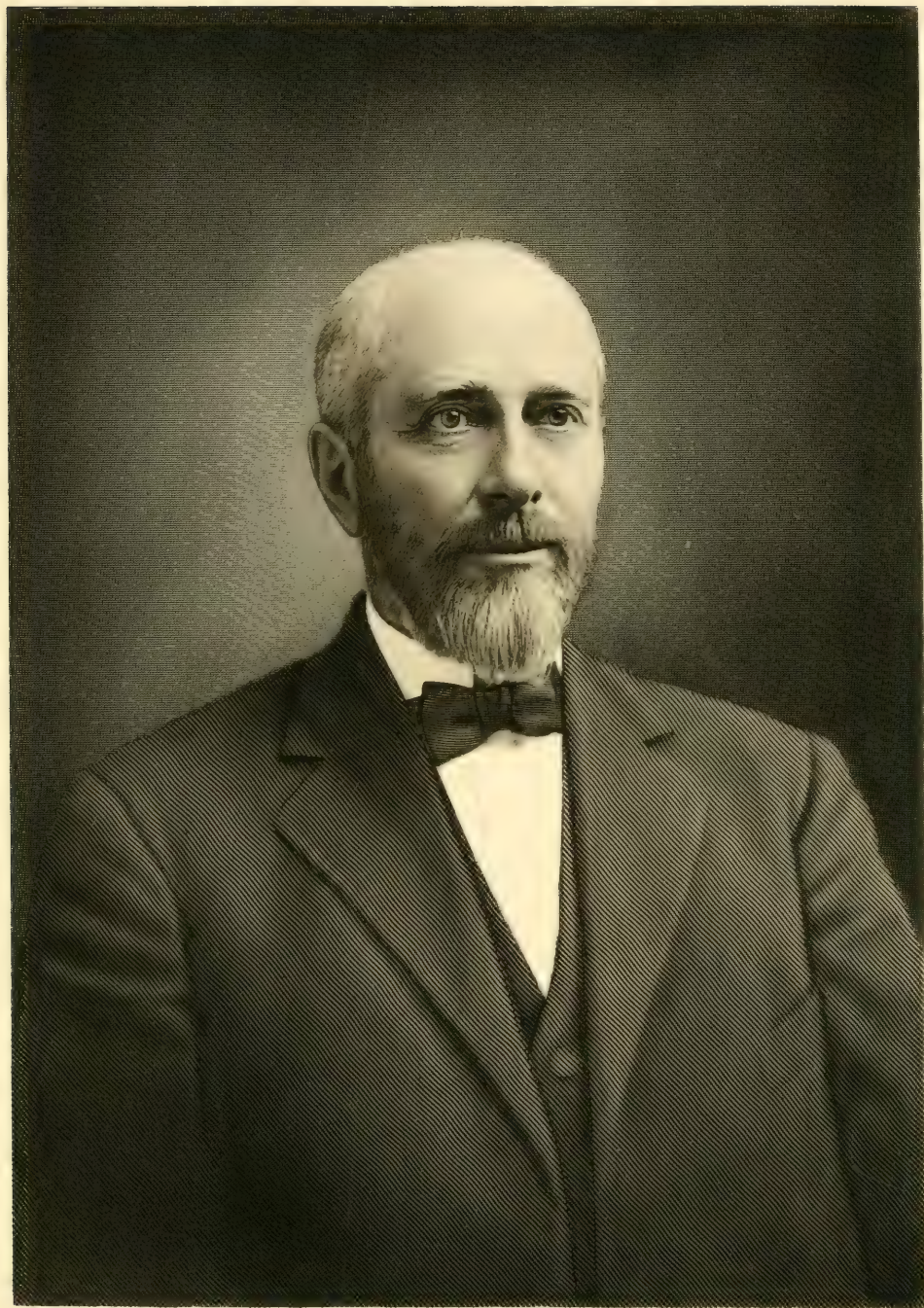
In December, 1875, Mr. Perkins married Carrie Hudson, a daughter of Albert Hudson, one of the founders of the Perkins Windmill Company. Two children have been born to bless their home,—Mrs. Robert Campbell and Mrs. Glen Hillier. Mr. Perkins is a capable business man and a worthy scion of the famous old Perkins family.

GEORGE M. FOUNTAIN. This name is one known throughout St. Joseph county, for within its confines George M. Fountain has passed his entire life, and here also his parents lived for many decades. He was born in South Bend on the 21st of March, 1857, his parents being Solomon H. and Jane Ann (Tuttle) Fountain. The maternal grandfather, Richmond Tuttle, was also numbered among the honored pioneers of St. Joseph county, where he was prominently iden-

Perkins Wind-Mill Company







Jacob Woolbertson

tified with its manufacturing interests, and in other ways contributed to its advancement and upbuilding. In his lifetime he was the oldest Mason in the state. His daughter, Jane A. Tuttle, was a native of Brockport, New York. Solomon H. Fountain was born in Maryland, but came to South Bend in 1834, and with Captain Pierce organized Company D, of the One Hundred and Twenty-eighth Indiana Volunteers. He served through the entire struggle or until the 8th of March, 1865, when he was shot at Kingston Roads, North Carolina, and died as the result of the wound. He was a carpenter and builder, and for a time was also in partnership with his father-in-law, Richmond Tuttle, in a saw mill enterprise at Wengers Creek.

George M. Fountain received his educational training in the schools of Mishawaka, and in 1880 embarked in the journalistic field in New Carlisle, Indiana. In 1894 he was elected the clerk of St. Joseph county, in which he served for two terms, and during his term of office won the commendation of all with whom he was concerned. In 1900 he assumed business relations with the Perkins Windmill Company as its treasurer, and is now ably filling that important position. He is a well known and honored citizen of St. Joseph county, a faithful public official and an excellent business man.

ALBERT HUDSON. In the death of Albert Hudson St. Joseph county lost one of its most valued citizens. Many years of his life were spent within its borders, and through a long period of that time he was connected with one of the chief industrial interests of the county, the Perkins Windmill Company. His life was strictly honorable, upright and just, being in accord with the highest principles of human conduct.

Mr. Hudson was born in Middletown, Connecticut, on the 1st of December, 1815, a son of Benjamin Hudson, also a native of that commonwealth and a member of an old New England family. In 1835 Albert Hudson came from Brockport, New York, where he had been living for some time, to the west, and in his journey hither visited Mishawaka. So pleased was he with the prospects of this future city that he returned to Brockport and in the following year came again to Mishawaka and engaged in the shoe business where the depot now stands. He erected the

first brick house in the town, on Second street, into which he moved in September, 1844, and he subsequently moved his shoe business to Main and later to Second street. About 1870, in company with P. C. Perkins, he organized the business which has since become universally known as the Perkins Windmill Company. However, it was first organized as an axe factory, but ultimately the product was changed to windmills. After a time Mr. Hudson abandoned his pioneer shoe business and threw his entire energy into the new corporation, continuing an active factor in its growth and upbuilding until his busy and useful life was ended in death in 1887. Many years of his life were thus spent in this county of his adoption, and in the work of development he ever bore his part. He was ever honorable in business, loyal in friendship, faithful in citizenship, and he commanded the respect of his fellowmen for his uprightness and splendid abilities.

Four children now survive this honored early pioneer, namely: Carrie, now Mrs. F. G. Perkins; Harriet, Mrs. Russell Hudson, of Mishawaka; Edward A., of Toledo, Ohio; and George, secretary of the Perkins Windmill Company. Mrs. Hudson survived her husband until 1901, when, at the age of eighty-four years, she joined him in the home beyond. The loved and honored father and husband passed to his reward in 1887, aged seventy-two years.

JACOB WOOLVERTON. It has often been stated and commented upon that the United States has always presented great opportunities to men of industry, ability, honesty and integrity, and as long as men have the aspirations and the determination to improve their conditions of life and earn the success which it is possible to obtain the theme will never be exhausted. One of the prominent business men of this community whose enterprise and sound judgment have not only promoted their individual prosperity but have advanced the public welfare is Jacob Woolverton. As a business man in many lines of endeavor, as a citizen and as a friend we would preserve the record of his career among a people who have learned to admire, respect and honor him.

Jacob Woolverton was born in Warren township, St. Joseph county, Indiana, September 3, 1845, a son of Charles Woolverton,

of Hamilton county, Ohio, who came to Warren township of this county in 1831, and was thereafter prominently identified with its welfare and upbuilding, his name being well known in the buying and selling of farm lands. His life's labors were ended in death in 1852. His son Jacob supplemented the early educational training which he received in the district schools by attendance at the Northern Indiana Normal College and the Eastman's Business College. He was then for a short time thereafter associated with Colonel Norman Eddy, collector of internal revenue for this district, after which he traveled for an oil firm of Cleveland for a short time, while next he was with the Studebaker Brothers as bookkeeper in the counting room. Foreseeing the great possibilities in the real estate business, Mr. Woolverton in June, 1869, became associated in partnership with W. L. Kizer in that occupation, and the firm of Kizer & Woolverton has been prominent and successful to a high degree, conducting extensive loans on property in Indiana, Michigan and Ohio. However, the efforts of Mr. Woolverton have not been confined to one line of endeavor. He is now president of the St. Joseph County Savings Bank, a stockholder and vice-president of the St. Joseph Loan & Trust Company and vice-president and treasurer of the Malleable Steel Range Company. He is a stalwart advocate of the principles of the Republican party, active and enthusiastic in its support and well being, and on several occasions has served as treasurer of the Republican Central Committee.

The marriage of Mr. Woolverton was celebrated in October, 1870, when Miss Alice M. Rupel became his wife. He has earned for himself an enviable reputation as a careful man of business, always known for his prompt and honorable methods of dealing, which have won him the deserved and unbounded confidence of his fellow men.

EDWIN R. DEAN, M. D. In the medical profession advancement is not easily secured. It comes through true merit and cannot be obtained by gift or purchase. One must be well qualified in the profession, for in no other calling is pretense so easily discovered as among those who engage in the alleviation of human suffering. That Dr. Dean has a large patronage is indicative of his skill and ability. He is a native son of the southland, his birth having occurred in Mt. Sterling,

Kentucky, on the 27th of August, 1865, being a son of Ellis and Emma (Robinson) Dean, the former of Scotch-Irish and the latter of English descent. The parents were natives of Kentucky, but were of old Virginian families. The father was a farmer by occupation, but was well known in public life, having held various offices in his county for twenty-seven years. His death occurred on the 2d of October, 1898, when he had reached the sixty-fourth milestone on the journey of life.

Edwin R. Dean received his preparatory education in the Harris Institute at Mt. Sterling, after which he pursued a collegiate course at Georgetown College, graduating therefrom in 1888 with the degree of B. S. His medical training was received in the Jefferson Medical College, of Philadelphia, in which he graduated as a member of the class of 1890, and he immediately began the practice of his chosen profession in Mt. Sterling, where he remained for nine years. In 1899 he came to South Bend and opened an office, and he has remained here ever since engaged in the practice of medicine. His long professional career has been attended with marked success. His promptness, his sympathetic nature and his generosity are well known factors in his make-up, and those who have known him longest esteem him most highly. As an instance of his early maturity he was appointed deputy tax collector of Montgomery county, Kentucky, at the age of thirteen years, and held the office for eight years under three different officials, having given a bond of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars for faithful performance of his duties, and before removing from Montgomery county he also served as president of the Montgomery County Medical Society. He is now a member of the medical staff of Epworth Hospital and the St. Joseph Hospital; is a member of the St. Joseph County and the Indiana State Medical Societies, of the American Association and is examiner for a number of insurance societies.

Dr. Dean married Miss Emma Dunn, a native of South Bend and whose death occurred in 1903. The Dunn family is numbered among the old and honored settlers of St. Joseph county. Three children were born of this union: Esther R., born April 6, 1895; J. Edwin, born September 23, 1897; and R. Ellis, born January 5, 1899. The Doctor was married in 1905 to Miss Bessie Stover, a daughter of J. C. Stover, one of the old and



Edwin R. Dean





Very Truly Yours
J. N. Roper

highly respected citizens of South Bend. To them have been born one son, William S. In his fraternal relations Dr. Dean is a member of the Masonic order, the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, and other fraternal organizations, while his religious connection is with the Baptist church. He is the proprietor of the Dean Building, a fine office building and the first of its kind in South Bend.

LUCIUS G. TONG, cashier of the St. Joseph County Savings Bank, has filled that position since 1882. He was born in Carroll, Fairfield county, Ohio, August 1, 1842, and was sent to college and received a thorough educational training, after which he served as his father's assistant in business. For a number of years following this he was numbered among the prominent educators of northern Indiana, filling the position of professor at Notre Dame University. Although being highly successful in that field of endeavor, he abandoned the educational profession for that of the law, having been admitted to the bar and practiced in South Bend for a number of years, winning for himself a name and place among the leading law practitioners of St. Joseph county. In 1878 Mr. Tong was elected mayor of South Bend on the Republican ticket, but he knew no party ties, his sole aim while filling that exalted position being the welfare and advancement of the city, and at the close of his term was warmly endorsed by the Democratic press for renomination.

In 1882 Mr. Tong was made cashier of the St. Joseph County Bank, one of the oldest and most solid financial institutions of the city, organized on the 8th of December, 1869, with Dr. Lewis Humphreys as its first president. Mr. Tong was selected to succeed T. J. Sexias, the principal organizer of the bank, and he has worthily discharged the duties entrusted to his care. The St. Joseph Loan and Trust Company is an important branch of that institution, and Mr. Tong is serving as its secretary and treasurer. He is one of the most popular and best known business men in the city of South Bend, and his straightforward and honorable dealings in all the relations of life have won for him the confidence and respect of his fellow men. He is also interested in the insurance business, and in all his varied interests has met with the success which he so richly deserves.

In 1873 Mr. Tong was united in marriage to Miss Cecelia Ball, of Lafayette, Indiana,

and their family consists of four sons and two daughters.

JAMES A. ROPER. An honored citizen of Mishawaka for many years past, James A. Roper is entitled to a prominent place in the annals of St. Joseph county, the county of his birth. His natal day was the 15th of December, 1846, his parents being John and Cornelia (Youngs) Roper, the former a native of England and the latter of the state of New York. The father, whose birth occurred in Bristol, came to the United States in the early 40's, taking up his abode in the state of New York, but a few years thereafter he came to St. Joseph county, Michigan. In 1847 the family home was established in Mishawaka, but the father was only permitted to enjoy his new place of residence for a short time, as his death occurred in 1852. His widow continued to reside in Mishawaka until her death in 1862.

James A. Roper received his preparatory education in the public schools of Mishawaka, this being supplemented by an attendance at De Pauw University of three years. In 1861, when only fourteen years of age, he enlisted for service in the Civil war, becoming a member of Company F, Forty-eighth Indiana Regiment, which was recruited at Mishawaka and commanded by Colonel Norman E. Eddy. Mr. Roper enlisted as a private on the 19th of September, 1861, and was discharged on the 22d of July, 1865. After two years of service he was promoted to the position of corporal, and after Sherman's march was detailed as guard at General Clark's headquarters, while at the close of the march through the Carolinas he was given a sergeant's commission at Richmond, Virginia, and had full charge of General Clark's headquarters. He served in that capacity until mustered out of service, and participated in all the battles of the Army of the Tennessee. It was after returning from the army that Mr. Roper entered De Pauw, and after his three years of college life there he was employed as clerk in the post office and a dry goods store for two years for Colonel Newton Bingham. In 1872 he embarked in the lumber business in Cass county, Michigan, but after a period of six years returned to Mishawaka and formed a partnership with P. C. Perkins for the manufacture of furniture, theirs being the first factory on the north side of the river. In 1879 the St. Joseph Valley Furniture Company was organized, with Mr. Roper as presi-

dent, and later they purchased the old Milburn Wagon Works and converted it into a furniture factory. In 1883 Mr. Roper sold his interest in that corporation to Frank Perkins, and for one year thereafter conducted a furniture factory in South Bend. On the expiration of that period, in 1884, he organized the Roper Furniture Company, his associates being J. W. and J. Q. C. Vandenbosch, and after the death of J. W. Vandenbosch he purchased their interest, and the Roper family are now sole owners of the business. In addition to his connection with this important industry Mr. Roper is also president of the First National Bank, a director of the First Trust and Savings Bank, president of the Public Utility Company, was formerly president of the City Electric Light Company and was one of the organizers of the Public Utilities Company. In an early day he also served as a member of the city council, while at the present time he is a member of the county council.

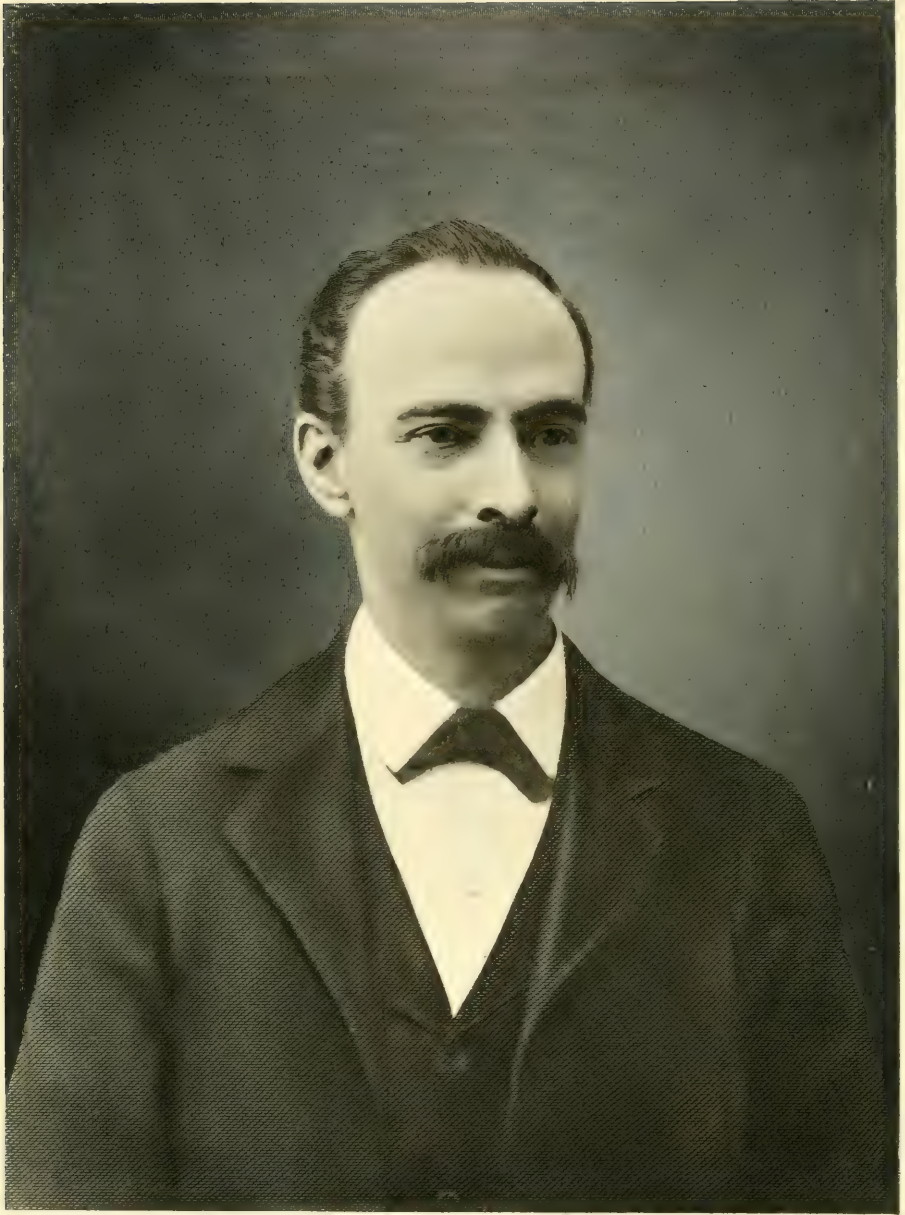
In 1868 Mr. Roper was united in marriage to Miss Ella M. Dowling, a daughter of Edward and Margaret Dowling of St. Joseph county, and they have five sons, H. C., C. A., H. D., L. E. and J. G., all of whom are holding prominent positions in their father's business with the exception of L. E. Roper. Mr. Roper is a member of the Grand Army of the Republic, Houghton Post, of which he served as the first commander, holding that position for a number of years, and is also a member of the Methodist church, being now superintendent of its Sunday school.

JAMES M. DERHODES. Banking institutions constitute the heart of the financial body, indicating the healthfulness of trade. There are no other enterprises which so soon feel a depression in the market or a period of prosperity, and banks which follow a safe, conservative policy do more to establish a feeling of confidence in times of widespread financial panic than any other institutions in the world of trade. Mr. DeRhodes stands today at the head of one of the leading financial concerns of South Bend, being president of the Merchants' National Bank. With a thorough understanding of his business, he has labored for the success of the institution along lines that have awakened public confidence, and made the bank one of the safe, reliable monied concerns of this portion of the state.

Mr. DeRhodes was born in Columbiana county, Ohio, on the 12th of November, 1853,

a son of David and Mary A. (Miller) DeRhodes, both natives of Pennsylvania. The father, who was born in 1815, removed to Ohio during his boyhood days, where he was engaged in both farming and merchandising, and his death occurred in 1892, at the age of seventy-seven years. He obtained his early education in the country schools of his native county, and, after completing his studies, his father gave him a third interest in the home farm, under which arrangement he met with a high degree of success, making a specialty of the raising of grain. His desire to embark more extensively in the grain trade induced him to remove to North Dakota, in 1882, his partner in the enterprise being his brother, K. C. DeRhodes, now the cashier of the Merchants' National Bank of South Bend. They were engaged in both grain farming and merchandising on a large scale, also conducting an elevator and a wood and coal business; but, although their interests were varied, extensive and very profitable and the brothers rapidly acquired wealth and a high position as citizens, they decided to return to Indiana where their children could enjoy better educational advantages. In 1896 they therefore disposed of their interests in North Dakota, and located in Lafayette, successfully engaging in the wholesale grain trade in that city. On the 21st of June, 1902, they settled in South Bend, erected the Merchants' Bank building on the corner of Michigan and Wayne streets and organized the Merchants' National Bank, of which James M. DeRhodes became president and his brother cashier.

In 1884 Mr. DeRhodes was married to Sarah E. Large, a daughter of Levi Large, of Fond du Lac, Wisconsin, and they have three children—Guy L., Emma G. and Alice. The family are associated with the Methodist church, and Mr. DeRhodes is a member of the Modern Woodmen of America. Although he has been identified with South Bend but a few years, he is highly regarded in all circles—social, religious and business. He is a man of sterling worth and strong character, but affable and courteous in manner, and has a wide circle of friends, both social and business. He is a recognized authority in the financial world, and has thoroughly identified himself with the leading interests and enterprises of his adopted home. He is broad-minded and liberal, and while not seeking notoriety has a just pride in the development



John J. Schindler

and progress of his home and his own success in life.

JOHN J. SCHINDLER. Since the days when Mishawaka was but a village the Schindler family have been influential in its development and gradually increasing prosperity, contributing to the establishment and maintenance of its institutions and upholding the law and the best interests of the public in general. The birth of Mr. Schindler occurred in Buffalo, New York, on the 11th of February, 1851. His father, Andrew Schindler, was born in Baden, Germany, on the 16th of June, 1823, and his education was received in its schools. In 1838 he crossed the waters to the United States, and from the time of his arrival until 1864 was a resident of Buffalo, New York. In that year he removed to Dunkirk, New York, and was there engaged in the hotel business until 1869, in which year the family home was established in Mishawaka. After coming to this city Mr. Schindler was engaged in both the grocery and hotel business, and he was very successful in both ventures, at the same time winning for himself a high place in the estimation of the people with whom he so long lived. His busy and useful life was ended on the 25th of August, 1872. He married Rosa Kuhn, a native of Switzerland, and they became the parents of eight children, four of whom grew to years of maturity, namely: John J., Andrew J., William N. and Joseph J.

John J. Schindler, their oldest son, was a student in the St. Joseph Academy of Buffalo, New York, until his thirteenth year, when he came to Mishawaka and entered the employ of his uncles, the Kuhn Brothers, proprietors of the St. Joseph flouring mills, with whom he remained for nine years, during that time obtaining a thorough knowledge of the business in every department. On the death of his father he assumed the management of his business, which he successfully conducted until 1872, in that year opening a similar business of his own and conducting the same until 1887. In 1872 Mr. Schindler added fire insurance to his other occupation, while in the following year a steamship agency and foreign exchange was assumed. In 1876 he was made a notary public and conveyancer, while in 1888 he was elected township trustee, winning that election by only five votes, but so well did he discharge the duties entrusted to his care during his incumbency that in 1890, when his name was put forth for re-

election he received a majority of four hundred and nineteen votes. He was admitted as an attorney in the department of interior bureau of pensions in 1880, and many soldiers and their widows have reason to thank him for the services he rendered them while serving in that important office. From 1890 until 1894 Mr. Schindler served as secretary of the county board of education, and was also the organizer of township libraries in district schools. He is now extensively engaged in the fire insurance and steamship business, in which he has won an excellent success, at the present time representing thirty of the largest companies in the world. He also represents eight steamship companies and issues letters of credit and exchange to all parts of the globe. The splendid success which has come to Mr. Schindler is directly traceable to the salient points of his character. With a mind capable of planning, he has combined a will strong enough to execute his well formulated purposes, and his great energy, keen discrimination and perseverance have placed him among the men of affairs in St. Joseph county.

On the 20th of May, 1879, he was married to Miss Christena Fierstos, and they have three children: Aloysius J., born May 4, 1880; John W., born November 7, 1884; and Clara M., born October 26, 1887. The family are members of the Catholic church, of which Mr. Schindler has been secretary and treasurer for the past twenty years and was also secretary of the building committee during the erection of the St. Joseph school. Mr. Schindler gives his political support to the Democratic party, and is a member of the Catholic Knights of America. He is a director of the First National Bank of Mishawaka, also vice-president of the First Trust and Savings Company, a director in the Mishawaka Trust and Savings Company, a director in the Beiger Realty Company, and is also a member of the city council and secretary of public utilities.

B. F. DUNN. In the history of the industrial interests of South Bend the name of B. F. Dunn cannot be omitted, for through many years he has been one of the leading business men of St. Joseph county, progressive, enterprising and persevering. Such qualities always win success, sooner or later, and to Mr. Dunn they have brought a handsome competence as the reward of his well-directed efforts.

A native son of the county of St. Joseph, and one of which it may well be proud, he was born on the 14th of June, 1833, a son of Reynolds and Phoebe Dunn, the former a native of New Jersey and the latter of Greene county, Ohio. During his boyhood days, however, the father went to Ohio, and shortly after his marriage he brought his bride to St. Joseph county, Indiana, where their honorable and upright lives won them the respect and confidence of their fellow citizens. In the public schools of South Bend their son received his early educational training, and for a number of years after laying aside his text books he served as a clerk for John Brownfield, the then leading merchant of the city. In 1860 he made the trip to Pike's Peak, Colorado, with a party in search for gold, but not being successful in the finding of the precious metal Mr. Dunn returned to South Bend in the following year. In 1864 he was engaged in the dry goods business as a member of the firm of Dunn & Zimmerman, while later his brother was admitted to a partnership, business being thereafter conducted under the firm name of Dunn Brothers. Subsequently, however, B. F. Dunn relinquished his interest in this enterprise and in company with his brother-in-law, Robert Myler, was thereafter engaged in manufacturing pursuits until 1873, in which year he sold his interest. Since that time his time and attention have been given to the real estate business. In company with Mr. A. J. Horne he platted and laid out the town of River Park, one of the beautiful subdivisions of the North Side and which they now own. Mr. Dunn has been a potent factor in the success which has attended various enterprises. He is the trustee and vice-president of the St. Joseph County Savings Bank, and for eleven years was a member of the board of education, having also been actively interested in the establishment of the public library.

Mr. Dunn was married in 1864 to Mary V. Hamilton, of Ohio, and three children have been born to them: Mrs. J. G. Shurtz, of Michigan; Mrs. F. A. Miller, of South Bend; and Miss Blanche. The family affiliate with the Methodist Episcopal church. Mr. Dunn is a member of the Commercial Athletic Club, and is accounted one of the prominent and progressive citizens of South Bend.

RICHARD H. LYON, for thirty-three years connected with the South Bend Tribune, was one of the pioneer newspaper men of

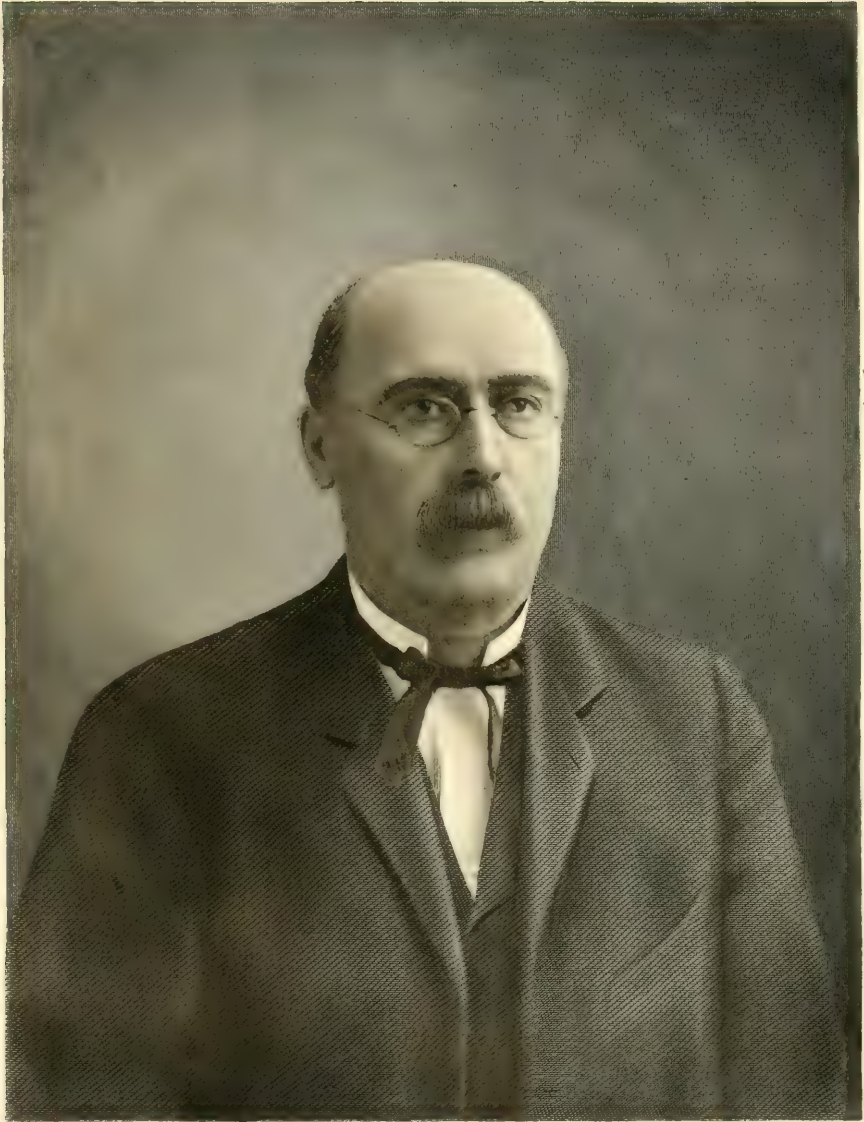
the city. He was born near Bridgeport, Conn., and in 1860 moved with his family to Ypsilanti, Mich. After a residence there of several years they moved to Van Buren county, that state. His early education was obtained in the public schools and was followed by learning the printers' trade in Decatur, Ill.

Mr. Lyon, who had served as correspondent of The Tribune, came to South Bend in 1874 and accepted a position in The Tribune composing room and his connection with that paper continued until his death, April 4, 1907. He was advanced to the reportorial staff in 1875, became city editor in 1878 and later was made associate editor, a position which he filled with splendid credit until failing health compelled him to resign in 1905. He continued his connection with The Tribune, however, as a special writer and did some excellent work.

Mr. Lyon was a co-author with Charles H. Bartlett, formerly principal of the South Bend high school, in a beautiful historic volume entitled "La Salle in the Valley of the St. Joseph" which was published by the Tribune Printing Company. He had also written many articles and papers of historical value and deep interest. He was a thorough musician and had been identified with nearly every musical organization in South Bend for a quarter of a century. He was the composer of several sacred songs and anthems. Mr. Lyon was known as the original "Old Shady" and his services in political campaigns in a musical way made him very popular in northern Indiana and southern Michigan.

He was married in 1876 at Kalkaska, Mich., to Miss Frances A. Kurtz, of Buffalo, N. Y., who continues to make South Bend her home. Mr. Lyon was prominent in numerous movements of a progressive character and was a member of the Northern Indiana Historical Society and fraternally was associated with the National Union.

CHARLES FRANK is numbered among the leading business men of Mishawaka, and is also an honored soldier of the Civil war. His birth occurred in Beaver county, Pennsylvania, March 18, 1842, and his father, Reinhold Frank, was a native of Germany, coming to America during his boyhood days in 1806. In this country he was married to Catherine Roupp, also a native of the fatherland, and she was about eighteen



Charles Frank

years of age when she came to this country, where her death occurred when she had reached the age of eighty years. In their family were seven children, five sons and two daughters, all of whom grew to years of maturity. The father spent the remainder of his life in Pennsylvania, dying there at the age of seventy-three years.

Charles Frank, the fourth child and third son in his parents' family, received his educational training in the schools of Pittsburg, Pennsylvania, and remained at home until 1861, when he offered his services to his country during the Civil war, enlisting when a youth of nineteen years in Company B, Seventy-fourth Pennsylvania Volunteer Infantry. His bravery and faithful service won him many promotions, and he was honorably discharged as a commissary sergeant after three years of faithful and arduous service, during which time he had participated in many of the principal battles of the war, including Chancellorsville and Fredericksburg. He was slightly wounded while at Charleston, South Carolina, and after the close of the conflict he returned to his old home in Pennsylvania, while shortly afterward, in 1864, he came to St. Joseph county, first locating at Woodland, where for about twenty years he was engaged in the lumber business and also in conducting a saw mill. From that city he came to Mishawaka in 1889, resuming his lumber business. For forty-three years he has been a resident of St. Joseph county, and strictly upright and above reproach in all his dealing with others, he merits the high esteem in which he is held by all who have the pleasure of his acquaintance. His prominence in the public life of the community has led to his selection for many offices of public trust, having been the Republican representative in the office of school trustee for several years, and was a justice of the peace in Madison township for many years, was elected mayor in the fall of 1906. In addition to his extensive lumber business he also has stock in the First National Bank of Mishawaka.

In 1868 Mr. Frank was married to Mary A. Buchheit, the daughter of Jacob Buchheit, and their four children are: George F., a resident of Mishawaka; J. N.; Estella, the wife of R. H. Jernegan, of Mishawaka; and Grace, the wife of John W. Beiger, also of this city. Mr. Frank has membership relations with Houghton Post, No. 128, G. A. R.,

in which he has filled all the offices, and is also a member of the Odd Fellows order of Mishawaka and the Elks of South Bend.

MYRON CAMPBELL is cashier of the South Bend National Bank, and his prestige in financial and business affairs has been won through marked executive force, keen discrimination, sound judgment and unfaltering energy. He was born in Valparaiso, Indiana, on the 13th of March, 1849, a son of Samuel A. and Harriet (Cornell) Campbell, and is a twin brother of Marvin Campbell. The public schools of his native city furnished him with his early educational training, this being supplemented by attendance at the Northern Indiana Normal College of Valparaiso, where he studied civil engineering, wiring and surveying, and afterwards assisted in the construction of the Chicago & Grand Trunk Railroad between Flint and Lansing, Michigan. During a period of four years, Mr. Campbell also acted in the capacity of surveyor of Porter county. In 1872 he embarked in the grocery business in South Bend, in partnership with Ex-Postmaster Horace G. Miller, business being conducted under the firm name of Miller & Campbell.

During the past many years, however, Mr. Campbell's endeavors have been directed to the banking business, and his wise counsel and sound judgment have contributed to the success of the institution with which he is connected. In 1878 he entered the South Bend National Bank as a bookkeeper, and on March 14, 1891, was elected cashier, which position he has since held. He is also the manager of the South Bend Clearing House. He is an authority on banking business, having been awarded prizes by the Rand-McNally Bankers' Magazine for papers on country banking, and also by the Rhoades Journal for a paper on Domestic Exchange. He is also the author of a valuable book of interest and exchange tables, which has been endorsed by the leading bankers and business men. The cause of education finds in him a warm friend, who has efficiently advanced its interests, having from 1895 until 1898 been a member of the Board of Education, and other measures for the public good receive his hearty support and co-operation.

Mr. Campbell was united in marriage in 1871 to Miss Abbie Fifield, also of Valparaiso, Indiana, and they have four children, two sons and two daughters: Edward H., a graduate of the U. S. Naval Academy at Annapolis and

now a lieutenant commander in the United States navy; Robert S., assistant cashier of the South Bend National Bank; Ada C., a graduate of DePauw University, and now Extension Secretary of the Y. W. C. A.; and Vera, a student in the Ohio Wesleyan College of Delaware, Ohio. The family are devout members of the Methodist Episcopal church, in which Mr. Campbell is serving as treasurer, and he is also an active member and Treasurer of the Young Men's Christian Association. Reliability in all trade transactions, loyalty to all duties of citizenship, fidelity in the discharge of every trust reposed in him—these are his chief characteristics, and through the passing years they have gained for him the unqualified confidence and respect of his fellow townsmen.

CALEB A. KIMBALL. From an early period Caleb A. Kimball has been prominently identified with the history of northern Indiana, and for many years past he has served as cashier of the First National Bank of South Bend. He was born in Ipswich, Massachusetts, twenty-seven miles from Boston, February 13, 1829, a son of P. H. and Susan (Stanly) Kimball, both also natives of that commonwealth. The father was of English descent, and was a life-long manufacturer of furniture and lumber.

Caleb A. Kimball, the third of his parents' five children, was reared and received his educational training at Yarmouth, Maine, there remaining until his removal to St. Joseph county in 1850. He at once engaged in the cutting of black walnut timber and the production of lumber in South Bend, being thus engaged for six years, when he turned his attention to farming for a few years. In 1864 he became connected with the First National Bank as bookkeeper, but in 1870 was promoted to the position of cashier, in which he has ever since remained. He is a man of commanding influence in the community and the county, and widely known and honored throughout northern Indiana. He has attained prominence in business circles, while in private life he has many warm friends.

In 1856, Mr. Kimball was united in marriage to Marcia L. Willis, the daughter of Lyda Willis, and one son has been born of this union, W. L. Kimball, cashier of the First National Bank of Mishawaka. During the long period of fifty years Mr. Kimball has resided within the borders of St. Joseph county,

and throughout all that time has been deeply interested in its upbuilding and improvement.

HON. JOHN B. STOLL. To Honorable J. B. Stoll has come the attainment of a distinguished position in connection with journalism, his rise and present standing being due to determined, honest and intelligently directed efforts, based upon a natural strength and practical ability. The intuitive insight and quick judgment, so necessary to the success of the journalist, were also his, as well as a practical knowledge of the printing business which enabled him to build his newspaper enterprises on firm financial bases. Having all the best qualifications of the all-around newspaper man, his final success was assured.

Mr. Stoll is of German birth, being a native of Wurtemberg, and the day of his birth, March 13, 1843. His father, who was a large landed proprietor, was drowned in the river Murg a few months before his birth, and the child went to live with his grandparents, attending school until 1853. In that year he emigrated to the United States with his mother and located at Harrisburg, Pennsylvania, where she died, leaving him an orphan at the age of twelve years. After seeking employment of various kinds the boy found work in the printing office of the *Harrisburg Telegraph* and *Der Vaterlands-Waechter*. By diligent study and extensive reading he mastered the English language and, at an early age, entered the political arena. Although a sturdy Democrat, he was opposed to slavery, and in 1860, when but seventeen years of age, was, by the Democracy of Cambria county, chosen as a delegate to the Douglas state convention. Upon the nomination of Douglas and Johnson, by the Baltimore national convention, he delivered an eloquent address at the ratification meeting held in Johnstown, Pennsylvania. The following year he went to Middleburg, Snyder county, that state, where he worked as a journeyman on the *People's Friend*, purchasing the paper in 1863. When he thus made his first independent venture in journalism he was only twenty years of age, but he greatly improved the paper, and in the year following the purchase was elected a member of the school board, while subsequently he was made auditor of Snyder county.

In 1866, Mr. Stoll first came to Indiana, publishing the *Ligonier Banner* for a period of seventeen years. In the spring of 1869, he established and edited the *Laporte Argus*, and in 1873 became editor of the *South Bend*





William B. Calvert

Courier, published in German. The next journal with which he became connected was the *Daily and Weekly Democrat*, of which he became editor and proprietor, as also of the *Monitor*. During all this period he resided at Ligonier, where he edited and published the *Banner*. Mr. Stoll organized the Press Association of northern Indiana, and for six years successively was its president, while in 1881 he was chiefly instrumental in founding the Democratic State Editorial Association, serving as its first president.

As the editor and proprietor of the *Times*, Mr. Stoll is a power for good in his community. He is a brilliant writer, an able journalist and a forceful speaker, and has placed the *Times* among the leading newspapers of northern Indiana. His influence has passed beyond the confines of his home locality, and upon the ladder of his own building he has climbed to prominence and prosperity. Intensely loyal to all movements for the good of his locality, he is especially interested in educational and literary affairs, and has served as president of the school board of South Bend for eight years. Thus commingling his characters of journalist and citizen, and the management of his private with public affairs, his influence is of great breadth and effectiveness.

WILLIAM BELL CALVERT. The history of the Calvert family, continued to the present generation through William Bell Calvert, the well known real estate man of South Bend, introduces personages who have been prominently known in St. Joseph county since the first years of its settlement and pioneer life.

For the origin of the American branch of the family, we go back to the parish of Essex, England, where on August 25, 1793, was born Isaac Bond Calvert, grandfather of the Calvert above named. On January 15, 1815, he married Isabella Bird, who was born in Cumberland, England, March 17, 1792, and in 1819, with two children, this pioneer couple came to America, settling near Philadelphia.

For a number of years Isaac B. Calvert engaged in the dairy business, with Philadelphia as his market. In the fall of 1834 he set out for the west, and after a long overland journey by wagon, arrived in the little village of South Bend in January, 1835. In Portage township, four and a half miles west of South Bend, is located the Calvert farm, one of the best known and handsomest

country estates in the county. It is still owned in the family, and 220 acres of it has never passed from this ownership since Isaac B. Calvert bought it, over seventy years ago. Although his first home shelter has long since been removed, it deserves a place of lasting remembrance in the family records.

It was a double cabin, and was of rather advanced style of pioneer architecture, because the logs were hewn on two sides, giving plane surfaces both within and without. Chips and clay filled up the spaces between the logs. The floor was of puncheons, and the one door swung on wooden hinges, with a wooden bolt and latch on the inside, and, in accordance with family hospitality, the latch string was always on the outside. A clay and stick chimney completed the principal features of this primitive home. Here occurred the death of Isaac B. Calvert, February 27, 1839, leaving a widow and eight children to continue his memory. His widow died March 7, 1866.

Joseph Hall Calvert, son of the above pioneer and father of W. B. Calvert, was born near Philadelphia, October 30, 1822, and accompanied the family to St. Joseph county when he was twelve years old. To continue his schooling in this county he had to walk two and a half miles to the primitive school-house that then gave, for a few weeks in the year, educational facilities to the neighborhood children. He bought the interest of the other children in the old homestead, and continued to reside there until his death, April 1, 1885, since which time his widow has made this her home.

Another log house was erected by him, and somewhat later he built a commodious frame house, barn and other farm buildings, so that the farm, then containing 320 acres, was the best improved in the township at the time of his death.

By his marriage on March 30, 1862, to Mary Jane Brick, he united by family ties two of the oldest families connected with the history of St. Joseph county. His wife was the daughter of William Woollen and Elizabeth (Wills) Brick. The former, who was born at Mount Holly, New Jersey, February 13, 1808, traced his ancestry back to 1663, when three brothers, John, William and Samuel, of whom the first was the founder of this branch of the family, came from England with a Quaker colony that settled in New Jersey and became owners of

large tracts of land there, where the family is still prominent. John, the direct ancestor, was conspicuous in the activities of his locality, being a lawyer, farmer, banker and judge.

William Woolsen Brick, on coming west, first settled on Pokagon prairie in Cass county, Michigan, in 1826, but two years later came to St. Joseph county, joining the first settlers who beat down the wilderness and founded the institutions of civilization here. Securing government land in Warren township, he began the improvement of what is to-day one of the best farms in the county, and after living a number of years on this farm he moved to South Bend, where he spent his declining years. He was three times married and left a large family.

Representing the third generation of the family in this county, William Bell Calvert was born in his father's log cabin in Portage township, October 22, 1863. After attending the country schools he continued his education at Valparaiso (Ind.) Business College and at Oberlin (Ohio) College, preparatory to entering Cornell University, Ithaca, N. Y., where he was a member of the class of 1890. His studies at the university were mainly along the lines of mechanical and electrical engineering.

Having completed his education, he returned to his home county and bought a farm in Warren township a few miles from South Bend. However, farming was his active vocation only a few years, when he moved to South Bend and entered the manufacturing field, from which after two or three years he turned his attention to the real estate business.

In the handling of city and farm properties and the promotion of building additions, Mr. Calvert has become a large factor in the expansion and development of his city. Besides acting as agent for others in numerous large transactions, he has had a large business on his own account. On his Highland Park addition there is a natural park of twenty-five acres, well wooded and attractive, which he intends giving to the city for public park purposes. This addition is valued at about one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Mr. Calvert was the first to introduce grading and the improvement of streets in the new additions of South Bend,—his first work of this kind having been done at Rose-land Park, one of his several additions to

the city. Calvert street, one of the principal streets of the city, was named in honor of him. Mr. Calvert has one of the finest and best equipped real estate offices in the state.

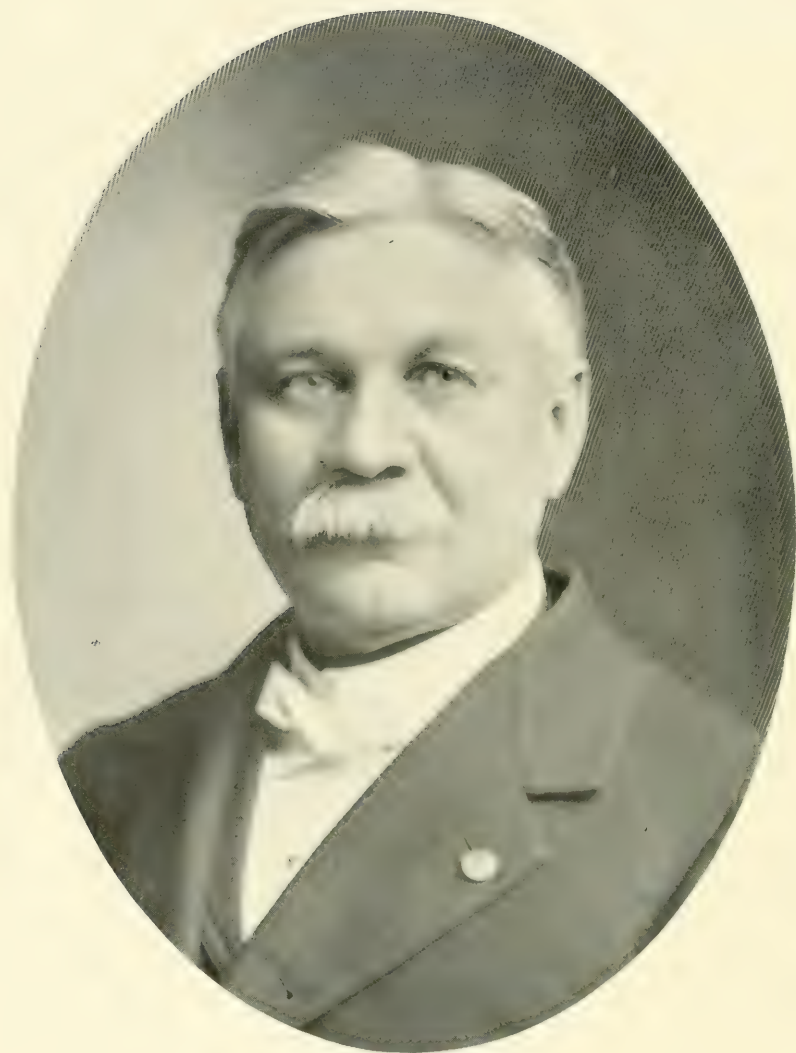
August 24, 1887, Mr. Calvert married Miss Ella Sincos, a daughter of Alvin and Caroline (Carleton) Sincos, of Ohio and Virginia ancestry respectively. Mr. and Mrs. Calvert have two sons, Charles Everett and William Franklin.

Mr. Calvert affiliates with the Independent Order of Odd Fellows in all its branches and has been elected to and filled all the offices up to the Supreme Lodge; the Elks and other orders; is a member of the Commercial Athletic Club, Business Men's Association and several others. He was one of the organizers and the first secretary of the Real Estate Board of South Bend, which was the first successfully organized Real Estate Board in the state. It is the most active institution in advancing the general interests of the city.

CHAUNCEY N. FASSETT. For a long period Chauncey N. Fassett has been a resident of South Bend, and during many years of that time has been connected with its journalistic interests. South Bend also claims him among her native sons, for his birth occurred in this city on the 30th of July, 1849, his parents being Chauncey S. and Lucy Jane (Harmon) Fassett, both natives of the state of New York. In the late '30s the father came to South Bend and engaged in a mercantile business. He was also numbered among the Argonauts to California, going to that state in 1849, and remaining for four years, when he returned to the east and established himself in business in Middlebury, Elkhart county, Indiana. He afterwards removed to Missouri, where he turned his attention to agricultural pursuits, but failed in the general panic of 1857. Before the war Mr. Fassett had gone to Colorado with his eldest son, Charles S., and they assisted in opening Russell's Gulch, being among the first there. The father spent most of his remaining days in the west, dying in St. Joseph, Missouri, in 1879, when he had reached the age of seventy-six years.

In 1863 the family returned from Missouri to Goshen, where the son Chauncey N., attended the common schools, and after completing his education spent two years in the law office of the late Judge Mitchell. At that time Mr. Fassett became convinced that his forte was journalism, and in 1873 he began





Elmer Lerochetti.

work on the old "Union," one of the early papers and which was owned by his brother Herbert. After the Union was sold, he purchased the Register, later was employed on the Tribune until 1878, and was then appointed assistant postmaster, continuing as the incumbent of that office for eight years. In 1887, Mr. Fassett established the Sunday News, and although it is owned by a stock company, he has the controlling interest and is president and editor of the corporation. He is a writer of force and ability, and his name occupies a conspicuous place among the leading journalists of northern Indiana.

The marriage of Mr. Fassett was celebrated at Lewistown, Pennsylvania, on the 31st of October, 1877, when Anna Thrush became his wife. Her father, the late Rev. John Thrush, was former pastor of the First Methodist Episcopal church of South Bend. One daughter was born of this union, Thrush, who died at the age of eighteen years, on the 5th of May, 1901. In her memory her parents have established a silver medal to be given annually in the high school for highest standing in English literature, the Thrush Fassett Medal. In addition to his journalistic work, Mr. Fassett is treasurer and manager of the Indiana Foundry and Machine Company, and is also interested in real estate in a general way. He is an able and experienced newspaper man, and at the present time is engaged in preparing a biography of the late Clem Studebaker. Coming from such a versatile and brilliant writer, this will prove an interesting and valuable work.

ELMER CROCKETT. Conspicuous on the roll of names who have conferred honor upon the profession of journalism in Indiana is that of Elmer Crockett, president of the Tribune Printing Company. He has a great versatility of talents, and exactness and thoroughness characterizes all his attainments and work. He is a writer of superior force and ability, and in all the relations of life he is an honorable, upright gentleman. He was born in St. Joseph county, September 1, 1844, a son of Shellem and Louise (Ireland) Crockett, and a descendant of Davy Crockett. In 1849 the family moved to South Bend, but Elmer remained in Mishawaka for several years with an uncle, S. I. H. Ireland, receiving his education in its public schools. He later became a student in the Northern Indiana College at South Bend, thus receiving an excellent educational training as the foundation of his future life

work. During the Civil war he served with the One Hundred and Thirty-eighth Indiana Volunteers, and after being mustered out he entered the office of the Mishawaka Enterprise, where he learned the printer's trade. He then returned to South Bend in 1867, and has ever since been identified with the interests of this city.

For several years Mr. Crockett served as foreman in the office of the St. Joseph Valley Register, founded by Schuyler Colfax, vice-president of the United States, and ultimately purchased the paper in company with A. Beal and his brother-in-law, Alfred B. Miller, forming the firm of Beal, Miller & Company. In 1872 the firm of Miller & Crockett founded the South Bend Tribune, which is now numbered among the leading Republican newspapers of northern Indiana. A few years later the Tribune Printing Company was incorporated, with Mr. Miller as president and Mr. Crockett vice-president and manager. After the death of Mr. Miller in 1892, Mr. Crockett became printer and business manager, which position he still occupies. He is an active and valued member of the Republican party, and in 1888 was appointed by Benjamin Harrison as postmaster of South Bend. He has also served as a member of the State Republican Committee during several campaigns, and was chairman of the State Newspaper Bureau.

In 1868, Mr. Crockett was united in marriage to Anna Miller, whose father, the late B. F. Miller, was an honored pioneer of St. Joseph county and at one time served as its sheriff. Five children have been born of this union, but only two are now living: Charles E., secretary of the Tribune Company, and Ethel. Mr. Crockett holds membership relations with the Grand Army of the Republic, being past commander of Auten Post, No. 8, and in 1896, was senior vice department commander of Indiana. He is also an active worker in the Presbyterian church, in which he is serving as superintendent of the Sunday School, and is also a valued factor of the Young Men's Christian Association, of which he has been president. He was selected as a member of the citizens' advisory committee during the building of the new court house, and proved a valued member of the committee. He exemplifies in his life the tenets of the Masonic fraternity, of which he is a worthy member, and in 1889 and 1890 served

as Grand High Priest of the Grand Chapter of Indiana.

CHARLES ALBERT McDONALD both by work and character was long identified with the higher progress and life of St. Joseph county. He was born in South Bend, Indiana, on the 15th of September, 1859, the son of John M. and Elizabeth McDonald, his father being a native of Virginia of Scotch ancestry, and the mother of New York state, whose forefathers were of the German fatherland.

Charles A. was a faithful school attendant in his boyhood and youth, graduated from the South Bend High School in the class of 1879, taught for some time, and was subsequently principal of the Washington and South schools. While thus employed he became assistant editor of *The Times*, then a weekly paper with a Saturday edition. A few years later he became a partner with J. B. Stoll in the ownership of the *South Bend Daily and Weekly Times*, as well as its city editor, maintaining these dual relations until his death, which occurred December 14, 1905.

From numerous tributes to the high and lovable character of the deceased, which sprung spontaneously from the hearts of men, women and children in all walks of life, one of the most tender and broadly descriptive was penned by a classmate, who had known him from his youth. It is as follows: "A fresh, wholesome interest in intellectual pursuits distinguished him even in his boyhood. He felt to the last a warm enthusiasm for all that was good and noble. Earnestness of purpose and a determination to excel were distinguishing marks of his character. He was ambitious and cherished high ideals, and to these he was always faithful. In spite of the harsh demands of practical life he never lost his reverence for the ideals of his boyhood and the beautiful dreams of his youth. Energy, perseverance and the exercise of all those faculties which make for success are admirable always, but when they are tempered by a broad love of humanity, and a deep inborn sense of devotion to family and friends and unflinching loyalty to the ideals of youth, they make a man the best of which a human being is capable. Mr. McDonald had all these in good measure. He was so tender and true in every relation that even the casual acquaintance felt the warmth of his personality and the wholesome influence of his generous, loving nature. He was the best possible exponent of George Eliot's Simple Creed Religion. Kind-

ness, piety and reverence were inherent qualities, and the memories of old associations were sacred to him, for he clung with all his heart to the friends and teachers who had guided him in youth. His tenderness and regard for old friends, his cordial interest in the welfare of his fellowmen, his unflinching sympathy for the afflicted and the oppressed, are the best testimonials of his character. Strong, upright and honorable, he knew no deceit, but gloried in the greater power of an all-conquering love. The high esteem of all who knew him is the best proof of his worth, the sorrow of those who knew him well, the noblest tribute to his memory."

Mr. McDonald's business associate wrote of him: "From the beginning to the close of his connection with this establishment, he proved himself a thoroughly honest man. Greed was absolutely foreign to his nature. Avarice never warped or dwarfed his intellect. He became profoundly impressed with the belief that man's mission was above money-making. While he recognized the propriety and necessity of man's wants, he regarded an unsullied reputation as to personal honor far above the value of glittering gold. His career was too short to fully develop what was in the man. Could he have lived the scriptural allotted period, his splendid traits of character would have been conspicuously brought within the vision of a discerning public. But he lived long enough to leave a record to which his bereaved relatives, friends and associates will point with satisfaction and pride. While this cannot, at the moment, assuage grief, subdue sorrow, still tears nor silence anguish, in years to come it will serve as a pleasant reminder that it was well for this community to have been the beneficiary of Charles A. McDonald's well directed and honorable efforts."

Another writer said of the deceased: "It was during his last years that many of Mr. McDonald's choice poems were penned, which brought to him considerable fame. His ability in this line was unquestioned, and he took great pleasure in hailing the arrival of holidays and referring to South Bend's important events in metrical form."

On the 17th of November, 1886, Mr. McDonald married Miss Fannie Everson Bradley, of Berrien Springs, Michigan, daughter of Edward and Imogene Everson (Royce) Bradley, both natives of New York. Four children were born to their union—Marie, Arthur Royce, Kenneth Bradley and Charles Albert,



Geo. W. J. Kaleyman

Jr. Mrs. McDonald is now connected with the editorial department of the South Bend Times.

Although a public spirited man, Mr. McDonald was interested in only one fraternal organization—South Bend Lodge, No. 235, B. P. O. E.—but in this he was a willing and enthusiastic worker. As a reward for his zeal in this direction he was recently elected chaplain, and was selected as one of the directors of the Elks Temple Association. Much credit is due him for the erection of this monument to Elkdom, as he was one of the prime factors in bringing about the plans which made possible the erection of the home. It was also Mr. McDonald who suggested that the laying of the cornerstone should take place at eleven o'clock at night, the mystic hour of the order. The deceased was a member of the Methodist Episcopal church, which he joined in his youth and from whose teachings he never departed.

GEORGE W. J. KALCZYNSKI, one of the leading journalists of northern Indiana, was born in Haverstraw, New York, January 17, 1872, a son of George W. and Mary (Urbanowska) Kalczynski. In 1877, the family came to South Bend, here remaining for five years, during which time George attended a parochial school. On the expiration of that period, just after the death of the mother, they returned to Yonkers, New York, where the son resumed his studies. In a few years, however, he came again to South Bend, where he learned the printer's trade on the South Bend Times. In 1894, he went to Toledo, Ohio, and purchased the Toledo Courier (Kuryer), continuing its publication for sixteen months as a weekly, when he made it a daily and the name was changed to the Times (Czas). Selling that paper at the expiration or two months, he went to Chicago, Illinois, and thence to Bay City, Michigan, where for five months he served as general manager of the Truth (Prawda).

For the third time Mr. Kalczynski came to South Bend, and with Messrs. H. C. Dunbar and H. Elliott organized the Gonicie Polski Publishing Company. Messrs. Dunbar and Elliott owned a printing establishment, to which they added some Polish type and furnished the means with which to establish the paper, while Mr. Kalczynski contributed the editorial ability and experience. The paper, the Polish Messenger (Gonicie Polski), was an immediate success, and has continued so to

the present time, being now a seven column folio, semi-weekly, and independent in politics. The first number was issued on the 27th of June, 1896, and at that time Mr. Kalczynski was literally penniless, but he is now the sole owner of this large plant, which is equipped with the latest and most improved machinery, conducted by electric power and is valued at twelve thousand dollars. This is the only newspaper printed in the Polish language in the state of Indiana. Outside of his paper, he is also prominent in Polish affairs, being president of the local Polish Turners M. R., and was national president of Polish Turners Alliance of America from 1901 to 1905. He is a member of the Knights of Columbus, the Woodmen of the World, St. Stanislaus Society, the Polish Literary society known as St. John De Cantus, and the South Bend Press Club, of which he is secretary-treasurer. He is also a member of the European society known as "Powsciagliwosc i Praca," whose object is the bringing up of orphan boys and fitting them for the battle of life. This is conducted by the Roman Catholic clergy, and its headquarters are at Miejsce Piastowe in Galicia, Austria. Mr. Kalczynski has gained a brilliant success so far on the journey of life, and a still brighter future awaits him.

EDWARD A. JERNEGAN. Among the leading newspapers in northern Indiana is the Mishawaka Enterprise, edited and published by Edward A. Jernegan. His keenly analytical mind, his readiness in noting the most important points and his strong logical powers have combined to make the journal a leading newspaper of this locality. He was born in Laporte, Indiana, on the 27th of January, 1846. His father, Thomas Jernegan, a native of Edgartown, Massachusetts, was also an old and prominent newspaper man. In 1842 he came to South Bend, where he was for a number of years engaged in a mercantile business, and at that time his brother, Joseph L., was a leading attorney of the city. Purchasing the Mishawaka Tocsin, Mr. Jernegan moved it to South Bend, next to Laporte and ultimately to Michigan City. He was a prominent newspaper man of his time, and was also a public spirited and patriotic citizen. For a period of eighteen years he served as a government employe in the pension department, dying in the harness at Washington, D. C., in 1900, at the age of eighty-four years. His wife, nee Anne M. Clasby, and a native of Nantucket,

Massachusetts, preceded him to the home beyond many years, dying in 1872.

Edward A. Jernegan attended the schools of Michigan City, but ere the completion of his education he enlisted as a drummer boy in the Seventy-third Indiana, Company K. Subsequently, however, he entered the navy, where his father was paymaster, and during the latter part of the war was in Company D, One Hundred and Thirty-eighth Indiana, thus continuing until 1864. In that year he returned home and served in the provost marshal's office until the close of the war. After the struggle ended, the father resumed his newspaper business in Michigan City, and Edward joined him as assistant editor. In 1872 he came to Mishawaka and purchased the Enterprise, which had been established in 1854, and which he has ever since conducted in such a manner as to make it a power for good in this part of the state. The journal gives evidence of the high editorial ability of Mr. Jernegan, whose clear presentation of every question which he treats has borne marked influence upon his constituency. In 1897 he served as a member of the state legislature, while for four years during the Harrison administration, he was postmaster of Mishawaka.

In 1869 he was married to Miss Nannie C. Sherman, a daughter of Dr. M. G. Sherman, of Michigan City, and they have two living children, Mrs. C. A. Ostrom, of Mishawaka, and Ralph, a promising young lawyer of this city. Their eldest son, Mason Sherman, died in 1901. He was a newspaper man of promise, and at the time of his death was serving on the Detroit Free Press. Mr. Jernegan is a member of the Masonic order and of the Grand Army of the Republic, Houghton Post. He has had many difficulties and obstacles to overcome on his way to success, among them being the great fire which swept over Mishawaka in 1872 and completely destroyed the town, proving a great loss to the young editor. His genial temperament, courteous manners and broad minded principles render him a favorite with all, and the circle of his friends is almost coextensive with that of his acquaintances.

HON. ABRAHAM BRICK. Whether the fundamental attributes of success in life are innate, or whether they are quickened by a process of circumstantial development, is impossible to clearly determine; yet the study of a successful life is none the less profitable, as

it is found that in the majority of cases exceptionable ability, supplemented by earnest purpose and close application, forms the real secret of advancement. It is a noticeable fact that the young men are rapidly occupying the foremost places in the financial, professional and political circles. Whether this is due to superior education, or to native ability is a question of dispute; at all events the fact remains that each community numbers among its leaders men who, although young in years, are controlling extensive interests in all fields of endeavor; and in this class is emphatically placed Hon. Abraham Brick, of South Bend.

Hon. Abraham Lincoln Brick is known as a man of high attainments and possessed of that practical ability which has brought him success as a lawyer and a man of varied affairs. His broad influence extends into professional, political and public fields, so that he has become recognized as one of the strongest and most popular men in the state. Born on a farm in Warren township, St. Joseph county, on the 27th of May, 1860, he is descended from Scotch-Irish and English ancestry. His father was a native of New Jersey, but removed to Indiana at an early day, and was there married to Elizabeth Calvert, who had come with her parents from Germantown, Pennsylvania. Their son Abraham received his primary education in the district schools of Warren township, later attended the South Bend grammar and high schools, and was subsequently a student at Yale and Cornell universities. Close application to his studies impaired his health to such an extent that he went to Kansas, where he spent a year on a ranch. With restored strength he returned to Indiana and soon after entered the University of Michigan to prosecute his law studies, graduating there in 1883 and at once began practice at South Bend. As a lawyer he is remarkable for the wide research and provident care with which he prepares his cases. In no instance has his reading ever been confined to the limitations of the questions at issue; it has gone beyond and compassed every contingency, providing both for the expected and unexpected—the latter happening quite as frequently in the courts as out of them. His close and logical grasp of facts and principles, with the law applicable to them, has been another potent factor in his success; while a remarkable clearness of expression which enables him to make others understand not only the salient, but the fine points of his



Walter A. Fink

argument, may be accounted another of his conspicuous accomplishments which go to make up the strength and attraction of his character as a lawyer.

Mr. Brick's public services have been various and noteworthy. He was first brought into official prominence by the able discharge of his duties as prosecuting attorney in the district then comprising the counties of Laporte and St. Joseph. In 1892, he was elected a member of the State Central Committee of the Republican party, of which he has long been a recognized leader in a state which has, at times, been classed as doubtful and pivotal. His labors on the state committee were of such value that he was accorded a place among the leaders of national influence by being sent as a delegate to the presidential convention which met in St. Louis in 1896. But advancement and high standing in the law was his prime ambition, and it was really against his personal inclination that he was nominated and elected as a representative of the Thirteenth congressional district in 1898, receiving a majority of twenty-five hundred votes. He was re-elected in 1900, 1902, 1904 and 1906, being also returned during those years by handsome majorities. As would be expected from his character as a lawyer and a man his legislative labors were faithfully and ably performed and most fruitful of results which redounded to the good of his country. In congress, as in the field of his profession, he has been a hard worker, an effective speaker and a courteous gentleman, and with the progress of his service his constituents are continually placing a higher value upon him as a faithful and practical representative.

On the 11th of November, 1884, Mr. Brick was married to Miss Anna Meyer, a daughter of the late Godfrey E. Meyer, and one daughter has been born to them. Mr. Brick is a member of the Indiana and Commercial Athletic clubs and also holds fraternal relations with the Masons, Knights of Pythias and Elks. Personally, he is of a genial nature and inspires friendship of an unusual strength. Endowed with active, energetic and strong capabilities, he is a worthy representative of that class of comparatively young men who are forging to the front and remaining there.

HON. WALTER A. FUNK. The bulwark of the country is composed of members of the great middle class, who from lowly circumstances, though stress of brave endeavor and inherited energy of sturdy ancestors, rise

to positions of great personal influence and public responsibility. Thus struggling, as it were, from the ground upward, closely surrounded by relatives and old-time friends, their progress is so natural and unobtrusive that jealousies seldom arise to embitter their progress, as is usually the case when standing and authority depend largely on family connections and inheritance. This wide and powerful influence of members of the middle class upon the public affairs of American communities is nowhere more evident than in the domain of the law, and few judges of note have come from wealthy, or so called aristocratic families. A good judge must be a good sympathizer with the people at large, in order to carry into court both the spirit and the letter of the law.

All of the above general remarks may well be applied to the personality and career of Hon. Walter A. Funk, long an active and prominent member of the South Bend bar and for a number of years past circuit judge of St. Joseph county. Born on a farm in Elkhart county, Indiana, on the 18th of December, 1857, his most serious occupation until he attained his majority consisted of hard and faithful work upon the farm of his father, William Funk. But the boy early showed that his ambitions extended beyond the bare performance of his prosaic duties connected with the family homestead, and when only sixteen years of age, he had so advanced in his studies that he was called upon by the township authorities to teach district school. At this profession he did well and saved enough money to warrant him in aiming for a higher education than he could secure at home.

After laying a firm foundation for his professional studies in various educational institutions of Goshen and Valparaiso, Indiana, Judge Funk had the satisfaction of becoming a student in the law department of the University of Michigan, at Ann Arbor, having already enjoyed the benefits of study and tutelage in the offices of Judge Smith, of Casopolis, Michigan, and of Hon. Andrew Anderson, of South Bend. Mainly through his association with the latter, upon his graduation from the state university and the winning of his professional degree, in 1885, Mr. Funk came to South Bend; and he seems from the outset to have been received by its citizens and his fellow practitioners as a stable and most valuable personal addition to the com-

munity and the bar. He was thorough in the preparation of his cases, courteous yet firm in the positions which he assumed as an advocate, clear and concise in his arguments, and underneath all his high qualities as a lawyer could plainly be perceived the warm and common-sense character of the man of broad sympathies. This combination constituted his main strength when he was put forward for the office of circuit judge of St. Joseph county and resulted in his decisive election to that position in 1900. These attributes of legal and personal character also made him an earnest, able and upright judge, bringing him also the popularity which, through the votes of his constituents, called him to the bench in 1906 for a second term of six years. On the bench he is the embodiment of judicial dignity—ever courteous and considerate, and never attempting to win cheap applause at the expense of an inexperienced attorney or an overwrought witness. Of unimpeachable character and of unusual intellectual endowments, with a thorough understanding of the law; patient, urbane and industrious, Judge Funk took to the bench the very highest qualifications for the discharge of his responsible duties. His record as a judge has been in harmony with his career as a lawyer and his character as a man, being distinguished not only by unswerving integrity but by a masterful grasp of every problem which has come before him for solution.

Judge Funk's domestic relations are most harmonious, as befits one of his character and temperament. His wife was formerly Miss Mary E. Harris, who has borne him one child—William Harris. His character thus rounded and softened by the influences of wife, family and home, the Judge is a typical American citizen, vigorously upholding the framework of society both in his public capacity as an able judge and as a founder of that great American unit—the household. His is truly a complete and grand character, subordinating personal ambition to public good, seeking the benefit of others rather than the aggrandizement of self. Endowed by nature with high intellectual qualities, to which have been added the discipline and embellishments of culture, his is a most attractive personality, and in South Bend, where he has so long made his home, he is numbered among the most honored citizens, receiving the respect and regard of all peoples and classes.

HON. GEORGE FORD. For more than a third

of a century Hon. George Ford has been recognized as a distinguished member of the bar of South Bend, Indiana. The city is therefore pleased to claim him as one of her native sons, his birth occurring at No. 422 South Main street on the 11th of January, 1846. His father, Isaac Ford, had come to the city during the preceding year, dying here in 1880, in his sixty-second year. His wife, formerly Emeline Perkins, was born in Oswego county, New York, and survived her husband until 1903, when she passed away at the age of seventy-nine years. For more than sixty years, therefore, the sterling record of the Ford family has been a part of the annals of South Bend.

The local public schools furnished George Ford with the early mental training which he enjoyed, and his professional studies were pursued in the law department of the University of Michigan, from which he was graduated in 1869. In that year he began practice in South Bend, and during the intervening years has secured not only a large and distinctively representative clientele, but established a reputation as a strong and progressive leader of the Democracy. For a number of years after his graduation he was associated in practice with Colonel Norman Eddy and Joseph Henderson. The litigation with which his name has been prominently associated embraces many of the important cases tried in the courts of this circuit, and his powers as an advocate as well as his far-sightedness as a counselor, have been freely acknowledged these many years. His career as a Democratic leader was inaugurated in 1874 by his election to the office of prosecuting attorney of St. Joseph county, and, after a continuous and most meritorious service of ten years in this arduous position, in 1885 he commenced his term in the Forty-ninth congress as a representative of the Thirteenth district. Mr. Ford was a working, useful and practical member of congress, and returned to South Bend with a greatly strengthened and broadened reputation.

In 1885 George Ford was united in marriage to Josephine Oliver, a daughter of James Oliver, the great inventor of the Chilled Plow and one of the most venerable and best beloved citizens of South Bend. In his fraternal relations Mr. Ford is a member of the Masonic order and of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows. He is sociable and popular, possesses a keen intellect and is logi-



Geo. Ford





Charles E. Crockett

cal and liberal in his deductions. Regarded as a citizen, he belongs to that public spirited and useful type of men whose ambitions and desires are centered and directed to those channels through which flow the greatest and most permanent public benefits.

CHARLES M. KRIEGHBAUM. There are few who can more justly claim the proud American title of a self-made man, than Charles M. Krieghbaum, who without any extraordinary family or pecuniary advantages at the commencement of life has battled earnestly and energetically, and by indomitable courage and integrity has achieved both character and influence. By sheer force of will and untiring effort he has worked his way upward. He was born near Plymouth, Marshall county, Indiana, March 13, 1867, a son of Edwin and Mary (Ringer) Krieghbaum, both natives of Ohio. The father, who was born in Stark county, Ohio, came to Indiana when a young man, taking up his abode within the borders of Marshall county, where he was engaged in agricultural pursuits. His death occurred in 1901, when he had reached the age of sixty-three years.

Charles M. Krieghbaum received his elementary education in the country schools of Marshall county, this being supplemented by attendance at the Normal College of Logansport and the normal school at Valparaiso, Indiana. He thereafter taught for two years in Marshall county, and in 1889 became a resident of St. Joseph county, where he also followed the teacher's profession for four years. During this time he had been taking a course in the South Bend Business College, and he also studied law in the office of W. A. Funk, while in 1894 he graduated from the law department of Notre Dame University. In the same year he opened an office in South Bend for the practice of his profession. He is able and well posted in his profession, clear and convincing as a speaker before judge and jury, painstaking and accurate in the preparation of his cases, and conscientiously adheres to the spirit as well as to the letter of the law. He gives his political support to the Democratic party, and although an active worker in its cause he has never desired the honors or emoluments of public office.

In 1896, Mr. Krieghbaum was united in marriage to Miss Lillian Kellar, a daughter of Howard M. and Annie Kellar, of Mishawaka, Indiana, and they have one son, F. Wallace, born May 22, 1898. In his fraternal rela-

tions Mr. Krieghbaum is a member of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows and of the Order of Owls. His friends have the highest appreciation of his many excellent qualities, and his life history furnishes a splendid example of what may be accomplished through determined purpose, laudable ambition and well directed efforts.

CHARLES E. CROCKETT, secretary and treasurer of the Tribune Printing Company, was born in South Bend, August 8, 1876, being a son of the president of the Tribune Company, whose sketch is given elsewhere. Educated in the public schools and graduating from the South Bend High school in 1894, he then entered Wabash College at Crawfordsville, where he was graduated in 1898 with the degree of B. A. He showed his talent and inclination for journalism while a student in college, having been chief editor of "The Wabash" while there. Since leaving college he has been connected with the South Bend Tribune, and became secretary and treasurer of the company. In college his fraternal connections were with the Delta Tau Delta and the Phi Beta Kappa Greek letter societies. He is a member of the First Presbyterian church in South Bend. He married, April 17, 1906, Miss Edna Summers, and they have one child, Elizabeth Ann Crockett.

ED B. REYNOLDS. In the death of Ed B. Reynolds, St. Joseph county lost one of its most valued citizens. His entire life was spent within its borders, and for a number of years he was connected with one of the chief industries of the county, having been vice president of the First National Bank. Many business concerns and moral enterprises, however, owe their excellence and progress largely to his influence. He was in touch with the people, and from a sincere and deep-felt interest in their welfare labored for all that would prove of public benefit until the busy and useful life was ended.

Mr. Reynolds was born in South Bend on the 28th of June, 1859, being a son of Ethan S. and Janette (Briggs) Reynolds, the father having been for many years an honored and respected business man of this city. The public and high schools of South Bend furnished their son with the educational training which fitted him for life's duties, and his first employment was in his father's paper mill, where he remained for fifteen years. The father had been one of the organizers

of the First National Bank of South Bend, of which he was also a director, stockholder and vice president, and at the time of his death his son E. B. took his place therein. He was a keen and reliable business man, an able financier, a sympathetic and kind-hearted man and his loss was deeply felt throughout the community in which he had so long made his home. During his lifetime he had been an extensive traveler, having visited all parts of the United States, also Mexico and Alaska, and traveled all over Europe, the Holy Land and many oriental countries, including China and Japan.

Mr. Reynolds withheld his support from no philanthropic or benevolent movements or enterprises for the public good, and labored earnestly for the betterment of mankind, realizing most fully that financial success, fame or high position count for naught unless supplemented by an upright, honorable character. He was a member of the leading clubs of South Bend and was prominent in fraternal societies. In 1901 he was appointed by Mayor Schuyler Colfax as a member of the board of public works. He passed away October 1, 1906, but in the hearts of his friends are enshrined many pleasant memories of him, and his influence for good will long remain with those who knew him.

FREDERICK A. MILLER. As mentioned in the history of journalism on other pages of this work, the name Miller has been connected with South Bend newspapers for nearly forty years. Alfred B. Miller, the father of the present editor of the Tribune, was born in South Bend, the son of B. F. Miller, one of the pioneers of the city. B. F. Miller was of Scotch-Irish ancestry, a native of Pennsylvania, and after settling in this county was honored by election as one of the early sheriffs. Alfred B. Miller was born, reared and educated in this county. He enlisted at the breaking out of the Civil war and was commissioned second lieutenant of the Twenty-first Indiana Battery, serving with that command through the entire war. On his return from the field he clerked for D. M. Shively and John Brownfield and later entered newspaper work, purchasing an interest in and becoming editor of the St. Joseph Valley Register, founded by the late Vice-President Colfax. In 1872 he and Elmer Crockett founded the South Bend Tribune, the first issue of which appeared March 9 of that year. He continued as editor and as one of the

active heads of this paper until his death, December 10, 1892. His wife was Esther A. Tarbell, a native of Ohio and a daughter of William Tarbell, a pioneer of the county. Mrs. Miller died January 15, 1906.

Frederick A. Miller has been engaged in newspaper work in South Bend for over twenty years. Graduating from the South Bend High school with the class of 1887, on the 3d of July following he began work as a reporter for the Tribune, and since his father's death has been the editor of this flourishing index of affairs and opinion in South Bend. June 8, 1892, Mr. Miller married Miss Flora Dunn, second daughter of B. F. Dunn. (See sketch elsewhere.) Mr. Miller is a member of the Knights of Pythias and the Royal Arcanum.

WILLIAM A. MCINERNY. The law has ever called into its circle of devotees the brightest minds, the most gifted sons of the nation. The most careful analysis, closest reasoning and most logical thought are brought into play, and the lawyer of ability, by reason of his strong intellectuality, rises above the many to become a leader in thought and action. Among the members of the legal profession of St. Joseph county who are rapidly forging to the front may be mentioned William A. McInerny, a native of Cutler, Carroll county, Indiana, born on the 14th of October, 1875, his parents being Matthew and Mary (Barrett) McInerny, both natives of Ireland, the former of County Clare and the latter of Roscommon. The father came to the United States with his parents when a boy, the family home being established in Carroll county, where the son Matthew became a prominent merchant. During the Civil war he served as captain of the Eighty-sixth Indiana Volunteer Infantry, Company H, participating in the entire campaign. In 1889 he removed with his family to South Bend, where he is now well known as a commercial traveler. Mr. and Mrs. McInerny became the parents of five sons and one daughter, four of whom are living in South Bend.

William A. McInerny supplemented the early educational training which he had received in the public schools of Carroll county by attendance at the high school of South Bend, while his legal training was obtained in Notre Dame University, graduating in that institution in 1901. Previous to entering Notre Dame, however, he was for five years employed in the money order department of



Frederick A. Miller.

the South Bend postoffice. Immediately after his graduation he began the practice of his chosen profession in South Bend, where he is now associated in business with his brother, Joseph Walter, the firm of McInerny & McInerny being well known throughout this section of the state. William A. McInerny is also interested in several land companies, is a director and secretary of the South Bend Iron Bed Company, also president of the M. B. Bieger Realty Company, of Mishawaka, and president of the Mishawaka Folding Carriage Company.

In October, 1902, occurred the marriage of Mr. McInerny and Miss Ann Murphy, she being a daughter of Frank J. Murphy, of South Bend. Two children have been born of this union,—Dorothy Agnes, born on the 26th of August, 1903, and Anna Marie, born October 6, 1905. In his fraternal relations Mr. McInerny is a member of the Knights of Columbus, the Modern Woodmen of America, the Elks and the Ancient Order of Hibernians. Throughout the years of his majority he has been a prominent worker in the ranks of the Democratic party, and for a number of years has been a member of the county committee, while in 1902 he was appointed by Mayor E. J. Fogarty as president of the board of public works.

HARRY G. SCHOCK, a member of the firm of Bugbee and Schock, attorneys at law and abstracters, with offices at 122 North Main street, South Bend, is a representative of a family that from an early period has been prominently identified with the history of St. Joseph county. His paternal grandfather, Joseph Schock, located in the county in the '30s, as did also the maternal grandfather, George Replogle, the latter at that time taking up his abode in South Bend. Since that early day the various members of the families have won for the name an enviable distinction by their true worth of character. The parents of Harry G. were James J. and Emma (Replogle) Schock, a native son and daughter of St. Joseph county, and the father is now employed by the Studebaker Manufacturing Company, but the mother is deceased, passing away in 1901, at the age of forty-seven years. Their younger son, James E., resides in South Bend.

Harry G. Schock was born in New Carlisle, St. Joseph county, Indiana, March 8, 1872, but his education was received in the public schools of South Bend, in which he graduated

in 1890. He then entered the literary department of the Michigan University, while later he was a student in the law department of that institution, spending in all six years in that temple of learning. Thus with an excellent training to form the foundations of his future life work he formed a partnership with W. A. Bugbee in the law and abstract business in 1899, and this firm has continued to the present time and has won a distinguished position at the bar of northern Indiana.

In 1904 Mr. Schock was united in marriage to Evalyn, the daughter of W. A. and Evalyn (Badet) Bugbee. She was born in the city of South Bend and after attending its public schools completed her education at Ferry Hall Seminary at Lake Forest, Illinois. Mr. Schock is a musician of note, and during the past twenty years has been connected with the Elbel Band as a cornet player. His political support is given to the Republican party. In his business relations he is thoroughly upright and conscientious, is public spirited and progressive in all his ideas, and has won an enviable position among the younger representatives of the legal profession.

THOMAS M. HOBAN. One of the early families to make a settlement in South Bend is that now worthily represented by the gentleman whose name introduces this review. For many years the Hobans have been identified with the business interests of this city, aiding materially in the development of the resources of their sections and taking an active part in everything tending to promote the welfare and happiness of the majority. Martin Hoban, the father of Thomas M., was a native of Bath, Maine, but when only seven years old was brought by his parents to South Bend, and he became a well known and prominent resident of this city. For many years he was a general contractor, and was also prominent in the public life of his community, having served as the Democratic alderman of the Eighth ward for eight years. His death occurred in 1903, when he had reached the age of fifty-five years. He was thoroughly in touch with the people, and from a sincere and deep-felt interest in their welfare labored for all that would prove of public benefit until the busy and useful life was ended. Mrs. Hoban bore the maiden name of Julia E. Downey, and was a native of Rome, New York.

Thomas M. Hoban, a worthy son of these honored pioneer settlers, was born in South Bend on the 20th day of July, 1878, and to

its public schools he is indebted for the early educational training which he received, while later he became a student in Notre Dame University, from which he was graduated in law in 1899, but in 1900 he took a post graduate course therein. He has spared neither time nor labor in his preparation for the legal profession, and is recognized as a young man of great promise, with a bright future before him.

COURTLAND P. DUCOMB. The man who wins prominence at the bar of America's thriving cities, of which South Bend is one, must have a thorough understanding of the law, a keen perception, logical reasoning, forcible argument, and, above all, habits of painstaking, patient industry. In like manner with all others Courtland P. DuComb started out to win a name and place for himself, and his success has made him one of the leaders of the South Bend bar.

Mr. DuComb was born in Union township, St. Joseph county, Indiana, August 12, 1872, a son of Philip P. and Bertha E. (Wright) DuComb, the former a native of Ohio and the latter of Indiana. During the '50s the father came to St. Joseph county, Indiana, and when the Civil war was inaugurated he enlisted in the Twenty-ninth Indiana Infantry, Company K, in which he served for four years, and after the close of the struggle he resumed the quiet pursuits of a farm life. Subsequently, however, he removed to Lakeville, Indiana, where he engaged in general agricultural pursuits, for awhile. He was then engaged in the general merchandising business but selling out, returned to the farm and remained about fifteen years, when he again entered the general mercantile field, and is still in business there.

Courtland P. DuComb, the second in order of birth of his parents' four sons, received his elementary education in the country schools, and for a number of years thereafter was engaged in teaching in St. Joseph county. While thus engaged he conceived the idea of entering the legal profession, and to perfect himself in that calling he entered the law department of the Indiana State University, from which he graduated in 1895, but prior to entering that institution he had also had a year's preparatory work in DePauw University. After his graduation Mr. DuComb came to South Bend, and has since been engaged in active practice. He enjoys a large clientage, which has connected him with much of the im-

portant litigation heard in the courts of the district for the past few years. His political support is given to the Republican party, and on one occasion he was the candidate of his party for the office of city judge, being defeated by only a small majority, although he ran ahead of his ticket. For four years he served as a deputy prosecuting attorney, and has been engaged in some important county litigation and several noted murder trials. He was appointed to assist the state in the celebrated Koonsman murder trial, and succeeded in convicting the three Koonsman brothers and several others.

In 1896 Mr. DuComb was united in marriage to Miss Clara B. Augustine, a daughter of William Augustine, an old and honored resident of Warren township, St. Joseph county. This union has been blessed with one son, Noel V., who was born on the 15th of October, 1897. In his fraternal relations Mr. DuComb is a member of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, Lodge No. 29, and of other societies. His religious connection is with the Christian church.

BENJAMIN F. SHIVELY. For a number of years a distinguished member of the legal profession, honored and respected in every class of society, Mr. Shively has long been a leader in thought and action in the public life of the state. His name is a familiar one in political and professional circles throughout the northern portion of Indiana, and by reason of his marked intellectual activity and superior ability he is well fitted to aid in upbuilding the policy of the state, to control general interests and form public opinion.

Mr. Shively was born in St. Joseph county, Indiana, March 20, 1857, a son of Rev. Joel and Elizabeth (Penrod) Shively, natives of Pennsylvania who came to St. Joseph county in 1854. Their son Benjamin F. spent the days of his boyhood and youth in attendance at the district schools and in assisting in the work of the home farm, while later he became a student in the Northern Indiana Normal College at Valparaiso. From 1875 until 1880 he was engaged in teaching, and in the latter year came to South Bend and embarked in the newspaper field. Mr. Shively has long been recognized as a leader in the ranks of the Democratic party, and in 1884 he was elected to congress to represent the Thirteenth district, and on the expiration of his term of service, in 1885, he entered the University of Michigan at Ann Arbor, in which he gradu-

ated in the law department in 1886. He was then again elected to congress, and in 1888 and 1890 re-elected, while in 1906 he was nominated for the same position, and although he was defeated by less than three hundred votes he succeeded in reducing a majority at previous elections of over six thousand. While in congress Mr. Shively proved himself one of its most indefatigable members and rendered excellent service to his constituents. While a member of that body he served on banking and currency, Indian affairs and ways and means, and on the expiration of his term he returned to South Bend and has since devoted his time to his large legal practice, having secured a distinctively representative clientele. In 1896 he received the Democratic nomination for governor, and although defeated in the race, he polled more votes by thirty thousand than had ever been cast for governor up to that time. His name was also mentioned for vice-president in 1896, but he absolutely declined to allow it to be put forward, although his ability would enable him to grace any position which he might be called upon to fill. He is a brilliant lawyer, an eloquent speaker, a deep thinker and student of affairs, and it is believed that still higher honors await him.

In 1889, Mr. Shively was married to Miss Laura Jenks, a daughter of the Hon. George A. Jenks, of Brookdale, Pennsylvania, who from 1880 to 1886 was solicitor general of the United States. He has also been for a number of years trustee of Indiana University.

GAYLORD H. CASE, is becoming conspicuously identified with the bar of St. Joseph county. He was born in La Grange county, Indiana, on the 25th day of July, 1878, and was reared on the farm. His father, Zopher Case, for many years a farmer well known in La Grange county, was a native of Ohio, and came to La Grange county and settled there in 1834. Zopher Case was prominently identified with the early history of La Grange county and the state of Indiana. He was also a prominent and influential worker in the Democratic party, and among the people with whom he so long resided he was very popular. Mrs. Zopher Case bore the maiden name of Anna Smith and for many years was a teacher of public schools in La Grange county.

Gaylord H. Case received his preparatory education in the public schools of La Grange county, afterwards attending the Wolcottville

High School. In 1895 he entered St. Mary's Institute, Dayton, Ohio, in which institution he graduated in the scientific department in 1899. In 1899 he entered the Law Department of the University of Michigan, where he graduated in 1902. He was admitted to the bar in the State of Michigan in the same year, and in the spring of 1902 went to North Dakota where he was examined by the Supreme Court of that state and admitted to the bar. He practiced in North Dakota during the summer of 1902, and in the fall of the same year he returned to Indiana, located in South Bend and practiced law in partnership with A. I. Field until the year of 1904. Since 1904 he has practiced by himself. In March, 1907, he was married to Miss Nellie Eshelman, a native of La Grange county, and since that time has lived with his wife and mother in South Bend.

He is a member of the Masonic Lodge, No. 45, F. & A. M., the South Bend Humane Society and Crusade Lodge of the Knights of Pythias, and is well known throughout the city.

WILBERT WARD, a lawyer of South Bend in the vigorous prime of early middle life, has achieved high standing in his profession and is also an influential Republican. He has won a most substantial reputation as both advocate and counselor, this dual achievement implying and demanding qualities of eloquence and brilliancy as well as of broad knowledge of the law and solid common sense. All of these Mr. Ward possesses; hence his continuous progress and present standing.

Wilbert Ward is a native of St. Joseph county, his birth occurring April 29, 1861, and his parents were George and Jane (Cobb) Ward, both natives of the county and long residents of Clay township. The paternal grandfather, George Ward, settled in this region about 1837, and resided there until his death in the spring of 1885. The son of George Ward and father of Wilbert, also George by name, is a farmer by occupation, as he always has been, and by his wife (nee Jane Cobb) became the father of the following children: Wilbert, Albert, Cora, the wife of Richard Hicks; Mertie and Grace.

Wilbert Ward, the eldest child of the above named family, attended the public and high schools of Mishawaka until he was thirteen years of age, when he removed on to a farm which his father had purchased and was also

trained to the useful and health-giving labors of agriculture. His industry and intelligent application at school enabled him to enter the ranks of pedagogy at the early age of seventeen, his services embracing Dutch Island School of Penn township and Stover school of Clay township. The latter was his home district and he had among his pupils his own brothers and sisters. In the fall of 1880 he matriculated at De Pauw University, and the succeeding winter taught a term of school in Portage township, after which he returned to the university and completed his collegiate studies in June, 1884. He was principal of the Clayton High School of Hendricks county in the winter of 1884-5, and in the following summer commenced the study of the law in the office of Williamson & Daggy of Greencastle, Indiana. The next winter he completed his law course at De Pauw University, and almost immediately afterward commenced his duties as principal of the high school at Anderson, Indiana, and continued in that position until June, 1888.

From the above mentioned date, Mr. Ward has been a resident and a progressive practicing attorney of South Bend, and is firmly placed among the leading lawyers of the St. Joseph county bar. He has also been prominently identified with the internal revenue service of his district, and has served with credit as a state representative.

Mr. Ward's wife was formerly Miss Alice Chearhart, of Anderson, Indiana, by whom he has had one child, Wilbert. The parents are both members of the Methodist Episcopal church. Aside from his general practice Mr. Ward has long been the attorney of the Workingmen's Loan Association. His strict principles of personal honor, as well as his professional ability, make him an especially prominent and valuable factor in the stability and progress of all such associations.

VITUS GEORGE JONES. During the four years which marks the period of Mr. Jones' professional career he has met with gratifying success, and is known as a man of high attainments and practical ability as a lawyer. He was born on a farm in Cass county, Michigan, June 15, 1879, a son of Thomas P. Jones, a native of Ireland. When but seven years of age, however, the father was brought by his parents to the United States, the family home being established in Michigan. Mr. Jones became very well known for his literary ability, and for many years taught school in Willow

Springs, Illinois, and was also connected with the Englewood Normal School. He then embarked in business in Chicago, but his love for a country life impelled him to return to Michigan and engage in farming, and he still makes his home in that state and carries on his agricultural pursuits. He has been prominent in public life as well as in business circles, and is leaving the impress of his individuality for good upon many lines of progress and advancement in his community. He married Catherine Callinane, who was born in Michigan of Irish parents.

Their son, Vitus G. Jones, received the rudiments of his excellent education in the country schools of Michigan, and in 1894 he entered Notre Dame University, where he studied English and law, remaining there for nine years and receiving the degrees of LL. B. and Litt. B. He was graduated in law in 1903 and immediately opened an office for the practice of his profession in South Bend, being associated with F. M. Jackson for one and a half years, since which time he has remained alone. In January, 1905, he was appointed by the county commissioners as a justice of the peace. The following year, 1906, he formed a partnership with D. D. Bates, which continued until the firm of Howell, Bates, Elliott & Jones was formed in May, 1907, of which firm he is a member. As a lawyer Mr. Jones has won rank among the leading members of the bar of Indiana, and in addition to his large legal practice he is also interested in the real estate business with H. A. Tohulka, the latter conducting that part of the business.

Mr. Jones was married on the 5th of November, 1903, to Miss Mary Morley, daughter of James Morley, of South Bend. In his fraternal relations, Mr. Jones is a member of the Knights of Columbus, the Knights of Equity and the Maccabees. He gives his political support to the Republican party, and is accorded a prominent position at the Indiana bar.

FRANK H. DUNNAHOO. One of the rising young men of South Bend is Frank H. Dunnahoo, a representative of the bar of St. Joseph county. He is conscientious, prompt and thoroughly reliable, and has won the praise and regard of all with whom he has had dealings. He is a native son of this county, his birth having occurred on the 5th of April, 1873. His father, Griffin S. Dunnahoo, has been for many years a prominent factor in

the agricultural interests of St. Joseph county. Reliability in all trade transactions, loyalty to all duties of citizenship, fidelity in the discharge of every trust reposed in him, these are his chief characteristics, and through the passing years they have gained for him the unqualified confidence and respect of his fellow townsmen.

The public schools of St. Joseph county furnished Frank H. Dunnahoo with his elementary educational training, while his professional studies were pursued in the University of Michigan, from which he graduated in the law department in 1894, and in the same year he opened an office in South Bend for the practice of his profession. During his first six years in practice he was associated with the Hon. A. L. Brick, but during the past six years he has been alone. He is a rising young man in the profession, popular and respected by all with whom he has had dealings, and his prestige at the bar of St. Joseph county stands in evidence of his ability and likewise serves as a voucher for intrinsic worth of character. He gives his political allegiance to the Democratic party, and has for a number of years acceptably filled the office of city attorney of South Bend. In his social relations he is a member of the Indiana Club, the Elks and the Knights of Pythias.

DEMAS D. BATES. Honored and respected by all, Demas D. Bates has been for a number of years prominently connected with the bar of St. Joseph county, while during this time he has also been identified with its public affairs. Throughout the entire period of his residence here he has been actively interested in all measures advanced for the good of the people, and has performed his full share in the development and improvement of the city.

Mr. Bates was born near Liberty, St. Joseph county, Indiana, November 4, 1865, a son of Calvin Bates, a farmer by occupation. The son spent the period of his boyhood and youth on his father's farm and in attendance at the district school near his home, and thereafter for nine years he was a member of the teacher's profession. While thus engaged he was also at intervals a student in the Northern Indiana Normal College at Valparaiso, Indiana, from which he was graduated in the law department in May, 1893, and in the same year he came to South Bend and opened an office for the practice of his chosen profession. He continued alone in his practice until September, 1899, when he formed a partnership

with Hon. A. L. Brick, the firm being known as Brick & Bates. In 1898, Mr. Bates accepted the position of referee in bankruptcy for the Thirteenth district, which was tendered him by Judge Baker of the United States District Court, but this position he resigned in 1899 to enter a partnership with Mr. Brick. In December, 1899, Mr. Bates was the choice of his fellow citizens for the office of county attorney, and held this position until 1906, when he resigned to become postmaster of South Bend. He took charge of the postoffice April 1, 1906, and during the short period he held the office he obtained a business-like grasp of the situation which caused him to introduce methods and outline a policy that greatly increased the efficiency of the office.

In April, 1907, Mr. Bates found it necessary to relinquish the office of postmaster on account of pressure of other opportunities and his desire to accept them. He resigned the office of postmaster to take effect June 30, 1907, and entered into a law partnership with Hon. M. L. Howell, Hon. Gilbert A. Elliott, and Vitus G. Jones under the firm name of Howell, Bates, Elliott, & Jones. The firm holds first rank with those of the central west, and occupies offices in the American Building, which are fitted up in the most modern style.

Mr. Bates has ever taken an active interest in politics as a Republican, and in the 1898 campaign, he was a member of the Republican Central Committee for the Thirteenth district, while in 1900 and 1902 he was treasurer of the Central Committee. He is a bright and skillful lawyer, and has been a faithful public servant, and is enjoying the confidence of all with whom he has business or private relations.

HON. GILBERT A. ELLIOTT. The name of Gilbert A. Elliott figures conspicuously upon the legislative page of the history of Indiana. An enumeration of the men of the present generation who have won public recognition for themselves and at the same time have honored the county and the state to which they belong, would be incomplete without prominent reference to the one whose name introduces this review. He is serving his second term as a member of the state legislature, where he has ever manifested deep interest in those questions which are to the statesman, as to the man of affairs, of vital importance to the commonwealth and the nation. While he has not been without the personal ambition

which is the spur of energy and without which little would be accomplished in life, his patriotic attachment to his country is even greater, and he has ever placed her good before self-aggrandizement. Thus over his public career there falls no shadow of wrong, and, while he has awakened envy and criticism such as always come to the man who figures prominently before the public, the citizens who know him best have manifested their confidence in his worth and work by re-electing him to represent them in the council chambers of the state.

Mr. Elliott is a splendid example of the brilliant yet enduring stock of English-Irish ancestry transplanted to American soil and subjected to the broadening influences of western education and training. He has left nothing to chance, and taken nothing for granted except that he could never expect to reach a given point in his career without fighting obstacles and struggling over difficulties, continuously and persistently. The decided ground which he has thus gained, although of unusual extent for one of his years, has been held with determination, but, from the very nature of his character, with no indication of overweening pride. He is a native of South Bend, born on the 11th of October, 1879, a son of Gilbert L. and Anna (McElroy) Elliott, the latter being born in Ireland. The paternal grandfather was a captain in the English army, stationed in India, where the father of Gilbert A. was born. The family afterward removed to Canada, and in 1870, after remaining there for a number of years, come to South Bend. The father, Gilbert L. Elliott, died in this city in 1893.

Gilbert A. Elliott has spent his entire life in the city of his nativity, is indebted to its public schools for his early literary training and is a graduate of its high school, class of 1898. Subsequently he pursued a higher course in the University of Michigan, and in 1903 graduated from the law department of that institution. After his admission to the bar Mr. Elliott entered the office of Wilbert Ward, of South Bend, but in 1904 began the practice of his chosen profession alone. He early took an interest in public questions and as they were discussed and manipulated mainly through political parties he naturally drifted into politics. As it is quite foreign to his nature to take any but an active part in anything which occupies his attention, he soon became recognized as a remarkably clear-

headed and influential Republican, and after his admission to the bar his old friends at once saw that he would make a very useful legislator. In 1904, therefore, before he had fairly entered practice, he was elected to the legislature from his home city, and so fulfilled the public expectations as to his faithfulness and ability that he was re-elected in 1906.

In his fraternal relations Mr. Elliott is identified with the Masonic order, Lodge No. 294, and the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks, and socially is a member of the Commercial-Athletic Club. While unassuming and companionable, he is at the same time a well read and substantial lawyer and a practical man of affairs, straightforward and determined. At an age when most young men are unknown to but a very limited circle, Mr. Elliott has achieved a firm public standing, and his merits are freely recognized, not only at home, but in other sections of the state. He is a fine type of the progressive American citizen—enterprising in business, deeply interested in the current political situation, and, whatever his position, defending it with the same zeal with which he fosters his private affairs. In every sense he is intensely, yet broadly, American.

GEORGE E. CLARKE. The history of a city, county or state, as well as that of a nation, is chiefly the chronicle of the lives and deeds of those who have conferred honor and dignity upon society. The world judges the character of a community by that of its representative citizens, and yields its tribute of admiration and respect for the genius, learning, labor or virtue of those whose work and actions constitute the record of a state's prosperity and pride; and it is in the character, as exemplified in probity and benevolence, kindly virtues and integrity in the affairs of life, that we are afforded worthy examples of emulation and valuable lessons of incentive.

Among the men whose impress of individuality is felt upon the city of South Bend, Indiana, whose efforts have promoted its welfare and progress, none are more worthy of mention in the volume than George Edmond Clarke, whose success at the bar classes him among the foremost members of the legal fraternity of the state of Indiana, and who has directed his efforts along lines demanding strong mentality and keen discernment that continued progression has followed as a logical sequence. As an exponent of the law he has manifested a strength that shows comprehen-

sive familiarity with the great judicial principles involved; and yet his powers have not so concentrated along one line of thought as to produce the abnormal development that so often is misconstrued as genius. On the contrary, his is an evenly balanced mind that has found scope for activity in literary, fraternal and social circles. Nor has he been remiss in that citizenship which takes cognizance of the great questions affecting the welfare of the country, and lends hearty co-operation to the movements for municipal improvement and advancement.

George E. Clarke has been practicing law at South Bend since 1890. In recognition of his legal ability and sterling worth as a citizen, the people of the county elected him twice to the office of prosecuting attorney. In this office he added numerous laurels to his success in criminal law. Though an active member of the St. Joseph county bar, Mr. Clarke is, perhaps, best known to the younger generation of lawyers, in this county and elsewhere, as a lecturer on legal subjects. He has taught in the law department of Notre Dame University and is a well known lecturer on historical and legal subjects. At a recent meeting of the State Bar Association at Indianapolis, he delivered an address which was widely and favorably commented upon and which gave him general recognition as one of the able public speakers of the west. When the American Bar association met in Saratoga, New York, he was one of the three delegates from Indiana, and was elected by his fellow delegates as a member of the council for the state.

A man of exceptional attainments in various fields of effort, Mr. Clarke has had a varied career, though his endeavors have been applied in one general direction ever since he attained manhood. Born in New Orleans, Louisiana, May 8, 1860, he was the son of a railroad and steamboat official whose home was at that place. Both parents, Matthew and Ellen Clarke, were natives of Ireland. He is a graduate of the public schools. During his earlier years he had experience in various capacities, at one time being private secretary of the president of the M. & O. railroad and later a newspaper reporter. For sometime he was in the employ of the Studebaker Brothers of South Bend. He soon gained the prestige that comes through the recognition of ability, and, moreover, as a young man with a reputation to make, he

displayed the unremitting industry and energy without which success in any walk of life is impossible. His college training and experience were received in several of the foremost schools of the country, namely, St. Vincent's College, Cornell University, the University of Michigan and Notre Dame University. He thoroughly informed himself concerning great judicial principles involved and his preparation of cases has always been most thorough and exhaustive. Notre Dame University has conferred upon him the degree of LL.B., B.A. and M.A. The University of Michigan made him a Master of Laws.

He is one of the best known officials of the order of Knights of Columbus of Indiana, being a district deputy, and in the interests of this order, as well as a lawyer, he is known outside of the state, where he has conferred the degree of the order and has lectured in its interests. He is also a member of the Indiana State Bar and the American Bar Associations. He is an active member of the Catholic church.

Mr. Clarke is an influential Republican and has advocated the doctrines of the party from the platform in many campaigns, setting forth the real issues before the people in a concise, logical and forcible manner that carries conviction to the minds of his auditors. He was honored by being appointed a member of the reception committee to receive Vice-President Fairbanks in Chicago in March, 1907.

Mr. Clarke married in 1887, Miss Mamia Giddings. At her death she left two children. His present wife was Miss Mary Vanderhoof, of South Bend, Indiana.

THOMAS W. SLICK. The law has ever called into the circles of its devotees the brightest minds, the most gifted sons of the nation. The keen intellect is sharpened by its clash with others as brilliant, and gains thereby an added strength and power. A prominent representative of the bar of St. Joseph county is Thomas W. Slick, who is a native son of South Bend, born on the 5th of July, 1869. His father, Thomas J. Slick, is a native of Ohio, but came to St. Joseph county, Indiana, in the early '50s, when a young man, and was thereafter engaged in business in South Bend for a number of years. In 1876, however, he took up his abode upon a farm, and from that time until 1886 was actively engaged in agricultural pursuits, but for a number of years

past he has been prominently engaged in the laundry business in this city. His life has been one of untiring activity, and he is now numbered among the honored pioneers who aided in laying the foundation on which to erect the superstructure of St. Joseph county's present prosperity and progress. His wife bore the maiden name of Laura Ann Whitten, she being a daughter of President Whitten, of South Bend.

Thomas W. Slick, whose name introduces this review, received his early educational training in the public schools of South Bend, graduating from its high school in 1889, and he thereafter taught school for two years. On the expiration of that period he entered upon the study of the profession which he had determined to make his life work, and in 1893 graduated in law and literature at the Michigan University at Ann Arbor. His preparation for the bar was thorough and comprehensive, and he was therefore ably fitted to open an office in South Bend and engage actively in practice. During the present year his brother was also admitted to the bar and has been taken into partnership. Throughout the period of his majority Mr. Slick has been a zealous and efficient worker in the Republican party, and for four years he served as prosecuting attorney.

The marriage of Mr. Slick was celebrated in 1894, when Mollie G. Falknor, of Covington, Ohio, became his wife, and they now have two sons, Glenn, born July 9, 1895, and Ralph, born September 29, 1896. In his fraternal relations Mr. Slick is a member of the Masonic order, lodge No. 294, of which he is a past master, and also a member of the Chapter and Knights Templar. Mr. Slick is accorded a prominent position at the Indiana bar, and his professional career is an honor to the district which has honored him.

JONATHAN P. CREED. The name of Jonathan P. Creed is inseparably associated with the history of jurisprudence in northern Indiana. He has not looked to public or official life for advancement, but has found it in the line of his chosen profession, wherein he has manifested ability of a superior order, and in the faithful performance of each day's duties in accordance with the principles of the loftiest and most noble manhood.

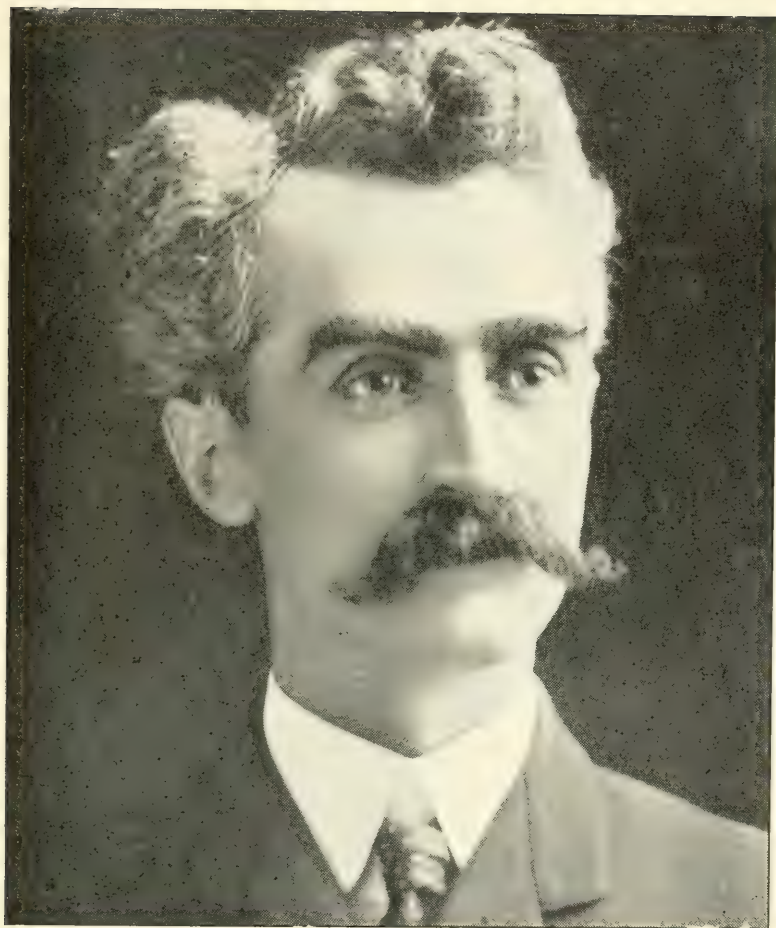
Mr. Creed was born in Benton, Yates county, New York, on the 2d of December, 1844, his father, William H. Creed, being a well known contractor and builder of that

city. During his early manhood the son Jonathan attended Genesee Wesleyan Seminary at Lima, New York, and at the age of seventeen years he offered his services to the Union cause in her efforts to overthrow the South, enlisting in the One Hundred and Twenty-sixth New York Volunteer Infantry, and was sent to the front. His regiment was attached to the Army of the Potomac, being a part of the Second Army Corps commanded by General W. S. Hancock. The One Hundred and Twenty-sixth was one of the famous "three hundred fighting regiments," and young Jonathan saw much arduous service, as his command took part in all the battles and skirmishes in which the Army of the Potomac participated. On the 4th of July, 1863, at Gettysburg, he was shot through the side and right arm. He was a brave and fearless soldier and suffered many hardships and privations for his country's cause.

The year 1868 witnessed the arrival of Mr. Creed in South Bend, where he began the study of law in the office of J. B. Arnold, with whom he afterwards formed a partnership. In 1881 he began the practice of law alone, but since 1897 he has had associated with him his daughter, Miss Alice M. Creed, who is a graduate of the South Bend high school in the class of 1892. She pursued her law studies at the University of Indianapolis, graduating in 1897, and was admitted to practice before the supreme court of Indiana. Her mother, nee Lucretia Miller, is a daughter of Solomon Miller, of South Bend. Mr. Creed is a member of Auten Post, No. 8, G. A. R., of which he served as commander for three years. For many years he has been accorded a prominent position at the Indiana bar, and he and his popular and gifted daughter form a strong combination.

FRANCIS E. LAMBERT. Many years have passed and gone since the family to which this well known lawyer belongs became identified with St. Joseph county, and its various members have won for the name an enviable distinction by their intelligence and worth. This high reputation is in no way diminished in this generation, and Francis E. Lambert, who is numbered among the leading members of the bar in St. Joseph county, displays in a marked degree the admirable characteristics which the name suggests.

A native son of this county, Mr. Lambert was born on a farm on the 4th of June.



J. E. Lambert.

1860, a son of Oliver C. and Ellen (McMullen) Lambert, the former a native of Virginia, and the latter of Henry county, Indiana, born November 27, 1825. In their family were ten children, seven sons and three daughters, of whom five are now living. The father was born in Frederick county, Virginia, in 1818, and as early as 1835 cast in his lot with the early pioneers of the Hoosier State. For many years after his arrival he conducted a cooper shop in South Bend, and in 1853 purchased the farm in Warren township on which his remaining days were spent, passing away in 1872, when one more name was added to the list of honored dead whose earthly record closed with the words, "Well done."

Francis E. Lambert obtained his early educational training in the schools of old St. Joseph county, this being later supplemented by attendance at the Northern Indiana Normal College at Valparaiso, Indiana, from which he graduated with the class of 1884. For twelve years thereafter he was numbered among the prominent and efficient teachers of the county, and was also connected with the South Bend Commercial College as principal of the business department. During all this time his ambitions had been to become a lawyer, and as a means to that end he pursued a course in the law department of the Valparaiso College. After his admission to the bar in 1891 he immediately began the practice of his chosen profession in South Bend, and for a number of years thereafter was in partnership with F. M. Jackson, but is now alone. He is recognized as a man of exceptional attainments and mental culture, and his success has made him one of the leaders of the South Bend bar. He advocates the principles of the Republican party, and for two terms, 1894-1898, was a member of the state legislature. Prior to that time St. Joseph and Laporte counties formed one judicial district, and during his term in office Mr. Lambert introduced and had passed a bill making this county the circuit. He was also appointed referee in bankruptcy in 1898, and is now filling that position.

On the 12th of February, 1904, Mr. Lambert was united in marriage to Miss Blanche Gee, a native of Oshkosh, Wisconsin. His first marriage, however, was celebrated in 1891, when Mary E. Moomaw, of South Bend, became his wife. One daughter, Mildred, was born of this union on the 13th of July,

1893. In his fraternal relations Mr. Lambert is a member of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows and the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks.

WILL G. CRABILL was born in Wabash, Indiana, September 22, 1869. He came of sturdy Hoosier parentage, his grandfather, Michael R. Crabill, who died at Wabash in November, 1906, having been one of the pioneers of Wabash county and a prominent factor in its history. He held many offices of public trust, and had the distinction of being the first Democratic mayor ever elected in the city of Wabash, and that in the face of a large political majority. Charles B., eldest son of Michael R. Crabill, and father of W. G. Crabill, is a veteran of the Civil War. He married Julia Ann Guin, a native of Howard county, Indiana, in 1866. He removed to South Bend with his family in 1882 and entered the employ of the Studebaker Brothers' Manufacturing Company as lumber buyer and inspector.

Will G. Crabill at once entered the public schools of South Bend and graduated from the high school in 1888. At this time he received his first public recognition, his high standing entitling him to the only honor then in the gift of the high school,—a scholarship to Wabash College. Immediately after his graduation he entered the employ of Hon. Andrew Anderson, the leading lawyer of the St. Joseph county bar, of South Bend, Indiana, and began the study of law. In 1890 and 1891 he took a special course in law at the University of Michigan. Returning he re-entered the office of Mr. Anderson, who was then associated with James DuShane, and in the same year was admitted to the bar.

Mr. Anderson was doing an excellent class of business and so much of it that he was working day and night. So the boy did not spend much time in cutting his legal teeth on the rubber ring of trivial business that usually falls to the infant lawyer, but was put to the bone of real work. He was alert and self-reliant, and depended not upon luck, but upon studious and thorough preparation to win his cases, and he rapidly developed a precocious ability to "deliver the goods."

In the year 1893 he married Laura C. Jones. They have two daughters. In 1897 he became a member of the firm, which then read Anderson, DuShane & Crabill. In 1906 Mr. DuShane, who had devoted his time ex-

clusively to patent business, formally retired from the firm. The Hon. Samuel Parker, formerly of Marshall county, came to South Bend and became associated with Mr. Anderson and Mr. Crabill, the firm style now being Anderson, Parker & Crabill. Mr. Anderson has reached the contemplative, philosophic age, and has withdrawn from active practice, willing, as he says, to "let the boys do the work." This is what Mr. Crabill has always been doing. How well he is doing it the records of St. Joseph county show. He is helping make the current history of the county and is bearing the brunt of a large number of its most important legal battles. He and his firm represent large corporate interests, being attorneys for the Grand Trunk Western Railway Company, Studebaker Brothers' Manufacturing Company, St. Joseph County Savings Bank, Vandalia Railroad Company, and many concerns less powerful, but have never turned a deaf ear to the impecunious client with a meritorious case.

Mr. Crabill has been too deeply engrossed in business and study to attain any great social prominence. He lives in a quiet, unpretentious way. He is affiliated with a number of fraternal organizations, but is content with the position of lay member in most of them. In Masonic circles he is well known, having held successive posts of honor, culminating with the office of Eminent Commander of South Bend Commandery No. 13, Knights Templar.

He has a host of friends. He is still young, his practice is clean, his methods are vigorous and straightforward, and his ideals are high. He has a future more brilliant than his past.

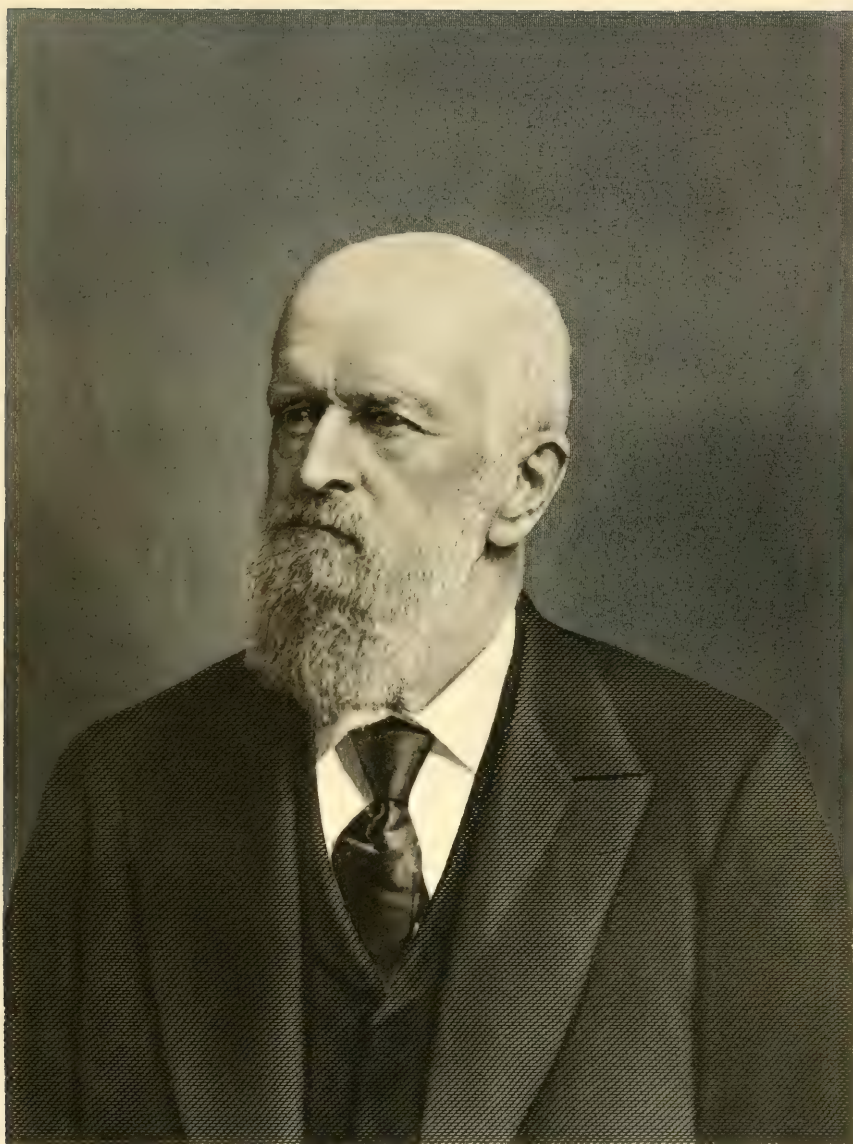
HON. LUCIUS HUBBARD. Occupying a high place among the leading law practitioners of St. Joseph county may be found the name of Hon. Lucius Hubbard. His entire life has been passed in the county, for his birth occurred within its borders in Olive township on the 7th of January, 1844. His parents, Ransom and Mariette (Whitlock) Hubbard, were natives respectively of Oneida and Delaware counties, New York. As early as 1835 the paternal grandfather of our subject, Jonathan Hubbard, came from Oneida county and settled within the borders of Olive township, St. Joseph county, Indiana, where he was engaged in agricultural pursuits. The life history of Ransom Hubbard

was closely identified with the history of St. Joseph county, which was his home for many years, and through all that period he was closely allied with its interests and up-building. He, too, devoted his time to agricultural pursuits, and was of the highest type of business man. In his family were three sons, one of whom, Haven, now resides on the old homestead which has been in the possession of the family for three generations.

When fifteen years of age Lucius Hubbard, whose name introduces this review, entered Notre Dame University, where he received an excellent literary education, while his legal training was obtained in the University of Michigan at Ann Arbor, in which he graduated with the class of 1866. In the same year he began the practice of law in South Bend, where he has ever since been accorded a prominent position at the bar, his professional career being an honor to the district which has honored him. His superior ability has won him marked success in public life, and from 1871 until 1873 he served as a state senator, while from 1894 until 1900 he was circuit judge. Professional eminence is an indication of individual merit, for in professional life advancement cannot depend upon outside influences or the aid of wealthy friends; it comes as the reward of earnest, persistent labor and the exercise of natural talents, and for many years Judge Hubbard has been accorded a leading place at the Indiana bar.

The marriage of Judge Hubbard was celebrated in 1869, when Miss Mattie O. Davis, a daughter of Joshua Davis of St. Joseph county, became his wife. One son has been born to them, Arthur, a bright young lawyer who is in partnership with his father. He also graduated from the University of Michigan and from Harvard law school. In his fraternal relations the judge is a member of the Masonic order of St. Joseph county.

ANDREW ANDERSON. There is no nationality more honored in the United States or which has been of more practical strength, value and utility than the Scotch. Intensely honorable, and ever having a clear comprehension of the ethics of life the Scotch have wielded a wide influence, and this service cannot but be held in high estimation by those who appreciate true worth and true advancement. Although a native of Whitehall, Washington county, New York, born October 6, 1830, Mr. Anderson is a descendant



Andrew Anderson

of Scotland, for his father, Andrew Anderson, was a native of Dundee of that country, born in 1779. When twenty-three years of age he came to the United States, taking up his abode in Washington county, New York, where he was engaged in mercantile pursuits. His death occurred in 1870. He married Lucinda Goodrich, of an old New England family.

Andrew Anderson, Jr., attended Union College of Schenectady, New York, and graduated from the Albany Law School in 1856. He at once came to South Bend, and on the 1st of January, 1856, opened a law office in this city, where he has since been engaged in active practice. He enjoys a large clientage, which has connected him with much of the important litigation heard in the courts of the district for many years, while for a long period he has also been the lecturer on law at Notre Dame University. He is a dean of the St. Joseph county bar, a forceful speaker before judge and jury and is a man of the most sterling qualities of heart and mind. He is a true friend and an honorable opponent. For a number of years Mr. Anderson was in partnership with Thomas S. Stanfield, and he is now a member of the firm of Anderson, Parker & Crabill. His name also stands conspicuously forth on the pages of Indiana's political history, and in 1862 he served as a member of the legislature. He was also the first man in St. Joseph county to offer his services to his country during the Civil war, becoming a member of Company I, Ninth Indiana Volunteer Infantry, in which he served for three months.

In 1857 Mr. Anderson was married to Miss Mary Chapin, a daughter of Horatio Chapin, a banker and an honored early settler of South Bend. Her death occurred in 1905, leaving two daughters, Mrs. Willis Putnam, of Massachusetts, and Emma, the wife of James DuShane, of South Bend. Mr. Anderson continues his connection with his old army comrades by his membership in the Grand Army of the Republic. He is independent in his political affiliations, and religiously is a member of the Presbyterian church.

JOHN W. KITCH, a substantial and progressive lawyer of South Bend, residing at No. 906 East Dayton street, is a native of Indiana, born in Marshall county, June 8, 1866. Of his parents, Martin Van Buren and Amanda M. (Lehr) Kitch, his father was for

many years engaged in his native county as a lumberman and farmer. He was proprietor of a saw mill, and a man of substance and considerable prominence. The mother was born in Harris township, in the extreme northeastern part of St. Joseph county, and her father was one of the first to take up land in that section. Samuel Lehr became a settler of Harris township in the early thirties, and until his death was a well known pioneer in the locality named.

Of the six children born to Mr. and Mrs. Martin V. Kitch two died in infancy, and John W. is the oldest of the five sons. His early education was obtained in the district schools of Marshall county, and he afterward became a student in Valparaiso University, in which he pursued both scientific and classical courses. His first intention was to enter the educational field and cultivate it permanently, and, judged by the progress he made in his early manhood, he would have acquired eminence there. After graduating from the Valparaiso University, he located in Holland, Michigan, where for two years he held the position of principal of the high school. Subsequently he was an incumbent of the same position at Adair and Coon Rapids, both in Iowa. While thus engaged at the former place he commenced the study of the law in an attorney's office.

Having been admitted to the practice of his profession, in 1898 Mr. Kitch opened an office for practice at Bremen, Indiana, and engaged in professional labors at that place for three years. Early in 1901 he located at South Bend, and, with the exception of two years, when he was connected with the Lindon School, he has devoted himself to his chosen calling. He now has a profitable and high-grade practice, and is recognized as a leading lawyer and a valuable citizen.

On September 12, 1890, Mr. Kitch was married to Miss Ida Simpson, the ceremony occurring at the home of her parents in Fowler, Indiana. Mrs. Kitch is a native of Tippecanoe county, that state, and she was raised to useful womanhood in the locality of her birth. Her father, Jeremiah Simpson, was long the foreman for Moses Fowler, a millionaire farmer of that county. Mr. and Mrs. John W. Kitch have two children—Lorene and Donnell. Politically Mr. Kitch is a Democrat, and is an active and effective party worker. His fraternal connections are with

the Masons and Odd Fellows, in whose ranks he is a progressive member.

CYRUS E. PATTEE. During the past eight years Cyrus E. Pattee has been engaged in the practice of law in St. Joseph county. He is able and well posted in his profession, clear and convincing as a speaker before judge and jury, painstaking and accurate in the preparation of his cases, and conscientiously adheres to the spirit as well as the letter of the law. He was born in Kankakee county, Illinois on the 25th of February, 1870, a son of Cyrus and Nancy E. (Fleming) Pattee, the former a native of the state of New York and the latter of LaGrange, Indiana. In the year 1845 the father established his home in Illinois, where both he and his wife are still living, enjoying the comforts which many years of earnest and persistent labor have brought to them.

The elementary educational training of Cyrus E. Pattee was received in his native county of Kankakee, after which he completed the scientific course in the Northern Indiana Normal College at Valparaiso, Indiana, graduating with the class of 1893. For one year thereafter he was engaged in the study of law in the University of Michigan at Ann Arbor, and in 1898 graduated from the law department of the University of Colorado, at Boulder, that state. In the same year he began the practice of his chosen profession in South Bend, remaining alone until 1901, when he formed the partnership with Miller Guy which still exists, and the firm of Guy & Pattee has gained a high reputation throughout St. Joseph county. Mr. Pattee gives his political support to the Republican party, and was its nominee for the office of prosecuting attorney in 1906. His first political work was in the Blaine campaign, when he was a member of the School Boys' Marching Club of Yellowhead township, Kankakee county, Illinois. He is an indefatigable and earnest worker, and he is proficient in every department of the law. Before taking up the practice of the law he also attained distinction in educational fields, having been principal of the Grant Park high school of Grant Park, Illinois.

Mr. Pattee married Miss Elizabeth Miller Creed, a daughter of J. P. Creed, whose history appears elsewhere in this volume. This union has been blessed with two children: Edwin John, born December 13, 1902, and Robert Stuart, born in May, 1905.

MILLER GUY, a prominent attorney of South Bend, Indiana, and well known throughout this section of the state among the younger representatives of the bar, was born in Washington county, Pennsylvania, on the 13th of December, 1870. His parents, S. L. and Agnes A. (Miller) Guy, were natives respectively of Washington county, Pennsylvania, and Brook county, West Virginia. The father removed to Kansas in 1887, where he was engaged in farming and stock-raising, and there his life's labors were ended in death in 1896.

Miller Guy attended the public schools of his native county and also Bethany College, West Virginia, in which he was graduated in 1889 with the degree of B. A. He also graduated in law from the University of Michigan in 1895, and after working for one year in Ohio, he came to South Bend, arriving here on the 1st of November, 1896, and from that time until April, 1901, he practiced alone, but then formed a partnership with C. E. Pattee, the name of Guy & Pattee being well known in the northern portion of Indiana. Mr. Guy has won prominence at the bar of South Bend, and has been connected with much important litigation, while at the same time he has made a specialty of drainage law, and is looked upon as an authority on that particular branch on account of the success which has attended his efforts in its practice. His activity in political lines has connected him with much campaign work, and he is recognized as a Republican leader in this section of the state.

Mr. Guy is also a prominent worker in the Young Men's Christian Association, having done much valuable and voluntary work for the organization, and was president of the board of directors for two years, also chairman of the executive committee and a member of the building committee.

WLADYSLAW ALEX GRZESK, a prominent attorney of South Bend, is known as a man of high attainments and practical ability as a lawyer. He was born in Portage township, St. Joseph county, Indiana, June 4, 1880, a son of Thomas and Anthony Grzesk, both natives of Poland, but who came to this country in 1873 and located in South Bend. In 1885 they took up their abode on an eighty acre farm ten miles west of this city, their first home being a little log cabin, and on this old home farm the father still resides, but the mother died on the 7th of June, 1906. In



Geo. G. Feldman

their family were eleven children, nine of whom grew to years of maturity and are still living.

Wladyslaw A. Grzesk, the third child and second son in order of birth, spent the early years of his life on the homestead, attending the district schools and also the South Bend public schools until seventeen years of age, when he began traveling for the McCormick Harvesting Machine Company, his territory extending over northern Indiana and southern Michigan. After remaining with this company about one year he pursued a course in the South Bend Commercial College. In April, 1901, however, he returned to the McCormick Harvesting Company, but on the 1st of October following became a student in the law department of the Valparaiso college, completing the course and graduating in 1904. All during his vacations, however, he continued with his old employers, the McCormick Company, but since 1904 he has given his entire time and attention to his law practice, his prestige at the bar of South Bend standing in evidence of his ability and likewise serves as a voucher for intrinsic worth of character. Mr. Grzesk is a member of the Polish Turners Association, is a stockholder in the Jan III Sobiski Building and Loan Association, and is also extensively interested in real estate operations, handling much valuable property. As a Republican he has taken an active part in the public life of his community, and at one time was a candidate for the office of justice of the peace.

On the 6th of June, 1905, Mr. Grzesk was united in marriage to Martha Gierzk, and their only daughter is Jeneva. He is a splendid example of the boys who have educated themselves and secured their own start in life, and as the record of a young man it is one of which he may justly be proud.

A. McMULLEN CREED. None of the young and progressive attorneys of St. Joseph county have a brighter outlook than A. McM. Creed, of South Bend, a partner of Herbert D. Warner, with convenient offices in the Jefferson building. He is a native of Sinclairville, New York, born January 20, 1879, and is the son of Rev. Edward K. and Fannie (McMullen) Creed. His father, long an honored figure in the Methodist ministry, was born in New York state, and his mother was a native of Warren, Pennsylvania. In their family of three children he is the only son and the oldest.

A. McMullen Creed received his preparatory education in the high school of Southington, Connecticut, and afterward pursued an academic course at Pennington, New Jersey. After leaving school in 1900 he became a clerk in a New York law office, and in the spring of the following year came to South Bend to study his profession under the guidance of his uncle, J. P. Creed. He was about a year in his office, when he entered the law department of the Maryland University at Baltimore. After his graduation therefrom he returned to South Bend, and since July, 1904, has practiced with ability and increasing reputation.

Mr. Creed was married October 10, 1906, to Miss Winifred Purshall, a native of Erie, Pennsylvania. He is a member of the college fraternity Kappa Sigma, and while a college student at Pennington, New Jersey, was a leading athlete. He has retained his enthusiasm and skill for all forms of exercise, and at one time was director of the Y. M. C. A. gymnasium at South Bend, holding a similar position at Mishawaka. Politically Mr. Creed is a Republican of firm convictions, and, fraternally, a Mason in good standing.

GEORGE G. FELDMAN. The name of George G. Feldman is inscribed on the pages of St. Joseph county's history in connection with the records of her jurisprudence, and he is also accounted one of the political leaders of this section of the state. He was born in Marshall county, Indiana, June 27, 1861, a son of August and Barbara (Michael) Feldman, the former a native of Altendorf, Grand Duchy of Hesse, born September 1, 1821, and the latter of Bavaria, Germany, and both are now prominent old residents of South Bend. In 1848 the father came to the United States and settled in Greenville, Ohio, and was there married December 26, 1849. That city continued to be his home for six years, and on the expiration of that period, in 1854, he took up his abode within the borders of Indiana, the first year in this state being spent in Elkhart county. He then settled in the woods near Bremen, where he erected a log cabin and engaged in agricultural pursuits. To establish a home amid such surrounding as he here encountered and to cope with the many privations and hardships which were the inevitable concomitants, demanded an invincible courage and fortitude, strong hearts and willing hands. All these were characteristics of the pioneers, whose names and deeds

should be held in perpetual reverence by those who enjoy the fruits of their toil. So well did he succeed in his business ventures that in 1900 Mr. Feldman was enabled to lay aside the active duties of a business life, and removed to Bourbon, Marshall county, Indiana, while in 1906 he came to South Bend, where he and his wife are now enjoying the reward of their former toil, surrounded by the many luxuries which a life of industry has brought to them.

George G. Feldman received his elementary educational training in the schools of Marshall county, and after completing his studies therein he was engaged in teaching from 1879 until 1889. In 1889 he entered upon a course in the Northern Indiana Normal College at Valparaiso, Indiana, now the University of Valparaiso, graduating in the next year with the degree of B. S., and two years later, in 1892, graduated in law and classics with the degrees of A. B. and LL. B. On May 18th of the latter year he was granted a life state teacher's certificate on examination on twenty-four subjects, and this he prizes very highly, as such documents are very rare. In August, 1892, Mr. Feldman took up his abode in South Bend and commenced the practice of law. His prestige at the bar of St. Joseph county stands in evidence of his ability, and he has used his intellect to the best purpose. He is also accounted one of the leaders of Democracy in this section of the state, and was a candidate for the legislature in 1894, while from 1896 until 1898 he was chairman of the County and City Democratic Committees. In 1902 he was elected city judge, the duties of which he discharged with such ability that in 1905 he was re-elected for another term of four years, by an increased majority of over two hundred votes. What higher testimonial of his able service on the bench could be given than the fact of his long continuance thereon?

On the 27th of June, 1897, Judge Feldman was married to Miss Louise A. Wenger, a daughter of Gustavus Wenger, a manufacturer and a prominent early settler of South Bend, a well known and highly respected business man of this city for many years. This union has been blessed with three children: Horace W., born March 20, 1899; Earl R., born September 12, 1900; and George G., Jr., born January 26, 1904. Judge Feldman has been identified with the Masonic order for sixteen years, a member of Lodge No.

294, also of the Chapter and Commandery, and is also a member of the Knights of Pythias and the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks.

HON. E. VOLNEY BINGHAM. Everywhere in our land are found men who have worked their own way from humble beginnings to places of leadership and high esteem, and thus it has been with the eminent member of the bar of St. Joseph county, E. Volney Bingham, in whose life history many useful lessons may be gleaned. He is a native son of Penn township of this county, born August 1, 1844, his parents being Alfred and Ann (Miller) Bingham. The father, a native of New York, took up his abode in St. Joseph county in an early day, and was for many years associated with the St. Joseph Iron Works.

E. Volney Bingham attended during his boyhood days the public school near his home, and after the completion of his studies became an employe in the furniture factory. In his early youth he had a desire to become a member of the legal profession, and had made up his mind to enter upon the study of law, but at the inauguration of the Civil war he put aside all personal considerations and enlisted for service in the Union cause, becoming a member of Company G, Forty-eighth Indiana Volunteer Infantry, in which he served throughout the entire struggle and was promoted to sergeant major of his regiment. After the close of his military career he returned to Mishawaka and for two years thereafter was employed as a clerk, and later became a traveling salesman. In the meantime Mr. Bingham had found time to gratify his old desire for the study of the law, and when he gave up his position on the road on account of ill health he was elected to the office of justice of the peace on the Democratic ticket, winning the election in a strong Republican township and continuing as its incumbent for twelve years. He was admitted to the bar of St. Joseph county in 1875, and at once began the battle for name and position, and from that time forward he has prospered. During Cleveland's administration he served as postmaster of Mishawaka, but higher honors awaited him and he was made a member of the state senate, 1892, for St. Joseph and Starke counties, succeeding Judge Howard, who was promoted to Judge of the Supreme Court. To this high position Mr. Bingham was returned in No-

vember, 1906, and in doing so the Republican majority was reversed. During the sixty-fifth regular legislative session he has been a member of the Criminal Code Committee, Committee on Public Morals, Claims and Expenditures Committee, Constitutional Revision Committee, Natural Resources Committee, Supervision and Inspection of Journal. In the legislature of 1903 he was chairman of the Committee on State's Prisons. He was a member of the Committee on the Organizations of Courts, Fees and Salaries Committee, Labor and Labor Statistics Committee. Mr. Bingham was the Democratic candidate for judge in 1894, for St. Joseph and Laporte counties. Close study has given him keen insight into the important political problems, and he has thus been a valued factor in administering the affairs of the government.

In December, 1872, Mr. Bingham was united in marriage to Hattie E. Grimes, a daughter of Dr. Grimes, one of the old and well known physicians of Mishawaka. Four children have been born to bless their home.

JOSEPH B. ARNOLD was born near Medina, Orleans County, New York, July 1, 1839. He attended an advanced school in South Bend, and then taught one term of school in Elkhart county, after which he went to Des Moines, where he clerked in his brother-in-law's store until the breaking out of the war, when at the first call for troops he enlisted for three months. He drilled with the company and was in readiness to start when word came that the quota was full, and the services of the company not accepted. He then returned to South Bend and soon turned his attention to the study of law, in the office of Judge Thomas S. Stanfield, after which he attended a law school in Chicago and was admitted to the bar in South Bend in 1863, and engaged in practice. He soon commenced compiling an abstract of the titles to real estate of St. Joseph county. That he understood the business and spared no pains is attested to by the fact that the Arnold Abstracts always stand the test. For many years he devoted much time to the abstract business, but in 1902 he sold the abstracts, and since then has practiced law, when not busy attending to his private affairs, which take much of his time. With his sister, Mrs. Garrison, he occupies the beautiful homestead on West Jefferson street, purchased of his father in 1861. He cast his first presi-

dential vote for Lincoln in 1860, and has been true to the principles of the Republican party since. He joined the Masonic Fraternity in about 1868.

Mr. Arnold is unquestionably one of the most astute and painstaking lawyers of St. Joseph county, a constant student of men and affairs. His honorable means of adjusting the legal complications of his clients has won for him the confidence of the entire community. Endowed by nature with a sense of right and justice, he shuns all action that is to the detriment of his fellowmen, and squares his life by the Golden Rule. His courtesy, tact, consideration, and all-around good fellowship, have added to his appreciators many warm and dependable friends.

RALPH H. JERNEGAN. Although a comparatively short time has elapsed since Ralph H. Jernegan began practice at the bar of Mishawaka his rise has been rapid, and he today occupies a leading position among the representatives of the legal profession in his district. His reputation has been won through earnest, honest labor, and his high standing is a merited tribute to his ability. His birth occurred in the city of Mishawaka on the 30th of August, 1877, his parents being Ed A. and Nannie C. (Sherman) Jernegan, whose history will be found on other pages in this work. Their son Ralph, the youngest of four children, two sons and two daughters, obtained his early literary education in the public schools of his native city, in which he was graduated in the high school with the class of 1897, and immediately thereafter he entered upon the study of the profession which he had chosen as a life work in the University of Michigan at Ann Arbor. Close application characterized this period of his career, and at the time of his graduation in that high institution of learning in 1900 he had gained a broad general knowledge of jurisprudence. On the 3d of October, 1900, he opened his law office in Mishawaka, where for a time he was in partnership with Mr. Bingham, but since the severance of that relationship has been alone. Although the duties of his profession have assumed extensive proportions he is also interested in many of the leading business concerns of the city, being a stockholder in one of its leading banks, and is also interested in the Beiger Furniture Company of Mishawaka, in which he is now serving as secretary.

In 1904 was celebrated the marriage of Mr.

Jernegan and Estella Frank, she being the daughter of Charles and Mary (Buckheit) Frank, whose history also appears elsewhere in this work. Mr. Jernegan is a member of the Masonic Order and the Knights of Pythias, No. 453, both of Mishawaka. In his political connections he is a Republican, and takes a deep interest in the political questions which affect the welfare of state and nation and mold the public policy. As its representative he has served as the township chairman of the central committee, also as first vice chairman of the county central committee, and for six years was deputy prosecuting attorney under Clark and Kurtz. He is a broad-minded, progressive man and public spirited citizen, and in all life's relations is found true to the duties of professional and social life which the day may bring forth.

ENOS E. LONG. The family of which the subject of this review is a representative is a pioneer one in St. Joseph county, for as early as 1837 Stephen M. Long came from Ohio to Indiana and secured government land in Penn township, St. Joseph county. There he was engaged in agricultural pursuits until 1875. In that year he moved to Mishawaka, which continued as his home until his death in 1890, at the age of seventy-eight years. His name is deeply engraved on the pages of St. Joseph county's history in connection with its public affairs of an early day. For a number of years he served as a member of the town board of Mishawaka. Mrs. Long bore the maiden name of Mary Eutzler, and was a native of Ohio. Her death occurred in 1865, when sixty years of age.

Enos E. Long, a son of this honored old pioneer couple, was engaged in farming from the time he completed his education in the country schools until he had reached his twenty-third year. His birth occurred in Penn township of this county, on the 28th of August, 1848. In 1873 he came to Mishawaka and was in the employ of the Andrews School and Church Furniture Company four years, and then with the Perkins Company fourteen years. From 1888 until 1892 he served as a justice of the peace, to which office he was returned in 1898 for four years, and in 1906 he was again elected to that office for a period of four years. During this time Mr. Long also studied law, and in March, 1901, was admitted to the bar in South Bend. He has gained distinction in his official and professional career, has been an earnest and dis-

criminating student, and has drawn about him a circle of devoted friends.

On the 1st of December, 1870, Mr. Long was united in marriage to Maggie Householder, a native of Wood county, Ohio, and a daughter of John Householder. One son has been born of this union, Fred L.

JOHN A. HIBBERD is actively connected with a profession which has important bearing upon the progress and stable prosperity of any section or community, and which has long since been considered as conserving the public welfare by furthering the ends of justice and maintaining individual rights. His reputation as a lawyer has been won through earnest, honest labor, and his standing at the bar is a merited tribute to his ability. He now has a good practice and his careful preparation of cases is supplemented by a power of argument and forceful presentation of his points in the court room, so that he seldom fails to impress court and jury.

The life history of Mr. Hibberd is closely identified with the annals of St. Joseph county, which has been his home for forty years. He is not alone a prominent representative of the bar of northern Indiana but is also a leading citizen and financier of this section of the state. He is a native of the Empire State, born in Syracuse November 12, 1855, a son of Joseph H. and Helen (Baldwin) Hibberd, also natives of that great commonwealth. The father, whose birthday was January 19, 1827, is a retired farmer, making his home with his son, John A.

The public schools of South Bend furnished John A. Hibberd with the foundation of his education, and after mastering the elementary branches he completed a high-school course and then for a time taught school in the county. While thus engaged he decided upon the law as his life work, spending two years in the office of Arnold & Creed and then entering the Union College of Law, Chicago, from which he graduated in 1883—William Jennings Bryan being a fellow student of the same class. Having thus thoroughly prepared himself to assume the active duties of his profession Mr. Hibberd returned to South Bend, and has since practiced here, establishing himself both as a leading lawyer and a prominent man of affairs. He is an active supporter of Republican principles and policies, and was nominated by the party as prosecuting attorney many years ago, making the race with no hope of election.

Throughout the period of his residence in South Bend he has been actively and practically interested in public and progressive movements, having been for a number of years a member of the school board, one of the organizers of the Citizens' National Bank, of which he is the vice-president, and is also one of the founders and the vice-president of the Citizens' Loan, Trust and Savings Company. Mr. Hibberd is also the proprietor of the Hibberd Printing Company.

In 1884, on the 8th of May, Mr. Hibberd was united in marriage to Miss Mollie C. Corbett, a daughter of Charles Corbett, of Williams county, Ohio, and two children have been born of this union—Helen, in 1885, and Marjorie, in 1890, the former now a student in Smith College, Northampton, Massachusetts. Mr. Hibberd is a Mason, a member of the Royal Arch Chapter No. 29, and is identified with the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, the Elks and other societies. He ranks high at the bar and in political circles, and is altogether a most substantial and influential citizen. In a more special and personal sense Mr. Hibberd is a broad-minded man, giving his chief attention to his business affairs, but, nevertheless, finding opportunity to aid in the intellectual development and moral progress of the community, realizing the necessity of growth along these lines. As a man of unswerving integrity and honor, one who has a strong appreciation for the higher ethics of life, he has gained and retained the confidence and respect of his fellow men.

HARRY WAIR. A prominent representative of the younger members of the bar of this section of the state is Harry Wair, of South Bend who is also accounted one of the rising political leaders. He was born in LaPorte, Indiana, being a son of Andrew Jackson and Judith S. Wair. His rudimentary education was received in the schools of his native city, after which he pursued a course in the University of Michigan at Ann Arbor, graduating from the law department of that university. He then returned to LaPorte and opened an office for the practice of his chosen profession, but a short time afterward came to South Bend and resumed the private practice of law. From the beginning of his career as a legal practitioner his efforts have been attended with success, for he has thoroughly mastered the science of jurisprudence and his deep research and thorough preparation of

every case committed to his care enable him to meet at once any contingency that may arise. His ability has led to his selection for public honors, and during his residence in LaPorte county he was elected to the state legislature. Mr. Wair ranks high among the younger representatives of the bar and in political circles, and South Bend numbers him among her leading and influential citizens.

FRANK E. HERING. In connection with both the industrial and political interests of northern Indiana the name of Frank E. Hering is well known and honored. He was born in Northumberland county, Pennsylvania, on the 30th of April, 1874, a son of Solomon and Mary (Neuer) Hering, both of German parentage. The father, also a native of Pennsylvania, now makes his home with his son in South Bend.

Frank E. Hering received an excellent educational training in his youth, having first attended the Williamsport, Pennsylvania, high school, in which he graduated in 1892, and during the following year was employed by the Pennsylvania Railroad Company. During the years of 1893-94-95 he attended the University of Chicago and in 1896 was at Bucknell University in charge of athletics. He then came to Notre Dame as director of athletics, and there received the degree of Bachelor of Philosophy in 1898 and Bachelor of Laws in 1902. During the intervening period from 1898 until 1902 Mr. Hering taught history and English, being awarded the English medal in 1898. His broad intelligence, scholarly attainments and his full appreciation of the value of knowledge as a preparation for life's responsibilities made him an able educator. His name is also well known throughout northern Indiana in political circles, for in 1902 he was the Democratic nominee for Congress, two years later being renominated for that high official position, and although he declined to have his name used the party refused to accept his declination. At both elections he ran far ahead of his ticket, in 1904 receiving five thousand above the average vote. In 1902 Mr. Hering left Notre Dame and entered upon a connection with the ice business in the wholesale trade, as a member of the firm of Hering and Murphy. The name has become well known throughout this section of the state in business circles, and they have won an enviable success in this line of endeavor. Mr. Hering is also president of the State Association of

the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks, and was chairman of the building committee for their new hall in South Bend, one of the finest in the United States. He is also National Treasurer of the Fraternal Order of Eagles.

In 1895, in Chicago, Mr. Hering was united in marriage to Miss Florence Madison Dalmond, a daughter of Charles M. Dalmond, of French descent and a resident of Chicago. Mr. Hering is a scholarly gentleman, a brilliant orator, a prominent politician, courteous and popular, and his future is bright with promise.

DR. J. M. PARTRIDGE, for nearly forty years a successful and honored practicing physician of South Bend, St. Joseph county, was born in Gustavus, Trumbull county, Ohio, May 17, 1835, and is a son of Isaac and Elizabeth (Bailey) Partridge. His father was a native of Connecticut, born in 1808, and when twelve years of age removed with his grandfather, Thomas, to the state of Ohio. His mother, a daughter of Iddo Bailey, was a native of Vermont, removed to the Buckeye State about 1825, and died in February, 1856. Thomas Partridge, his grandfather, served through the Revolutionary War, and participated in the engagement which resulted in the surrender of the British forces under Cornwallis.

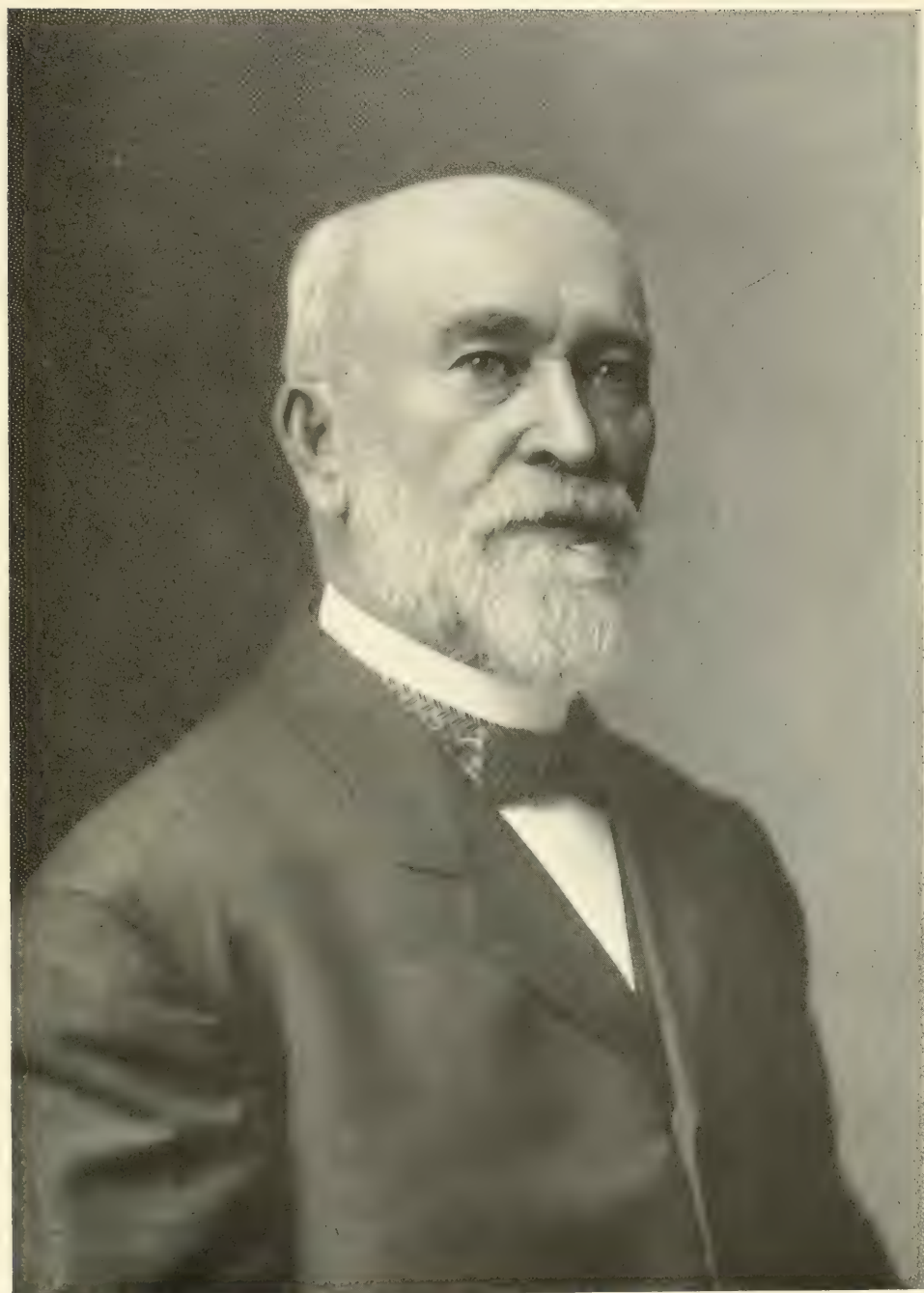
During his early years Dr. Partridge lived on a farm, and received a good education in the district schools of his neighborhood. At the age of twenty he began teaching in the winter months, assisting his father on the home farm in summer. Thus he continued for three years, when, yielding to an earnest desire for a classical education, at the age of twenty-three he began his preparatory studies at Oberlin college. A stranger and without means he was obliged to find employment to support himself, and during the six years covering his preparatory and collegiate courses worked and studied far into the night of each day. During a part of this time he was employed as a teacher in the preparatory department of the college.

After his graduation from Oberlin College Dr. Partridge enlisted (in 1863) in the Ohio state militia, an organization intended for home protection, but subject to the orders of the governor. In April, 1864, his regiment, the One Hundred and Fiftieth Ohio, was ordered to the front and attached to the garrison holding the fortifications about the city

of Washington, his company (K) being stationed at Fort Slocum and later removed to Fort Stevens in anticipation of an attack from the enemy, which occurred July 12, 1864, when General Early was repulsed from his assault on the national capital. He was mustered out of service August 23, 1864, and returned to Oberlin. At this time, upon the recommendation of President Fairchild, of Oberlin College, he went to Berea, Kentucky, and organized the first classes in Greek, Latin and algebra for the recently established institution which afterward became the well known Berea College.

In the spring of 1865 Dr. Partridge entered the office of Dr. L. B. Dye as a medical student, his preceptor being a physician of Gustavus. In the fall he continued his studies with Doctors Blair and Sanders, at Cleveland, Ohio, and during the ensuing winter he attended his first course of lectures in the Cleveland Homeopathic College. In November, 1866, he commenced medical practice in partnership with Dr. Craig at Niles, Michigan, where he remained a year and then attended a second course of lectures at Hahnemann Medical College, Chicago, where he received a diploma in the spring of 1868. In the preceding year he had obtained his second literary degree, with the title A. M., from Oberlin College, so that he now was entitled to both M. D. and the title indicated.

In March, 1868, Dr. Partridge commenced the practice of his permanent profession at South Bend, being the first homeopath to be recognized as a successful practitioner in the city. By his quiet yet positive ways, his superior mental discipline, his sympathy and practical judgment, and his thorough professional knowledge, all enforced by most favorable results of actual practice, he established himself firmly in the public confidence and won position as well as pecuniary rewards. He erected a beautiful residence for his family, as well as a fine block of houses for rent, and came into possession of other property which placed him among the substantial citizens of South Bend. Although well advanced in years, the doctor is still in the active ranks of his profession. He is an old member of the Indiana Medical Institute, and has been a frequent contributor to the medical press, his papers showing a marked clearness and condensation of statement and an interesting style in the conveyance of professional information. The doctor



Dr. J. M. Partridge



and his family are Presbyterians. Politically he is a staunch Republican, but has never been active in any field but that of his profession.

On the 28th of October, 1866, on leaving Ohio for Niles, Michigan, Dr. Partridge was married to Aurelia H. Chapman, of Kingsville, Ohio, a daughter of Jedediah and Sarah E. (Osborne) Chapman. She was a graduate of Oberlin College, class of '65, and at the time of her marriage was preceptress of Kingsville Academy. The family born to them consisted of Clara, Eloise, William Harvey, Charlotte, Frances and Katherine. Dr. Partridge had two brothers and five sisters, one of the former, Captain Harvey W. Partridge, being killed at the battle of Chickamauga and buried in the Soldiers' Cemetery at Chattanooga, Tennessee. The remainder are all living. The doctor and his wife and their six children are all graduates of Oberlin College.

STANLEY A. CLARK. Dr. Stanley A. Clark, one of the younger members of the medical profession in St. Joseph county, was born in Galien, Berrien county, Michigan, July 14, 1877, a son of Charles A. and Lydia (Blakeslie) Clark, the former a native of Huntsburg, Ohio, and the latter of Batavia, Illinois.

Dr. Clark, the eldest of their three children, two sons and a daughter, received his literary education in the public schools of his native city of Galien, graduating in the high school in 1894. For one year thereafter he studied pharmacy in the Northern Indiana Normal College at Valparaiso, Indiana, and then entered the Hahnemann Medical College of Chicago, in which he completed the course and was graduated in 1898. He was house surgeon in Hahnemann Hospital, Chicago, for the following year, and in 1899 located at his old home in Galien, Michigan, for the practice of his chosen profession, where he remained for two years, and since 1901 has been numbered among the leading medical practitioners of South Bend. He is a member of the St. Joseph County Medical Society, the American Medical Association and the American Institute of Homeopathy, also a member of the staff of Epworth Hospital. In his political views Dr. Clark is a staunch Republican, and is coroner of St. Joseph county at the present time. His fraternal connections are with the Knights of Modern Maccabees, Modern Woodmen of America,

and the Masonic order, South Bend Commandery No. 13.

J. A. STOECKLEY. There is ever a degree of satisfaction and profit in scanning the life history of one who has attained to an eminent degree of success; who has had the mentality to direct his endeavors toward the desired ends, and the singleness and steadfastness of purpose which have given due value to each consecutive detail of effort. As a distinctive type of a self-made man we can refer with singular propriety to the honored subject whose name forms the caption of this review. Doctor Stoeckley's father died when he was but one year of age. Thus growing from infancy to boyhood he was thrown upon his own resources, working his way through school, college and his profession to the substantial position he has attained.

He was born in Monroeville, Ohio, on the 20th day of May, 1870, a son of Anthony and Theresa Sinnot Stoeckley, the latter a native of Ohio but of German descent. The father was born in Germany, but came to the United States when nineteen years of age and identified his interests with the city of Monroeville, being long numbered among its prominent merchants. His death occurred in 1871. He was an honored soldier of the Civil war, and the severities which he endured during his campaign hastened his death.

Dr. Stoeckley attended the parochial and public schools, and graduated from the high school of Monroeville, Ohio, in 1887, and then entered a drug store as a clerk, earning and saving enough money for his first year's college course, and immediately thereafter began the study of pharmacy at the Western Reserve College of Cleveland, Ohio, and thus continued in pharmacy until the fall of 1893, when he entered the Chicago College of Dental Surgery. He continued his occupation as a pharmacist in the summer months. Thus with the help of some borrowed money he was enabled to continue his college work and was graduated on the 7th of April, 1896. In the same year he came to South Bend and opened an office in the Oliver Opera House block, but in the following year, 1897, moved to his present offices on West Washington street, which are well equipped with modern appliances for the conduct of his business. He has a dental surgeon and lady attendant to assist him in his work, and he always keeps in touch with the advancement that is continually being made in the profession. He

has not only an enviable reputation and practice in South Bend and vicinity, but enjoys a nice practice at Notre Dame and St. Mary's. He has since pursued a post-graduate course in the Chicago College of Dental Surgery, his *alma mater*. The doctor further keeps in touch with the advancement in dentistry by his membership in the Northern Indiana Dental Society, of which he has been secretary, treasurer, vice-president and president; is also a director of the Indiana State Dental Society; also a member of the Odontographic Dental Society of Chicago and a member of the National and International Dental Society. He was one of the three representatives from Indiana to the International Dental Congress at St. Louis during the World's Fair.

The marriage of Dr. Stoeckley was celebrated on June 18, 1902, when Miss Emelyn Hinkle, a native of Muncie, Indiana, and a daughter of Mrs. Cecelia B. Hinkle, now of South Bend, Indiana, became his wife. They have one son, John Francis, who was born on the 13th of September, 1904, and a daughter, Hildegard Cecelia, born February 6, 1907. Dr. Stoeckley gives his political support to the Democratic party, and fraternally he is a member of the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks and the Knights of Columbus. He and his family are members of St. Patrick's Catholic church of South Bend, Indiana.

In seeking for the causes which have contributed to Dr. Stoeckley's success, we find them in their rarity as in their harmonious union, and they may be summed up by saying that he has the manners of a gentleman, the habits of a man of business, and the scientific ability so necessary in the practice of his profession, a combination of qualities that are bound to produce the highest results. He is yet a young man, but has attained success which many an older practitioner might well envy. His laudable ambition to rise in his profession, his close application, and his conformity to the strictest professional ethics have combined to win him advancement in a profession where success depends on individual merit.

W. F. MILLS, M. D. Among those who have attained distinctive prestige in the practice of medicine in the city of South Bend and whose success has come as the logical sequence of thorough technical information and skill stands Dr. Mills, who is a man of scholarly

attainments and who has made deep and careful research into the science to which he is devoting his life. He was born in Joliet, Illinois, February 22, 1856, a son of Andrew and Sarah E. (Whitemore) Mills, the latter a native of Pennsylvania. The father was also a member of the medical profession, having practiced in Joliet for a number of years.

W. F. Mills received his early literary education in Bloomington, Illinois, in the Normal University, pursuing the teacher's course there, and then began teaching in 1875, continuing in that profession in Will county for six years. In 1881 he became a student in Rush Medical College of Chicago, but the same year took the state examination and received a diploma to practice medicine from the State Board of Medical Examiners. In 1887 he graduated from Rush Medical College, and immediately began the practice of medicine in Chicago. In a short time, however, he returned to his old home in Joliet, but hearing such favorable reports concerning the city of South Bend he decided to locate here, and did so in 1899, having never had occasion to regret his change of residence. Dr. Mills has gained distinction in the line of his chosen calling, has ever been an earnest and discriminating student, and holds a position of due relative precedence among medical practitioners of northern Indiana. After a residence of only six months in this city he was appointed physician for both the township and county, and these offices he still continues to fill with ability and wisdom. He is also examining physician for the Knights of the Maccabees, the Ladies of the Maccabees, the Tribe of Ben Hur, and holds membership relations with the Masons Lodge, No. 294, the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks, and other orders.

In 1883, in Chicago, Dr. Mills was married to Miss Agnes McDonough, a daughter of T. McDonough, a prominent early pioneer of that city, having resided there as early as 1838. By this union was born, May 17, 1885, one daughter, Alice Elda. Dr. Mills is deeply interested in the affairs of the city which has been his home for a number of years, and in private life has gained that warm personal regard which arises from true nobility of character, deference for the opinion of others, kindness and geniality.

FRANCIS WILLIAM LOCKWOOD, M. D. The genealogy of Francis W. Lockwood betokens



F. W. Lockwood M.D.

that he is a scion of a family whose association with the annals of American history has been intimate and honorable from the early colonial epoch. Such men and such ancestral prestige fully justify the compilation of works of this nature, that a worthy record may be perpetuated for future generations. The Lockwood family is a very old English one, and the first of the name to come to America was Robert Lockwood, who was a member of the Winthrop fleet and settled near what is now Norwalk, Connecticut. From that time to the present the representatives of the family have been prominent in the history of the country, and it has given many distinguished men to the various professions, while in both the Revolutionary and Civil wars there are recorded two hundred and eighty-nine Lockwoods who valiantly fought for the flag. Among its many distinguished members may be mentioned a few—Major James Lockwood, a gallant soldier in the Revolutionary war; James Lockwood, one of the founders of the famous firm of Case, Lockwood & Brainard, of Hartford, Connecticut; Brigadier General Henry Hayes Lockwood, a soldier of the Civil war and a well known writer on many subjects; J. Booth Lockwood, the Arctic explorer; Rev. James Lockwood, pastor of the first church in Weathersfield; Commodore Samuel Lockwood, of the United States Navy and others. The parents of Francis W. were Cornelius Gray and Mary Catherine (Barrett) Lockwood, both natives of Port Jervis, New York. The father was a jeweler and optician in that city, as was also his father, while on the maternal side there were also many professional men, physicians and dentists, the maternal grandfather, S. T. Barrett, having won a wide reputation as a dentist of Port Jervis, and he is still a resident of that city, having reached the age of ninety years. Cornelius G. Lockwood was called to the home beyond in 1894, when fifty-four years of age, but his widow survived until 1906, dying at the age of fifty-five years.

Dr. Francis W. Lockwood was born in Port Jervis, New York, on the 11th of June, 1878, and in the schools of his native city he received his early educational training, graduating from its high school in 1897. He then began the study of pharmacy, but before leaving school he had taken a special interest in the study of chemistry, so consequently his knowledge of the drug business was very complete when he entered upon the study of phar-

macy. He graduated in the medical department of the University of Michigan in 1902, and immediately came to South Bend and engaged in the practice of medicine and surgery. Although he has but practically just entered upon his life work, yet he is an earnest and discriminating student and has already gained a large practice.

In 1903, Dr. Lockwood was united in marriage to Miss Florence Jenkins, a daughter of John Fletcher and Susan E. (McQueen) Jenkins, the mother being a member of the well known McQueen family of Canada. The Doctor's professional work connects him with the County, State and Tri-State Medical Societies, and in his fraternal relations he is a member of the Woodmen of the World. His religious affiliations are with the Presbyterian church.

OSCAR VON BARANDY, M. D. Dr. Oscar Von Barandy, who is rapidly winning for himself a name and place among the leading physicians and surgeons of South Bend, was born in Hungary, October 22, 1876. He graduated from the public schools of his native country in 1886, and going thence to Kaloosa, one of the great educational places of Hungary, was graduated in the classic schools of that city in 1894. In the same year he entered the University of Budapest, and after five years in that high institution of learning, graduated in 1899. During the year and a half following this eventful period in his life he was engaged in hospital work in Hungary, while in March, 1900, he bade farewell to the home and friends of his native land and came to America, at once coming to South Bend. It was not until 1903, however, that he was able to pass the examination before the state board, for he had some difficulty in mastering the intricacies of the English language, but in that year he engaged actively in the practice of medicine and surgery, working principally among his countrymen. He is a member of the St. Joseph County Medical Association and also of the Indiana State and the American Medical Associations, thus being enabled to keep fully informed concerning the many improvements in the two sciences to which he is devoting his life with such eminent success. He is serving as the examining physician for many Hungarian societies of South Bend, and is very deeply interested in the welfare of his native countrymen. Since coming to this city, Dr. Von Barandy has been instru-

mental in having over two thousand Hungarians become citizens of America.

On the 16th of September, 1906, there was erected a statue of Washington at Budapest, Dr. Von Barandy serving as one of the directors of the monumental association, and represented over fifty thousand Hungarian born Americans at the dedicatory festival. At the services there were fifty thousand people present, with about two thousand delegates from different places in Hungary, and was one of the most noted historical events of that nation. Since his arrival in America the Hungarian citizens here have been organized into about twelve fraternal societies, three federations and two political clubs. Since coming to America to cast his lot with this free country he has been actively interested in its institutions, and is rapidly winning for himself a prominent place among the leading citizens of South Bend.

H. A. FINK, M. D. For a period of over seventeen years, Dr. Fink has been engaged in the practice of medicine in South Bend, and his name is a household word in many of the homes of this community. His long identification with the place and his prominence here entitle him to more than a passing notice in a work of this character, devoted as it is to the portrayal of the lives of representative men of the county. The Doctor was born in Elkhart county, Indiana, on the 26th of December, 1854. His father, Peter Fink, was a native of Pennsylvania, but removed to Elkhart county in the '30s, where he engaged in his life occupation of farming. He bore an important part in the early settlement of Elkhart county, and when the Civil war was inaugurated he enlisted for service in July, 1862, remaining a faithful soldier until the war had ended. He participated in many of the historical battles, took part in the Grand Review at Washington, where the victorious armies were welcomed by the president and many eminent men of the nation, and was active in the organization of the Grand Army of the Republic. After his removal to Indiana, Mr. Fink married Mary Clouse, a native daughter of Ohio, but who had removed to the Hoosier state about 1838, her parents having been among the early pioneers of Elkhart county. She has now reached the age of seventy years, and resides in Wakarusa, Elkhart county. In the family of this worthy pioneer

couple were nine children, five sons and four daughters.

Dr. Fink, the eldest of the nine children, entered the high school of Goshen during his boyhood days, later spending two years at the Northern Indiana Normal College of Valparaiso, Indiana, while his medical training was received in the Northwestern University of Chicago, in which he was graduated in 1888. He immediately opened an office and engaged in the practice of his chosen profession in Woodland, St. Joseph county, but soon sought a larger field of endeavor and in 1890 came to South Bend, where he has won distinctive prestige in his special line. His long professional career has been attended with success, and those who have known him longest esteem him most highly. He keeps in touch with the progress made in the medical world by his membership in the St. Joseph County, the State and American Medical Associations.

In 1880, Dr. Fink was married to Martha J. Moore, a daughter of John and Julia Moore, of Elkhart county, Indiana, and they have a son and a daughter. The son, Ralph A. is a graduate from the high school of South Bend and spent two years at Ann Arbor, University of Michigan, returning thence to South Bend. Being of a mechanical turn of mind, he bought a one-half interest in the Mecklenberg Gas and Gasoline Engine works, one of the important manufacturing concerns of South Bend. The daughter, Grace M., is a musician of marked talent in both vocal and instrumental music. The Doctor takes an active interest in political matters, voting with the Democratic party, and for three years was chosen for the position of health officer of South Bend. His fraternal relations are with the Masonic order and the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks.

W. A. HAGER, M. D., one of the leading physicians and surgeons of South Bend, has made a specialty of the diseases of the ear, nose and throat. He is a great student and endeavors to keep abreast of the times in everything relating to the discoveries in medical science. His birth occurred in Ontario, Canada, on the 23d of August, 1863, his parents being Addison and Maria (Smith) Hager, both also natives of Canada. During his active business career the father was extensively engaged in farming and the grain business, but he is now living in quiet

retirement. The wife and mother died at the comparatively early age of forty-four years.

Dr. Hager is the older of their two children, his sister being Ada J., the wife of Richard S. Babb, of Hamilton, Ontario. After completing his literary education in the common schools of his native city the Doctor entered the Ontario College of Pharmacy in Toronto, in which he was graduated in 1883. He then became a student in the Jefferson Medical College of Philadelphia, graduating there with the class of 1891, and for the following two years was interne in the Jefferson College Hospital. Coming thence to South Bend in 1893, he opened an office for the general practice of medicine, but during the years of 1899 and 1900 he pursued post graduate work in Germany, England and Austria as a specialist in the diseases of the eye, ear, nose and throat. During the period of his professional career Dr. Hager has met with a marked and gratifying success, and has won the good will and patronage of many of the residents of South Bend and vicinity, both in a general practice and in his special line. He is a member of the St. Joseph County Medical Society, the Indiana State Medical Society, the American Medical Association and the American Ophthalmological and Otological Society, which enables him to keep well informed concerning the advancement made in the medical world.

The marriage of Dr. Hager was celebrated in 1904 when Harriet B. Campbell, the daughter of Hon. Marvin Campbell, became his wife, and their two sons are Walter A. and Donald C.

DR. CHARLES STOLTZ, whose skill in surgery has given him more than local prominence in addition to his high rank in the general field of medicine, began practicing in South Bend in 1893. A graduate of the College of Physicians and Surgeons of Chicago, he entered upon his profession not only with excellent class-room and clinical training, but also with unusual natural talent. His family for several generations have been noted for a certain manual dexterity, which has been very useful to its possessors whether employed in the mechanical trades or in the skilled professions. Among Dr. Stoltz's relatives now living in Europe are several well known physicians and surgeons, while in his immediate family both his grandfather and father were skilled cabinet-makers and several uncles were successful bridge builders. The inventive and constructive genius is an inheritance of the family,

and this faculty has proved very valuable to Dr. Stoltz in his profession. A high degree of manual dexterity is a pre-requisite in surgery, and all the great surgeons have been noted in this respect.

In addition to this natural fitness, deep research and study have also been characteristics of his career in medicine. A number of years of youth and early manhood were spent in those studious pursuits and occupations which are the best preparation for a professional career. Having received his higher literary education in the Northern Indiana Normal College at Valparaiso and in the scientific department of the University of Indiana, he then taught school in St. Joseph and Laporte counties for five years, serving as principal of the Union Mills high school in Laporte county during the last year of that occupation. His broad intelligence, scholarly attainments and his full appreciation of the value of knowledge as a preparation for life's responsibilities made him an able educator, and he will be long remembered for his effective work in the schools with which he was connected. He had already planned a career in medicine, and in the final stage of preparation entered the College of Physicians and Surgeons of Chicago, where he was graduated in 1893. Locating at South Bend, almost from the start he acquired an extensive practice. To surgery he has given much time, observation and research, and the local medical fraternity acknowledge his ability in this department. He is the author of many technical papers on surgical and medical subjects, and is a member of the Northern Tri-State, the Mississippi Valley and several other medical societies. During four of the early years of his practice he was health officer for South Bend, an honor that came without his seeking, but he served with credit to himself and with much benefit to the city. Though always interested in public affairs, he has never held any other public office.

A native of St. Joseph county, Dr. Stoltz was born on Sumption Prairie January 17, 1864. His parents, Charles and Margaret (Popp) Stoltz, were born in Germany, the former in Alsace and the latter in Bavaria. The father came to America when a young man, living awhile with his parents in Canton, Ohio, and then moving to St. Joseph county, where the family have been well known since almost pioneer days. On June 5, 1895, Dr. Stoltz married Miss Lillian Dun-

nahoo of South Bend. Their one son, Charles, was born June 13, 1897.

H. F. MITCHELL, M. D. For a number of years past, Dr. Mitchell has been engaged in the practice of medicine in South Bend, and during these years has not only maintained his position among the leaders of the medical fraternity, but has taken part in much of the public and social life of the city, so that he is accounted one of her honored citizens. His birth occurred in Kingston, Ontario, Canada, on the 10th of July, 1866, being a son of Peter Mitchell, a native of Scotland and a ship builder by occupation. When a young man he left his Scotland home for Canada, the year of his emigration being 1846, and for the long period of twenty-four years was proprietor of the Portsmouth Marine Railway. His busy and useful life was ended at the age of sixty-five years. He married Victoria G. Wycott, a native of Canada, but of English parentage, and four children were born of their union; C. F., a practicing physician of Cleveland, Ohio; Beatrice F., a graduate of the Epworth Hospital Training School of South Bend; and Florence, who died at the age of five years.

H. F. Mitchell, the second child and second son in the family, was graduated at Queens University in 1889, and the Royal College of Physicians and Surgeons, after which he was engaged in the practice of medicine in Ontario, New York, for one year. Removing thence to Indiana, he practiced in Lakeville, St. Joseph county, for the following three and a half years, since which time he has been numbered among the practitioners of general medicine in South Bend. During these years he has fully demonstrated the fact that he is well informed concerning the science to which he is devoting his life, and has therefore been accorded a liberal patronage.

In 1892, Dr. Mitchell was united in marriage to Lillie M. Woodburn, a daughter of the late Thomas M. Woodburn, of Ottawa, Canada, in which city Mrs. Mitchell was born. By her marriage she has become the mother of two sons, Weir W., aged twelve years, and Grant F., a little lad of five years. The Doctor is now serving as President of the St. Joseph County Medical Society, and also has membership relations with the Indiana State Medical Association, the American Medical Association and the Tri State Medical Association. His fraternal relations connect him with the Masonic order, Lodge No. 294, of

South Bend, and with the Maccabees, in which he is now serving as surgeon general of the Uniformed Rank.

L. V. STRANZ. In connection with the science of medicine, Dr. Stranz has gained an enviable prestige as one of the most able of the younger practitioners in the city of South Bend. He was born in Germany, May 24, 1868, and ere his removal from his native land received an excellent education in its high schools. In 1890, he sailed for America, and after his arrival stopped for a time in Buffalo and Niagara Falls, New York, subsequently making his way to Detroit, Michigan, where he taught Latin and Greek in the Polish seminary for one year. On the expiration of that period he began the study of medicine in the Detroit Medical College, but later went to Cleveland, Ohio, and continued his studies in Wooster University, thence entering the Dunham Medical College of Chicago, in which he was graduated in May, 1896. Thus with an excellent training to serve as the foundation on which to erect the superstructure of his future life work he went to South Chicago, Illinois, but three months later removed to La Salle, Illinois, where he remained three years. He then joined the hospital corps in the Spanish-American war where he served four months, enlisting in the First Division, Third Army Corps, and was stationed at Chickamauga Park, receiving his honorable discharge at Anniston, Alabama. Dr. Stranz then came to Hanover township, Lake county, Indiana, where he was engaged in practice until 1904, and in that year came to South Bend. Although he is one of the younger representatives in practice in point of years of continuous service in this city, yet he has demonstrated the fact that he is well informed in its principles and their correct application, and is therefore building up a liberal patronage.

In 1894 Dr. Stranz was united in marriage to Magdalena Missal, and their union has been blessed with three children, Isabel, Edmund and Martin.

A. E. BARBER, M. D. One of the most earnest workers in the medical profession is A. E. Barber, and to his own energy and perseverance he owes the success which he has achieved thus far in life. He was born in Leeds county, Canada, on the 24th of December, 1868, a son of Charles Earl and Mary E. (Davis) Barber, the former a native of Canada and the latter of Belfast, Ireland. The

father, however, was of Irish descent, and during his early life followed agricultural pursuits, but in 1890 abandoned that occupation and engaged in the banking and investment business. In 1893 he retired from an active business life and thus continued up to the time of his death which occurred in April, 1895. Dr. Barber's mother was an exceedingly cultured lady, and for a number of years had been a member of the teacher's profession.

The public and high schools of Ontario; Canada, furnished their son, A. E., with his early educational training, while later he became a student at the Queen's Royal College of Physicians and Surgeons of Kingston, Ontario, graduating therein in 1892 with the degrees of M. D. and C. M. Coming thence to St. Joseph county in 1892 he established himself in practice in Mishawaka, but that town soon proving too small for his capabilities he came to South Bend in 1898, where he has succeeded in building up an enviable reputation for skill in his chosen line of endeavor. He has made a specialty of the diseases of the eye, ear, nose and throat, and in this special branch he has achieved remarkable success for a young man. His membership with the County and State Medical Society enables him to keep abreast with all the progressive movements in the medical profession, and he has proved himself worthy of the patronage and confidence of the public. He is a member of the Epworth Hospital staff of physicians and surgeons, as a specialist in diseases of the eye, ear, nose and throat, and he has held the position of medical expert in the Bureau of Pensions of the United States government since 1899.

In 1895, Dr. Barber was united in marriage to Grace M. Greene, a daughter of Dr. J. D. Greene, of Mishawaka, whose death occurred on the 26th of March, 1903. One daughter has blessed this union, Grace Margaret, whose birth occurred on the 18th of August, 1898. Mrs. Barber was a graduate of the Mishawaka high school. She was a cultured lady and social leader, both in Mishawaka and South Bend. Her demise was deeply regretted throughout the county. Dr. Barber holds fraternal relations with the Masonic order, Lodge No. 294, also with the Chapter, Council and Commandery, with the Knights of the Maccabees and the Elks. He is also a member of the Commercial Athletic club.

C. A. RENNOE, M. D., one of the leading physicians of South Bend, with offices

at 234 South Michigan street, was born in Windsor, Canada, October 7, 1868. His father, Joseph Rennoe, also a native of Canada, was of French origin, and his life occupation was that of the tilling of the soil. About the year 1872 he took up his abode in Portage township, St. Joseph county, where he purchased a farm and continued his agricultural pursuits, but retired from the active cares of a business life in 1901, and lived in South Bend until his death on June 22, 1907. His wife, nee Mary Clark, was a native of Canada, although her father was born in England and her mother in France. In their family are eight living children, including twins, C. A. and Alexander J., they being the third in order of birth.

Dr. Rennoe was but four years of age when brought by his parents to St. Joseph county, and the days of his boyhood and youth were spent on the home farm until his fourteenth year when he entered the city schools of South Bend. When about nineteen years of age, he began the study of medicine under the preceptorship of Dr. Kilmer, of this city, with whom he continued until his graduation from Rush Medical College of Chicago, in 1892. In that year he located in South Bend for the practice of his profession, where he has been engaged as a general practitioner ever since. He has gained an enviable prestige as one of the most able and successful followers of the medical science, and the success which he has attained is due to his thorough technical information and skill, as reinforced by that sympathy and tact which are the inevitable concomitants of precedence in this noble profession.

The marriage of Dr. Rennoe was celebrated in 1895, when Josephine M. Beckwith, a native of White Pigeon, Michigan, and a daughter of Levi and Lucy Beckwith, became his wife. The Doctor is a member of the American Medical Association and the St. Joseph County Medical Society, while his fraternal relations connect him with the Knights of Pythias, the Elks and other societies. He is a staunch Republican, and for four years served as the coroner of St. Joseph county. He has also been an active worker in the local militia, having served as captain surgeon of the Third Indiana National Guards from 1900 to 1904, and he is now the examining surgeon of the order.

WILLIAM ALLEN WICKHAM, M. D., who for a number of years past has been

actively engaged in the medical profession in South Bend, is one of the most talented members of his profession in northern Indiana. Being of broad and liberal mind, and having enjoyed the advantages of a superior education, he has had the interests of the people deeply at heart, and by pen and speech has used his influence in the advocacy of higher education and training for physicians. He was born in Goshen, Indiana, on the 28th of February, 1860, a son of William Wallace and Anne (Reiley) Wickham, the latter a native of Ireland. The father was born in the state of New York, but when a young man made his way to Indiana, where he was engaged in the practice of medicine for over half a century. His long professional career has been attended with marked success, and his name is a household word in the homes of the community in which he resides. He has now reached the eighty-seventh milestone on the journey of life, and those who have known him longest esteem him most highly.

Dr. W. A. Wickham obtained his literary education in the high school of Goshen, while his professional training was pursued in the Eclectic Medical College of Cincinnati, Ohio, in which he was graduated in 1880. He then took post graduate courses in Europe in 1893-95, also in Chicago in 1903. Thus with an excellent training to serve as a foundation on which to rear the superstructure of his life work he began practice in South Bend, where success has attended his efforts. He has made a specialty of the eye, ear, nose and throat, and has also been United States Pension Examiner and surgeon since McKinley's first administration. He is a member of the County and State Medical Societies and of the order of Elks. Dr. Wickham has been a resident of South Bend since 1881, and throughout all these years he has commanded the regard of all by his upright life.

LOUIS S. LA PIERRE, D. D. S. During the years in which he has been engaged in the practice of dentistry in South Bend, Dr. La Pierre has demonstrated the fact that he is well informed concerning the principles of the science, and has not only maintained his position among the leaders of the dental fraternity, but has taken part in much of the public and social life of the city, so that he is accounted one of her honored citizens. His birth occurred in South Bend on the 8th of June, 1866, his father, J. M. La Pierre, having

been a prominent business man in this city for many years. The son Louis was educated in the schools of his native city and those of Walkerton, Indiana, and after the completion of his literary education he entered the employ of Cushing & Company, pharmacists, with whom he remained until 1890. Previous to this time he had formed the determination to devote his life to the practice of dentistry, and with that end in view he pursued a course in the Chicago College of Dental Surgery and graduated in 1892. Returning thence to his native city of South Bend, he immediately opened an office for the practice of his chosen profession, and the large patronage which he now enjoys is indicative of his skill and ability.

On the 17th of February, 1896, Dr. La Pierre was united in marriage to Clara Ginz, of South Bend, and their home is the center of a gracious and warm hearted hospitality.

W. L. OWEN, M. D. During the short time which marks the period of Dr. Owen's professional career he has met with a gratifying success, while at the same time he has won the good will of the citizens of South Bend. He was born in Porter county, Indiana, April 27, 1877, a son of William B. and Annie (Pride) Owen, the former a native of the state of New York, and the latter of Scotland. During his business career the father was engaged largely in manufacturing enterprises, in the making of porous tiles, etc., and his life's labors were ended in death in 1901, having survived his wife for a number of years, she having passed away in 1897.

The public schools of Lake county, Indiana, and the Morgan Park Academy, of Chicago, furnished Dr. Owen, with his early literary training, while his medical education was received in the Hahnemann Medical College of Chicago, from which he graduated in 1906. Immediately after his graduation he came to South Bend, where he has since been actively engaged in professional work.

In 1898, Dr. Owen married Miss Mary Wil-ling, who was a practicing physician at the time of her marriage, also a graduate of Hahnemann, and she is now associated with her husband in practice. Both are members of the St. Joseph County Medical Society.

CORNELIUS H. MYERS, M. D. One of the exacting of all the higher lines of occupation to which a man may lend his energies is that of the physician. A most scrupulous prelimin-



C. H. Myers, M. D.

ary training is demanded and a nicety of judgment little understood by the laity. Thus when professional success is attained in any instance it may be taken as certain that such measure of success has been thoroughly merited. In Cornelius H. Myers we have one who has gained distinction in the line of his chosen calling, who has been an earnest and discriminating student, and who holds a position of due relative precedence among the medical practitioners of northern Indiana. He is a native son of Ohio, his birth occurring in Wayne county of that state on the 29th of October, 1853, a son of Enos and Mary (Funk) Myers, both of whom claimed the commonwealth of Pennsylvania as their place of birth. In 1854, however, a year after the birth of their son Cornelius, they removed to Elkhart county, Indiana, where the father engaged in agricultural pursuits and where the son attended the public schools during his early boyhood days. After completing his education he taught school in Elkhart and St. Joseph counties for two years.

Prepared by a broad general knowledge for entrance into professional life, Mr. Myers then went to Goshen and entered the office of Dr. Whipple, being then twenty-three years of age, and he remained there for six months. He was next a student in Hahnemann College for two years, graduating therein in 1879, and in the same year he returned to that institution for a post-graduate course, also taking a post-graduate course in the New York Homeopathic College. All this was a splendid training for the young physician, and thus with a comprehensive knowledge of anatomy and the science of medicine he began the practice of his chosen profession in South Bend, where he has succeeded because he desired to succeed. Nature has endowed him bountifully, and he has studiously, carefully and conscientiously increased the talents that were given him. Dr. Myers holds membership relations with the Indiana Homeopathic Association and the American Institute, and has also served as coroner of St. Joseph county.

The marriage of Dr. Myers was celebrated in 1879, when Gertrude Harris became his wife. She is a daughter of Fred Harris, one of the honored old pioneers of St. Joseph county, while her mother was a sister of Judge Andrew Anderson, of South Bend. Six children have been born of this union, Frederick, Edgar, George, Jeanette, Gertrude and Margaret. The family are members of the Presbyterian church.

RICHARD B. DUGDALE, M. D., who occupies an enviable position as a member of the medical profession in St. Joseph county, was born in South Bend on the 17th of September, 1868. He is a son of Thomas and Susannah Dugdale, both natives of England. The father came to South Bend in the '60s, and was thereafter employed in the Oliver Chilled Plow Company for thirty-eight years, or until his life's labors were ended in death in June, 1905, at the age of sixty-eight years.

Richard B. Dugdale, whose name introduces this review, received his preparatory education in the public schools of his native city, graduating from the high school in 1887, and two years later, in 1889, he became a student in Rush Medical College of Chicago, where he graduated in 1892. During the three years following his graduation Dr. Dugdale was engaged in practice in North Liberty, Indiana, and on the expiration of that period, in 1895, returned to South Bend, where he has since been numbered among the leading members of the medical fraternity. He is a member of the County, State and National Medical Societies, and in 1905 was made president of the County Medical Society. During the three terms of 1894-96-98, he was the county coroner of St. Joseph county. His professional career has been attended with marked success. His promptness, his sympathetic nature and his generosity are well known factors in his personality, and those who have known him longest esteem him most highly.

Dr. Dugdale was married in 1893 to Miss Fannie Bungay, a daughter of Francis B. Bungay, of Constantine, Michigan, and they have one son, Milo, who was born October 29, 1895. The Doctor gives his political support to the Republican party, while fraternally he is a member of the Elks, the Woodmen of the World and other societies. The family are members of the Presbyterian church.

WALTER D. CHAFFEE, M. D. In the practice of medicine in South Bend, Dr. Chaffee has demonstrated the fact that he is well informed concerning the principles of the medical science and their correct application to the needs of suffering humanity, and has therefore been accorded a liberal patronage. He is a native son of Michigan, born in Lima on the 4th of August, 1865. His father, the Rev. Comfort T. Chaffee, was born in the state of New York and was a well known minister of the Baptist church, having been pastor of

the church of that denomination at the time of the birth of his son Walter. His death occurred on the 23d of June, 1899, where he was living in quiet retirement after a pastorate in the Baptist church of that city. He was also at one time pastor of a church in South Bend. He was a Doctor of Divinity, and was thoroughly earnest and sincere in all his thoughts, words and deeds, and his noble, manly life proved an inspiration to many of his friends and followers. He was also a great financier, and while in charge of his church at Centerville, Michigan, he built knitting mills there, of which he was president, and he was also an organizer and president of the First National Bank of Centerville, Michigan. Prior to entering the ministry he was admitted to the bar and practiced law at Three Rivers, Michigan. Mrs. Chaffee bore the maiden name of Hattie Dennison, and was a native of Ohio.

Dr. Walter Chaffee was a student in the University of Nebraska and Central University of Pella, Iowa, in those excellent educational institutions receiving the instruction which enabled him to enter upon the study of his chosen life work, for he had decided upon the medical profession as his vocation and to that end entered the Hahnemann Medical College of Chicago. Graduating from that institution in 1886, he immediately began practice in Saginaw, Michigan, where he remained for only a few months, and then spent a short time in Vicksburg and Three Rivers. Since 1888 he has been a resident of South Bend, and his long identification with this place and his prominence here makes his name a household word in the homes of this community. His professional career has been attended with success. His promptness, his generosity and his sympathetic nature are well known factors of his life, and those who have known him longest esteem him most highly. He is a homeopath and gynecologist, while in his fraternal relations Dr. Chaffee is a member of the Masonic order, Lodge No. 45 and the Chapter, and of the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks.

JACOB W. HILL. As a member of the medical profession Dr. Jacob W. Hill has won distinction, and throughout the period of his residence in St. Joseph county he has enjoyed an extensive and remunerative practice. He is progressive in all his ideas, constantly reading and studying, and keeps in close touch with the spirit of the times. He was born in

Columbia county, Pennsylvania, September 6, 1858, a son of Jacob and Anna (Auchenbach) Hill, natives also of the Keystone state. The father, who was a farmer by occupation, passed away in death in 1859.

Dr. Hill received his elementary education in the public schools of Pennsylvania, while later he attended Dickerson Seminary of Williamsport, that state, in which he was graduated in 1877, and he then entered upon the study of the profession which he had determined to make his life work. He first studied under the preceptorship of Dr. Jesse R. Caselberry, and in 1881 completed the course in the Jefferson Medical College. In the same year he came to South Bend and opened an office for the practice of medicine, and he has met with gratifying success. He is a student and endeavors to keep abreast of the times in everything relating to the discoveries in medical science. Progressive in his ideas and favoring modern methods as a whole, he does not dispense with many of the true and tried systems which have stood the test of years. During the past eight years Dr. Hill has served as secretary of the St. Joseph county board of health, is a member of the State and County Medical Societies, was a member of the Board of Censors of the St. Joseph County Medical Society, is a delegate to the State Medical Society, appointed in 1905 for two years and is a member of the Masonic lodge, No. 45 and of the Chapter No. 29.

ELBERT W. McALLISTER, M. D. Dr. McAllister, a prominent representative of the medical profession in South Bend, with office and residence at 1327 West Washington street, was born in Buffalo, New York, July 1, 1845. His father, William A. McAllister, was a native of Connecticut, although his father was born in Ireland and his mother in Norway, and was extensively engaged in dealing in harness in his native state. About 1854 he came to Goshen, Indiana, and there his death occurred when he had reached the age of eighty-four years. Mrs. McAllister bore the maiden name of Ellen Stevens, and was of German descent. She was called to the home beyond after reaching the age of seventy-five years.

Dr. McAllister, their only child, was about eight years old when he accompanied his parents on their removal to Indiana, the family home being established at Goshen, where he was reared and educated. When a young man he began the study of medicine, but his pre-

paration for that profession was interrupted by his enlistment in 1864 for service in the Civil war, becoming a member of Company D, One Hundred and Thirty-Sixth Indiana Volunteer Infantry, in which he served his period of enlistment and then returned to his home in Goshen. From 1861 until 1863 he was a student in the Rush College and University of Michigan, after which he resumed his medical studies and graduated at the Long Island College Hospital of Brooklyn, New York, in 1866. His first work in his chosen profession was as surgeon on a line of sailing vessels plying between Liverpool and New York city, but after one year of this work he engaged in a general practice of medicine in Goshen in partnership with Dr. Wickham, that relationship continuing until 1874, when Dr. McAllister came to South Bend. Here he entered into partnership relations with Dr. L. J. Ham, with whom he remained until 1879, and since that time he has been alone in practice. Dr. McAllister in a large measure meets all the requirements necessary for a successful physician, and the value of his services to the community cannot be overestimated. He is a member of Auten Post, G. A. R., of South Bend, also of the Masonic order in this city, in which he has attained the Knight Templar degree. The marriage of Dr. McAllister and Miss Alice Elliott, was celebrated in about 1870, and they have two children, Nellie, the wife of Thomas Luce, of South Bend, and William E., a machinist.

JAMES M. GARRISON, D. V. S. Dr. Garrison, who is accorded an extensive patronage as a veterinary surgeon in St. Joseph county, was born in Penn township of this county February 3, 1847, a son of Lewis and Catharine (Mead) Garrison, the latter of French descent, although her father was born in Vermont. Mr. Garrison was a native of New York, and was numbered among the early pioneers of St. Joseph county, Indiana, but in 1849 he joined the tide of emigration to California, and his death occurred during his residence in that state. In their family were two sons, the elder being George A., a prominent real estate dealer in Guthrie, Oklahoma.

Dr. Garrison was reared to years of maturity in St. Joseph county, receiving his education in the schools of Mishawaka, and after its completion he engaged in the practice of veterinary surgery. On the 17th of October, 1861, he enlisted for service in the

Civil war, becoming a member of Company F, Forty-eighth Indiana Volunteer Infantry. He was only fifteen years of age at the time of his enlistment, and was one of the youngest soldiers to carry a knapsack in the war of the rebellion. He subsequently re-enlisted in the same company and regiment, and took part in many of the historic battles of the war, including Corinth and Malvern Hill, and was then transferred to Sherman's army and went with him in the celebrated march to the sea. He was never seriously wounded, although on one occasion he was hit by a piece of shell. During his entire military career of four years and fourteen days, he was in active service as a private, and throughout that time his brother was with him in the same regiment, both participating in the Grand Review at Washington, after which he received an honorable discharge at Lexington, Kentucky, in 1865. Returning thence to his old home in Mishawaka, Dr. Garrison engaged in the quiet pursuit of agriculture, but a short time afterward resumed his practice as a veterinary surgeon in Penn township, St. Joseph county. For a period of two years he was in Warsaw, Indiana, returning thence to Mishawaka, but later went to Marcellus, Michigan. In 1893 he took up his abode in South Bend, where for the past thirteen years he has been actively engaged in the practice of veterinary surgery, in that time winning for himself a prominent place among the professional men of the community.

In 1869, in Mishawaka, Dr. Garrison was married to Catherine Westfall, a native of Mechanicsburg, Pennsylvania, and a daughter of Jacob and Sarah Westfall, also of that commonwealth. Seven children have been born of this union, namely: William; Laura, wife of George Harper, of South Bend; Frank; Ida, wife of Arthur Fordham; Mamie, at home; Jay, of South Bend; and Lulu, also at home. The Doctor is a staunch supporter of Republican principles, although in local affairs he votes rather for the man than party, and during his residence in Cass county, Michigan, he served as a deputy sheriff, resigning that office to remove to South Bend, where he is now a well known and honored citizen. He holds pleasant relations with his old army comrades by his membership in the Grand Army of the Republic.

ROBERT SHANKLIN, M. D. During his brief connection with the practice of medicine in South Bend, Dr. Shanklin has demonstrated

the fact that he is well informed concerning the principles of the medical science, and has therefore been accorded a liberal patronage. He was born in Frankfort, Indiana, on the 3d of February, 1881; a son of Robert and Mary Jane (Sims) Shanklin, both natives of Indiana. The father, who was born in Carroll county, followed agricultural pursuits during his early business career, but during the past thirty years has been the senior member of the firm of R. P. Shanklin & Company, wholesale grocers of Frankfort, Indiana. He has earned for himself an enviable reputation as a careful man of business, always known for his prompt and honorable methods of dealing, which have won him the deserved and unbounded confidence of his fellow citizens.

After attending the public schools of Frankfort, Indiana, Robert Shanklin entered Hanover College, in which he was graduated in 1902 with the degree of B. S., while in 1905 he graduated in medicine, from Rush Medical College of Chicago. His first year after leaving college was spent as an interne in St. Mary's Hospital in Milwaukee, Wisconsin, but in August, 1906, he came to South Bend and entered at once into the practice of medicine. Although numbered among the younger practitioners he maintains his position among the leaders of the medical fraternity, and has also taken part in much of the public and social life of South Bend. Dr. Shanklin is an exemplary member of the Presbyterian church, and also of the Masonic order, South Bend Lodge No. 294. As a member of the St. Joseph Medical Society he has taken an active interest in all medical affairs affecting the profession in general.

ALLEN G. MILLER, M. D. One who has attained distinction and wide-spread celebrity for his skill and research is Dr. Allen G. Miller, whose knowledge of the science of medicine is broad and comprehensive, and his ability in applying its principles to the needs of suffering humanity has gained him an enviable prestige in professional circles. He was born in Somerset county, Pennsylvania, October 12, 1835, and is descended from a prominent old Saxon family and from three brothers who left Saxony, Germany, and came to Pennsylvania about the same time as William Penn, and in that commonwealth his great-grandfather, Jacob Miller, was born. The grandfather, Abraham Miller, was born near Philadelphia, and to him belongs the honor of being the first sheriff of Somerset

county. Isaac Miller, the father of the Doctor, also claimed Somerset county as the place of his nativity, and he became well known there as a hat manufacturer. He married Caroline Miller, also a native of Somerset county, Pennsylvania, where her father, Jacob G. Miller, was also born. He became one of the first merchants of Somerset county, and he there also owned two tanneries, and was accounted one of the leading citizens of his time in the county. He was of Prussian descent.

Dr. Allen G. Miller, the only living representative of his parents' family of five children, two sons and three daughters, accompanied his father on his removal to Allegany county, Maryland, when six years of age, and when fourteen the family home was established in Baltimore that state, the son receiving his educational training in the schools of Baltimore and Philadelphia, and also in the University of Maryland. Having decided to enter the medical profession, he became a student in the Jefferson Medical College of Philadelphia, and completing the course therein returned to Somerset county, Pennsylvania, to engage in practice, there continuing until 1879, when he transferred his residence and the scene of his activities to South Bend. He first located on South Michigan street, where he was engaged in practice during the long period of twenty-five years, and in 1904 he removed to the corner of Miller and Sample streets. In his practice the Doctor has made a specialty of chronic and complicated diseases, and is the proprietor of what is known as the Neuropathic Remedies Laboratory, 721 East Sample street, where his remedies are compounded under his own supervision. He also owns the Dr. Miller Sanatorium and Northern Indiana Mineral Springs, located on the St. Joseph river between Mishawaka and South Bend, while at the present time he is planning to build a large observatory on Miller's Hill, which is claimed to be the highest point in the state of Indiana, and is located in Penn township, south and west of Mishawaka. In addition to all these varied interests, the most noted of which is his large and elegantly equipped laboratory, Dr. Miller owns the largest orchard in the county of St. Joseph, consisting of twenty thousand trees of various kinds of fruit, and which is located in Penn township. In this township he is also the owner of Floral Park. He is one of the largest land owners in St. Joseph county, owning the

south portion of the Frantz addition to South Bend, also the Peterman addition, and he has five hundred and thirty acres of land in the coal regions of Somerset county, Pennsylvania, also four hundred and eighty acres of the finest timber land in Pennsylvania, consisting of poplar, basswood and oak timber. This tract is located on the Raystown branch of the Juniata river. Thus as a physician and business man, Dr. Miller has made of life a grand success, and South Bend is fortunate that he has allied his interests with her.

In September, 1856, the Doctor married Susan Kimmel, whose death occurred on the 16th of November, 1886, aged forty-five years. She was the mother of fourteen children: Clara, born June 27, 1857; Horace M., March 4, 1858; Isaac N., August 2, 1859; Elmer E., January 30, 1861; Edward S., August 8, 1862; one who died in infancy; Frank D., born March 4, 1866; Anna A., May 28, 1869; Nora A., March 29, 1871; Mary M., April 28, 1872; an infant born January 15, 1874; Cora E., February 2, 1875; Charles H., August 1, 1877; and an infant who was born and died in 1880. On the 21st of March, 1888, Dr. Miller married Jennie E. Sanderson. During his residence in the east the Doctor held membership with all the leading medical societies. He is well known throughout the state of Indiana in connection with the medical profession, for he has been eminently successful in his chosen field of endeavor, and the fraternity places him in its front ranks.

HON. WILLIAM WEBSTER BUTTERWORTH, M. D. Possibly there are no names upon the pages of the history of St. Joseph county that are more worthy of special mention in a work of this character than that which forms the caption of these memoirs. A name which was a household word in hundreds of homes—the name of Dr. W. W. Butterworth, which stood for all that was grand and noble. In fact the name of Butterworth has been connected with affairs of the state and nation for over a century past, and the subject of this sketch was a most creditable representative of that grand old pioneer family, of Quaker stock.

William Webster Butterworth, M. D., (deceased) was born in Waynesville, Warren county, Ohio. His father, Benjamin Butterworth, was born in Campbell county, Virginia, and his father, Benjamin Butterworth, was a native of the same county. His father, Isaac Butterworth, was born in England and came

to America in Colonial times and settled in Campbell county, where he spent the remainder of his days. His son Benjamin, grandfather of our subject, was reared and married in his native state, but in an early day removed from there to Ohio and settled on the Miami river in Warren county, where he was one of the first settlers. He purchased about one thousand five hundred acres of timbered land and first erected a log house, but later erected a commodious stone house, a large frame barn and other farm buildings. He and his sons were Abolitionists, and his home was a station on the "Under ground" railroad through which many a dusky slave passed en route to Canada. He resided here until his death, and the old homestead is now owned by his great-grandson, Professor Eugene Foster. The maiden name of his wife was Aravilla Gilbert, also a native of Virginia and of English ancestry. She reared the following children: Moorman, Benjamin, Polly, Millie, Betsy, Nancy, Samuel, Rachel, William and Thomas. The parents were members of the Society of Friends, and reared their children in that faith. Their son Benjamin was reared in his native state, and went to Ohio with his parents. His father gave him land in Waynesville, and his wife inherited land adjoining, so that he had an extensive farm. While living there he went to Michigan and bought government land in that state, and also came to Indiana and purchased land in St. Joseph county. In 1835 he sold his possessions in Ohio and emigrated to Indiana, accompanied by his family, making the entire journey with teams. He located about three miles south of LaPorte, where he purchased a tract of land and later added thereto until he owned nearly one thousand acres, and there he made his home till his death in 1869, aged seventy-four years. The maiden name of his wife was Judith Welch. She was born in Iredell county, North Carolina. Her father, Gilbert Welch, a native of Virginia, married Chloe Hendricks. She was one of seven sisters and was of Swedish ancestry, a lineal descendant of Gustavus Adolphus. Samuel Gilbert Welch removed with his family from North Carolina to Hillsboro, Ohio, and later to Waynesville. From there he came to Indiana and lived for a time, then returned to Waynesville and spent his last years there. He and his family were also members of the Society of Friends. Mrs. Benjamin Butterworth died at the

homestead in LaPorte county in 1880. She reared eight children: Mary, William Webster, Isaac, Ruth, Moses, Sarah E., Benjamin Thomas and Turner.

The subject received his early education in the public schools of Waynesville and La Porte county, and supplemented this by a course in an advanced school at Greencastle, Indiana. He studied medicine at a medical college at LaPorte, and later graduated from a medical college in New York city, after which he commenced practice at Mishawaka. At the first call for troops in 1861 he was called upon by Governor Morton to go to the front as surgeon of the three months regiment. After the expiration of that term he was appointed surgeon of the Ninety-ninth regiment, Indiana Volunteer Infantry, and was with the regiment in all its marches, campaigns and battles, including Sherman's march to the sea. He served until after the close of the war, and then returned to Mishawaka. He served for two terms as a member of the state legislature and during that time was instrumental in framing and passing many bills of general good. He was a personal friend of Governor Hendricks. He resumed his practice and continued until his death in 1888, December 7. He was twice married, first to Sarah J., a daughter of Elias Smith, of Mishawaka, who died five years later. He was married to his second wife, Mrs. Eugene Kennedy, daughter of Milo Whitney and Sarah (Hall) Smith, and widow of Eugene Kennedy, in 1859. Milo Whitney Smith was born in Benson, Vermont, and his father Judge Smith, was a native of England and on removing to America settled in Benson, where he spent the remainder of his days. The father of Mrs. Butterworth attended the State University at Burlington, and later went to Richmond, Virginia, and attended the State University there. While in Richmond he married Sarah Thorston Hall, daughter of William Hall, a native of England, who on emigrating to America settled in Hanover county, Virginia, where he bought a plantation which he operated by slave labor. After his marriage Mr. Smith returned to Benson, Vermont, and entered into the practice of law. He became prominent in public affairs and served as a representative in the state legislature. About 1854 he came to Indiana and located at Plymouth, where he practiced for a time, and then removed to Mishawaka

and resided there until his death in 1860, aged sixty-two years. His wife survived him several years. She reared six children: Carrie Virginia, widow of E. A. Sherwood; Mrs. Butterworth; Melvina A., who married David Smith of Mishawaka; Milo Augustus; Mary Louise, who married Jerry L. Taylor; and Ella, who married Dr. W. H. Hanford, of South Bend.

To Dr. and Mrs. Butterworth there were born three children, William Eugene, deputy postmaster at Mishawaka; Dr. Charlie M., a practicing physician of South Bend; and Camilla, superintendent of the kindergarten at the Laurel school.

Dr. Butterworth had a winning personality, a genuine appreciation of manly principles, a noble purpose and a pure heart. He was generous, and his innumerable acts of kindness were unostentatiously and quietly performed. Of a philosophical turn of mind, he saw the best in his friends and life in general, and thus brought the best of friends to him. He was all that can be termed a manly man; large in sympathy, the depth and wealth of his friendships, and above all the love of his fellow men, most applicable to him is "Homer's Requiem to a Departed Hero:" "Ne'er to the chambers where the mighty rest Since their foundation came a nobler guest; Nor e'er was to the bowers of bliss conveyed A fairer spirit, a more welcome shade."

WILLIAM E. BUTTERWORTH, the deputy postmaster of Mishawaka, is one of the native sons of this city, his natal day being the 17th of October, 1860. His father, W. W. Butterworth, was a native of Virginia, but in an early day he removed with his parents to La Porte, Indiana, and later came to Mishawaka, where he was one of the best known physicians of the early days, practicing his profession here for forty-six years. It was in this city that he was married to Sarah M. Smith, by whom he had one daughter, now deceased, and after the death of the wife and mother he married Sarah E. Smith, the widow of Eugene Kennedy. Their union was blessed by the birth of three children: William E., whose name introduces this review; Dr. C. M. Butterworth, of South Bend; and Camilla, a kindergarten teacher in the Laurel school of South Bend.

After completing his education in the public schools of Mishawaka, William E. Butterworth engaged in the drug business, thus continuing from 1880 until 1892, while for three

years he was also engaged in the wood and coal business. In 1898 he became the deputy postmaster of Mishawaka, first under Mr. Gaylor and later under Mr. Shaw, the present postmaster. He is a popular official, systematic and careful in the discharge of his duties, courteous to all, and no man connected with the office has a greater number of friends than has he. He is also connected with the agricultural interests of the county, and is the owner of one hundred and forty acres of land in the eastern part of Mishawaka.

In 1887 Mr. Butterworth was united in marriage to Ella, the daughter of William and Emily (Griffin) Skerritt and a native of Mishawaka. Mr. Butterworth is a staunch Republican in his political affiliations, and, a life-long resident of Mishawaka, he is well and favorably known to its citizens.

GEORGE A. OSBORN, M. D. During many years Dr. Osborn was engaged in the practice of medicine in South Bend, and in that time endeared himself to many friends, so that his death was deeply mourned throughout this section of the county. He was born on the Ohio river in Madison county, Indiana, February 28, 1823, his father, Isaac Osborn, having been extensively engaged in shipping on the river. The son, however, was reared in Clinton county, Ohio, receiving his early literary training in its public schools, and later pursued a scientific and medical course in Indianapolis, Indiana. For about fifteen years after leaving college he was engaged in the practice of his chosen profession in Lafayette, Indiana, and in 1886 he arrived in South Bend, resuming his medical practice, which was continued until within a few years of his death. His busy and useful life was ended on the 5th of November, 1903. His long professional career was attended with marked success, while in private life he gained that warm personal regard which arises from true nobility of character, kindness and geniality. He exemplified in his life the beneficent spirit of the Masonic order, of which he was long a faithful member, and he was also a member of the Medical Society of Indiana.

On the 22d of December, 1846, Dr. Osborn was united in marriage to Dr. Margaret A. Fannon, who was born in Clinton county, Ohio, April 30, 1827, the daughter of John and Helen (McGrath) Fannon, both also natives of that commonwealth. The father, who was an agriculturist, moved to Pickaway

county, Ohio, about 1827, while six years later, in 1833, he took up his abode in Clinton county, that state, where his death occurred in 1834. Mrs. Fannon was but thirty-six years of age when she was called to the home beyond, the husband and wife dying on the same day, leaving their three little children, two sons and a daughter, homeless and parentless. Their daughter Margaret was then but seven years of age, and she was bound out to a family named Hoblit, with whom she lived until eighteen years old, in the meantime pursuing her education in the public school until she had reached her fourteenth year. She later graduated at the Ladies Commercial College of Xenia, Ohio, and after her marriage began the study of medicine under the preceptorship of her husband and a Professor Brown. She practiced during the war of 1860-65, and had been actively engaged in the profession for ten years before she received her license, but in the meantime had attended the Indiana Medical College. During a long period of years she has continued the practice of medicine in Lafayette and South Bend, in the time winning for herself a name and place among its leading practitioners, and she now confines her duties to office work. She is the mother of eight children, namely: Eugene B., of Milwaukee, Wisconsin; Stephen P., a farmer of St. Joseph county; Sarah E., the wife of David M. Reed, of Lafayette, Indiana; Georgiana, the widow of F. W. Brown and a resident of South Bend; Chase S., a prominent journalist of Sault Ste. Marie, Michigan; Horace E., at home; Charlie, of Jackson, Michigan; W. D., a plumber of South Bend. Dr. Osborn and his wife took up their abode in South Bend during an early epoch in its history, and during the intervening years which have since come and gone they have witnessed many changes, while they also performed their full share in its wonderful development and improvement. During many years they continued the journey of life together until one, tired and worn, lay down to rest, while the other continues on alone until she too shall be called to lay aside the burdens and responsibilities of this life and join her husband in the home beyond.

W. H. HANFORD, M. D. For many years Dr. Hanford has traveled life's journey, and now in the evening of a long, useful and honorable career, he is enjoying a well earned rest, relieved of the burdens and responsi-

bilities of a professional life, for through many decades he was engaged in the practice of both medicine and dentistry. He was born about seven miles from Springfield, in Clark county, Ohio, August 15, 1825, his parents being Henry and Harriet (Chamberlain) Hanford, the former of English and the latter of Welsh descent. The father was reared in his native state of Connecticut, where he followed the dual occupation of farming and coopering, and at one time was engaged in business in what is now Cincinnati, Ohio. When a boy he was associated with the Beecher family, and he often held the little daughter Harriet upon his lap. He continued to make his home at Lewistown, Logan county, Ohio, for many years, his death there occurring when he had reached the eighty-second milestone on the journey of life, but his wife preceded him to the home beyond, dying at the age of seventy-five years. In their family were seven children, all of whom grew to years of maturity, but all have now passed away with the exception of a son and daughter, the latter being Lottie McKennon, of Lewistown, Ohio.

Dr. Hanford, the sixth child in order of birth, was about twelve years of age at the time of the removal of the family to Logan county, Ohio, receiving his education in both Springfield and Lewistown, and he was early inured to the work of the farm. After completing his education he was engaged for about three years in the printing business, but on the expiration of that period began the study of medicine at Bellefontaine, Ohio. Coming to Indiana when about seventeen years of age, he resumed the study of medicine at Lebanon, Boone county, and after completing his studies began the practice of medicine at Republic, Ohio, where he remained for about two years. For some time following Dr. Hanford was engaged in the practice of his profession at Elgin, Illinois, and he then entered upon the dental profession, thus continuing in that city for about two years. He then moved to Sycamore, Illinois, and in 1865 came to South Bend, Indiana, where for a long period he was engaged in both the practice of medicine and dentistry, being without doubt the oldest practitioner in the state of Indiana. He gained an enviable reputation as a successful practitioner, the result of thorough technical information and skill, for he made deep and careful research into the

two sciences to which he devoted so many years of his life.

Dr. Hanford was married in 1864, but his wife has preceded him to the home beyond. Their three children are Carrie, a music teacher of ability and organist of St. Paul's church, and William Arthur and Chester O., of South Bend. The doctor is independent in his political affiliations, preferring to cast his ballot for the men whom he regards as best qualified for their respective positions, and at all times he has been safely relied upon to use his influence in the advancement of whatever has been for the good of the community.

RYAN T. VAN PELT, M. D. In the medical profession advancement is not easily secured, but the high position which Dr. Van Pelt now occupies in the medical fraternity demonstrates the fact that he is well informed concerning the principles of the science, and has therefore been accorded a liberal patronage. He was born in LaPorte, LaPorte county, Indiana, on the 4th of May, 1852. His father, Ryan Van Pelt, Sr., was a native of Pennsylvania, but was reared in Ohio and was a farmer by occupation. In an early day in its development he came to Indiana, and although removing to Illinois in 1861, he afterward returned to this state, and here the remainder of his life was spent, passing away in death at the age of eighty-seven years. He was of Holland descent. Ere his removal from Pennsylvania he married Catherine Van Pelt, and she, too, passed away at the age of eighty-seven years. In their family were twelve children, namely: Mariah; Elizabeth, who died in infancy; Mary; Sarah; Amanda; Abner; Aaron, who laid down his life on the altar of his country in the Civil war; Jacob, also deceased; Eliza, the wife of Reese Stephens, of South Bend; John, who served four years in the war of the rebellion and is now a resident of Salt Lake City, Utah; and Catherine, the wife of Henry C. Wheeler, of South Bend.

Dr. Ryan T. Van Pelt, the youngest of the twelve children, was reared in both Indiana and Illinois, having been about eight years of age when he accompanied his father on the removal to Kankakee of the latter state, where he continued his education in the city schools. Returning thence to LaPorte in 1865, he completed his literary training, graduating from the high school with the class of 1869.

Shortly thereafter he took up the study of medicine in the Rush Medical College of Chicago, where he completed the course and was graduated in 1877, after which for a short time he served as interne in the Cook County Hospital, one of the largest hospitals of that city. From 1878 until 1890 Dr. Van Pelt was engaged in the practice of his chosen profession in Mishawaka, Indiana, after which he returned to Chicago and opened an office in the Lexington hotel, Twenty-second street and Michigan avenue, as a house physician. After a continuous and lucrative practice of thirteen years in Chicago the doctor came to South Bend, his pleasant and well equipped office being located at 222 South Lafayette street. He is a member of the American Medical Society, the St. Joseph County and the Indiana State Medical Societies and the Rush Alumni. Throughout the long period in which Dr. Van Pelt has been a representative of the medical profession he has maintained his position among the leaders of the fraternity and has won a large and lucrative practice.

In 1885 was celebrated the marriage of Dr. Van Pelt and Mrs. Hattie L. Simpson, the widow of Col. John E. Simpson, of St. Louis, and a daughter of Dr. M. G. Sherman, of Michigan City, Indiana. Mrs. Van Pelt was born in Ogdensburg, New York, and received her education in the eastern states. The Doctor married for his second wife, Miss Mary A. Goggin, of Chicago, June 26, 1907. He is a staunch Republican, and fraternally is a member of the Knights of Pythias and the Eagles.

E. M. DROLLINGER. Many years of self-denying labor in the service of suffering humanity is the resume of the life of this honored physician of South Bend. Being of broad and liberal mind, and having enjoyed the advantages of a good education, he has had the interests of the people deeply at heart, and his influence has been exerted at all times as the champion of progress. He was born in Laporte county, Indiana, on the 6th of June, 1853, a son of Gabriel and Mary E. (Chapman) Drollinger, the former a native of South Carolina and the latter of New York.

The literary training of their son, E. M. Drollinger, was received in the excellent public schools of Laporte, and after completing his studies there and having decided upon the medical profession as a life work he entered

the Cincinnati Eclectic Medical Institute, where he was graduated in 1878. In the following year, 1879, he came to South Bend and opened an office for the practice of medicine, where he has practiced for many years and is the loved family physician in many a household.

In 1878, the year of his graduation from his medical college, Dr. Drollinger married Miss Mary A. Jarrell, of Marshall county, Indiana, and they have one daughter.

N. G. BORISOWICG, M. D. In the medical profession advancement comes only through true merit, and that Dr. Borisowieg has a large and representative patronage is indicative of his skill and ability. He was born in Russian Poland, February 14, 1852, and after completing his literary education in his native country began the study of medicine, graduating from the medical department of the Imperial University of Harkow, Russia, in 1886. From the time of his graduation until his emigration to America in 1889 he was engaged in practice in the province of Kursk, Poland, and after his arrival in this country he located at Toledo, Ohio, and resumed his profession. On the 27th of November, 1892, the Doctor arrived in South Bend, Indiana, where he has ever since been engaged in the active practice of his profession. In his long identification with this city he has gained distinction in the line of his chosen calling, for he has ever been an earnest and discriminating student, and now holds a leading place among the medical practitioners of northern Indiana.

Dr. Borisowieg was married in Pennsylvania to Clementena Dydzinska, also a native of Russian Poland, and their pleasant and attractive residence is located on Chapin street, which was built in 1904 and where the doctor also has his well equipped office.

JOHN CASSIDY, M. D. A man's worth in the world is determined by his usefulness and by what he has accomplished for his fellow-men, and he is certainly deserving of the greatest honor and regard whose efforts have been of the greatest benefit to humanity. And to none is there so great an opportunity given as to the physician and surgeon, and a work of this character would certainly be incomplete did it not enroll on its historical pages the gentleman whose name forms the caption of this article. In private life he is distinguished by all that makes the true gentleman, one that subordinates personal ambition to

public good, and seeks the benefit of others,—morally, physically and intellectually—rather than the aggrandizement of self. Endowed by nature with high intellectual qualities to which may be added years of practical experience as a physician and surgeon, Dr. Cassidy needs no introduction, for he has been the well known and loved family physician in the homes of St. Joseph county for a great many years.

Dr. John Cassidy was born in Linden township, Washtenaw county, Michigan. His father, John Cassidy, was born in county Monaghan, Ireland, where his parents were life-long residents. His brothers, Hugh, Cornelius and Michael, and sisters, Mary, Ellen and Catherine, all came to America, and in due time settled in Michigan. The father of our subject was the youngest, and the last to come to America. He joined his brothers and sisters in New York, where he lived for a time, and then went to Chatham, New Jersey, and lived there until 1836. He then started for the territory of Michigan, having been commissioned by his brothers and brothers-in-law to buy land for them. He located in Linden township, Washtenaw county, and entered several tracts of government land, making the journey to Detroit and return on horseback. At this time and for some years after there were no railroads in Michigan. Deer, wild turkeys and other kinds of wild game were plentiful. He immediately commenced improvements by building a log cabin and then commenced to improve the land. In 1838 his wife and child joined him in their western home. He engaged in general farming and stock raising and was the first to introduce sheep into Linden. He was successful, and in due time erected a brick house, a commodious barn, and other farm buildings, and resided there till his death, at a good old age. The maiden name of the mother of our subject was Rose Timmons. She was born in county Fermanagh, Ireland. A brother, Michael, and two sisters, Margaret and Susanna, came to America. Their mother also came and spent her last years with her children, and died at the advanced age of ninety-eight years. The parents of our subject reared seven children, named: Margaret, John, Thomas, William, Mary, Rose and Susanna.

Our subject received his early education in the pioneer schools of his native town, and attended for two years a private school and

the Ypsilanti high school. After completing his course there he entered Notre Dame University at South Bend and graduated from there with the degree of B.S., and later received the degree of M.S. He had as tutors in the different institutions of learning, Duane Doty, who was later superintendent of schools in Chicago; Col. R. W. Johnson, late of Elkhart; Judge Howard O'Brien of Minnesota and Judge Rose of Auburn, and Professor Bacon. After completing his course at Notre Dame, he studied medicine at Ann Arbor one year, then entered Rush Medical College, Chicago, and graduated from that institution in 1868, and commenced practice in South Bend, where he has practiced continuously since. He was married in 1870 to Cecilia Ascher. She was born in New London, Ohio, a daughter of Hermann and Sabrina (King) Ascher, the father a native of Konigsberg, Germany, and the mother of New York state. Dr. and Mrs. Cassidy have eight children: Edith (now Mrs. Connelly) of Detroit; Minnie, Rose, Sophia, John, Bertha, Thomas and Marjorie. The family are members of St. Patrick's Roman Catholic church. The children have all studied at the State University at Ann Arbor. Two have graduated from that institution, and three are now students there.

WILLIAM AUGUSTUS WEISER, M. D. Among those who have attained distinctive prestige in the practice of medicine and whose success has come as the logical result of thorough technical information and skill stands Dr. Weiser, who is a man of scholarly attainments and who has made deep and careful research into the science to which he has devoted his life. He is a descendant of the sturdy, persevering and honorable sons of Germany, for his father, Adam Weiser, was a native of the fatherland, and was a member of the medical profession, as was also his grandfather. The former served as a soldier in the German army, but being opposed to the government of that time, as were also many notable Germans, he escaped to this country at the same time as Carl Schurz, in 1848, first settling in New Jersey. He afterward removed to Philadelphia and Pittsburg, and finally located in Butler county, Pennsylvania, where he practiced medicine until he was accidentally killed at a railroad crossing on the 10th of January, 1900, when he was seventy-seven years of age. He was a typical American citizen, thoroughly in harmony with the spirit

of the republic, and during the Civil war he valiantly fought as a member of Company B, One Hundred and Sixty-eighth Regiment of Pennsylvania Infantry. Mrs. Weiser bore the maiden name of Catherine Werner, and was also a native of Germany. She was also accidentally killed, as the result of a fall, on January 10, 1866, and her father met his death in exactly the same manner in 1894, at the remarkable age of one hundred and four years.

William Augustus Weiser was born in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, on the 6th of March, 1852, and when but twelve years of age was obliged to begin the battle of life for himself. At that time he was taken from school to work as a gathering boy, he being the only boy in Bellevue who could speak the German language. This accomplishment was then quite necessary, as the glass blowers all came from the fatherland. What educational training he received in the earlier years was obtained in the schools of Fayette county, and he was obliged to walk four miles in order to enjoy their privileges. He holds a certificate from a medical school of Chicago, and was elected regent in Pennsylvania under the act of 1881, also in Michigan under the act of 1899, and pursued a post-graduate course in the Chicago Medical College. Dr. Weiser was made professor of pharmacology in Indianapolis, a director in the Bourbon Medical Institute, and is a member of the American Pharmaceutical Association and ex-secretary of the Marshall County Pharmaceutical Association. For a time he studied law and was admitted to practice in Marshall county in 1898, but his entire professional career has been devoted to the medical profession, having practiced in Michigan, South Dakota and is registered in Oklahoma, Illinois and Indiana. He came to South Bend in 1904, and has won prominence in the medical fraternity of this city.

In 1891 the doctor was united in marriage to Miss Mary Ann Lewallen, whose family is a prominent one in Marshall county and is of Welsh descent. He is a member of the United Brethren church, and, fraternally, of the Masonic Lodge No. 227, of Bourbon, Indiana, the Red Men, Loyal Americans, and St. Joseph County Grange, Society No. 584, with which his wife is also identified. The doctor is also about to join the Sons of Veterans, Grand Army of the Republic, and

thus be one of the patriotic host to keep Old Glory flying.

EDWARD E. PAXSON. During the years of Dr. Paxson's connection in South Bend he has won for himself a place of distinction in the dental fraternity in this part of the state. He has now an office well equipped with modern appliances for the conduct of his business, and he ever keeps in touch with the advancement that is continually being made in the profession, utilizing modern methods and adding to this a superior mechanical skill which is one of the strong elements of success in the dental practitioner.

The doctor was born in Elkhart county, Indiana, on the 11th of December, 1864, a son of Eli W. and Elizabeth (Vesey) Paxson, the father born in Virginia, and the mother in Vermont. The father, who was born in 1825, removed to Elkhart county in 1835, where he was long engaged in agricultural pursuits, and he still resides at Bristol in that county at the age of eighty-two years. Dr. Paxson attended the public schools of South Bend during his boyhood days, and graduated from the high school in 1883. Choosing the profession of dentistry as a life work he then entered the dental department of the University of Michigan, in which he was graduated in 1887, and in the same year came to South Bend and opened an office for the practice of his profession. He is a member of the Michigan State Dental Society and of the South Western Michigan Dental Society.

FRANK D. HAGER, D. D. S. Dr. Hager, one of the leaders in the ranks of the dental fraternity in South Bend, with offices at 108 West Washington street, was born in Hagersville, Ontario, December 14, 1871, the sixth son of Charles and Mary Hager, who were natives of Canada. After attending the parochial and high schools of his native city of Hagersville their son Frank entered the Caledonia Institute, where he completed the course and was graduated, and to still further perfect himself in his literary studies then became a student in the normal school, there preparing himself for the teacher's profession. But after teaching for a short time in Canada he entered the dental office of Dr. Nobbs, while in 1896 he graduated from the Chicago Dental College and in the same year came to South Bend and began the practice of his chosen profession. From that time forward Dr. Hager has steadily advanced in his

work, keeping in touch with its onward progress, and the prestige which he has gained is indicated by the liberal patronage which he receives.

In 1899 the doctor was married to Adalyn Von Trump, whose father, C. C. Trump, is a well known resident of South Bend, where the daughter was born and received her education. One child has been born of this union, Frances Adalyn. Dr. Hager is a member of the Northern Indiana Dental Society and the Chicago Alumni Association, while his fraternal relations connect him with the Elks and the Masons in South Bend. Dr. Hager is also well known in the musical circles of this city, having received an excellent musical education, and is now basso in the choir of the First Presbyterian church, also a member of the male quartette and is engaged in much concert work.

S. M. McDONALD, D. D. S. Since entering the professional world Dr. McDonald has steadily advanced step by step until he has won for himself a place of distinction in the dental fraternity of northern Indiana. His palatial offices at 102 South Michigan street, South Bend, are equipped with modern appliances, and he ever keeps in touch with the advancement made in dentistry. At a very early day in its development, in 1847, John Milton McDonald, the father of the doctor and a native of Ohio, came with ox teams to South Bend, being then about twelve years of age, and was accompanied on the journey by his parents and other members of their family. From that early day he has remained an honored resident of this city and St. Joseph county, where with his wife, nee Elizabeth Ouderkirk, a native of New York, they are enjoying the fruits of long years of toil in the past. In their family were ten children, eight of whom grew to years of maturity.

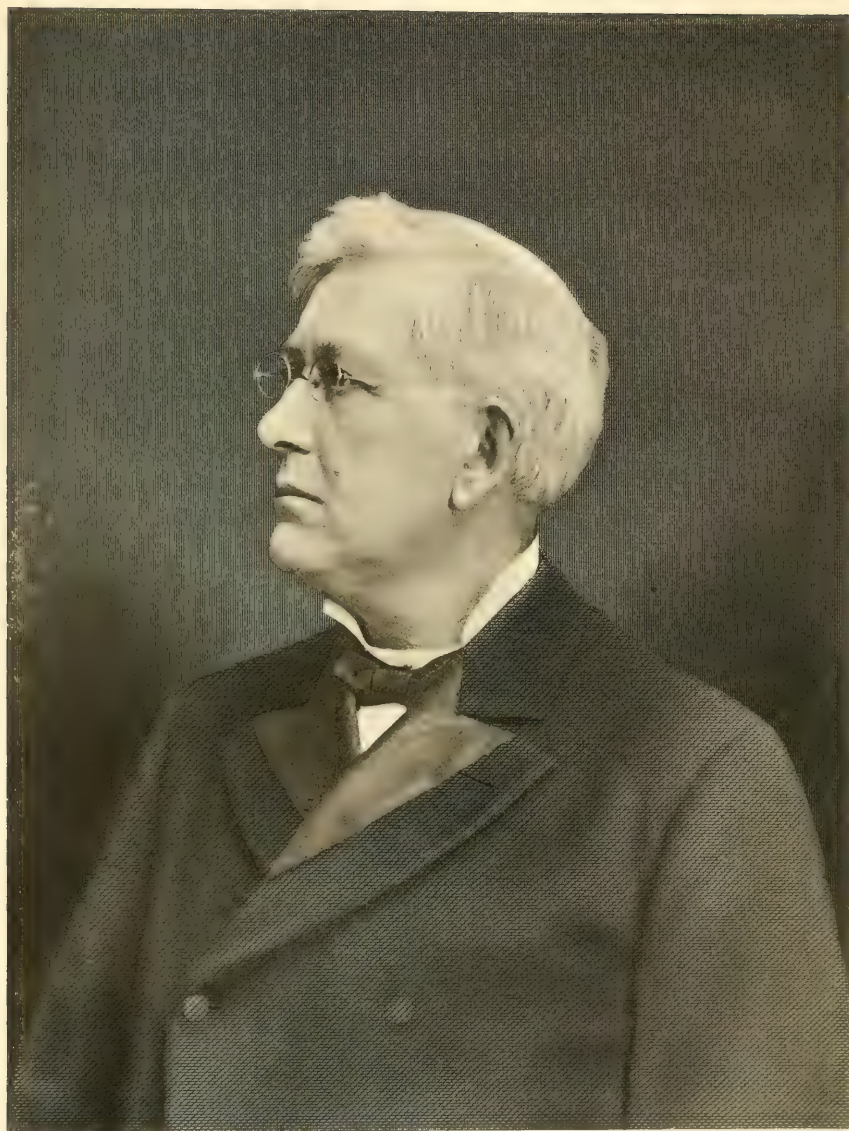
The much lamented Charles Albert McDonald, a brother of the doctor and eldest son of Mr. and Mrs. John M. McDonald, passed away December 14, 1905, at forty-six years of age. His untimely and regrettable death was due to typhoid fever mistakenly diagnosed and treated as malaria. At the time of his death, Mr. McDonald was city editor of the South Bend Times, a leading daily and semi-weekly newspaper, and was also one of the principal stockholders and founders of the Times Printing company, an institution he was devotedly identified with for a quarter

of a century. The community and newspaperdom never lost a more capable, popular, prominent man, nor a better friend and citizen.

Dr. McDonald, the seventh in order of birth of his parents' children, is a native of South Bend, and in its public schools received his early literary training. He then attended the Kansas City Dental College, from which he was graduated in 1895, and since 1899 he has been actively engaged in the practice of his chosen profession in the city of his birth, being now an acknowledged leader in the ranks of the fraternity. But outside of his profession Dr. McDonald has also achieved a worthy success, for he is a true railroad man and is now serving as president of the Chicago, St. Louis & Kansas City Electric Railway company's project. He is recognized as a railroad promoter, and was one of the organizers of the latter company. During the Spanish-American war the doctor enlisted as a member of the One Hundred and Fifty-seventh Indiana Volunteer Infantry, serving as brigade dental surgeon throughout the entire struggle, and at its close returned to his home in South Bend and resumed the practice of dentistry. He has made of life a success, and were one to seek for its secret it would be found in that persistent purpose which has been a motive power in his life to make the world brighter and better by putting to the best use all that he is and has.

He is the author and writer of many good articles that have appeared in newspapers and magazines throughout the country.

JAMES B. GREENE, M. D., who is one of the leading physicians and surgeons of St. Joseph county, was born in Lower Sandusky, Ohio, May 29, 1845. His father, John L. Greene, a native of St. Lawrence county, New York, removed to Ohio with his father in 1813, the family locating on a farm of three hundred and twenty acres. This proved poor land, however, and was later sold for one thousand dollars, considered a large price at that time, although it is now located in the very heart of the city of Cleveland. In the journey to the Buckeye state Abraham Garfield drove a team for Mr. Greene, Sr., and in the party was also Mary Ballou, who gave her hand in marriage to Abraham Garfield after their arrival in Ohio, and their union resulted in the birth of James A. Garfield, the loved and honored president of the United States. John L. Greene took up the study of



J. B. Greene





James G. Bostwick.

law and became a prominent member of the bar of Ohio, also a judge of the common pleas court for many years, his son, John L., Jr., succeeding him both in practice and on the bench. His death occurred on the 8th of November, 1879, when he had reached the age of eighty-seven years. He had married Marie Rosetta Du Comb a native of Bordeaux, France, whose father was a sailor and a resident of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, and was the first man to run the British blockade in 1812. The subject of this review is a representative of a military family on both the maternal and paternal sides. His paternal grandfather, who was born at Valley Forge, was a soldier in the war of 1812, his father, Eleazer Greene, having been a captain in the Continental army at the time, while the latter's father was the well known Nathaniel Greene. Dr. Greene's father and eldest brother were soldiers in the Mexican war, while seven brothers and himself served in the war of the rebellion, and his youngest brother, Marshal, too young to serve in the Civil war, took part in the Spanish war and was killed at Manila.

James B. Greene, one of a family of twelve children, but all of whom are now deceased with the exception of himself and brother Vincent Du Comb, superintendent of the Automatic Telephone Company of Chicago, received his education in the schools of Ohio, while his professional studies were pursued in the Cleveland Medical College, in which he graduated in 1867, and the Royal College of Physicians and Surgeons of Canada, completing the course in the latter institution in 1890. On the 1st of June, 1867, he opened an office in Woodland, St. Joseph county, for the practice of his chosen profession, but in the following year came to Mishawaka. His preparation for the medical profession was thorough and comprehensive, and since his entrance thereto has won high encomiums from the public and profession. Dr. Greene was the first local man to attempt abdominal surgery, in which he met with great success and has established for himself a reputation as a specialist in that particular branch all over northern Indiana. Previous to entering upon the study of medicine the doctor, in April, 1861, enlisted for service in the Civil war, becoming a member of the Eighth Ohio Infantry, and in September, 1861, he went out with the Third Ohio Cavalry, from which he was discharged in November, 1865, for the

war had then ended. Throughout the period of his enlistment he never received a furlough and during the entire time was at the front from the battle of Shiloh, under Sherman and Thomas, until the capture of Jeff Davis.

The marriage of Dr. Greene was celebrated in January, 1868, when Mary E. Hagey, a native of Carroll county, Ohio, and a daughter of Jonathan Hagey, became his wife. They have become the parents of five children, of whom two are living. The doctor is a member of the Masonic order, the Grand Army of the Republic, Houghton Post, the Mishawaka Physicians Club, the County Medical Society, the Thirteenth District Medical Society, the Tri State Medical Society, the Indiana State Medical Society and the American Medical Association. His political support is given to the Republican party, and although an active and public spirited citizen the only office which he has held has been that of president of the medical examining board for twelve years. He is an enthusiastic hunter, and shot the last deer killed in St. Joseph county. The doctor can speak both French and German fluently, being self-taught in those languages, and at all times he has commanded the respect and esteem of his fellow men by his superior intellectual attainments and his upright life. On the evening of June 3, 1907, the members of the medical profession of Mishawaka met at the residence of Dr. Stroup and marched to the home of Dr. Greene to celebrate the fortieth anniversary of his medical practice in St. Joseph county. In token of their appreciation of his ability and efforts they presented him with an elegant gold-headed cane, beautifully chased and engraved.

JAMES G. BOSTWICK, M. D. One of the honored younger representatives of the medical profession in Mishawaka, Dr. Bostwick is laboring unceasingly in his calling, striving to do all in his power toward the amelioration of the "ills to which the flesh is heir," and is succeeding to a gratifying degree in his noble endeavors. His birth occurred in this city on the 23d of August, 1878, where his father, William Bostwick, has for many years been well known as a traveling man. He was born in Lakeville, Connecticut, but came to St. Joseph county, Indiana, some time in the '70s and was married to Mary A. Grimes, the daughter of Dr. James F. and Caroline E. Grimes, honored early pioneers of St. Joseph county and also early residents of Mishawaka. Mrs. Bostwick was called from this life on the

17th of January, 1904, after becoming the mother of three sons.

Dr. James G. Bostwick, the eldest and only living child, is a member of the alumni of the Mishawaka high school, and was also for a time a student in the University of Indiana at Bloomington, where his close application to his studies gained him a broad literary training, and enabled him to enter upon the study of the profession which he had chosen as a life work. Entering the Rush Medical College of Chicago, he graduated therein on June 18, 1902, and at once began the practice of medicine in Mishawaka, the city of his birth, where he has built up an excellent practice and is rapidly winning the commendation of the public and his professional brethren.

On the 15th of June, 1904, Dr. Bostwick married Mable E. Gaylor, the daughter of Albert and Mary Gaylor, and they have one son, William G. The doctor is a member of the Physicians' Club of Mishawaka, also of the State, County and American Medical Societies, and of the Masonic order and the Knights of Pythias. His professional popularity has led to his selection as secretary of the city board of health, and he is well and favorably known to the citizens of his native county and city.

CHRIS A. DRESCH, M. D. Dr. Dresch, who is rapidly winning for himself a name and place among the leading medical practitioners of St. Joseph county, was born in Goshen, Indiana, May 23, 1878, a son of Christian and Anna (Wambach) Dresch, both natives of Germany. When about twenty years of age the father sailed from his native land to America, and making his way to Goshen, Indiana, became one of the first business men of that city, where he was extensively engaged in mercantile pursuits. His life labors were ended in death when he had reached the age of fifty-four years, but the wife and mother was seventy-one years of age ere she was called to the home beyond. They became the parents of five children, three sons and two daughters, all of whom grew to years of maturity.

Dr. Dresch, the youngest of the family, spent the early years of his life in the city of his birth, receiving his early literary training in its public schools, and in 1893 he went to Denver, Colorado, and entered the Rocky Mountain University, graduating in its medical department in 1898, before he had reached

his twenty-first year. On his twenty-first birthday, however, he received his diploma, and for two and a half years he remained at Pueblo, Colorado, in the Colorado Fuel and Iron Company's hospital. In 1900 he went to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, and entered the Medico-Chirurgical College, where he completed the course and graduated the following year. Thus with an excellent medical training to serve as the foundation of his life work Dr. Dresch came to Mishawaka in the same year of his graduation, 1900, and has here gained distinction in the line of his chosen calling. He is a member of the American Medical Association, the Indiana State Medical Society and the Physicians Club of Mishawaka, and through his connection with these organizations, as well as through constant study, he keeps in close touch with his profession in its advance toward perfection.

In 1900 Dr. Dresch was united in marriage to Elizabeth Sears, who was born in Newton, Kansas, the daughter of T. H. Sears, a resident of Pueblo, Colorado. One little daughter has been born to bless this union, Elizabeth. Dr. Dresch has membership relations with the Masonic order, the Knights of Pythias and the Modern Woodmen of America, all of Mishawaka. Both in professional and social life he inspires friendship of unusual strength, and all who know him have the highest admiration for his many noble characteristics.

WILLIAM FIELD WOOD, M. D. In a comparison of the relative value to mankind of the various professions and pursuits to which men devote their time and energies, it is widely recognized that none is more important than the medical profession. From the cradle to the grave human destiny is largely in the hands of the physician, not only on account of the effect he may have on the physical system, but also upon man's mental and moral nature. In a review of Dr. Wood's life one of his principal features is his use of this power.

From sterling Canadian ancestors has the Doctor descended; from earnest, upright, sturdy men, and women of piety and grace of character. His father, Alpheus Field Wood, was for many years connected with the Dominion government under the late Sir John A. MacDonald, and for twenty years served as government valuator for the railway and canals department, while for twelve years he was elected as a member of the legislative assembly of the provincial government



Whitcomb

of Ontario. Mrs. Wood bore the maiden name of Eliza A. Ross, and was a most refined and cultured lady.

In his early youth Dr. W. Field Wood, who was born at Madoc, Ontario, June 3, 1867, was sent to Upper Canada College at Toronto, a government school modeled after Rugby College in England, where he was prepared for the University of Toronto, there pursuing the arts course. It was, however, his earnest and cherished desire to enter the medical profession, and accordingly he entered the medical department of the University of McGill College at Montreal, where he studied for one year, and then to further perfect himself in his chosen profession he went abroad and studied three semesters under the direction of the conjoint examination board of Great Britain in the Royal University of Berlin. And it is here worthy of mention to note that Dr. Wood visited in Germany during the ninety days' reign of the late Emperor Frederick, thus having the unusual pleasure of seeing the throne occupied by three different emperors. After the completion of his studies abroad he returned to his home and attended three sessions of the medical faculty of Queen University at Kingston, Ontario, graduating in that famous medical institution in 1891. In November of the same year the doctor came to Mishawaka and embarked on the professional sea, where he has built up a large and remunerative general practice. He holds a membership in the Landsmannschaft Normannia, a most ancient and distinguished corps of Berlin University, and is also an elder in the Zeta Psi fraternity, an exclusive organization which has existed for sixty years among the leading colleges of this country, while to further perfect himself along professional lines and to keep abreast of the advances which are constantly being made in the medical world he is associated with the American Medical Association and with the State and County Medical Societies.

In 1890 Dr. Wood was united in marriage to Mina A. H. McKinnon, a daughter of David McKinnon, a distinguished barrister of Hamilton, Ontario, but whose death occurred in Mishawaka in 1893. The doctor afterward, in 1895, married Mary Radomska, of this city, and his family residence is at 113 East Third street, Mishawaka. Honored alike by all, he is well worthy to be repre-

sented in a history of the leading men of St. Joseph county.

Dr. JAMES F. GRIMES, the oldest practicing physician of Mishawaka, has been closely identified with the progress and development of St. Joseph county throughout the period of his long and active business life, and none of her citizens have manifested greater public spirit or more earnest interest in the reduction of the country from a wilderness to a fertile land of fine farms and a flourishing little city. His birth occurred in Frederick county, Maryland, April 13, 1825, and he is of Irish descent. When he was a little lad of eight years his father, who was also a native of Frederick county, and a farmer by occupation, moved to Tiffin, Seneca county, Ohio, where the little son grew to mature years and received his literary education. When he had reached the age of twenty-one years he began the study of medicine in Tiffin, and later, about 1851, graduated from the Eclectic School or College of Cincinnati, Ohio. In the same year he came to Mishawaka and engaged in the practice of his chosen profession, and during the fifty-six years which have since rolled their course he has continued one of the city's valued and useful residents, winning success in the medical profession, and thoroughly deserving the genuine praise which is freely accorded him by those who have known him almost a lifetime.

In Ohio Dr. Grimes was married to Caroline E. Harris, a native of England, but she was reared in America and died in Mishawaka on the 14th of March, 1906. Of their family of four children two are now living, Mrs. R. E. Wilklow and Harriet E., the wife of E. V. Bingham, also of this city, whose history will be found elsewhere in this work. Dr. Grimes owns one hundred and twenty acres of land in Madison township, St. Joseph county. During his early life he voted with the Whig party, and at the organization of the Republican party he joined its ranks, being one of the forty now living in this county who voted for its first presidential nominee, Fremont, and since that time he has continued to support each of its presidential candidates with the exception of Greeley. He has always taken an active part in the public affairs of the locality, and at one time served as the trustee of Mishawaka. Faithful and true in all the relations of life, he need have few regrets in looking back along the pathway by

which he has come, and to his children he will leave the priceless heritage of a stainless name and history.

HARRIET L. LINDT, M. D. To those familiar with the residents of Mishawaka Dr. Harriet L. Lindt needs no introduction, for her efforts in behalf of the medical profession have gained her a reputation not confined to the limits of the locality. In all that tends to her chosen profession she has taken a deep interest, and her zeal has been of that practical kind that secured results immediate and beneficial. Mishawaka may well be proud to claim her as a daughter, for her career has been one which reflects honor upon her adopted city. She was born in Council Bluffs, Iowa, June 18, 1878. Her father, John Lindt, was a native of Erie, Pennsylvania, where he was also reared and educated, and became a lawyer of note, receiving his professional training in the Oberlin Law School. About 1873 he came west, locating in Council Bluffs, Iowa, where he continued his practice of the law and also took an active part in the public affairs of the community. During the war of 1861-65 he nobly put aside all personal considerations and offered his service to his country's cause, and is now department commander for Iowa in the Grand Army of the Republic. In Mishawaka, Indiana, he was married to Sarah Griffin, a native daughter of this city. Her father, Stephen Griffin, was one of the early pioneers in St. Joseph county and Mishawaka, and was one of the first blacksmiths in the county. Both Mr. and Mrs. Lindt continue to reside in Council Bluffs, where they are well known and honored residents.

Harriet L. Lindt, their only child, received her literary training in the schools of Council Bluffs, and after its completion entered the John A. Creighton Medical College, of Omaha, Nebraska, to prepare for her chosen life work, graduating in that well known institution in 1900. During the following two years she was engaged in practice in Omaha, but in January, 1903, came to Mishawaka, the birthplace of her mother, and entered upon the career which has been so fruitful of good works, kind deeds and loving ministrations. Dr. Lindt is a member of the Omaha Medical Society, and of the Episcopal church. She is and has been a discriminating student, and has gained distinction in the line of her chosen calling. Her strong mentality and intellectual attainments, her broad sympathy and

charity and her pleasing social qualities have rendered her very popular and won her the love of many with whom she has been associated in the active pursuits of life.

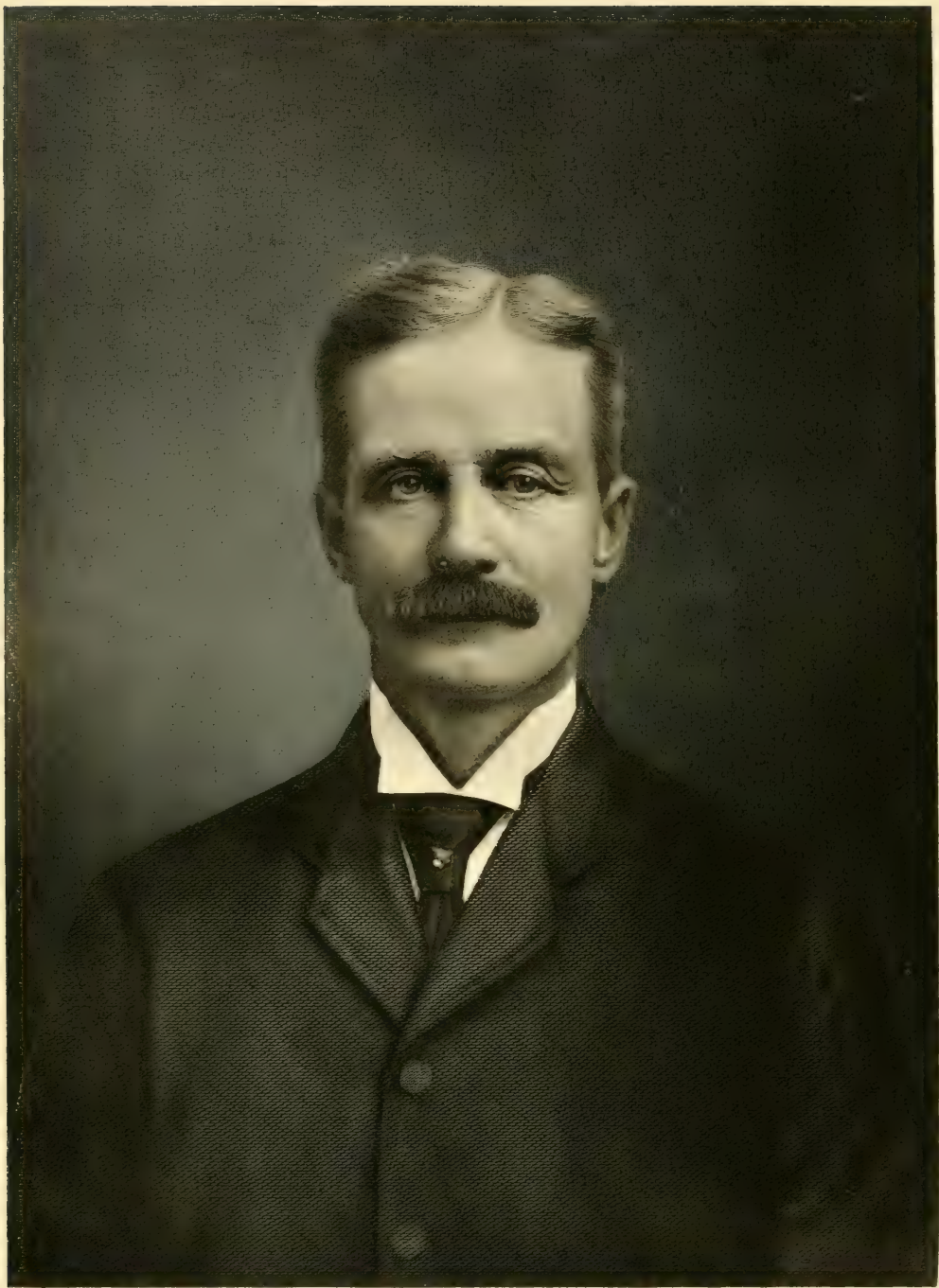
HENRY J. GRAHAM, M. D., who is recognized as one of the most prominent physicians of Mishawaka, was born in the province of Ontario, Canada, April 28, 1878, the son of John and Rebecca (McLellan) Graham, the former a native of Scotland and the latter of Canada. She is now deceased, but the husband and father survives, still residing in Canada. After his graduation from the Glencoe high school of Ontario, Canada, the son Henry became a student in the Detroit Medical College, where he completed the course and graduated in 1900. During the two years following this important event he was connected with the Detroit hospital, while for one year he had charge of the Jackson, Michigan, hospital. In 1903 Dr. Graham became a resident of Mishawaka, where he immediately opened an office for the practice of his chosen profession, and has ever since enjoyed a large and representative patronage. In the line of his profession he is a member of the St. Joseph County Medical Society, the Ft. Wayne Medical Society and the Jackson County Medical Society, thus being enabled to keep pace with the many new discoveries which are constantly being made in the science. Fraternally the doctor has membership relations with the Masonic order, the Knights of Pythias, the Knights of the Maccabees, and the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, all of Mishawaka.

DR. THEODORE P. MOYER is acknowledged a leader in the ranks of the dental fraternity in South Bend, and he has risen to his present enviable position through earnest study, close application and marked ability. With a nature that could not be content with mediocrity and prompted by a laudable ambition to rise in his profession, he has steadily advanced and gained prestige that is indicated by the regard which his fellow practitioners entertain for him and by the liberal patronage which he receives. He was born in St. Catherines, Lincoln county, Ontario, Canada, on the 8th of January, 1869, a son of David H. and Anna Moyer, both also natives of Canada.

In the public schools of his native county Theodore P. Moyer received his literary education, while his professional studies were



A. J. Graham



A. P. Silby

pursued in Buffalo, New York, graduating from the University of Buffalo in 1897. He then began the practice of his profession in Ashtabula, Ohio, where he remained for a year and a half, coming thence to South Bend in 1898 and entering the ranks of the dental profession. During the first two years of his residence here the doctor was associated in practice with Dr. D. B. Calvert, but since that time he has been alone, maintaining an office in the Dean building.

In 1898 Dr. Moyer was united in marriage to Miss Alice Guy, a daughter of Andrew and Jane Guy, of Ashtabula, Ohio, and they have one son, Harold, born on the 3d of July, 1901. Dr. Moyer and wife are members of St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal church, while fraternally he is connected with the Modern Woodmen. He is very prominent in the musical circles of South Bend, and is now serving as bass singer in St. Paul's church.

A. P. SIBLEY. There is ever a degree of satisfaction and profit in scanning the life history of one who has attained an eminent degree of success as the direct result of individual efforts; one who has had the courage, patience, perseverance, energy and economy, together with the mentality, to direct his endeavors toward the desired end, and the singleness and steadfastness of purpose which has given true value to each consecutive detail of effort. As a distinctive type of this kind of man we can refer with singular propriety to the gentleman whose name forms the caption of this review.

A. P. Sibley, late president of the Sibley Machine Tool Company, of South Bend, was born in Worcester county, Massachusetts, on the 30th of April, 1847, his father, Paul Sibley, also being a native of that state. The family, which is of English ancestry, is traced back to the early part of the seventeenth century, when the first American ancestor came from England and located in New Hampshire, thence removing to Massachusetts. The surname Paul has descended through many generations, the great-grandfather, grandfather and father by that name having been Massachusetts farmers. The death of Paul Sibley, the father, occurred in his native county, when A. P. Sibley was but ten years of age. His wife (nee Esther Stone), also born in the old Bay State, was a sister of Amasa Stone and an aunt of Mrs. John Hay. She lived to the age of forty-seven years and reared a family of six children,

two sons and four daughters, but only two are now living—the daughter being Mary, wife of George L. Hobbs, of Massachusetts.

A. P. Sibley, the fifth child in order of birth and the only member of the family to live in Indiana, was reared and educated in his native county of Worcester, and after completing his studies learned the trade of a machinist at Warren, Massachusetts, being employed for eight years on contract work in the shops of L. W. Ponds. In company with John R. Mills he made the machinery which they brought to South Bend in 1874, and with which they embarked in business. They were also accompanied by George O. Ware, and the firm of Sibley, Wells & Ware founded an establishment for general machine repairing at the foot of Washington street. Later they moved to what is now known as the old Bissell machine shops, and four years afterward, upon the retirement of Mr. Wells, the firm became Sibley & Ware. In 1883 their shops were destroyed by fire, and in the same year the site on which the present plant stands was purchased and the buildings erected, but on account of the failing health of Mr. Ware, Mr. Sibley purchased the entire business in May, 1904, at which time it was incorporated under the name of the Sibley Machine Tool Company. This corporation, of which he was president, employs about one hundred operatives, makes a specialty of power drills and is one of the largest establishments of the kind in northern Indiana. Mr. Sibley is also vice-president of the Merchants' National Bank of South Bend.

The marriage of A. P. Sibley was celebrated in June, 1876, when Eva, the daughter of Robert Hardy, of South Bend, became his wife, and their three children are Olive, Walter and Helen. Mr. Sibley was an influential supporter of the Republican party, and from 1904 to 1906 represented the First ward in the city council. He was a member of the Commercial Athletic Club and of the Methodist Episcopal church. In noting his prominence and broad usefulness it is interesting to remember that his location was a matter of pure accident. At the time of his journey hither he and his companions had purchased tickets for Chicago, intending to stop off at different places on the route; but they continued on as far as Iowa, where they spent one week, expecting to return directly to Lynn, Massachusetts. But hearing

of Elkhart, Indiana, they stopped off at that place, and missing their train the following morning decided to locate in South Bend. Thus it was that Mr. Sibley became a resident of that city of thirty-three years' standing, during which period he enjoyed a continuous and prominent identification with its progressive and meritorious interests. His career was ever such as to warrant the trust and confidence of the business world, and his activity in financial circles forms no unimportant factor in the history of St. Joseph county.

While Mr. Sibley devoted the greater part of his attention to his private affairs, his influence in public matters was great and his judgment eagerly sought and highly valued. Against his wishes he was elected to the city council in 1904, being considered a valuable addition to Republican leadership and the public service, giving as he did the same careful attention to his public duties as he had to his private affairs. When he refused a re-nomination in 1906, it was felt that the city had lost the services of a most superior public servant, and when the community learned of his death, which occurred May 25, 1907, it was fully realized what a broad and leading part he had played in the best citizenship of South Bend. The irreparable loss, however, was to his most intimate relatives—his widow, his son and two daughters, who had been knit to him by years of thoughtful care and affectionate solicitude, and his sister of the earlier years, Mrs. Mary Hobbs, of Spencer, Massachusetts. These, as well as his warm friends and close business and industrial associates, appreciated his stalwart manhood and his high worth, from personal contact and the inner view of character.

THE O'BRIEN VARNISH WORKS. One of the most extensive manufactories of South Bend and one of the largest industries of a sharply limited nature in the West, is known as the O'Brien Varnish Works, located at the corner of Washington and Johnson streets. The business was established and incorporated by P. O'Brien in 1878, and he has been its president ever since. The other officers of the company are his sons—Samuel P., W. D., George L. and F. J.—all keen and popular business men, who have joined their abilities to those of their father to develop one of the largest manufactories of superior varnish in the country. The high reputation both of the management and the output is na-

tional, and therefore materially adds to the importance of South Bend as a commercial and industrial center.

Sixteen years ago the company erected a linseed oil mill, with a capacity of 225,000 bushels of flax seed annually, and thousands of barrels of oil and large quantities of oil cake are yearly shipped from the plant, some of the output being exported to Europe. The company is independent in its transactions, and has always maintained such a high standard of its products that it is the general admission of dealers and consumers alike that the aim of its trademark has been fully realized; the legend thereon inscribed is "Agimus antecedere," "We strive to excel."

Mr. O'Brien, the founder of the cosmopolitan business which now extends throughout the United States and Canada, and has branched into no small portion of the old world, has been the leading figure of the great industry for almost half a century. He is therefore a notable force in the material progress of South Bend, and is placed high in the class of famous manufacturers which have given the city a standing in the enterprising and growing municipalities of the country.

ALMOND BUGBEE. In the death of Almond Bugbee St. Joseph county lost one of her most prominent and useful citizens. His influence for good was widely felt, and his example was indeed worthy of emulation. He was at all times actuated by the highest motives and the most lofty impulses; he lived for the benefit of others, and his memory remains as an unalloyed benediction to all who knew him. The history of South Bend would be incomplete without the record of his life, so intimately was he connected with industrial institutions.

Mr. Bugbee was born in Hyde Park, Vermont, January 3, 1815, a stirring period in our national history, and was left without father or mother when ten years of age. The educational training which he received was obtained in the district schools, and at the age of sixteen, in Strafford, Vermont, he learned the tanner, currier and shoemaker's trades, and at the same time, although but a mere boy, acted as assistant postmaster. On reaching his twenty-first year he started west, his objective point being Milwaukee, Wisconsin, but on his way thither he heard much concerning the prospects to be found in South Bend and he determined to direct his steps

to this city and see for himself. Reaching his destination on the 9th of March, 1837, he was at once pleased with the village and its people, so he cast in his lot with its early settlers, and from that time until his busy and useful life was ended in death he was ever a stalwart supporter of its institutions. His first employment here was as a shoemaker, and in December, 1837, he started a shoe store of his own. In 1842, however, Mr. Bugbee purchased a tannery of G. D. Edge, which he enlarged, equipped with water power, and at that time gave employment to more men than any one employer in South Bend. He was the first person in this city to sell shoes ready made, and with Alexander Foote organized the first incorporated company in the city, "The Cordwainers' Union," for the manufacture of boots and shoes, it being also the first co-operative union incorporated in Indiana and of which Mr. Bugbee was made the president. In its management he displayed splendid executive power and keen discrimination, and he was widely recognized as a most capable business man.

The first tannery which Mr. Bugbee owned was burned, and although he immediately rebuilt the flood of 1856 swept away the dam across the river. He then erected a furniture factory on the same site, which he leased, and this, too, was destroyed by fire. Again he rebuilt, this time leasing it to a Massachusetts firm, while it was afterward leased to the Judson Montgomery Company, the Studebaker Brothers and to Alexis Coquillard, to whom he ultimately sold the property. At the close of the war he retired from business, choosing to rest from the arduous cares as he passed down the western slope of life. Mr. Bugbee was a director in the State Bank of Indiana, and also assisted in organizing the St. Joseph County Savings Bank, of which he was the first treasurer. The cause of humanity never had a truer friend, and while he was deeply concerned in numerous philanthropic enterprises he was more especially identified with the temperance cause.

On the 28th of April, 1844, Mr. Bugbee was united in marriage to Miss Adelia Ann Crocker, who was the lady principal of the first academy of South Bend. Her death occurred January 28, 1861. Willis A. was the only child of this marriage, and he is truly a worthy son of a worthy sire, well known in the business circles of South Bend. The sec-

ond marriage of Mr. Bugbee was celebrated January 13, 1881, when Miss Mary P. Moody became his wife. She was a native of Newburyport, Massachusetts. Mr. Bugbee died May 24, 1904, and the community mourned the loss of one of its most valued citizens.

ANDREW KUNSTMAN. Since the early days of St. Joseph county the Kunstman family has occupied a distinctively honorable place in its history, and Andrew Kunstman, whose death occurred May 23, 1907, represented it with high credit as one of the most respected citizens of South Bend. About two years ago he retired from active business to the restful comforts of his pleasant home at 230 North Lafayette street, and for some time prior to his death was suffering with locomotor ataxia, although his trouble had not deterred him from out of door exercise. Some two weeks before his demise he had his first stroke of apoplexy, and was bedfast thereafter, the second stroke proving fatal in about an hour.

In Mr. Kunstman's sudden death Union township lost a native son, his birth in that section of the county occurring July 21, 1863. He was the younger of two children—a son and a daughter—born to Andrew and Barbara Kunstman, an account of whose lives will be found in another portion of this work. Andrew Kunstman, Jr., received his early education in the schools of Mishawaka and South Bend, and pursued his higher studies at Notre Dame University. At the age of twenty-three he entered upon the active duties of a business life, conducting operations on his own account in South Bend until January, 1906, when failing health induced his retirement. At that time he had not only acquired considerable wealth in his business enterprises, but was a stockholder in the American Trust Company and the owner of a building on Washington street and what are known as the Kunstman Flats. So that he was able to pass the last years of his life free from worldly anxieties, and left his family in comfortable circumstances.

On October 2, 1889, the deceased was united in marriage to Ann Elizabeth Boye, a native of Valparaiso, Indiana, and they became the parents of two children—Harold, now attending the high school at South Bend, and Marguerite, a student at the Sisters' Academy, of that place. Mr. Kunstman was a member of the fraternal orders of Elks and Eagles, also of the Commercial Club;

was a Republican in his political affiliations, but preferred to concentrate his attention and his abilities on the development of his business interests and the domestic duties of a good husband and father. That he made many friends and retained them through life is an evidence of his just, steadfast and altogether substantial character.

MARVIN CAMPBELL. Becoming identified with South Bend over thirty-five years ago, Mr. Campbell has, since that time, been connected with many activities of the city, but has become best known as a manufacturer. After coming here in 1870, at that time a young man of twenty-one years, and fresh from college, he spent two years as a teacher of mathematics in the South Bend high school. During the following fifteen years the citizens always spoke of him as one of the enterprising hardware merchants and a public-spirited helper when needed in a movement of a general nature. In 1888, as treasurer and partner of the Mishawaka Woolen Manufacturing Company, he became associated with one of the most important manufacturing concerns of the two cities, and his energy and business ability were recognized as a factor in its success until the past year (1906), when he disposed of his interests.

In 1893 the South Bend Folding Box Company was organized. This is now and has been for several years one of the largest enterprises of the kind in the west. Its product, which a quarter of a century ago had only a very limited use, is now indispensable and peculiarly adapted to the demands of modern business, and as such has attained a use and demand as extended as commerce and industry. For a number of years Mr. Campbell and his sons have been sole owners of this establishment, and under their skillful management it is constantly growing.

Among other well known business interests in which Mr. Campbell's influence is felt, are the South Bend National Bank, and the Long Distance Telephone Manufacturing Company, of both of which he is president.

Mr. Campbell, whose later years have witnessed the business success above noted, was born on a farm near Valparaiso, March 13, 1849, a son of Samuel A. and Harriet (Cornell) Campbell. His father, who was born in New York in 1821, accompanied his parents to Indiana in 1833, their settlement on a farm two miles east of Valparaiso being in the nature of a pioneer endeavor. On

that same farm where the family located nearly three-quarters of a century ago, the father still lives, having reached the ripe age of eighty-six years. His wife, who was born in Ohio in 1826, died many years ago, in 1865.

Reared on a farm, Marvin Campbell attended district school and completed his education in the old V. M. & F. College at Valparaiso. Before moving to South Bend he taught mathematics in the high school of his home city for one year. In 1874 he married Miss Lydia A. Brownfield, a daughter of another pioneer family of 1833, her parents being John and Lydia (Beeson) Brownfield. Mr. and Mrs. Campbell's children are: John Brownfield, Harriet B. and Marvin Rudolph. The sons are, respectively, secretary and superintendent, and treasurer, of the Folding Paper Box Company, and are thoroughly capable young business men. The daughter is the wife of Dr. W. A. Hager, of South Bend. The family are members of the Methodist church, of which Mr. Campbell is a trustee and in 1904 was a delegate to the quadrennial general conference at Los Angeles. He affiliates with Lodge No. 45, of the Masons. Some years ago Mr. Campbell took an influential part in local politics, and from 1883 to 1885 represented St. Joseph and Starke counties in the state senate. He is president of the board of trustees of the Epworth Hospital at South Bend, and is a member of the board of trustees of De Pauw University.

C. B. STEPHENSON. The Stephenson brothers are among the most prominent manufacturers of South Bend. C. B. Stephenson, a worthy and prosperous member of the family, was born in Wabash county, Indiana, on the 12th of August, 1845. His father, Amos T. Stephenson, was a native of Iredell county, North Carolina, but as early as 1837 came to South Bend, where he married Miss Priscilla O. Wall. The maternal grandfather, Benjamin Wall, became a resident of South Bend in 1836, and was highly respected as a useful and honorable pioneer.

Mr. Stephenson received his early education in the public schools of South Bend, later attended the Ypsilanti (Mich.) Union Seminary, and for a time served as a clerk in the postoffice of the former place. At that time there were only two clerks in that service, and they were not broken down by over-work. Afterward the youth spent four





Calvin Moon

years in Colorado, and then removed to New York, where for twenty years he was employed as a dry goods salesman. In 1873, with his father and brothers, he established a retail plumbing business in South Bend, which, from the first, met with a high degree of success. In 1889, however, the character of the enterprise was changed and the business was incorporated under the name of the South Bend Pump Company and later the Stephenson Manufacturing Company, which is still engaged in the manufacture of automatic wood turnings. In the year mentioned C. B. Stephenson returned to South Bend to reside, and, with his brothers, A. H., B. C. and F. A. Stephenson, became identified with the A. C. Staley Manufacturing Company. During the past four years the business has been entirely in the hands of the Stephenson brothers, and, under their enterprising and skillful management, the establishment has become one of the leading industries of South Bend and one of the best known underwear manufactories in the country. The subject of this sketch is also president of the Stephenson Manufacturing Company.

While a resident of New York Mr. Stephenson was united in marriage to Miss Ada Preston, a native of that city, and they have one daughter, Bertha. Mr. Stephenson is a public spirited, progressive citizen, honored for his integrity in business, his faithfulness to family and friends and his absolute fidelity to every trust which he has ever assumed.

CALVIN MOON, superintendent of the South Bend public schools, is of Scotch-English ancestry. He is the son of James and Mary (James) Moon, and was born May 16th, 1849, on his father's farm near the village of Lakeville, St. Joseph county, Indiana, where he grew to manhood. He acquired his education in the district schools and the V. M. & F. college of Valparaiso, Indiana, where a severe illness from pneumonia brought his studentship to a close at that institution two months before the end of his third year.

After leaving college, Mr. Moon taught school for two years, then joined the engineering corps engaged in making the preliminary surveys for the Chicago & Canada Southern Railroad, now known as the Wabash. This was merely a temporary engagement, however, for his taste tended in a different direction, inclining him to educational work. The opportunity to gratify this desire came to him

in June, 1877, when he was elected superintendent of the schools of St. Joseph county, there being nine candidates in the field for the position at that time. His administration of the school affairs of the county was so eminently satisfactory that he was re-elected seven times to that position, under varying political conditions, five of which were by unanimous vote. Mr. Moon's experience of fourteen years and one month in this capacity made for him a reputation as a superintendent of schools that was scarcely limited by the boundaries of the state.

It is due to Mr. Moon's industry, progressiveness and tact that St. Joseph county has the distinction of being the first in the state —(a) to have a uniformity of text books throughout the country; (b) to adopt a uniform course of study and grade the country schools; (c) to establish a minimum salary (of forty dollars a month) for teachers in the country schools and abolish the ancient custom of "boarding around"; (d) to organize and maintain a County Teachers' Library Association. Through his personal efforts the Association was organized in 1884 with Mr. Charles H. Bartlett as president and Mr. Moon as librarian. The library, which is still in a flourishing condition, under the careful supervision of County Superintendent William Clem, has several hundred volumes, largely of a professional nature, and has proven a potent factor in the uplift of the teaching profession in the county.

In June, 1891, Mr. Moon's abilities were recognized by his appointment to the superintendency of the South Bend public schools, the position which today he holds to the credit of himself and satisfaction of the public, and through his entire incumbency, covering a period of sixteen years, his steps have been steadily forward. Resigning the superintendency of the county schools, July 1, 1891, to accept the superintendency of the city schools, he applied to the latter the same intelligence, zeal and energy that had brought him distinction in the former position.

The growth of the city schools during Mr. Moon's superintendency is clearly indicated in the figures showing that the enrollment for the school year ending in June, 1891, was 3,046, while for the current year (1907) it is 6,266. The number of teachers in 1891 was 61, for this year there are 202; and during the sixteen years ten commodious ward school buildings and a high school have been erected.

additions have been made to two, doubling their capacity, and one of the old buildings reconstructed and made as good as new. In addition to these improvements, a thirteen room ward school and a manual training shop are being built.

Mr. Moon's domestic life is as well ordered and happy as his educational work. He was married December 21, 1876, to Miss Cynthia A. Stonehill, a native of the county, and a daughter of Daniel and Adaline (Brothers) Stonehill. With the exception of a daughter, who died in infancy, his family is intact. He has five sons, James S., Otto R., Ray E., Clarence C., and Charles S., all engaged in useful occupations, or in school preparing themselves for the serious duties of life. The family occupies a pleasant home at 518 West Colfax avenue, conveniently near Mr. Moon's office in the high school building, where he frequently may be found in the evening preparing his work for the following day.

Mr. Moon is a man of strong convictions and broad intelligence. He has methodical habits of work and throws all the energy of his ardent nature into the task of promoting the interests of the schools of South Bend. In him the pupils of the schools have a zealous guardian, the parents a trusty friend, the teachers a loyal and unselfish helper, and the board of education a capable, earnest and efficient official.

E. A. MORSE. Mr. E. A. Morse, the president of the South Bend Brick Company, one of the leading institutions of the city and county, has made for himself a place in the industrial activities of life and gained recognition for intrinsic worth of character. He is also numbered among the younger business men of his adopted city, for his birth occurred on the 21st of May, 1874, in Durand, Wisconsin, his parents being Hobart D. and Elizabeth A. (Dorwin) Morse, both of whom were born in St. Lawrence county, New York, and both are living at the present time. Of their seven children two are deceased.

E. A. Morse was but a babe of six months at the time of the removal of his parents from Wisconsin to New York, and in St. Lawrence county he grew to mature years, receiving an excellent educational training in its public schools and in an academy and business college at Ogdensburg, that state. Thus well equipped for the activities of life, he came to South Bend at the age of

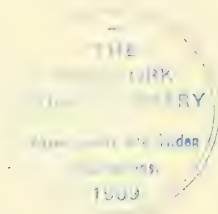
eighteen years and secured employment with the old South Bend Construction Company in the capacity of a bookkeeper, while later on he was made the manager of the South Bend Brick Exchange, conducting its business for some years. Finally purchasing the brick plant of the John H. Shank estate, Mr. Morse continued the business until the organization of the South Bend Brick Company in 1903, which was launched with a capital of fifty thousand dollars, and he was made the president and manager, his present positions. He is also the agent for the Hydraulic Press Brick Company through northern Indiana and western Michigan, which necessitates his being on the road about half the time. Their yards are located on Portage avenue, and the output of the plant is about sixty-five thousand brick a day.

The marriage of Mr. Morse was celebrated in 1898, Edith Dunnahoo then becoming his wife, and she is a daughter of Griffin Dunnahoo, of South Bend. Two children, a son and a daughter, have been born to them, Edward and Phoebe. Mr. Morse holds membership relations with the Elks and the Odd Fellows of South Bend, and he is an active worker in the ranks of the Democratic party. He is a man of enterprise, liberal views and sterling worth, and is thoroughly identified in feeling with the growth and prosperity of the city and county which have been his home throughout his entire business life.

A. D. BAKER has been so closely identified with the interests of South Bend that the city feels a just pride in claiming him among her citizens. He stands to-day at the head of one of the leading industrial concerns of the county, being secretary and treasurer of the South Bend Chilled Plow Company, and his prestige has been won through marked executive force, keen discrimination, sound judgment and unfaltering energy. His birth occurred in Decatur, Illinois, on the 25th of April, 1856. His father, George W. Baker, was a native of Pennsylvania, but when only six years old was brought by his brother, A. S. Baker, to South Bend, where he remained until he had reached his twenty-seventh year, going thence to Decatur, Illinois. In 1876, however, he returned to South Bend, and this city continued as the scene of his operations until his busy life was ended in death. To him came the attainment of a distinguished position in connection with the industrial interests of this section of the



E. A. Morse.



state, for he was one of the organizers of the South Bend Chilled Plow Company, which has attained a wide reputation over all portions of the United States. A man of distinctive and forceful individuality, he left his impress upon the business world, and upon the ladder of his own building he climbed to prominence and prosperity. Mr. Baker married Catherine Dewey, of Vermont, and they were the parents of three children, but only two are now living, A. D. and his sister, who is now Mrs. Oren, of South Bend. One sister became the wife of J. C. Birdsell, of this city, and is now deceased.

A. D. Baker, after receiving an excellent educational training, assisted his father in organizing the South Bend Chilled Plow Company in 1875, and has since been connected with it as secretary and treasurer. This institution has received world-wide renown, and in conducting its affairs and enlarging its scope Mr. Baker has so directed his efforts that the business interests have grown apace with the progress which dominates this country.

He was married in 1883 to Bessie Hinds, of Madison, Indiana. In his fraternal relations Mr. Baker is a member of the order of Elks, and was also one of the organizers of the Indiana Club, of which he was president for nine years. His religious connection is with St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal church.

GEORGE S. HUNT. In the business circles of South Bend the name of George S. Hunt is well known as the president and treasurer of the Hunt Brothers' Manufacturing Company, located at 332 and 334 South Scott street. He was born in Dodge county, Wisconsin, April 4, 1859, a son of W. D. and Diantha (Dunham) Hunt, both of whom claimed the Empire State as the commonwealth of their nativity. They, however, became early pioneers of Wisconsin, taking up their abode there in 1850, where the father was well known as a wagon maker in Brandon. They now maintain their residence in South Bend.

George S. Hunt, the second child in order of birth in his parents' family, spent the days of his boyhood and youth in the place of his nativity, receiving his educational training in its public schools, and he there learned the painter's trade. On the 22d of May, 1880, he became a resident of South Bend, where he was afterward employed by the Studebaker Brothers and the Olivers,

while in the fall of 1892 he became associated with his brother, W. I. Hunt, in the manufacturing and repairing business. This association continued for eleven years, and at its close in 1905 Mr. Hunt purchased his brother's interest and reorganized the company, which was always known as the Hunt Brothers' Manufacturing Company, and of which he is the president and treasurer. The manufactory furnishes employment to about twelve men, and they are extensively engaged in the manufacture and repairing of buggies and other vehicles. Mr. Hunt is a man of excellent business and executive ability, of keen discrimination, sound judgment and capable management, and he enjoys the confidence and regard of those with whom he has been brought in contact through business dealings.

In 1884 was celebrated the marriage of Mr. Hunt and Miss Emma McBroom, she being the daughter of William and Annaliza McBroom. Two sons have been born of this union, Charles E. and Russell G. Mr. Hunt supports the Republican party where national issues are involved, but at local elections casts his ballot independent of party ties. For twenty years he has been a member of the Masonic order, and for eight years has had membership relations with the Modern Woodmen. The principal years of his life having been spent in St. Joseph county, he is well known among its citizens and is held in uniform regard.

DANIEL GREENE, president of the South Bend Foundry Company, is one of the venerable and honored fathers of St. Joseph county, and his wife has the distinction of being the oldest continuous resident of St. Joseph county. Their homelike and commodious residence on South Lafayette street is therefore the headquarters for many of the old-timers who have watched with pride the commercial, industrial and civic growth of their town.

Daniel Greene is a native of Greene county, Ohio, the date of his birth being December 15, 1818. His parents were John and Nancy N. (Jackson) Greene and they were both natives of Delaware. Of the fourteen children in the family, twelve reached manhood and womanhood and all settled in St. Joseph county. Daniel was the seventh child, and was fourteen years of age when he came to the county with the other members of the family. He was reared in Greene township

in the western part of the county, and remained on the family homestead until 1866. His father died in 1838 and his mother in 1844, and he continued to reside there after his marriage in 1849 until the year named. In 1866 he settled in South Bend to assume the position of deputy county treasurer, under his brother Ezekiel. Later he became connected with the South Bend Chilled Plow Company, of which he was treasurer for many years. In 1886 he severed his connection with that establishment and spent about six months with his family in California, since which time he has been virtually retired from active business, although for the sake of employment he has been somewhat identified with fire insurance.

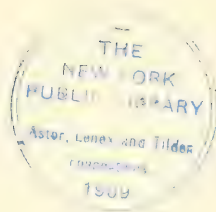
It is difficult to realize that Mr. Greene has been a resident of St. Joseph county for nearly seventy-five years. His first presidential vote was cast for Martin Van Buren in 1840, and he has since voted in St. Joseph county at every national election. In 1844, 1848 and 1852 he supported the Free Soil ticket, and in 1856 he assisted in the organization of the Republican party. Since the founding of the party he has never abandoned it; on the contrary, has been an enthusiastic advocate of its principles, although he has never sought public office or other preferment through the organization. Mr. Greene is a leader in the work of the Presbyterian church, and is the oldest member of that religious body in South Bend. He has long been one of its elders, and has represented the church in several of its general assemblies.

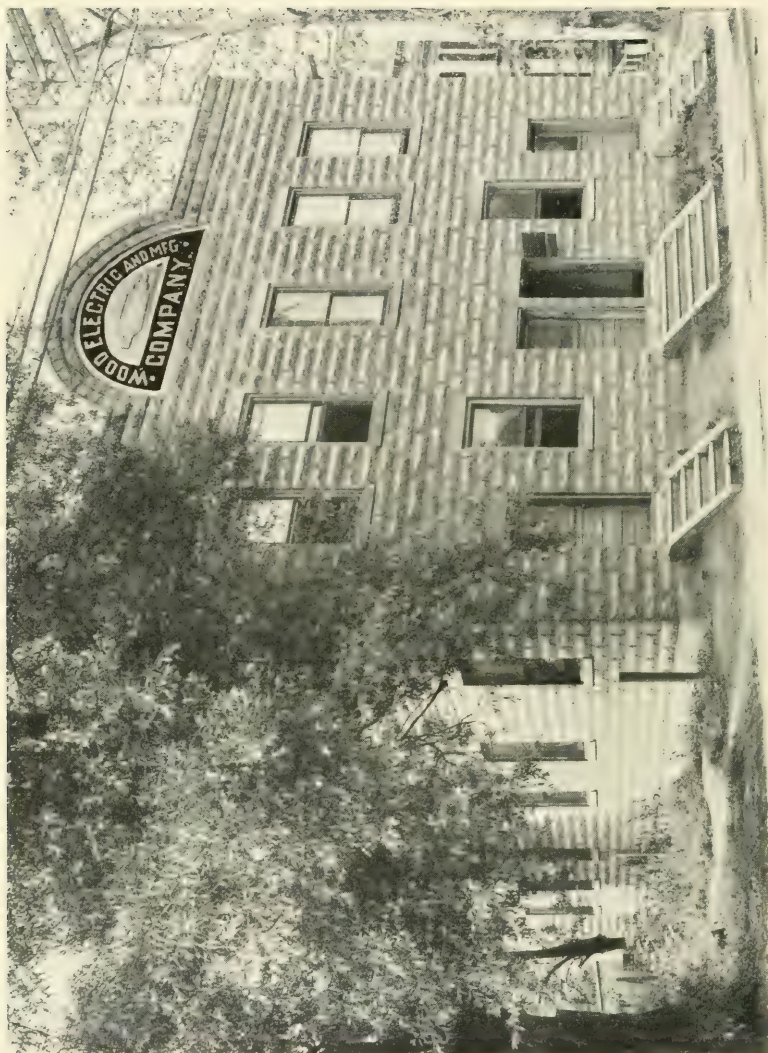
In 1849 Daniel Greene was married to Mary Leeper, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth Leeper, his wife being born in Darke county, Ohio, in 1829. When she was about six months of age the family came to St. Joseph county, in which she has since continuously resided. Her parents were among the very first pioneers of the county, coming, in fact, before it was organized or before South Bend was platted as a town. Of the five children born to Mr. and Mrs. Greene three are still living: Elizabeth, widow of Dr. Kettering, now living in the home of her parents; Horace, proprietor and manager of the South Bend Foundry Company, and Edna, wife of William C. Warner of South Bend.

GEORGE CUTTER. The men of deeds are the men the world delights to honor, and among those who have stood as distinguished

types of the world's workers and who have introduced new eras of thought by inventions of great utility no one is more worthy of honorable mention than George Cutter, the president of the George Cutter Company, patentees of electrical specialties. He was born in Boston, Massachusetts, October 13, 1853, and in that city his father, George T. Cutter, also had his nativity. The family history, however, is traced back to the mother country of England, in Northampton, but as early as 1630 representatives of the family came to America and established their home here, where they have ever since been leading and honored residents. George T. Cutter followed the miller's trade, becoming the well known proprietor of the Mahogany Mill. His wife bore the maiden name of Abbie E. Blaisdell, and was a native of Milton, New Hampshire, but of north of France descent. They became the parents of four sons, all of whom grew to useful manhood.

George Cutter, the third son in order of birth, was reared and received his educational training in his native city of Boston, and there he also prepared for his life's work. He began the electrical business at the early age of sixteen years, and after completing his apprenticeship he spent two years in Europe, those of 1881-2, in order to further perfect himself in his chosen occupation. Returning home, he became associated with the Bell Telephone Company at the time of its organization, and later as its representative he spent one year in Russia. During two and a half years Mr. Cutter was the chief engineer for the Thomson-Houston Electric Light Company, while for six years he had charge of their testing rooms. At this time Mr. Cutter decided to engage in the electrical business for himself, and choosing Chicago as his field of endeavor he engaged in business there in 1889, but in 1905 transferred his residence and place of activity to South Bend, where he is engaged in the formation and manufacture of outdoor lighting supplies. His business now extends to all parts of the known world, and at the present time he furnishes employment to about sixty operatives. In this age of large enterprise and marked intellectual energy the prominent and successful men are those whose abilities, persistence and courage lead them into large undertakings, and it is these qualities that have made Mr. Cutter a leader in the business world and won him a name in con-





Wood Electric and Manufacturing Company



W. F. Wood

nection with industrial interests that is widely known.

In 1888 Mr. Cutter married Miss Inez Gass, whose father, John Gass, was born in Waynetown, Indiana. Mr. Cutter is a member of the American Institute of Electrical Engineers. In his business relations he is thoroughly upright and conscientious, considerate and courteous in his personal and social contact, and is at all times an earnest, patriotic citizen.

SAMUEL SHEPARD PERLEY. One of the most prominent of South Bend's business men is Samuel S. Perley. His connection with many of the leading corporations of this city makes him too well known to need introduction to the readers of this volume, but as a business man and citizen we would preserve the record of his career among a people who have learned to respect and honor him. He was born in Portland, Maine, on the 8th of October, 1861, a son of J. H. and Fannie (Smith) Perley. The father was long a business man in Maine, and was the first president of the Board of Trade of Portland. In 1869 he removed with his family to Detroit, Michigan, where he was largely interested in the lumber business until his retirement from trade relations, and his death occurred in South Bend the 2d of December, 1869. His wife, who was a native of Newburyport, New Hampshire, survived him for many years, passing away in 1886.

Their son and the subject of this review, Samuel S. Perley, on leaving school entered the wagon works of Alexis Coquillard in an official capacity, and as the years have grown apace he has risen step by step until he now occupies a high position in this large concern. For many years he has held an executive position therein, and since the death of Mr. A. Coquillard, the founder of the business, has been its trustee and manager. His interests in South Bend, however, are many and varied, for he is also president of the Perley Lumber Company, a director of the Citizens' National Bank, a stockholder in the Bissell Plow Company and also connected with other large enterprises. Thus to Mr. Perley has come the attainment of a distinguished position in connection with large industries. A man of distinctive and forceful individuality, he has left and is leaving his impress upon the industrial world, while there has been no shadow of wrong or injustice to mar his career.

The marriage of Mr. Perley and Miss Lillian Casady, a daughter of W. L. Casady, was celebrated in 1892. The father is a well known business man and an honored citizen of South Bend. Three children have been born to bless this union, namely, Margaret, William Casady and Harold Otis.

WILLIAM F. WOOD. Among the names of the men who are distinguishing themselves for the possession in an eminent degree of those qualities of character which mainly contribute to the success of private life and to public stability is found that of William F. Wood. As the record of a young man it is one of which he may be justly proud, for it is distinguished by the most substantial qualities of character. He was born in Ross-ville, Indiana, May 7, 1876, a son of Rev. Deloss M. and Emma (Farrow) Wood, who make their home in Hammond, Indiana. In their family were but two children, a son and a daughter, and the latter, Louise, is at home. The father is a prominent minister of the Methodist Episcopal church, and in that capacity he has traveled over much of this country.

William F. Wood, their only son, attended De Pauw University for four years, pursuing the classical course, and during a similar period he was a newspaper correspondent, his work in that line taking him over many parts of the world and identifying him with the Spanish-American war, where he served on the battleship Iowa in the capacity of ship's yeoman. After the close of the conflict he was associated with the "San Francisco Evening Report" until in February, 1900, when he went to Lebanon, Boone county, Indiana, there maintaining his residence until his removal to South Bend in September, 1900. His first association in this city was with the Sandage Steel Skein Company, with whom he remained until in February, 1904, and in July of that year purchased a half interest in the Economy Electric Company. Afterwards Mr. Wood bought the remaining stock and the firm name was changed to the Wood Electric and Manufacturing Company. The company gives employment to about twenty men, and is one of the leading electrical manufacturing enterprises of the city. He is a man of distinctive and forceful individuality, and under his direction the Wood Electric and Manufacturing Company has increased its business three hundred per cent. Although one

of the younger representatives of the business interests of South Bend, he has gained a brilliant success, the just reward of meritorious, honorable effort, which commands the respect of all.

On the 3d of July, 1900, Mr. Wood was united in marriage to Blanch Lee Daily, a daughter of American C. Daily, a prominent banker and financier and ex-state auditor. Mrs. Wood was born in Lebanon, Indiana, there receiving her education in its grammar and high schools, and she is also a talented musician. They have two children, Mary Daily and Deloss Calvin. Mr. Wood has in every way proven himself a public spirited citizen, and he possesses the public confidence to a high degree.

HENRY F. ELBEL. No name figures more conspicuously or is mentioned with greater honor on the pages of the history of St. Joseph county than the Elbel family. What the Olivers and Studebakers have been to the industrial life of South Bend, the Elbels have been to the musical life. They are a family of musicians, and in the early days made this city famous in the musical world. There were six brothers of the first family of Elbels associated with South Bend, Erhardt, Christian, Lorenz, Wolf, John and Henry, and all were fine musicians, while Christian won more than a local reputation as a composer. Lorenz, the father of him whose name introduces this review, was for more than half a century a director of the orchestra which still bears his name and was also a leader of the Elbel Military Band. He had six sons,—Henry, Herman, Richard, Robert, Fred and Louis, all of whom have inherited their father's musical ability to a high degree, and Louis has gained high honors both at home and abroad. At Leipsie he was one of the very few Americans to appear as soloist, and made a record of which he and his family may well feel proud. The brothers are proprietors of a large piano store, and all are enterprising, worthy citizens, worthy children of a worthy sire.

Henry F. Elbel, the immediate subject of this review, was born in South Bend on the 9th of November, 1856, a son of Lorenz and Johannah Elbel, both natives of Germany. Early in life, however, they crossed the ocean to the United States and became thoroughly American citizens, in harmony with the spirit of the republic, and, making the most of his opportunities, Mr. Elbel steadily worked his

way upward to success and all that was desirable and ennobling in life. Their son Henry F. received his educational training in the schools of South Bend, and was for many years thereafter engaged with the Singer Company. He is now a member of the firm of the South Bend Engraving and Electrotyping Company, one of the leading and most prosperous institutions in the city. He has ever been active and earnest in his advocacy of all measures for the public good, and the cause of education especially finds in him a stalwart friend. He is now serving as treasurer of the school board, and has proved himself a valued factor in its behalf.

EDWARD MUESSEL. During a pioneer epoch in the history of St. Joseph county the Muesel family was founded within its borders by Christopher Muessel, the father of Edward, and who was a native of Bavaria, Germany. In a very early day, however, he came to South Bend, and the members of his family have taken an active and prominent part in the development of this section of the state. He was a brewer in the old country, as was his father before him, and after coming to Indiana continued in the same occupation, his first brewery being located at Vistula, and a part of this old building is still standing. He owned one hundred and thirty-six acres of land north of the city, on which was splendid water power, but in about 1868 he removed to the present site of the brewery. It was the first one established in the town and is still owned by the family, Mr. Edward Muessel serving as its president. It is one of the oldest institutions of the county, and has served its part in making South Bend one of the leading industrial centers. Though his business demanded much of his attention, Christopher Muessel yet found time to labor for the advancement of many movements and measures intended to benefit the community and promote the welfare of his fellow men. He was a public-spirited, progressive citizen, honored for his integrity in industrial life and for his fidelity to every trust.

Edward Muessel, a son of this honored Indiana pioneer, was born in South Bend on the 3d of January, 1858, and in its public schools received his early educational training, while later he was a student in Notre Dame University. He then began work with his father in the brewery, and in 1895 commenced a wholesale liquor business. He was



Edward Muesel,



married to Mary Miller, a daughter of George Miller, of Marshall county, Indiana, and they have two daughters, Alma and Netta. Mr. Muessel is a member of the South Bend Turn Verein.

WILLIAM MUESSEL. One of the oldest and most enterprising business men of South Bend is William Muessel, the secretary of the Muessel Brewing Company, and who is ranked with the representative citizens of the place. His birth occurred across the sea in Germany, July 10, 1847, but when only six years of age he was brought by his father, Christopher Muessel, to the United States, who at once made his way to South Bend and permanently established the family home in this city. The year of the emigration was 1852, and shortly after their arrival the father established the brewing business. The little son grew to years of maturity in this city, and after completing his education in its public schools began work in his father's brewery, thus continuing until the latter's death, the son being then about thirty years of age. His brother Ludwig then assumed charge of the business, and when it was reorganized as the Muessel Brewing Company William Muessel was made the secretary, an office which he has since so ably filled. Although he entered upon a business already established, in conducting this and enlarging its scope he has so directed his efforts that its interests have grown apace with the progress which dominates this progressive age, and with the other members of this large manufactory he occupies a leading place in the business life of the community.

Mr. Muessel was married in 1875, Martha Kelner then becoming his wife, and she, too, claims the fatherland as the place of her nativity. Their union has been blessed by the birth of seven children: Leander, Otto S., Emma, Henry, Albert, Clara and William. In his fraternal relations Mr. Muessel is a member of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows of this city and the Turners Society. During the long period of fifty-three years he has made his home in South Bend, and during that time he has attained prominence in its business circles, while in private life no man in the city has more friends than he.

WALTER G. MUESSEL, treasurer and manager of the Muessel Brewing Company, was born in South Bend on the 5th of September, 1869, the eldest of the two sons of Ludwig Muessel. The father was the eldest son of

Christopher Muessel, who came to this country from Germany, and in an early day established the family home in South Bend. To him belongs the credit also of the establishment of the Muessel Brewery, and although fifty-five years have passed since that event it is yet owned by the family, and under their guidance has grown to large proportions, occupying a leading place among the large manufactories of South Bend.

Walter G. Muessel, the grandson of this early St. Joseph county pioneer, has spent his entire life in South Bend. After attending its public schools he entered Purdue University, where he pursued the mechanical engineering course and graduated in 1892. During the following two years he was employed as an engineer in different localities, and on the 1st of March, 1895, assumed the important position he now holds in the Muessel Brewing Company, that of treasurer and manager, while in addition he is also director of the American Trust Company of South Bend. His interests are many and varied, and he is numbered among the successful young business men of South Bend, where his entire life has been passed and where he has won and retained many friends.

The marriage of Mr. Muessel was celebrated in 1897, when Florence, the daughter of the late Andrew J. Chrisman, became his wife, and their three children are Robert, Helen and Hester. Mr. Muessel holds a leading place in the social as well as business circles of South Bend, and has membership relations with the Elks, the Odd Fellows and the Masonic orders.

ADOLPH J. MUESSEL, superintendent of the Muessel Brewing Company of South Bend, was born in this city on the 3d of October, 1870, the second son of Ludwig Muessel. The latter is the son of Christopher Muessel, who was the founder of the family in the United States and the organizer of the Muessel Brewing Company. After completing his education in the city schools of South Bend Adolph J. entered Notre Dame University, where he completed a three years' general course. During the three succeeding years he was employed in the sheet iron works of this city, and on the expiration of that period, in 1893, was made the superintendent of the Muessel Brewing Company, one of the largest manufacturing concerns of St. Joseph county. He has ever since discharged the duties of that important position, and South Bend is proud

to claim him among her enterprising young business men.

In 1897 Mr. Muessel was united in marriage to Sarah E. Blyler, the daughter of David Blyler, of St. Joseph county, and their only child is a daughter, Margarett. Mr. Muessel is a member of the Turners Association, and is a valued factor in the social life of his community.

LEIGHTON PINE. When Leighton Pine passed away one more name was added to the list of honored dead whose earthly records closed with the words, "Well done," but as long as memory remains to those who knew him the influence of his noble life will remain as a source of encouragement and inspiration. Many business concerns and moral enterprises owe their excellence and progress largely to his influence. He was in touch with the people, and from a sincere and deep-felt interest in their welfare labored for all that would prove of public benefit until the busy and useful life was ended.

Mr. Pine was born in the city of New York, February 10, 1844, the youngest son of William Pine, and his education was received in the schools of his native city. At an early age he learned photography, and during the Civil war was official photographer on the staff of General Gilmore. In the early '60s he entered the employ of Francis A. Ross, at that time engaged in cabinet work for the Singer Sewing Machine Company. With his far seeing judgment Mr. Pine proposed to the Singer Company the establishment of a cabinet factory in the middle west, which was approved, and he came to South Bend on the 15th of May, 1868. The city then, as now, offered superior inducements, and the company built on the east race, but the site was abandoned in a few years and the mammoth concern was built on West Division, one of the finest plants in the world, and with the new plant was established a foundry. In 1875 Mr. Pine left the Singer Company and went with the Oliver Chilled Plow Works, assisting in organizing the plant and becoming its secretary. But in November, 1879, he returned to the Singer Company, remaining with that corporation until his life's labors were ended in death. In the late '70s Mr. Pine also organized the Economist Plow Company, while later he organized the South Bend Spring Curry Comb Company, but the latter afterward passed

into the control of Marvin Campbell. He was a man of distinctive and forceful individuality, and the Singer Company eventually made him manager of all its great cabinet works in South Bend, Cairo, Illinois, Scotland, Germany and Russia. In this high position Mr. Pine displayed executive power and keen discrimination, and was widely recognized as a most capable business man. Much of the strength of his life for many years was given to the betterment of public life. He fought relentlessly against boodle and graft in public affairs, and his life was beautiful in its purity, goodness and Christian virtues. A staunch Republican in his political affiliations, he defended the policy of his party with intelligence and ardor.

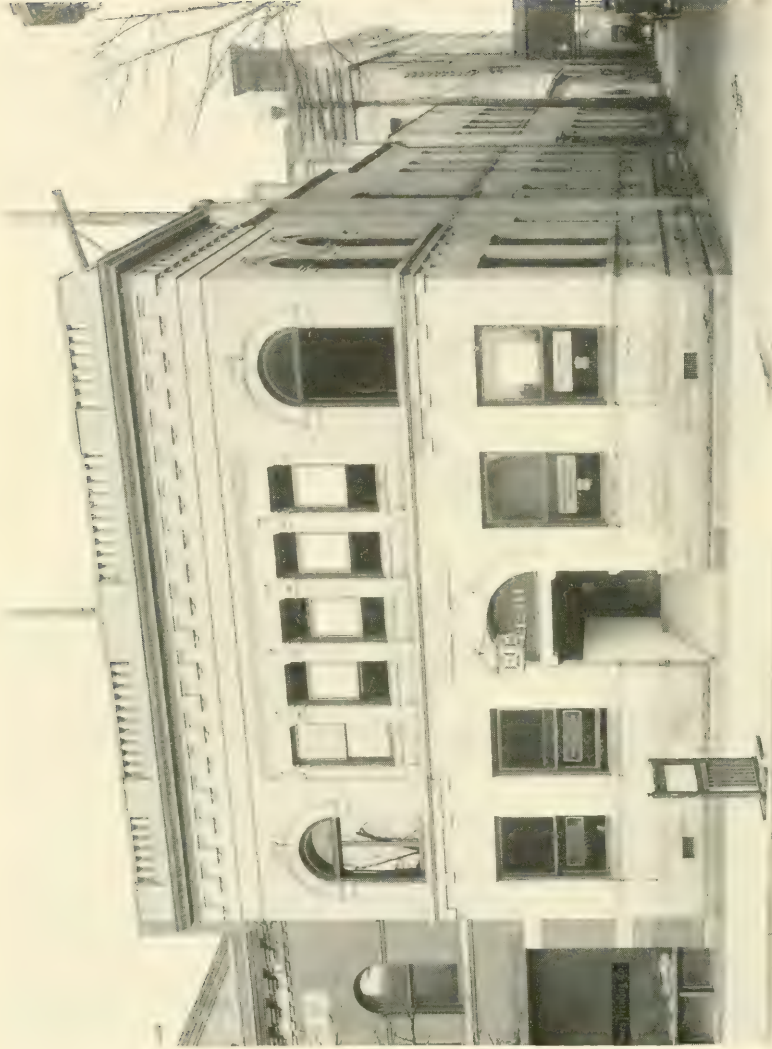
On the 5th of November, 1865, Mr. Pine was married to Maria C. Barmore, of New York city, and one son was born to them, Milton B., who now ably fills his father's position. The death of the loving husband and father occurred on the 15th of November, 1905. His loss was deeply mourned in this community, and his memory is enshrined in the hearts of his friends and associates, to whose interests he was ever faithful.

GUSTAV A. STUECKLE. From a little German home across the sea Gustav A. Stueckle made his way to the United States and entered upon a career which has proved successful. He is distinctively the architect of his own fortunes, for coming to this country without capital he has made his way to success through wisely directed efforts and to all that is ennobling in life. He was born in Wurtemberg, Germany, on the 1st of December, 1863, a son of Jacob John and Caroline (Rapp) Stueckle, also natives of Wurtemberg. They now reside in the village of Rohracker, in the district of Cannstatt, and Mr. Stueckle also has two brothers and two sisters in the fatherland.

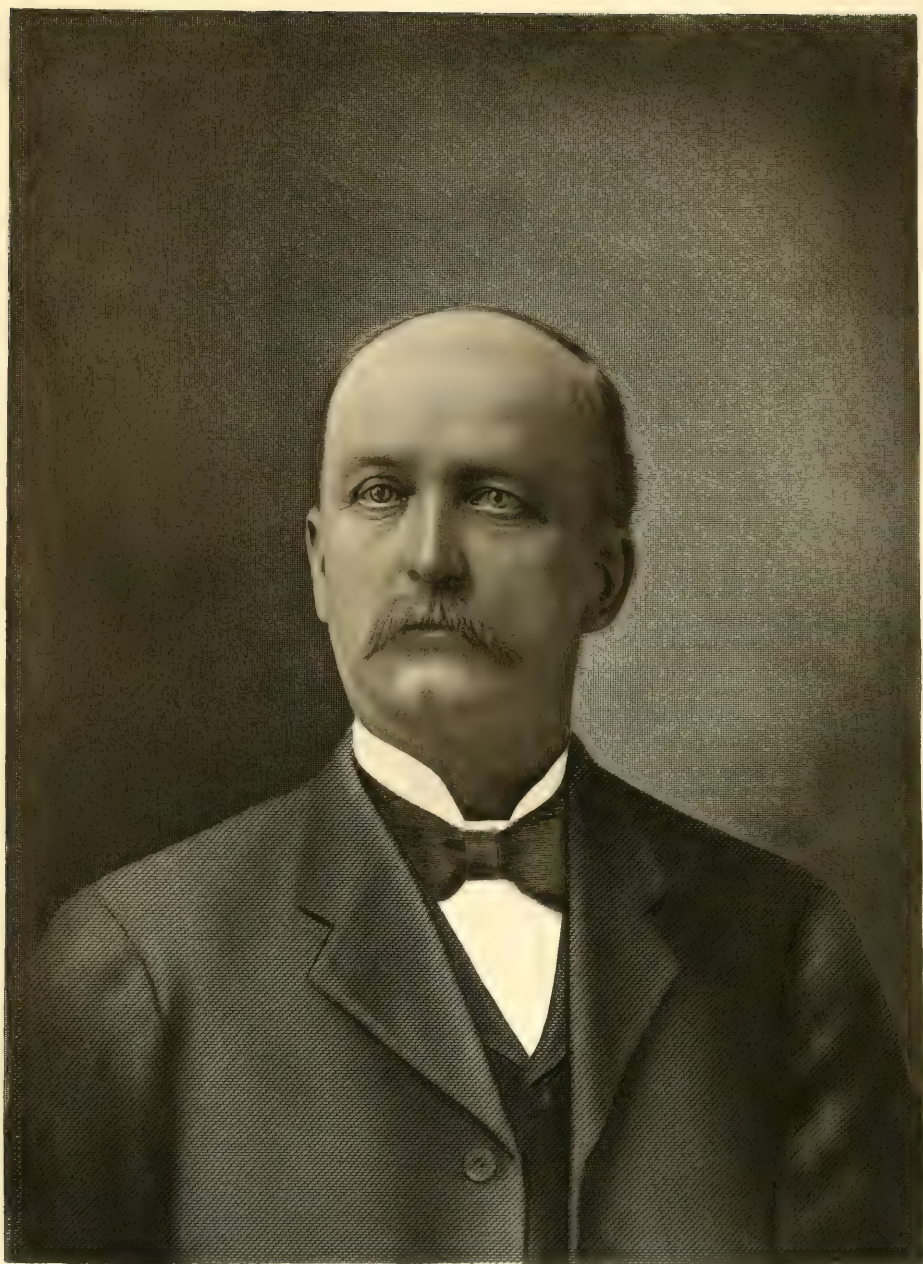
After receiving an excellent educational training in his native land Gustav A. Stueckle came to the United States, arriving in this country on the 23d of July, 1881, and immediately took up his abode in South Bend. Thus for many years his life history has been closely identified with the history of this city. His career has been one of untiring activity, but success has attended his efforts and has placed him in the ranks of the leading men of affairs. His first employment here was as a cabinet-maker, which



Leighton Orme



The Home Telephone Company Building



Theodore Thorman

was also the trade of his father, thus continuing for twelve years. During all those years he was also a diligent student, obtaining a good comprehensive knowledge of the English language and of the business methods of this country. In 1899 he entered upon a business life for himself, and through many channels he has contributed to his own prosperity and to the welfare and upbuilding of South Bend. He is president of the South Bend Brewing Company, which was organized in 1903, the stock of which is principally owned by local capital, and in 1900 he was elected a member of the city council to represent the Fourth ward, to which position he has been twice re-elected and is now serving his third term. The Democracy receives his hearty support and co-operation, and he is an active worker in its ranks.

In 1886 Mr. Stueckle married Elizabeth Margaret Döberlein, a daughter of John Döberlein, who came from Germany and settled in St. Joseph county in the early '70s. One son has been born of this union, Clarence C. Mr. Stueckle is a member of the Turn Verein, the Mannerchor and the Eagles. He arrived in this country a stranger in a strange land, with no knowledge of the English language, but by persistent study and hard and diligent work he has mastered the intricate problems of life, and few have more devoted friends than he. He has but lately returned with his family from a visit to his native land.

THEODORE THORWARD. No better illustration of the characteristic energy and enterprise of the German-American citizen can be found than that afforded by the career of Theodore Thorward, one of the best known business men of South Bend. Coming to this country with no capital except his abilities, he has made his way to success through wisely directed efforts, and he can now look back with satisfaction to past struggles. He was born in Germany on the 11th of November, 1859, and coming to the United States with relatives settled in Powhattan, Ohio, where he was educated in the public schools and also attended the German Methodist Episcopal College of Wallace, at Berea, Ohio. He fully realized the value of an education, and therefore worked his own way through college. Thus with an excellent foundation for his future life work he busied himself at various occupations until 1881, when he went to Fort Wayne, Indiana, and entered

the telephone business. He commenced work by soliciting for the first independent telephone company there, and after obtaining a thorough knowledge of the business he was made the assistant manager of the Home Telephone Company of that city.

At that time Mr. Thorward began looking about for new fields for his operations, and as South Bend offered a splendid opportunity he induced capital to invest here and secured a thirty-seven year franchise for a telephone system in South Bend and Mishawaka. He then organized the Home Telephone Company, with exchanges at South Bend, Mishawaka and several places, and the company now has two hundred miles of toll line connected with the Home Company. The system is one of the most perfect in the country, and under Mr. Thorward's presidency and management has been very successful, representing an investment of five hundred thousand dollars, including real estate in South Bend and Mishawaka. Mr. Thorward has also interested some well known capitalists in Chicago in the organizing of a long distance independent toll line between Chicago and South Bend, with the result that this city will be the hub of a large independent toll line system. He is president and general manager of the Home Telephone Company, and although his residence in South Bend dates from only 1902 he is numbered among its best known and most successful business men. His political support is given to the Republican party, and he takes an active interest in its work and upbuilding.

The marriage of Mr. Thorward was celebrated in 1881, when Miss Minnie Dendel, of Allegan, Michigan, became his wife, and they have two sons, George T., a graduate of the University of Michigan and now assistant manager of the Home Telephone Company, and Benjamin, a graduate of the South Bend high school and now a student at Ann Arbor. The family worship in the Methodist Episcopal church, and Mr. Thorward is a member of the order of Elks, the Commercial Athletic Club and the Indiana Club.

JOSEPH GREELEY BARTLETT, who died in South Bend on January 9, 1873, was one of the prominent pioneer merchants of the city, and, aside from his business career, is especially impressed upon the minds of the old settlers because of the leading part he took in the establishment of the Presbyterian

church in this locality. A native of New Hampshire, born in 1816, he came to St. Joseph county in the early thirties, while still a youth, and was thereafter reared, educated and trained to manly ways in the community in which he passed the balance of his life. When he came to Indiana all railroads were in their early infancy, and he passed through New York on his way westward, via the Erie canal. He lived, therefore, through a remarkable era of development, both for the east and west, of which latter section Indiana was a border state at the time of his coming to it.

When Joseph G. Bartlett arrived in South Bend he was already master of the baker's trade, and immediately proceeded to open a shop. He prospered in the undertaking, and added groceries to his bakery goods, the combination proving, in the after years, remarkably profitable. During his career as a merchant in these lines he received Myron Campbell into partnership, and for many years before his death he was placed among the leading business men and honorable, public spirited citizens of St. Joseph county. Quite early he built the present residence of the Bartlett family, its location then being at the head of Washington street.

Mr. Bartlett was married in New England to Elizabeth Springer, by whom he had four children—William, Joseph, Anna and Charles, all natives of South Bend, where the wife died in 1861. In 1865 he married again, his second wife being Mrs. Sarah Whittaker, and by this union had a son and a daughter—Harry H. and Mabel A. Both of these children were also born and reared in South Bend. Harry H. Bartlett is well known for his connection with the Singer Sewing Machine Company, and Mabel A. is a talented organist. The life of Joseph Greeley Bartlett is therefore very closely intertwined with the history of South Bend, considered from the standpoints of business, religious and family reasons.

During his long residence in South Bend Mr. Bartlett was among the most active leaders in the work of the Presbyterian church. He was long one of its most influential elders, helped to build its present house of worship, and was in every way among the most liberal contributors to its support and progress. He was an old-line Whig and Republican, and a member of the I. O. O. F. Energetic and conscientious in whatever field

of activity he entered, endowed with great common sense and an unusual power for making and retaining friends, when death called him away at the comparatively early age of fifty-nine, the community deeply mourned, both because of close attachment to his personality and because he seemed to be snatched away at the very height of his broad usefulness.

CHARLES ARTHUR CARLISLE. The glory of our republic is the perpetuation of individuality and in according the utmost scope for individual accomplishment. Of America is the self made man a product, and the record of accomplishment in this individual sense is the record which the true and loyal American holds in the deepest regard and highest honor. From a poor lad Mr. Carlisle has alone made his way, step by step, until he won admittance to one of the greatest commercial institutions of the land.

He was born in Chillicothe, Ross county, Ohio, May 4, 1864, and was educated in the public schools of that city, but to his mother he gives all credit for her persevering private tutoring at home. Owing to financial reverses in the family, he began at a very early day to contribute financial support at home, his first work being as a clerk in a grocery store, after which he tried his hand at the dry goods business, but found both confining and not to his liking. He next entered the railway service, commencing as messenger boy for the Marietta & Cincinnati Railway, now the Baltimore & Ohio Southwestern Railroad, at Chillicothe, Ohio. In 1884, however, he left the railway service and identified himself with journalistic work, becoming connected with the Ohio State Journal, of Columbus, Ohio, a leading Republican paper. In the broad field of journalism he came into contact with those who moulded public opinion, and from his association with public men his inspirations led him forward successfully into the great arena of public activity.

In 1886 Mr. Carlisle re-entered the railway service, determining upon a career in that great arm of commerce. Standing again upon the lowest round of the ladder, in a subordinate position with the local freight department of the Nickel Plate Railroad, the New York, Chicago & St. Louis Railroad, at Cleveland, Ohio, he passed successfully through various departments and in 1888 was elected to fill the very important posi-



Charles A. Carlisle

tion of cashier of three joint stations. In the following year he became the private secretary of the general manager of the Toledo & Ohio Central Railroad, at Toledo, Ohio. In 1890 he was made purchasing agent of the "Burke System" of railways, to which had been added the Toledo, Columbus & Cincinnati Railroad and the Kanawha Michigan Railroad.

Mr. Carlisle has recently been selected by the unanimous choice of the board of directors of the American Trust Company as its president. This is a new financial institution with a capital of two hundred thousand dollars and a surplus of fifty thousand, and which began business at South Bend about January 1, 1904. This institution, which ranks prominently among the foremost financial concerns of the state, is made up of the progressive element of this busy community, and numbers among its stockholders substantial, conservative leaders in modern and advanced methods, and who are prominent in civic, state and national affairs. He is a director of the Studebaker Brothers' Manufacturing Company, of South Bend, in charge of the purchasing department, the advertising department and the traffic department. He is the secretary of the South Bend Fuel and Gas Company, a director of the South Bend Malleable Iron Company and is prominently identified with many other extensive corporations.

Although Mr. Carlisle has no political aspirations and not seeking public favors, he has served as president of the Harrison Republican Club, the leading permanent Republican organization in St. Joseph county. He is vice-president of the National Association of Manufacturers, and, if the will of that organization had been heeded, he would doubtless have been at the head of the new Department of Commerce and Labor—with a seat in President Roosevelt's cabinet. He is a member of the executive committee of the Carriage Builders' National Association and is the vice-president for Indiana of the Scotch-Irish Society of America. He is also prominent in the great order of Masonry, being a thirty-second degree Mason and a Shriner as well as a Knight Templar. He served for four years as a member of Governor Mount's military staff of Indiana, with the rank of lieutenant colonel, and when Governor W. T. Durbin came into office he

commissioned Mr. Carlisle as a member of his staff, with the rank of colonel.

On the 17th of September, 1891, at South Bend, Mr. Carlisle was married to Miss Anna Studebaker, only daughter of Hon. and Mrs. Clement Studebaker. He has a beautiful summer home at Chautauqua, New York, where his summers are spent. He is a member of St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal church of South Bend, and takes a prominent interest in all the work of his church and is a member of its official board. He was an honored guest at the meeting of the Gridiron Club of Washington, D. C., at its banquet on January 31, 1903. His name has been enrolled in the great Guest Book of that world-famed organization, and will go down to posterity associated with the greatest and most brilliant of national leaders. Mr. Carlisle is also a member of the American Academy of Political and Social Science, of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania; the American Institute of Civics, of New York city; the Twentieth Century Club, of Chicago, Illinois; the Sphinx Club, of New York city, composed of only national advertisers; the Columbia Club, of Indianapolis, Indiana; the Chicago Athletic Association, of Chicago, Illinois; the Indiana Club, of South Bend; the Northern Indiana Historical Society, of South Bend; and the Country Club, of St. Joseph Valley, of which he was its first president. He is a life member of the Scottish Patriotic Association, of Glasgow, Scotland, the object of which is the cultivation of the spirit of patriotism and the defense of Scotland's national rights. He is also chairman of the executive committee of the Associated Charities of South Bend, an association that devotes much time and attention to the poor as well as correcting the indulgences of evil in the community.

CHARLES G. FOLSOM is a man who has a remarkable record, and from the study of his life history one may learn valuable lessons. It illustrates in no uncertain manner what it is possible to accomplish when perseverance and determination form the keynote to a man's life. Depending upon his own resources, he has risen from comparative obscurity to a place of prominence in the commercial world.

Mr. Folsom was born in Waterloo, Seneca county, New York, on the 2d of November, 1845. His father, Benjamin Folsom, was a native of Vermont and started upon his won-

derful business career as a wagon maker. He subsequently rose to the position of a railroad contractor, and removing to New York in 1823 he became a personal friend of DeWitt Clinton, governor of that state. During his residence there he was one of the promoters of the Erie canal, also the builder and contractor for the first line of telegraph from Albany to Buffalo, this important work being completed on the 1st of November, 1845. He was then awarded many important contracts on the New York Central, the New York & Erie, the Michigan Central, the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy, the Michigan Southern and Northern Indiana railroads. He was afterwards with the New York & Erie, where he was the right-hand man for Jay Gould and Jim Fisk. Coming to South Bend, Mr. Folsom resided on a farm in the western part of the county until 1863, when he went to Detroit, Michigan, and constructed the Detroit City Railroad, in which he was a stockholder. The death of this great financier and business man occurred suddenly near Laporte, Indiana, while on a railroad journey from Chicago to the east. Mrs. Folsom bore the maiden name of Polly Sedgwick, and was a native of the state of New York, her people having been among the early settlers of the Mohawk valley.

Charles G. Folsom, whose name introduces this review, received his early educational training in the schools of Adrian, Michigan, while later he became a pupil in the South Bend public schools. His first employment after completing his education was at the tinner's trade in Adrian, Michigan, later following the same occupation in Detroit, and in 1866 he came to South Bend. For some time after his arrival in this city he worked at his trade at St. Mary's, which was then built for the music hall, also assisting in the construction of the St. Joseph Academy of South Bend. In 1867 he removed to Champaign county, Illinois, where he was engaged in agricultural pursuits until 1872, when he returned to South Bend and started in business in a very small way at the tinner's trade. During the panic of 1873 he suffered in the general disaster, and he then removed to Rolling Prairie and was engaged in the hardware business for four years. Coming again to this city, Mr. Folsom became an employe of the Studebakers, Singler and Creviston in a hardware business, after which he was with the Miller Knoblock Company, and next with

the Lake Shore Railroad Company. His present business was commenced by pushing a hand cart on the streets of South Bend and doing odd jobs at the tinner's trade, and from that time to the present, as the years have grown apace, his business has enlarged correspondingly until it now occupies a place among the leading industrial concerns of South Bend, and the name of the C. G. Folsom Manufacturing Company is well known throughout northern Indiana. The manufactory gives employment to fifty men and is a valuable adjunct to the business interests of the city. Mr. Folsom was the first manufacturer of rural mail boxes in the United States, and still continues in their construction, and in addition manufactures all kinds of sheet metal and structural iron work. As a man his business ability has been constantly manifested, showing unlimited possibilities, nothing too great to grasp and master, and the extensive concern of which he is now the head is a monument to his wonderful power.

Mr. Folsom married Miss Mary C. France, a daughter of Adam and Lydia France, of Rolling Prairie. They have five living children: Jonathan France, engaged in business with his father, Lydia Mary, Emma Lou, Charles R. and Nadine. Mr. Folsom is an active worker in the ranks of the Republican party, and has been twice elected as a member of the city council, representing the fifth ward, which is one of the richest wards in the city, and is the present incumbent of the office. He is a member of Lodge No. 45 of the Masonic order, having been connected with that fraternity since 1871, and is also a member of the Chapter and Council, of which he is past high priest and a Knight Templar. He is vice-president of the County Humane Society.

F. A. BRYAN. Rising above the heads of the mass are many men of sterling worth and value, who by sheer perseverance and determination, accompanied by unflagging effort, have risen from the ranks of the commonplace to eminence, and to occupy positions of respect and trust. Among this number may be mentioned F. A. Bryan, whose birth occurred in Carroll county, Ohio, on the 21st of December, 1867, his parents being John Henry and Anna (Azdel) Bryan, both natives of Ohio. The father, who was a well known business man, passed away in death in 1872.

F. A. Bryan attended the public schools of Wellsville, Ohio, and the Pennsylvania

State College, graduating in the engineering course in the latter institution. Thus having laid an excellent foundation for his future life work he became an employe as engineer of the Pennsylvania Railroad, the Edison General Electric Company and Michigan Central Railroad. In May, 1901, he came to South Bend in the capacity of manager of the South Bend Electric Company, which was formed in 1884, and he is also vice-president and general manager of the Elkhart Electrical Company, the St. Joseph and Elkhart Electric Company and the Berrien Springs Electric Company. These companies own practically the entire water power along the river, and are under the management of Mr. Bryan. Since assuming charge of these concerns they have been greatly developed and improved, for previous to that time they were purely lighting companies, while now the various corporations have secured rights and erected dams along the river, thus supplying practically all the power used by the smaller manufacturing companies in South Bend. Wires have also been placed underground, and the service in every way has been vastly improved, being now one of the best organized systems in the state. The company owns the Elkhart dam, the Twin Branch dam, the Buchanan dam and has commenced construction on the Berrien Springs dam, while in the near future they will have dams at the state line and Bristol, making six in all. It is a master mind that can plan, execute and control a large institution, and the gentleman who stands at its head well deserves to be ranked among the most prominent business men of his adopted city, where only ability of a very superior order is now recognized.

In 1896 Mr. Bryan was united in marriage to Estella McVicker, of Lisbon, Ohio. They are members of the Presbyterian church, and Mr. Bryan is also connected with the Country, Commercial and Indiana clubs.

CAPTAIN EDWIN NICAR. Its mission fulfilled in the union of its warring factions by a bond of common humanity, and, in place of a demoralized trade, the substitution of a commercial growth unparalleled in the history of the world—the tragedy of the Civil war has become only an echo, a fading into historical mists of tented fields, glittering armaments, marching armies and waving banners. Individual experience alone keeps a vivid remembrance of the desolation and uncertainty, carnage and heroism, of the great

struggle for unity of purpose and ideals, which animated the followers of the great Emancipator.

Yet among those who comprise the fast-thinning ranks of veterans a difference exists in impressions, influence and effect, and a perusal of the lives of these soldiers reveals stories of great human interest and import. To some the service was an episode, a fulfillment of duty as they saw it, and a subsequent return to accustomed tasks with little change save a broader conception of existence. To others the experience was a keynote, a magnet toward which seemed to gravitate their zealous youth, and which mastered and determined their entire future. In this class belongs Captain Edwin Nicar.

Edwin Nicar, who is connected with one of the largest corporations in northern Indiana, the Oliver Company, was born in St. Joseph county, on the 1st of January, 1840, a son of Robert B. and Mary E. (Lewellen) Nicar, both natives of Lynchburg, Virginia. In 1833 the father came to Mishawaka, Indiana, making the journey by team across the Allegheny mountains. There he followed his trade of a miller and millwright until 1851, when he was elected treasurer of St. Joseph county and thereafter made his home in South Bend. He held the office mentioned for five years, after which, until 1865, he was engaged in the hardware business in that city, ill health then necessitating his retirement from active work. His death occurred in the year named. The deceased was a Whig and afterwards a Republican and strongly opposed to slavery, this attitude being the principal reason which induced him to leave his native state. He was both honored and beloved among the early pioneers of St. Joseph county.

After completing his education in the public schools of South Bend, Edwin Nicar went to Wisconsin to live with relatives, and there remained for four years. Returning thence to South Bend he joined his father in the hardware business and thus continued until the outbreak of the Civil war, responding to the first call of 1861 and, as a member of Company B, Fifteenth Indiana Infantry, serving as a private and non-commissioned officer until November of that year. He was then made second lieutenant and in December, adjutant of the regiment with the rank of first lieutenant, while on the 26th of November, 1863, he was promoted to the rank of captain. He served in western Virginia,

under Rosecrans and McClellan, and participated in the battle of Rich Mountain. This was followed by scouting duty during the summer months, when his command, under General J. J. Reynolds, repulsed the rebels under General Lee at Cheat Mountain. On the third of October, 1861, he took part in the battle of Green Briar, while in November following he was ordered to Louisville, Kentucky, to join the army of General Buell, afterward organized as the Army of the Ohio and the Army of the Cumberland. In February, 1862, a new division was formed commanded by Brigadier General Thomas J. Wood, and in that command Mr. Nicar served until after the battle of Chickamauga. He participated in the battles of Shiloh and Perryville and in numerous skirmishes, and was afterward in the fighting ranks at Stone River and Murfreesboro, in the latter engagement the fragment of a shell injuring his horse and wounding him in the ankle—the only wound he received during his entire army career. At this battle, also, his regiment suffered severely in killed and wounded, as it did in many other engagements. His brigade was the first to cross into Chattanooga and was left there as a garrison during the progress of the battle of Chickamauga. Afterward the regiment was thrown into Sheridan's division and took part in the battle of Missionary Ridge, where it lost one hundred and ninety-nine out of three hundred and thirty-four engaged. Captain Nicar, then on staff duty, was with General Wagner during the Atlanta campaign, and in May, 1864, took part in the battles of Rocky Face Ridge, Dalton, Adairsville and Kenesaw Mountain, after which he rejoined his regiment, which had been ordered home on account of the expiration of service, and was mustered out at Indianapolis, on the 25th of June, 1864. His military career is one which will ever redound to his honor as a loyal and brave son of the republic, and as one whose courage was founded on the rock of his convictions.

Returning at once to South Bend, Captain Nicar remained with his father in the hardware business until 1865, when he was admitted to a partnership, continuing to conduct the establishment after his father's death, or until 1875, when for four years he assumed the responsible duties of clerk of the circuit court. He then entered the employ of the Oliver Chilled Plow Works, with which corporation he has ever since continued.

In 1884 Captain Nicar was married to Miss Cora A. Beckwith, of Michigan, and they have two sons—Edwin B. and Philip L. Locally Mr. Nicar has held not a few positions of responsibility. He reorganized the volunteer fire department of South Bend and was its chief from 1873 to 1876. In 1902 he was appointed minority member of the board of public works, and, whether as an official or a private citizen has always done his full share in advancing the best interests of his home city. In his fraternal connections he is a member of the Masonic order, the Grand Army of the Republic, the Indiana Commandery of the Loyal Legion and Auten Post of South Bend, No. 8. Captain Nicar's character and personality are as well known in South Bend as are his services in behalf of the Union. Kindly in manner, obliging at home and abroad, always ready to do a good turn for those less fortunate than himself, he embodies many excellencies of mind and heart, and enjoys the appreciation and good will of all.

SAMUEL A. HILLIER. For many years an active factor in the industrial interests of South Bend, Samuel A. Hillier, through his diligence, perseverance and business ability, acquired a handsome competence, and also contributed to the general prosperity through the conduct of a large enterprise, for until his death he was the leading lumber merchant of South Bend. His birth occurred in Burlington, New Jersey, October 30, 1850. His father, Richard Hillier, was a native of England, and after coming to America became an extensive shoe manufacturer of Burlington, New Jersey, where he was also extensively engaged in the real estate business. In Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, he was married to Francis Stoll, who was born in Switzerland, but came to America when a child and was reared in the east. They became the parents of nine children, four sons and five daughters, of whom Samuel A. was the youngest in order of birth, and all grew to years of maturity.

After attaining to manhood's estate Samuel A. Hillier left his native city of Burlington and came to South Bend, being a lad of eighteen years of age when he arrived in this city, his only capital being his willing hands and willing heart. During a period of two years he was employed as a contractor, after which he launched out into the lumber business, organizing what is now known as the Indiana Lumber and Manufacturing Com-

pany, and when death cut short his busy and useful life he was serving as its manager. In other fields of endeavor he also directed his energies, and his wide counsel and sound judgment contributed to the success of one of the leading concerns of the city. He erected his beautiful residence at 1104 South Michigan street, and also owned many dwellings at one time, in addition to valuable farming land.

On the 8th of February, 1872, Mr. Hillier was united in marriage to Martha E. Elder, who was born in South Bend on the 9th of January, 1851, her father, John Elder, having been numbered among the early pioneers of the city. He was born in Scotland November 11, 1808, and in 1838 came to America, locating first in Buffalo, New York, where he followed his trade of tailoring. In 1839 he came to South Bend, and in 1847 purchased a small farm on South Michigan street, which is now a very valuable property. His political support was given to the Whig party, and he was one of the best known men in the city of South Bend in an early day. In 1842 Mr. Elder married Emily A. Sweet, a native of Connecticut, and they became the parents of nine children, five sons and four daughters, namely: Robert and Alexander, deceased; John W.; Mary A. Whitten; William A., Martha E.; Amanda A. Williams; Sidney; and Harriet E., deceased, all of whom were born, reared and educated in South Bend. The loving husband and father died on the 7th of October, 1895. Unto Mr. and Mrs. Hillier were born six children: Ada A.; Edith E., the wife of H. C. Kreighbaum, of Tulley, New York; Forest, treasurer of the Indiana Lumber Company; Glenn, a resident of Salt Lake City, Utah; Samuel Dale; and Martha Francis. Mr. Hillier held membership relations with the Royal Arcanum, and was also a member of the First Methodist Episcopal church, in which he was an active worker and a generous contributor. His political affiliations were with the Republican party, and he was one of the active temperance workers of the community. Death came to him while with his wife at Kingston, Ontario, whither he had gone to take a long needed rest, at the age of fifty-two years, when one more name was added to the list of honored dead whose earthly records closed with the words, "Well done, thou good and faithful servant."

Mr. and Mrs. Hillier and son, Dale, left South Bend late Monday night, their objective

point being Portland, Maine, for an absence of two months. They left the train at Kingston, intending to take a boat for a trip down the St. Lawrence river to Montreal, Canada, and to there resume the journey by rail to Portland. Mr. Hillier had been in poor health resulting from heart troubles and when they arrived at Kingston Tuesday night he became very ill. A number of telegrams regarding his condition were sent to South Bend and on Thursday his son, Forest, and daughter, Miss Ada, were summoned.

Mr. Hillier was one of South Bend's best known citizens. He was an excellent business man, a man of high character and one who made and kept friends.

F. C. WINKLER. During a long period the name of F. C. Winkler has been prominently identified with the business interests of St. Joseph county, and as the president of the Winkler Brothers Manufacturing Company he is too well known to need introduction to the readers of this volume. A native son of South Bend, his natal day was the 10th of July, 1854, and he is a worthy representative of the sturdy sons of the fatherland, his father, Charles Winkler, being a native of Darmstadt, Germany. When eighteen years of age he left his little home across the sea and came to America, but three years later returned to his native land, where he spent one year, thence coming again to this country and locating in South Bend. About 1856 he removed to Ohio, which continued as his home until 1862, and in that year returned to South Bend. During his residence in Ohio he was employed as a merchant, but on his return to Cass county, Michigan, he engaged in agricultural pursuits, thus continuing until his removal to St. Joseph county, Indiana, in 1891. Again he returned to South Bend, and is yet an honored resident in this city. In his native land Mr. Winkler married Barbara Brickman, a native also of Germany, and her death occurred when she had reached the age of sixty-eight years. In their family were six children, four sons and two daughters, all of whom grew to years of maturity and were an honor to the honored name.

F. C. Winkler, the eldest child in order of birth, was reared on a farm in Michigan, receiving his elementary education in its common schools and completing his training in Notre Dame University. He learned the wagon and carriage builders' trade at Niles, Michigan, and in 1877, with his brother Len-

hart, engaged in the manufacturing business at what is known as Trutt Corners in Cass county, but three years later removed to South Bend and resumed their manufacturing, while in addition they also added the grocery, coal and wood business, admitting Charles H. Winkler to the partnership. The brother Lenhart died about 1897. After a time the grocery, coal and wood departments were abandoned, and in 1902 the firm was incorporated as the Winkler Brothers Manufacturing Company, with F. C. Winkler, president; C. H. Winkler, vice-president; William Knoblock, treasurer, and John G. Grimm, secretary, these gentlemen also constituting the board of directors. In this large manufactory are constructed business and delivery wagons of every description, and their plant has been constantly enlarged to meet the growing demands of the trade.

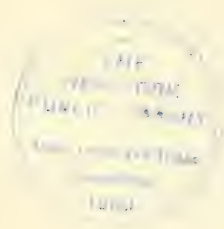
On the 6th of May, 1879, Mr. Winkler was united in marriage to Emma Jane Gardner, and their five children are Sada B., Jenevieve, Alfreda, Frederick Charles and Harold. Ever since attaining to years of maturity Mr. Winkler has taken an active part in the public affairs of his community, and has long been accounted one of the prominent and progressive citizens of South Bend, affiliating with the Democratic party. He has earned for himself an enviable reputation as a careful man of business, always known for his prompt and honorable methods of dealing, which have won the deserved and unbounded confidence of his fellow men. The family affiliate with the Catholic church, and he is also a member of the Knights of Columbus and St. Paul's Benevolent Society.

JOHN C. WAGNER, who is now living retired from the active duties and cares of life, enjoying the fruits of his years of toil in the past, was born in Peru, La Salle county, Illinois, on the 11th of September, 1849. His father, John C. Wagner, a native of Prussia, Germany, came to America with his parents when about seventeen years of age, and after a residence in Maryland for a short time the family came to St. Joseph county in 1831. At that time John C. Wagner, Sr., entered the property which afterward became the county poor farm, on the Michigan road, which he owned and operated for about ten years, when he sold it and purchased the present Stover farm. At that time the property was owned by B. A. Birdsell, and Mr. Wagner subsequently disposed of it to Jacob Stover, father

of Ex-Treasurer George H. Stover. Moving thence to Mishawaka, he organized the first brewery in St. Joseph county, located on the present site of the Baker Wagon Works, but after conducting this for several years the brewery was converted into a furniture factory. For a short time thereafter Mr. Wagner was a resident of Illinois, and returning to South Bend formed what is now known as the Kamm & Shellingar Brewery Company, which he conducted from 1849 until 1868. In the latter year he sold his interest therein and retired from the active cares of a business life, his death occurring when he had reached the age of eighty-two years. His name was inscribed high on the roll of St. Joseph county's honored pioneers, and he performed well his part in the further development of the community. Mrs. Wagner, who bore the maiden name of Barbara Meyer, was a native of Alsace, France, now a part of Germany, and was there reared and educated. Coming to America with her parents, the family home was first established in Ohio, but later in St. Joseph county, Indiana, and she lived to the age of seventy years. In the family of Mr. and Mrs. Wagner were two children, the sister of our subject being Rocelia, the wife of John Good, of Denver, Colorado.

John C. Wagner, the younger of the two children, was born during the sojourn of his parents in La Salle county, and when less than a year old they returned to St. Joseph county and he was educated in the schools of Mishawaka and the University of Notre Dame, in the latter institution taking the commercial course, while his preceptor in mathematics was Judge Howard, the editor of this work. During the long period of nineteen years Mr. Wagner was proprietor of the Union House, and although retired from its active management, still owns the building in which it is located, on the corner of Michigan and Center streets. He also owns a business block at the corner of Main street and La Salle avenue, as well as the commodious home at 521 North Main street, in which he lives. A Democrat in his political affiliations, from 1884 until 1892 he was very active in the political affairs of his community, having served as both city and county chairman and as a member of the State Central Committee of the Democratic party.

In 1870 was celebrated the marriage of Mr. Wagner and Clara A. Meyer, a daughter of Jacob Meyer, late of Harris township, St. Jo-





Rev. W. M. Lust c. 1910

seph county. Six children have been born of this union, three sons and three daughters: J. Edward, of Chicago; Eba B., at home; Catharine B., wife of John Blakley, of South Bend; and Ada, Lulu and Fred, all at home.

FATHER JOSEPH SCHERER, C. S. C., pastor of St. Mary's church in South Bend, was born in Zunsweir, Grand Duchy of Baden, Germany, July 15, 1850. When but five years of age he came with his parents to the United States, the family first locating in Pennsylvania, but in 1866 moved to Portsmouth, Ohio, and in June, 1873, the son Joseph came to Notre Dame to pursue his studies. His work therein was pursued thoroughly and diligently, and on the 21st of June, 1875, he entered the novitiate, but just one year later, on the 23d of June, 1876, he became a professor of the college. In 1880, by Rt. Rev. Dwenger, Father Scherer was ordained to the ministry, and from that time until 1887 served as president of St. Isidor's College at New Orleans. In that year he was made pastor of the Sacred Heart church, New Orleans, Louisiana, and in 1890 was called to St. Mary's Academy as its chaplain. In 1897 Father Scherer was transferred to Notre Dame as assistant superior of the community house and pastor of the congregation, but in the following year he was sent to Cincinnati, Ohio, as president of St. Joseph College. Returning again to Notre Dame in 1904, Father Scherer was appointed superior of the community house, and upon the death of Rev. Father Johannes, C. S. C., was appointed his successor at St. Mary's church, where he has since been active in the continuance of the work to which he dedicated his life when in the prime of his early manhood. His influence has been far-reaching and beneficial, his power in his holy office having been exerted in a spirit of deepest human sympathy and tender solicitude and his efforts have been abundantly blessed.

REV. A. M. JUST, C. S. C., pastor of the Sacred Heart church of South Bend, was born in Harlange, Grand Duchy of Luxemburg, May 27, 1880. His elementary education was received in the Athenaeum of Luxemburg, but when fifteen years of age, in 1895, he went to Paris, France, and studied in the University of Angers. In 1902 he began his travels over the eastern country, visiting Rome, Bengal, where he remained for two years, and other points in Asia. On account of ill health he then came to America, where

he entered the Washington Catholic University, and was ordained priest on the 2d of August, 1906. On the 6th of October, 1906, Father Just was appointed the successor of Rev. P. P. Klein as pastor of the Sacred Heart church of South Bend, where he ministers to a congregation of one hundred and five families.

REV. A. ZUBOWICZ, C. S. C. For many years Rev. Zubowicz has been one of the most efficient laborers in the cause of Christianity, and, a strong and forcible speaker, earnest and eloquent in the presentation of the truth, his efforts have been abundantly blessed. He was born in Poland March 4, 1860, and in his native country received an excellent academic and classical education. After coming to America in 1882 he still continued his search for knowledge by his matriculation in Notre Dame University, where he was subsequently graduated. For a time thereafter he was assistant pastor at St. Hedwig's and had charge of the schools for twelve years. He was instrumental in the building of the St. Casimir church and school, but subsequently left that charge and assumed the directorship of the St. Hedwig's school, where he remained until 1902. In that year he was called back to his former charge at St. Casimir, where he has ever since been the loved pastor. He organized the parish and all the societies connected with the church, and was also special missionary to the Tarakopa congregation at Rolling Prairie, Indiana. Rev. Zubowicz has been an indefatigable worker in the interests of his people, and in addition to the building up of his own charge he was also instrumental in the organization of the St. Casimir parish in South Bend, which under his able ministrations has increased from a population of two hundred and eighty families to five hundred and twenty-five families. He is a member of the C. S. C. order. He is thoroughly earnest and sincere in all his thoughts, words and deeds, and his noble, manly life has proved an inspiration to many of his associates.

REV. SAMUEL BECK. During many years Rev. Beck has been an efficient laborer in the cause of Christianity in northern Indiana in the Methodist Episcopal church, and has the honor of having served in its conference more years than any minister now living in the county. His birth occurred in Wayne county, Indiana, November 3, 1832, a son of William Beck, who was born in Darke county, Ohio, in 1809. His father was Samuel Beck, a na-

tive of the Old Dominion state of Virginia and of German descent, and in a very early day he removed with his family to Wayne county, Indiana, becoming a resident of the commonwealth ere its admittance to statehood. His son William was but a lad at the time of the removal of the family to Wayne county, receiving his education in its primitive pioneer schools, and in later life became a prosperous and well known farmer. In 1849 he removed to Putnam county, Indiana, where he devoted the remainder of his life to agricultural pursuits and died at the age of sixty-four years. Mr. Beck married Catherine Nethercutt, a native of Virginia and the daughter of Moses and Christena Nethercutt, who in a very early day moved from the Old Dominion on horseback to Ohio, carrying their little daughter in their laps. Later they continued the journey to Wayne county, Indiana, where Mrs. Beck grew to years of maturity, and subsequently the family moved to Putnam county. There, on November 26, 1858, and at the age of forty-five years, she died. The Nethercutt family was of German and English descent. Mr. and Mrs. Beck became the parents of nine children, but only three are now living, namely: M. M., who served as captain of the Eighteenth Indiana Battery during the Civil war, and is now editor of the Holton County Recorder and Tribune at Holton, Kansas; Samuel, whose name introduces this review, and David D., who is now serving as postmaster at Scott, Kansas. He was also a member of the Eighteenth Indiana Battery during the Civil war.

The boyhood days of Rev. Samuel Beck were spent on a farm in Wayne county, Indiana, where he attended its common schools during the fall and winter seasons, and when sixteen years of age went to Putnam county, this state, with his parents, but previous to this time he had taught one term of school in Wayne county. During the winter of 1849-50 he taught in the schools of Putnam county, continuing the dual occupation of teaching and farming for twelve years. From his youth Rev. Beck possessed a deeply religious nature, and as he grew older the meaning and responsibilities of life wore a yet graver aspect for him, finally leading him into the ministry of the Methodist Episcopal church in 1858, while in 1864 he entered the Northwest Indiana Conference, his first appointment being at Covington, Indiana. During his subsequent years in the ministry he was

stationed at Attica, Crawfordsville, Green Castle, Florenton, Terre Haute and Brazil, and at this time was made a presiding elder of the Frankfort district, thus continuing for four years. During the following three years he was stationed at Asbury, Terre Haute, after which he served six years in the La Porte district, residing at South Bend, Indiana. Subsequently for a similar period he served as the presiding elder of the Valparaiso district, closing his term of service there in 1902, and was then appointed corresponding secretary of the Preachers' Aid Society, while in addition and by request of the Quarterly Conference he is serving as associate pastor of the First Methodist Episcopal church of South Bend. He has for a number of years been permanently located in this city, where he owns his own pleasant residence and other property, including four houses which he rents.

On November 18, 1854, Rev. Beck was united in marriage to Elizabeth Adair, of Putnam county, Indiana, and they were the parents of four children, three of whom are now living: Emma, the wife of Rev. J. W. Walker, D. D., presiding elder of the Green Castle district; James Watson, M. D., a practicing physician of Des Moines, Iowa; Lillian, the deceased wife of Daniel Rich, a member of the firm of Rich & Rich, prominent attorneys of South Bend; and Bertha E., the wife of Horace Zimmerman, circulating manager for the South Bend Times. The mother of these children died in Green Castle, Indiana, in 1875, and in 1876 Rev. Beck married Harriet N. Dunlap, of Perrysville, Indiana, and their only child, Hubert, died at the age of two years. During his work in the ministry Rev. Beck has filled many pastorates, for many years labored as a presiding elder, and has served more years in the Methodist conference than anyone now living in the county. A strong and forcible speaker, earnest in the presentation of the truth, his efforts have been abundantly blessed, and although he has practically retired from the active ministry, he yet earnestly continues the work to which he devoted his life when in the prime of his early manhood.

REV. FATHER CHARLES L. STUER, pastor of St. Bavo's Catholic church, Mishawaka, was born at St. Gilles, East Flanders, Belgium, on the 11th of September, 1876. He was reared and educated in his fatherland, pursuing a course of six years at St. Anthony



Ch. L. Shure



ST. BAVO'S CHURCH, MISHAWAKA.



Jos F. De Groot

College, Renaix, Belgium, after which he entered the College of Philosophy at St. Nicholas, a town situated a few miles southwest of Antwerp. He remained at that institution for about two years, after which he attended the seminary at Ghent, Belgium, until June 10, 1900, upon which date he was ordained priest of the diocese of Ghent. Following his first mass he became preceptor in a noble Belgian family, and at a still later date professor of French, Flemish and Commerce in St. Joseph Institute, at St. Nicholas. While he was thus engaged he received a visit from Bishop Theophile Meerschaert, of Guthrie, Oklahoma, who was so attracted to the personality of the priest that he urged him to come to the United States, but his own bishop prevailed on him to remain another year in Belgium, during which time he held the position of assistant at Wieze. During this year Father Oechtering of Mishawaka interceded through Father Stuer's bishop at home in Belgium, for a priest to be sent here, and Father Stuer was thus prevailed on to come to Mishawaka instead of Oklahoma. His labors here have been such as to receive only words of praise from all denominations.

FATHER ROMAN MARCINIAK, C. S. C. One of the well known and most generally loved Polish citizens of South Bend is Father Roman Marciniak, pastor of St. Stanislaus church. He was born in the city of New York January 17, 1873, and was but a small boy when he came to South Bend, receiving his elementary education in the parochial school of St. Hedwig, after which he entered Notre Dame University and later the Washington Catholic University, remaining in the last named institution for two years. He was ordained at Notre Dame on the 12th of September, 1897, and was made assistant pastor at St. Hedwig's for one year, while during the following two years he served in the same capacity at the Holy Trinity Polish church in Chicago, Illinois. At the end of that time he was made pastor of St. Stanislaus church, entering upon his duties in this charge in 1900. His parish consists of three hundred and sixty families, with a fine brick church and residence, while in 1903 he was instrumental in the erection of a school house in connection with the church. Father Marciniak is an efficient laborer in the cause of Christianity, and is proving a light to guide many to the better way.

REV. JOHN F. DE GROOTE, C. S. C. It is of distinct value to the thoughtful reader to be able to scan the life history of one who not only has progressed through the unaided force of his own personality, but has achieved success according to a wisely matured plan in which the details seem to have been nicely calculated, each with reference to the other. As a noteworthy example of this rare and strong type of manhood is presented the honored subject named above.

The Rev. John Francis De Groote, pastor of St. Patrick's church of South Bend, is one of the most esteemed and able pastors the city has ever had. In seeking for the causes which have contributed to his success, they may be summed up by saying: The dignity of a moral leader, the literary ability of a teacher and the eloquence of an orator—a combination of qualities which are bound to produce highest results. It is no very rare thing for a poor boy in our country to become a prosperous man or occupy a commanding position in the world, but many who fought their way from poverty to wealth, from obscurity to prominence, retain some scars and marks of the conflict. They are apt to be narrow and grasping, even if not sordid and unscrupulous. Father De Groote, however, is an instance of a man who has achieved success without paying the price at which it is so often bought, for his prominence has not removed him farther from his fellow men, but has brought him into closer and more intimate relations with them; the more success he has had, the more he has done for those around him, for his congregation and city, and he is now numbered among its most prominent citizens. He is a native of Indiana, born in Mishawaka August 27, 1866, a son of Benjamin De Groote, a native of Belgium, and Catherine Woods, who was a native of Ireland. His father immigrated to America and became a prosperous farmer of St. Joseph county. Until he was fourteen years of age Father De Groote lived at Mishawaka and attended the parochial schools of his native city. In 1881 he entered Notre Dame University and worked his way through the preparatory courses, afterwards taking a classical course, with a view of preparing for the priesthood. He graduated from that famous institution with high honors in 1887. He later went to Austin, Texas, as prefect of discipline at St. Edward's College, where he remained one year, when he was called

to New Orleans, Louisiana, as prefect of discipline at the Holy Cross College in the Crescent City. Here he remained four years. Father De Groote was ordained to the priesthood in 1893 at Notre Dame, by Bishop Rade-macher, of Ft. Wayne. While in New Orleans he was assistant pastor of the Sacred Heart church. In March, 1899, Father De Groote was called to South Bend as pastor of St. Patrick's church, to succeed the late Father Clark. Under his careful and intelligent pastorate the church has advanced in usefulness, and Father De Groote has given to his charge his earnest thoughts and unselfish labor. Each day witnesses the completion, as far as lies in his power, of the tasks assigned him. He does all things well and in perfect order, realizing that a power higher than his measures the extent of his work. He is a man of rare mental graces, a deep thinker, and forcible speaker, whose silvery, poetic eloquence voices eternal truths and points the way to practical, useful citizenship. Father De Groote is loved by all who know him, regardless of church ties.

REV. TRAUGOTT THIEME. For many years an effective laborer in the cause of Christianity, Rev. Traugott Thieme has spent eighteen and a half years of his life as the loved pastor of the St. Paul's Evangelical Lutheran church of South Bend. He was born in Ft. Wayne, Indiana, October 27, 1857, a son of J. G. and Sophia (Bleeke) Thieme, the former a native of Saxony, Germany, and the latter of Prussia. In about 1847 the father left his native land for the United States, locating in Ft. Wayne, Indiana, where he was engaged in the clothing business for fifty years, and his death occurred when he had reached the seventy-eighth milestone on the journey of life. The mother was but thirteen years of age when she left her German home, and she is yet living, having attained the ripe old age of seventy-seven years. In their family were seven children, two sons and five daughters, all of whom grew to years of maturity.

Rev. Traugott Thieme, the eldest son and fourth child in order of birth, spent the early years of his life in his native city of Ft. Wayne, and for six years he was a student in the Concordia College of that city, pursuing the study of languages. In 1877 he matriculated in a college in St. Louis, Missouri, in which he was graduated in 1880, and immediately thereafter he took up his abode

at Tuscumbia, Colbert county, Alabama, where he remained for two years and four months, returning thence to Columbia City, Whitley county, Indiana. For six years he there labored as a minister of the gospel, and at the close of the period, in 1889, came to South Bend and has since been the loved pastor of St. Paul's Evangelical Lutheran church. A strong and forcible speaker, earnest and eloquent in the presentation of the truth, his efforts have been abundantly blessed, for during his pastorate the church membership has doubled in numbers, the church now containing five hundred and thirty members. In connection with the church is a school, where all branches are taught as well as the Bible, and the pupils from this institution can enter the eighth grade of the public schools. The school is under the supervision of two competent teachers, and the teaching is performed in German and English, but mostly English.

In 1881 Rev. Thieme was united in marriage to Anna Roemer, who was born and reared in St. Louis, Missouri, the daughter of J. C. D. Roemer, a prominent merchant of that city. Six children have blessed this union: Rev. Traugott Thieme, Jr., a minister in the German Lutheran church of Saskatoon, Canada, and he is also a missionary; Anna, the wife of Oscar Roeder, of Bremen, Indiana; and Hattie, Beata and Martin. One little son, Otto, died at the age of four years. Rev. Thieme is a member of the Evangelical Lutheran Synod of Missouri, Ohio and other states, and in its central district he is the visitor of its congregation and pastors.

REV. PETER LAUTH, C. S. C., pastor of the St. Joseph church of South Bend, was born at the bend of the Mosel river in Luxemburg, Germany, May 24, 1834, but just twenty years later, in 1854, he bade adieu to his boyhood's home and friends and came to the United States, landing in New York city on the 9th of May following. For a few years thereafter he was a resident of Illinois, and in 1859-60 was a student in St. Mary's College of Chicago, while on the 7th of September, 1861, he came to Notre Dame. On the 7th of March, 1869, he was ordained to the priesthood, and for a time thereafter served as assistant priest to Father P. P. Cooney, of St. Patrick's church in South Bend, going thence to the St. Joseph church, where he served as its pastor from 1872 until 1876. During the following year he served as presi-



L. A. Moench

dent of the St. Joseph College of Cincinnati, during the following three years was engaged in missionary work with his former pastor, Father Cooney, and from 1887 to 1881 was the pastor of St. Patrick's church of South Bend. Going thence to California, Rev. Lauth then spent one year among the Indians there, from whence he journeyed to Austin, Texas, and after a pastorate in that city of sixteen years, went to New Orleans and served as pastor of the Sacred Heart church for one year. He then returned to Notre Dame, where for a similar period he served as pastor of the Sacred Heart church there, after which he again embraced the missionary work with Father Klein, and since the 5th of April, 1902, he has served as the loved pastor of the St. Joseph church of South Bend. Rev. Lauth has devoted himself without ceasing to the interests of humanity and to the furtherance of all good works, and there has not been denied him the full harvest nor the aftermath whose garnering shall bring the full reward in the words of commendation, "Well done."

REV. MARTIN GOFFENEY is one of the best and most generally loved citizens of South Bend, many years of whose life have been passed in this city as pastor of the Zion Evangelical church, located at 235 South St. Peter street. He was born in France, July 11, 1858, but when seventeen years of age he went to Basel, Switzerland, and for six years was a student in a missionary college there. On the expiration of that period he was sent to Western Africa, on the Atlantic coast, where as a missionary and teacher he labored until the climate of that locality so impaired his health that a change became necessary. Coming to America in the fall of 1883, Rev. Goffeney's first field of labor was at Sand Lake, on the Hudson river, where he remained for six years or until 1888, when he was called to South Bend. He entered upon his ministerial labors in this city in the Dutch Reformed church, with thirty families under his charge, but in the year following the Zion church was built, and in 1890 a school-house erected. During all this time, under his effective ministrations his congregation had increased rapidly in numbers, until in 1896 the church had to be enlarged to adequately accommodate its growing membership, but previous to this time, in 1894, a parsonage had also been built. The membership of the Zion church now contains two hundred and fifty

families. Rev. Goffeney has led a life of great activity in his holy calling, and to his unceasing labors are due the many improvements which have been instituted in the Zion church. He is thoroughly sincere in all his deeds, and his noble, manly life has proved an inspiration to many of his associates.

In 1886 Rev. Goffeney was united in marriage to Caroline Schnell, who was born in Stuttgart, Germany, and they have four children, Otto, Herbert, Waldemar and Irene. Rev. Goffeney is identified with many of the religious organizations of South Bend, and is an active and efficient worker in the cause of his Master.

REV. LOUIS A. MOENCH. Very few of the Roman Catholic clergy of the Ft. Wayne diocese are better known or more highly esteemed than Rev. Louis Aloysius Moench, irremovable rector of St. Joseph's church, Mishawaka, Indiana.

Father Moench is a native of Germany. He was born in the beautiful little village of Freudenberg, Baden, January 25, 1853, on the Feast of the Conversion of St. Paul, who has ever been his inspiration and his model; and rarely does he ascend the pulpit without some loving reference to the "Apostle of the Gentiles." His early education was obtained in the schools of his native town, and under the wise instruction and counsel of the pastor of the parish church he gained the impulse to follow in the steps of his Divine Master. With this end in view, when but fourteen years of age, he came to the United States and took up his residence with Rev. D. Duehmig at Avilla, Indiana, whom he ever regarded with filial affection. In 1869 he entered St. Francis Seminary, Milwaukee, Wisconsin, where he went through a thorough theological course. On the 10th of June, 1876, he was ordained priest for the diocese of Ft. Wayne by Rt. Rev. Joseph Dwenger, and at once began his labors as assistant pastor to Father Duehmig at Avilla.

Shortly afterward he was assigned to the cathedral in Ft. Wayne as assistant pastor, and in 1879 was sent to Lebanon, Boone county. In 1881 he returned to Ft. Wayne and took up the work of assistant at St. Mary's church, and in February, 1883, he was asked to go to Plymouth to fill the vacancy caused by the death of the good priest who had been pastor there for fourteen years. With trembling heart but with unbounded trust in the Providence of God, the young

Levite took up the responsibilities and cares that ever fall to the lot of those who will accept them. At Plymouth he spent the very flower of his life. He found the church sadly in debt, the school not up to the standard, and the congregation in tears. He set himself the task, with never wearying zeal, of giving his people a standing in the community. He taught them by precept and by example (and as a teacher he has few equals) the truths of their holy religion, and knew no rest until the work of the parish school had attained a high degree of excellence. Under his direction St. Michael's Academy came to be one of the strongest educational factors in the diocese. His maxim, "The best is not too good for my people," bore excellent fruit in the schools; and above all, his towering faith attracted many outsiders who came, through him, to find their true home. His sixteen years of devoted, persistent work in Plymouth is best illustrated in the intelligence, loyalty and zeal of the people of St. Michael's parish as Catholics.

Father Moench is not a dreamer of dreams. He is practical, far-seeing and his sound judgment has enabled him to transact the business part of his duty in a most gratifying manner. Indeed, so rare is it to find a priest who possesses the varied gifts that have enabled Father Moench to fill the difficult role of pastor, teacher and financier so effectively that he has always had his full share of the latter. Wherever he has been stationed he has been obliged to undertake the unpleasant task of removing debts. Plymouth was no exception. He found a small congregation, a debt of five thousand dollars and an annual interest of five hundred dollars. At the close of his sixteen years of labor he had the happiness of seeing this entirely cleared, with the addition of many valuable improvements and four thousand dollars in the treasury. He was happy and content and came to look upon Plymouth as his abiding place during his earthly career. But God had ordered otherwise. There was a vacancy at Valparaiso and he was asked by the bishop to take up the work there.

Like a faithful soldier who knows no word but "obey," he went to Valparaiso in July, 1898, and found conditions similar to those of Plymouth in 1883. Although he remained there but four and a half years, he won the love and respect and esteem of all, irrespective of creed, race or party. He proved him-

self a pastor of whom his people were proud; a sympathetic, true friend; and a citizen and public benefactor of the highest type. On all important questions concerning the well-being of the community his wise counsel was sought. He improved the church, rectory and church property (which he found in a very dilapidated condition) until they looked like new. He purchased the school property from the Sisters of Providence and made it a permanent part of the church property. He reduced the indebtedness many thousands of dollars, and when he left, non-Catholics united with his own people in a loving tribute of esteem to the Right Reverend Bishop. In February, 1903, at the word of command, he took up the important work at Mishawaka, left incomplete by the death of the lamented Father Oechtering. Here he is following out the plan so dear to his heart, and is well fitted for the work.

He is a most convincing and persuasive speaker, an able theologian, a scholar of wide and varied culture. He has won for himself an enviable reputation as an educator of high rank. Under such guidance it is safe to predict that the parish and schools of St. Joseph's will rank among the first in the diocese. In all these things, however, he takes no credit to himself, humbly maintaining that,

"Neither he that planteth is anything, nor he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase."

CALVERT H. DEFREES. In connection with business interests the name of Calvert H. Defrees is not confined within the limits of South Bend or St. Joseph county, but is widely known through the northern portion of Indiana. He is a representative of one of the earliest families making permanent settlement within the borders of St. Joseph county, and throughout the many years which have since come and gone its members have aided materially in the development of the resources of the community and taken an active part in everything intending to promote the welfare of its people. As early as 1835 Archibald Defrees located on a farm west of South Bend, being accompanied on his journey hither by his son, Joseph H., who was a native of Ohio and was seventeen years of age at that time. He was here subsequently married to Sarah Calvert, who was born in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, but when a young lady in 1834 came with her father,

Isaac Calvert, to St. Joseph county, Indiana, where they were numbered among the early pioneers and where the father became well known as an agriculturist. Together Mr. and Mrs. Defrees lived and labored in St. Joseph county until their life work was ended in death, the father passing away at the age of seventy-five years, while the mother was seventy-six when called to join her husband in the home beyond. They became the parents of two children, a son and a daughter, the latter being Isabel, of South Bend.

Calvert H. Defrees, the elder of the children, was born in South Bend on the 5th of August, 1859, and during his youth and early manhood received an excellent educational training, having attended the high school of his native city. His first business venture was with the Stone & Pipe Manufacturing Company, and after severing his connection therewith was engaged in the laying of cement sidewalks and in sewer contracting until embarking in the sale of cement, lime and mason's supplies. Later Mr. Defrees became well known as a contractor for brick pavements, having constructed many miles of those pavements in South Bend, and he is now extensively engaged in the manufacture of cement, building stone, sewer pipe, fire brick, etc. Thus he stands today at the head of one of the leading industrial concerns of the county, and his prestige has been won through marked executive force, keen discrimination and unfaltering energy. Many enterprises stand as the result of his splendid ability, one being the South Bend & Southern Michigan Traction Railroad, which he built from South Bend to Niles, Michigan, and he has also done much contract work in this city and in Niles, Mishawaka, Michigan City, St. Joseph and Knox. It is a master mind that can plan, execute and control large undertakings, and the man who stands at their head well deserves to be ranked among the most prominent business men of northern Indiana.

In 1878 Mr. Defrees married Ellen Curl, who died after becoming the mother of two children, William, a resident of Los Angeles, California, and Grace, who died at the age of twenty-one years. The father subsequently married Mary S. Brown, and they have four children, Victor, Frank, Inez, and Isabel. Mr. Defrees has given a life-long support to the Republican party, and is a prominent member of the Masonic order, in which

he has reached the Knight Templar degree, and of the Elks of South Bend.

JAMES DAUGHERTY. One of the prominent and well-known citizens of South Bend and St. Joseph county was James Daugherty, who has long since passed away, but his influence for good yet remains with those who knew him, and his example is well worthy of emulation. Born in Adams county, Pennsylvania, March 28, 1824, he was of Irish parentage. His father, James Daugherty, Sr., was a native of the Emerald Isle, and was there married to one of its native daughters, Elizabeth McCloggan. After the birth of their first child they came to America, first locating in Pennsylvania, but later removing to Canton, Ohio, and for twelve years the father was a member of the teacher's profession. It was in the year 1850 that the family home was established on a farm in Penn township, St. Joseph county, Indiana, where the loving husband and father died just one year later.

Of their five children, three sons and two daughters, James Daugherty, Jr., was the eldest son. In Wooster, Wayne county, Ohio, March 28th, 1849, he was married to Anna Elizabeth Stauffer, also a native of Pennsylvania, but when a little maiden of five years her parents came to Wayne county, Ohio, where she was reared to mature years, married and lived there until 1858. Her father was one of the well-known and prominent agriculturists of that county, as well as one of its leading public men. In 1864 he purchased a farm of eighty acres in Madison township, which he owned and operated until 1877, in that year, on the Democratic ticket, being elected the sheriff of St. Joseph county, in which he served for two years, while for two terms he was a county commissioner and for eight years a member of the board of trustees. He took an active part in the advocacy and adoption of all measures tending to prove of public benefit, and lived that practical life which teaches charity, kindness, sympathy and benevolence. Unto Mr. and Mrs. Daugherty were born eight children: Charles A., Alice M., Minnie E., John, Emma, Anna, Carrie, and George M.; but three, Alice, Minnie, and John, are deceased. The three youngest were born in St. Joseph county, and all were reared and educated here. During many years Mr. Daugherty carried on his agricultural labors in St. Joseph county, winning for himself a name and place among its leading business men, and in addition to

his farm he also owned a third interest in a sawmill near by. Throughout the period of his residence here he was closely identified with the locality's leading interests, was successful in his business, and in his death, which occurred on the 20th of October, 1896, the community mourned the loss of one of its valued citizens. He was a member of the Masonic fraternity.

THE N. P. BOWSHER COMPANY. This company, manufacturers of feed-grinding mills, mill cogs, conveyor flights, speed indicators, balancing ways and other like specialties, has done a large part in spreading abroad the reputation of South Bend for reliable goods and fair dealing. Their feed mills are perhaps their greatest specialty, and have brought the Bowsher name to the favorable attention of cattlemen throughout the United States and even in many foreign countries. The Bowsher Company serve a widely varied class of customers, from the fancy dairies along the Hudson where expenditures for equipment are sometimes on a prodigal scale, to the humble farm of the newly arrived emigrant on the extreme northwestern frontier, where the investment of every dollar must be considered and planned with care. The business was established in 1882 by the late N. P. Bowsher and removed to its present location, corner of Sample and Webster street, in 1894.

NELSON P. BOWSHER, the founder of the company, was born in Noble county, Indiana, in 1845. He was the second son of Boston and Sophia (Koonce) Bowsher, who came from Virginia Dutch stock and reached Indiana by ox-team as the Pottawatomie and Miami Indians were leaving it. The youth early learned the trade of cabinet making, himself felling the walnut trees which he afterward worked into finished goods. After finishing a four years' apprenticeship at Ligonier, under W. A. Brown, he spent a short time in Cincinnati, which was then the center of the furniture industry, and followed his trade as a journeyman. In 1871 he walked into South Bend, a frail-looking young man of twenty-six, but charged to the brim with energy and dauntless spirit. He first secured employment in the overhauling of the Keedy & Loomis flouring mills, where his industry and mechanical skill and insight brought prompt recognition. Soon after he was employed by Bissel & DeCamp, machinists and millwrights, and his next engagement was in the pattern department of the Oliver

Plow Works. The eight years of his association with the latter firm established his reputation as both an originator and an expert mechanic, but, to their mutual regret, ill health compelled him to sever these relations.

Several years before Mr. Bowsher had patented his speed, or motion indicator, and as his health compelled him to adopt an outdoor life he took a horse and wagon and commenced to install his devices in the small flouring mills of the country. Eight months each year he spent in travel and four months in the manufacture of goods. In this way he virtually covered the northwest, and in 1884, with restored vigor, located in South Bend, on the old West race, and opened a job machine and blacksmith shop there. Business continued, with varying seasons of growth and discouragement, until the close of the World's Fair year, 1893. By this time it had so expanded that Mr. Bowsher was justified in removing to the present location. The finest exclusive display of feed mills at the World's Columbian Exposition was made by Mr. Bowsher, and his company later maintained its reputation at the fairs held at Atlanta, Omaha, and St. Louis.

The death of Mr. Bowsher occurred in May of 1898, and during the last six years of his life he was a semi-invalid. During this period the responsibilities of the business fell upon his sons, D. D. and J. C., who were thus trained to carry forward the work he had established. The company was incorporated in 1897. The business done today is a jubile what it was at the time of its founder's death, the works having been enlarged, new machinery installed and other changes brought about to make the plant an up-to-date concern.

The deceased was an active factor in the public improvements of South Bend. From 1884 to 1887 he was a member of its board of water works, and he was largely instrumental in establishing the city's fine supply of artesian water. In religious and charitable matters he was also a leader, being a member of the Methodist Episcopal church and one of its trustees. Generous hearted in all his dealings with his fellows, by his will he left a thousand dollars to the Epworth Hospital building fund, which nucleus went far toward encouraging the active promoters and friends of this enterprise in renewed effort for the completion of the work. When building operations commenced his sons also contributed liberally toward its completion, and

his widow served for many years as secretary of the woman's board.

In 1865 Mr. Bowsher married Clarissa Hostetter, whose family emigrated from Ohio about the same time as his own and settled on an adjoining section of land. Mrs. Bowsher's elder brother was the first white child born in Noble county. Mr. Bowsher's first wife, who was a most earnest and loving helpmate, died in 1892, and the deep grief and shock caused thereby undoubtedly weakened his vitality to a point which brought about a recurrence of his former illness. His second wife was Miss Laura Caskey, of South Bend, to whom he was married in 1897, but he survived her less than a year.

DELEVAN D. BOWSHER, president and treasurer of the company, was born in Ligonier, in the year 1868, and his parents removed to South Bend upon his third birthday. In 1884 he graduated from the High School, was connected for a short time with the Tribune Printing Company, and was then taken into his father's shop, where he worked as a mechanic in the day and as a bookkeeper at night. With the growth of the business all his time was given to the office and the advertising side of the business, and the success of the company is largely a testimonial to his efficiency in these departments. He resides in the old home at No. 805 West Washington street.

JAY C. BOWSHER, the vice-president of the company, was born in South Bend in 1872, and practically his entire life has been spent in the city. He was educated in the High School and through special studies. Travel from home, with business responsibilities laid upon him at an early age, rounded out the work of the class-room. He has always given special attention to the mechanical department of the business, has taken out a number of valuable patents, and in these regards has done credit, in a marked degree, to his father's name. Mr. Bowsher was married, in 1898, to Eva A. Spencer. They have two children and reside in a very comfortable home at No. 828 West Colfax avenue.

JOHN C. KNOBLOCK. No more honored family exists in northern Indiana than that of the Knoblocks, who from a very early day have been intimately associated with the development and increasing prosperity of South Bend and St. Joseph county, the name being inseparably interwoven with the record of their advancement. The family was estab-

lished here by John C. Knoblock, who came from Canton, Stark county, Ohio, where he was born November 3, 1830, to St. Joseph county, Indiana, in 1843, locating first near Bremen. In 1847 he came to South Bend, where he became one of its leading business men. He engaged in the grocery business in 1856, and originated the wholesale grocery trade of South Bend. He organized the South Bend Chilled Plow Company in 1875, and was its president until he sold out in 1890. He assisted in organizing the St. Joseph County Savings Bank in 1869 and was its treasurer until he died.

He was married, July 12, 1853, to Lizetta Meyer, who died in 1897. He married Mrs. Rebecca Baer in 1905, who survived him. Mr. Knoblock died August 18, 1906. South Bend has had few more valued citizens, and by the pioneers who knew him, as well as the younger residents, his memory is revered.

OTTO M. KNOBLOCK, son of John C. and Lizetta (Meyer) Knoblock, was born in South Bend June 19, 1859, and has spent his entire life within the confines of this city. After completing his studies in its public schools he became a student in the Indianapolis Business College, in which he graduated in 1876. With this excellent educational training he was well fitted to engage in life's activities, and entering the manufacturing field, assisted to organize and was treasurer of the South Bend Chilled Plow Company, but in 1890 he sold his interest in that corporation and turned his attention to the manufacture of wagons as secretary of the Miller-Knoblock Company. In 1900 Mr. Knoblock engaged in the manufacture of electrical appliances as a member of the Knoblock-Heideman Manufacturing Company, of which he is now the president. He is also a stockholder in the Knoblock-Ginz Milling Company, of South Bend. As a representative of the manufacturing interests of South Bend he fills an important place in its business life and has made the institutions with which he is connected the leading financial concerns of this section of the state.

On the 24th of November, 1887, Mr. Knoblock was united in marriage to Margaret Starr, who was born in Cass county, Michigan, of which her father was one of the honored early residents, and they have one son, J. Starr, a young man of seventeen years. Mr. Knoblock holds membership relations with many of the fraternal orders, including

the Knights of Pythias, the Knights of the Maccabees, the Modern Woodmen of America, and the Travelers' Protective Association. He is also a member of the Country Club, the Indiana Club, and is treasurer of the Northern Indiana Historical Society. He gives a staunch and unfaltering support to the principles of the Republican party, and as its representative served as the trustee of the city water works. Upright and just in all his relations, Mr. Knoblock has won the confidence and high regard of all who know him, and is a man of the most sterling worth.

GODFREY L. POEHLMAN. From an early period in the development of South Bend and St. Joseph county Godfrey L. Poehlman has been an important factor in their improvement and advancement, but he is now living retired from the active cares of a business life save his connection with the Muessel Brewing Company. He was born in Bavaria, Germany, June 5, 1835, and in 1853, when about seventeen years of age, he left his German home and came to America, coming direct to South Bend. For a short time thereafter he clerked in a dry goods store, after which he learned the tinner's trade in the hardware store of Massey Brothers, with whom he was connected for seven years. In 1860 he joined the tide of emigration to Pike's Peak, Colorado, making the journey across the plains with a team, and after spending a short time in the mountains went to the city of Denver, where to him belongs the distinction of putting on the first tin roof of the first mint built at Denver. Remaining there for a time, he worked his way back, making the return journey via Council Bluffs and Iowa City to South Bend. For four years thereafter he was employed as a clerk in the dry goods store of John Brownfield, at that time the leading merchant in the city, and on the expiration of that period established in company with Godfrey Meyers a hardware store and tin shop, the firm being known as Meyers & Poehlman. They continued in business from 1864 until 1893, when Mr. Poehlman sold his half interest to his partner's son, John B. Meyers, the present proprietor of the business. Although Mr. Poehlman has retired from his mercantile interests, he is yet a stockholder and one of the directors in the Muessel Brewery Company, one of the large establishments of the city.

On the 10th of July, 1864, Mr. Poehlman was united in marriage to Anna K., a daugh-

ter of Christopher and Christene Muessel. The father is well known throughout St. Joseph county through his identification with the brewing business, and his residence here dates from 1852, during all of which time he has been prominently connected with the formative history of the locality. Two daughters have been born to brighten and bless this home: Hattie, the wife of John Ober, and Ottilia, wife of Homer Miller, both of South Bend, where Mr. Miller is connected with the Stephensen Woolen factory. During the long period of fifty-three years Mr. Poehlman has been prominently identified with the history of South Bend, ever taking an active and commendable interest in its public life and ever honored for his integrity to every trust. He has given a life-long support to Democratic principles, and fraternally has been a member of the Odd Fellows for fifty years.

JOHN N. LEDERER. John N. Lederer, one of the leading business men of South Bend, was born in Arzberg, Bavaria, Germany, on the 16th of November, 1833, a son of Frederick and Barbara (Kunstman) Lederer. He acquired a good education in his native country, first attending the public schools and then a gymnasium. In April, 1853, he left his little German home and sailed for the United States, and after his arrival came direct to South Bend, first securing a position in the office of Harper & Company, the leading manufacturers of this city at that time, and with whom he remained for one year. During the following year he was an employe of the Lake Shore Railroad Company, while from 1854 until 1860 he was a clerk in a grocery store, on the expiration of that period purchasing a meat market on West Washington street, which he conducted until 1871, being very successful in that venture. In the following year, 1872, Mr. Lederer returned to his old home in Germany to visit his parents and the scenes of his boyhood days, and on his return to this city he engaged in the grocery business with John C. Knoblock, for whom he had formerly clerked. So honorable had been his relations as clerk, and so diligently had his duties been discharged that Mr. Knoblock was anxious to admit him to partnership, and this connection was maintained until 1877.

Disposing of his interest in the business in that year, Mr. Lederer went to Nebraska to look after his landed interests there, but in 1880 returned to this city and opened a

steamship agency, also a fire insurance business and was a notary public. He is still interested in these various enterprises, and as the years have passed he has enlarged their scope until they have assumed large proportions, and he has thus won for himself a name and place among the leading business men of South Bend. He is a man of more than ordinary ability, and carries forward to completion whatever he undertakes.

In 1860 Mr. Lederer was married to Miss Antinetta Bauer, who died in 1871, and he was afterward married to Miss Margarette Kunstman, a native of south St. Joseph county and a daughter of Christopher Kunstman, who emigrated from Germany to the United States in 1849, and at once established his home in St. Joseph county. One daughter, Anna, was born of the first union, while by the second marriage there were three children: Herbert, who is engaged in business with his father, and Alma and Irma. During the early years of his residence in South Bend Mr. Lederer served as city and county commissioner and also as a member of the school board. Public-spirited and progressive in all his ideas, he lends his influence to all measures which he believes useful to the majority, and throughout his long connection with South Bend and St. Joseph county has ever been recognized as an earnest and patriotic citizen.

WILLIS A. BUGBEE. Since the early days of South Bend's history the Bugbee family have occupied a distinctive place, and Willis A. Bugbee is a worthy scion of the name. His birth occurred in this city on the 17th of September, 1845, and is a son of Almond Bugbee, the history of whose life will be found in another part of this work. Willis A. attended the public schools of South Bend and Chicago, and in 1867 graduated from the law department of the University of Michigan at Ann Arbor. After his admission to the bar he entered the law and abstract office of Andrew Anderson, with whom he was associated until 1880, when Mr. Anderson retired from the firm and Mr. Bugbee purchased the records and established the business on his own account. His office contains a perfect set of records of the title of every foot of ground in the county, and being a painstaking, particular and conscientious worker, his records are unqualifiedly accepted by every real estate man and attorney in the county. His real estate transactions cover

millions of dollars, and the universal satisfaction evinced by his clients speaks for itself. When a man wins the high respect of those with whom business and social relations have brought him in contact it is by reason of his intrinsic honor and his worthy achievements. In addition to his large business interests Mr. Bugbee is secretary of the South Bend Building & Loan Association, also an official in the St. Joseph Loan & Savings Association, a trustee of the St. Joseph County Savings Bank and director of the St. Joseph Loan & Trust Company.

Mr. Bugbee married Miss Evelyn E. Badest, of New London, Connecticut, and they have two daughters. He is a worthy member and officer of the First Presbyterian church, and takes an active interest in the cause of Christianity.

GEORGE WYMAN. Many years have been added to the past since George Wyman, a youth of twenty-one years, arrived in the city of South Bend, where he has won for himself a distinguished position in connection with its great material industries, being now the proprietor of the leading mercantile establishment of the city. His birth occurred in Painesville, Ohio, January 27, 1839, his parents being Guy and Rebecca J. (King) Wyman, the former a native of Manchester, Vermont, and the latter of Suffield, Connecticut. He had three sisters: Clarissa J., who became the wife of Byron Paine, the associate justice of the supreme court of Wisconsin; Ellen M., who died at the age of twenty-one years; and Abby A., the wife of Professor D. H. Darling, of Joliet, Illinois.

George Wyman attended the public schools of his native city of Painesville until fourteen years of age, and at that early age began clerking in the store of Albert Gillett, with whom he remained for one year, while during the following year and a half he had charge of the store of Jarvis Howard at Madison, ten miles east of Painesville. At the close of that period Mr. Wyman was able to enter college, and accordingly matriculated in the Commercial College of Milwaukee, where he continued his studies for several months. Returning thence to Painesville, he resumed his occupation of clerking in the store of George R. Cowles, more commonly known as "Yankee" Cowles, where a line of notions, carpets and dry goods was carried, and there he remained until he had reached his twenty-first year. It was then that he came to South

Bend, this being in the year 1860, and in August of the same year opened a store on North Michigan street, occupied until recently by T. F. Berkley, and on the 1st of December, 1865, removed to what was known as the Colfax Building in the Marble Block. Previous to this time, in January, 1865, he had admitted to a partnership in the business Henry H. Metcalf and Garland E. Rose, under the name of George Wyman & Company. Mr. Metcalf only continued with the firm for one year, however, his interest being then bought by Mr. Wyman, but Captain Rose continued his association therewith for about eighteen years. On the 17th of September, 1878, the firm moved to their present quarters, the building having been erected by them, and then consisted of a large double store room, forty by one hundred and five feet, two stories in height. In 1883 Captain Rose sold his interest in the business, and a few years later, in 1888, sixty feet was added to the rear two stories, the business having so increased in volume as to make enlargements necessary. In 1890 the store was rebuilt, also an addition of one store room on the south, twenty by eighty-five feet, while a third story was added to the entire building. With the passing years, however, the business continued to increase so rapidly that in 1904 another addition was made to the building, consisting of a store room on the second and third floors, and the first floor is leased by the South Bend National Bank. In 1898 H. W. Eldridge was admitted to a partnership in the firm. The growth of the business has been continuous and healthy from the start, and its importance to the city of South Bend places its proprietor, George Wyman, among the leaders in its industrial circles, and he has achieved that success which is the result of enterprise, resolute purpose and straightforward methods. These are the only qualities absolutely essential to development, and upon the ladder of his own building he has climbed to prominence and prosperity.

JOHN A. SWYGART, a prominent representative of one of the old and honored pioneer families of St. Joseph county, was born in Cleveland, Ohio, February 23, 1856. His father, George W. Swygart, was a native of Pennsylvania, and there continued to make his home until his removal to Cleveland, Ohio, in 1848, where he resumed his trade of a mason and contractor. In the early year of 1858 he made his way to South

Bend, Indiana, and here purchased sixty acres of land south of Sample street, which is now owned by the Studebaker Manufacturing Company. He took an active part in the upbuilding and improvement of South Bend and vicinity, and the home which he erected on West Washington street was considered at that time the finest building in the city. After the destructive fire he purchased the present site of the Oliver Hotel, or rather the corner lot on which the hotel now stands and occupied by the First National Bank, there erecting the three-story business block which he later sold. Subsequently he purchased the land and erected the buildings occupied by the Johnson meat market, but these he also later sold and then bought the property south of the city hall on Main street, this being still owned by his estate. Mr. Swygart continued the business of brick-making, real estate and contracting throughout the remainder of his active business career, his busy and useful life being ended at the age of seventy-nine years. He was an important factor in the improvement and advancement of this section of the state, and the part which he took in its development well entitles him to prominent mention in this volume. He was a Republican in his political views, was at one time a member of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, and was prominently identified with the Presbyterian church, having erected the building previously occupied by that congregation. Mrs. Swygart bore the maiden name of Caroline M. Moyer, and was born and reared in Pennsylvania. She lived to be seventy-three years of age, dying in Elkhart, Indiana, in 1896. In their family were nine children, five daughters and four sons, of whom seven are now living.

John A. Swygart, the fourth child and second son in order of birth, was about fourteen years of age when he started out in life for himself. He had previously learned telegraphy at the Lake Shore depot, and his first employment was as a brakeman for that company, his run being from Elkhart to Chicago. Subsequently he was promoted to the position of conductor, but five years later severed his connection with that company, and during the following eight years was a passenger conductor with the Wabash Railroad Company. On the expiration of that period he accepted the position of foreman in the machinery department, but fourteen

months later removed to Palestine, Texas, to enter upon the work of a yard engineer, while three months later he was placed in the shops as a machinist's helper. Gradually, as he displayed his ability, he was promoted from one higher position to another, serving as foreman of the shops at Houston, Texas, as road engineer for the International and Great Northern for six months, and was then made traveling engineer, having charge of all engineers and firemen on the system. After one year in that high official position Mr. Swygart was placed in charge of the reconstruction of the San Jacinto river bridge and the road in that vicinity. He was next given charge of the International & Great Northern Railroad trains and engine men on the construction of the road from Rockdale to Austin, Texas, a distance of about sixty miles, and after the completion of this important work Mr. Swygart was offered and accepted the position of engineer for the Wabash Railroad Company, his run being from Springfield, and he remained with that corporation for eighteen years, filling the following positions: Freight engineer one year out of Springfield, two years as engineer of the Kansas City and Chicago division on the mail train, after which he was transferred to the Chicago and Decatur division as passenger engineer. He was next placed on the St. Louis run, where for twelve years he had charge of the limited known as the Royal Blue. On the expiration of that period he transferred his connections to the Rock Island Railroad, but a short time afterward was offered and accepted the position of train-master on the Chicago, Peoria & St. Louis Road, where he remained for eight months, returning thence to the Wabash road as road foreman in charge of the engineers and firemen, while later he was made train-master, which he continued for three years. His next position was as superintendent of the Missouri Pacific, later was general superintendent of the Louisiana Railway & Navigation Company, and then severing all connections with railroad work, returned to South Bend to take charge of his father's estate. His record in the service, however, is one of which he has just reason to be proud, for he was ever prompt, vigilant and efficient, and one who could be trusted and relied upon on every occasion.

In 1887 Mr. Swygart was united in marriage to Mattie J. Hollyman, who was born

and reared in Hannibal, Missouri, a daughter of John and Emma Hollyman. The only child of this marriage, a daughter, died in infancy. Mr. Swygart is a member of the Masonic order, in which he has attained the Royal Arch degree, and is also a member of the order of Elks of South Bend.

SAMUEL C. LONTZ. Of the pioneer families which have materially contributed to the prosperity of St. Joseph county, and particularly to South Bend, the one represented by Samuel C. Lontz occupies an important place. He is a member of the firm of Miller & Lontz, dealers in coal, wood, etc., in South Bend, and was born in Cumberland county, Pennsylvania, March 14, 1847, his parents being Jonas and Hannah (Heck) Lontz, both also natives of that county. The father moved to Ohio in an early day, establishing his home in Summit county, where he was engaged in the milling business until his removal to St. Joseph county, Indiana, in 1861, where he found employment as a miller with the firm of W. Miller and Joseph Miller for some time. He lived to the age of about sixty-two years, and at one time in his active business career he represented the Fourth ward in the city council. With his old employer, Mr. Miller, he was one of the three organizers of the Grace Methodist Episcopal church, and continued as one of its most efficient and active workers until his life's labors were ended in death. Mrs. Lontz passed away at the age of sixty-eight years. In their family were eleven children, five of whom grew to years of maturity.

Samuel C. Lontz, the eldest of the living children, was fourteen years of age when he accompanied his parents on their removal to St. Joseph county, completing his education in the schools of South Bend. When seventeen years of age he began the milling business, serving for two years as head miller for Joseph Miller, and in 1886 was admitted to a partnership with his old employer, the firm of Miller & Lontz being now extensively known over northern Indiana. They are extensively engaged in the sale of wood, coal, building materials, farm implements, etc., and they are now the oldest merchants in their line in South Bend, twenty years having rolled their course since they established their business in this city. Mr. Lontz is also a member of the American Trust Company of South Bend, of which he is one of the directors.

In 1868 he was united in marriage to Henrietta Harris, and the only child of this union, Albert, is now deceased. In 1876 Mr. Lontz married Jennie Martin, and two sons have been born of this marriage, Daniel R., and Harley C., who are engaged in business with their father. Mr. Lontz has been a life-long Republican, and has twice represented his ward in the city council and was also trustee of the water works. Fraternally he has attained the third degree in the Masonic order, and is also a member of the Elks and the Knights of Pythias. He takes a deep interest in everything pertaining to the welfare of his town and county, and contributes liberally to the support of all measures for the public good.

WILLIAM I. HUNT. William I. Hunt may well be termed a representative citizen of South Bend, as well as one of its leading business men, for as proprietor of the Vehicle Exchange, located at 664 and 666 Laporte avenue, he is well known to its citizens. He was born in Dodge county, Wisconsin, July 22, 1863, a son of W. D. and Diantha (Dunham) Hunt, both of whom are yet living and residents of this city. The father, a native of Tioga county, New York, was one of the early pioneers in Washington county, Wisconsin, having resided there as early as 1853, and became well known as a wagon-maker, following that occupation in the days when work was done by hand.

William I. Hunt, the youngest of his parents' four sons, inherited the love of his trade from his father, for when large enough to handle the tools he began working at the wagon-maker's trade, becoming proficient in the calling as the years grew apace and finally winning for himself a leading place in manufacturing circles. In 1903 the Hunt Brothers Manufacturing Company was formed, while three years later the brother George was admitted to the partnership, the name continuing the same until in 1905 William I. Hunt withdrew from the firm and in the following year built the plant of the Vehicle Exchange, of which he is the sole owner. His place is equipped with all the necessary appliances, and employment is furnished to a number of skilled workmen. From the inception of his business career until the present time he has been steadily advancing until he now occupies a very creditable and enviable position in the ranks of the business men of St. Joseph county.

In 1886 Mr. Hunt married Hettie Jewett, who died in 1898, leaving one son, Jay Jewett, at home with his father. In the following year, 1899, Mr. Hunt was united in marriage to Ida Barhardt, but no children have been born of this union. In his political views he is a supporter of Republican principles, and takes a deep interest in the issues and questions of the day, at the same time laboring earnestly to promote the growth and prosperity of the community in which he has so long resided.

FRANCIS M. CALDWELL. The true measure of individual success is determined by what one has accomplished, and in connection with the industrial interests of South Bend, with its real estate and loans, Francis M. Caldwell has gained recognition as one of the representative citizens of St. Joseph county. He was born in Xenia, Ohio, March 12, 1851, and on the paternal side is descended from Mary Jackson, his grandmother, who was a cousin of Old Hickory Jackson and a sister of General Robert Jackson. The family is of Scotch-Irish descent. The parents of our subject are John M. and Mary Ann (Nichol) Caldwell, both natives of Ohio. The father, who was a farmer and stock-raiser by occupation, removed to Illinois in 1855. He left Xenia, Ohio, with one thousand sheep and one shepherd dog, and took them safely to Illinois. He took up his abode in Warren county of that state, and was there engaged in farming until his life's labors were ended in death in 1892, at the age of seventy-nine years.

After attending the public schools of Warren county, Illinois, Francis M. Caldwell entered Monmouth College, where he gained an excellent education. When the time came to enter upon a business life he embarked in the building, loan, real estate and insurance business, and during his connection therewith he held several important positions, having been the general traveling loan agent in Indiana and Michigan for the Indianapolis Loan Company. Many other positions of trust and responsibility were awarded him as he demonstrated his true worth and ability. In 1902 Mr. Caldwell became a resident of South Bend and took charge of the La Salle Building and Loan Company, and the St. Joseph County Real Estate Company, which are very successful corporations, and under his management they have achieved successes. In addition to his connection with these companies he is also engaged privately in the real

estate business, and is numbered among the representative business men of South Bend.

The marriage of Mr. Caldwell was celebrated in July, 1904, when Anna Schmidt, of Burr Oak, Michigan, became his wife. He is a member of the Masonic order, Lodge No. 294, also of the Chapter and Commandery, and is council commander of the Modern Maccabees of South Bend. He is a worthy and consistent member of the Congregational church.

JAMES Q. C. VANDEN BOSCH. The late James Q. C. Vanden Bosch, who passed away at his home in South Bend, April 20, 1907, was a highly respected resident of that place for nearly half a century. Quite early in his industrious and useful life he amassed considerable wealth in western mining ventures, and, by far-seeing investments in various industries and property in St. Joseph county, added to his fortune so that the later years of his venerable life were spent in the repose which his long period of intelligently directed labors had justly earned him. He was a typical Hollander, of the higher class, intelligent and educated. His loss is deeply felt by loving relatives and many friends knit closely to him by his steadfast character and thoughtful acts. The deceased was also a man of remarkable determination, business ability and balanced strength of character.

James Q. C. Vanden Bosch was born in the Netherlands, on the 17th of October, 1824, and when ten years of age was sent to Germany to pursue his education at school at Neuwied on the Rhine, Germany. He completed his education at Lausanne, Switzerland, and he paid particular attention to chemistry and metallurgy. After completing his studies he made several voyages to the East Indies, but the climate of the tropics threatening his health he returned to Holland, and in 1848 emigrated to America. He first settled at Buffalo, New York, where he was bookkeeper in a hardware store. But, like other enterprising Europeans, the east was but a station for the collection of funds, for inquiry and investigation, in anticipation of a westward journey and final settlement. In 1849 Mr. Vanden Bosch started for what was then the west, and, arriving in South Bend, found a position there as clerk and bookkeeper in the general store of Leonard Harris, which position he held for about two years. The excitement of mineral discoveries in the real west was then at its height, and,

having saved a tidy little sum, he joined the caravan of fortune-seekers wending their way toward the Pacific coast, his special destination being Oregon. For ten years he was actively and profitably engaged in mining in the vicinity of Roseburg, after which he headed his horse toward central Nevada. There he surveyed the site and founded the city of Austin, Lander county, and also discovered the Reese river silver mining country, which has since produced millions of dollars of that metal. For three years he continued his mining operations in that locality, being at one time at the head of the Oregon Mill & Mining Company, but at the expiration of that period he sold his interests to the Manhattan Company of New York, which corporation has since taken out twelve millions of dollars from the mine.

From Nevada Mr. Vanden Bosch returned to South Bend, in 1866, being now in such comfortable circumstances that, accompanied by his wife and four children, he spent a year of rest and recreation in a European trip. He then located in South Bend as his home, established the first wood-pulp mills in that locality and invested largely in real estate throughout St. Joseph county. At the time of his death he owned two hundred acres of land five miles south of South Bend, and valuable property in the city, as well as at Mishawaka. The pleasant family home is located at No. 529 West Washington street.

In 1851 Mr. Vanden Bosch was married to Mary Jane Smith, daughter of Colonel John Smith, of St. Joseph county, Indiana, and their three living daughters are: Sarah Louisa, wife of Henry Beiger, of Mishawaka; Mary Alice, now Mrs. Clem W. Studebaker, of South Bend; and Cornelia Adrina, living at home. The oldest child was John Walter, who died April 22, 1899, leaving his wife and one son, James W. He was for many years engaged with his father in all his business enterprises. Mr. James Q. C. Vanden Bosch was a firm Republican and, in his fraternal relations, a prominent member of the Masonic order and the Independent Order of Odd Fellows. Following the lines of the national character he was domestic in his tastes, and, with the throwing aside of business cares, he had no inclination to assume any burdens in behalf of the public.

ALBERT M. HARRIS. Among the families which have been prominent in the history of St. Joseph county from an early period in its

development may be mentioned the Harrises, who established their home within its borders during the pioneer epoch, and its township of Harris was named in their honor, as was also Harris Prairie. The grandfather of the subject of this review was the founder of the family here, and he was numbered among the honored, early pioneers of Harris township. His son, James Harris, was a native son of Pennsylvania, and he became the father of twelve children, six sons and six daughters, of whom Albert M. of this review, was the seventh child and fifth son in order of birth.

Mr. Albert M. Harris, one of the leading representatives of this honored pioneer family, is well known throughout St. Joseph county as the proprietor of the South Bend Spark Arrester Company. His birth occurred in Clay township, St. Joseph county, September 30, 1850, and he was about five years of age at the time of his parents' removal to Portage township, where he grew to years of maturity, and his educational training was received in the schools of South Bend. During his early business career he was engaged in the tin and general merchandise industry in company with Levi Steadman. In 1886 he turned his attention to his present industry, the manufacture of spark arresters, and in 1890 formed the company known as the South Bend Spark Arrester Company, but after the death of W. H. Kingsby Mr. Harris purchased the entire stock and has since been the sole proprietor of this large and constantly increasing industry. To his enterprise and thorough reliability the success of the business is largely due, and to his efforts may be attributed its high standing in financial circles.

In 1881 Mr. Harris was united in marriage to Elva Loutz, whose death occurred in 1893, leaving two children, Bessie and Jay. In 1896 Mr. Harris wedded Maggie Holem, and their only child is a daughter, Margaret. He is independent in his local political affiliations, voting for the men whom he regards best qualified for public office, and he at all times takes an active part in the advocacy and adoption of all measures tending to prove of public benefit. He is now the only representative of the once large and happy family which gathered around the table of the pioneer settler, James Harris. He is a man of unquestioned integrity in all business transactions, is progressive in his methods, and the

success and prosperity he has achieved are the deserved reward of honorable labor.

FREDERICK W. MUELLER. When one is able to say of a grocery house that it has been in existence and doing an extensive business for the long period of twenty-seven years it must argue strong business vitality and the conducting of the establishment along established commercial lines. This is true of the well-known Mueller grocery house, and to its proprietor, Frederick W. Mueller, belongs the honor of being the third oldest grocer in point of years of continuous service in South Bend. His birth occurred in Jefferson, Wisconsin, October 2, 1853, a son of John Martin and Elizabeth B. (Meyer) Mueller, both natives of Germany. They came to America in 1847, making their way at once to South Bend, but after a residence in this city of six months they went to Jefferson, Wisconsin, where Mr. John M. Mueller, who was an agriculturist, took up land. Later, however, he began work at the carpenter's trade and in the hotel business, and his death occurred in Jefferson at the age of fifty-nine years. Mrs. Mueller survived him for many years, and died in Wisconsin at the age of seventy-five years. Of their children four sons and one daughter are now living.

Frederick W. Mueller, the second child and eldest son in order of birth, spent the early years of his life in the place of his nativity, receiving his education in its common schools. When he had reached the age of fifteen years he left home and served his time at the harness-maker's trade. It was in 1872 that he came to South Bend and worked at his trade as harness-maker until December, 1873. He served as a clerk for L. Nickel from 1874 until 1880, when he established his grocery store on the corner of Jefferson and Michigan streets, continuing at that location for twenty-six years. On the 18th of November, 1906, he moved into his present handsome building, 217 East Jefferson street. He is one of the oldest grocery dealers and most highly esteemed citizens of South Bend, and one of its best-known business men. His interests here are many and varied, for in addition to being proprietor of one of its leading grocery houses he is also treasurer of the South Bend Wholesale Grocery Company, a stockholder and a director in the Citizens National Bank, and a stockholder in the Citizens Loan & Trust Company.

In 1880 Mr. Mueller was united in mar-

riage to Anna M. Sack, whose father, Dr. John C. Sack, was numbered among the honored, old pioneer physicians of St. Joseph county. She is a native daughter of South Bend. Six children have been born to bless their union, Edward, Thekla, E. Margaret, Gertrude A., Ella and Walter S. Mr. Mueller is a Democrat in his political affiliations, while fraternally he holds membership relations with the Masonic order, and the Odd Fellows of South Bend. He is an active, honorable and highly esteemed citizen and business man, and enjoys to the fullest extent the highest regards of the community.

DELMAR C. LEER. Connected with the real estate business, Delmar C. Leer is well known in South Bend, where he has resided throughout his entire life and where the family have long been prominently identified with its interests. As early as 1830 his grandfather, Samuel Leer, journeyed to this city, where he built the little log house which stands on Vistula avenue, one of the first houses erected on that street and one of the valuable old landmarks of South Bend. His son Jacob, the father of Delmar C. Leer, and who was born in Miami county, Indiana, was but a babe of three years when he was brought by his parents to this city, and he continued to live and labor on the farm now owned by his son Delmar until his busy and useful life was ended, death claiming him when he had reached the age of sixty-four years. Two of his children are now living, a son and daughter Kathryn.

The former, Delmar C. Leer, is a native son of the city of South Bend, his birth here occurring on the 3d of July, 1869, and in its public schools he received his educational training. Upon reaching the age of twenty years he embarked in the real estate business, having ever since been extensively engaged in the buying and selling of property, and he now owns about one hundred lots and has built about forty residences. He has platted two additions, known as First and Second Leer Additions to South Bend. In the line of his endeavor he has proved a valuable factor to the business life of South Bend, and is rapidly winning for himself a name in connection with its industrial interests that is widely known. His interests are many and varied, and include the vice-presidency of the South Bend Brick Company.

In 1892 Mr. Leer was united in marriage to Elnora Denslow, the daughter of Robert

and Mary Denslow, and their only child is a son, Bertram R. Mr. Leer is prominent in the social as well as the business life of his community, and his fraternal relations connect him with the Elks and the Independent Order of Odd Fellows.

W. K. MCHENRY, who is identified with the manufacturing and real estate interests of South Bend, was born in county Antrim, Ireland. He received his education in Belfast, Ireland, where he attended a Methodist college. In 1892 he left his home in the old world and sailed for the United States, and after his arrival in this country went at once to Salina, Kansas, where for seven years he was successfully engaged in the dry goods business. On the expiration of that period, in 1899, he came to South Bend, and in company with his brothers, Daniel and John, engaged in the dry goods business under the firm name of McHenry & Company. In 1901, however, this firm dissolved partnership, the brothers engaging in the manufacture of roofing and machinery. About that time he also embarked in the real estate and insurance business, in which he has been successfully engaged to the present time. He is a business man of more than ordinary ability and carries forward to completion whatever he undertakes. In his fraternal relations he is a member of the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks, and is also connected with the Commercial Athletic Club.

WILLIAM T. WYANT. One of the leading citizens and influential business men of South Bend during the past ten years, Mr. William T. Wyant is well known in industrial circles through his connection with the South Bend Cold Storage Company, of which he is the president and manager. His birth occurred in Plymouth, Marshall county, Indiana, August 5, 1866, a son of William and Lydia (Clemens) Wyant, also of that county, where they reared their son William to years of maturity and gave to him the advantages of a common-school education. In his native city of Plymouth he began his business career as a butter maker, spending eight years in that occupation with the Plymouth Creamery, and in that long period he learned the business in its every detail. Seeking a field in which to engage in business on his own account, he came to South Bend in 1897, and in 1904 organized the South Bend Cold Storage Company, dealers in butter, eggs and

cheese, and in the same year the building in which this business is transacted was erected, located at 414 and 416 South St. Joseph street. They are exclusively wholesale dealers, and about four persons are associated in the business. Mr. William T. Wyant is at the head of this large industrial concern, and is numbered among the influential residents of his adopted city.

In 1888 Mr. Wyant was united in marriage to Sarah J. Lechlitner, of German township, Marshall county, Indiana. They are held in high esteem in the community in which they have so long made their home, and their kindly social qualities have won for them the friendship and good will of all who have the pleasure of their acquaintance.

SAMUEL W. STARK is conspicuously identified with the business life of South Bend as a contractor and builder, being associated in his work with H. G. Chrisman. Back to the land of Germany must we turn for the early ancestral history of the family, but long ago they left that country and crossed the ocean to the United States. There have been strong men and true as one generation has followed another, men leal and loyal to our national institutions and to the duties of citizenship. Mr. Stark's birth occurred in Prussia, Germany, November 9, 1843, and in the land of his nativity he received his education and learned his trade of a builder, having attended the Builder's High School in his native city, and from 1863 until 1866 he served in the engineering corps in the German army, while for twenty-six months he was secretary of the Engineer Guard. In 1866 he joined his parents in the United States, they having preceded him to this country, and made his way at once to Cleveland, Ohio, where he gradually worked his way upward as a contractor. After a residence in that city of five years he removed to Chicago, Illinois, in 1871, where he worked at the mason's trade until 1873, coming thence to South Bend and securing employment by the day with the Studebaker Brothers, where his ability soon became recognized and it was not long until he was made their boss mason. During his connection with the Studebakers he erected about one-half of their buildings, and he remained with them for ten years, a faithful and competent employe. At the expiration of that period Mr. Stark began contracting and building, on his own account, and among

the many large structures which he erected may be mentioned the Grace M. E. church, the German Evangelical church on the east side of the river and the Presbyterian church, all of which were erected in the same year, also the school house on Lafayette street, the Studebaker school, the Manual Training school, the Christian church, the Joe Oliver residence on Washington street, the Y. M. C. A. building, the Russworm harness shop, and it is known that he has erected more school houses, churches and dwellings than any one man in South Bend. In 1898 he became associated in the work with H. G. Chrisman, and since that time has been identified with much of the building of the city. He is one of the oldest contractors in St. Joseph county, and his commendable efforts have made his success well merited.

The marriage of Mr. Stark was celebrated in 1868, when Caroline Wanner, a native of Wellersburg, Germany, became his wife, and they have had four children: Emma, who became the wife of Joseph Horenn, collector for the Mishawaka Brewing Company and a resident of South Bend and she died February 19, 1899; Bertha, musical director for the Olympic Theater of this city; Clara, ticket seller at that theater; and William S., who is associated with the Mineral Point Zinc Company in DePue, Illinois. Mr. Stark has given a stalwart support to the Democratic party, taking an active interest in the public affairs of his community, and is a prominent member of the Masonic order.

FRANK ELMER MACDONALD, secretary and general manager of the St. Joseph Lumber & Manufacturing Company, has been identified with the lumber interests since he was ten years of age, and as its representative he has risen to a place of prominence in the commercial world. He is also numbered among South Bend's native sons, his natal day being the twenty-eighth of September, 1873, and his parents, Joseph and Sarah H. (Smith) MacDonald, both of whom were born in the commonwealth of Ohio. The father was numbered among the earliest residents of South Bend, where he became prominently known as a contractor and builder, and many of the large and important buildings of this county were the result of his handiwork. The death of this honored South Bend pioneer occurred when he had reached the sixty-seventh milestone on the journey of life, but is still

survived by his widow, who has returned to her native state of Ohio. They became the parents of four children, two sons and two daughters: Jennie B., the wife of W. H. Heck, of South Bend; Frank Elmer, whose name introduces this review; Cora, the wife of A. A. Waterfield, assistant manager of the Colfax Manufacturing Company on East LaSalle avenue; and Joseph A., with the South Bend Engraving Company.

Mr. Frank E. MacDonald received his educational training in the public schools of this city, and at the early age of ten years he began to work with his father. During eighteen years of his early life he was associated with the Indiana Lumber company, working his way upward in that corporation from a humble capacity to the important position of manager of their east side lumber yard, and for seven years he continued in that capacity. In 1905 he organized the St. Joseph Lumber & Manufacturing Company, with the following members: Mr. H. M. Kauffman, C. P. Greene and Frank E. MacDonald, the last named being made the manager. After a time Mr. Kauffman sold his interest to O. S. Hans, and the present members and officers are: C. B. Greene, president and treasurer; O. S. Hans, vice-president; and Frank E. MacDonald, secretary and general manager. The company operate a factory in connection with their lumber yard, and furnish employment to from ten to fifteen men. The long experience of Mr. MacDonald in the lumber business enables him to conduct the duties connected with his important position with ability, and his well directed efforts, sound judgment and capable management have brought to the company a gratifying success.

The marriage of Frank E. MacDonald and Miss Lida Harpster was celebrated on the twenty-fifth of June, 1902. She is a daughter of David and Amanda Harpster, and they have become the parents of two children, a son and a daughter, Horace E. and Helen Ruth. In national politics Mr. MacDonald casts his ballot with the Democracy, but in local affairs he is not bound by party ties. As a citizen he is held in high esteem, and as a business man he is rapidly winning a high place in life's activities.

GEORGE N. WHITEMAN has long been closely identified with the interests of South Bend, and today stands at the head of many of its leading industrial concerns,

being vice-president of the Whiteman Wholesale Grocery Company, president of the South Bend Paper Box Company, and is also serving as a councilman at large of this city. He was born in Portage township, St. Joseph county, Indiana, December 15, 1858, his father being Abram Whiteman, who came from his native commonwealth of Pennsylvania to Indiana in 1854, locating on a farm in Portage township, St. Joseph county. His entire business career was devoted to agricultural pursuits, and he lived to the age of eighty-three years, passing away in the faith of the Methodist Episcopal church, of which he was long a faithful member. Mrs. Whiteman bore the maiden name of Elizabeth Beehler, and was a native of Germany, but came to America in her girlhood days and lived to the age of seventy-nine years. In the family of this worthy pioneer couple were nine children, seven sons and two daughters, all of whom are living at the present time.

George N. Whiteman, the fifth child and fifth son in order of birth, spent the period of his boyhood and youth on the old home farm in Portage township, early becoming insured to its varied duties, and when not thus employed attended the district school near his home. After attaining to years of maturity he began the business of teaming in South Bend, following that occupation for five years, while during the following four years he was engaged in the confectionery business. Selling his interest therein on the expiration of that period he embarked in the wholesale grocery business in 1891, at that time forming a partnership with his brother William, while in 1906 the business was incorporated under the name of the Whiteman Brothers Company, wholesale grocers, of which George N. Whiteman is the vice-president. In the same year he also built the factory known as the South Bend Paper Box Manufactory, of which he is the president, and is also a stockholder in the Whiteman Land company. It is a master mind that can plan, execute and control large institutions, and the man who stands at their head well deserves to be ranked among the most prominent business men of his city, where only ability of a very superior order is now recognized.

In 1882 Mr. Whiteman was united in marriage to Mary Borough, but she died leaving one son, Warren, of Chicago, Illinois. He was afterward married to Annie Wagner, and they have two daughters, Edith and Esther.

In matters of public moment Mr. Whiteman is deeply interested, giving his support to the Democratic party, and in 1900 he was elected to represent his ward in the city council of South Bend, being returned to that office in 1906. He is a member of the Knights of the Maccabees, the Elks and Owls.

HENRY GARDNER NILES. The life history of Henry Gardner Niles is closely identified with the history of St. Joseph county, which has been his home for many years. He began his remarkable career in the early pioneer epoch of the county, and throughout the years which have since come and gone has been closely allied with its interests and upbuilding. His life has been one of untiring activity, and has been crowned with a high degree of success. He is of the highest type of business man, and none more than he deserves a fitting recognition among those whose enterprise and abilities have achieved results that awaken the admiration of those who know him. Mr. Niles was born in Geneva, New York, February 11, 1833, his parents being John and Catherine (Gardner) Niles, the former a native of Vermont and the latter of New York. In 1837 the father came to South Bend, Indiana, but after a short residence there, during which he was connected with Alexis Coquillard as advisor in the building of water power, he came to Mishawaka in 1838 and became connected with the St. Joseph Iron Company, the original works, and Mishawaka at that time was known only as St. Joseph Iron Works. In connection with this industry he also operated a smelting works and store. This company executed all the iron work done for hundreds of miles around. In 1855 Mr. Niles purchased the interest of the other partners, and until his death was president of that large corporation and had entire charge of its control. His busy and useful life was ended on the eighth of September, 1874, when he had reached the seventy-first milestone on the journey of life.

In the forties Henry G. Niles, a son of this honored old Indiana pioneer, came to Mishawaka, this being in the midst of the campaign of "Tippecanoe and Tyler too," and in its public schools and the University of Michigan he received his educational training. In the meantime his father and associates had purchased an iron mine and erected a blast furnace in Wisconsin, sixty miles from Milwaukee, and young Henry went there to take charge of the store connected with

the works. Three years later he returned to Mishawaka, but two years afterward went to Watertown, Wisconsin, and was engaged in business there for himself for two years. During this time his father had purchased his partners' interest and the son then returned and assumed control of the mercantile department, thus continuing until his father's retirement ten years later, when he was given the management of the entire works. After the expiration of the old charter it was transferred to the new corporation, of which he became secretary. The new company manufacture plows. The company went out of existence in 1903, and since that time Mr. Niles has owned and conducted the entire plant. He is also president of the South Bend Woolen Company, of which he is the principal owner, and he owns large landed interests in Mishawaka.

In 1857 Mr. Niles was married to Martha Spencer Drapier, a daughter of Ariel Drapier, publisher of the St. Joseph County Forum in South Bend. Five children have been born of this union: Josephine, the wife of W. W. Hubbard, of Indianapolis; Harry G., manager and treasurer of the South Bend Woolen Company; John, in business with his father; Stanley A., secretary of the South Bend Woolen Company; and Catherine, now Mrs. Bressler. Mr. Niles is a member of Lodge No. 130, of the Masonic fraternity, also of the Chapter and Council, and is a worthy and acceptable member of the Christian church. He is thoroughly identified in feeling with the growth and prosperity of the county which has so long been his home, and in years past he served the town of Mishawaka as trustee and also as president of the board of trustees. As a business man he is upright, reliable and honorable. Few men have more devoted friends than he, and none excell him in unselfish devotion and unswerving fidelity to the worthy recipients of his confidence and friendship.

ADOLPH KAMM. One of the leading business men of Mishawaka is Adolph Kamm, a man whose history furnishes a splendid example of what may be accomplished through determined purpose, laudable ambition and well directed efforts. Starting out in life for himself at an early age he has steadily worked his way upward and is now the senior member of the Kamm & Schellinger Brewing Company. He was born at Zoebingen Oberant Elevanger, Wurtemberg, Germany, June

13, 1842, a son of Frank J. and Antonia Maria (Wurstner) Kamm. The father came to the United States in 1848, taking up his abode in Fryburg, Ohio, where the son Adolph remained until his sixteenth year. He then went to Delphos, Ohio, to become an employe of a brewing company, and also followed the same occupation in Fort Wayne and Toledo. Coming to Mishawaka in 1870, he became associated in business with Clemens Dick, purchasing the brewery of John Wagner, who had established it as early as 1853. At that time the business was not on a very paying basis, but by hard and persistent labor and honest dealing the new firm soon placed it on the road to prosperity, equipping it with the best and latest improved machinery, and it soon became recognized among the leading breweries of Indiana. Mr. Dick subsequently sold his interest to his partner, who then admitted his brother-in-law, Nicholas Schellinger, into the firm, business being thereafter conducted under the name of the Kamm & Schellinger Brewing Company. Under the new regime the business has continued to prosper and grow, and in 1883 it was incorporated with a capital of sixty-five thousand dollars. Improvements are constantly being made, and a new ice plant of a most approved plan has just been added. The output of the brewery is thirty-three thousand barrels a year, and this is one of the largest industrial interests of the county.

In 1869 Mr. Kamm married Maria Weber, of Toledo, Ohio, whose death occurred in 1871, and he subsequently married Josephine Schellinger. They have become the parents of ten children, the eldest of whom, Rudolph, is associated with his father in business.

NICHOLAS SCHELLINGER. Mishawaka includes among its leading business men Nicholas Schellinger, the treasurer of the Kamm & Schellinger Brewing Company. He was born in Muehlheim, Wurtemberg, Germany, November 4, 1847, a son of Xavier and Elizabeth (Huber) Schellinger. The father was a successful miller in his native land, and after coming to the United States took up his abode in Mishawaka, where he became prominently identified with its business interests. The son Nicholas received his education in Germany, and, accompanying the family on their emigration to America, soon became connected with the business life of Mishawaka. In 1880

his brother-in-law, Adolph Kamm, admitted him to a partnership in the brewery, the firm then becoming known as the Kamm & Schellinger Brewing Company, of which Mr. Schellinger became the treasurer. His life has been characterized by industry, determination and ambition, and these qualities have enabled him to steadily work his way upward to success, and he now ranks among the prominent business men of St. Joseph county.

Mr. Schellinger married Amelia Kamm, a daughter of Frank J. and a sister of his partner, Adolph Kamm. Of their ten children five are living.

Mr. Schellinger is a member of the Catholic church, the Catholic Order of Foresters, Elks, Turn Verein and the Maennerchor.

OTTO E. LANG, to whom belongs the distinction of being the oldest hardware merchant in Mishawaka, was born in Penn township, St. Joseph county, Indiana, April 17, 1858. His father, Frederick Lang, was a native of Wurtemberg, Prussia, Germany, but when seventeen years of age he left his native land for America, first establishing his home in Pittsburg, Pennsylvania, but in the fifties came to St. Joseph county, Indiana, where he purchased a farm in Penn township. In addition to his agricultural labors he was also employed as a lumberman and saw mill man, and his busy and useful life was ended at the age of sixty-four years. Mr. Lang had married in early life Ernestine Frank, who was born in Pennsylvania, and their marriage was celebrated in that commonwealth. She too was laid to rest at the age of sixty-four years, after becoming the mother of four children, the three daughters being Emma, the eldest daughter, who died in 1892, wife of F. E. Milburn; Tillie D., wife of C. D. Hilderbrand, of South Bend; and Minnie, wife of Henry McKnight, of Toledo, Ohio.

Otto E. Lang, the eldest child, spent the early years of his life in Penn township and Mishawaka, receiving his education in the common and high schools of the city. In 1886 he embarked in the hardware business in Mishawaka, and from that time to the present his name has been prominently associated with that line of trade, in which he has won an enviable reputation, and he now has the honor of being one of the oldest merchants in the city and its oldest hardware dealer. His interests, however, have been many and

varied, and at the present time he is serving as a director in the Mishawaka Trust and Savings Bank.

In December, 1886, Mr. Lang was united in marriage to Martha, the daughter of L. T. and S. M. (Boyce) Booth and a native of Mishawaka. Their two children are Lewis and Helen. Mr. Lang has given a lifelong support to the Republican party, ever taking an active interest in the public affairs of his community, and for five years he was the incumbent of the office of township trustee. His fraternal relations connect him with the Masonic order of Mishawaka and the Elks of South Bend.

NORMAN E. PARKS. In the early settlement and subsequent history of St. Joseph county the Parks family have been very prominent, and for the long period of fifty-eight years Norman E. Parks has made his home within its borders and been prominently identified with its interests. His birth occurred in Mishawaka on the 19th of March, 1849. His father, Isaac K. Parks, a native of Pen Yan, Yates county, New York, was one of the early pioneers of Mishawaka, coming to this city during his early boyhood days. In Elkhart, Indiana, he was united in marriage to Sarah A. Huntsman, who was a member of the first family that located in that city, while to her sister belongs the distinction of being the first white woman to reside in Penn township, St. Joseph county. The family removed from Ohio to Elkhart. For many years in addition to his agricultural pursuits Isaac Parks conducted a peddling wagon, and during several years he served as the constable of Mishawaka, taking a very active part in the early political history of this locality. He lived to the age of sixty-four years, while his wife was eighty-two ere she was called to the home beyond, and they were the parents of five sons, namely: Lieutenant Seth Parks, who was killed during the battle of Chickamauga during the Civil war; Horace, who served throughout that conflict and is now a farmer in Johnson county, Kansas; Robert M., who was a member of Company B, Seventh Illinois Cavalry during the Civil war, but was captured by the Confederates three weeks after his enlistment and remained as a prisoner of war for thirteen months and died sixteen days after his exchange; Norman E., whose name introduces this review; and Eben, who resides in Mishawaka, his native city. All of the five sons were born in this city.

When but five years of age Norman E. Parks accompanied his parents on their removal to a farm five miles northeast of Mishawaka, where he remained until his thirteenth year, going thence to the place on which he now resides. For many years he had been engaged in the nursery business for his uncle, George C. Merrifield. The old home now lies within the corporate limits of Mishawaka and is platted and laid out into town lots, on which have been erected many buildings. The land is located on Second street, and is one of the valuable additions of the city. Probably no family has been more influential in this section of the state than has the Parks, and the name is favorably known on account of the active part which the owners have borne in its varied interests. Norman Parks gives his political support to the Democratic party, and is a popular member of the Knights of Pythias and the Elks fraternities of South Bend.

EDMUND B. BYRKIT. Since the early days of St. Joseph's history the Byrkit family has occupied a distinctive place, it having been founded within the borders of the county by Edmund Byrkit, who leaving his Ohio home in a very early day took up his residence on a farm on the St. Joseph river in St. Joseph county. The various representatives of the family have taken an active part in the development of this section of the state, aiding in transforming its wild lands into rich farms, and in other ways promoting the progress and advancement which made a once wild region the home of a contented, prosperous people.

George V. Byrkit, a son of this honored old St. Joseph pioneer, was born in Penn township of this county, and was here married to Susan Boles, a native of Ohio. Although he was a contractor, he purchased a farm near Rolling Prairie, on which he remained but a short time and then returned to Mishawaka and resumed his contracting business, while for a long period he was engaged in the making of wagon boxes for the Milburns. His death occurred when he had reached the fifty-sixth milestone on the journey of life, when a noble and useful career was ended. During his lifetime he had served his native county in many positions of honor and trust, at one time having been its representative in the

legislature, and he was well known throughout the community in which his entire life had been passed. Mr. and Mrs. Byrkit had but two children, a son and daughter, the latter, Jennie, being the wife of G. H. Uhler and a resident of Olympia, Washington.

Edmund B. Byrkit, the only representative of this honored pioneer family in St. Joseph county, was born on Rolling Prairie, Indiana, November 26, 1863, and was but six years of age when his parents returned to Mishawaka, where he was reared to years of maturity and received his education. After entering upon his business career he spent five years in Tacoma, Washington, in the grocery business, and on his return to Mishawaka was married to Laura Stinchcomb, a native of Ohio and a daughter of W. R. and Catherine (Elarton) Stinchcomb. Two sons have blessed this union, George W. and Harold E., both of whom were born in Mishawaka.

For a time after his marriage Mr. Byrkit was engaged in dairying on the old homestead farm, but after about eight years devoted to that occupation he platted the land and in 1893 placed on the market the Byrkit's First Addition, in the same year erecting his present commodious and pleasant residence thereon, while two years later, in 1895, he platted Byrkit's Second Addition, on which he has erected several houses. He owns in all about one hundred and forty acres, the most of which is within the corporate limits of Mishawaka and all in one body. Thus he has been prominently identified with the development and advancement of Mishawaka, and while his varied interests have brought him success they have also advanced the general welfare. He is prominently associated with the Mishawaka Trust and Savings Company, of which he is one of the directors, and also has many other interests in St. Joseph county. But not only in business affairs is he well known, for he is active and earnest in his advocacy of all measures for the public good, and is a stanch Democrat in his political views. His fraternal relations are with the Masonic order in Mishawaka, whose beneficent and helpful principles he manifests in his every day life.

JOHN DIXON. For many years John Dixon was a prominent figure in the business circles and at the bar of Mishawaka. By a life of uprightness, industry and honorable methods, a life devoted to the support of whatever was good and true, he won the admiration and

regard of a large circle of acquaintances, who sincerely mourned his loss when he was called upon to lay aside the burdens, joys and sorrows which had fallen to his share, as to all, in the journey of life. His birth occurred in Gallipolis, Ohio, January 26, 1834, a son of Hezekiah and Malinda Dixon. When but a babe of one year he was brought by his parents to St. Joseph county, Indiana, where the father entered a farm of one hundred and sixty acres in Penn township, and as the son grew older he assisted in the work of the homestead and attended the district schools near his home. At the age of eighteen years he began teaching school, following that profession until 1855. In the following year, 1856, he was united in marriage to Susan L. Laidlaw, a native of Penn township and the daughter of John Laidlaw, who was born near Edinburgh, Scotland, and was but a little lad of eight years when he accompanied his parents on their emigration to America. His father and mother died in New York, and he journeyed on to St. Joseph county when a young man, and was here married to Sallie Shaw, a native of Ohio. They became the parents of thirteen children, five sons and eight daughters, Mrs. Dixon being the eldest in order of birth. Mr. Laidlaw devoted his business life to agricultural pursuits, and in Penn township he cleared a large tract of land and was numbered among the leading farmers of the township. His life's labors were ended in death when he had reached the age of seventy-eight years, and thus ended a busy and useful career. His entire possessions were the result of ceaseless labor and unflinching perseverance, for he began the battle of life with but fifty cents to his credit, but so honorable was his course and so persistent his efforts that at the time of his death he was worth one hundred thousand dollars.

After his marriage Mr. Dixon farmed for seven years in Minnesota, but in 1863 returned to St. Joseph county and entered the mercantile business, becoming a member of the A. M. Wing Company. In 1865 he engaged in the dry goods business in company with his brother, but in the meantime he had been pursuing the study of law, and in 1873 was admitted to practice in the courts of Indiana. It was in 1875, two years after his admission to the bar, that he began the practice of his chosen profession, which was continued with such gratifying success until his useful life was ended in death. He gave his

political support to the Republican party, and as its representative was four times elected to the office of justice of the peace. He was at one time a member of the order of Odd Fellows. He was a kind and loving husband, sympathetic and responsive to the needs of the poor and just and noble in all the relations of life.

JOHN W. HARBOU, the present auditor of St. Joseph county, has for many years been an honored citizen of South Bend, actively interested in all measures advanced for the good of the people, and has performed his full share in the development and improvement of the city. His birth occurred in Oneida county, New York, on the 24th of January, 1847, his parents being Fritz and Judith (Fritcher) Harbou. The father was born in Copenhagen, Denmark, but came to the United States when a young man, and ever afterward remained a loyal citizen of the republic.

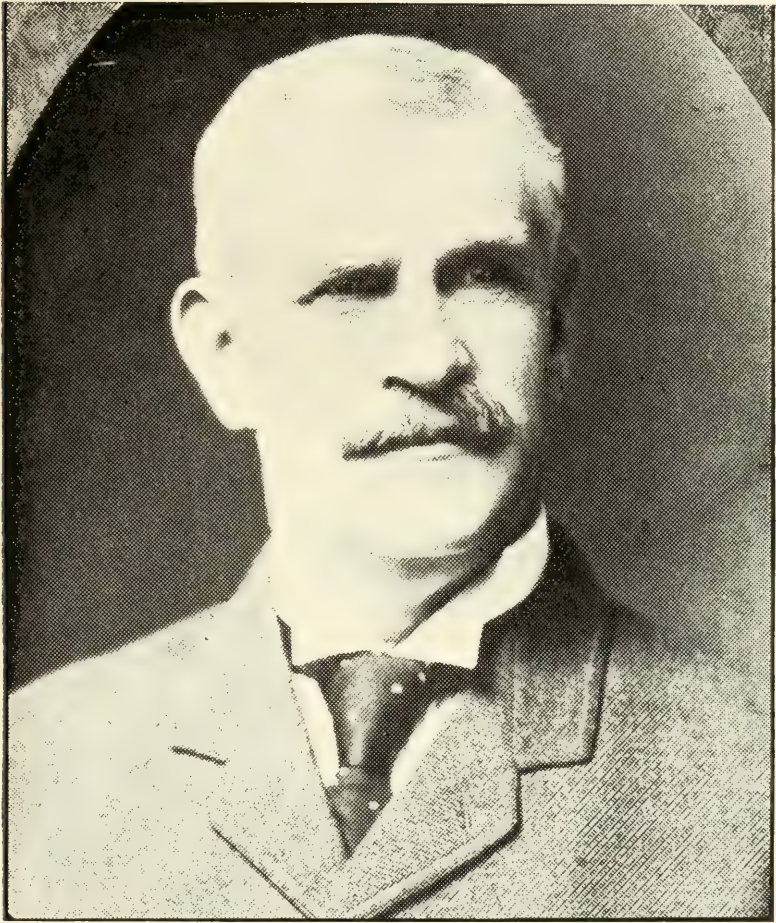
John W. Harbou came to South Bend on the 16th of October, 1873, and for two years thereafter worked at his trade as a carpenter. He then became deputy clerk of the circuit court under George W. Mathews, continuing two years through the remainder of his term, for four years during the term of Edwin Nicar, then under Judge Howard for a period of six months, filling the position as deputy clerk six and a half years altogether. For four years after that time he served as justice of the peace, to which office he was duly elected. On the expiration of his term of office as justice of the peace he entered the employ of the Oliver Chilled Plow Works, serving in their office for fourteen years. On the 1st of January, 1903, he became the auditor of St. Joseph county, while in 1906 he was re-elected to that position, being the present incumbent. He is a staunch Republican in his political affiliations, and fraternally is a member of Lodge No. 45, F. & A. M., and the Chapter of the Masonic order, and of the orders of Elks and Owls.

MARSHALL HUGHES, who is now filling the position of trustee of Portage township, was born at Three Rivers, St. Joseph county, Michigan, April 7, 1855. His parents, Jesse and Louisa (Adkinson) Hughes, were natives of the commonwealth of Pennsylvania. In 1854 they established their home in St. Joseph county, Michigan, where they were engaged in agricultural pursuits near Three Rivers. During the last forty-one years of

his life the father resided at Schoolcraft, Michigan, where his busy and useful life was ended at the age of eighty years, but he is still survived by his widow, who has reached the ripe old age of eighty-four years. In their family were twelve children, four of whom are now living, three sons and one daughter, namely: Frank, a resident of Lansing, Michigan; Dr. George A., of Cassopolis, that state; Marshall, whose name introduces this review; and Emma, the wife of Bela Crose, of Kalamazoo, Michigan.

Marshall Hughes accompanied his parents on their removal from Three Rivers to Schoolcraft, being then about ten years of age, and in the schools of the last named city he received the beginning of his school training, this being later supplemented by attendance at the Kalamazoo Business College. With an excellent educational training to serve as the foundation for his future life work Mr. Hughes began learning the carpenter's trade, which he followed as an occupation for twelve years. On the expiration of that period he embarked in the grocery business in Marcellus, Michigan, in partnership with his brother Frank, but after about seven years of a prosperous business connection in that city their store was destroyed by fire. Mr. Hughes then turned his face westward and journeyed to Wichita, Kansas, where he remained for two years, and during the following four years was engaged in carpenter work in the Dakotas. During his residence there he was also for twelve and a half years lumber inspector. It was in 1887 that he came to South Bend, and during all the years which have since come and gone he has labored earnestly and energetically in its growth and upbuilding. He stalwartly upholds the principles of the Republican party, and a number of years ago was elected trustee of the water works of this city, holding that position for one year or until the old city charter abandoned the office. In 1901 he was appointed to fill out the unexpired term of James D. Reed as trustee of Portage township, to which position he was elected in 1904, and is the present incumbent.

In 1890 Mr. Hughes was married to Alice Standerline, a native of St. Joseph county, Michigan, and a daughter of George Standerline. His fraternal affiliations are with the Masonic order of South Bend, the Blue Lodge, Chapter and Commandery; the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks, No.



John W. Harbou



235; the Knights of Pythias; the South Bend Eastern Star; and the Grange. In his social and official relations he is popular and influential, and his life is characterized by great activity in the important things that concern the interests of society and good government.

DAVID B. J. SCHAFER. Honored and respected by all, David B. J. Schafer has been for many years prominently identified with the public affairs of St. Joseph county and is now serving as its efficient sheriff. He has long been an honored citizen of South Bend, actively interested in all measures advanced for the good of the people, and has performed his full share in the development and improvement of the city. He was born in Adams county, Indiana, February 21, 1859, a son of Christian and Catherine (Ahr) Schafer, both natives of Germany. The father was there born in 1810, and when nineteen years of age crossed the ocean to the United States, living for a number of years thereafter in Cleveland, Ohio, when he removed to Adams county, Indiana. He was there actively engaged in agricultural pursuits from that time until his life's labors were ended in death, in 1886. The mother came with her parents to the United States when but three years old, the family home being first established in Ohio, where she resided until her marriage. This worthy couple continued to travel life's journey together for many years, and were numbered with the honored and valued residents of the localities in which their lots were cast.

David B. J. Schafer, whose name introduces this review, obtained his early educational training in the country schools, being early inured to the work of the fields, and he continued to reside on the farm until seventeen years old, when he removed to Decatur, Indiana, and obtained employment in a grocery store. After thus continuing for a few years he entered a railroad office and learned telegraphy, and in 1879 he came to South Bend and became an employe in the Studebaker works, where he remained for two years. In 1882 he entered the grocery business for himself, and for many years he has been prominently identified with the varied interests in St. Joseph county, in this time becoming recognized as one of its most valued and useful citizens. For four years Mr. Schafer served as the mayor of South Bend, for a time was census commissioner of the thirteenth congressional district, and in 1894 was elected sheriff, the duties of which high

official position he is discharging at the present time. He is a Republican in his political affiliations, and is one of the most trustworthy advisers of his party in the county. He has filled the various offices to which he has been called with credit and distinction, and as sheriff has given the county one of the best administrations in its history. He is a member of the Masonic order, Lodge No. 294, also of the Chapter and Commandery, and has membership relations also with the Knights of Pythias, the Royal Arcanum and the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks.

ALEX STAPLES is well known to the residents of South Bend, for here he has passed his entire life, and here his parents lived for many decades. His birth occurred in the city of South Bend on the 10th of June, 1840, his father, Ralph Staples, a native of Maine, having taken up his abode here as early as 1836. The latter's father, Alex Staples, was also a native of Maine, where he spent his entire life, and was of English descent. Ralph Staples, a contractor and carpenter, erected many of the large buildings and factories in South Bend, and was engaged in that occupation from 1836 until 1860. In 1861 he went to Pike's Peak, Colorado, where he was killed when about fifty years of age. He had taken an active part in the improvement and upbuilding of St. Joseph county, and his name is on the roll of its honored pioneers. He served as the postmaster of South Bend and as sheriff of St. Joseph county, and was at all times a public-spirited and loyal citizen. Mrs. Staples bore the maiden name of Hannah Cromwell, and was a daughter of Olen Cromwell, a native of Maine and a descendant of Oliver Cromwell. Her death occurred when she had reached the age of eighty-seven years. In their family were eleven children, nine sons and two daughters, three of whom died when young.

Alex Staples, the third child and second son in order of birth in the above family, was reared and educated in South Bend, and in his boyhood days learned the carpenter's trade, while in 1862 he was engaged in the house-moving business. In 1863 he enlisted in the Twenty-first Indiana Battery as a corporal, serving with his command until the close of the war in 1865, and during that time participated in many of the historical battles, including those of Nashville, Franklin and Columbia, Tennessee. Three of his brothers also took part in the struggle, all of

whom returned home without having been wounded, and all are yet living. After his military career had ended Mr. Staples returned to South Bend and resumed his occupation of house moving, which he continued for forty years, retiring from the active cares of business life in 1905 to enjoy the comforts which he had so richly earned.

In 1866 Mr. Staples was married to Selestia Alexander, whose death occurred in 1883, leaving two sons, Crawford E. and Guy D., both of South Bend. Mr. Staples afterward married Elmira Lytel. For sixty-six years he has made his home in South Bend, during which time he has witnessed its growth from a village of a few inhabitants to a population of fifty thousand, faithfully performing his full share in this wonderful transformation. He has been a life-long Democrat, has served as a member of the city council, as a commissioner of water works, as a member of the board of public works, for over forty years has been a member of the fire department, and is one of the three charter members of Auten Post, G. A. R. His religious connection is with the Presbyterian church.

ELIAS RUPEL. Throughout his entire life Elias Rupel has been a resident of St. Joseph county, for he is one of its native sons, his birth occurring in Center township on the 23d of February, 1835, and throughout the subsequent years he has been identified with many of the interests that have contributed to its substantial development and improvement. His sterling characteristics have won him the confidence of his fellow townsmen, and now, in the evening of life, his pathway is brightened by the veneration and respect which ever follow an upright career. In the days when St. Joseph county was a wilderness the parents, Peter and Christena (Schumaker) Rupel, became identified with its interests, and a more complete account of their history will be found in the sketch of their son Bazel elsewhere in this work.

Elias Rupel received his educational training in the primitive schools of Center township, for they were indeed primitive in those early days, and when a small boy he began assisting his widowed mother in the maintenance of her large family of children, remaining with her until she was called to her final rest. On January 29, 1885, he was married to Mary A. Lock, the widow of Wesley Barrett, and in the same year located in his pleasant home in South Bend, at 1421 South Michi-

gan street. She died February 15, 1903. Since age conferred upon him the right of franchise he has supported the principles of the Democracy, and for four years served as the trustee of Center township, while for a time he was treasurer and clerk of Mylertown, which he assisted in organizing. He also assisted in the organization of the Grange, being now one of its charter members and an active worker in its ranks. No one in the community enjoys a better reputation for integrity of word or deed, and when a man stands high in the estimation of the people who have known him during his entire life no greater testimonial to his worth can be given.

WILLIAM HUGHES STULL. No death caused more profound sorrow throughout the county than did the passing away of this venerable citizen, William Hughes Stull, for by long years of an honorable, upright life and kindly nature he had grown into the affections of his fellow citizens to a marked degree. He was born on a farm near North Vernon, Jennings county, Indiana, February 28, 1826, his parents being Henry and Rebecca (Hughes) Stull, the former a native of Virginia and the latter of South Carolina. They were numbered among the earliest pioneers of St. Joseph county, for it was during the early year of 1830 that they established their home within its borders, eventually becoming numbered among its leading citizens. In their family were eleven children, nine of whom, three sons and six daughters, grew to years of maturity, and all were born in Indiana, while six of the number claimed St. Joseph county as the place of their nativity. The family journeyed hither from Jennings county, Indiana, in 1830, and in the following year the father entered a farm from the government, going on horseback to Ft. Wayne to have the deed signed by Andrew Jackson. As the years grew apace he cleared this farm, placed the fields under an excellent state of cultivation, and became one of the leading agriculturists of Portage township. In his political affiliations he was an old-line Whig, and was a prominent factor in the early history of St. Joseph county.

Remaining on the old homestead farm until twenty-one years of age, William H. Stull then began the battle of life for himself, his first employment being as a carpenter, and after following that occupation for about four years he returned to the work of the farm, starting with a small place of eighty

acres and gradually adding to his possessions until he was the owner of one hundred and forty acres, all of which he had cleared and placed under an excellent state of cultivation. St. Joseph county claimed him among her leading and representative citizens, and both in business and social circles he was well known and honored.

In 1850 Mr. Stull was united in marriage to Saphronia Day, who became the mother of two daughters, and died in 1862. In 1864 Mr. Stull was again married, Miss Nora Rohrer then becoming his wife. She was born in Center township, St. Joseph county, Indiana, December 9, 1843, the daughter of John Rohrer, who was born in Ohio, but in 1830 came to St. Joseph county with his parents, where they entered land from the government. Their son John was married in this county to Charlotte Pickett, and Mrs. Stull is their only child. Mr. Rohrer followed the tilling of the soil as a life occupation, and was successful in his chosen calling, his name being well known throughout the county as a

leading agriculturist. Throughout the period of his majority Mr. Stull was actively interested in all measures advanced for the good of the people, and was a zealous worker in the ranks of the Democratic party. In 1886 he was elected to represent his district in the state legislature, wherein he won the commendation of all concerned and when he was again placed in nomination he was elected with little opposition, and continued to fill the duties of that high and important position for three terms. He was also a valued member of the Grange. The death of this honored old St. Joseph pioneer occurred in 1899, leaving a wife and three daughters. His loss was deeply mourned throughout the community, and his memory is enshrined in the hearts of his old friends and associates, to whose interests he was ever faithful. Since her husband's death Mrs. Stull has erected a pleasant home on St. Joseph street, where she is spending the declining years of her beautiful and useful life surrounded by lifelong friends and associates.

